

A DICTIONARY OF  
NEW ZEALAND BIOGRAPHY

*EDITED BY*

G. H. SCHOLEFIELD

---

VOLUME II

M — ADDENDA

---

WELLINGTON

*DEPARTMENT OF INTERNAL AFFAIRS*

NEW ZEALAND

1940

## GLOSSARY OF MAORI WORDS

---

COPYRIGHT BY THE CROWN  
 Extracts of reasonable length may be made with suitable acknowledgment, but for more extended use of material permission must be sought from the Minister of Internal Affairs, Wellington

<i>ariki</i>	chief
<i>aukati</i>	boundary line ; frontier
<i>hakari</i>	an entertainment or feast
<i>hapu</i>	a section of a tribe
<i>Hauhau</i>	the adherents of the Pai-marire doctrine
<i>heke</i>	a migration
<i>hongi</i>	to touch noses (in salute)
<i>hui</i>	an assembly
<i>kainga</i>	a living village
<i>karakia</i>	incantation (s)
<i>korero</i>	a speech, conference
<i>kotahitanga</i>	union
<i>kuki</i>	a slave
<i>kupapa</i>	friendly native rifleman
<i>makutu</i>	witchcraft ; to bewitch
<i>mana</i>	prestige ; authority
<i>marae</i>	a village square
<i>matua</i>	father ; protector
<i>mere</i>	a short club for hand-to-hand fighting
<i>mokihi</i>	a raft
<i>murū</i>	plunder by way of punishment
<i>ngautaringa</i>	biting the ear (a ceremony)
<i>niu</i>	sacred flagstaff of the Hauhau
<i>ope</i>	a troop or company
<i>pa</i>	a fort or fortified village
<i>pakeha</i>	foreigner, a European
<i>pakihi</i>	sterile land (where fern root is dug)
<i>Pai-marire</i>	cult of the Hauhau, a religion devised by Te Ua Haumene
<i>pouri</i>	sad
<i>rangatira</i>	chief
<i>Ra-tapu</i>	holy day : Sabbath
<i>rauipo</i>	a bullrush
<i>ringatu</i>	upraised hand ; sign used by Hauhau to ward off bullets
<i>take</i>	a cause or pretext for war
<i>takoha</i>	tribute
<i>tangi</i>	obsequies ; to weep
<i>tapu</i>	sacred
<i>taua</i>	war party ; hostile expedition

CONTRIBUTORS

<i>toa</i>	a warrior
<i>tohunga</i>	a priest
<i>tokotoko</i>	a walking stick
<i>utu</i>	payment for wrong; compensation or revenge
<i>waiata</i>	a song
<i>whakapapa</i>	lineage; family tree
<i>whare</i>	a house or hut

---

---

OTHER CONTRIBUTORS TO THIS VOLUME

---

The following writers kindly contributed memoirs, which are signed with their initials:

J.B.C.	Professor J. B. Condliffe
E.D.	Eileen Duggan, M.A.
J.R.	Professor James Rutherford
J.D.P.	J. D. Pascoe, F.R.G.S.
M.A.R.P.	Rev M. A. Rugby Pratt
J.H.B.S.	J. H. B. Scholefield, LL.M.
C.R.H.T.	C. R. H. Taylor, M.A.

A DICTIONARY OF NEW ZEALAND BIOGRAPHY

---

# A DICTIONARY OF NEW ZEALAND BIOGRAPHY

---

## M

---

**MACALISTER, WILLIAM** (1860-1936) was born in Scotland and came to Invercargill as a boy. His first employment, at the age of 14 was in Blackwood's wine store, where he worked long hours and rose to a responsible position.

On the invitation of the Rev R. Fairmaid, he attended a revivalist meeting addressed by the Rev Dr Somerville which imbued him with the determination to prepare for the New Hebrides mission field. Studying hard during his short hours of leisure, he matriculated and, winning a church bursary, left for Dunedin to study divinity at Otago University. His passion for classics turned his thoughts from mission work to education as such, and he accepted a post under the Southland education board as head teacher at Wairio. While there (1885-89) he graduated B.A. (1888). Transferring to the staff of the Southland Boys' High School, he became acquainted with G. D. Braik (afterwards inspector), and together they became interested in the study of law. Macalister decided to read for his LL.B., and eventually took up law and accepted a partnership with his elder brother John (1896). From 1909 to 1925 he was crown prosecutor in Invercargill. He was a successful pleader and an authority on local body law, acting as counsel for many bodies and assisting in the drafting of legislation. He was president of the Southland law society. Macalister's passion for education never flagged. He and others instituted in the early nineties the collegiate classes association and in 1896 assisted to form the Southland technical classes association (out of which arose the Technical College). He was a member of the education

board (1897-1914) and chairman (1899-1905); a member of the board of governors of the Southland High Schools (1897-1914) and chairman (1902-14); one of the founders of the Southland High School Old Boys' Association; and was on the council of Otago University (1912-13). Macalister served one term on the Invercargill borough council; was first president of the Greater Invercargill Association; a trustee of the Invercargill Savings Bank and for 25 years a director (10 years chairman) of the *Southland Times* Co.; foundation president of Invercargill Rotary; founded a society for the study of economics, and was keenly interested in the League of Nations Union.

*Southland B.H.S. Reg.; Southland Times, 27 Jul 1936.*

**MACANDREW, JAMES** (1820-87) was born at Aberdeen, and educated there and at the Ayr Academy, before going into mercantile life. His training was completed in London.

In 1845 he became a member of the London branch of the Otago Lay Association, importing into their discussions with the Colonial Office great industry, tact and untiring hopefulness. In 1850 he purchased the iron schooner *Titan*, 161 tons, loaded her with merchandise on account of himself and his friends, and sailed with his family and a select party. They arrived in Otago on 17 Jan 1851. Macandrew soon became a leading member of the Constitutional Association, which was agitating for self-government for the colony. He established his business at the corner of Manse and Stafford streets, and while the store was being erected visited

MACANDREW

in his schooner the northern settlements of New Zealand. His remarkable energy was matched by unconquerable confidence in the future of the Colony. With Reynolds on board, the *Titan* sailed with a cargo of Otago produce to sell in Australia and California, bringing back merchandise and live stock for the province. Macandrew assisted in the establishment of lime-kilns in the Kaikorai valley and of flour-mills at Green Island. He despatched the first shipment of wool direct to London. In the yards of James Adam he had two ships built, the *Star* and the *Bon Accord*, and he infected the Provincial Council with his passion for communications. In 1858 he employed the *Queen* in the intercolonial and coastal trade. As the first steamer which visited Dunedin, she received a salute of 24 guns on dropping anchor in the harbour. The *Pirate* and the *Pride of the Yarra* followed under his auspices. He advocated a fast mail service with Great Britain, and originated the line by way of Panama. He took a leading part in promoting the break-water at Oamaru and the Dunedin-Port Chalmers and Clutha railways, and he moved in the Council for the construction of the graving dock, which as Superintendent he opened. He made an arduous journey to Southland, and saw the first building erected on the site of Invercargill.

When the first Provincial Council was elected in 1853 Macandrew was returned for the Dunedin Country district, and when the Council met he was elected speaker, resigning a few days later to become a member of the executive. The day after his election to the Council he was returned unopposed as M.H.R. for Dunedin. It was he who moved that each sitting should open with prayer to Divine Providence. After a long debate the form of prayer was adopted. Macandrew was a member of the first executive (1854), before the introduction of responsible government. In the province his position continued to become substantial. He was a member of the first town board of Dunedin (1855). For three years (1856-59) he was speaker of the Provincial Council, and when Cargill retired at the end of 1859 he was elected Superintendent.

It seemed likely that with his undoubted ability, his patent sincerity, his optimism and magnetic influence over the affections of his

MACANDREW

fellows, Macandrew could in a few years have attained to the highest position in New Zealand. That was rendered impossible by a painful incident. A shortage was disclosed in the public funds in connection with emigration. Called to account, Macandrew indignantly repudiated any dishonesty, complained that the investigation was prompted by hostile parties in the province, and, meeting it with contumacy, was declared guilty by the Council, and on its petition removed from the superintendency. Richardson assumed the office in accordance with the constitution, and was duly elected (Jun 1861), but Macandrew actually polled 189 votes against Richardson's 292 though he fought the campaign from within the walls of the prison.

By 1865 Macandrew was again in the General Assembly as the representative of Bruce, and two years later, when the superintendency fell vacant, he defeated Thomas Dick by 2,259 votes to 1,392. He was never again in danger of being displaced. At the last superintendency election (1873) he polled 3,702 votes, Gillies 2,759 and Graham 26. The faith and affection of the people of Otago never altered. He was their David, but, as a biographer has said, 'the excellent talents of economy and administration were denied to him. His mind was never disciplined, nor was his judgment sound. He was given a specious and original genius, which enabled him to initiate many important public movements and to see further into the future than men who made better ministers of public works. He set a pre-eminent example of patriotism and public spirit.'

For the remainder of the provincial period (1867-76) Macandrew was the undisputed Superintendent of Otago. In colonial politics Grey, one of his closest personal friends, took him into his ministry (1877-78) as Secretary for Lands and Minister of Immigration and Public Works, and he was in the Stout-Vogel government of 1884. He represented Clutha (1866-70), Port Chalmers (1871-75), Dunedin City (1875-79) and Port Chalmers again (1879-87). While in Grey's ministry he obtained from Parliament the authorisation of three important railways, the North Island Main Trunk, the Midland, and the Otago Central. He favoured easier terms of land settlement, and obtained the insertion in the land bill of 1884 of a clause providing for grants of land to Highland crofters.

MACARTHUR

He considered they would make excellent settlers, and, with his customary optimism, pictured 40,000 families being brought out under this scheme. He was a firm believer in the union of English-speaking peoples as a factor in securing the peace of the world, and on his motion Parliament carried a resolution embodying this aspiration (1885).

As a Scot, Macandrew's interest in education amounted almost to a religion. He was active in setting apart large reserves from the provincial estate. In 1869 he gave valuable evidence before a parliamentary committee in favour of a university in Dunedin, and when Parliament refused to accede to his proposals he introduced them in the Provincial Council. The University was eventually founded in 1870 under a provincial ordinance. Macandrew was a member of the University council until his death. It was the last public body that he attended, and on his deathbed he remarked: 'It is my wish and hope that Otago University will get a royal charter to grant degrees. It is a matter I have had much at heart for many years.' As Superintendent, Macandrew took a keen interest in the founding of the Normal Training College in Dunedin, the Benevolent Institution, the Industrial School at Caversham, and the Otago Boys' High School. It could never be said of him that he placed his own interest first. A critical biographer wrote after his death: 'Neither as a member of the community nor as a politician can selfishness be written against the name of James Macandrew.' His weakness was his 'absolute lack of business capacity or attention to detail.' He imagined on a generous scale, but could not study the minutiae of his schemes. He never imagined with an eye to profit or praise for himself.

Macandrew died on 23 Feb 1887. His wife (Elizabeth Hunter Reynolds) died on 28 Feb 1875.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; N.Z.P.D., pass.; Gisborne (p); Saunders; Hocken; Reeves; Cox; Brett's Almanac, 1879; Public Opinion, 21 Oct 1882; Otago Witness, 27 Apr 1861; Otago Daily Times, 24 Nov 1875, 14 Feb 1930 (p).* Portraits: Parliament House; painting (by Miss Sperrey) in Otago University.

MACARTHUR, DOUGLAS HASTINGS (1839-92) was born in Edinburgh and received a good education, including languages. Arriving in Nelson at the age of 18, he worked on a farm at

MACASSEY

Collingwood for two years and then visited with some success the diggings at Marlborough, Otago and the West Coast. Returning to Nelson, he took a farm at Takaka, on which a considerable amount of gold was obtained. When the Manchester block was settled Macarthur was appointed (1874) a sub-agent for the Emigrants' and Colonists' Aid Corporation, and when Halmombe relinquished the management of the Feilding settlement he was appointed to succeed him (1878). Macarthur was mayor of Feilding for three years, chairman of the Manawatu highway board, chairman of both Manawatu and Oroua counties, and captain of the Manchester Rifles. He was elected M.H.R. for Manawatu in 1884 (defeating Fraser), and in 1887 (defeating Stevens); and for Rangitikei in 1890 (defeating Arkwright). He was a man of considerable ability and force of character, and was offered a post in the Atkinson cabinet (1887) but differed on customs policy. The loans to local bodies act was introduced by him. Macarthur died on 24 May 1892.

*Cycl. N.Z., i (p); Rangitikei Advocate, 25 May 1892.* Portrait: Parliament House.

McARTHUR, DUNCAN (1806-88) was born in the western Highlands of Scotland. He was for some years landlord of the Tontine hotel at Peebles, and then erected a fine hotel at Oban, where he did much to attract tourists to the district. Arriving in Otago in the early fifties, he decided to settle in Southland.

McArthur was a member of the Makarewa road board and the Southland Provincial Council. After the reunion of the province with Otago he represented Makarewa in the Otago Provincial Council (1871-73) and was a member of the provincial executive in 1871 and 1872. He was later an inspector of forests under the General Government. His death occurred on 25 May 1888.

*Parltry Record; Otago P.C. Proc.; Southland Times, 26 May 1888.*

MACASSEY, JAMES LIVINGSTONE (1842-80) was born at Carrickfergus, county Antrim, Ireland, the son of an Independent minister. As a boy he came to South Australia, and was articled to Gwynne (afterwards a judge) and Lawrence, where he showed great aptitude for the law. He moved to Melbourne and went into the office of Mr Stephen, afterwards also a

judge. The gold discoveries attracted him to Otago, and he entered the office of Richmond and Gillies in Dunedin. He was admitted to the bar in 1865, and entered into partnership with G. K. Turton, and later also with John Hyde Harris. Macassey soon became a leader of the bar, and was engaged in most of the important cases in the province. He had few rivals as a pleader, and conducted nisi prius cases and banco work with great zeal and ability. He practised later in partnership with Allan Holmes and with F. R. Chapman (q.v.) and eventually with his brother-in-law, C. C. Kettle.

Macassey twice contested parliamentary seats (against Mervyn and Pyke), and in 1872 was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for Wakari, which he represented, however, for only a few months. In 1875 he published reports of cases heard before the Supreme Court in Otago and Southland and on appeal (1861-72). He married Elizabeth, daughter of C. H. Kettle (q.v.). His death occurred on 9 May 1880.

Macassey's son, PERCY SEABORN KETTLE MACASSEY (1875-1936), was crown prosecutor in Wellington.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Saturday Advertiser*, 15 May 1880; *N.Z. Law Jour.*, 1930, 410; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 May 1880; *The Dominion*, 19 Jun 1936.

**McBETH, JAMES**, was a member of a family which came to Wellington from Glasgow in 1840 by the *Bengal Merchant*. He took a keen interest in public affairs, and was secretary of the Wellington Political society for the reform of the Provincial Council (1855). McBeth settled in Picton, where he was a partner in the firm of Beauchamp, McBeth and Co. In 1863 he became a member of the Picton town board, of which he was chairman the following year. He represented Picton in the Nelson Provincial Council (1864-65).

*Marlborough P.C. minutes*; Beauchamp.

**McCARDLE, WILLIAM WILSON** (1844-1922) was born in Kirkcudbrightshire, Scotland, educated at the local grammar school, and in 1862 came to New Zealand in the *Chariot of Fame*. After working on an Ashburton sheep station, he was employed by a nurseryman in Christchurch, and for six years he was engaged in his own nursery in Dunedin (1869-75). He was in business in Masterton till 1884, when he moved to the Pahiatua district to found the

Pahiatua settlement. He was a member of the first Masterton borough council, of the Masterton trust lands trust and parks trust and of the school committee. An advocate of the deferred payment system of land tenure, he was a member of the Wellington waste lands board and of the land commission of 1905. He had a seat on the Wairarapa north county council, was the first chairman of the Pahiatua road board, and a member of the Wellington education board. In 1900 he went to live in Kawhia. From 1907-14 he was a member of the Legislative Council. Later he lived at Kawhia, and was a member of the Auckland land board. He died on 4 Jan 1922. McCadle married (1866), Janet Catherine, daughter of Captain James Martin, of the ship *Margaret*.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Mar 1905; *The Dominion*, 7 Jan 1922. Portrait: Parliament House.

**MACARTHY, THOMAS GEORGE** (1833-1912) was born in London. Attracted by the gold rush, he came to Victoria in the early fifties, and in 1864 crossed to Otago. After following mining for a time, he established a brewery at Charleston, where he took an interest in the Reefton mines. In 1877 he bought a brewery in Wellington, and six years later a second. Macarthy was a director of the Bank of New Zealand, chairman of the Wellington-Manawatu Railway Co., managing-owner of the barque *Weathersfield* (which traded between London and the Colony), and president of the Wellington Racing club. He took an active interest in the Industrial Exhibition of 1896-97, making himself responsible for its financial success. He died on 20 Aug 1912, leaving a large bequest to endow education and charitable objects in Wellington.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 20 Aug 1912.

**McCAUGHAN, PATRICK KINNEY**, who from 1879 to 1881 was member for Riverton in the House of Representatives was for some years manager of the New Zealand Agricultural Co.'s estates at Waimea, Southland.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1879-81; *Riverton Rec.*

**McCLEVERTY, WILLIAM ANSON**, received his ensign's commission in the 48th Regiment in 1824. (Lieutenant, 1825; captain, 1829; major, 1841; lieutenant-colonel, 1845.) He served in

India against the Rajah of Coorg in 1834. In 1846 he came to New Zealand by the *Agincourt*, under orders from the Colonial Office to assist the New Zealand Company in the selection of land and the fixing of exterior boundaries. In 1847 he made his final report, which was given effect to by the issue of deeds to the chiefs residing in the different districts. McCleverty was gazetted in 1846 Superintendent of the Southern district; in 1847 deputy-assistant quartermaster-general in New Zealand, and in 1848, as commander of the forces in New Zealand, he was appointed a member of the executive council of New Munster. He was in charge at Wellington during the earthquake of 1848. Promoted colonel in 1854, he left New Zealand in 1857 and rose to major-general and commander of the forces at Madras. In 1876 he was promoted general.

G.B.O.P., 1846/337, 1847/892, 1848/899; *Army Lists*, 1825, 1856-57, 1876; Grimstone; E. Wilson; Jellicoe; Cowan; Ward.

**McCOMBS, ELIZABETH REID** (1873-1935), a daughter of Daniel Henderson, of Kaiapoi, was educated at the West Christchurch school and at the Christchurch Girls' High School. In 1903 she married James McCombs (q.v.). Always interested in social work, she was secretary for some years of the Children's Aid society and president of the Women's Christian Temperance union, and an executive member of the Canterbury Progressive Liberal association. In 1921 she was elected a member of the Christchurch City Council, and she held that position until her death (on 7 Jun 1935). From 1927 she was chairman of the electrical committee. In 1921 she gained a seat on the North Canterbury hospital board, and in 1927 she became a member of the tramways board. She also served on the domains board. At the general elections of 1928 and 1931 she unsuccessfully contested for Labour the Kaiapoi and Christchurch North seats, but on the death of her husband in 1933, she was elected for the Lyttelton district, being the first woman to gain a seat in the New Zealand Parliament. Her activities there were largely directed towards the interests of women and children.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *The Dominion* (p) and *Evening Post*, 7 Jun 1935. Portrait: Parliament House.

**McCOMBS, JAMES** (1873-1933) was born in county Leitrim, Ireland, and arrived in New Zealand in 1876 with his parents, who settled in Christchurch. He attended the Sydenham and East Christchurch schools, and studied for the Anglican ministry, but turned to social and political work. Radical in outlook, he joined the Progressive Liberal Association, of which H. G. Ell was president. In 1908 he unsuccessfully contested the Christchurch East seat and in 1911 he was defeated in the Avon electorate. In 1913, standing as a Social Democrat, he entered Parliament as member for Lyttelton, which seat he held continuously against strong opposition until his death on 2 Aug 1933.

McCombs was an astute parliamentarian, an incisive speaker and an effective debater. He played an important part in the development of the parliamentary Labour party. From 1913 to 1917, and from 1931 to 1933, he was a member of the Christchurch City Council, and for some time chairman of the finance committee. He was president of the Canterbury No-license council, and a member of the New Zealand Alliance. While employed in the drapery trade, he was president of the Canterbury drapers assistants' union; and he was a founder of the Burgesses' Association. In 1903 he married Elizabeth Reid Henderson (q.v.).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1913-33; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post*, 2 Aug 1933.

**McCULLOCH, HENRY** (1821-1905) was the son of a naval captain and was himself a lieutenant in the Royal Navy before retiring to settle in South Australia. From there he came to Southland, taking up land at Clifden before 1859. In 1861 he joined the government service, and for a year he represented Riverton in the Southland Provincial Council (1861-62), being an executive member. In 1862 he was appointed provincial auditor, and in the same year married Mary F., daughter of D. Shea-Lawlor, an old settler in the district. He was resident magistrate from 1862 to 1890. He died on 8 Apr 1905.

*Riverton Rec.*; *Southland Times*, 10 Apr 1905.

**McCULLOUGH, WILLIAM** (1843-1925) was born at Wylam, near Newcastle-on-Tyne, and at the age of two was taken to Ireland and brought up at Limerick, where he was educated in the normal school. He came to Auckland

McDERMID

with his parents in 1859, worked on their farm at Mangapai for a few years, and in 1864 went to the goldfields on the West Coast.

When the Thames fields opened (1867) he was attracted there but, meeting with little success at mining, he joined the staff of the *Thames Evening Star* in 1869 (being the first mining reporter on the field). Eventually he owned the paper. He afterwards acquired the *Thames Advertiser*, amalgamated it with the *Star* in 1912, and eight years later disposed of the property to a local company.

McCullough took a keen interest in his district and filled every important position in the gift of the people. He was mayor of Thames in 1879, chairman of the hospital board, the harbour board and the High School governors. Returning to Auckland, he bought a printing business. He was the first president (to 1892) of the New Zealand Journalists' institute. A Liberal in politics, he was called to the Legislative Council in 1892, retiring by effluxion of time in 1899. McCullough was a member of the Anglican synod. In the freemasons (Scottish constitution) he was provincial grand master in succession to Whitaker (1892), and he was district grand master for the North Island for more than a quarter of a century. He married a daughter of W. Errington.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *N.Z. Times and Auckland Star*, 17 Oct 1892. Portrait: Parliament House; Weston.

**McDERMID, HUGH** (1820-77), arrived in Otago by the *Philip Laing* (1848), and erected the first sawmill at Sawyers Bay, Otago harbour. He settled at Port Chalmers, and was a member of the borough council, mayor of the borough for two years and a member of the Otago harbour board. He represented North Harbour in the Provincial Council (1868-70), and Port Chalmers (1872-75), and during that time was a member of the executive on three occasions (1868-69, 1872 and 1873-74). McDermid died on 6 Jan 1877.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *Otago Witness*, Jubilee no. 1898; *Evening Star*, 8 Jan 1877.

**McDONAGH, ARTHUR EDWARD** (1811-52) held a junior commission in the 5th Fusiliers. He was appointed police magistrate at Hokianga in 1841, and two years later was transferred to the southern district of New Munster

MACDONALD

as assistant magistrate and treasurer. As magistrate he inquired into the affray at Wairau (1843), and issued a proclamation in Wellington affirming that the attack was not premeditated, that the Maori did everything possible to avoid a collision, and that no apprehension need be entertained of an attack on Port Nicholson. As adjutant of the Wellington militia McDonagh commanded the force which advanced to Pahautanui and was present at Battle Hill on 6 Aug 1846. He afterwards had charge of the European and native workers making the road to Porirua. He was a justice of the peace for New Munster (1848). McDonagh married (1844) Ann Eliza, daughter of H. Ross. He died on 26 Nov 1852, when he was police inspector for the southern district.

Grimstone; Cowan; Ward; *N.Z. Spectator*, 27 Nov 1852.

**MACDONALD, ALLAN**, who was a sheep farmer at Tolaga Bay, was elected to Parliament for East Coast in 1879 as a supporter of Grey (defeating G. B. Morris). He resigned in 1884. In 1883 he was a director of the East Coast Land Co. Macdonald went to Victoria in 1893 and was not later heard of.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1879-84.

**McDONALD, JAMES** (1837-1900) was born in Scotland. He was a lime merchant and operated a small kiln on Otago Peninsula. In 1876 he purchased the lime kiln portion of the Horse-shoe Bush estate, near Milburn, and laid a railway to his limeburning kilns, of which in 1881 he had three. In 1886 he erected cement works in Dunedin (at Vogel and Cumberland streets). Shortly afterwards his business was acquired by the Milburn Lime and Cement Co. He died on 12 Mar 1900.

In 1883 McDonald defeated Robert Gillies for the Bruce parliamentary seat, and in the following year he was defeated in turn by Gillies and Driver. McDonald was an enthusiastic supporter of Highland games and other forms of sports and showed riding and light harness horses. He kept greyhounds and once won the Waterloo cup.

*Milburn School historical souvenir* (1938); *Poverty Bay Herald*, 30 Sep 1881. Portrait: Parliament House.

**MACDONALD, ROBERT GORDON** (1854-1931) was born in Caithness, Scotland and edu-

MACDONALD

cated at Aberdeen University. (L.F.P.S. Glasgow 1876; L.R.C.P. 1881; M.D. Brussels, 1895.) After some years as house surgeon in Glasgow hospital, and as a ship's surgeon, he arrived in Otago in 1882 and practised in Dunedin. He was a member of the City Council (1916-19). Macdonald was particularly interested in Scottish literature and the Gaelic society and was president of the Caledonian society and the Burns Club. He published in 1928 *The Highlanders of Waipū*. His death occurred on 14 Sep 1931.

*Otago Daily Times*, 16 Sep 1931.

**MACDONALD, THOMAS KENNEDY** (1847-1914), a son of Thomas R. Macdonald, of Fort William, Scotland, was born in Boulogne-sur-mer, and educated in Dundee and Adelaide, Australia. Coming to New Zealand in 1871, he was employed as a clerk in the barracks in Wellington, and later established the firm of T. K. Macdonald and Co., auctioneers, land and estate agents. He was a founder and director of the Wellington Tramways Co. and of the Equitable Building and Investment Co. (1877). In 1877-78 Macdonald served in the Wellington City Council. He was chairman and manager of the Wellington Woollen Manufacturing Co. (1886-96). He was elected to represent Wellington City in the House of Representatives in 1890, but retired in 1891. He was a member of the royal commission on the Public Trust office (1891) and of that on Polhill Gully (1892), and was chairman of the harbour board (1906-07). Macdonald was called to the Legislative Council in 1903, and resigned in 1911. He died on 17 Oct 1914.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1891, 1903-11, 10 Oct 1914; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 18 Oct 1914. Portrait: Parliament House.

**MACDONALD, THOMAS MORELL** (1835-1909) was a son of Dr Alexander Macdonald, who gave up a medical practice in Scotland to become a missionary in Samoa, where his son was born. In 1840 they returned to Kent, and in 1850 came out to New Zealand. After serving his articles with Frederick Whitaker (q.v.), Macdonald was admitted to the bar in 1861, and practised in Invercargill, in partnership with William Russell. He married Charlotte Clements (1843-94), only daughter of Thomas S. Forsaith (q.v.). Macdonald was a member

MACDONALD

of the Southland Provincial Council for Invercargill (1864-66) and for Campbelltown (1869-70). He was solicitor to the Council until its abolition, when he was appointed crown solicitor. He was chairman of the Southland education board for 11 years, and of the *Southland Times* to 1896. He was a member of the Presbyterian synod. Macdonald died on 15 Mar 1909.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Southland Times*, 16 Mar 1909.

**MACDONALD, WALTER** (1829-99) was born in Mooncoin, county Kilkenny, Ireland, and educated at All Hallows College, Dublin. Coming to Auckland in 1853, he was ordained three years later, and after serving his first appointment in the Bay of Islands, he was in charge of St Patrick's Cathedral, Auckland, for many years. He was also private secretary to Bishop Pompallier and was later raised to the dignity of Monsignor and appointed chamberlain by Pope Leo XIII. In 1886 he was transferred to Panmure, where he died on 31 Dec 1899.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Silk.

**MACDONALD, WILLIAM** (1840-90), who was born in Scotland, began as a pupil teacher at the age of 13, and later was tutor in the Larchfield Academy. Entering Edinburgh University, he graduated M.A. with honours and was for a time assistant to the classics professor. He was on the classical staff of the Edinburgh High School (1872-77). In 1874 he became president of the educational institute of Scotland. In 1877, having been selected as rector of the Otago Boys' High School, he was created an honorary LL.D. of Edinburgh University. In 1878 he took up the position in Dunedin, which he held until resigning in 1885. For three years he was a member of the Otago University council (1882-85) and he was first president of the New Zealand Educational institute. He died on 16 May 1890.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago B.H.S. Reg.* (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 13 Nov 1878, 17 May 1890, 3 Aug 1933 (p).

**MACDONALD, WILLIAM DONALD STUART** (1862-1920) was born at Mount Meningwort, Victoria, the son of a cattle raiser. Arriving in New Zealand in 1882, he settled on the East Coast of the North Island. He was for five

## MACDONALD

years (1882-87) overseer of the Ngatapa station, and later manager of other large runs. He became a member of the Farmers' Union, and president of the Poverty Bay Farmers' club, a member of the Gisborne harbour board, of the Cook hospital and charitable aid board, and of the Waiapu county council. When the district was divided he became chairman of the Waikohu county council. In 1908 he was elected M.P. for Bay of Plenty and in 1909 he became junior whip for the Ward Government. In 1912 he was a member of the Mackenzie administration (as Minister of Public Works and of Native Affairs) and in the National ministry of 1915 he had control of agriculture and of mines. He was also president of the board of trade and a member of the lands commission. On the defeat of Ward in 1919, Macdonald became leader of the Liberal party. He died suddenly on 31 Aug 1920.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Sep 1920; *N.Z Herald*, 1 Sep 1920. Portrait: Parliament House.

MACDONALD, WILLIAM KENNETH (d. 1879) was born in Inverness-shire, Scotland, and came to New Zealand in 1852 after 10 years in Australia. With his brother (A. R. Macdonald) he bought the Orari estate in Canterbury. In 1859 he married a daughter of Captain Macpherson, of the 59th Regiment. He was a member of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral association, a founder of the Christchurch club, and represented Geraldine in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1871-72).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Acland.

McDONNELL, THOMAS (1788-1864) was born in county Antrim, Ireland, and entered the Royal Navy in 1804 as a midshipman. In that year he was present in the *Veteran* at the attack on Boulogne. In 1809 he commanded one of the boats in the attack on the French fleet in the Basque roads, and he was in a gunboat at Walcheren. In 1810 he was appointed lieutenant in command of the sloop *Opossum*, in which he saw service against slavers on the west coast of Africa. He had further service in Europe and the West Indies in the *Hero*, *Narcissus*, *Henules* and *Valiant*, and took part in the blockade of New York in 1814.

At the conclusion of peace in 1815 McDonnell went on half-pay and joined the East India Company's service. He commanded one of the

## McDONNELL

Company's ships in the Red Sea, where he made certain explorations, and he conveyed the embassy to Siam. McDonnell travelled a good deal in India, and accompanied Sir Frederick Henniker in a tour of Egypt. He afterwards fitted out an opium clipper for trade in China and the Islands. He seems to have visited Sydney first in 1828-29; and in 1830 he was commanding the brig *Elizabeth* in the China seas. About this time he visited Kaipara and Hokianga, and named Port McDonnell in Hawkes Bay. He made a report to the Admiralty on the supply of kauri spars from New Zealand.

Having purchased land on the Hokianga harbour from a Sydney firm, McDonnell came to New Zealand in the *Lady Flora* and established a dockyard at Horeke, which was managed by Frederick Russell. In 1831 he purchased the *Sir George Murray*, in which he brought his family to New Zealand. In 1835 they built the schooner *Tui*. McDonnell did a considerable trade with the natives, and in the supply of spars for H.M. ships. These were got in the neighbourhood of Horeke and rafted down Hokianga harbour. In 1835 he made an agreement with some chiefs at Bay of Islands to open the entrance to Hokianga. This he achieved in the following year. At that time he had the largest mill on the Hokianga (about three miles above the mission station). He owned two ships and employed a good number of people. Part of McDonnell's journal was published in 1834.

In 1835 he persuaded the Secretary of State to appoint him an additional British Resident for the Hokianga district. He took a leading part in the government of the white community, with the assistance of the Hokianga chiefs, but came into conflict with Busby, who complained of his taking independent action. In 1837 he gave up his duties as a resident. In 1839 McDonnell visited Great Britain, where he disposed of his rights to the New Zealand Company for £5,000 and a salary of £300 a year. He returned to New Zealand in 1841, but was again in England in 1844, when he gave evidence before the parliamentary committee on New Zealand.

During Heke's war in 1845 McDonnell strongly fortified his yards at Horeke. He had by this time to a great extent lost his influence with the natives. He petitioned Parliament in

## McDONNELL

1846 for compensation. He died on 13 Sep 1864 (see THOMAS McDonnell, 1832-99).

G.B.O.P., 1844/556; *App. H.R.*, 1856 ii, E3, D15; P.R.O. C.O. 209; N.Z. Archives B.R. 1 and 2; N.Z.C.; *Hist. Rec. Aust.*, ser. I, xvi; O'Byrne, *Naval Biographies*; Earle; Sherrin and Wallace; E. J. Wakefield; H. E. M. Fildes in *N.Z. Herald*, 14 Jul 1934.

McDONNELL, THOMAS (1832-99) was the eldest son of Thomas McDonnell (q.v.), and was born at the Philippines. As a child he came to New Zealand with his father, and he received most of his education at Hokianga. In 1853 he left for Melbourne to try his fortune on the goldfields, but two years later returned to New Zealand and received an appointment in the civil service, being stationed in Hawkes Bay and later at Coromandel. With his brother William he took up a sheep run in Southern Hawkes Bay. He was a capable Maori linguist and on the outbreak of the Maori war joined the Defence Force (Aug 1863) and served as a sub-inspector under Colonel Nixon in Auckland province. He was present at the actions at Mauku, Drury, Queen's Redoubt and Burt's Farm. In company with von Tempsky, he reconnoitred the enemy position at Paparata, narrowly escaping capture. For this he received the thanks of General Cameron. He took part in the Thames expedition under Colonel Carey. In the attack on Rangiaowhia (2 Feb 1864) he approached the large house with Mair and summoned the occupants to surrender. The reply was a heavy volley, in which Colonel Nixon was mortally wounded. McDonnell assisted him out of danger. Promoted captain, he was second in command of the Maori contingent in the fighting at Maketu and was slightly wounded in skirmishes. He was appointed magistrate at Cambridge, but had only been there a few months when his services were again required in the field. Promoted brevet-major (Jul 1865) and given command of the 'Whanganui contingent in the operations on the West Coast, he took an active part in the first assault at Wera-roa (21 Jul) and then proceeded with the relief force to Phipiriki (19-30 Jul). Summoned away by the murder of Volkner, McDonnell served under Brassey in Bay of Plenty, being present at the actions of Kiorekino and Te Tarata (3 and 4 Oct). He pursued Kereopa and his people up the Waimana valley, taking their pa

## McDONNELL

at Te Puia and defeating them in the Waimana gorge. He was soon recalled to the West Coast to serve as advance guide to General Chute's column. There he was in action at Moturoa, Te Putahi (7 Jan 1866), Ketemarae and Keteonetea; and was again wounded.

The Government having decided to occupy the confiscated lands in Taranaki, McDonnell was given command of the protecting force and established his camp at Manawapou. His negotiations with the Ngati-Ruanui and the Tanga-ho were unsuccessful. After being several times ambushed, he retaliated by attacking the Hauhau position at Pokaikai. For this he was criticised, inasmuch as he had accepted a token of peace some days earlier. There were further stubborn engagements at Pungarehu and Kelemarae. In Apr McDonnell was promoted lieutenant-colonel and given command of the native contingent operating against the Hauhau in the Rotorua district, Henry Tacy Clarke being attached to his force. From this duty he was recalled to Patea to command a force of 100 men detailed to quell the Fenian disturbances in Hokitika. The situation in Taranaki was far from satisfactory. In May 1868 Booth issued warrants for the arrest of two principal fighting chiefs of Titokowam, and requested McDonnell to execute them. By diplomacy he secured the return of some of the settlers' horses, but it soon became clear that hostilities were imminent.

A message was sent to 'Vanganui recalling McDonnell, who hurried to Wellington for authority to raise a force of 400 men, of whom 100 should be natives. With the rank of inspector in the Armed Constabulary (Jul 1868), he hastened back to Taranaki to find that there had been a serious reverse at Turuturumokai (12 Jul). Placing Roberts in charge of that post, he made his plans for retaliation against Titokowaru's stronghold at Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu. On 21 Aug, in thick fog, he approached the position with a force of 350 men, himself leading the frontal attack while von Tempsky attacked on the left. The defenders fled into the bush from which, after the whares had been burned, they maintained a harassing fire on the retreating force. McDonnell brilliantly extricated his men, the rearguard being commanded by Major Hunter. Both sides suffered some losses.

## McDONNELL

On 7 Sep McDonnell again marched out from Waihi with 360 men, including 100 natives. The divisions were commanded by von Temp-ski and Hunter, the natives being under Captain William McDonnell and Keepa te Rangihiwini (q.v.). Striking into the forest for the position of Rua-ruru, McDonnell passed Te Ngutu unwittingly, and only learned of it from Keepa when the two European divisions had begun their assault. Believing that the position was strongly held, he could not make up his mind to push the attack. In these moments of indecision there were severe losses, the raw troops showing signs of panic. Both von Temp-ski and Hunter wished to attack, but McDonnell ordered a retreat to the Waingongoro under Hunter's protection. Von Temp-ski and Captain George Buck having been killed and many casualties sustained, Roberts collected the survivors and led them out of the bush. The force returned to Waihi somewhat demoralised, and McDonnell resigned his command, being succeeded by Whitmore, under whom he served. In the following operations he fell into an ambush and was again wounded. He was present at Tauranga-ika and Karaka flats (Feb 1869), and then resigned from the force. A few months later (Jul 1869) he was again called upon to operate against Te Kooti, a service for which he had every qualification. By the middle of Sep he had concentrated a mixed body of the Colonial Defence Force and native allies in the camp at Tokaanu. Te Kooti took up a position on the Ponanga saddle, between Taupo and Rota-a-Ira. McDonnell moved out and established his field headquarters at Poutu, where he threw up earthworks. On 25 Sep the Maori contingent gallantly attacked Te Kooti's force, which was strongly entrenched, and threw them off the hill with great loss. The blow to Te Kooti's mana destroyed all hope of receiving help from the King tribes, and he withdrew to make a last stand in the fortified knolls and redoubt at Porere, on the banks of the Upper Whanganui river. Here McDonnell surrounded and attacked him (3 Oct 1869), storming the position and driving the survivors into thick bush to the westward. A few days later Te Heubeu Horonuku (q.v.) surrendered. McDonnell, having received native reinforcements under Topia Turoa and Keepa, then pursued the enemy, whom he drove out of Tapapa pa

## MACE

(24 Jan 1870) and defeated in a counter attack on the following day, seizing all his horses. He remained in the field some time longer, and then retired with a fine record of service, having been four times wounded, many times mentioned, and thanked by various governors and generals. It was not until 1886 that he was awarded the New Zealand Cross.

In 1884 McDonnell contested the Waitotara seat against Bryce. Grace says that he was a soldier of outstanding courage and intrepidity. Whitmore says that he was more sinned against than sinning; the Government repeatedly gave him the shadow of authority, but constantly interfered in his operations, so that Te Kooti was permitted to regain the sanctuary of the mountainous Urewera country. McDonnell married first (1866) Rose von Dardebyyn (d. 1869), and second (1870) Henrietta Elise, daughter of Thomas E. Lomax, of London. He died at Wanganui on 8 Nov 1899. His memoirs, upon which he spent much time, have not been published.

Cowan, *Wars* (p); Gudgeon (p); Grace; Whitmore.

McDOWELL, WILLIAM, was born in 1835 in Kirkcudbrightshire, Scotland, educated at the local school and served his apprenticeship to the building trade at Castle Douglas. He came to Australia in the *Negotiator* (1857), followed the gold rush to Otago (1861), and after a trip to South America, settled in Wellington in 1864 as a builder. For four years he represented Hutt in the Provincial Council (1865-69).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p).

MACE, FRANCIS JOSEPH (1837-1927) was born at Madeira and educated in Leamington and at Islington, London. He came to New Zealand in the *St Michael* (1852) with his parents, who took up land at Omata. There, in company with Wellington Carrington, he gained much experience of the natives, and when the fighting commenced in 1860 he enlisted in the volunteers under Burton. While scouting he discovered a force of about 500 hostile Maori in a position near Waireka. The settlers were at once assembled in the stockade and shortly afterwards firing began (resulting in the death of Ford, Passmore, Shaw and two boys). Mace carried despatches to New Plymouth, and acted as guide to Captain Cracroft and the force from

## MACE

H.M.S. *Niger* in the attack on Waireka (Mar 1860). For this he was presented by the Government with a revolver. He then joined the mounted troop, and for two years was orderly to Colonel Carey. He had his horse shot under him, and was himself twice hit. Mace received the thanks of the Government for his services in this campaign and was offered a commission, which he declined.

In 1862 he was promoted from sergeant to ensign, and serving with his mounted troop under Colonel Warre was constantly in action. Several times with a strong escort he carried despatches between New Plymouth and Opu-nake. The services of Mace and the mounted volunteers were highly spoken of by Warre, who described his courage as proverbial. In Jul 1863 he was promoted lieutenant and recruited 215 men in Otago for the military settlers. He became captain in Sep 1863. Leading these mounted troops later, he frequently distinguished himself, Haultain remarking that the mounted volunteers in Taranaki were second to none. Mace was wounded in an ambush at Warea, where he was surrounded by 70 natives. At the taking of Ahuahu he had his horse killed under him. In 1864 he was specially mentioned (with Rodriguez) for conspicuous courage and coolness in carrying out wounded men under fire. They received the New Zealand Cross at the end of the war (Jan 1877).

Returning to civil life, Mace was a member of the Provincial Council for Omata (1873-76), of the Oakura road board (20 years a member, and some time chairman); of the school committee and the licensing committee. He married (1863) a daughter of Hamer Arden. He died on 7 Aug 1927.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.I. Gaz.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); Gudgeon, *Defenders of N.Z.* (p); Cowan, *N.I. Wars*, i (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 8 Aug 1927.

MACE, THOMAS (1808-91) was born in England, brought up to commercial life, and lived for some years in Portugal and Madeira. He settled at Funchal in 1838 and received a decoration from the King of Portugal for his services in repulsing an attack by pirates on a military post which was deserted by the garrison. Mace with his family and several others (including Antonio Rodriguez, q.v.) came to New Zealand

## MACFARLANE

in the *St Michael*, arriving on 2 Dec 1852. He settled at Omata. During the Maori war Mace was sent to Nelson in charge of a party of elderly refugees (1860) and while there was engaged in the customhouse. On returning to Taranaki he again took up his farm. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Omata (1865-69)...He died on 25 Jun 1891. (See F. J. MACE.)

*Taranaki P.C. minutes and Gaz.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 26 Jun and 3 Jul 1891.

McEWEN, DAVID (1818-1905) was born in Scotland and came to New Zealand in the *Bengal Merchant* (1840). He represented Hutt in the Wellington Provincial Council (1861-65) and was chairman of the Belmont road board. In 1863 McEwen made an exploration from Waikanae to the Hutt by way of Akatarawa. He moved to Manawatu in 1868, and died on 15 Jul 1905.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Press Association, 16 Jul 1905.

MACFARLAN, GEORGE (?-1868) was born in England and educated at Shrewsbury and at Trinity College, Cambridge, graduating with first-class honours in classics. In 1863 he was admitted to the bar at the Inner Temple, and in the following year he came to New Zealand. From 1867 until his death (on 12 Oct 1868) he was member for Lyttelton in the House of Representatives.

*N.I.P.D.*, 1867-68.

MACFARLANE, JOHN (?-1859), the first minister of the Church of Scotland in New Zealand, had been for some years successfully ministering at the Martyrs' Church in Paisley when he was chosen in 1839 to accompany the Scottish emigrants in the *Bengal Merchant*. Arriving at Port Nicholson on 20 Feb 1840, he held the first service six days later near Petone beach. Thereafter he preached every Sunday in Bethune's store on the Hutt river. He built his house in Clyde terrace, Petone. After the removal of the town to Thorndon, services were held at first in Hunter's premises and later in the Exchange in Customhouse quay. Macfarlane also preached in the native chapel at Te Am and in the courthouse at Thorndon. He preached in Gaelic at Kaiwarra for the benefit of the Highland settlers, the first sermon in

## MACFARLANE

that tongue being delivered on 20 Jun 1841.

For some weeks, until the arrival of the first Anglican clergyman, MacFarlane ministered to the wants of all the Protestant colonists. As the result of a visit to Nelson in 1842 he appealed to the missionary committee for a minister for that district. The draft constitution of the first Presbyterian church in Wellington was unanimously approved in Mar 1843. In the following month arrived the Rev James Duncan, who had been chosen by the Reformed Church of Scotland as missionary for the Maori in Manawatu. He made his headquarters in Wellington while studying the language, and during that time assisted MacFarlane at St Andrew's Church, which was opened on 7 Jan 1844. MacFarlane was deeply interested in the Mechanics' Institute. He left for Scotland in Oct 1844 by the *Bella Marina*, the church being closed during his absence.

Owing to the state of his health he did not return to New Zealand, but settled as minister at Lochgilphead, Inverary, Argyllshire, where he died in Mar 1859.

Ward; Rev A. B. Kilroy in the *Outlook*, 23 Feb 1938; Dickson (p); *N.Z. Colonist*, 23 Aug 1842; *Wellington Independent*, 26 Jul 1859; *Evening Post*, 6 Sep 1938 (p). Portrait at St Andrew's Church, Wellington.

MACFARLANE, JOHN SANGSTER (1818-80) was born at Haddington, East Lothian, the son of a minister of the Established Church. In 1837 he went to New South Wales as an officer of the commissariat department, but resigned shortly afterwards and studied navigation. He then purchased a schooner and entered into the Auckland-Sydney trade.

In 1844 he settled in Auckland, and joined Captain Salmon as merchants and coastal traders, interested mainly in the East Coast. In 1849 Macfarlane visited California in command of the *Daniel Webster*. On his return he was associated with Captain Read in the Poverty Bay trade, and afterwards carried on business in Auckland under the style of J. S. Macfarlane and Co. He retired in 1876 to devote his time to public affairs and directorates. The latter included the Bank of New Zealand, the New Zealand Insurance Co. (of which he was a director from the beginning until his death), the Fiji Banking Co., the Auckland Steam Packet Co., the Auckland Rope Manu-

## MACFARLANE

factory and the Parnell Soap Co. He paid much attention to steam communications with outlying ports, especially the north and the East Coast, and for a while had the steamers *Iona*, *Rowena* and *Southern Cross* in service. He was also heavily interested in the timber trade. His advocacy was instrumental in getting a railway constructed to the Thames goldfields.

Macfarlane represented Waitemata in Parliament (1876-79, being defeated by R. Wood). He was a frank, outspoken speaker, a man of remarkable energy and force of character. In 1871 he resigned from the commission of the peace to assert his independence. He was a liberal patron of the turf and owned some good horses, notably Kauri Gum, which won the champion cup in Otago. Macfarlane died on 2 Feb 1880.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1876-79; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Feb 1880; *App. H.R.*, 1871 GA. Portrait: Parliament House.

MACFARLANE, THOMAS (1811-85) was born at Glasgow, Scotland, and as a youth became a clerk to an advocate in Edinburgh who was later elevated to the bench (as Lord Curriehill). Macfarlane took a deep interest in social movements, and particularly in the establishment of an institution in Edinburgh for the deaf and dumb. On the death in 1860 of his elder brother John (who arrived in Wellington in the *London* in 1840) Macfarlane came to New Zealand and took his place in the business of Henderson and Macfarlane, then the largest employers in the province. He continued in New Zealand the interests which had commanded his attention in Edinburgh, and was prominently associated with the acclimatisation society, the archery and lawn tennis club, the ladies' benevolent society and the bowling club.

Macfarlane also played his part in politics. In 1867 he was elected to Parliament for the Northern Division, which he represented to 1870. He had an exhaustive knowledge of bankruptcy law, was for some years a trustee in bankruptcy and at the time of his death a curator of intestate estates and a visiting justice at Auckland gaol. He died on 10 May 1885.

Guthrie Hay; *N.Z. Herald*, 25 May 1885, 18 Jun 1894; *Southern Cross*, 7 Sep 1860. Portrait: Parliament House.

## McGHEE

McGHEE, RICHARD, lived for many years in the Pensioner Settlements, which he represented in the Auckland Provincial Council from 1861 to 1865. In 1866 he withdrew from the General Assembly elections, because his opponent (De Quincey) was a strong separationist. He married in 1864 a daughter of Thomas Rogers, of Otahuhu.

MACGIBBON, THOMAS (1839-1925) was born in Glasgow and arrived in New Zealand in 1849 with his parents by the *Mooltan*. After living in Caversham, Otago, he engaged in farming and in 1872, with his father and brother, he started in business as general merchants in Gore and Maitua. He became a member of the Southland education board and later chairman, and its representative on the Otago school commissioners, and had a seat on the Maitua borough council.

In 1905 Macgibbon as a Reform candidate defeated R. McNab for the Maitua seat. He retired in 1908 and was a member of the Legislative Council (1914-21). He was a member of the Otago University council (1913-20), and of the board of governors of McGlashan and Columba Colleges, and for many years an elder of the church. He died on 27 Sep 1925. (Macgibbon's father spelled his name M'Gibbon.)

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Sep 1925, 18 Jul 1926; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Beattie, i 82, ii 67, 71, 122; *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Sep 1925.

McGILLIVRAY, LAUCHLAN, received his theological training in Scotland. He married Catherine Anne (1814-1904), daughter of James Sloane, rector of the Peebles Grammar School, and they landed in Melbourne in 1840. After some years in Warrnambool (Victoria), Tasmania and Canada, they returned to Scotland, and McGillivray was selected by the Colonial committee of the Free Church to be the first settled minister at Riverton. They arrived in 1860 and he was inducted in Apr 1861. He held the charge only two years, when he resigned from the ministry to take part in politics. He was a member of the Southland Provincial Council for Riverton (1869-70), and after the reunion he represented Southland for a few weeks in the Otago Council (1870). He was the first mayor of Riverton (1871-72) and represented Riverton in Parliament (1870-75).

## McGLASHAN

McGillivray moved to Kaiapoi shortly afterwards and died there.

*Southland P.C. Proc.; Riverton Rec.* (p); *Southland Times*, 8 Aug 1904.

McGLASHAN, EDWARD (1817-89) was born at Edinburgh, and had substantially the same upbringing, as his elder brother John (q.v.). His father's family having been publishers to the University, he received a good Scots education and went into the bookselling trade, of which he obtained a very good knowledge.

John McGlashan's association with the Otago project inspired Edward to emigrate, but he was prevented by an accident from leaving in one of the first Otago ships. Before leaving Edinburgh he bought up the surplus stock of books of the well-known publishers, Chambers and Sons, and had it packed in accessible form to be sorted on the voyage. At the end of 1848 he sailed for Adelaide. He stopped for a while there and at Melbourne, and eventually reached Sydney, where he made a good profit on his books in a market which was rather bare at the time. McGlashan invested his capital in the purchase of stores and provisions, and when he reached Dunedin (1850) was again able to dispose of his stock advantageously. The first position that he took in Otago was that of registrar of the Supreme Court (over which Stephen presided). Unfortunately for him, there was little business and the judge was moved to Wellington. McGlashan leased from Valpy the sawmill and flourmill on the Water of Leith and gradually worked up a thriving business grinding wheat for the settlers, who hitherto had ground their own in steel hand mills. He carried on a store and auction room in Princes street, finding his commercial training of service. Meanwhile, in 1855, some of his capital was invested in land at Otepopo. In 1858 McGlashan dropped the auctioneering part of his business, and went into partnership with W. Carr Young as Young and McGlashan, merchants. They did exceptionally well until the diggings broke out. In 1862 the partnership was dissolved and McGlashan visited England. For some time he dealt largely in runs and stock, and owned the Mount Stokes station. He had an unfortunate steamer venture to the West Coast when the diggings opened up a market there. He was also sawmilling for a

while in the Catlins district, and in connection with this ran the steamer *Taiaroa* on the coast. In 1876 he directed his attention to paper manufacturing, and established on the banks of the Leith the business which was afterwards carried on by Fergusson and Mitchell. He received the Government bonus for the first paper produced in Otago. Incidentally, he tried to interest British manufacturers in the possibility of using New Zealand tussock for paper-making, but the cost and difficulty of gathering left no margin of profit. In later life McGlashan was a director of several public companies. While living in south Canterbury he was chairman of the Timaru Milling Co., and he had a considerable holding in the New Zealand Shipping Co.

McGlashan entered political life in 1853, when he was elected by Western district to the first Provincial Council, which ended in 1855. He differed from Cargill on matters of policy, and in 1854 advocated selling land at ten shillings an acre in order to induce immigration to the province. He was not able for many years to re-enter the Council, though he stood in 1861 and 1863. In 1871 he got back for North Harbour, for which he sat until the abolition. He aspired to higher honours when he contested the Superintendency against Dick (1865). Meanwhile McGlashan was elected M.H.R. for Dunedin City in 1860, but he resigned two years later. In 1871 he was returned for Roslyn, which he represented until 1875. After that date he dropped out of public life owing to indifferent health, and in 1881 he paid a long visit to Great Britain.

On his return he settled on a farm near Timaru for three years, and then returned to live at St Clair. He died on 31 Jul 1889. His second wife was a daughter of George Bell (Dunedin). During a journey in south Otago McGlashan discovered on the banks of the Catlins river human remains which were believed to be those of the German doctor, G. F. R. Schmidt.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; App. H.R.*, 1871, H7, p. 27; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken; McIndoe; *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Aug 1889; 28 Mar 1930 (p).

McGLASHAN, JOHN (1802-64) was born in Edinburgh of a family closely associated with the publishing business, and was educated at the High School and Edinburgh University. He studied law, and in 1824 was admitted to

practise as a solicitor of the supreme court of Scotland. Increasing deafness incapacitated him from court work, and his practise did not thrive. He was an authority on certain aspects of law, and wrote several law books, of which some went into more than one edition.

McGlashan became associated with the movement for the foundation of 'New Edinburgh,' and from 1846 onwards gave his whole time to the movement in the capacity of secretary to the Otago Association in Edinburgh. For six years he devoted himself whole-heartedly to the work of the Lay Association, and did a vast amount of work. But for him the scheme would probably not have been so well carried out. Through him 'the strange and unheard-of name of Otago became familiar as a household word in every county and parish in Scotland: He circulated an incredible amount of information throughout Scotland, in handbills, newspapers, and through the *Otago Journal*, of which he published eight issues between Jan 1848 and Aug 1852. When the first ships had sailed McGlashan redoubled his efforts, and it was admitted that the despatch of 12 of the 14 ships that left for the colony under the Lay Association was due solely to his energy and persistence.

While the controversy on the New Zealand constitution raged in England (1846-52), McGlashan watched it closely from the point of view of the Otago scheme. He was especially jealous that the proposals put forward by the Association in its printed literature should be honoured by the Government in the bill of 1852, and he wrung from the Colonial Secretary the promise of a charter which would enable the association to fulfil its commitments with prospective emigrants. Single-handed he obtained the inclusion in the bill of clause 78, which met this demand. Writing to him in 1852 Sir John Pakington (who piloted the measure through the British Parliament) warmly acknowledged his assistance. He had been in constant communication with the Colonial Office and with every member of Parliament whose interest could be of service to the cause.

When the Constitution Bill had been passed McGlashan felt that his work at Home was fully completed, and he turned his face towards the colony. With his wife and family he sailed in the *Rajah*, which arrived at Port

Chalmers on 8 Oct 1853. McGlashan was entertained at a public dinner and forthwith became a leading citizen of Dunedin. The first Provincial Council had already been elected, but he was soon in service in the capacity of provincial treasurer. Early in 1854 he was sent by presbytery to accompany Bannerman on a visit to the Church members living in North Otago, outside the Otago block. He was also appointed to a committee with Dr Burns to report upon the state of the Maori and half-caste population of the province, with a view to the amelioration of their condition.

At the provincial general election in 1855, McGlashan was elected to the Council, in which he represented the Western District (1855-63). He was a member of the executive in 1855-59 as provincial solicitor and provincial secretary, and in 1858 was for a time deputy-superintendent. McGlashan's health received a severe shock when in 1861 an attempt was made to connect him with the financial scandal which caused the removal of Macandrew from the superintendency. The inquiry showed that he had no moral responsibility, and in the following year he was again a member of the executive. At the general election of 1863 he was nominated (in his absence) for the Waikouaiti seat, but was defeated by Vogel. McGlashan was outspoken in his criticism of Cargill and others for what he considered their betrayal of the Scottish basis of the settlement in extending the emigration scheme to embrace England and Ireland.

In 1862 he was appointed registrar of deeds, and he was a member of the education and lands boards, secretary of the education board and treasurer of the road board. He undertook in 1864 to codify the provincial ordinances for the government, but death intervened (2 Nov 1864) as the result of injuries received in a fall from his horse.

McGlashan married (1827) Isabella, daughter of William Macewen, lieutenant and adjutant of the 1st Royal Scots. She survived until 1888. McGlashan College now occupies the home of McGlashan at Balmacewen.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; N.Z.C (Otago Association papers); Hocken; *Otago Witness*, Mar 1898 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Jan 1930 (p).

McGOWAN, JAMES (1841-1912) was born at Maxwell's Court, county Down, Ireland. His

father having died, he commenced at the age of 15 to learn the trade of a baker, and afterwards served with a firm of storekeepers, flax-millers and farmers. In 1864 he emigrated to Auckland, where he stayed for five years, and then opened a bakery and store at Thames, which he operated until his retirement from business in 1897.

McGowan stood for Parliament in 1887, but was defeated by Fraser. After retiring he devoted his whole time to politics. He was twice mayor. Elected to Parliament for Thames in 1893, he was Government whip in the Parliament elected in 1896, and in 1899 became Minister of Justice and Mines. He held the same portfolios under Hall-Jones and also, with the addition of Immigration and Industries and Commerce, in the Ward cabinet, from which he resigned on 6 Jan 1909. McGowan's administration of the Mines department was noteworthy, and was marked by the opening of several state coal mines. As Minister of Justice also, he passed many acts reforming the system of justice and prisons, and inaugurated tree planting by prisoners. He was then called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 7 May 1912).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1893-1909; *Parltry Record*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 7 Aug 1906.

McGREGOR, ALEXANDER (1829-1901) was born at Malagawatch, Nova Scotia, educated there and brought up to the sea. In 1857 he came to Victoria, and soon afterwards to Auckland, where he initiated a coastal service with Russell, Whangaroa and Mangonui. His first vessel was the schooner *Fairy*, followed by the *Kiwi* and *Ivanhoe*. In 1872 he built his first steamer, the *Rowena*, in the ownership of which he was associated with D. B. and W. Cruickshank, James Macfarlane, William Laird, George Fraser senr., R. Wyles, Reynolds, and Captain James Chapman. McGregor was master. The *Iona* was built in 1875, and later the *Argyle*, *Staffa* and *Katikati*. In 1881 the Northern Steamship Co. was formed, McGregor being general manager to 1888. He then purchased the *Rose Casey* for the Auckland-Waiwera-Mahurangi trade, for which the *Orewa* and *Rob Roy* were afterwards acquired, and the *Kia Ora* for the upper Thames. McGregor died on 11 Jan 1901.

*N.Z. Herald*, 12 Jan 1901.

McGREGOR

McGREGOR, ALEXANDER INNES (1838-1901) was born at Stonehaven, Kincardineshire, and educated at the local grammar school and at King's College, Aberdeen. He was interested in chemistry and came to New Zealand in 1870 under engagement to the distillery at Dunedin. When the distillery was closed down (1871), he settled at Maroa. He actively advocated the proclamation of a borough, became a member of the council and later mayor (for three years) and a member of the Lake Ellesmere trust. McGregor was a freetrader and a strong supporter of W. Montgomery (q.v.), on whose retirement in 1886 he won the seat and represented Maroa to 1890 (when the electorate was merged in Lyttelton). He was chairman of the high school and domain boards. McGregor died on 16 Jan 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.* iii.

MACGREGOR, DONALD, was born in 1824 at Wick, Caithness-shire, Scotland, and was a rope and twine manufacturer. He came to New Zealand first in 1850, was attracted by the gold diggings in New South Wales and Victoria, but returned in 1855, to Nelson. He prospected in the Collingwood district, and discovered the Quartz Ranges. In 1864 he bought land on the West Coast, where he bred high quality cattle. From Apr 1875 till the abolition of the Provincial Council, he occupied the seat for Buller, and he was chairman of the Hampden road board. Some years before his death he retired to live in Nelson.

*Cycl. N.z.*, v (p).

MACGREGOR, DUNCAN (1843-1906) was born at Aberfeldy, Perthshire, and was educated in that parish and at Breadalbane Academy, from which he proceeded on a bursary to Aberdeen University, maintaining himself there by teaching. He graduated M.A. in 1867 after a distinguished career. At Glasgow University he won the coveted Ferguson scholarship in mental science, open to graduates from all Scottish universities. He took his medical degree at Edinburgh in 1870, and in that year was selected as the first professor of mental science and political economy at Otago University, to which he came in the *Wild Deer* (1871).

Macgregor soon gave evidence of the rare width and depth of his philosophy, liberal reading and pronounced views on social questions.

MACGREGOR

Many future leaders of New Zealand sat at his feet (including Stout, T. W. Hislop, Findlay, Wilding, Downie Stewart, Denniston and Dr Fitchett). In the lecture room and as a peripatetic philosopher rambling with his students, he formed a cult of political thought and wielded considerable influence on the intellectual and social life in New Zealand. He was a man of great stature and strength, excelled in robust sports, and throughout life enjoyed the Highland gatherings of his people. In 1873 he was appointed inspector of lunatic asylums in Otago, and from 1876-82 he was medical superintendent of the Dunedin asylum. In 1886 the Stout Government appointed him Inspector-general of Asylums and administrator of the hospital and charitable aid act. As an administrator he was clear, decisive and bold. He wrote his reports in the striking and forceful English which also characterised his series of articles (in the *New Zealand Magazine*) on the problem of poverty. He declined the doctorate of Edinburgh, and was awarded that of Aberdeen without being consulted.

Macgregor died on 16 Dec 1906.

Ross; *Evening Post*, 17, 18 Dec 1906; *N.z. Times*, 17 Dec 1906; Thompson, *Rist. Univ. Otago; App. R.R.* 1879, H.1.

MACGREGOR, JAMES (1830-94) was born in Callender, Perthshire. By dogged persistency and hard work he won his way through the University, was ordained, and preached his first sermon in his native parish. He had charge of Barry, near Dundee, and afterwards of Paisley, from which he was appointed professor of systematic theology in the New Free College in Edinburgh.

In 1881, seeking lighter work, he came to New Zealand, and had charge of Columba Free Church at Oamaru, where he preached periodically in Gaelic. Macgregor had a gifted and cultured intellect and was an accomplished writer, rather in the style of Carlyle. He published a series of meological text books. His death occurred on 8 Oct 1894. (See WILLIAM CUNNINGHAM MACGREGOR.)

*Oamaru Mail*, 9 Oct 1894; *Otago Witness*, 7 Jul 1931 (p).

MACGREGOR, JOHN (1850-1936) was born in Aberfeldy, Perthshire, where he received his primary education. He then went to Edin-

MACGREGOR

burgh University, graduating M.A. (1874). A brother of Dr Duncan Macgregor (q.v.), he was also intended for medicine, but was attracted to law, and on arriving in Dunedin (1875) he entered the office of Robert Stout (q.v.), whose sister Jessie (d. 1890), the daughter of Thomas Stout, of Lenvick, Shetland, he married in 1878. He was admitted to the bar in 1877, and after a few months in Timaru he practised in Dunedin (in partnership with Peter Duncan) until his retirement in 1927.

Macgregor was a very capable lawyer, especially in constitutional law, and a man of deep culture and Liberal opinions. He was particularly interested in education, and was a member of the Otago education board for 12 years and chairman for two years. He wrote frequently to the press well-considered articles on industrial relations and on social matters generally (notably on the population question). He was called to the Legislative Council in 1892, but before the expiration of his term he gave it to be understood that he would not accept reappointment, as he believed that some criticism by a member of the cabinet of his action in Parliament suggested that it was his duty to vote for the party which appointed him. He was called again by the Reform Government in 1914, and reappointed for two subsequent terms, retiring in 1935.

In Parliament Macgregor devoted much attention to reform in social laws. He was responsible for the legitimation act, which provided that a father, by marrying the mother of his illegitimate children, could thereby legitimise them. The divorce law he had amended to equalise the position of husband and wife and to add desertion, failure to maintain, and habitual drunkenness to the grounds of dissolution. W. D. Stewart says Macgregor was an idealist with great force of character and an unusual mastery of legal principles and constitutional law. For many years he was a brilliant polemic writer on politics, with a profound knowledge of political philosophy. He was the first real critic of the system of compulsory arbitration.

Macgregor's principal pamphlets were: *Money Bills* (1895), *Parliamentary Government in New Zealand* (1896), *Marriage and Divol'ee* (1897), *Liberalism True and False* (1899) and *Industrial Arbitration in New Zealand* (1901). He died on 25 Nov 1936.

MACGREGOR

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 10 Sep 1937); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; W. D. Stewart, *Bell; Otago Daily Times*, 17 Oct 1892, 18 Sep 1899, 26 Nov 1936 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

McGREGOR, MALCOLM CHARLES (1896-1936), born near Hunterville, gained distinction as an Air Force pilot during the war of 1914-18. He was commander of Number 85 Squadron of the Royal Air Force, and was awarded the Distinguished Flying Cross with bar. Returning to New Zealand, he became a pioneer of commercial aviation and an organiser of the New Zealand air-mail and passenger services. In 1934 (with H. C. Walker) he took part in the Melbourne centenary air race from England to Australia, establishing a new record for light machines. He was killed at Rongotai aerodrome on 19 Feb 1936.

G. H. Cunningham. *Mac's Memories* (1937) (p): *The Press*, 20 Feb 1936.

MACGREGOR, WILLIAM CUNNINGHAM (1862-1934) was born at Paisley, Scotland, the son of the Rev James Macgregor (1830-94, q.v.). He was educated at vVatson's College and the University of Edinburgh, and came to New Zealand at the age of 19 years. He studied at Otago University, where he passed his final law examinations in 1883 and in the same year received the Canterbury law society's gold medal. He was a keen sportsman, playing cricket for the Carisbrook club (Dunedin) and Rugby for the Dunedin club. In 1898-99 he was champion of the Otago Golf club.

Macgregor practised in Dunedin from 1890 to 1920, and was president of the Otago law society in 1898. In 1903 he became a partner in the firm of Smith, Macgregor and Sinclair, and he was for many years legal adviser to the City Council. In 1914 he became crown prosecutor for the Otago district, and he took silk in the same year. In Jul 1920 he was appointed Solicitor-general. While in control of the Crown Law Office, he had to assume most of the duties of Attorney-general during the absence in Geneva of Sir Francis Bell. In 1923 he became a judge of the Supreme Court, and he retired in 1934, and died on 26 Aug of that year. During his earlier years at the bar Macgregor was a frequent contributor to the press, both in England and New Zealand. He took a keen

McGUIRE

interest in British imperialism, and was the author of *Ideals of Empire* (1908). He married in 1902 Dora Louisa, daughter of G. W. Harris, of Mt Gambier, South Australia. J.H.B.S.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 28 Aug 1934.

McGUIRE, FELIX (1847-1915) was born in county Fermanagh, Ireland, educated there and sailed for Australia in 1862. Early in the following year he crossed to Auckland, enlisted in the Waikato Regiment and was in action at Mauku. Having seen the Waikato campaign through, and been present at Te Ranga (Jun 1864), he visited the West Coast diggings; but a year or two later enlisted in the Wanganui Cavalry for the campaign against Titokowaru. He was mentioned in despatches, transferred to the commissariat and eventually given a commission.

On leaving the service he entered into business as a storekeeper at Patea, prospered financially and took a leading part in public life. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Patea from 1873 until the abolition of the provinces, after which he became chairman of the county council. In the late seventies he moved to Hawera, of which town he was the first mayor; and in 1883 to Auckland, where he acquired business interests. He returned to Hawera in 1886, and in the following year accepted a suggestion made 10 years earlier by opposing Atkinson for the Egmont seat. After a finely organised contest he was narrowly defeated, but when Atkinson retired he gained the seat, which he represented from 1891. In 1896 the Hawera electorate was created and he represented it until 1902, when he was defeated by C. E. Major. In 1913 he again went to reside in Auckland. McGuire received many presentations in recognition of his public services as mayor, member of Parliament and captain of the Hawera Rifles, and his constant interest in charities and social movements. In his later years he farmed at Okaiawa.

He married (1868) a daughter of J. Quin, of Wanganui. McGuire died on 6 Apr 1915.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Jun 1915; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Hawera Star*, 7 Apr 1915. Portrait: Parliament House.

McHARDY, ALEXANDER (1831-99) was born at Strathdon, Aberdeenshire. As a young man

McILRAITH

he emigrated to Australia, where he spent three years but, finding the climate unsuitable to his health, he came to New Zealand in 1861 and settled in Hawkes Bay. He soon had a large business at the Spit in the export of cattle from Hawkes Bay to other parts of New Zealand, especially the goldfields of the South Island. In conjunction with E. J. Coleman, he acquired Blackhead station, where he soon created a fine cattle and sheep property. In 1888 the partnership was dissolved, and McHardy became the sole owner. He was specially noted for his breed of shorthorn cattle. He acquired also a fine sheepraising property known as Longlands. He was president of the Hawkes Bay Agricultural and Pastoral association and of the Caledonian society and a member (and at times chairman) of the Patangata county council, the Hawkes Bay rabbit board and the local road board. He afterwards acquired the Beaulieu estate in the Manawatu, and became an inspiring patron of the Manawatu Agricultural and Pastoral association. McHardy died on 27 Sept 1899.

Payne; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 16 Oct 1925; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 29 Sep 1899.

McILHONE, HUGH, was elected in 1868 as member for Northern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council. In the following year he retired and was defeated by Farnall in the parliamentary elections for the same electorate. He was manager of St Mary's orphanage and of the state forests, resigning his position in 1886. McIlhone married a daughter of John McMullen (1886-88, of county Antrim, Ireland, who came to New Zealand in 1863).

McILRAITH, HUGH, was born in Ayrshire, in 1836, and brought up to sheep farming. In 1855 he came to Australia, and the following year arrived in Canterbury, settling in the Malvern hills district. In 1864 he married a daughter of William Lyon, of Wellington. McIlraith moved to the Amuri district in 1876. He was chairman of the Amuri road board and for three years (1882-84) sat as member for Cheviot in the House of Representatives. He was an original and life member of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral association, president of the New Zealand Trotting association and of the New Brighton club, and a Justice of the peace from 1865 until he resigned in

McINDOE

1896. He retired from farming in 1885.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p).

McINDOE, JAMES (1824-1905) was born at Rothesay, Scotland, and educated in the parish school. He entered an office for business training, but was fond of farming and horticulture and became a member of the Bute farmers' association. He married Elizabeth, daughter of John Gillies (q.v.). His father being a member of the Otago Association, he saw the first two ships leave the Clyde for New Zealand, and when his father died he decided to emigrate.

McIndoe sailed to Otago in the *Alpine* (1859) and commenced business as a merchant and auctioneer, but soon left for the goldfields. Returning to Dunedin, he was in business as a seed merchant till 1866. In 1867 he was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for Green Island and Caversham, which he represented till 1870. He was M.H.R. for Caversham for a few months in 1870. McIndoe took a great interest in the early history of Otago, and contributed many sketches and articles to the press (notably the *Otago Witness*) under the initials 'L.M.L.' *A Sketch of Otago* (published in 1878) is a useful manual and chronology. He was fond of walking and botany. McIndoe was a leading member of the Knights of Labour. In his later years he acted as a government valuer. He died on 4 Sep 1905.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; McIndoe, *op. cit.*; A. Brown; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Sep 1905.

MACKAY, ALEXANDER (1833-1909), born at Edinburgh, was educated at Norfolk House Academy, Southsea, and came to Nelson with his uncle (J. Mackay, senr) by the *Slains Castle* (1845). While engaged farming, he learned the Maori language and he accompanied his cousin (James Mackay) when he purchased the Kaikoura block from the natives (1859), and afterwards on his explorations and negotiations on the West Coast. In Feb 1860 they proceeded up the Buller river to the Grey. As his uncle was trying to find a route through Devil's Grip to Nelson, he returned to economise the expedition's food supplies.

In 1864 Mackay was appointed commissioner of native reserves in the South Island and civil commissioner. His knowledge of the history of the South Island tribes, which was unsurpassed, is obvious in the introductory pages of his

MACKAY

monumental" *Compendium of Official Documents relative to Native Affairs in the South Island* (1873). In 1882 Mackay was transferred to Wellington as commissioner of native reserves for New Zealand, and he frequently sat as a commissioner under the native land frauds prevention act. In 1884 he became a judge of the native land court. He died at Feilding on 18 Nov 1909. Mackay married (1863) a daughter of William Gibbs (q.v.).

*App. H.R.*, 1876, G3a, 1891, Sess. ii G4, 7, 7a; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Hindmarsh; Reid; Harrop; Mackay, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Times*, 19 Nov 1909; *Evening Post*, 18 Nov.

MACKAY, JAMES (1804-75) came to New Zealand in the *Slains Castle*, settling in Nelson early in 1845 on a farm in the Wakapuaka block which he had bought from the New Zealand Company. Disputes about the native title caused him a great deal of trouble. In the first New Zealand Parliament Mackay was M.H.R. for the Town of Nelson (1853-55). He favoured responsible government and took a leading part in establishing the fonnns and privileges of Parliament. He was convener of the committee which considered the customs tariff and brought steam communications under the notice of the House. The incident in which he was assaulted by Sewell and others belongs to the fight for responsible government. Mackay sat in the Nelson Provincial Council for Nelson (1857-61). He died on 31 May 1875.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1854-55; *Parltry Record*; *Nelson P.C. Proc.*; Saunders; Rusden; Thomson; *The Colonist*, 1 Jun 1875.

MACKAY, JAMES (1831-1912) was born in Scotland, and at the age of 13 sailed for New Zealand in the *Slains Castle*, arriving at Nelson Jan 1845. His father (James Mackay, 1804-75, q.v.) having purchased land at Wakapuaka, they commenced farming there, but soon had difficulty with the Ngati-Tama, who disputed the sale of their land. In the seven years James spent with his father he learned a great deal about stock and farming, and in 1852 he took a run at Cape Farewell and 1,500 acres of freehold land fronting on Golden Bay. While raising sheep and cattle on these properties, he commenced a series of important explorations, the first (in 1856) being to the head waters of the Aorere and the Takaka rivers. He was an

## MACKAY

intrepid and fearless bushman and, having mastered the Maori language, was able to use natives in his exploration. In 1855 he met Donald McLean (q.v.), who was much impressed with his qualifications. Early in 1857 Mackay, with Maori companions, started from Cape Farewell and walked to the Mawhera (Grey) river, which they ascended for 50 miles. With the chief Tarapuhi, Mackay explored the river higher up; he sounded the bar and ascertained that small vessels could enter, and returned to Nelson (walking along the coast) to show specimens of coal from Brunner's seam and to report that the pakihi lands of the Mawheraiti were suited for pastoral occupation.

In Jan 1858 Mackay was appointed assistant native secretary for the South Island, his first duty being to set apart native reserves. On the resignation of Domett, Brunner and Heaphy he became sole commissioner of reserves and adjusted most of the disputes. When gold was discovered at Collingwood he had to negotiate with the native owners. He settled many disputes on behalf of miners and natives, and in Oct 1858 was appointed warden on the field. In 1859 he was sent to the East Coast to negotiate the purchase of the Kaikoura block. This done, he was sent to acquire the whole of the West Coast from Cape Farewell to Milford Haven. Crossing the divide, he encountered at lake Sumner the Nelson surveyor, John Rochfort, with a party defining the provincial boundaries. The combined party crossed the saddle into the Teremakau by way of the Hurunui and Harper's Pass and then separated, Rochfort proceeding to lake Brunner and the Grey, and Mackay to the Teremakau and the sea. Mackay met with great difficulty in his negotiations owing to the reluctance of the Maori to part with the country from which they derived greenstone, and their anxiety as to adequate reserves. In Aug 1859 he tried, with one Maori, to reach Nelson by way of the Inangahua saddle, but had to return to Greymouth and walked on to the Buller, where he found the cutter *Supply* and so reached Nelson. He proceeded to Auckland to interview the Governor (Gore-Browne), and in Feb 1860 set out again for the coast fully authorised to agree to the reserves asked for by the Maori chiefs.

Travelling overland to the Maruia plain and the source of the Grey river, Mackay reached

## MACKAY

Mawhera pa in seven weeks. The sellOoner *Gipsy* arrived about the same time with government supplies, and nearly three weeks later Haast, who had also travelled by the Maruia and the Grey, reached the pa. Mackay started with a strong party of Maori and pakeha, and covered a distance of 135 miles to Okarito, where the hui was to be held. Having discussed the sale with the chiefs there, the party proceeded to Bruce Bay (40 miles). From here the travellers returned to Mawhera pa, at the mouth of the Grey, where the deed was signed on 21 May 1860, Mackay signing on behalf of the Government. At the end of 1858, with Major John Lockett, Mackay made an exploration of the headwaters of the Takaka and Karamea, discovering Mts Lockett and Peel and the Diamond lakes. His last expedition on the coast (in 1862) was for the purpose of blazing a track up the Aorere river to the mouth of the Heaphy. On this occasion he walked from Karamea to Westport in one day. Mackay reached Collingwood by way of the Heaphy, previously unexplored, and the Aorere. He left the West Coast in Jul 1863.

On the outbreak of the Waikato war he was summoned to Auckland, and in his capacity of assistant native secretary had charge of the Maori prisoners. His intimate knowledge of the people and their language gave him great influence, and he was sent to the Thames as civil commissioner (May 1864) to assist in settling the natives who had been in rebellion and returned to their homes after Orakau (Mar-Apr 1864). In these negotiations Mackay came into conflict with the senior military officer (Colonel Greer) when he insisted on explaining clearly to the King tribes who wished to surrender that their lands had been confiscated. Greer put him under arrest. On the discovery of gold at the Thames (Jul 1867), Mackay impressed upon the Government his conviction that this providential occurrence would offset the depression which overhung the Colony. In co-operation with the chief Wirope Hoterini Taipari, he negotiated agreements with the Ngati-Tamatera, the Ngai-te-Rangi and the Ngati-Maru, which enabled the field to be opened, and in collaboration with miners' representatives he drew up satisfactory rules. As warden and resident magistrate Mackay showed remarkable energy and judgment in his administration, pro-

## MACKAY

viding in turn for the subsequent rushes at Kauaeranga and Kennedy's Bay. His position was rendered so difficult, however, by the jealousies of the provincial and general Governments, that he tendered his resignation. The Government insisted that he should carry on the duties of the native office, at any rate to the end of the year, and he continued to render useful service as civil agent and commissioner at native gatherings in Waikato and Thames.

In 1869 Mackay intended to oppose Gillies for the superintendency of Auckland, but left the field to Williamson. He was elected to the Provincial Council for Thames in 1870 and again at the end of the year, sitting till 1873. He was then agent for the General Government in Waikato. In 1875 he petitioned against the return of Sir George Grey as M.H.R. for Thames, on the ground that he had already been elected for Auckland City West. The select committee decided against him. In 1879 Mackay was again for a short time resident magistrate and warden at Greymouth. He stood for Auckland City North in 1887, and was narrowly defeated by Cadman for Coromandel. Mackay died on 13 Oct 1912.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Nelson P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; App. H.R.*, 1869 A15, 16, 17, 18, 1873 G3, 1876 II; *Parltry Record; Thames Jubilee* (p); Reid; O. S. Meads, unpublished thesis on C. Heaphy; Hindmarsh; *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Feb 1889; *Westport Times and Star*, 28 Dec 1926; *Auckland Star*, 29 Dec 1892.

MACKAY, JAMES (1857-1907) was born at Duns, Berwickshire, educated in Edinburgh and went to sea, serving as apprentice in ships of the Henderson line between England and New Zealand. Leaving the *Timaru* in 1875, he worked his way from Dunedin to Invercargill, was employed for some time at the Matura paper mills, made another round voyage in the *Waimea*, and then settled in New Zealand, driving wagons over the Rimutaka and at other jobs. In 1884 he made a round voyage in the *Lady Jocelyn*, taking frozen meat from the North Island to England, and then worked for the Wellington harbour board for some years.

In 1891 he was appointed to the staff of the newly organised Labour department, to which he gave many years valuable service. The state farm at Weraroa was one of his projects. Mackay was active in friendly societies, being a prominent member of the freemasons, odd-

## .MACKAY

fellows and foresters. He died on 23 Sep 1907.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p).

MACKAY, JESSIE (1864-1938), the eldest daughter of Robert and Elizabeth MacKay, was born at Rakaia Gorge in Canterbury. Her father for many years managed Raincliff and Opuha stations, and was afterwards in charge of the Manawatu Land Co.'s property in the North Island. Educated in her own home, she had obtained a good grounding in the English classics before she entered the Normal SellOol in Christchurch. During her teaching service she was in charge of the schools at Kakahu Bush (1887-90) and Ashwick Flat (1893-94). In 1889 her first book of *Ballads* appeared, to be followed in 1891 by *The Sitter on the Rail*, a volume especially interesting because, polemical as well as poetical, it revealed first her own peculiar blend of inspiration. For 10 years she was lady editor of the *Canterbury Times*. In 1908 was published another book of verse, *From the Maori Sea*, and in 1909 appeared her most considerable collection, *Land of the Morning*, which contains poems which will stand to her name in a New Zealand renaissance. It contains also songs such as 'For Love o' Appin: which is worthy of inclusion in any Scottish anthology. 'The Burial of Sir John McKenzie' is a striking tribute to a great land reformer, the Gracchus of New Zealand. Both were inspired by the memory of the evictions of the Scottish crofters; and the one by enactment, the other by song, strove to save this young country from like abuses. In 1926 appeared a small gift volume, *Bride of the Rivers*, and in 1935 another volume of greater merit called *Vigil*. Her poems are included in anthologies here and overseas.

A fine humanitarian, Jessie MacKay worked for many causes, for women's rights and for small nationalities. Her vigorous, trenchant articles won her a wide public. She was sent as delegate in 1921 to the Irish conference at Paris. She toured through France, Germany, England, Scotland and Ireland and met many of the leading minds of the day. In 1935 her admirers here and overseas presented her with a testimonial of their esteem. In 1936 the State, acting on wise suggestions, raised literature to the status of a national service by granting her a pension and placing her on the civil list. In an autobiographical sketch which she wrote for

## MACKAY

an Australian paper, she spoke of the busy thirties in which the new century found me a city dweller, heading on to be a journalist of sorts, thanks to two large-hearted editors—Samuel Saunders of the *Lyttelton Times* and William Fenwick of the *Otago Witness*. No need to rehearse how A. G. Stephens gave me a foothold in Australia ere I knew I had one in New Zealand, nor how the slender sheaf of verse gathered then was finally bound up into *Land of the Morning* in 1909 and a tiny Melbourne booklet of the following year. And there is less than no need to name this and that claim and cause of a battle-weary age, going far to stifle the small silvery call that poets hear: that would be nearer a story of endings than one cares to think upon.' Of her causes perhaps the dearest to her was that of prohibition. A year or two before her death she wrote passionately: 'How willingly I would give up my little bit of fame if my causes might prosper.' To the very end she worked for Scottish home rule. She, foretelling world-events, dubbed herself Cassandra, and indeed there was something vatic in her gift. Something native leapt into our literature at her coming. She represents the period of transition, when New Zealand first became country-conscious, and we are fortunate in the gift and in the integrity of such a pioneer.

E.D.

*Annals N.Z. Lit.*; Acland; E. M. Dunlop in *N.Z. Herald*, 11 Jun 1904; *Star-Sun*, 23 Aug 1938 (p); *The Press* and *The Dominion*, 24 Aug; J. Cowan in *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, 1 Jan 1937.

MACKAY, JOHN (1851-1937) was born in Fifeshire, Scotland, came to Dunedin in the *Storm Cloud* (1860) and was educated at the public schools and the Otago Boys' High School (1863-64). He then spent some years in the office of his brother Joseph, owner of the *Bruce Herald*, Milton, and after 12 months with Mills, Dick and Co., established himself as a printer in Dunedin (1871). He was associated with Thomas Bracken as printers of the *Saturday Advertiser* in Dunedin. He was also for a while in partnership with George Fenwick (q.v.), and afterwards senior partner in Mackay, Rick and Munro. He sold out this interest in 1888, and became factory manager for the *Evening Star*.

In 1896 Mackay was appointed Government Printer, an office which he held till 1916. He took some little part in local affairs, being a

## MACKECHNIE

member of school committees in Dunedin and an elder of the First Church, of St John's Church in Wellington and the Island Bay Church. He married (1879) Euthenia, daughter of D. McCorkindale (Dunedin). His death occurred on 3 Mar 1937.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

MCKAY, JOHN CLARK, was member of the Southland Provincial Council for Waihopai (1861-64) and was on the executive in 1861-63, and in 1864.

MACKAY, JOSEPH (?-1918) was born in Scotland, and gained his M.A. degree at Kings College, Aberdeen. He taught in a grammar school at Bristol and in a Presbyterian school in Australia, and in 1865 came to New Zealand to take up the position of mathematics and assistant master at Nelson College. This he held till 1881, being also in charge of the boarding establishment. From 1881 to 1891 he was headmaster of Wellington College, which under his guidance had considerable success in civil service and competitive examinations. After retiring he farmed at Midhurst, Taranaki, where he died in Jun 1918.

A son, CHARLES EVAN MACKAY (1875-1929) was mayor of Wanganui (1906-13, 1915-20). He was shot while acting as a press correspondent in Berlin on 3 May 1929.

*Nelson Coll. O.B. Reg.*; Leckie (p); *The Times*, 6, 7, 8 May 1929.

MACKAY, THOMAS (1826-91) was born at Inverness, Scotland, and educated and trained as a civil engineer. He practised until middle age in Ireland and came to Nelson in 1871, the family settling at Aniseed valley. Following a visit by the Governor (Lord Normanby), he was appointed to the land purchase branch of the Public Works department, being later Government agent on the West Coast and trust commissioner for native reserves; deputy land tax commissioner (1879), and trustee of West Coast (North Island) settlement reserves (1882-84). In 1890 he was a commissioner, with Rees and Carroll, on the operation of native land laws. He had almost finished his dissenting report when he died (13 Jun 1891).

*App. H.R.*, ii 1891 Glā; *Evening Post*, 15 Jun 1891.

MACKECHNIE, EDMUND AUGUSTUS (1823-1901) was born at St Christopher's, West

## McKELLAR

Indies, a son of the Rev Charles Mackechnie, an army chaplain. Coming to New South Wales with his father, he became associate to his relative, Sir Alfred Stephen, and was admitted a solicitor. After practising for some years he came to Auckland (1870), where he was in partnership with MacCormick and later with Q. Nicholson. He was a member of the City Council (1882-85) and chairman of the hospital board, but his main interests were literary and scientific. He was president of the Auckland Museum and Institute and of the Society of Arts. On his death (on 17 Jan 1901) Mackechnie bequeathed to the Auckland Institute his books and £2,500 to be applied to the purchase of scientific works, and to the Society of Arts a like sum, which was devoted to the erection of the art gallery in Kitchener Street.

*Lyttelton Times*, 2 Dec 1885; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Jan 1901, 8 Nov 1902; *Auckland Star*, 17 Jan 1901.

McKELLAR, DAVID, was born in the western Highlands of Scotland, the son of John McKellar, of Knebworth, Victoria, and went as a young man to Australia, where he married (1867) a daughter of the Hon W. Skene. He came to Otago from Australia and joined Alexander McNab in prospecting for land in Southland. From the Bluff they proceeded northward, and McKellar chose the Longridge property. The native grass was so long and coarse that it took him and his brother Peter more than a year to get their sheep to the station from the Bluff. McKellar grew his first crop of wheat in a bend of the Mataura river below Waikaia plains station. He did much exploring, largely in the company of George Gunn, and they gave their names to two lakes. He was the first pakeha to see the central part of Lake Wakatipu (1857-58), but was prevented by adverse winds from exploring it with a mokihi. The winter snow here seemed too severe for stock. In 1866 or 1867 he sold his Waimea property to G. M. Bell. On the departure of his brother John for New Mexico in 1877, he took over the management of the Brooksdale station at Tapanui. Failing to sell it in small farms, McKellar adopted intensive farming and American methods of pig-raising and spent much money on stock. In the early eighties he purchased land in Mexico, where he created a modern ranch, but constant troubles with the

## McKELLAR

natives over the grazing of their cattle culminated in his being murdered (on 26 Jul 1892).

JOHN McKELLAR (d. 1883) was a well known racing owner and a patron of coursing, and introduced fallow deer into the Tapanui district. He had a store and auctioneering business in Tapanui and was the first mayor of the borough (1876). Two years later he bought the Brooksdale station from his father-in-law, W. Pinkerton (q.v.).

Roberts, *Southland; Col. Gent.*; Beattie; *Tapanui; Otago Daily Times*, 4 Aug, 4 Oct 1892.

McKELLAR, DUNCAN, was born in Scotland. He had a good liberal education and was engaged at different times in journalism, teaching, dredging, carpentry, timber rafting and bridge building. He settled in the Cromwell district just after the discoveries of Hartley and Reilly (1862), and was many years headmaster of the school. He represented Kawarau in the Provincial Council (1873-75), and was secretary for the goldfields in Reid's administration. McKellar died on 1 Aug 1890.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Aug 1890.

McKELLAR, HENRY SCOTT (1834-1912), a son of Dugald McKellar, M.D., was born in Battersea, Surrey, and educated at Christs Hospital in London. In 1852 he arrived in New Plymouth by the *St Michael*. After farming for a year he entered the Government service as clerk and landing waiter in the customs, and he became chief clerk at Lyttelton (1859); sub-collector in Christchurch (1863) and eventually inspector of customs (1887), and Secretary (1888). Retiring on pension in 1892, he settled in Palmerston North, where he died on 27 Jul 1912. McKellar married (1861) Sophia Louisa, daughter of Joseph Heywood, a London merchant; and (1871) Maria Russell, daughter of Colonel Hulme, of the 80th Regiment. For 30 years he was a member of the Anglican synod, and secretary of the Melanesian mission.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 25 Jul 1912.

McKELLAR, PETER (1827-84) was born in Scotland and trained as a surveyor. He practised for some time in Glasgow before coming to Australia to join an elder brother. In 1855 he crossed to New Zealand to join Alexander Mc-

Nab in exploring the Murihiku district for pastoral-land. As a result he and his brother David (q.v.) for some years worked the Longridge and Waimea properties in Southland. *Mter* they separated, Peter acquired also Glenure (in the Hokonui district). He represented Oreti in the Southland Provincial Council (1864-65). On retiring from Longridge McKellar lived in Invercargill. His death occurred on 11 Nov 1884.

Beattie, ii, 103: *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Dec 1884.

MACKELVIE, JAMES TANNOCK (1824-85) was born in Glasgow, his father being an officer in H.M. Customs. He was educated in Glasgow, and trained to mercantile life. For some years he was in business in Liverpool, where he became manager of the Birkenhead Steam Ferry Co. He came to New Zealand in 1867 and was associated as a partner with Brown and Campbell until 1872. Meanwhile he invested shrewdly and successfully in mining ventures on the Thames field. He was one of the four owners of the Golden Crown (1869-70). Retiring in a few years with a large fortune, he returned to England. In 1877 he made the first of a series of gifts to the City of Auckland, in this instance a collection of English coins. In the next eight years he donated valuable books and works of art to the Auckland Public Library and the Art Gallery. Mackelvie died on 4 Jun 1885, leaving a sum of [40,000 for the art gallery.

Barr; Weston; *Auckland Star*, 28 Jul 1885; *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Dec 1882, 9 May 1883, 24 Jul 1885, 28 Nov 1890, 23 Apr, 13 Sep 1892. Portrait: *Auckland Art Gallery* (by L. J. Steele).

McKENNA, EDWARD (1830-1908) was born in Leeds, of Irish parentage, and came to New Zealand in 1846 as a non-commissioned officer in the 65th Regiment. He served through the Maori wars, and on 7 Sep 1863 was awarded the Victoria Cross for bravery in an engagement at Alexandra Redoubt, near Camerontown. He was also promoted from colour-sergeant to ensign, and received that rank in the militia (Dec 1865). On retiring (1867), he joined the New Zealand Railway department, being station-master in **Kaiapoi**, Invercargill, Ashburton, Palmerston North, Gore and Wanganui (1896). He retired from the railways in 1903, and died at Palmerston North 8 Jun 1908.

Railway department records; *Who's Who N.Z.*,

1908; Cowan; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Evening Post*, 9 Jun 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 10 Jun 1903; *N.Z. Graphic*, 14 Oct 1893 (p); *Auckland Weekly News*, 27 Oct 1899 (p).

McKENZIE, DUNCAN (1808-93) was born in Prince Edward island, and returned with his parents to the parish of Applecross, in Ross, Scotland, where he was educated. At the age of 21 he again emigrated with his family to Cape Breton island, where he and his brother Murdoch engaged in seafaring, becoming master mariners and eventually shipowners. They prospered, left the sea and became storekeepers at St Ann's.

When Norman McLeod (q.v.) in 1847 received a letter from his son suggesting that the colony should move to Australia, Duncan and Murdoch became the leaders of the movement, helped to finance and build the ships, and enrolled 300 of the settlers for the migration. McKenzie sailed in the *Highland Lass*, when she departed from St Ann's. *Mter* making a call at the Cape, they reached Adelaide on 10 Apr 1852, and Duncan with three other leaders explored as far as Mount Lofty to ascertain whether suitable land was available. Proceeding to Melbourne, they established a camp on the banks of the Yarra while the leaders prospected as far inland as Mount Disappointment and then acquired the schooner *Gazelle* and sailed for New Zealand. Arriving at Auckland in Jan 1853, they hired a longboat and sailed north to Whangarei and Waipu, where they selected an area of land for the Highland settlement.

McKenzie established himself in business in Auckland as storekeeper, general agent and ship chandler, mainly to look after the interests of the settlers at Waipu, and to carry through the negotiations for a special settlement. He and Murdoch advanced the money to build the *Flora Macdonald* as a trading schooner for the settlers and eventually Duncan moved his abode to Marsden Point, Whangarei, where he established a store and depot. He financed the building of several ships, and himself took command on various occasions, notably of the *Don*, the *Thistle* and the *Jessie*. He did much to promote the development of the settlement, introduced the first threshing machine to Waipu and established saleyards at Cove. He took a prominent part in public life, and represented Marsden in the Provincial Council (1861-65) after the re-

tirement of his brother Murdoch. McKenzie died on 29 June 1893.

N. R. Mackenzie (p).

MACKENZIE, FRANCIS WALLACE (1824-92) was born at Tarral, Tarbat, Ross-shire, the son of George MacK. Ross, and was commissioned as ensign in the Bombay Native Infantry (1841). He served with the 8th Infantry in Scinde (1843), being present at Hyderabad. Promoted lieutenant (1845), he was appointed interpreter in Hindustani to his corps and two years later quartermaster and interpreter in Hindustani and Mahratti. In 1851 he received a bonus for proficiency and was promoted captain (1856). On retiring he came to Victoria, and in 1855 landed at Auckland from the *Kestrel*. He travelled by the Waikato and Wanganui rivers to Wellington, prospected thoroughly the grazing lands of Marlborough, and eventually settled on the Pomahaka runs, South Otago, in company with Pinkerton. Later he bought the freehold of Glenkenich.

Mackenzie represented Clutha in the Provincial Council (1863-70), and was M.H.R. for Mataura (1881-84). He contested Waikaia against Valentine (1887). He was a member of the first Clutha county council, and later chairman of the council and the charitable aid board. He died on 5 Dec 1892.

India Office records; *Otago P.C. Proc.*; C. A. Macdonald; Beattie ii; Roberts, *Southland*; *Tapanui*; *Otago Daily Times*, 6 Dec 1892. Portrait: Parliament House.

MACKENZIE, JAMES, was born in Ross-shire, Scotland, about 1820, and was brought up as a shepherd. In 1847 he came from Australia to New Zealand, and he was employed for a time as drover and shepherd in Southland. He selected a run in south Otago, and appears to have gone north with his bullock and dog in search of stock. In Mar 1855 a mob of 1,000 sheep was found to be missing from the Levels run, in South Canterbury. It was tracked westward through the low passes to the plains beyond, now called the Mackenzie country, where Mackenzie was apprehended. He was suspected of having stolen other sheep, which he had driven over rough unexplored country and some of which were traced as far south as Southland.

Mackenzie was brought to trial at Christ-

church and sentenced to five years' imprisonment. After several escapes and attempts, his sentence was remitted and he was deported. To Mackenzie belongs the credit of exploring much of the mountainous back country of Canterbury and Otago. It is believed that he died in Australia.

Justice department records; Woodhouse; Acland; *Cant. O.N.*; J. C. Andersen; Beattie ii; *Lyttelton Times*, 18 Apr, 20 Jun 1855.

McKENZIE, SIR JOHN (1838-1901) was born on the estate of Ardross, in Ross-shire, in 1838, educated in the parish school, and then went to work on the farm of his father, a progressive husbandman who used lime as a fertiliser.

On reaching manhood he decided to go abroad and chose New Zealand. In 1860 he married Annie Munro (of Glenglass), and sailed for Otago, where he took employment in order to gain New Zealand experience. Having been manager for some time of J. Jones's Shag Valley (Puketapu) station, he acquired a 60-acre farm when it was cut up (1865). McKenzie, with a Scot's keen interest in land questions, felt strongly on the practices prevailing in Otago, and criticised them openly when he had been a few years in the country. Having become an independent farmer, he took part in public affairs. He became clerk and treasurer of the Bushey road board, and he successfully agitated for a school in the district, he himself becoming secretary of the committee. In 1868 he contested the Waikouaiti seat in the Provincial Council against G. McLean (q.v.). Though unsuccessful, he created a good impression of his qualifications for public life. Unsophisticated he remained throughout life, with a rugged, straightforward manner; but the integrity of his convictions was obvious.

In 1871 he was elected M.P.C. for Waihemo (defeating John Douglas, q.v.), and he held the seat until the provinces were abolished. He now definitely took the lead in local politics, and before 1881 was able to claim that he had been elected to every office but Parliament. He was a member of the Waikouaiti county council, and advocated with success the creation of the new county of Waihemo (1882), of which he was the first chairman. McKenzie had for some years in the Provincial Council opposed the land policy of the day, and strong condem-

nation of dummyming in Otago lands was a leading factor when, standing as an independent, he was elected to Parliament for Moeraki in 1881. In a speech on 25 Nov 1881 he advocated selection of land by ballot, elective land boards, Bible-reading in schools, grouping of counties for education board elections, and the establishment of arbitration courts. McKenzie continued to represent the same district (with several adjustments) throughout his parliamentary life (Moeraki, 1881-87; Waihemo, 1887-90; Waitaki, 1890-93; Waihemo, 1893-1900). His interest in land problems soon gave him a position of authority in the councils of the Liberal Party. In 1882 he made a striking speech at a banquet tendered to him in Dunedin, and during some years' membership of the land board he stood strenuously against the use of the regulations to the disadvantage of genuine land settlement. Naturally retiring, McKenzie came forward slowly in the councils of his party, and was almost a silent member of Parliament until the debate opened on the land bill, when he made a forceful maiden speech. He was, however, appointed whip to the Stout-Vogel Government. Meanwhile he was a member of the Otago education board (1883-92) and land board.

On the Liberal party being returned at the elections of 1890, Ballance invited him to become Minister of Lands and Agriculture (Jan 1891). He accepted, and threw himself with his whole heart into the land settlement policy. He earned a series of laws against dummyming and to facilitate the subdivision of large estates for closer settlement. In addition to individual settlers who were anxious to get farms, there were numerous associations waiting to settle upon special settlements. During the Ballance administration McKenzie laid the foundations of a well-considered land policy and piloted several measures in Parliament. The Cheviot estate, the first of the large holdings to be resumed by the Government under the taxing laws, was taken over a few days before the death of Ballance. In the following year the advances to settlers act was passed and the act authorising the compulsory taking of large private estates, and in 1894 the dairy industry act.

Under the strain of his vigorous administration and long parliamentary sessions McKenzie's health suffered, and towards the end of the Parliament of 1896-99 he paid a visit to England

for medical advice. When he returned it was evident he could no longer stand the strain of political life. He was again elected, but was unable to take his seat in Parliament, and in Jun 1900 he resigned from the ministry and his seat in Parliament. The dignity of K.C.M.G. was conferred upon him personally at his home by the Duke of York. In May 1901 he was called to the Legislative Council, but he was unable to travel to Wellington for the session, and died at his homestead on 6 Aug 1901. He was keenly interested in Gaelic matters and was some years chief of the Gaelic Society.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Gisborne, *Rulers*; Drummond, *Seddon*; Condliffe; Scholefield, *N.Z. Evol.*; Reeves, *State Experiments in Australia and New Zealand*, vol ii; *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Aug 1901; *Public Opinion*, 3 Dec 1881, 29 Sep, 21 Oct 1882; *Evening Post*, 10 Oct 1936. Portraits: Parliament House, photograph, and bust, by Pagram (1903).

MACKENZIE, MACKAY JOHN SCOBIE (1845-1901) was born at Tain, in Ross-shire and was the son of Roderick Mackenzie and Mary Anne Scobie. He was brought up on the family estate of Criech, in Sutherlandshire (sold about 1900 to Andrew Carnegie). His father, a planter in British Guiana, died in 1850, and in 1852 Mackay was sent to John Watson's College, Edinburgh. He delighted in English, history and literature, but intensely disliked mathematics.

In 1860 he spent a year at Tain Academy, and then the mother and her family sailed in the *Raglan* for Australia to join the second son Kenneth on a small property on the Victoria-New South Wales border. Scobie found employment on a wild station in the Mallee country, at the junction of the Murray and Murrumbidgee, and in 1863 he became outstation shepherd at Swan hill. Hemet the Burke and Wills expedition at the outset of their fatal expedition (1861), and later met the only survivor (King). He was sent with a large flock of sheep to cross Australia to Carpentaria, a journey which was expected to take two years. After travelling for several weeks he was overtaken by the bailiff and relieved of his charge, which was required to pay wages. Left with only a few horses and a little money, he made his way back to his station. Mackenzie met Adam Lindsay Gordon and Marcus Clarke, and himself had contributions accepted by the

*Argus* and the *Australasian*, and continued to write more or less regularly for the rest of his life. He became overseer of P. Macarthur's station at Meningoort, in the western district of Victoria, where he remained until 1870, when he accepted an offer from the New Zealand and Australian Land Company to manage its Deepdell estate at Macraes, Otago.

In this post he had great success, and in 1875 he purchased the Kyeburn station in partnership with F. D. Rich, whom he afterwards bought out. He lived there 1875-84. For some years he was chairman of the Maniatoto county council. Though he had no political ambitions, he ventured in 1881 to oppose the re-election of de Lautour for Mt Ida, on the ground that as he had left the district he could not be really interested in its welfare. Believing that Mackenzie had been returned, the crowd carried him in triumph through the streets of Naseby, but a block vote which arrived during the night changed the position. Mackenzie won the seat in 1884 against J. Ewing (St Bathans), and in 1885 moved to Dunedin, taking up his residence at Grant's Braes. He supported the Stout-Vogel Government until its defeat in 1887. At the general election in that year he was opposed by Stout's brother-in-law. In 1890 he defeated Pyke by 100 votes.

At the next election, owing to an adjustment of boundaries, he found himself contesting the Waihemo seat against his old friend John McKenzie (q.v.). Mackenzie strongly criticised the Government's purchase of the Pomahaka estate in the electorate from a Government supporter at a price which he believed to be excessive. The Minister of Lands won, and the breach between the two Scots, never a personal one, was soon healed. In Jul 1894 Scobie contested the Tuapeka vacancy against Larnach. In 1896 he stood for the City of Dunedin, winning by a record majority of 1600 votes (with J. A. Millar and Fish as colleagues). Though at the following election his health was obviously unequal to the continued strain of politics, he yielded to a feeling of duty to oppose the Labour candidates, and was defeated by three Liberal-Labour aspirants. His political career was singularly brilliant and consistent. He was a strong freetrader. Though a believer in temperance, he opposed prohibition. He voted against female suffrage, but was at the top of

the poll at the first election after it was carried. Elected in the first instance to support the Stout-Vogel combination, he was afterwards one of its strongest critics. He opposed Atkinson, too, when he proposed a protective tariff, but would have none of Liberal politics when Ballance came into office. Moderate and considerate to his opponents, he was absolutely fearless in enunciating his own principles, and never allowed personal friendships to compromise his convictions. He was extremely well read, and had a fine private library. Inspired by his early friendship with Marcus Clarke in the Australian back country, he sought honours in journalism, and until his death was a regular contributor to the *Australasian*.

Mackenzie married (1876), Jessy Adela (1850-1937), the only daughter of F. Dillon Bell (q.v.). He died on 15 Sep 1901.

S. Macdonald (p); Reeves; Gisborne, *Rulers*; *Otago Witness*, 27 Aug, 3 Sep 1896; *Evening Star*, 15 Sep 1911; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Sep 1901, 15 Sep 1921 (appreciation by W. Rolleston, 17 Sep). Portrait: Parliament House.

McKENZIE, MURDOCH (1812-84), a younger brother of Duncan McKenzie (q.v.), was born at Prince Edward island, returned with his parents to the parish of Applecross, Ross, Scotland, at the age of two, was educated there and trained to the sea. At the age of 21 he returned to Cape Breton, became a master mariner and shipowner, and built a number of small ships at Baddeck. In the migration to Australia he sailed in the *Highland Lass* (Oct 1852), and took command when the captain was superseded at the Cape. After the settlement was established in New Zealand he bought the Aberdeen topsail schooner *Gazelle* and sailed her for some years. McKenzie sailed partly in his own interest the schooners *Thistle*, *Flora Macdonald*, *Waverley* and *Kenilworth*, the barque *Martha* and the brigantine *Peerless*, trading in the islands and all round the world. In later years he commanded the *Three Cheers*, *Linda Weber*, *Handa Isle* and *Winona*. He died on board the *Winona* on 3 Jul 1884. McKenzie was a member of the Auckland Provincial Council for Marsden (1859-61).

Macdonald; N. R. McKenzie (p); *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Aug 1884.

McKENZIE, RODERICK (1852-1934) was the son of a sea captain and was born in Ross-shire.

MACKENZIE

He received his education at the Glasgow Academy, and afterwards entered the service of the London and Glasgow Engineering and Ship-building co. Having visited Canada, he came to New Zealand in the *City of Dunedin* in 1869, being first attracted to the goldfields of Otago. He then moved to the West Coast, where he engaged in mining, engineering and bridge-building. He saw his first service in local bodies on the Westland harbour board and tile Kumara hospital board. In 1893 he was elected to represent Buller in Parliament (defeating Eugene O'Connor). At tile following election, having moved to Nelson, he was returned for Motueka, which he represented until his defeat by R. P. Hudson in 1913. McKenzie was chairman of committees from 1906, and in 1909 he joined the Ward Government as Minister of Public Works and Mines, holding office until its resignation (1912) and administering also the portfolio of customs. He was a member of the Nelson harbour board. McKenzie contested the Buller seat in 1932. He died on 9 Oct 1934.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 10 Oct 1934; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Dominion*, 10 Oct 1934 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

MACKENZIE, **SIR THOMAS** (1854-1930) was born in Edinburgh, the son of David Stewart Mackenzie, and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Robert Henderson* (1858). He went first to the Green Island school, then to the North East Valley and finally to the Stone School in Dunedin. Then he took positions in commercial offices in Dunedin and Port Chalmers.

At the age of 20 he joined the Survey department in Wellington, and he was engaged in triangulation in the Hutt valley and surveying tile Paraekaretu and Manchester blocks. Returning to Otago, he took part in the survey for the Walton Park railway line. In 1877 he opened a store at Balclutha. He was on the borough council (1881-87) and was two years mayor. Having sold his business (1886), he was elected in 1887 as M.H.R. for Clutha (defeating J. W. Thomson), and he represented that electorate till 1896, when he retired from politio for a few years. In the late eighties he was associated with the Atkinson party, and throughout the Ballance and the early years of the Seddon administration he was a consistent critic

MACKENZIE

of their policy. In 1889 Mackenzie was commissioned by the Government to inquire into the produce trade in Great Britain, and in 1894 he was a member of the tariff commission. On his retirement in 1896 he went to London as the representative of the Canterbury Farmers' Co-operative association, and remained there for three years. On his return he took up his residence in Kaikorai valley.

The resignation of Sir John McKenzie in 1900 furnished an opportunity of re-entering Parliament, and he was elected M.H.R. for Waihemo, and re-elected in 1902 and 1905 for the same seat (then called Waikouaiti). In 1901 he was a member of the royal commission on education, and in 1903 he was chairman of the parliamentary commerce committee. Meanwhile he had been mayor of Roslyn (1901-02) and had done service on other bodies, including the Otago education board (1893-96, 1900-08; chairman 1906-07), the Otago High School governors (sometime chairman and treasurer), the hospital and charitable aid board, and the benevolent trustees. Owing to another adjustment of electoral boundaries he lost his seat in 1908, and was next elected for Taieri. At the following election (for the same reason) he sought a seat in the North Island, and was returned for Egmont, defeating B. Dive (1911).

Mackenzie had now moved towards the Liberal party, and after the election in 1908 he joined the Ward cabinet as Minister of Industries and Commerce and later of Agriculture, Tourists and Health Resorts (6 Jan 1909).

At the elections of 1911 the ministry received a setback, and on Parliament assembling the Government was saved by the casting vote of the Speaker (Feb 1912). Sir Joseph Ward resigned and Mackenzie was then elected leader of the Liberal party and called upon to form a ministry. He took office on 28 Mar 1912, but as soon as Parliament met his party was defeated by 41 votes to 33, and he resigned office (10 Jul). On 22 Aug he resigned his seat in Parliament to accept the high commissionership in London, which he administered with marked ability until 1920. Besides the heavy duties devolving upon him in connection with the war, Mackenzie was a member of the Pacific Cable board (1912-20), the war graves commission, the Dardanelles royal commission and the conference on safety of life at sea (1913), and

McKENZIE

was a delegate at tile peace conference (1919). He was created a K.C.M.G. (1916), and promoted to G.C.M.G. (1920); was a grand officer of the Crown of Belgium, and honorary LL.D. of Edinburgh University. In 1898 he was elected **F R G S**

On returning to New Zealand Mackenzie was called to the Legislative Council (1921), and he was a member till his death (14 Feb 1930). He married (1884) Ida Henrietta, daughter of Charles Nantes (Geelong, Victoria). She died in 1926.

Mackenzie was keenly interested in exploring and natural history. In 1881, with Professor Scott and James Allen, he walked from Wakatipu by the Harris saddle to Martin's bay. In 1885 he made his first exploration (in the Tautuku forest), and in 1888 he was associated with Quinton McKinnon (q.v.) in the search for Professor Mainwaring Brown, who was lost between Manapouri and the West Coast sounds. He discovered a pass between Manapouri and Hall's Arm. In 1892 he had charge of the search for McKinnon. His travels in 1894 disclosed three practicable passes between Manapouri and Dusky Sound. In 1896 he completed his explorations, and made a comprehensive report to the Government on the geology, fauna and flora of the area. He was president of the New Zealand Bird Protection Society.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.*; *Evening Star* (p), *Evening Post*, 14 Feb 1930; *Otago Daily Times*, 31 Aug, 12, 29 Oct 1888; 17 Mar 1896. Portrait: Parliament House.

McKENZIE, **THOMAS WILMOR** (1827-1911) was born in London, and went with his parents to Newfoundland, but owing to tile death of his father returned to England. His mother became interested in New Zealand, and embarked in the *Adelaide* (Sep 1839).

The youth was apprenticed in tile first days of the settlement at Pito-one to the printing press of Samuel Revans, and helped to produce the first issues of the *New Zealand Gazette* which were published in the colony. Shortly after tile *Adelaide* cast anchor he undertook to spend the night ashore at tile Pipitea pa in charge of a whare built for Dr Evans. He was a strong swimmer, and he formed a boating club in connection with one of his later newspapers which won the cup offered for rowing compe-

McKENZIE

UtlOns. This club became the Wellington rowing club. On removing to the present site of Wellington, McKenzie completed his five years' articles, and carried on for another two years as a journeyman. Work being slack, the men agreed to work alternate weeks, and during his off weeks McKenzie occupied himself on a piece of land at Makara.

When the paper changed hands, four of the composers (W. E. Vincent, George Fellingham, James Muir and McKenzie) started the *Independent*, which they ran successfully for many years. As his partners left one by one, McKenzie became sole proprietor and carried on the *Independent* on consistent and reputable lines until its demise in 1874. The *New Zealand Times* Co., formed in 1873, took over the property, tile *Independent* changing its name to the *New Zealand Times* (Jun 1874). McKenzie remained on as secretary and manager to the company until he retired from active service.

He was a member of the Settlers' Constitutional Association working for representative government, and of the Town and Country Land Association (tile predecessor of the building society), and later helped materially the Small Farms Association in the Wairarapa. He made no attempt to get into the Provincial Council into Parliament, but was a member of the Wellington City Council (1881-87) and contested the mayoralty unsuccessfully. As first corresponding secretary of oddfellows in New Zealand, he obtained six charters from the Manchester Unity, two of which went to lodges in Wellington (Antipodean and Britannia), and two others to the first lodges in Auckland and Dunedin. From 1848 almost to the time of his death he was secretary of the widows' and orphans' society of the order. As a freemason he was a past master, for some time district warden, and first grand principal of the Royal Arch Chapter. Through him the Provincial Council granted bOtl to oddfellows and freemasons sections of land for their lodgerooms. He was one of the founders of the Mechanics' Institute (which had a strong educational influence for many years); a trustee of the home for tile aged needy, a member of the Wellington licensing committee, and an elder of St John's Church. He died on 2 Mar 1911.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Ward; *Evening Post*, 17 Oct 1929 (p).

## McKERROW

McKERROW, JAMES (1834-1919), born in Kilmarnock, Scotland, and educated at Kilmarnock Academy and Glasgow University, arrived in New Zealand in 1859, and joined the Otago survey department. For two years (1861-63) he conducted exploratory reconnaissance surveys in Otago lake districts. He was appointed geodesical surveyor and inspector of surveys in Otago (1863); chief surveyor of Otago (1873); assistant surveyor-general of New Zealand (1877); and Surveyor-general and Secretary of Lands and Mines (1879).

McKerrow observed the transit of Venus in 1882, and in 1885 was elected a fellow of the Royal Astronomical society. For six years he was chief commissioner of railways (1889-95), and he retired from the Government service in 1901. He was appointed chairman of the land purchase board (1895) and in 1905 presided over the land commission. He died on 30 Jun 1919.

*App. H.R., pass.; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Jourdain; Ross; Baker; *The Press*, 13 Mar 1905.

McKILLOP, HENRY FREDERICK (1823-79) entered the Royal Navy in 1841. As a midshipman in the *Belleisle*, he served in the China war and was awarded the Royal Humane Society's medal for saving the life of a drowning soldier. He served in H.M.S. *Calliope* in the operations against Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata in 1846, and took part in the apprehension of the former at Taupo pa, Porirua. His *Reminiscences of Twelve Months Service in New Zealand* (1849) is a balanced and authentic account of the operations. Promoted lieutenant in 1847, and commander in 1855, he commanded the *Snake* in the Crimean war, and was specially mentioned for his services. (Captain, 1862.) A few years later he accepted an appointment in the service of the Egyptian Government. He was controller-general of ports and commanded the squadron in the war with Abyssinia (1875-76). He became a rear-admiral on the British retired list in 1878. McKillop received many decorations and honours, including the Crimean and Turkish medals, the C.B., the Cross of the Legion of Honour and the Turkish order of the Medjidie. He was a pasha of Egypt. His death occurred on 4 Jun 1879.

*Navy List*, 1851, 1855; Admiralty records; McKillop, *op. cit.*; *The Times*, 6 Jun, 19 Jun 1879.

## MACKINTOSH

McKINNON, QUINTON (1851-92) was born in Scotland of good family, and well educated. As a young man he volunteered to serve in the French army against the Prussians (1870-71). Having married a Shetlander, he came to New Zealand. He was an enthusiastic athlete in his youth, a good skater and Rugby footballer. He was a member of the Otago team which toured the Colony in the seventies, and played against Canterbury in 1878, 1879, 1880 and 1881, and against Wellington in 1879.

In 1881 McKinnon qualified as a surveyor. He was fond of exploring, and spent some years in the western district of Otago, living in a hut on the shores of Lake Te Arrau. Accompanied by G. Tucker, he crossed the pass from the head of Middle fjord, Lake Te Arrau, to Caswell sound; and later (with E. Mitchell, of Manapouri) he discovered a practicable route from Te Anau to Milford. In Oct 1888 he crossed the McKinnon pass from Te Arrau to Milford. (Descriptions of these journeys appeared in the *Otago Daily Times* of 6 and 29 Oct 1888.) McKinnon took part in the search for Professor Brown at the end of 1888. About this time he carried out a good deal of work for the government improving the track to Milford Sound for the tourist traffic to the West Coast. In 1892 he had a contract to carry mails from Te Anau to Milford, taking six days for each trip, and he accepted a contract for improving the track. On one of his trips to the coast (Nov 1892) he lost his life. He was not heard of after leaving Te Arrau on 29 Nov for Milford to make arrangements for the next party of tourists. Search parties discovered his boat on the lake, and it was concluded that he had fallen overboard.

G. M. Moir, *Guide Book to the Tourist Routes of the Great Southern Lakes*; *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, 1 Apr 1933 (p); *N.Z. Graphic*, 8, 18 Sep 1893 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, Oct 1888, 11, 23 Jan-21 Feb 1893.

MACKINTOSH, JAMES (1827-97) was born at Lochinver, Sutherlandshire, emigrated to Victoria as a young man, and with his brother took up an estate at Moonee Ponds, where they bred horses, cattle and sheep. Mackintosh represented East Bourke in the Victoria Legislative Assembly (1859-60).

In the sixties he came to Southland and purchased the Strathmore estate of 3,000 acres in

## MACKLEY

the Otautau district, and later the Gladfield estate of 14,000 acres. Both were much improved, and eventually disposed of when Mackintosh retired to live in Invercargill (1884). He formed the Aparima road board, which at first functioned as a farmers' club, was a member of the Southland education board from 1880, and was chairman of the first Wallace county council. In 1887 he contested the Mataura seat in Parliament against G. F. Richardson (q.v.), and in 1890 he was elected for Wallace, which he represented to 1896, being then defeated. He was a promoter of the Southland Freezing Co. and an advocate of a state bank. Mackintosh did much for the development of the western district. He died on 9 May 1897.

*Otago Daily Times*, 8 Jun 1897; *Southland Times*, 11 May 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

MACKLEY, SAMUEL MEGGITT (1829-1911) was born at Leeds, the son of Dr T. Mackley. Educated at the Leeds Grammar School, he studied medicine but, his health being poor, he came to New Zealand in the *Sir Allan McNab* (1857) and settled first at Nelson. He made early visits to the West Coast on foot, once walking with Creighton as far as the Grey. At Okarito he found gold on the beach. On 21 May 1860 he witnessed at Greymouth the deed of sale of the west coast to the Government, and in 1861 he took up a run on the Waipuna plains, up the Grey river, being the first European to settle there. He chartered a vessel to move his family to their new home. In 1863 he travelled overland to Canterbury by the Ahaura saddle and the Waiau river, and brought back sheep for his station. Claiming to have found gold in the Buller river as early as 1859, he wrote to the *Lyttelton Times* in 1862 predicting that the West Coast would prove to be a goldfield. In 1860 Mackley married Miss Trist (Devonshire). He was a justice of the peace, and represented Grey in the Nelson Provincial Council (1869-72). He died on 8 Nov 1911.

Hindmarsh; Reid; *Cycl. N.z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Grey Star*, 11 Feb 1928; *Grey River Argus*, 10 Nov 1911.

MACKY, JAMES, who was born in the North of Ireland, came to New Zealand in the forties and settled at Auckland. He was elected by the Southern Division to the Legislative Council

## McLACHLAN

for the province of New Ulster (Sep 1852). In 1861 he was a member of the committee which proposed to grant an award for a payable goldfield in the province.

MACKY, JOHN (1820-91) was a native of county Londonderry, Ireland, where he received the first of his education. He studied for the ministry of the Presbyterian Church at Glasgow University, graduating M.A. (1839). In 1842 he was ordained by the Derry presbytery, and appointed to the charge of Fahan, county Londonderry, where he laboured until being called by the mission directors of the Presbyterian Church of Ireland for the New Zealand field (1853). He sailed the following year in the *Cashmere* with his parents and his own family. On his arrival he established the church at Otahuhu, holding services in the store near the wharf until the church at Otara was completed. For 20 years he lived on his farm at Papatoetoe until the completion of his manse permitted him to move in (1872). During that time he ministered to a very wide district and made many long journeys on horseback. In 1862 he was moderator of the first General Assembly of the Church. In 1890 he retired with the rank of pastor emeritus of Otara. His death occurred on 23 Jan 1891.

Dickson (p); *N.z. Herald*, 24 Jan, 5 Feb-1891.

McLACHLAN, JOHN (1840-1915) was born at Ardrossan, Ayrshire, and brought up to his father's trade as a plasterer. In 1863 he came to Lyttelton in the *Sebastopol*, and after following his trade for three years he purchased land at Ellesmere, where he farmed successfully and took a prominent part in local affairs. He was a member of the Ellesmere road board and school committee for many years, and contested a seat in the Provincial Council against Jollie. He three times contested parliamentary elections (against Sir John Hall, E. Richardson, E. J. Lee and E. Wakefield), and in 1893 was returned for Ashburton against J. C. Wason (q.v.). Again standing as a Liberal, he was defeated in 1896 by E. G. Wright, but regained the seat in 1899 and held it till 1908, defeating in turn C. J. Harper and J. Studholme (twice). He retired in 1908. He was a fluent, though not impressive, speaker, and in 1896 effectively stonewalled the licensing bill. McLachlan was a member of the Canterbury land board, the

Ellesmere cemetery board and the general committee of the Presbyterian Church in Canterbury. He was a prominent freemason (being master and grand master, E.C.). He married Miss Robb (Perthshire), and died on 11 Sep 1915.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 14 Sep 1915; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p).

MACLAURIN, RICHARD COCKBURN (1870-1920) was born in Selkirk, Scotland, a member of a family distinguished in science and law, and a descendant of Professor Colin Maclaurin (1698-1746).

Coming to New Zealand by the *Ada* in 1874, he attended the Auckland Grammar School and Auckland University College with a junior university scholarship (1887), graduating B.A. (1890) and M.A. (1891) with first-class honours in mathematics. In 1891, elected to a foundation scholarship, he entered St John's College, Cambridge. He was bracketed with the senior wrangler in the first division of the first class, part ii of the mathematical tripos, and won Smith's prize for the same subject. Taking up the study of law, he entered Lincoln's Inn, was awarded the McMahon law studentship, and a prize for the best dissertation on a legal subject. In 1897 he was elected a fellow of St John's College, and won the Yorke Prize in 1898. After studying philosophy at Strasburg University, he was appointed professor of mathematics at Victoria University College, Wellington (1899); serving in this capacity till 1907, he became in that year professor of law and was dean of the faculty of law in the college, until he left New Zealand. He became a fellow of the University of New Zealand in 1901, and in 1904 Cambridge University conferred on him the degree of LL.D. Of extraordinary brilliance and versatility, of great wisdom, humanity, and practical shrewdness, Maclaurin's mind was one of the most remarkable ever to see learning in this country. It was not such as New Zealand could hope indefinitely to retain.

For a year (1908) he was professor of mathematical physics at Columbia University, New York, and in 1909 he became president of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, which before he died (on 5 Jun 1920) he built into a great and wealthy college. Its activities when he took charge were scattered in various build-

ings in Boston, and with endowments inadequate for proper laboratories and salaries, the authorities were contemplating effacement by merging with Harvard University. Maclaurin's dynamic force and magnetic personality resulted in 11 years in the housing of the Institute in a magnificent block of buildings on the Cambridge bank of the Charles river, with endowments placing it beyond the fear of absorption by the wealthier University. He was affectionately known as 'Maclaurin of Tech.' His wife was Alice, daughter of William Young, of Auckland. His publications include *Title to Realty* (1901), a treatise on the *Theory of Light* (1908), and various scientific memoirs.

Maclaurin was a brother of JAMES SCORF MACLAURIN (1864-1939), D.Sc., Government analyst in New Zealand.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; H. G. Pearson, *Richard Cockburn Maclaurin* (1937) (p); *N.z. Times*, 25 Sep 1920; *Evening Post*, 7 Oct 1937.

McLEAN, ALLAN (1830-1907), born in the island of Coll, Scotland, and brought up as a sheep farmer, came to New Zealand from Australia in 1870. With his brothers, Robertson and John, he bought land at Lagmhor, Ashburton, and at Waikakahi, South Canterbury, and became very prosperous. In 1898 he retired to live in Christchurch. On his death (on 12 Nov 1907) he endowed the McLean Institute in Christchurch.

Auckland; *The Press*, 14 Nov 1907.

MACLEAN, CHARLES RICHARD ALDER LENDRICK (1833-96) was born at Dublin and educated at Dublin University with a view to taking holy orders. After being ordained, he came to New Zealand to undertake duty in the Nelson diocese. He had qualified in law when he joined the staff of Nelson College as assistant in 1863, and he was headmaster (1864-68). On his resignation he was appointed registrar of the Supreme Court at Nelson. Maclean was M.P.C. for Buller (1873-75), and edited the *Colonist* for a short time. In 1875 he started to practise law at Bulls. In 1879 he contested the Rangitikei seat against Major Willis. About 1884 he removed to Kaikoura, but he came back to Feilding on the death of his wife and died there in 1896. Maclean was an active freemason. Initiated in the Southern Star lodge at Nelson

(1871), he helped to found a lodge at Bulls and was P.D.G.S.W. (1888).

Family information; *Nelson Call. Reg.*; *Rangitikei Advocate*, Sep 1879. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

McLEAN, SIR DONALD (1820-77) was born at Kilmaluig, Tyree, Argyllshire, the son of John McLean and his wife Margaret, daughter of the Rev D. McColl. His father having died when he was a child, Donald received a sound Scots education in the parish under the care of his mother's people. In 1838 he sailed from Oban in the *St George* for Sydney, to the care of an uncle. He entered a merchant's office, but soon left and worked on a station near Bathurst.

Early in 1840 he came to New Zealand as agent for the timber firm of Abercrombie and Co., to wind up some business. That done, he was some time engaged as a labourer splitting logs on the beach at Waiheke and Coromandel; as a seaman on a small coaster, and in charge of a schooner running stores up the Thames river. In this occupation he mixed much with the natives, learned their language and became imbued with a deep sympathy for people whose tribal organisation resembled so closely that of the Scottish Highlanders. His steady energy and knowledge of the Maori character struck A. Sinclair (q.v.), who brought him to the notice of Captain Hobson, and he became a clerk in the office of the protector of aborigines, and subsequently also interpreter. In 1844 he was appointed protector for the western district (Mokau to Wanganui, including Taupo), with a salary of £400 a year as crown lands commissioner.

McLean had considerable success in his dealings with native chiefs, and was soon regarded with official confidence as a man who could soothe their susceptibilities and treat them with a proper degree of consideration and firmness. After Commissioner Spain had made his award in the New Zealand Company's favour for 60,000 acres of land in Taranaki, McLean was ordered to inspect the territory and consult with the natives. He travelled southward in company with Whiteley from Kawhia and made a full report. FitzRoy decided not to confirm the award, and so the matter rested. Soon after the arrival of Sir George Grey as Governor the protectorate was abolished, and McLean was

appointed police magistrate at Taranaki, with a small but efficient force of police with which he succeeded admirably in maintaining order at native gatherings and in all settlements where natives congregated (1846). In Mar 1847 he was instructed to inspect the land which had been awarded to the Government in north Taranaki and to acquire the area necessary for settlement purposes. He was entrusted with the responsibility of altering the Company's survey lines where he thought fit, and a few weeks later was authorised to purchase the Grey block. Correspondence in 1849 shows that he had purchased land at Fitzroy, Tataraimaka, Omata, Grey and Puketapu, but not without meeting with much sporadic opposition.

In 1850 McLean was appointed a native land purchase commissioner and resident magistrate, and in the following year a commissioner under the land claims ordinance. In 1853, with the approval of Grey, he organised a native land purchase department, with himself as chief commissioner and a purchasing officer in each district. He made a large purchase of land in Auckland province in 1854, and arranged for the purchase of more than 12,000 acres adjacent to the settlements in Taranaki. He remarked, nevertheless, a growing opposition by the natives to the sale of any land at all in fear that they should thereby lose their distinctive national character and standing and be reduced to a state of slavery and indigence. To meet this, and in preference to setting aside reserves which would pick the eyes out of the block, he agreed that natives should be allowed to purchase back from the Government a certain amount of the land bought. He proposed that they should be encouraged to take an interest in the institutions of the country, to qualify to take part in them, and gradually to introduce a new mode of life. The experiment was rather disappointing, but McLean's mana with the natives steadily increased, and during the excitement after the death of Rawiri Waiaua he succeeded, with the help of Whiteley and Turton, in preventing an open breach of the peace. In 1855, owing to the disturbed state of the province, McLean advised the building of blockhouses and the calling out of the militia.

On 4 Nov 1856 he was chosen as land purchase officer and native secretary. The Govern-

nor (Gore Browne) was still to exercise full responsibility for native affairs, with the final decision on any action to be taken, but the opinion of a responsible minister had to be registered with that of the Native Secretary. McLean had the required physical and moral qualities for the post, a commanding presence and dignity of behaviour, an excellent knowledge of the Maori language and customs, and a genuine sympathy for the race. To them he always appeared as one who shielded them from the evil intentions of the Colonial Government. He accompanied Gore-Browne on his visit to Taranaki when he agreed to purchase Teira's land at Waitara. Unfortunately ill-health kept him away from the province during succeeding months, and historians are not disposed to hold him responsible for the outbreak of the Taranaki war. He was again in Taranaki when the truce was concluded with Hapurona (Mar 1861), the Native Minister (Weld) being also present.

By an unfortunate clash of policy between the Governor and the Government, Fenton was appointed to introduce certain reforms in the Waikato, independent of the authority of the Native Secretary. It was an impossible position where two men of strong personality were concerned, though both were sincerely anxious for the welfare of the Maori. It was equally unfortunate that the two departments of Native Affairs and Land Purchase should be combined in McLean's person, thus giving to the pro-native faction in the country, and to many of the natives themselves, the impression that the acquisition of land was the real object of the Government. In May 1861 McLean resigned the native secretaryship owing to the attitude of the Government in respect to Fenton's appointment.

About this time he purchased the Maraekakaho property, and in 1863 he settled down in Hawkes Bay and began to take part in the affairs of the new province. Elected to the Provincial Council for Napier, he at once became Superintendent (26 Feb 1863), and held that position unchallenged until the affairs of the Colony demanded his full attention. In his dealings with his fellow settlers he showed the same inexhaustible patience and penetration which he exhibited in native affairs. He sat in with his Council, stood for re-election on being

chosen as Superintendent, and on the whole managed provincial affairs in Hawkes Bay with more smoothness and decorum than obtained in any other province. He resigned the emoluments of the land purchase officer in 1863, but retained the appointment nominally until the office was abolished (1865). Grey in Jun 1863 appointed McLean as his deputy to call out the militia. They were summoned for training without delay and in the next few years were several times on active service. During most of the sixties McLean acted as the agent of the General Government, a position in which he wielded great authority during the Hauhau rising and the campaign on the east coast.

Meanwhile, in 1866 he had been elected to Parliament for Napier. His mana with both races was very high and he was listened to with great deference in the native debates which dominated Parliament in the sixties. He was an outspoken critic of government policy towards the Maori and in 1868, when fighting was going on in several provinces, he relinquished the post of Government Agent and joined Fox in opposition to the war policy of Stafford. Their motion expressing alarm at the course of events was lost on the casting vote of the Speaker. In 1869 Fox moved a direct want-of-confidence motion, which McLean seconded, and the Government was defeated by a majority of 11. Stafford, who had wished McLean to take office under him when he resigned the Native secretaryship, now resigned (28 Jun) and Fox became Premier, with McLean as Native Secretary and Defence Minister. Te Kooti having already been defeated south of Taupo, the new Government was able with a good prospect of success to withdraw the expeditions from the field and adopt a policy of pacification by the active prosecution of roads and bridges, coach services from Wanganui to New Plymouth and the opening up of native lands. On taking office with Fox, McLean resigned the superintendency of Hawkes Bay (1869), and at the subsequent dissolution he withdrew from the Provincial Council (1871). He was Minister of Native Affairs for the rest of his life, holding office continuously under Fox, Waterhouse, Pollen, Vogel and Atkinson, and only resigning (on 7 Dec 1876) when his health made it impossible to carry on longer. He carried several important measures affecting

the Maori and their lands, and lived to see land again being offered for sale. He made his peace with the King natives in 1875 and met Wi Kingi te Rangitake in amity at New Plymouth. He died on 5 Jan 1877.

McLean was created K.C.M.G. in 1874. He married (1851) Susan Douglas (d. Nov 1852), daughter of R. R. Strang (Wellington). (See R. D. D. MACLEAN, R. HART, R. R. STRANG.) Gisborne, Saunders and Reeves agree on the great services rendered to New Zealand by McLean's native policy.

G.B.O.P., 1847/892; *App. H.R., pass.; N.Z. Gaz.; Wellington P.C. Proc.*, 1856, 1867, 1870-71; *Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; Taranaki P.C. Proc.*, 2 Oct 1854; *Taranaki Gaz.*, 7 Mar 1855; Sinclair Papers; N.Z. Archives, H.B. and D., *pass.*; *Wellington Almanac*, 1878; *Cmwford*; Ward; *D.N.B.*; *Mennell*; J. G. Wilson; Grace; Rusden; Gisborne; Reeves; Cox; Saunders; Bowen, i; Seffern; 'Veils; *Gorst; Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p), vi; Cowan; *Waka' Maori*, 9 Jan 1877; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 5, 19 Dec 1876; *Evening Post*, 6 Jan 1877; *N.Z. Times*, II Jan 1877; *Southern Cross*, 6 Jan 1877; *Lyttelton Times*, 20 Mar 1861. Portrait: Parliament House.

McLEAN, SIR GEORGE (1834-1917) was born in Scotland, the son of James McLean, of Scotston Hill, Elgin, and was educated at the Elgin Grammar School and at St Andrew's University. In 1852 he emigrated to Melbourne, where he was employed first in the Colonial Bank of Australia, and later in the Oriental Bank.

In 1862 he came to New Zealand as manager of the Dunedin branch of the Bank of New Zealand, a position he resigned in 1865 to become a partner in the firm of Cargill and McLean. In 1867 he married Isabel, daughter of Matthew Holmes. In 1874, owing to ill-health, he retired from business, devoting himself thereafter to his financial interests, public life and horseracing.

McLean entered the Otago Provincial Council in 1869 as member for Waikouaiti, and almost at once became provincial treasurer. In 1871 he entered Parliament for the same constituency, which he represented for a few months, ill-health compelling him to resign in 1872. He was again returned in 1875, and sat till 1881. McLean was a member of the Vogel and Atkinson administrations, holding the portfolios of Commissioner of Customs, Postmaster-general, Commissioner of Telegraphs and Commissioner of Trade. In Dec 1881 he was called

to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 17 Feb 1917).

McLean played an important part in the commercial and financial life of New Zealand. He was for 18 years chairman of the Colonial Bank of New Zealand, and personally negotiated the sale of the business to the Bank of New Zealand on terms very favourable for the shareholders (1895). He was concerned with the inauguration of the Union Steam Ship Co., of which he was chairman until he resigned in 1907. In 1909 he was knighted. He was a prominent figure on the turf, owning many successful horses, and being for 30 years president of the Dunedin Jockey club. He was also president of the Dunedin Liedertafel.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N'z.*, 1908; Ross; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Feb 1917.

MACLEAN, HESTER (1868-1932) was born in New South Wales, a daughter of Harold Maclean, Comptroller-general of Prisons. She attended a private school in Sydney, and received her nursing certificate in 1893 at the Royal Prince Albert hospital, Sydney. She was matron of the Kogarah hospital (1894-97), and of the women's hospital, Melbourne, and in 1900 came to New Zealand as assistant-inspector of hospitals. In 1906 she joined the New Zealand Army Nursing service as matron-in-chief, and from 1914 until she retired in 1923 she was director of the division of nursing in the Health department. During the war of 1914-18 she both nursed abroad and organised detachments of nurses in New Zealand, being awarded the Royal Red Cross and the Florence Nightingale medal. She was the first president of the New Zealand Trained Nurses' association, edited *Kai Tiaki* (the New Zealand nurses' journal) and in 1932 published her reminiscences *Nursing in New Zealand*. She died in Wellington on 2 Sep 1932.

*Who's Who N'z.*, 1932; Maclean, *op. cit.* (p); *Evening Post*, 2 Sep 1932.

McLEAN, JOHN (1818-1902) was born in the island of Coll, Argyllshire, educated there and on attaining his majority emigrated to Victoria, where he worked for a while on the Barrabool hills and then took up land with his brother Allan. During the early days of the goldfields

## MACLEAN

they did well as goldbuyers and supplying the needs of the diggers.

Values of land having risen, they disposed of their Australian interests and settled in New Zealand (1854). The first property they acquired was Morven, in Canterbury. At one time, including Morven and Waikakahi, they had 500,000 acres (on which they shore 250,000 sheep). While their men were making the first road over the Kakanui range (through Dansey's pass) they found gold. On the partnership being dissolved, McLean retired to Otago and took some interest in public affairs. He was M.P.C. for the Town of Oamaru (1871-75) and was a member of the Legislative Council from 1867 until he retired in 1872. Having settled down at Redcastle, Oamaru, he was a member of the local road board, president of the North Otago A. and P. association and of the Oamaru Caledonian society. He took part in investigating the affairs of the Bank of New Zealand and was on the council of Otago University (1886-94). McLean died (unmarried) on 15 Jul 1902. (See G. BUCKLEY.)

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.z.*, iv (p); K. C. McDonald; Pyke; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Jul 1902. Portrait: Parliament House.

MACLEAN, SIR ROBERT DONALD DOUGLAS (1852-1929) was the son of Sir Donald McLean, and was born in Wellington. Educated at Auckland Grammar School and Clifton College, England, he was a prominent cyclist and Rugby footballer. After serving his articles to Hart and Buckley, he read law in England and was called to the bar of the Middle Temple (1882). He did not practise, but devoted his attention to his property, Maraekakaho station, Hawkes Bay, where he bred English Leicester and Lincoln sheep, short-horn cattle and thoroughbred horses. He won many prizes in the show ring. He was chairman of the Hawkes Bay county council and a member of the Heretaunga road board, the charitable aid board, the rabbit board, the Hawkes Bay central rivers board and the education board, and a governor of the Napier High Schools. Maclean was president of the Hawkes Bay A. and P. society and the Manawatu A. and P. association, and a councillor of the Royal Agricultural society; a prominent supporter of the Navy League, a member of the executive council of the Royal Empire Society;

## MACLEAN

president of the Wellington Early Settlers' association, and the Caledonian society; and a director of the North British Freezing Co., the Hawkes Bay Farmers' Co-operative association and the New Zealand Freezing Co. He represented Napier in Parliament (1896-99), being defeated by A. L. D. Fraser. He married (1882) a daughter of T. Butler-Stoney, of Portland Park, county Tipperary. He was created a knight bachelor in 1927, and died on 7 Feb 1929.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Ward (p); *The Dominion*, 9 Feb 1929; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 8 Feb 1929 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

MACLEAN, THOMAS EVERY (1819-1901) was born in Cornwall, and came to New Zealand with his brother Robert in the *Constantinople* in the fifties, intending to settle in Canterbury. While the ship was being repaired in Auckland, they decided to settle there, took up a farm at East Tamaki, and became well known breeders of good stock. Later MacLean became interested with John Williamson and Thomas Russell in a large farming property at Cambridge, which was carried on under the style of MacLean and Co., and afterwards became the Auckland Agricultural Co. MacLean took a great interest in blood stock, and imported many stud Herefords and Shorthorns, Clydesdale horses and Leicester and Down sheep. The sire Musket was imported by the Auckland Agricultural Co. A later company, the New Zealand Stud and Pedigree Stock Co., engaged MacLean's attention. He was a prominent supporter of the Cambridge Farmers' club and the Auckland Agricultural association.

MacLean took an active part in local government, being chairman of two road boards (Pakuranga and Paparoa). From 1865 to 1872 he represented Franklin in the Provincial Council, and for a considerable period (1868-70) he was deputy-superintendent of the province. During the war he raised and commanded the Howick troop of cavalry volunteers. In 1873 MacLean was called to the Legislative Council. He was unable to devote sufficient time to his duties and resigned his seat, which became vacant owing to absence for two sessions (1876). He died (unmarried) on 12 Aug 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 20 Jul 1875, 13 Aug 1901.

## McLEAN

McLEAN, WILLIAM (1845-1914), who was born at Grantown, Inverness-shire, Scotland, arrived in Dunedin in 1863 by the *Dauntless*. For a time he was engaged as a schoolmaster on the West Coast, and later went into business in Reefton, where he was interested in mining. Moving to Wellington in 1884, he started in business as an auctioneer and sharebroker. At a by-election in 1892 he was returned to the House of Representatives for the City of Wellington (defeating H. D. Bell) but he lost the seat in 1893. McLean helped to promote the building of the Wellington Opera House, and was a firm believer in the potentialities of the Taranaki oil fields. He was a freemason, a member of the Excelsior lodge of druids, and president of the Wellington association of spiritualists. He died on 25 Aug 1914.

*N.i.p.D.*, 26 Aug 1914; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Lyttelton Times*, 16 Jan 1892; *Evening Post*, 25 Aug 1914.

McLEOD, ALEXANDER DONALD (1872-1938) was the son of William McLeod and was born at Whakapuni, Wairarapa. Educated at home, he served his apprenticeship on his father's farm, and in 1895 started sheep farming for himself. In 1896 he was elected a member of the Featherston road board, and he was afterwards a member of the county council (1896-1920) and for 15 years chairman. He was a member of the hospital board from its inception till 1920, and of the Wellington harbour board (1919-21). He took a prominent part in the activities of the farmers' Union and the New Zealand sheepowners' federation, and was a mover in the formation of the New Zealand meat board.

McLeod was elected in 1919 as M.H.R. for Wairarapa, which he represented till 1928. In 1924 he became Minister of Lands in the Massey Government, and he continued to hold that portfolio till 1928 (in the reconstruction under J. G. Coates). In 1931 he regained his seat in Parliament, but ill-health caused his retirement in 1935. His administration was marked by vigorous application of land settlement laws and a strong freehold policy. As Minister of Industries and Commerce in 1927 he set up a commission to inquire into the activities of the proprietary articles trade association. In the same year he represented New Zealand at the opening of the Federal capital at Canberra.

## McLEOD

McLeod married (1897) Mary Isabella, daughter of Alexander McLeod. He died on 20 Oct 1938.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1919-35 and 30 Jun 1939; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Post* and *The Dominion*, 21 Oct 1938 (pp).

McLEOD, DONALD (1815-91), a son of the Rev Norman McLeod (q.v.), was born in Sutherlandshire; migrated with his parents to Nova Scotia, and was brought up to the sea. He became a master mariner and commanded the vessel which the Highlanders of St Ann's, Cape Breton Island, sent to Scotland in the early forties. Failing to find a sale for the cargo, he was compelled to dispose of the ship and, instead of returning to Canada, he went farther afield in search of a fortune. In 1847 he wrote from South Australia to his father advising the settlers to make their homes in Australia. Acting on this invitation, they built the ships *Highland Lass* and *Margaret* and made the voyage. McLeod had meanwhile gone to sea, and was not available until 1853, when he arrived in New Zealand with the other leaders of the Nova Scotians in the *Gazelle* and interviewed Sir George Grey. In 1854 he conducted a vigorous correspondence with the Government on the terms of the settlement.

He was a fine scholar and, with his father's help, he translated into English (and published in 1856) the poet Dugald Buchanan's Gaelic poems. He also did into English verse Ossian's poems, but they have not been published. McLeod was a journalist, and spent some years after this engaged on the Adelaide and Melbourne press. On the death of his wife (1880) he returned to New Zealand and settled at Waipu. He contested the Marsden seat in 1881. McLeod died at Waipu on 16 Apr 1891. While sailing in the islands he discovered at Vanikoro guns and other relics of La Perouse (now in the Melbourne Museum).

Macdonald; N. R. McKenzie; 'Vagabond' in *Melbourne Age* (quoted in *N.z. Herald*, 6 Dec 1887); *N.z. Herald*, 18 Apr 1891.

McLEOD, JOHN (1825-83) arrived in New Zealand from Sydney with his parents in 1839. and settled in the Bay of Islands, where he took an active part as a volunteer during Heke's war. For eight years he sat in the Auckland Provincial Council, as member for the

Northern District (1865-69) and for the Bay of Islands (1870-73). Defeating Carleton in 1871, he occupied the Mangonui and Bay of Islands seat in the House of Representatives until he retired in 1873 to go to Nova Scotia as Wellington provincial immigration officer. He died in Auckland on 18 Sep 1883.

*N.z. Herald*, 22 Sep 1883.

McLEOD, MURDOCH (1823-87), a son of the Rev Norman McLeod (q.v.), was born at St Ann's, Cape Breton Island. He received a good classical education and had considerable literary ability. In 1852 he sailed for Australia with the migration, and proceeded to the diggings from Melbourne, spending 12 years in Australia before settling at Waipu. There he acted as an amateur physician for the benefit of the Nova Scotian community, was a justice of the peace and chairman of petty sessions. From 1870 he was a member of the Auckland Provincial Council (for Marsden 1870-73; Otamatea 1873-75). McLeod was a member of the Whangarei county council for three years. He died on 3 Dec 1887.

*ParltJ' Record; Auckland P.C. Proc.; App. H.R.* 1871 H7; *N.Z. Herald*, 10 Dec 1887.

McLEOD, NORMAN (1780-1866) was born at Stoer Point, Assynt, Sutherlandshire, of a family of fishermen-cultivators who had held their land by charter from King David II. After receiving his primary education in the parish school, he went to Aberdeen University, where he had a brilliant career and graduated in arts. During vacations he earned some money by teaching parish schools in Ross and Sutherland. Having decided to study theology, he went to Edinburgh University. There he was awarded the gold medal for moral philosophy. Throughout his course of three years at Divinity Hall he evinced great independence of thought, commented openly on the conduct and characters of his professors, and was critical of the tone of the Established Church of Scotland. In his last term he was rusticated for an offence against discipline. Returning to his native parish (1806), McLeod commenced to preach without being licensed or associated with the Established Church. The congregation disapproved of the regular minister of the parish, and McLeod soon had a strong body of church members attending his ministry. In 1815 he

opened the parish school at Ullapool, in the parish of Lochbroom, receiving his salary from the Society for the Propagation of Christian Knowledge. But he was soon in conflict with the minister of the parish, and his salary was reduced by half. Denied a living in this way, he turned to the fisheries, spent two years in charge of a herring boat sailing out of Wick, and then returned to his old occupation as crofter and fisherman in Stoer.

McLeod had definitely cut himself off from the Established Church, and was attracted by various schools of thought. Finally after long consideration he accepted Calvinism. He had married Mary McLeod, a friend of his youth, and they had one or two children. Seeing no prospect of earning a livelihood in the ministry in Scotland, McLeod in 1817 joined a large party of 400 who sailed from Sutherlandshire in the *Frances Ann* (14 Jul) to settle in Pictou, Nova Scotia. He held family prayer for the emigrants every day, and when they reached their destination was their accepted minister, in spite of the fact that he had not been licensed or ordained by any church. He settled in Middle river, between Alma and Gairloch, not far from Pictou. As soon as he had built his own shack he commenced to preach in it, and held services also at small settlements in the neighbourhood. Two years later his family joined him in Nova Scotia. Invitations having been received from a Highland colony in Ohio, the Pictou group in 1819 laid the keel of a ship of 200 tons, the *Al'k*, in which the whole colony embarked with the intention of sailing up the Mississippi river to their new home. Encountering a heavy storm in the bay of Canso, they eventually returned to Cape Breton Island and settled at St Ann's Bay. The ship was shortly afterwards lost at sea. The new settlement built itself a model boat for coastal trading, a school, and the first Presbyterian church established in the island, and enjoyed solid prosperity during the next few years.

In 1825 McLeod spent a year in New York engaged in mission work while he prepared for ordination, and on 29 Aug 1826 he was duly ordained by the presbytery of Genesee. He returned to St Ann's in his old position of preacher, teacher and law-giver, and was appointed government schoolmaster and justice of the peace. All breaches of civil and moral

law were tried by him. He established temperance societies and a branch of the British and Foreign Bible Society (1840). In 1846 a large church was opened capable of seating 1,500 people. McLeod's independent views now involved him in a troublesome feud which culminated in litigation, the circumstances in which he was rusticated being alleged against his ecclesiastical character. His supporters were mulct in heavy damages, and a serious defection in the congregation followed. To provide employment for the young men McLeod proposed trading, and a ship of 300 tons was laid down. In this his son Donald sailed to Glasgow with a full cargo of produce but, failing to find a market, was forced to sell the ship, and went farther afield to seek his fortune. In 1847 McLeod received a letter from him in Australia advising the St Ann's colony to move to South Australia. The potato blight which affected their crops this year clinched the matter, and McLeod directed the building of ships for the new migration. Duncan and Murdoch McKenzie, two skilled seamen, together with John Fraser and John McKay, took the lead in organising the migration. In 1851 the *Highland Lass* and *Margaret*, each of 300 tons, were launched. Three hundred of the settlers decided to embark, but the *Highland Lass* was frozen in and they all had to sail in the sister ship (Oct 1851). Calling at Capetown, a party made a reconnaissance of land for settlement and negotiated with the government. Arriving in Apr 1852 at Adelaide, they found that Donald had gone on to Melbourne. There again inquiries were made for land, and then the *Margaret* sailed for Melbourne. Donald was not there either, so the *Margaret* was sold to pay expenses, and the young men took work or went to the goldfields, while a party went up country to prospect for land, and afterwards (in the schooner *Gazelle*) to Bay of Islands. They negotiated with the New Zealand government for a block of land in the north. Meanwhile the rest of the settlement embarked from St Ann's in the *Highland Lass*. The negotiations for a block of land were finally concluded in 1856, when 47,600 acres was declared a special settlement. In the following year Mrs McLeod died. The *Ellen Lewis* brought the main body across from Australia in 1860. The leader himself died on 14 Mar 1866.

McLeod was essentially a nonconformist. Rebellious against the loose discipline and the personal character of many of the ministers of the Established Church, he declined to affiliate himself with it, and in effect established a free church of his own before the disruption of 1843. His religious views were extremely strict. During the whole time he was in Nova Scotia he never administered the sacrament, and he rarely administered baptism, on the ground that few men attained the pitch of holiness that such a service demanded. Nor did he even seek ordination until many years after he first undertook to minister to the spiritual needs of his people. And to the end of his life he never regularly joined the Presbyterian Church. Yet his people followed him unquestioningly, putting implicit faith in the nobility of his character; and the Presbyterian Church of New Zealand recorded his death as that of a high-minded divine of their faith. His book, published in 1843, is a unique, if involved, confession of his faith.

Gordon; Macdonald (p); Dickson (p); N. R. McKenzie (p); N. McLeod, *The Present Church of Scotland and Tints of Normanism*, 1843.

MACMAHON, BERNARD (1810-89) was born in Edinburgh, Scotland, and brought up to agricultural life. Coming to Nelson by the *Whitby* in 1841, he settled in Riwaka, and for 13 years represented Motueka in the Provincial Council (1860-73). After its abolition he became a member of the local county council.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.z.*, v (p).

McMANAWAY, THOMAS DALTON (1810-94) was born at Youghal, county Cork, Ireland. He was a surveyor by occupation, and came to New Zealand in the *Mariner* (1849), settling in Wellington. He surveyed part of the *Wairarapa* and the Hutt small farm settlement. In 1856 he was a drainage commissioner for the town. He represented Wellington Country in the Provincial Council from 1856 till 1858, when he resigned on accepting a survey contract. He afterwards settled at Makara.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; 'Vard.

McMASTER, ALEXANDER (1823-85) was born at Stranraer, Scotland. As a young man he emigrated to Australia (1842) and obtained his first employment in the countinghouse of Ben-

jamin Boyd at Twofold Bay. He then moved to Melbourne, and from there to the goldfields. Returning to the City, he took employment on the literary staff of the *Argus* and afterwards joined a bank, in which he became teller.

In 1857 McMaster came to Otago and joined Borton in the lease of the Maerewhenua run. Later they took up Tokarahi, thus increasing their holding to 13,000 acres freehold and 70,000 acres leasehold, on which they ran 42,000 sheep at the time they dissolved partnership (1878). McMaster imported many fine merino sheep for his properties, and also stud horses. He was a successful exhibitor at many shows. In later years he lived at Waikaura, Oamaru. He had no inclination for political life, but in 1861 he permitted himself to be nominated for the superintendency on behalf of the squatting interest against Richardson. The result was: Richardson 292; Macandrew 189; McMaster 106. A month or two later he was elected for the Northern constituency in the Provincial Council, in which he sat until early in 1863. He died on 10 Sep 1885. He married (1860) Helen, daughter of John Adair, of Stranraer. (See T. G. READ.)

*Col. Gent.*; Pyke; *North Otago Times*, 14 Sep 1885.

MACMILLAN, DAVID (1836-1904) arrived in New Zealand by the *Rose of Sharon* in 1857, and engaged in farming at Southbridge, Canterbury. In 1874 he was elected to the local school committee, and he later served on the education board. He was for 20 years a member of the Selwyn county council (1876-96), and for 11 years chairman. At the general election of 1881 he defeated J. D. Enys for the Coleridge seat in the House of Representatives, which he held until 1887. He also served on the Canterbury land board (1883-1900), the Canterbury plantation board, the Lyttelton harbour board, the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral association (president 1897), and the Ellesmere association (president 1894), and was a member of the Canterbury Agricultural College board of governors. He died on 6 Jul 1904.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 7 Jul 1904.

McMINN, EDWARD GRAHAM, was born in county Antrim, Ireland, and came to New Zealand in early manhood. He enlisted in the Forest Rangers for the Waikato war (1863), and

served throughout under von Tempsky, rising to the rank of sergeant-major. Then he settled on a farm at Harapepe, Waikato. On the war breaking out on the West Coast, he again enrolled under von Tempsky in the Armed Constabulary and served against Titokowam. He was present when his leader was killed. After the war McMinn took a useful part in public affairs, being a member of the Pirongia road board and 'of the Raglan county council. He represented Waipa in the Provincial Council (1875-76) and in Jul 1878 he defeated F. A. Whitaker for the Waipa seat in Parliament, but the tables were turned at the general election in the following year. It was mainly due to McMinn's efforts that Raglan was connected by road with Waikato. He died at Harapepe on 30 Mar 1883.

*Waikato Times*, Jun-Jul 1878; Nov-Dec 1879; 31 Mar, 3, 5 Apr 1883. Portrait: Parliament House.

MACMORRAN, GEORGE (1853-1920) was born in Dumfries-shire and educated at Biggar, where he commenced teaching. He afterwards attended the Free Church Training College and the Andersonian University in Glasgow, and was then appointed a tutor in the Homerton Training College, London. Returning to Glasgow, he was a junior master in the HigWand Society schools from 1874 to 1881, when he came to Otago. In the following year he was appointed first assistant at the Mt Cook Boys' school in Wellington, and in 1884 he became headmaster of the Terrace school. There, during a period of 35 years, he achieved marked distinction as a teacher. He was a prominent supporter of the New Zealand Educational Institute and during the war of 1914-18 acted as inspector under the Wellington Education board. Macmorran published in 1900 *Some Schools and Schoolmastel's of Early Wellington*. He died on 6 Oct 1920.

Macmorran, *op. cit.*; Butchers; *Evening Post*, 16 Oct 1920.

McNAB, ALEXANDER (1809-90) was born in Argyllshire, Scotland. In 1839 he came to New South Wales, where he spent some years on the land at Twofold Bay. In 1855 he came to New Zealand and (in company with Peter McKellar) made a prospecting tour of Canterbury and Otago. As a result he took up the first run in Southland (Hokonui, which he sold in

1858); and shortly afterwards Knapdale, on the opposite side of the Mataura river, where he remained throughout his life. He brought his sheep from Port Philip in 1856.

McNab was M.P.C. for Murihiku in the Otago Provincial Council (1858-61). When SoutWand became a separate province he represented Campbelltown (1864-65) in the Southland Council. He was a member of the executive, deputy-speaker and chairman of committees. For a short time in 1864 he was speaker. McNab was for some years on the county council. He made some early explorations in Otago, notably at Switzers and from Invercargill to the Lakes.

He married (1866) Janet McQueen (who died in 1876), niece of Peter Dalrymple. He died on 4 Aug 1890. (See ROBERT McNAB.)

*Parltry Records*; Roberts, *Southland*; Beattie ii; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Aug 1890.

McNAB, ROBERT (1864-1917) was born at Puni Bush, Southland, the son of Alexander McNab (q.v.), and educated at the Invercargill Grammar School (dux 1879) to the age of 16. At Otago University he graduated B.A. in 1883, was senior mathematical scholar of the University, and took his M.A. in 1884 with honours in mathematics and physics. He became a clerk in the legal office of Chapman, Sinclair and White, in Dunedin, was called to the bar in 1889 and graduated LL.B. in 1890. He commenced the practice of law in Invercargill.

McNab took a keen interest in volunteering and at different times commanded the North Dunedin Rifles and G and B batteries of the New Zealand artillery. He was a good rifle shot and competed in several championship meetings. In 1891 he was elected to the SoutWand education board, and in the following year to the board of governors of 'the SoutWand Girls' and Boys' High schools. In 1893 McNab stood as a Liberal for the Mataura electorate and defeated G. F. Richardson. Richardson regained the seat in 1896, but retired in 1898, when McNab was elected. He held the seat till 1908, when he was defeated by G. J. Anderson. In 1914 he was elected for Hawkes Bay, for which he sat till his death.

A strong Liberal and a vigorous advocate of the leasehold tenure, he declined office in the Seddon Government, but was Minister of Lands

and Agriculture in the Ward administration (1906). In his first session in office he introduced a land bill to strengthen the leasehold legislation passed by Ballance and Seddon. He made one of the finest speeches of his political career on this measure, but the Premier, who feared the growing body of freehold sentiment in the country, withdrew the bill. McNab lost his seat at the following election. He then devoted his attention to the subject of national training, upon which he made many speeches throughout the country, supporting the principles of the National Defence League. He instituted Saturday training classes for school teachers in SoutWand.

McNab was also interested in the history of Southland, and eventually of New Zealand as a whole. In 1904 he published *Murihiku; Some Old Time Events*, which was followed in the next few years by three new editions or re-writings. His researches took him abroad to search the archives of the ports of New England, Great Britain and France. In 1908 he published the first volume of *Historical Records of New Zealand*, taken from the printed or unprinted records of New South Wales; and in 1909 a fuller edition of *Murihiku*. In 1914 appeared the second volume of *Historical Records*, which included the valuable French, English and American sources.

McNab again took office when the National ministry was formed during the war of 1914-18. He held the portfolios of Justice and Marine from Aug 1915 till his death (on 3 Feb 1917). He published two more historical works, *The Old Whaling Days* and *From Tasman to Marsden* in 1914, and received the degree of Litt.D. from the University. His methods of historical research were painstaking and exhaustive, and he left a vast amount of unpublished matter. Before his death he arranged for the transfer of his valuable collection of books on New Zealand and Pacific history to the Dunedin Public Library, thus endowing the capital city of Otago with one of the finest historical collections in the Dominion.

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 29 Jun 1917); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Russell (p); McNab, *op. cit.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Feb 1917. Portrait: Parliament House.

McNEIL, ALEXANDER (1833-1915) was born in Scotland, being a brother of General John

## McNEIL

McNeil and Sir Malcolm McNeil. He was the last laird of Colonsay, Argyllshire. Receiving his commission in the Royal Engineers, he had long service in India, particularly in the Mutiny, in which he was present from the beginning at Meerut to the fall of Delhi. He was in charge of important railway and road works at this time and later. Retiring from the army, McNeil settled in Southland and (with his brother Malcolm) took up Ardlussa station. He was member of the Southland Provincial Council for Oreti (1869-70) and of Parliament for Wallace (1866-69). In the eighties he sold out and settled at Aramoho, Wanganui, where he farmed for 30 years. He died on 17 May 1915.

*Parltry Record; Wanganui Chronicle*, 18, 21 May 1915. Portrait: Parliament House.

McNEIL, JOHN (1836-1905) was a son of James McNeil (1799-1875), and was born in Dumbartonshire, Scotland. His father was for 25 years a gamekeeper at Arden estate, Loch Lomond. He brought his family to Otago in the *Mooltan* (1849), and in the seventies settled at Clutha, where he worked the ferry. As a young man John took charge of his father's cattle, and helped with the ferry for four years. He was the first mayor of Balclutha and the first chainnan of the county council. He represented Clutha in the Provincial Council (1873-75), and once contested a parliamentary election. He died at Port Molyneux on 30 Jan 1905.

John Wilson; *Otago Daily Times*, 31 Jan 1905.

McNICOL, ARCHIBALD (1878-1933), a son of the Rev John McNicol, was born in Waihola, and attended the Union street school in Dunedin. He joined the *Otago Daily Times* as mining reporter; and later became chief reporter on the *Napier Daily Telegmph*. In 1909 he was appointed managing director of the *Dannevirke Evening News*, a position he held until his death (on 24 Aug 1933). McNicol was a director of the United Press Association, a member of the council of the New Zealand branch of the Empire Press union, and of the general committee of the Newspaper Proprietors' association. In 1930 he was a delegate to the Imperial press conference in London. He was a member of the Dannevirke High School board of governors, chainnan of the repatriation committee, and president of the chamber of com-

## McRAE

merce, of the Rotary club, and other bodies. He represented Pahiatua in Parliament (1919-22), being defeated by E. A. Ransom. He married (1911) Daisy, daughter of R. L. Paterson (Napier).

*N.z.P.D.*, 26 Sep 1933; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932. Portrait: Parliament House.

MACPHERSON, DONALD (1822-82) was born in Scotland, and as a young man emigrated to Australia, where he lived for some years. In 1862 he brought a shipment of horses to the Otago goldfields. The venture was not profitable, and Macpherson went to Dunstan and opened a store. In this he was very successful and became well off. Establishing a punt on the river at Clyde, he opened up communications with the mining and agricultural country on the other side.

In Mar 1865 Macpherson was unexpectedly elected to the Provincial Council for Manuhirikia. Springing a surprise upon the runholders, a large body of miners appeared at the place of nomination and proposed Macpherson in opposition to F. D. Bell (q.v.). He was elected by a large majority and attended the Council for two sessions, retiring in 1867. Benevolent and imperturbable in disposition, Macpherson encountered adversity in later years. Eventually he realised his impoverished estate and returned with his wife and daughter to Scotland, where he was killed by a railway train (in Jan 1882).

Ross; *Otago P.C. Proc.*; Don; *Saturday Advertiser*, 25 Mar 1882.

MACRAE, FARQUHAR, an ordained minister, was selected as headmaster by a commission set up in Auckland in 1861 to consider the founding of a superior school. He came to New Zealand in 1863 as principal of the High School, for which purpose he closed his private school in England. In 1869 he took over the headmastership of the Auckland Grammar School, which was forced to close in 1883 for lack of funds. Macrae was an outstanding educationist.

*N.Z. Herald*, 30 Jan 1883.

McRAE, GEORGE (1800-64) was born in Inverness-shire. As a young man he responded to the invitation of Lord Selkirk to raise 200 men to form a free company for Canada. They sailed in 1816 for Hudson's Bay, where he re-

## McRAE

mained for six years and married. Returning to Scotland in 1822, he took charge of a sheep farm for Major Gilchrist, and six years later became manager of the Duke of Sutherland's Blairich estate.

On the death of his father (1841) McRae sailed for New Zealand with his family in the *Mary Ann*, reaching Nelson in 1842. For eight years he farmed two sections at Waimea south, with 88 valley for cattle rearing. In 1848 he acquired Lake Rotoiti, but sold it two years later and bought Blairich and Braes of Sutherland, in the Awatere. McRae represented Awatere in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1861-63). He died on 3 Sep 1864. (See A. MOWAT, P. R. McRAE, J. G. HARKNESS.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Marlborough Express*, 3 Sep 1864, 16 Apr 1870.

McRAE, PHILIP RODERICK (1837-88) was born at Blairich, Sutherlandshire, the second son of George McRae (q.v.). After arriving in New Zealand (1842), he spent some years in the North Island and then took up land in the Awatere valley. Later, with his brother William, he took up the Braes of Sutherland, Campden and Weld's runs, and afterwards Middlehurst, Gladstone and Benhopai. He represented Awatere in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1864-70) and was a member of the executive in 1865 and 1869. In 1872 he took over the properties of his brother Nehemiah, and during the slump in wool gave up the more distant runs. He was a justice of the peace and chairman of the Awatere road board. McRae married a daughter of Captain Scott. He died on 23 Jul 1888.

*Marlborough Weekly News*, 27 Jul 1888.

McRAE, WILLIAM (1802-67), of Blairich, Sutherlandshire, arrived in Nelson in the *Mary Ann* (1842) and farmed for some years at Waimea before moving into Marlborough. He had previously spent some years trapping in North America. While managing for Captain England he drove the first cattle into the Awatere. McRae represented Waimea East in the Nelson Provincial Council (1857-65). He died on 9 Sep 1867.

*Marlborough Express*, 21 Sep 1867.

McRAE, WILLIAM (1825-70), the eldest son of George McRae (q.v.), was born at Blairich,

## MADDEN

parish of Rogart, Sutherlandshire, and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1842. He had a fine knowledge of stock and country and was employed by Duppa in many of his transactions. Shortly after the affray at Wairau he took up land in Marlborough and advised Congreve and Dashwood to settle in the province. He afterwards managed the Blairich property. McRae did a great deal of exploring in his early days in New Zealand. He died on 24 Jul 1870.

C. A. Macdonald; *Marlborough Express*, 30 Jul 1870.

MACREADY, THOMAS, sat in the Auckland Provincial Council for Auckland West (1867-73) and for Newton (1873-75). He was a member of the first City Council (1873-75) and of the city board of commissioners. For some years he was in business as a jeweller, and later built the Star hotel, of which he was proprietor. He also owned the Duchess of Marlborough hotel.

McVAY, JOHN COMMONS (1844-1914) was born in Auckland, where his father arrived from New South Wales in 1841, and was educated at Gorrie's academy. Having served an apprenticeship as a saddler, he took charge of a business in Napier (1869) and started on his own account in 1873. He married (1871) Miss Craig (Belfast).

McVay was a member of the Napier borough council for 20 years and mayor 1901-02; a member (and chainnan) of the harbour board; a member of the charitable aid board, of the first school committee and the High School board of governors and a trustee of the children's home. He was a founder and president of the Hawkes Bay Racing club and a member of the Hawkes Bay racing commission. He was a director of the Napier Gas Co. and Blyth's Ltd. He died on 10 May 1914.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 11 May 1914.

MADDEN, JOHN MACINTOSH (1856-1923) was born at Wakefield, Yorkshire, commenced painting when quite young, and afterwards studied at the South Kensington School of Art, where he won many diplomas. In 1877 he came to New Zealand, and he was for some decades prominent in artistic circles in Christchurch. In 1893 he founded the Palette club, which was of great assistance to artists. Madden was art master at Christ's College for 25 years. He ex-

## MAGINNITY

hibited at the exhibitions regularly, and also occasionally at the Royal Academy. Examples of his work appear in several of the leading galleries in New Zealand. Madden died in Apr 1923.

*Lyttelton Times*, 30 Apr 1923.

MAGINNITY, ANDREW THOMAS (1849-1918) was born in Wellington, his father (an Irishman) having come to New Zealand in the ranks of the 65th Regiment in 1847. He was educated in the regimental school, at Finnimore's Commercial School and Toomath's Commercial and Grammar School; passed the civil service examination in 1868, and became a junior clerk in the Treasury. In 1873 he was chief clerk in the Telegraph department; in 1875 assistant-secretary for telegraphs; in 1876 Secretary, and in 1879 postmaster and clerk to the magistrate and warden and receiver of goldfields revenue at Collingwood.

Having studied law there, Maginnity was admitted a solicitor in 1886 and entered into practice (the firm being later Maginnity, Son and Houliker). Maginnity was a school commissioner, a member (and chairman) of the Nelson education board and the harbour board, member of the Victoria University College council and a trustee of the Nelson School of Music. He was chancellor of the Anglican diocese (1907-18), a member of the general synod and of the Victoria lodge of freemasons.

As a young man he served in the Greytown cavalry, and with No. 2 division Armed Constabulary against Titokowaru. He was captain in the first torpedo company of volunteers, which was largely recruited from the post and telegraph service, and later of H battery (Nelson); and was a promoter of the Nelson defence rifle club and of the swimming association.

In 1914 Maginnity was called to the Legislative Council by the Reform Government. He died on 12 Mar 1918.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1914-18; *The Katipo*, Aug, Oct 1935; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Colonist*, 13 Mar 1918. Portrait: Parliament House.

MAHER, MICHAEL (1830-74) was born in London of Irish stock, and came to New Zealand with his parents in one of the first three ships to arrive at Nelson (Jan 1842). Some years later he took up farming on the Waimea plain, moved again to Wairau, and finally settled in

## MAHONEY

the Kaituna district. He represented Pelorus in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1863-65). Maher died in Jan 1874.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p).

MAHON, HAROLD JAMES DEL MONTE (1873-1938), a son of Lieut-colonel Owen Mahon, was born in Auckland, and educated at the Auckland Grammar School and at Auckland University College, where he graduated B.A. in 1891. He began teaching at the Wellesley street school in 1892, and in 1894 went to the New Plymouth High School as junior assistant master. In 1897 he returned to the Auckland Grammar School as English and commercial master. In 1906, he spent a year at the University of Jena, returning to become senior English master at the school. In 1921 he became second master, and in 1928 headmaster.

After nearly 50 years association with the school, Mahon retired in 1935. He was a member of the New Zealand University senate (1916-21) and of the Auckland University College council from 1912, being chairman at the time of his death (on 29 Mar 1938). Mahon married (1909) Beatrice, daughter of John Brown.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *N.Z. Herald*, 30 Mar 1938 (p).

MAHONEY, JAMES (1823-90) was a native of Macroom, county Cork, and joined the Franciscan Order as a young man. He received his theological training in St Isidore's College, Rome, from 1847, and was ordained in 1851 for work in the Irish province of the Franciscans. He spent six years at Killaloe, three at Limerick, two at Galway and four years in Egypt (including Suez and Sutri). Suffering in health there, he went to Frascati, Italy, and in 1867 to Auckland. Mahoney was priest at Parnell, Thames, Coromandel and Tauranga (where he built the handsome Catholic church). In 1887 he was appointed vicar-general. He died on 20 Aug 1890.

*N.Z. Herald*, 21 Aug 1890.

MAHONEY, WILLIAM JOSEPH (1848-1903) was born at Pallas Grean, county Limerick, and educated there and at Mount Mellary seminary, Waterford, and St Mary's College, Dundalk, and at Dublin (where F. Redwood, q.v., was a professor). Ordained priest, he came to New

## MAIN

Zealand in 1874, and in the following year was appointed assistant at Nelson to Garin (q.v.), on whose death in 1889 he became head of the church in Nelson. Mahoney did valuable work in the erection of new buildings and the development of the orphanage at Stoke. He was made a dean in 1899, and in the following year celebrated his jubilee as a priest. He was keenly interested in athletics. Mahoney died on 12 Apr 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *The Colonist*, 14 Apr 1903.

MAIN, DAVID FORSYTH (1831-80) was a barrister of the Inner Temple, and came to Otago in the early sixties. He was elected in 1867 to represent Manuherikia in the Otago Provincial Council, in which he sat till 1870. He represented Port Chalmers in the House of Representatives (1867-70), and on retiring was appointed registrar of lands and deeds in Dunedin (1872). He stood for Caversham against Barron in 1879. Main in 1869 took up the Taieri Lake station. His death occurred on 27 Jul 1880.

*Parltry Rec'ld; Evening Star*, 28 Jul 1880.

MAIN, GEORGE MARTIN (1835-1902) was born in Scotland, and came to New Zealand as a lad and worked at Robertson's rope walk in Auckland. He was then apprenticed as a compositor in the *New Zealander* office, became a compositor on the *New Zealand Herald* (1863) and later foreman. In 1880 he joined the literary staff, on which he was for some years parliamentary representative and contributor of a weekly column under the name of 'Mercurio.' Main was treasurer, and later president, of the New Zealand Institute of Journalists. He compiled for publication a history of the Auckland press. He married Hannah, daughter of Benjamin Gittos.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Auckland Star*, 9 Jul 1902.

MAIR, GILBERT (1797-1857) was born at Deveron, Peterhead, Scotland. As a boy he made several voyages in trading sloops belonging to his father, a small shipowner who sustained some losses during Napoleon's wars. He first visited Kororareka in his own vessel in 1821, and settled at Bay of Islands in 1824. Leaving his own ship, he assisted Henry Williams to build the *Herald*, which he commanded in the mission service between Bay of Islands,

## MAIR

Sydney and Bay of Plenty, until she was wrecked on Hokianga bar (1828). Mair married in 1827 Elizabeth (1809-70), daughter of W. G. Puckey (q.v.). They lived at Paihia till 1832, when Mair settled as a trader and merchant at Wāhāpu. He witnessed the declaration of independence of the Maori chiefs (1835) and the signing of the treaty of Waitangi (1840). Mair dealt in stock, buying and selling horses from Valparaiso. With Busby (q.v.) he was interested in land at Ngunguru and they exported timber, gum and flax to Sydney and sent the first kauri gum to the United States. Their schooners traded from Bay of Islands to Poverty Bay. In 1842 Mair sold his Wāhāpu property, taking a government grant at Whangarei in exchange. In 1845 he warned the naval authorities that Heke intended to attack Kororareka on the following day, and took his family to Auckland for safety. They returned to Bay of Islands in 1846, and to Whangarei in 1847. Mair died on 16 Jul 1857.

Jackson: Sherrin and Wallace.

MAIR, GILBERT (1843-1923) was the son of Gilbert Mair (q.v.), and was born at Wāhāpu, Bay of Islands. As a young man he gained a facile command of the Maori language while assisting his father in the purchase of kauri gum. He was something of a horseman, a botanist and a good cricketer.

In 1860 Mair was articled to the Surveyor-general at Auckland, and four years later he received his provincial certificate. He was assisting in the survey of native lands purchased by the Government between Waikato heads and Raglan when the war broke out (1863). When the fighting began on the East Coast (1865) he was engaged as clerk and native interpreter at Tauranga. He at once joined the Waikato Regiment (Col. Haultain's) and thereafter was constantly engaged with the enemy. At Irihanga (18 Jan 1867) he had his baptism of fire, and at Whakamarama he led the attack, had his horse shot under him and carried the body of Jeffs out of action. He was mentioned in despatches. At Kaituna, when second in command of the Arawa contingent, he swam a river at midnight with his men. Attacking the Waitaha tribe in their pa at Te Puke, he destroyed their stores and food. At Taumata (4 Feb 1868) he led the attack on the enemy rifle pits and was

MAIR

promoted to an ensigncy on the spot by Haultain (who was present). After being present at Te Akeake, Paengaroa and Te Kakai he distinguished himself in the second action at the last-named place (which was held by a Ngati-Porou force), and carried a wounded chief out under fire.

In the Rotorua campaign Mair commanded 100 men of the Ngati-Pikiao under Pokiha Taranui when they cut off a force of 400 Waikatos at Puraku (Mar). For this he was mentioned and promoted to lieutenant. In the Whakatane campaign he raised during one night a force of Ngati-Rangitahi and hastened to relieve the Ngati-Awa at Rauporoa (Mar 1869). They were too late to achieve their objective, but diverted Te Kooti from his next attack on Whakatane and chased him into the forest. On 6 May Mair led the attack which secured the enemy post at Te Harema (Urewera), and on the following day he pursued Te Kooti, killing 20 of his men, including the notorious Peka Makarini (Baker McLean), whom he shot. In one of the last engagements he killed Patara and Wi Heretaunga. In the second campaign (2 Feb 1870) he made a forced march from Te Papa to Rotorua in time to engage Te Kooti, who was attacking Ohinemutu with 400 men. He continued the pursuit with the Arawa Flying Column No. 1.

Mair was now promoted captain. (He was awarded the New Zealand Cross on 1 Apr 1886) He and Preece spent two years on dangerous patrol duty in the Urewera (1870-72). After the war he was native interpreter to the House of Representatives; Government agent at Tauranga and land purchase officer in several districts. He was at different times president of the Ikaroa Maori land board; official member of the Arawa Maori council, and native resident magistrate. He was aide-de-camp to Roberts at Parihaka (1881).

Mair enjoyed the full rank of chief of the Arawa. In later years he entertained distinguished visitors on behalf of the Government. After retiring, he farmed at Waiotapu and Bay of Plenty. He married (1888) Eleanor Kathleen (d. 1893), daughter of John Sperrey, Commissioner of Taxes. Mair's death occurred on 29 Nov 1923.

Jackson (p); Gudgeon (p); Cowan ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 30 Nov 1923.

MAIR

MAIR, WILLIAM GILBERT (1832-1912) was born at Wahapu, Bay of Islands, the eldest son of Gilbert Mair (q.v.). He was educated in part by John Fogan, an American settler, and afterwards at the mission school, Waimate, and St John's College, Auckland. He then farmed for a few years with his father at Deveron, Whangarei, and in 1853 went to the goldfields of Australia, where he spent three years.

Mair was an accomplished Maori linguist, and when the Waikato war broke out he joined the Colonial Defence Force cavalry under Nixon (1863). At the battle of Rangiaowhia (21 Feb 1864) he was in the van of the fighting when Nixon was wounded. Getting a door from a neighbouring hut, he helped to carry him out under heavy fire. He was present also at Hairini and at Orakau (Mar-Apr). When the siege had continued for some days General Cameron ordered Mair, owing to his coolness and knowledge of Maori, to advance and communicate with the defenders. While he parleyed he was covered by the rifles of the King soldiers in pits within a few yards of him, one of whom fired and cut his revolver strap. Cameron's invitation to the defenders to surrender in order to save the lives of the women and children evoked the historic reply 'Ka whawhai tonu, ake, ake, ake'; the firing was renewed and the pa carried by assault. Mair led the assault and endeavoured (but failed) to save some women, including Hini-i-Turama from the fury of the soldiers. (See TAPSELL.)

At the end of this campaign Mair was appointed native resident magistrate at Taupo. When fighting broke out in Bay of Plenty and on the East Coast he was promoted major in the militia. His command, the Arawa native contingent, was constantly in action in the difficult country south of Bay of Plenty and in the Urewera. Forcing his way through from Rotorua to Matata, he captured Te Teko pa brilliantly, the prisoners including the prophet and eight others implicated in the murder of Fulloon. When the campaign was over he again settled as magistrate at Waikato, his special duty being to cultivate a good understanding with Tawhiao and his chiefs. This he achieved with signal success, and eventually all laid down their arms.

In 1871 Mair married Janie Cathcart Black (Sydney). In 1882 he was appointed a judge of

MAITLAND

the native land court and the appellate court. In 1899, after the bombardment by British, German and American warships in Samoa, he was appointed to assess the damages suffered by residents. Mair died on 8 Jul 1912.

Jackson (p); Gudgeon (p); Cowan (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Jul 1912.

MAITLAND, JAMES PILLANS (1831-1902) was born at Edinburgh, the son of Joseph Maitland, of Kirkcudbrightshire. Educated at the Loretto School and the Edinburgh Institution, he entered the office of Cunningham Borthwick to learn the profession of an accountant and actuary. In 1851 he came to New Zealand in the *Slains Castle*, and walked to the Molyneux with J. L. C. Richardson to meet his brother and uncle (F. Pillans, q.v.). In 1854 he bought the Crescent estate (at Kaitangata) and Hill-end, which he managed till 1861, when he was appointed magistrate at Clutha and Tokomairiro. In 1876 he was commissioner of crown lands, and he was employed on several royal commissions. He married (1855) Ann, daughter of Robert Williams. Maitland was a keen fisherman and a strong supporter of the acclimatisation society (of which he was president 20 years). He was president of the Otago Rugby football union and the Carisbrook cricket club, and chairman of the Carisbrook Ground Co. He retired in 1901, and died on 22 Aug 1902.

Jourdain; John Wilson; *Otago Daily Times*, 25 Aug 1902.

MAJOR, CHARLES THOMAS (1869-1938) was born at Auckland, the son of C. Major. He was educated at Nelson College (where he commanded the cadets in 1888), and at Auckland University College (B.A. 1891; M.A. 1892, first-class honours; B.Sc. 1893). Joining the staff of King's College, Auckland, in 1893, he was later assistant master at St John's College. In 1896 he became English master at Nelson College, but soon returned as first assistant to King's. He served with the 5th contingent of New Zealanders in the South African war, being in command of the Auckland company and afterwards of the artillery battery. (D.S.O. 1901.) On returning to New Zealand he was for three years at Nelson College, and then took charge of the preparatory school at Scotch College, Melbourne (1904). In the following year he became headmaster of King's College, Auck-

MALET

land, which he controlled with great success until 1926. The amalgamation with St John's College was effected in 1913, and a fine new block of buildings was erected at Mangere. Major retired in 1926, but continued to interest himself in the creation of a preparatory department at Remuera. In the war of 1914-18 he commanded the Auckland military district. (C.B.E. 1918.) He died on 21 Nov 1938.

*Nelson Coll. Reg.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 22 Nov 1938.

MAKETU (?-1847), a Whanganui chief of inferior standing, was of middle age at the time of the arrival of the New Zealand Company's agents (1840). He was the only objector to the sale of land there, but yielded to the authority of Turoa. Always hostile to British authority, he led a Whanganui taua which was sent down in 1846 to help Rauparaha and Rangihaeata, but was not allowed by Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake to pass Waikanae. Maketu was killed in the attack on Wanganui on 19 May 1847.

MAKITANARA, TUITI (1874-1932) was born at Wairau (1874), a son of George McDonald. He was educated at Wairau, and from 1902 was farming at Koputoroa and practising as a native agent. Later he farmed at Hokio and Queen Charlotte Sound. He was good at boxing, wrestling and football. Makitanara represented the Southern Maori in Parliament from 1928 till his death on 24 Jun 1932. He belonged to the Rangitane and Muaupoko tribes.

MALET, FREDERICK DE CARTERET (1837-1912) was born at St Heliers, Jersey. Arriving in Auckland in 1861, he spent four years farming in Otago and Canterbury. In 1865 he was appointed to the provincial post of warden's clerk at Hokitika and clerk to the resident magistrate, which position he later held in Christchurch from 1868. He was appointed registrar of the Supreme Court at Christchurch (1876) and, taking up the study of law, he was admitted to the bar in 1881. He practised in Christchurch till 1887.

Malet was registrar of the New Zealand University (1872-74) and secretary of the Canterbury College board of governors (1873-76). He remained a member of the board till 1895 and was chairman (1885-94), and a member of the Agricultural College board of governors

## MALFROY

from 1895-97. For two years (1891-93) he was managing director of the *Lyttelton Times* Co. In 1908 he became Government director of the Bank of New Zealand, and later a director of the Christchurch Meat Co. He died on 21 Mar 1912. Malet married a daughter of Archdeacon Wilson.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Hight and Candy; *Lyttelton Times*, 22 Mar 1912.

MALFROY, JEAN MICHEL CAMILLE (1839-97), a son of Jean Baptiste Malfroy, a miller, was born at Lons-le-Saulnier, in the department of Jura, France. Emigrating to Victoria in the early fifties, he worked at Bendigo and Ballarat, and a few years later came to New Zealand and settled on the West Coast. For a time he was mayor of Ross. Appointed in 1886 as resident engineer of the Government sanatorium in Rotorua, he made a study of the geysers of the district, especially at Whakarewarewa, and published *Geysel' Action at Rotorua* (1892). In 1889 he represented New Zealand at the Paris Exhibition, where he was made a chevalier of the Legion of Honour. In 1893 he reported on the Hanmer springs. Malfroy died on 22 Jan 1897.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 24 Jan 1897.

MALING, CHRISTOPHER (1843-1917) was born at Nelson a few months after the death at the Wairau of his father, Thomas Awdas Maling (a son of William Mating, of Kidside, Westmoreland), who was chief constable at Nelson.

Mating served in the wars against Te Kooti, showing great skill as a scout. In the final pursuit of Titokowaru Whitmore formed a small corps of guides in charge of Lingard (q.v.). When Lingard was invalided a few weeks later Maling was put in command, with the rank of sergeant. He rendered most efficient service throughout. With two men he carried out a dangerous reconnaissance of two days and two nights to ascertain the direction taken by Titokowaru after his departure from Turangaika (Feb 1869). On 7 May he had a narrow escape when his scouts fell into an ambush near Manawa-iwi, near Ngaputahi. Maling carefully reconnoitred the enemy's position before the final fight at Porere (Oct 1869), and afterwards did good service at Tapapa and carrying despatches from Fraser at Tauranga to McDon-

## MALONE

nell at Taupo. He received the New Zealand Cross for his services, which continued until Jun 1870, when the Europeans were withdrawn from the operations against Te Kooti. Three out of the nine members of the corps were killed and four wounded. Maling was afterwards given a captain's commission in the militia. The book by Hamilton Browne, *With the Lost Legion in New Zealand*, appears to be based upon a diary kept by Maling throughout these operations.

Maling was afterwards employed in the Lands and Survey department and the Post and Telegraph department. He had an official position for a while in Japan, and spent his last years in England, where he died in Feb 1917.

N.Z. Army records; Cowan; Gudgeon; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 16 Feb 1877.

MALLOCK, JOHN WILLOUGHBY, was born in London. He studied medicine without fully qualifying, but often gave advice to remote settlers. He arrived in Canterbury by whale-boat before the first fleet, and took up the Heathstock run, erecting a whare. The Lances afterwards became partners, and Mallock moved to Horsley Downs. It was due to him that the partnership survived the slump of 1868-71. On one occasion he rode a match against William Hyde Harris from Horsley Downs into Christchurch, taking both horses as the stake. In 1871 Mallock acclimatised the Australian magpie. He represented Waipara in the Provincial Council 1866-75, and was a member of the first Waipara road board. His death occurred in 1879.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Acland; *The Press*, 4 Feb 1903, 14 Aug 1930.

MALONE, WILLIAM GEORGE (1859-1915) was educated privately in England and France and arrived in New Zealand in 1880. For two years he served in the Armed Constabulary and thereafter farmed in the Taranaki bush country (1883-93). Malone was chairman of the Ngaire road board and a member of the Hawera county council and of the Taranaki hospital and charitable board (1885-90), and clerk and treasurer of the Stratford county council (1890-97). Having meanwhile commenced to read law, he was admitted a solicitor (1894) and barrister (1899), and established the legal firm of Malone,

## MAMAKU

McVeagh and Anderson, of New Plymouth, Stratford and Inglewood.

He was a keen volunteer, being captain of H company of the Taranaki Regiment (1900), and adjutant (1903). When the war of 1914-18 broke out, he volunteered for service and was appointed to command the 1st battalion Wellington Regiment in the Expeditionary Force; was in the fighting on the Suez canal, Senu5si and Gallipoli, and was killed on 8 Aug 1915. He was a fine soldier and disciplinarian, and created a noteworthy esprit de corps.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *50 Years Rugby in Taranaki*, 1935 (p); Studholme.

MAMAKU (?1790-1887) was one of the most celebrated chiefs of the Whanganui river. He belonged to the tribe Ngati-Haua te Rangi. He was a son of Te Ora Kairakau, and grandson of Whakaneke, and was born at Makokoti, 108 miles up the Whanganui river, where he afterwards established his own pa.

A fine specimen of Maori, with strong limbs and noble, aquiline features, he is said to have defeated a taua of Ngati-Maniapoto at OtamakatII (near Mount Hikurangi) about 1821. He wished to join Te Rauparaha in the heke to Kapiti, but Pehi Turoa objected and turned his migration back. During the first migration of Ngati-Raukawa under Rua-maioro, they attacked Mamaku's pa, but the 800 defenders, under Mamaku, with the help of Whanganui under Pehi Turoa, drove them off, Rua-maioro being killed. In 1829, when Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Awa attacked the Whanganui pa at Putikiwaranui for interfering with the previous heke, Mamaku escaped in spite of the efforts of Te Rauparaha to catch him. Pehi Turoa was besieged almost to the point of starvation. Mamaku was present at Ohariu in 1835 as the guest of Ngati-Tama, but took no part in the massacre. Well disposed towards the Europeans, he welcomed them at Port Nicholson, and erected huts for J. C. Crawford and others in 1840.

Though advanced in years, Mamaku led the taua which attacked the post at Boulcott's farm in the Hutt valley, where the 58th Regiment were surprised and suffered some losses (16 May 1846). He fought on the retreat through Pahautanui and the Horokiwi valley. At Whanganui he tried to curb his people, but warned the settlers that if they brought the soldiers into

## MAMAKU

the district he would attack them. He was anxious to meet the soldiers in battle. After the murderers of the Gilfillans had been punished, Mamaku took the field to help the Ngati-Ruaka.

On 9 Jun 1947 an attack was made on a party of the 99th Regiment engaged in a reconnaissance, farms were plundered and raids made close to the stockade. Mamaku then retired up the river, having raised the mana of the Maori soldier by his expedition. He refused the overtures of Hori Kingi te Anaua to return and make his peace with Sir George Grey, but eventually yielded to those of the Rev R. Taylor, and was brought into town by Major Wyatt (17 Feb 1848). He complained that he was not properly paid for his share in the land at Poneke, and eventually Grey gave him a few pounds, remarking that he was the only Maori by whom he had ever been deceived.

For some years thereafter Mamaku lived at his pa up the river. Crawford visited him in 1862 at Tapui-kumara, above Ongaruhe. While engaged in a dispute with the Ngati-Tu over the ownership of the flourmill at Mara,ekowhai, he took some prisoners and asked Governor Browne what he should do with them. Mamaku was one of the chiefs mentioned as eligible for the position of Maori king (1857), but declined to be nominated. In 1860 he remained in seclusion up the river, his people fearing treachery if he visited Whanganui. He was one of the last chiefs baptised by the Rev R. Taylor, when he assumed the name of Hemi Topine (James Stovin). He also at one time used the names Topine te Mamaku te Ika Nui-o-Roto-ote-Pukenga, and Te Karamu and Ngatai.

Mamaku is said to have been present in the reserve line at Orakau (Apr 1864). He was much influenced by the Hauhau cult. Jealous of the prominence that was given to Topia Turoa when he declared against Te Kooti, Mamaku sent his wife to Topia asking for arms to defend himself against Te Kooti (1869). Te Kooti was with Mamaku's people on the river, and for a while Mamaku was disposed to help him and to induce Titokowaru to join forces. He received Tapia defiantly and ordered him to return to Wanganui, but Topia insisted and Mamaku yielded, sending a message to Te Kooti to move out of the district; He died in June 1887.

## MANDERS

Lindauer (p); S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Power; Crawford; Downes (and in *Polyn. Jour.*, Mar 1936); Cowan (p); Taylor; *Wanganui Herald*, Jul 1887.

MANDERS, HENRY, came to Otago in the sixties. He represented Lakes in the Otago Provincial Council for a few months at the end of the period (1875). In the following year he was elected to Parliament for Wakatipu, which he represented until 1879. He was in partnership with Haughton (q.v.) as mining agents at Queenstown. Manders died on 5 Jan 1891.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1876-79; *Otago P.C. Proc.*

MANIHERA (?-1847), a chief of the Ngati-Ruanui tribe, who lived for many years at Waokena and Whareroa. Soon after the arrival of the missions he became conspicuous for his piety and devotion. At a Christmas meeting at Whanganui (24 Dec 1846) he accepted the suggestion of the Rev Richard Taylor that he should proceed as a missionary to the Ngati-Tuwharetoa. The losses suffered by that tribe at Waitotara in 1841 had, however, not been expiated and Enau, a brother of Herekieke, warned him that it was a foolhardy adventure, like walking over the dead bodies of the tribe. Nevertheless Manihera and Kereopa (also of Waokena) left on their pilgrimage. Visiting first Porou:awhao, they remonstrated with Rangihaeata for his hostility to the British, and disregarding his warning, they proceeded on their journey by way of the East Coast and Rotoma. At Taupo Manihera felt a presentiment of death, but rejected all warnings and proceeded to Pukawa. Both were killed by the people whom they had gone to visit (12 Mar 1847). Manihera remained firm in his faith, praying for his slayers.

Herekieke was absent at the time of the murder. At Taylor's invitation he agreed to make peace with Ngati-Ruanui and a missionary was settled at Poutu.

Taylor; W. Williams.

MANING, FREDERICK EDWARD (1811-83) was born in Dublin, a grandson of Archibald Maning, and on his mother's side of the Rev John Barrett, D.D., vice-provost of Trinity College. His father, Frederick Maning, emigrated to Tasmania with his family in the *Ardent* in 1824, and nine years later Maning shipped in the brig *Mary and Elizabeth* for

## MANNING

Hokianga, where he settled permanently. He conceived a warm attachment to the Maori people, and married a sister of the Rarawa chief Hauraki, who sold him 200 acres of land at Onoke (1839). Hauraki was killed in Heke's war (1845), a narrative of which was published by Maning (1862).

A skilful boxer and wrestler, Maning delighted in the company and the games of the natives, and was highly respected by them. For some years, in partnership with Kerry, he kept a store at Onoke. He was present at the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi, and took part in the duty of interpreting for the chiefs. His knowledge of the Maori language was unsurpassed. In 1865 Maning was appointed a justice of the peace, and shortly afterwards a judge of the native land court. His familiarity with native history and customs was of inestimable service, and many of his judgments are quoted as classics. Particularly noteworthy are the pronouncements on the intricate Rangitikei-Manawatu case arising from the conquests of Te Rauparaha, and on the Te Aroha purchase. In 1863 Maning published the first edition of *Old New Zealand*, of which he shortly afterwards made a determined effort to destroy all copies. It has since been reprinted in numerous editions. In 1880 he wrote the story of Hinemoa and Tutanekai, which was published in the following year as *Hinemoa; a Maori Love Story*. In 1885 he published *Maori Traditions*. His last book on New Zealand disappointed him, and he destroyed the manuscript with the intention of rewriting it.

Maning went to London in the early eighties and died on 25 Jul 1883. He was buried in Auckland on 8 Dec.

Maning, *op. cit.*; Buick, *First War*; Cox; Sherin and Wallace (p); Webster; Marring letters in Turnbull Library; Scholefield, *Hobson*; Williams; Rusden; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Jul, 13 Aug, 10 Dec 1883, 17, 29 Mar 1892; H. T. Kemp in *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Mar 1901; E. M. Dunlop in *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Jun 1904; *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Jul 1933 (p).

MANNING, SAMUEL (1841-1933) was born in Suffolk and educated at Needham Market school. He came to New Zealand in the *Egmont* (1856), and was variously employed until 1865, when he established at Christchurch the brewing firm of S. Manning and Co. In 1882 this was sold to a company of which he

## MANNING

was managing director till 1889. Manning was a trooper, and later an officer, of the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry. He was a member of the Heathcote road board from 1875; a member of the City Council, and mayor in 1890. He was chairman of the Crown ironworks and a director of the Mutual benefit building society, the Provident and Industrial Insurance Co., and the Kaiapoi Woollen Co. He died on 21 Nov 1933.

*Christchurch Times*, 22 Nov 1933.

MANNING, WALTER (1854-1929) was born in London, attended school to the age of 13, and was apprenticed to a London engineering shop. He then went to sea as an apprentice with his uncle in the barque *Warren Hastings* and sailed later in the *Isabella Blythe* to the East Indies. In 1873 he left his ship, the *Duke of Edinburgh*, in Wellington, and joined the ketch *Clematis* trading on the coast. He served in several other larger ships before joining the Government steamer *Luna*. He gained a home trade master's certificate in the ketch *Falcon* and became captain of the *Shepherdess* and the *Otaki*. He was then mate of the New Zealand Shipping Co.'s *Jane Douglas* (1876) and commanded the *Stormbird* before joining the Union Steamship Co. in 1881. He commanded their vessels for 36 years, including 23 years in charge of the Lyttelton-Wellington steamers *Penguin*, *Rotomahana*, *Marama* and *Maori*. Manning wrote *Below and Above the Water Line* and *Interned*. He died on 12 Feb 1929.

*The Dominion* and *The Press*, 14 Feb 1929 (pp).

MANSFIELD, KATHERINE (1888-1923), nee Kathleen Beauchamp, was born at Wellington on 14 Oct 1888, the third daughter of Sir Harold Beauchamp (q.v.). She lived during her childhood at various homes in Wellington and Karori, and was educated in the first instance at the Karori school and after wards at Miss Swainson's school (later known as Marsden School) in Fitzherbert terrace. While there she evinced a taste for writing, and contributed to the school magazine verse and prose which showed the spark of inspiration. In 1903, with her two elder sisters, she was taken to England and entered a finishing school known as Queen's College, in Harley street, where she edited the college magazine. She was there three years, and incidentally attended the Royal Academy of

## MANSFIELD

Music for the study of the 'cello. Reaching New Zealand on her return in Dec 1906, Kathleen soon became impatient of the narrow surroundings and unartistic society of the young country. The desire to write became a passion from which she could find no respite in counter attractions, and she persistently begged her parents to "allow her to return to London to make her way in the world of letters. She had read much more deeply and adventurously than most girls of her age. She studied earnestly the reactions and emotions of human beings as she met them in her daily life; and she practised her hand at simple, reflective prose and modest but competent verse. As early as 1904 she had written lyrics, two of which were set to music by her uncle (F. V. Waters) and sung by him at a public dinner.

Though this sojourn of 20 months was her only experience of her native land after her childhood, she utilised it to garner impressions and to perfect her literary style. With delicate sensibility and photographic precision she recorded her sum of human experience, which in the years to come was to be somewhat restricted. She had already dedicated herself to literature before she left England, and her life in New Zealand during those months was engrossed in a struggle with her parents to be allowed to try her wings in London. She read in the library of Parliament a good deal of philosophy (including Heine, Nietzsche and Dr Inazo Nitobe), and much modern poetry, drama and French literature. She received some encouragement from T. L. Mills and E. J. Brady, editor of *The Native Companion*, and at length, in Jul 1908, when she was only 20 years of age, she left for England. She had already, in her contributions to the *Native Companion* and *Harpers' Bazaar*, used the nom de plume 'Katherine Mansfield,' by which alone she is known in the literary world. 'Ambition is a curse,' she wrote in her diary, 'if you are not proof against everything else; unless you are willing to sacrifice yourself to your ambition.'

Within three years of her return to London Katherine Mansfield had established her reputation as a writer of short stories of exquisite workmanship and fine sensibility. In 1911 appeared *In a Gelman Pension*. Meanwhile trials and experience of a deeply emotional kind came to her. On 2 Mar 1909 she made

an injudicious marriage (with George Bowden) which meant nothing to her spiritually and greatly embarrassed her for some years. It was not dissolved till 29 Apr 1918, when her life had already for some years been linked with that of J. Middleton Murry. In 1910 and 1911 she contributed to *The New Age*, and in 1911-13 to *Rhythm* and *The Blue Review*, of which Murry was associate-editor. In 1915, with the help of Murry and D. H. Lawrence, she compiled and edited a magazine called *The Signature*. The war of 1914-18, despite its distractions, brought about the renewal of a friendship with her young brother (Leslie) which had been the dominating factor in her personal life. It was broken again, all too soon, by his death on active service (7 Oct 1915). Her own ill-health was promoted by the alarms and deprivations of war, and tuberculosis was now established in her system. She suffered another severe shock in the death of her mother (on Aug 1918).

Through it all Katherine Mansfield wrote fervently and meticulously, never satisfied with the quality of what she had done and always feeling, as she told A. R. Orage, that 'there is not one that I dare show to God.' She could not read anything she had written without feeling self-contempt. For her matter in these days of intellectual poverty and withdrawal from the world she turned to the treasured memories of her childhood, from which she wrought finely polished gems of prose and verse. Her own most exacting critic, she sent back to the crucible again and again; and when she died she begged her husband to 'tear up and burn as much as possible. He will understand that I desire to leave as few traces of my camping ground here as possible.' As her strength failed and she had to remain an invalid she wrote that she was 'dying of the poverty of life . . . I am tired of my little stories, like birds bred in cages.' She and Murry were married on 30 Apr 1918. She died at Fontainebleau on 9 Jan 1923, already at the age of 35 the best known and most highly esteemed of New Zealand writers.

Much of Katherine Mansfield's best work was done for the periodical press, notably the *Athenaeum* and the *Adelphi*. Collections were published at different times, of which the most noteworthy are *Prelude* (1918), *Je ne Parle pas Francais* (1919), *Bliss* (1920), *The Garden Party*

(1922), *The Dove's Nest* (1923), *Something Childish* (1924), *The Aloe* (1930). Her collected *Poems* were published in 1923; her *Journals* (edited by Murry) in 1927; her *Letters* in the following year, and a volume of reviews, *Novels and Novelists*, in 1930. *The Aloe* was an early draft of *Prelude*. A bibliography of Katherine Mansfield's work, by Ruth E. Mantz, appeared in 1931; and a *Life*, by Miss Mantz and J. Middleton Murry, in 1933. In 1921 the Femina-Vie Heureuse committee submitted *Bliss*, in conjunction with Rose Macaulay's *Dangerous Ages* and Brett Young's *The Black Diplmond*. Two years later it submitted *Prelude*.

G. H. Scholefield, chapter in Beauchamp's *Reminiscences*, 1937; Mantz, *op. cit.*; D.N.B.; K. Mansfield, *Letters and Journals*; *Annals N.Z.Lit.*; *Quarterly Review*, Nov 1929.

MANSFORD, THOMAS ANSTEY (1822-80) was born in Bath, the son of an army surgeon who served in the Peninsula war. Educated for law, he passed in 1843 and acquired a profitable connection in Bath. He came into some money on the death of his father, and emigrated to New Zealand (1860), obtaining his first employment as chief clerk in the resident magistrate's court at Auckland. Two years later he was appointed magistrate at Port Chalmers, where he lived for many years. He was retrenched from the service for a short time in 1867 and returned to practise, but was afterwards appointed magistrate at Dunedin, and in 1878 at Wellington. He was also for a time district judge. Mansford died on 13 Oct 1880.

*Otago Daily Times*, 18 Oct 1880; *N.Z. Times*, 5 Nov 1880.

MANSFORD, WILLIAM HEMMING (1820-90) was born at Bath, the son of a doctor. Trained as a civil engineer, he was engaged in surveying railway lines in England. He arrived in Otago by the *Blundell* (1848) and bought land at Port Chalmers, where he promoted the first jetty and bonded store. From 1855-58 he represented Port Chalmers in the Otago Provincial Council. When the customs office was moved to Dunedin Mansford established an import business in Stafford street, opening stores when the gold rush began at Gabriel's Gully, and later in Milton. He also farmed at Warepa and Coomb Hay (on the Tokomairiro river). Mansford was

again in the Provincial Council, as member for Matau (1863-65). He was one of the first to promote the flax industry in Otago. In 1874 he was appointed registrar of Otago University, which position he held until his death on 22 May 1890.

*Evening Star*, 23 May 1890.

MANSON, SAMUEL (1815-90) was born and educated at Caperton, Ayrshire. In 1842, with his wife and family, he came to New Zealand in the *Thomas Harrison*, intending to settle at Wellington. His brother (Dr David Manson) died on the voyage. Finding difficulty in getting land, Manson joined the Deans brothers and John Gebbie when they moved to Canterbury in Sinclair's schooner (Feb 1843). While the families remained at Port Levy in charge of Gebbie, the others went by whaleboat up the Avon to Riccarton, where Manson erected the first house on the Canterbury plains. He remained in Riccarton two years, and in 1845 settled with his family and the Gebbies at the head of the bay, where he established a dairy farm, 'Kainshill: selling the produce to Wellington until the arrival of the Canterbury settlers. He died on 18 Apr 1890.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 19 Apr 1890.

MANTELL, WALTER BALDOCK DURANT (1820-95) was the son of Dr Gideon A. Mantell (1790-1852), LL.D., F.R.S., the geologist; author of *Medals of Creation* and the atlas of fossil remains. Born at Lewes, Sussex, England, and educated at Brighton, he studied medicine at London University, 'but did not proceed to his degree. At the age of 20 he came to New Zealand in the *Oriental* (arriving Jan 1840). He took up land at Wainui, but was disappointed, and returned to town, and accepted employment with the New Zealand Company. He assisted to form the settlements at Wanganui and Taranaki, where with Nairn he investigated the moa bone deposits at Waingongoro.

In 1841 he was clerk to the magistrates at Wellington; in 1842 postmaster, and in 1845 superintendent of military roads. In 1848 he was appointed by the Governor commissioner for the extinguishment of native titles in the Middle Island. He resided most of his time in Otago, and succeeded in arranging the purchase of 30,000,000 acres of land for something like £5,000 cash. In 1851 he was appointed commis-

sioner of crown lands for Otago, holding the position for five years. He did not get on well with the Otago people. While visiting England (1855-59), Mantell was told that the New Zealand Government did not propose to honour the promises he had made' to the Maori as to schools, hospitals and reserves. He tried to obtain an interview with Henry Labouchere, the Secretary of State, to protest, but was refused, and accordingly he resigned his position in New Zealand.

Returning to the colony (1860), he was elected in the following year M.H.R. for Wallace (which he represented for five years). In Jul 1861 Fox took advantage of his knowledge of Maori matters to appoint him Native Minister for a few months. Domett made him a member of his executive (1862-63) as Secretary for Crown Lands, and for a few weeks as Posunaster-general. In the Weld ministry, too, his services were requisitioned as Native Minister (Dec 1864-Jul 1865), and for a few weeks as Native Secretary (Apr-Jul 1865). He did not stand for re-election in 1866, but a few months later was called to the Legislative Council, of which he remained a member until his death, on 7 Sep 1895.

Mantell's knowledge of Maori language, customs and remains was most intimate, and he contributed many papers to the proceedings of the New Zealand Institute, notably on the moa beds of Waingongoro (Taranaki) and Waikouaiti (Otago), and the drawings in the Takiroa caves, Waitaki valley. He was one of the founders, and some years secretary, of the New Zealand Institute, and was president of the Wellington Philosophical society (1870). Mantell married first (1863) Mary Sarah (d. 1873) daughter of Edward Prince; and second (1876) Jane (d. 1906), daughter of Benjamin Hardwick (Beckenham, England).

*App. H.R.*, 1858, C3; 1873, G2c; 1886, G16; 1888, 18; *Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Encycl. Brit.* (11th ed), vol 17; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vols 1, 3, 5; *Col. Gent.*; Hocken; Mantell letters and diaries in Turnbull Library; Ward (p); Gisborne; Saunders; Rusden; Mackay; *Lyttelton Times*, 6 Jun 1879; *Athenaeum*, 20 Nov 1852; *Evening Post* and *N.Z. Times*, 8 Sep 1895. Portrait: Parliament House.

MARAHAU, HOROMONA, as a boy accompanied his father on warlike expeditions, in-

## MARCH

cluding the taking of a pa at Whaingaroa, and afterwards a great cannibal feast at Hanga. He was present at two victorious fights at Maungatautari. After an attack by Ngau-Raukawa on Horomona's pa he pursued the assailants, but was badly defeated and narrowly escaped with his life. Other fights occurred at Kawhia and at Mokau, where again Marahau was severely defeated. He returned to attack Mokau and took savage revenge upon his enemies, killing two hundred (who were eaten), but sparing the chief on account of a kindness he had done his brother. He made later forays against Poverty Bay, Kapiti and Whanganui and then took part in the Taranaki wars.

Attacked and defeated at Waitara by Te Rau-paraha, Marahau retreated to Pukerangiora, where he was besieged until relieved by Te Wherowhero and Waharoa. In the assault by Ngapuhi at Matakaitaki he was amongst the prisoners. He afterwards escaped, and gathering his warriors, returned to Poverty Bay and inflicted great losses upon the tribes there, killing 600 at one pa. Shortly afterwards he became blind. He first met the Dissionaries at Otawhao, and at Matamata he heard the Rev Henry Williams preaching. He was converted and baptised with the name of Horomona (Solomon) and soon afterwards became a catechist and teacher under the Church Missionary Society (1845). For some years he assisted the Rev J. Morgan with his Scripture classes and with great earnestness and energy carried the Gospel to heathen tribes.

*The Southern Cross and Southern Crown (1855); Angus, New Zealanders (p) and Savage Life.*

MARCH, JOHN EDWIN (1836-1916) was born in St Stephens, Cornwall, and educated at the Royal Naval College, Greenwich. Arriving in Lyttelton by the *John Taylor* in 1853, he engaged in sheep farming for a time. In 1863 he was appointed clerk in the Immigration office as an employee of the Canterbury Provincial Council. Five years later he was assistant immigration officer and administrator of charitable aid; and in 1872 chief immigration officer for the Middle Island. His later appointments were secretary to the hospital and charitable aid board (1878), steward of village settlements (1886) and superintendent of village settlements for the Colony (1891). In 1895 this office

## MARMON

was extended to Australasia, and he wrote a valuable report on the subject. In 1906 March became inspector and supervisor of workers' dwellings. He was a prominent churchman, and a member of the Canterbury diocesan synod for many years. He died in Timaru on 22 May 1916.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Press*, 22 May 1916.

MARCHANT, JOHN WILLIAM ALLMAN (1841-1920) was born at Belgaum, India, the son of Dr Allman, surgeon of the 4th Regiment. Educated at Queenswood College, in Hampshire, after his father's death he adopted the name of his stepfather, with whom he was engaged on railway works in Brazil. In 1860 he joined the survey staff in Victoria and, having passed his examinations in 1862, he came to New Zealand the following year and practised at Invercargill. In 1865 he joined the lands and survey department, and surveyed the boundaries of the Nelson goldfields. In 1875 he became deputy inspector of surveys under the native land acts; in 1876 geodesical surveyor; in 1879 chief surveyor in Wellington province; in 1884 commissioner of crown lands and in 1902 surveyor-general. He retired in 1906 and died on 22 Dec 1920.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Jourdain; *N.Z. Times*, 23 Dec 1920.

MARCHANT, MARIA ELISE ALLMAN (1869-1919) was born in Wellington, a daughter of J. W. A. Marchant, Surveyor-general (1901-06). She was educated privately, and at Wellington Girls' High School, of which she was dux in 1887. After teaching for two years at Miss Swainson's private school, she attended Canterbury College. (B.A. 1892; M.A. 1894). She was later on the staff of Wellington Girls' High School (1890-95). In 1896 she was appointed headmistress of Otago Girls' High School, which position she held for 10 years. At the time of her death (on 15 Nov 1919) she was headmistress of St John's Girls' College, Invercargill.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago G.H.S. 1871-1921* Gubilee magazine, 1921 (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Nov 1919.

MARMON, JOHN (1800-80) was born in Sydney the son of an Irish stonemason. At the age of five years he went to sea with Captain Mullory in a whaler, calling at Bay of Islands, where he met some Maori chiefs. He spent the

## MARRIOTT

next five years at school and again went to sea, as cabin boy to Captain Garbet, of the brig *Comerel*. The vessel called at the Macquarie islands, at Three Kings and Bay of Islands, obtaining there a cargo of spars. On this voyage (1811) Mannon met Tapsell (q.v.), then carpenter of the whaler *Catherine*. While trading for sandalwood and other native produce they met at Nukuhiva Captain Porter of the U.S. frigate *Essex*, who had lost a boat's crew by being cast ashore. In 1816 Marmon shipped with his old owners (Undenvoods) for the island trade, again in the *King George*, which was to land sealers on the west coast of the South Island. On arriving at Borabora, Tahiti, he ran away and lived for two years under the protection of the Tahitians, returning to Sydney in the brig *Hawser*. After several voyages to Tasmania he shipped in the Government brig *Earl of Bathurst*, Captain King, for extensive explorations in northern Australia (including Dampier archipelago and Isle of France). Having been apprehended in Sydney in possession of a stolen watch, he received a sentence of one year's imprisonment, which he worked out aboard the Government ship *Henrietta*, carrying convicts and stores from port to port. In Nov 1823 he was in the *Macquarie* under Captain Kent, returning some Otago chiefs to their homes and calling at numerous ports in the South Island. Marmon spent some weeks aboard H.M.S. *Tees*. He left his own ship in Hokianga and was taken under the protection of the Ngapuhi chief Muriwai. There he married Ihipera, daughter of Raumata (better known as Hone Kingi) and took up his permanent residence, being given a piece of land at the junction of Waihou creek and Hokianga harbour. He claims to have co-operated with Muriwai in saving the brig *Glory* from being captured when she was in Hokianga with Te Rauparaha and Te Hiko on board (1826). He seems also to have been present when the brig *Wellington* was recaptured from the convicts through the instrumentality of the Rev Henry Williams. He died on 2 Sep 1880.

Thomson; Webster; *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Sep-11 Dec 1880. Marmon's narrative (last cited) is to be accepted with reserve.

MARRIOTT, JAMES HENRY (1799-1886) was trained as an optician and instrument maker,

## MARSDEN

but had also some experience of journalism before coming to New Zealand in the *Thomas Spm'ks* (1842). He was a Shakespearean actor and in the early years of the Wellington settlement he was prominent in theatrical undertakings, playing parts himself and providing the scenery and decorations. In 1844 he helped to build the Olympic theatre in Wellington, for which he made the decorations and scenery and later manufactured from whale-oil the gas for lighting purposes. He erected the Britannia saloon and the Aurora tavern (afterwards the Lyceum theatre). Marriott wrote verse on occasion. *The Constitutional Budget*, a book of doggerel and songs intended to further the struggle of the Constitutional Association for representative government, was published in 1858. He was shortly afterwards appointed sergeant-at-arms of the Provincial Council. Marriott was one of the founders of the Oddfellows' lodge and hall. He later kept a stationer's shop in Wellington, and acted as government inspector of weights and measures. He made many drawings, and some of his engravings of historic events in Wellington were produced in the *Illustrated London News* and other journals. He died on 25 Aug 1886. His daughter Alice was a celebrated actress, some time lessee of Sadler's Wells theatre, London. She died in 1900.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Margaret Lane, *Edgar Wallace* (1939); Carter; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 27 Aug 1886; *Evening Post*, 26 Aug 1886; Scholefield, in *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Aug 1939; *N.Z. Spectator*, 24 Nov 1855.

MARSDEN, SAMUEL (1765-1838) was born at Farsley, Yorkshire. His father was a blacksmith and small fanner of undistinguished birth, a good living man and a Wesleyan Methodist. Samuel went to the village school and then to the free Grammar School at Hull, but left early to enter the shop of an uncle at Horsforth, near Leeds. Showing a disposition to enter the Church, he was adopted by the Elland Clerical Society and placed at Magdalene Hall, Cambridge (1790). There he became a friend of Charles Simeon, one of the founders of the Church Missionary Society.

A diligent, unassuming student, he attracted the attention of William Wilberforce, through whose influence he was offered in 1792, before being ordained, a chaplaincy in the convict colony of New South Wales, where Wilberforce was

most anxious to have a good type of man. Marsden hesitated to accept, but his firmness of principle, intrepidity of spirit and strong judgment had so impressed his friends that he was prevailed upon, and in 1793 he was appointed second chaplain. Having been ordained in the meantime, and married at Hull to Elizabeth Fris-tan (1772-1835), he proceeded to London and joined the convict ship *William* (1 Jul 1793). On the voyage out Marsden had his first insight into the rough characters of the convicts and of the ship's company. Arriving in Port Jackson on 10 Mar 1794, he took up his abode with his wife in the barracks at Parramatta. Shortly afterwards, owing to the resignation of the senior chaplain, Marsden assumed that post. To his regret, he was prevailed upon to accept also the position of a magistrate of the colony. This not only required him to inflict punishment upon evildoers, which he did reluctantly, but it also brought him into conflict with leading citizens and with fellow magistrates of doubtful antecedents (with whom he occasionally refused to sit). Besides interesting himself in the moral welfare of the colony, which he found in a shocking state, Marsden took up the hundred acres of land allotted to each civil servant, and before long he had established a farm which became a model for convicts and free settlers. By this means the Colony became less dependent than it had been upon food supplies imported from England.

While chaplain in New South Wales, Marsden took a keen interest in the South Sea missions of the London Missionary Society. Though his work in New Zealand was carried out under the auspices of the Church Missionary Society, he remained for many years the adviser of the London Society. In 1808 he sailed on furlough to England, taking samples of his own wool to be made into doth, and proposals for the reform of the convict system in the Colony. He persuaded the Home Government to introduce manual training for the convicts and to allow a certain number of their wives to accompany them oversea. He also obtained concessions for female convicts in the Colony, whose working and living conditions were degrading in the extreme. During an interview with George III he was promised two merino sheep from the royal flocks. When he returned to New South Wales in 1810, Marsden took with him not only

a library for the use of convicts and settlers, but several tradesmen to instruct the convicts; and a number of farm animals-horses, cattle, sheep and poultry-to improve the livestock of the Colony.

He had, moreover, persuaded the new Church Missionary Society to take an interest in the natives of New Zealand, and believing that the arts of civilisation should go hand in hand with the Gospel, he got two laymen, William Hall and John King, designated by the Society to open a mission in New Zealand. In the same ship, the *Ann*, by which he returned to Australia, Marsden discovered and befriended a young Maori of good birth, Ruatara, who had been deceived and cheated by English shipmasters on his visit to England. Ruatara learned some agriculture while staying at Parramatta and when some months later he returned to his native land he took with him a quantity of seed wheat, with full instructions as to sowing. Having purchased on his own responsibility the brig *Active*, for the benefit of the mission service in New Zealand, Marsden wished to proceed in her to install Hall and King as the nucleus of the mission, for which Ruatara's influence at Bay of Islands had prepared the ground. Being refused the requisite leave of absence to go himself, he sent the *Active* in 1814, with Hall and Kendall (q.v., who had been sent out from England to supplement the mission). They returned to the Colony bringing a number of Maori chiefs to stay at Parramatta. Governor Macquarie then gave Marsden full permission to proceed to New Zealand to establish the mission. It had become clear to him that steps must soon be taken to regulate the intercourse between the Maori and residents of New South Wales and to protect the natives against lawless whites. Marsden sailed from Port Jackson on 19 Nov 1814, with a party of 35, including Kendall, Hall and King, the chiefs Hongi, Ruatara, Korokoro and Tui, a smith and two sawyers. After touching at North Cape to communicate with the natives, and spending a night at Whangaroa to settle a long-standing feud between the Whangaroa and Bay of Islands tribes, Marsden proceeded to Bay of Islands, where the *Active* anchored on 23 Dec, not far from a village belonging to Ruatara. The landing of a horse struck the natives with amazement.

At 10 o'clock on Christmas morning, Marsden held the first Christian service in New Zealand, a great crowd of natives attending, with all the principal chiefs. Preaching from the text 'Behold, I bring you glad tidings of great joy' (St Luke ii, 10), Marsden was attentively listened to, though his hearers did not understand what he said. He showed his fearless and trusting character by allowing 28 chiefs, fully armed, to accompany him in the *Active* on a cruise to various ports. At Bay of Islands he purchased one hundred acres of land for the purposes of the mission, and then returned to Sydney, taking 10 chiefs with him. A few days after his departure the chief Ruatara died. At the instigation of Marsden the chiefs Tuhi and Titore were sent to England in H.M.S. *Kangaroo*, were well treated while there, and kept as fully employed as possible learning useful arts, and helping in the compilation of a Maori dictionary. When they returned Marsden accompanied them back to New Zealand in 1819, and took advantage of the visit to select a site for a mission station at Kerikeri, in Hongi's territory. On the earnest entreaty of Tuhi he promised that another would shortly be established in the territory of the disappointed Korokoro, at Whangaroa. Undaunted by the hostilities of the warring tribes, Marsden during his three months' stay in New Zealand on this occasion journeyed more than 700 miles, visiting many disputants and prevailing upon them to abandon their expeditions.

At the request of the Admiralty he visited New Zealand again in the following year in H.M.S. *Dromedary*, to inquire into the use of New Zealand timber for spars. They were anxious years for the new mission. The return of Hongi from England, elated with his experiences and flushed with the possession of firearms, disturbed the relations of all the northern tribes, revived the bloody wars of earlier days, and encouraged the natives to treat the whites with contempt. On a visit in 1823 Marsden had to dismiss a missionary for trading in arms, but he took with him a pillar of strength for the New Zealand field, the Rev Henry Williams, with his wife and family. The hope that he had entertained of seeing the Maori tribes organised as a political unit was frustrated by the ambitions of Hongi, who aimed at the supreme kingship.

On Marsden's fifth visit, in 1827, the outlook

was still gloomy in the extreme. The Wesleyan mission at Whangaroa having been destroyed, the Rev Mr Turner sought refuge at Parramatta. Marsden hurried across in H.M.S. *Rainbow* to prevent the abandonment of his mission, which he found happily surviving the storm. The strong personality of Williams was equal to the occasion. On his seventh and last visit (1837) Marsden landed at Hokianga (with his youngest daughter) and crossed to Bay of Islands, where he joined H.M.S. *Rattlesnake* for a cruise round the coast as the guest of Captain Hobson. He believed that the early inauguration of British sovereignty in New Zealand was inevitable.

Though his main interest in later life was the New Zealand mission, Marsden continued to be the trusted adviser of the London Missionary Society in regard to its establishments in the Pacific islands. On his return from England in 1810 he found at Parramatta the disheartened missionaries who had fled from Tahiti, and encouraged them to return-as they eventually did-and to persevere in that field. He even proposed going himself to the Friendly Islands if necessary. It was not necessary, and he had the satisfaction of seeing the island missions one after another firmly established. He assisted generously missions of all denominations and made himself personally responsible for considerable sums of money on their behalf.

From the time of his first arrival in New South Wales Marsden frequently came into conflict with his fellow officials on account of his strenuous efforts to improve the condition of the convict population. The training farm attached to his parsonage at Parramatta developed into an important institution in connection with the manual training of Australian blacks, convicts and Maori visitors. Orphan schools were established on his urgent advocacy. His efforts to reform the living and working conditions of female convict workers in the cloth factory brought him into a bitter controversy. He was removed for a while from the magistracy, but completely vindicated in the report of the Bigge commission.

On the establishment of a bishopric in New South Wales, Marsden ceased to be the senior chaplain of the Colony, a respite from administrative cares which he welcomed with advancing

## MARSDEN

years. Mrs Marsden had died in 1835, and his own health declined rapidly after his last visit to New Zealand. He died on 12 May 1838. Marsden was a man of great energy, decision and honesty of purpose; pious, but endowed with a keen knowledge of the world and men. Single-minded to a degree, he had his main interest in later life in the missions to the different branches of the Polynesian race; but he never relaxed his advocacy of measures of reform in the sordid conditions of life in New South Wales.

J. R. Elder, *Letters and Journals of Samuel Marsden*, 1932 (p), and *Marsden's Lieutenants*, 1934; Carleton; *Hist. Rec. Aust.*; McNab, *Murihiku*; Marsden MSS. in Hocken and Turnbull Libraries; Ramsden; Scholefield, *Hobson*; Buller; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Stack.

MARSDEN, THOMAS (1810-76) was born at Hensingham, Cumberland, the son of a resident of Derbyshire. He arrived in Nelson by the *Prince of Wales* (1842) and took up a property of 900 acres at Stoke, of which he did not get the crown grant till 1852. He also owned land for a while near Blenheim. Marsden represented Waimea East in the Nelson Provincial Council (1858-61). He died in 1876.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p).

MARSHALL, JAMES (1843-1912) was born in Scotland. He first settled in Southland, but was attracted to the West Coast by the gold-diggings. He spent many years as miner, store-keeper and hotelkeeper at Granville, Orwell Creek and Nobbs, and about 1880 settled as a farmer at Totara Flat. He took a prominent part in public affairs, being a member of the Grey county council, the education board, the charitable aid board and harbour board. In 1902 Marshall was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member at the time of his death (on 9 Oct 1912).

*NZP.D.*, 9, 10 Oct 1912; *Col. Gent.*; *Grey River Argus*, 9 Oct 1912. Portrait: Parliament House.

MARSHALL, JOHN WILLIAMS (1814-91) was born at Yarmouth, Norfolk, the eldest son of Captain Marshall, RN. In 1836 he was appointed ensign in the 65th Regiment, with which he served in the Canadian rebellion (1837-38), in England (1841) and in New South Wales (1846). He came to Bay of Islands

## MARTIN

with his regiment (1846), and took part in the campaign at Hutt and Pahautanui. In 1858 the regiment moved to Auckland and in 1860 to Taranaki. On the conclusion of the Taranaki campaign Marshall retired with the rank of major and settled at Tututotara, Rangitikei (1862). He had a command in the militia and volunteers in subsequent troubles. He married (1849) Mary Frederica, daughter of W. Swainson, F.L.S. (q.v.). After her death (1854) he married Jane Mary Boulter (d. 1884). Marshall's death occurred on 25 Nov 1891.

Ward (p); J. G. Wilson (p); *Col. Gent.*; Cowan; *Rangitikei Advocate*, 25 Nov 1891; *Marton Mercury*, 27 Nov.

MARSHMAN, JOHN PARKER (1823-1913) was born in Bristol. He arrived in Wellington in the forties and was employed under Captain J. Thomas on the survey of Canterbury and on the construction of a road through the Ngahauranga gorge. He became treasurer to the Canterbury provincial government, and on the opening of the Ferrymead railway to the Heathcote ferry in 1863, he was appointed general manager of Canterbury railways. Work was begun on the southern railway, and three years later the Christchurch-Lyttelton line was opened. A year before the abolition of the provincial government Marshman was appointed commissioner of waste lands, and under the general Government he became Canterbury's first commissioner of crown lands (1876-84). He was a close friend of Samuel Butler, who painted his portrait. Marshman published a small book *Canterbury in 1864*. He died on 23 Nov 1913.

Festing Jones; *The Press*, 4 Feb 1935 (portrait by S. Butler), 25 Nov 1913.

MARTIN, ALBIN (1813-88) was born at Silton, Dorset, the son of a clergyman. He was educated at Salisbury Grammar School and Jesus College, Cambridge (where he became acquainted with Sir George Arney, q.v.). He was interested in art, and studied in London under Ijnnell (fellow students including D. Cox, Copley, Feilding and W. Turner), while he was a friend of the poet painter W. Blake and George Richmond. He studied also in Italy under good masters. On succeeding to a family estate, he returned to Dorset and assisted Alfred Bell in his studies.

## MARTIN

Martin came to New Zealand in the *Cashmel"e* (1851), and took up land at east Tamaki which he cultivated until 1882, when he retired to live in Ellerslie. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Franklin 1865-69, and was a strong separationist. In the war he joined the Otahuhu Royal Cavalry under Colonel Nixon, but did not see active service. He was a consistent follower of his art, and was one of the promoters of the first Art society in Auckland, of which he was treasurer and vice-president. He exhibited regularly and held exhibitions of his own oil paintings at various times. He was a prominent member of the Anglican synod and a supporter of the Ellerslie church, which he helped to establish. Martin died on 7 Aug 1888.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Nov 1880, 13 Aug 1888.

MARTIN, ARTHUR ANDERSON (1875-1916) was a son of Thomas Martin (of the New Zealand railways) and was educated at the Lumsden school and the Lawrence district high school. Passing the civil service examination, he became a cadet in the Government Life Insurance department, but left the following year (1894) to study medicine at Edinburgh University. After a brilliant course, he graduated M.D. and served as a medical officer in the South African war. His experiences were described in articles in the *British Medical Journal*. Martin then practised at Palmerston North. In 1914 he visited the United States and Great Britain with the intention of establishing a radium institute in New Zealand, but, the war breaking out, he served with the Royal Army Medical Corps in France, and was several times mentioned in despatches. His book, *A Surgeon in Khaki (1915)* is one of the best descriptions of field service published. On returning to New Zealand Martin was one of the commission appointed to investigate the outbreak of cerebro-spinal meningitis at military camps. He then returned to active service (as major N.Z.M.C.) with the New Zealand division, and died of wounds in France on 17 Sep 1916.

Studholme; Martin, *op. cit.*; *NZ. Times*, 21 Sep 1916.

MARTIN, EDWARD (1821-88) was born in northern Ireland and came to New Zealand in the *Lady Nugent* (1841). The family included

## MARTIN

his brother, John Martin (1822-92, q.v.). In 1846 he joined Kettle's survey party to layout the Otago block, and he was retained in the employ of the Otago Association to construct the track to south Otago. With James Cullen and Duthie, Martin contracted for the construction of the Jetty street wharf in Dunedin. In 1851 he took up a section in Tokomairiro between the main road and the bush, where he lived thereafter. In 1861 he visited the diggings at Gabriel's Gully with fairly good results and in 1868 he took up more land at Mount Misery for his Moneymore property. Martin was one of the first in Otago to use the portable steam engine and threshing machine. He assisted Arthur Burns (q.v.) to fix the site of the Mosgiel woollen mill. His death occurred on 24 Nov 1888.

*NZ.C.*; G. Brown; J. A. Duthie in *Bruce Herald*, 13 Apr 1931; *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Nov 1888.

MARTIN, JAMES CROSBY (1856-1926) was born in England, and came to Canterbury with his father, Thomas Martin (1825-1900), a farmer, of Leithfield, Canterbury. Educated at the Riccarton school and at Christ's College (1869-72), he was articled to a law firm in Christchurch and admitted to the bar in 1881, joining the firm of Duncan and Cotterill. Martin was appointed crown solicitor in Christchurch in 1884, and stipendiary magistrate in Wellington in 1894. In 1897 he became Public Trustee, and three years later a judge of the Supreme Court. He had held that position for a few months when he resigned and went to Australia. Returning shortly afterwards, he entered into practice at Auckland with Devore and Cooper, and later with Devore alone. In a few years he retired to live at Russell, where he took a keen interest in the sport of fishing and in the history of the Bay of Islands. He occasionally return to practice (notably when he acted as crown prosecutor in the murder trial of Denis Gunn). Martin was a good oarsman at Christchurch and Wellington and was a volunteer for many years (including eight as captain of E battery of artillery). He married (first) a daughter of E. Sanderson, of Great Peaks, Canterbury, and second Mrs Simms, daughter of Mrs Marshall (Brisbane). He died on 11 Jun 1926.

*Lyttelton Times*, 14 Jan 1901; *NZ. Herald*, 15 Jun 1926.

## MARTIN

MARTIN, JOHN (1822-92) was born at Maghera, county Down, Ireland, the son of a retired clergyman who had taken to farming. When John was 19 years old both his parents died of typhus, and the problem of providing for the family fell to an uncle, Dr Espie, late R.N. On his advice the whole family sailed by the *Lady Nugent* for New Zealand (Oct 1840). When they reached Port Nicholson John, with his knowledge of horses, found little difficulty in getting employment as a carter and with pick and shovel. On one occasion when prospects were not good he travelled on foot to Wanganui, through country not too friendly; and when hostilities broke out in the Hutt valley he did duty as a member of the Wellington militia, spending nights on sentry at Polhill gully, an approach to the town which it was feared that the hostile natives might make use of. Carting supplies and munitions to the troops, Martin made several profitable journeys to the Hutt.

Two of his brothers, Edward and Robert, went to Otago on the staff of Kettle (1846), and John established in Manners street a prosperous business as a merchant, woolbuyer, and auctioneer. He made, also, investments in town lands, chiefly on the Te Aro flat. In 1847 he married Miss Baird (of Edinburgh) and they lived in Ghuznee street, Martin square being formed on portion of his property. In 1859-61 Martin was interested with J. C. Smith (q.v.) in a run at Tuapeka, Otago. The goldfields gave them a good market for meat, but the run was resumed by the Government. By 1860 he was a substantial member of the community, and he took part in most of the commercial enterprises of early Wellington. He was a member of the town board (1863-76).

Martin had a hot temper, and was plainly not the type of man for public life. With all his shrewd sense and undoubted ability, he lacked the faculty of working harmoniously with men of different temperament. When he stood for the Provincial Council in 1865 he was almost at the bottom of the poll. Nevertheless he was a good citizen; a staunch Presbyterian, and a member of the building committee of St. Andrew's Presbyterian Church (1866). Gradually divesting himself of retail interests, Martin devoted himself more fully to financial and pastoral matters. In 1868, with his co-

## MARTIN

surety, W. B. Rhodes, he ran Cobb's coaches for a time. In 1879 he purchased for £85,000 from G. M. Waterhouse the Waihenga property of 34,000 acres. He subdivided portion of it for the town of Martinborough and for adjoining small farms, and on the remainder of the estate raised stock in a systematic manner.

Another of his interests was shipping. He was associated with T. Henderson (q.v.) in the ownership of the Circular Saw Line of steamers (including the *Wellington*, *Taranaki*, *Airedale* and *Phoebe*), which was afterwards sold to the Union Steam Ship Co. At the end of the seventies, when the fleet of the New Zealand Steam Navigation Co. was put up at auction, Martin bought it for £15,000. In public life he was apt to be a silent member, rarely speaking but attending with great regularity the sessions of the Legislative Council (to which he was called by the Grey Government in 1878). Martin died on 17 May 1892, a few months after his wife. In 1875 he presented to the city Martin's Fountain, which for many years stood in the open space in front of the Union Bank of Australia, but is now at Oriental Bay. 'Within a mile of Martin's Fountain' in the early days meant something like 'Within sound of Bow bells.'

*N.Z.P.D.*, 13 Sep 1872; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Ward; J. A. Thomson; *NZ. Times*, 18 May 1892; *Evening Star*, 23 Mar 1898; *Evening Post*, 29 Oct 1929 (p).

MARTIN, SAMUEL McDONALD, was born at Kilmuir, Isle of Skye. HigWy gifted and possessed of marked literary attainments, he emigrated to New South Wales and took up land for sheepfarming. In 1839 he visited New Zealand, and made purchases of land from the natives in prospect of the declaration of British sovereignty.

Returning to Sydney, he convened a meeting of Australian land claimants and on the arrival of Hobson (q.v.) in Jan 1840 he led deputations, one seeking assurances as to their titles; another to present an address of welcome. In partnership with another land claimant, Martin purchased machinery in Sydney to start a sawmill at Coromandel harbour. He visited Cloudy Bay and Port Nicholson, meeting E. J. Wakefield and Te Rauparaha at Kapiti.

## MARTIN

Reaching Coromandel via Bay of Islands, he now encountered unexpected obstacles in gaining possession of his land at Coromandel, where Taraia had robbed his sawyers. After an arduous visit to Matamata he returned to Bay of Islands and reported to Hobson on the prospects for settlement of the Thames valley. A month or two later a meeting of land claimants at Coromandel adopted a protest to the Government of New South Wales against the recent land ordinance and the seizure of sovereignty in New Zealand. The association for mutual protection deputed him to wait on Hobson, and he received assurances which encouraged claimants to proceed with their improvements. Martin returned to Sydney at the end of 1840, discouraged with events in New Zealand. He was appointed a magistrate of the territory (Nov 1841), but resigned a few months later. He came back to the Colony in Jan 1842 to edit the first paper at Auckland, the *New Zealand Herald and Auckland Gazette*, founded by a Sydney joint stock company. Henceforth he opposed Hobson's Government at every step, and eventually called on the sheriff to convene a public meeting demanding the Governor's recall. The feud continued during the administration of Shortland, who was represented on the directorate of the paper by three government servants (of the four directors). Early in 1844 the paper closed down, the plant being sold to make way for a new paper edited by the Attorney-general (Swainson).

Governor FitzRoy befriended Martin, asked his advice and called him to the Council (Jun 1844), of which he was a member until Mar 1845. Martin left New Zealand in that year and with W. Brown (q.v.) petitioned the House of Commons protesting against the ill-treatment of the Maori by settlers. Though very much attached to New Zealand he did not return, but spent the last few years of his life as a stipendiary magistrate at Berbice, British Guiana, where he died 22 Sep 1848. In 1842 he published his letter to the Secretary of State and in 1845 a more pretentious volume of letters on New Zealand, containing much information and controversy.

S. M. Martin, *op. cit.*; *NZ. Herald*, 1, 8 Jun 1895.

MARTIN, SIR WILLIAM (1807-80) was born in Birmingham, the youngest son of Henry Martin.

## MARTIN

He was educated at King Edward VI Grammar School in Birmingham, and in 1826 went to St John's College, Cambridge, where he was a contemporary of Selwyn (q.v.). In 1829 he graduated (as 26th wrangler and 4th classic), and took the second chancellor's gold medal. Two years later he was elected a fellow and tutor of his College. In 1832 he proceeded M.A., and in Jun of that year entered Lincoln's Inn to read for the bar. He was called in 1836 and two years later resigned his fellowship. He never entered law chambers, but was with Cracknell, an equity draughtsman and conveyancer.

Martin contended through life against a delicate constitution, and he was not reluctant when Bishop Selwyn suggested that he should come to New Zealand in the position of chief justice. Though he was not suited to the rough life of the colonies, he welcomed escape from the drudgery of the law in England. He married Mary Ann, daughter of the Rev W. Parker, a prebendary of St Paul's, and sailed in Apr 1841 for New Zealand. Swainson and Outhwaite (q.v.) were fellow passengers in the *Tyne*, and during the voyage much time was devoted by the trio to consideration of the rules which would be necessary to govern the practice of the Supreme Court in New Zealand. He arrived in Wellington in Aug, and took up his duties in Auckland in Sep. Mrs Martin came to New Zealand a few months later.

Shy and retiring, Martin shrank from publicity, and suffered acute mental distress when presiding at criminal sessions. At an early stage he became interested in the Maori people, and during his 30 years in New Zealand he was as sincere and strenuous an advocate of their rights as his judicial position allowed. Presiding at the trial of Maketu for the murder of a European, he took great pains, with the help of G. Clarke as interpreter, to expound the English law as clearly as possible, hoping thereby to impress the Maori mind with its advantages over the customs of their race. In passing sentence of death, the first inflicted on a Maori by a pakeha court of justice, Martin uttered with deep emotion: 'Maketu, in your own emphatic language, I bid you go to your forefathers.' A natural alliance was formed between Martin, Selwyn and Swainson on behalf

of the Maori people. It was this alliance that dissuaded Shortland (Oct 1842) from making war upon defiant tribes at Tauranga. In the same month Martin at Wellington refused to give instant judgment on an application for a warrant to arrest Rangihaeata. He reserved judgment partly because the hearing was ex parte and partly on a technical doubt as to the act under which the application was made. Early in 1843 he refused the warrant, thereby possibly delaying the outbreak which occurred at Wairau later in the year. Martin in these early years made many arduous journeys on foot all over the North Island, holding assizes and meeting his new colleague (H. S. Chapman, q.v.) to discuss points of procedure. He had many close friendships with chiefs of the first rank, notably Te Heuheu, Te Wherowhero, Tamati Ngapora and Tamati Waka Nene. An accomplished philologist, he made good progress with the Maori language, and was soon able to converse with the chiefs on equal terms. In Oct 1843 he commenced the erection of a native chapel close to his home in Auckland.

In 1844, pursuant to an engagement made months before, he walked overland to join Selwyn at Taupo, where he met Te Heuheu on terms of mutual respect. Te Wherowhero's dying message was a request to Martin to be good to his people. Martin's natural disposition to champion the cause of the natives brought him under criticism by the impatient settlers of the New Zealand Company, whose desire to establish themselves in life was apt to run counter to the best interests of the native occupants of the land.

In 1847 Martin joined with Selwyn in a spirited protest against Earl Grey's instructions regarding the new constitution, and they pressed their view insistently upon Governor Grey. Martin drew up a clear statement of the case under the title *England and the New Zealanders*, which was printed at the college press in 1847. In it he contended that the instructions to the Governor 'involve a breach of the national faith of Britain and a violation of established law.' The protest, written in a manly and temperate tone, won the day, and did not require to be published, but copies at a later date gained publicity through inadvertent channels.

Meanwhile the rules of the courts, owing to

the long distance between Auckland and Wellington and the difficulties of travel, made slow progress. Once Martin was to walk overland to meet his colleague at New Plymouth; at another time at Wanganui or Taupo. In 1851 we find him writing to Chapman lamenting the delay in constructing the codes of procedure; it seemed that yet another year would be necessary to complete the forms and rules for the first two classes of actions, tort and contract. 'It is impossible to desire,' he wrote (31 Mar 1851), 'that the foundations of our great work should be laid without adequate consideration, and I should be sorry if you supposed that I found in the delay anything surprising or unreasonable. . . Our work has come to be in the place of sons and daughters. . . It is not only amongst the clearest of professional duties but it is the only directly parental interest which is given to me. I am quite willing, and perhaps I am by natural disposition of my own more inclined than you or any energetic man would be, to do the slow plodding and preliminary labour of the work-to dig and delve and get the ore to the surface; but, that done, thenceforward let the whole work be a common one, otherwise it will never be worthily done.' Nevertheless they did together produce in 1852 a report on the supreme court procedure. Martin was at this time inspector of schools, and in this capacity he travelled through the North Island. He and Mrs Martin were keenly interested in the education of the Maori, for whom they kept a school and hospital free. In particular they were attached to Ngapora, whose great influence with the Waikato tribes was an important factor in delaying, if it could not prevent, the Waikato war. Throughout his administration of his high office his philo-Maori sympathies brought him under constant criticism. Yet Governor Gore Brown, with whom later he was not always in agreement, testified (17 Sep 1857) that Martin's 'learning, piety, absolute independence of local politics, give him great influence over both Europeans and natives, and he enjoys the universal respect and esteem of all classes of both races.'

Indifferent health caused Martin to visit England in 1855. There he discussed with Sir John Patteson a trust deed bill for the Church in New Zealand. He spent some months also in Italy, and returned to New Zealand in Sep 1856.

A year later he resigned his position, receiving a pension of £333 a year (increased the following year to £500). He received the honorary degree of D.C.L. from Oxford University while in England in 1858. He then returned to New Zealand in the *Kingston* (reaching Auckland in Dec 1858) and settled quietly at his home at Taurarua, where he devoted himself with a single mind to the interests and education of the Maori and the affairs of the Church of England. Though he never took holy orders he wore clerical costume and participated regularly in church observances. He personally prepared native candidates for the priesthood. At the first General Synod (1857) he rendered valuable service in drafting the constitution and statutes. Martin was made a knight bachelor in 1860. In the next few years he became more deeply involved in controversy over the Taranaki and Waikato wars. He dissented strongly from the policy which led to the Taranaki war, and in a thoughtful pamphlet gave a full and calm statement of the views of the friends of the Maori. When the Government promulgated a warning against too free discussion of native affairs and sent a copy to him, he with great propriety refrained from making his statement public. The Governor invited him (Dec 1860) to accept a seat on a council of advice on native affairs, but he retained his independence. Contending that the people of Wi Kingi te Rangitake (q.v.) were entitled to all the treatment due to subjects of the crown, he pleaded with Britain for justice and with Wi Tamihana te Waharoa against war. It was a land war, he said, begging the Government not to meet the King movement with force (May 1861). With his passionate sympathy for the Maori people Martin felt very keenly the protraction of the struggle. In Nov 1863 he drew up a protest against the confiscations, which Grey sent to the Secretary of State (Jan 1864). Writing with dignity and feeling, he called upon the Government to distinguish between the loyal and the disloyal. Again in 1865 he protested against the new law for the settlement of the confiscated lands. Writing to Chapman (7 Mar 1866) he said: 'We seem to be slowly floundering towards the end of the war. The apparently great advantage of the Colonial over the Queen's forces is to be reduced by three considerations: 1. That the Maoris do

not fight as well in a bad cause as in what they regard as a good one-not so well for the follies and crimes of the Hauhaus as in defence of their own soil and their nationality. 2. That the Colonial forces have been aided by large bodies of resolute natives acquainted with the country. 3. That the narratives of their doings have proceeded always from friendly sources and sometimes from themselves. Still there may be a balance after these abatements.'

Deeply as he deplored the war against the Maori tribes, Martin's talents were always at the disposal of the Government for constructive purposes. In Jan 1871 he drew up an exhaustive statement of amendments required in native law; he assisted Donald McLean in drafting his native lands act of that year, and he published his *Notes on the Best Method of Working of the Native Lands Act*. Though modest and gentle in disposition, Martin was endowed with great moral courage; as a judge patient, wise and sagacious.

After the conclusion of the war he continued his interest in the education of Maori students at St Stephen's College. He was now for the first time really free and able to devote time to his early study of languages. To the classics which he mastered at Cambridge he had added a deep knowledge of Maori and other Pacific tongues. Bishop Patteson venerated him as friend and scholar. In 1874 Martin decided to return to England. They sailed on 14 Apr and took up their residence at Torquay. To the end the vigorous scholarship of Martin flowered in fresh studies, the soundness of which was acknowledged by Max Muller. In 1876-78 he published two volumes on *Inquiries Concerning the Structure Of the Semitic Languages*, and at the time of his death (8 Nov 1880) he was preparing notes on the New Testament. Three days before his death he wrote: 'My civil work is done. My ecclesiastical work is done; and now I leave it in God's hands. I pray for the Church of England. I embrace all Christians in the bonds of Catholic unity.' Lady Martin, who assisted in all the activities of her husband, died on 2 Jan 1884. Her book *Our Maoris* was published in 1888.

G.B.O.P., 1849/1120; information from Sir F. R. Chapman; *N.Z.P.D.*, pass.; D.N.B.; *Annals of Col. Church*; Martin, *op. cit.*; Rusden; Saunders; Reeves; Kennedy; Clarke. Portraits: Supreme

## MARTIN

Court, Dunedin; General Assembly Library; Turnbull Library.

MARTIN, WILLIAM (1823-1905) was born at Lesmahagow, Lanarkshire, and served his time as a gardener. While attached to the botanic gardens in Edinburgh, he attended night classes and the School of Art. He was foreman at Chillwell Hall, in England, before emigrating to New Zealand in the *Philip Laing* (1848). He was for a short time at Anderson's Bay and Green Island and then took up land at Fairfield, where he carried on an extensive gardening establishment with considerable success. Dr Lauder Lindsay was his guest while on a botanical and geological visit to Otago in 1861.

In 1855 Martin was elected to represent Eastern district in the Otago provincial Council, of which he was a member till 1863. He was keenly interested in education. (being chairman of the district Schools Committee), and was a deacon and elder of the East Taieri and Green Island churches. By crossing the veronica *lavandiana* with the *hulkeana* Martin produced a profusely-leaved and flowering variety which he called veronica fairfieldi. He died on 25 Nov 1905.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*, 1855-63; *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Dec 1905; W. Lauder Lindsay, *Contributions to New Zealand Botany*, 1868.

MASKELL, WILLIAM MILES (1840-98) was born in Hampshire, the son of a Protestant clergyman who joined the Roman Catholic church. He was educated privately, and later at the Roman Catholic College of St Mary Oscott and in Paris. He then joined the army, and served for three years with the 11th (Devonshire) Regiment. In 1860 he came to New Zealand in the *William Miles*, spent some time on a sheep station in Canterbury, and then took up a run at Kaikoura, where he remained till 1864. Then he spent eight years farming in north Canterbury. Maskell represented Sefton in the Provincial Council (1866-75), and was a member of the executive (as provincial secretary and treasurer) in the last year, including the winding up of the province. He contested a parliamentary election against J. E. Brown. After the abolition of the provinces Maskell was registrar of the University of New Zealand until his death (on 1 May 1898). In 1884 he removed to Wellington.

## MASON

About 1873 Maskell took up the study of entomology, and particularly of scale insects, upon which he became a recognised authority after the death of Signoret. His *Account of the Insects Noxious to Agriculture and Plants in New Zealand* (1887) is a standard work on our scale insects; and he also contributed 27 elaborate memoirs to the transactions of the New Zealand Institute. His description of the Weka Pass rock paintings is noteworthy. His collection of specimens he left to Canterbury Museum. He married (1888) Miss McLean.

*Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); J. Park in *Otago Daily Times*, 25, 26 Mar 1925; *Trs. N.Z. Inst.*, vols I (p. 13-20, 52-63; 31; *N.z. Times*, 2 May 1898.

MASLIN, WILLIAM STEPHEN (1850-1929?) was born in Brentford, Middlesex, and emigrated to New Zealand in the *Maori* in 1858 with his parents, who settled in Geraldine. On his father's death (1864) he took charge of the sawmill and store. In 1872 he became a member of the Geraldine school committee, of which he was afterwards chairman. He married (1873) Hannah, daughter of M. Clough (Timaru). Maslin was a founder of the Geraldine town board, and first mayor (holding the position for 20 years). He was a member for many years of the South Canterbury Hospital and charitable aid board and of the South Canterbury education board. In 1893 he won (as a liberal) the newly constituted Rangitata seat in Parliament, defeating E. G. Wright. In 1896 this electorate was eliminated, and at the following election (1899) he was defeated for Ashburton by McLaduan. At six subsequent elections (to 1919) he contested seats. Maslin was a strong prohibitionist, the founder of the Good Templars in Geraldine, and a member of the licensing committee. His death occurred on 20 Dec 1929.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Cycl. N.z.*, iii (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Dec 1922; *The Press*, 22 Dec 1929. Portrait: Parliament House.

MASON, JOHN (?-1843) the first missionary in charge of the Whanganui district, arrived there on 20 Jun 1840, with Mr and Mrs R. Matthews, and settled on the south side of the river at Putiki. There he built a chapel, while his wife kept the school. In Aug he exerted himself without success to dissuade the Ngati-Tuwaharetoa from proceeding to attack the Wai-

## MASON

totara tribe, but shortly afterwards he acquired an influence over Te Heuheu by treating his sick daughter. In the first year of his mission Mason opened 13 chapels and 15 schools, and in the second he erected a brick church, which was opened on 19 Jun 1842. He had baptised 300 adults when he was drowned in Jan 1843 while fording the Turakina river on his way to Wellington Otaki.

Chapple and Barton.

MASON, THOMAS (1818-1903) was born in England, and came to New Zealand in the *Olympus* (1841). He settled in the Hutt valley, and lived there continuously except for a short visit to Tasmania. Mason was a skilled horticulturist and at Taita had one of the finest gardens in the province, his bulbs being noteworthy. He was a member of the Society of Friends.

In 1853 he was on the education commission set up by the Provincial Council. In 1868 he was chairman of the Hutt special association. He was a member of Parliament for the Hutt (1879-84), being throughout a supporter of Atkinson. Later he was chairman of the Hutt county council. He died on 11 Jun 1903.

J. G. Wilson; *Evening Post*, 11 Jun 1903.

MASON, WILLIAM (1810-97) was born at Ipswich, England, and studied architecture under Sir E. Blore. He was engaged on the construction of Lambeth and Buckingham palaces (1831) and afterwards on church work for the Bishop of London. His design of a poorhouse for the poor law commissioners was used in their institutions at Kingston, Ipswich and elsewhere. In the late thirties Mason went to New South Wales, where he practised for a few years.

In 1839 he was appointed superintendent of works in the new administration preparing to proceed to New Zealand with Captain Hobson. He sailed in the storeship *Westminster*, and remained at Bay of Islands until the capital was moved to Auckland. On arrival there he erected his own frame house at Mechanics' Bay and set up for the Governor the house which had been brought out from England in the *Platina*. Mason was two years superintendent of public works. In 1841 he designed and erected St Paul's Church on Point Britomart.

## MASSEY

He then became a farmer in his spare time. He erected a flourmill, and took part in establishing a packet service between Auckland and coastal ports. In 1845 he was a lieutenant in the Auckland militia, and was on service during Heke's rising. He was one of the promoters and a part proprietor of the first *New Zealand Herald* (1841-42). In 1852 he was elected an alderman of the city. In 1861 Mason was elected to Parliament for the Pensioner Settlements, which he represented until 1866.

In 1862 he was commissioned by the Bank of New Zealand to design their offices throughout New Zealand. When superintending the erection of the bank in Dunedin he decided to settle there, and he practised for many years, at first with W. H. Clayton (N. Y. A. Wales being one of their apprentices). They designed the Dunedin Exhibition (1865), the Supreme Court and many other buildings. Mason was elected first mayor of the city (1865-66) and during his two terms did much on a limited income to reduce the levels of the streets and improve them. Again he farmed for a time (at Otepopo), and on retiring (1875) he went to live first at Queenstown and later at Paradise, returning to Dunedin about 1894. He died on 22 Jun 1897.

Mason was a keen marksman, winning the first prize offered by the Government for rifle shooting and being second for the Colonial belt at the first annual competitions.

*Cycl. N.z.*, iv (p); J. K. Davis; Craig; *Evening Star*, 24 Jun 1897; *New Zealand Herald*, 9 Jul 1897.

MASSEY, WILLIAM FERGUSON (1856-1925) was born on 26 Mar 1856 at Limavady, county Londonderry, Ireland, the son of John Massey, a tenant farmer. He was educated in the National school there and at a secondary school kept by a classical scholar named Brandon. He was a quick learner and, in addition to the usual classical subjects, studied some political economy. While he was still at school his father sold the farm and emigrated to New Zealand. Not pleased with the prospect at Kaipara, where he had acquired a bush section, he did not settle there, but bought a farm at Tamaki. There he was engaged when William arrived in the *City of Auckland* on 11 Dec 1870. His fellow passengers included F. W. Isitt and W. J. Williams (qs.v., both later prominent in the Metho-

di Ch rch and in the national life of New Zealand). Massey worked with his father until reaching the age of 17 and then, to learn more of farming, obtained a position with John Grigg (q.v.) who had been a neighbour at Tamaki. He was employed for more than two years at Longbeach, Canterbury. He then spent a few months with his people at their new fann at Mangere, and at the age of 21 purchased a small threshing machine and leased a fann of 100 acres. In 1882 he married Christina Allen and Paul (1863-1932; C.B.E. 1918; Dame Gr. Cross 1926), the daughter of a neighbouring fanner.

Massey soon became a member of the Mangere road board and chairman of the school committee, an office-bearer of the masonic lodge Manukau, and in 1890 president of the Mangere Fanners' Club. This local organisation, which was afterwards replaced by the Fanners' Union, was formed to resume some of the duties and interests previously cared for by the Auckland Agricultural Association (known later as the New Zealand Agricultural and Pastoral Association). A show was held in 1890 under the auspices of the Fanners' Club, and as a result the old association was resuscitated in 1891, Massey being its first president. He became a member also of the National Association, a conservative political organisation; and of this also he was president for the Auckland district. It was partly due to the suggestion of Sir William Fox that Massey aspired to public life. At the end of 1893 he contested Franklm, which had been represented in Parliament for many years by Major Hamlin. He was defeated by Benjamin Harris by a narrow majority. A few weeks later the Waitemata seat became vacant through the unseating of Richard Monk as the result of a petition. Massey stood and defeated James Palmer (q.v.), who had previously held the seat. Later in the year he accepted the duties of Opposition Whip. At the next election (1896) he stood for his own district (Franklin), where he defeated Harris by 474 votes. That seat was held without interruption until his death. An inveterate fighter and a firm freeholder, he entered with zest into the debates on land tenure, condemning out of hand any form of landlordism, whether state or private. In debate after debate the opposition assailed the leasehold policy of the Liberal government, which was

the subject of an important commission in 1905. The Opposition was without a leader in the sessions of 1900-02, Captain Russell having relinquished the leadership to Sir merely for Hawkes Bay, while he managed the affairs of the Conservative party. In 1903 Massey was elected leader. He galvanised the opposition into life and led it steadily forward to its victory in 1912, while it suffered a severe setback at the general election in 1905, at which the public registered its disapproval of personal attacks which had been made on the Prime Minister by members who seemed to have some association with the Conservative party. The death of Seddon fitted the Liberal party of some of the proposals of a sweeping victory. Yet Massey was 10 years leader before the swing of popular opinion brought him into office. Throughout the freehold principle was the principal method of divergence between the two parties. The election of 1911 Sir Joseph Ward failed to carry the country, and when Parliament met (on 15 Feb 1912) the first policy vote resulted in a tie: 39 for and 39 against. The Speaker (Guinness) cast his vote in favour of the party in power, and Parliament adjourned to enable the Prime Minister to decide upon his course of action. A new ministry was formed from the Liberal side of the House under the leadership of T. Mackenzie, who assumed office on 28 Mar and carried on against the protest of the Opposition until the normal time for assembling Parliament. When Parliament did meet Massey at once moved a vote of no-confidence in the ministry and this was carried on 5 Jul by 41 votes to 33. He was sent for by the Governor, and on 10 Jul his ministry was sworn in, the first from the Conservative side of the House since 1890. Massey in addition to the Premier-ship assumed the portfolios of Lands, Agriculture and Labour most of which he held continuously until his death 13 years later. All the ministers were the following: James Fraser (Finance and Education), W. H. Hemes (Railways and Native Affairs), William Fraser (Public Works, Mines and Industries and Commerce), A. L. Herdman (Attorney-General and Minister of Justice), F. H. D. Bell (Internal Affairs and Immigration), R. H. Rhodes (Postmaster-General and Public Health), F. M. Fisher (Customs and Marine) and Maui O-

1

mare (as representative of the Native race).

In his first session Massey passed an act placing the civil service under the control of a public service commissioner, and another amending the land settlement law in such a way as to give to crown tenants under the renewable lease or lease-in-perpetuity the right to acquire the freehold of their sections. This measure affected 13,175 state tenants and holdings aggregating about three million acres of land. In the realm of industrial relations, which could never for long be ignored, he was impelled by the events of 1912, when a stubborn strike of miners at Waihi was not terminated without violence, to try to devise a new method of adjusting disputes by the formation of proposals for settlement. This did not serve, however, to appease the grievances of labour, and at the opening of his second year of office Massey had to deal with a more formidable disturbance originating in a strike by shipwrights, which extended to the waterside workers at Wellington and eventually to a large body of labour throughout the Dominion. As the export of primary products was jeopardised at the height of the season, special constables were enrolled, and some violent clashes occurred before the dispute was terminated. During this struggle the New Zealand Labour party developed its unity and organisation and emerged as a permanent factor in the political field.

Whatever may have been Massey's intentions in the field of social and economic reform, his administration was destined to be governed by events over which he had no control. Devoutly attached to the Imperial connection, he had espoused without reservation the defence measures of the Liberal government, and appreciated the material which it had prepared for the emergency which arose in the middle of 1914. On naval policy he differed slightly, but only in method. Whereas Ward adhered to the policy of paying a contribution towards the maintenance of the British Navy, with the proviso that a squadron should be maintained in New Zealand waters, Massey adopted the policy of his far-seeing Minister of Defence (Allen), who in conference with the Imperial authorities had recommended that the maritime spirit in New Zealand should be fostered and that co-operation in naval defence could best be achieved by creating a new centre of strength in

the form of a New Zealand navy. Nevertheless, when war with Germany became imminent, Massey's Government agreed that H.M.S. *New Zealand* should be freed from any restrictions and used wherever the Admiralty should consider most advantageous. She accordingly remained in Europe, and was thus able to take her place in the first line of defence in the North Sea.

When war broke out Massey made an immediate declaration of New Zealand's loyalty and solidarity with the Empire, and her willingness to do what was required by the Imperial plan of defence. With a single-mindedness and energy comparable with that displayed by Seddon 15 years earlier, and with the knowledge that Parliament and the country were almost unanimously behind him, Massey faced the heavy burden of responsibility involved. Before the end of Aug the German colony of Samoa had been occupied by New Zealand troops (without fighting), and on 16 Oct the Expeditionary Force, which had been made possible by the defence measures of the past six years, sailed for Egypt, to finish training there and participate in the fighting against the Turks in Gallipoli. Though unreserved in his attachment to the British cause, Massey showed no disposition to leave all decisions to the British Government. Before the first Expeditionary Force sailed he threatened the resignation of the cabinet if the Governor accepted the responsibility of dispatching it inadequately conveyed. Throughout the war he frequently protested against the methods adopted both in the operations and in the economic arrangements that were necessary between the two countries. The general election on 10 Dec 1914 was fought under the influence of war, which usually favours the Conservative cause. The outcome was that Massey had a following of 40 in the new Parliament, Ward had 34 and Labour appeared with a compact body of 6 members, whose adherence to the Liberal cause at any moment might place the Government in jeopardy.

Convinced that with such a precarious majority he was no longer justified in taking upon his own party the whole responsibility of administering the government in a time of crisis, Massey made overtures to the other party leaders which resulted in the formation of a

## MASSEY

National Government to carry New Zealand through the war. On 12 Aug 1915 the new cabinet was sworn in, with Massey as Prime Minister and Minister of Lands and Labour; Allen (in charge of the onerous portfolio of Defence); Herries (Railways and Native Affairs); William Fraser (Public Works) and Bell (Immigration). Ward became Minister of Finance and Postmaster-general, and his followers in the ministry were McNab (Justice and Marine), G. W. Russell (Internal Affairs and Health), A. M. Myers (Customs, Munitions and Supplies), W. D. S. Macdonald (Agriculture and Mines) and J. A. Hanan (Education). On the death of McNab in Feb 1917 T. M. Wilford became Minister of Justice and Marine, and D. H. Guthrie came in in 1918 to relieve Massey of the settlement of returned soldiers on the land. With the ranks thus closed, Parliament proceeded to create a national register (1 Aug 1916). The New Zealand division recovered from the losses it sustained in the unsuccessful operations against the Turks, and was removed to the western front, where it first went into action at Flers on 15 Sep. The first ballot for service under the compulsory act was held on 16 Nov, and thereafter the division was maintained at full strength by conscription. The only opposition to this measure came from the Labour party, whose principles were against compulsion for military service and whose hopes of social reform had been set back by the exigencies of the war. Massey and Ward were deeply engrossed in the multifarious demands of the war, and paid several visits to England to attend meetings of the Imperial War Cabinet. At the War Conference in 1917 the status of the dominions was fully discussed, and it was laid down, in a resolution which Massey seconded, that each dominion was autonomous, and that all were entitled to be consulted before the Imperial Government entered upon any act of foreign policy. Massey was in Europe in 1918, and finally in 1919 to attend the Peace Conference at Versailles, where he affixed his signature and the seal of the Dominion to the treaties of peace and the covenant of the League of Nations, and assured himself that Samoa should not be returned to Germany but should be placed under a mandate and governed by New Zealand. He received the freedom of London, Edinburgh, Glasgow, Belfast, York,

## MASSEY

Bristol and Manchester and the honorary degrees of the Universities of Oxford, Edinburgh and Belfast, and was made a freeman of the Company of Cloth workers, London.

Before he returned to New Zealand it became clear that he and the Liberal leader could not agree on the methods to be adopted in settling the returning soldiers. The gap became more pronounced, and on 21 Aug 1919 Ward and his Liberal colleagues withdrew from the National ministry to fight the general election under their old party colours. Massey reformed the cabinet on 25 Aug, inviting William Nosworthy, J. G. Coates and J. B. Hine to assume the portfolios surrendered by the seceding ministers. The elections, which were held on 17 Dec, returned the Reform party to office, with the largest majority that Massey ever commanded as Prime Minister. The state of parties was: Reform 44; Liberal 18; Labour 8; independent Labour 3; other independents 7. Ward lost his seat, as did also one of Massey's colleagues (Hine).

Massey reconstituted his cabinet, taking in E. P. Lee (as Minister of Justice), C. J. Parr (as Minister of Education and Health), and a little later G. J. Anderson (as Minister of Internal Affairs). His task now was to re-settle the country, to demobilise its soldiers, industries and war departments, and to move away, if possible, from the elaborate system of controls and prohibition which had grown up in the war. The attempt to repeal the various moratoria failed. They were even extended to protect other interests as it became obvious that the prosperity of the agricultural classes depended on the disposal of the accumulated stores of meat and wool without causing a slump in prices. Out of these difficulties grew the meat control board (1922) and the dairy export control of the following year. The difficulties of the position increased rather than diminished as the election of 1922 approached, and Massey's health began to show signs of the strain of 10 years of arduous administration and political turmoil. The appeal to the country gave him no grounds for optimism. The state of the House after the polling (on 7 Dec 1922) was as follows: Reform 38; Liberal 21; Labour 17; Independent Labour 1; Independent 3. Faced with the probable co-operation of Labour with the Liberal party (which would

## MASSEY

make the voting equal) and the possibility of four Independents voting against him, he met his last Parliament in no very hopeful circumstances. Sir James Allen had gone to London as High Commissioner, and the ministry had been strengthened by the appointment of W. Downie Stewart as Minister of Internal Affairs and Customs. In 1923 Massey lost by death two more valued colleagues (Herries and Fraser), and he was still bearing the load of the Treasury and several smaller departments in addition to the Prime Ministership. In 1924 it became evident that far-reaching adjustments would have to be made before the returned soldiers could be considered settled; and labour was becoming more and more restive under the steady increase in the cost of living. Massey's health suffered severely under the prolonged strain, and he died on 10 May 1925.

Massey possessed many of the characteristics of his predecessor Seddon. Hearty, straightforward and genial, he had a faculty for drawing men to him, and he was not lacking in the power of weighing them up. He had most of the traits also of the north of Ireland Protestant, deep religious feeling, robust loyalty, boundless energy and industry and unflinching determination in moving towards a goal, which he generally saw plainly. His Imperialism was full-blooded, asking no questions, but permitting no liberties in the name of duty. He never hesitated to speak his mind in Imperial councils. Through the crisis of the war of 1914-18 he led his country unerringly. From the moment when he assured Britain that 'all we have and all we are are at the disposal of the Imperial Government,' he never questioned the final outcome or the wisdom of throwing all his weight into the issue. As a political leader Massey was very successful with the electorate. He was an astute and capable parliamentarian, but he was unfortunate in that he was only for a short time free of anxiety regarding his parliamentary majority. A farmer himself, he enjoyed the unwavering support of the farming community. Some of his dilemmas could be traced to his dependence upon that support at times when his own judgment pointed in other directions.

Two of Massey's sons became members of Parliament: WALTER WILLIAM MASSEY (1882-) who was M.P. for Hauraki (1931-35) and

## , MASTERS

JOHN NORMAN MASSEY (1885-) who was M.P. for Franklin (1931-35, 1938-).

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 26 May 1925); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1905, 1924; Scholefield, *W. F. Massey, A Personal Biography*, 1925 (p); W. D. Stewart, *B.A.U. The Dominion and Evening Post*, 11 May 1925 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

MASTERS, EDWARD (1839-81), son of a builder, was born in Richmond, London, where he began life as a messenger boy. In 1849 he came to New Zealand with his parents. He chartered three ships, which he loaded with Ironmongery and other merchandise and landed at Hokitika at the beginning of the gold rush and opened a store. In 1868 Masters became the first mayor of Greymouth, and in 1879 he was elected to the House of Representatives as member for Grey Valley. He resigned his seat in May 1881, owing to ill-health and died in Melbourne on 27 Nov.

*Cycl.*, v; Harrop, *Westland*, *Melbourne Herald*, 29 Nov 1881; *Wanganui Yeoman*, 31 Dec 1881. Portrait: Parliament House.

MASTERS, JOSEPH (1793-1873) was born in Derby, and after serving his apprenticeship as a cooper was for some years in the Life Guards. On receiving his discharge, he emigrated to Tasmania and worked at his trade till 1841, when he crossed to Wellington. There he started a brewery at Te Aro and later a cooperage at Lambton Quay. In 1846 he appears as a bugler in the Te Aro militia, enrolled for the defence of the town against hostile natives.

Masters was keenly interested in small-farm settlements, and in a series of letters to the *Independent* suggested that blocks should be reserved from the runs in Wairarapa for this purpose. On 18 Mar, 1853 a public meeting was held at the Crown and Anchor. Masters and Carter, two of the committee then set up, waited on Governor Grey and requested his assistance. Eventually Greytown, Masterton and Carterton were proclaimed in accordance with the wishes of the Small Farm Association. Masters represented Wairarapa in the Provincial Council (1856-57) and again (1865-73). He was a candidate for Parliament in 1863, but did not go to the poll (Carter being elected). In 1865 he was brought forward for the Superintendency, but withdrew in favour of Borlase. He died on 21 Dec 1873.

MATAKATEA

*Wellington P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; Ward; MS. Turnbull Library; Carter; 'Vakelin; *Wellington Independent*, 13 Jan 1860, 9 Jul, 1 Nov 1864, 9 Aug 1866, 1 Dec 1870, 23 Dec 1873.

MATAKATEA, WIREMU KINGI, or MOKI (? 1800-93), a Taranaki warrior whose heroic resistance saved his allied tribes from complete subjugation by the Waikato. After the great northern victory at Maru (1826) many of the refugees of Taranaki and Ngati-Ruanui fled to Moki's pa at Te Namu, about a mile north of Opunake. There in 1833, with a force of only 80 men and a gun which he had purchased with a cargo of flax, Moki was besieged by a strong taua from Waikato. Warned by hearing shots fired by the invaders, he led out a few men and formed an ambush at the crossing of a stream. Here he shot several of the enemy, and then retired into the pa of Te Namu, where they were besieged. While his unerring marksmanship with one musket caused many losses to Waikato, his brother Ngatai-Rakanui inspired the defenders with courage by his karakia and incantations. Many of the besiegers were struck down by rocks hurled from above, and fear of the rifle caused them to move to a safe distance. Five assaults failed, the last led by Kaihau. Waikato then retreated hastily, followed by Moki as far as Heimana stream.

Though Kaihau had promised not to return, Moki removed with his people and Ngati-Ruanui to a stronger position at Ngateko, a few miles to the southward. From his skill with the musket he assumed the name 'Matakatea' (clear eyed). Next year a stronger taua under Te Wherowhero, Waharoa and others, invaded Taranaki, intending to capture Te Rei Hanataua, the principal chief of Ngati-Ruanui. After reducing his pa of Te Ruaki, they proceeded (with Hanataua as captive) to meet Matakatea at Waimate (Ngateko). The latter had been reinforced by parties of Ngati-Ruanui under Hukanui, Manaia and Titokowaru (q.v.), which brought the garrison up to 350. Again Matakatea was the principal commander, with his brother Ngatai-Rakanui as assistant and chief tohunga. His scouts having defeated the Waikato at the Kaupoko-nui river, Matakatea led a reconnaissance of 50 men, killed a Waikato toa and discovered something of the enemy's intentions. A determined assault was

MATAKATEA

repulsed, Matakatea and Manaia shooting many of the attackers. The former then sallied out, surprised Waikato and inflicted great losses, in consequence of which Te Hanataua escaped. Gudgeon says that Waikato then wished to make peace and Matakatea arranged a great feast at which Te Wherowhero, Waharoa, Te Kanawa and Pae-tahune were entertained. Te Wherowhero said: 'This is my final peacemaking. I have ended-ended for ever.'

While resting after this campaign, Matakatea heard of the trader *Haniet* being ashore at Okahu and, proceeding there, he saved some barrels of powder and intervened to stop the Ngati-Ruanui killing the pakeha castaways. He saved Mrs Guard and children and kept them on the other side of the river, and burned bodies of the dead to prevent their being eaten. The fine leadership and bravery of Matakatea baffled the superior arms of Waikato and ended their disastrous raids. Matakatea now came under the Christian influence of Te Awaitaia (q.v.), and was well disposed towards the pakeha and averse to continuing the tribal wars. In the early forties he was again challenged by Ngati-Tuwharetoa. In spite of his relationship with Te Heuheu, the younger chiefs of the inland tribe burned to pit themselves against Matakatea's military prowess, and induced Iwikau to join in a taua against Taranaki. Reluctant to fight, Matakatea visited his relatives Te Anaua and Mete Kingi at Whanganui, and with them went up the river to dissuade the taua from proceeding. Iwikau taunted him with cowardice, and chased the canoes of the retreating Taranaki and Whanganui until his own canoe ran alongside that of Matakatea. Failing to strike when the opportunity offered, Iwikau fell back under the ill omen, but continued following down the river. Eventually he occupied the abandoned pa of Patoka, while Matakatea occupied Te Ihupuku. Having no alternative but to fight, the latter led his forces out from his pa and besieged, starved and then assaulted Patoka, overwhelming the Taupo people with great slaughter and killing with his own hand the chief Tauteka. All the women he took with him to Taranaki, to be shortly released with an offer of peace. Ngati-Tuwharetoa never avenged this defeat, though the murder of Kereopa and Manihera (12 Mar 1847) arose out of it.

MATENGA

In 1860 Matakatea, who had now assumed the name of Wüemu Kingi, took sides with Te Rangitake in the Waitara dispute and fought at Waireka (Mar) and elsewhere. Nevertheless he befriended and protected the passengers of the *Lord Worsley* when she was wrecked at Te Namu (1 Sep 1862) and they were in the hands of Taranaki and Ngati-Awa until they could be conducted safely to New Plymouth.

In later years he exerted his influence in a friendly manner to restrain the Kingite tribes in Taranaki. He came under suspicion during the Hauhau war and was treated rather roughly his property at Nukuteapiapi being destroyed by the troops. Again (in 1879) he became involved in the ploughing at Taranaki and was sent to gaol in Wellington. The Hon W. Rolleston, after visiting him, said that his being there was proof of the mismanagement of native affairs. Matakatea declined to accept his freedom except with other prisoners; they were not pouri, he said, since their hands were not soiled with crime. No charges were made against him. Matakatea died on 14 Feb 1893 at a very advanced age.

*MAPP. H.R.*, 1866 A8, P 9; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki* arshall; Cowan; T. W. Gudgeon, *The History and Doings of the Maoris, 1820-40* (1885); *Taranaki Herald*, 24 Feb 1893.

MATENGA, HURIA (JULIA MARTIN) (1843-1909) was a woman of some rank in the Ngati-Awa, Ngati-Mutunga and Ngati-Tama, residing with her people at Croisilles island, Nelson. On the night of 3 Sep 1863 the English brigantine *Delaware*, 241 tons, Captain Robert C. Baldwin, was driven ashore in a fierce storm on Pepin Island, off Wakapuaka. The mate Henry Squire, had been badly injured in attempting to carry a line ashore, when a small party of Maori people, including Huria Matenga and her husband Hemi, reached the spot. He was cast as far as possible towards the shore, and Huna swam in and after a desperate struggle brought the end ashore. All hands were saved except Squirrel, who had been taken to his cabin and forgotten. He fell overboard and was drowned. The people of Nelson presented Huria with a gold watch and the Government voted her and her husband and brother-in-law £50 each. She died on 24 Apr 1909. (See TE PUOHO.)

MATHEW

Saunders (p); Broad; Brett, *White Wings*, ii (p) Ingram and Wheatley; *The Colonist*, 26 Apr 1909:

MATHEW, FELTON (1801-47) was born in Goswell Street, London, his family coming from Latton, in Wiltshire, and his father being a cooper and wine merchant and a member of the common council of the City of London. In Jun 1829 he was appointed assistant-surveyor (roads and bridges) in New South Wales. In Jan 1832 he married his cousin Sarah Louisa Mathew (1805-90), a sister of Keats's friend, George Felton Mathew. In 1835 he became town surveyor at Sydney.

In 1839 Mathew accepted an offer to accompany Captain Hobson as acting Surveyor-general of New Zealand. His diaries and journal letters, and those of his wife, give a very full account of Hobson's proceedings in the early months of 1840, often from a critical and unfriendly angle. After the successful negotiation of the Treaty of Waitangi, his first task was to select a site for the capital. Though Bay of Islands was the main centre of trade and the headquarters of the missionaries, neither Hobson nor Mathew considered it suitable. At the end of Feb Mathew visited the Waitemata with Hobson on the *Herald*, and the possibilities of the upper portion of the river were favourably noted. Mathew and Captain Symonds were to have been left to survey the isthmus and explore the Manukau and Waikato districts, while the *Hel:ald* completed her southern tour; but Hobson's sudden illness in Mar necessitated a return to Bay of Islands before any real progress had been made. Despite his incapacity, Hobson refused to delegate the task to his subordinates, and the delay thus occasioned rendered it essential to fix on a temporary site for the seat of Government at Bay of Islands. The arrival of the store-ship *Westminstel* (17 Mar), with immigrants and stores, made it a matter of urgency to provide for a settlement. Korarareka was already settled; the available land was subject to conflicting land claims, and there was no room for development. Nevertheless Mathew advised the Governor to take over the place for government purposes and award compensation, but Hobson wisely refused to strain his little authority by such an act. Busby's (q.v.) township of 'Vitetonia,' at Waitangi, though otherwise suitable for settlement, had no good anchor-

MATHEW

age. Mathew ultimately reported that Okiato, where J. R. Clendon (q.v.) had his dwelling and store, was 'the only spot in the Bay of Islands which is at all suitable for settlement, or calculated for the purposes of the Government'; and eventually an agreement was made (22 Mar) to purchase this site for £15,000. The Government took possession in May and 'Russell' (as Okiato was re-named in honour of the Secretary of State) remained the seat of government till the removal to Auckland in Mar 1841. The town of Russell, which Mathew surveyed and planned, did not materialise owing to the refusal of Gipps to sanction the purchase.

Meanwhile Mathew was despatched in the cutter *Ranger* (Captain Carkeek) to explore the coast as far south as the Thames for a site for the permanent capital. He visited Whangarei (20-23 Apr), which he reported unsuitable except for a small settlement, and Mahurangi, with which he was more favourably impressed; but he was principally engaged in a thorough examination of the Waitemata and the Thames (27 Apr-30 May). The decision at which he arrived was that the spot previously noted by Hobson (near the present township of Hobsonville) was 'totally unfit for the site of the principal settlement, and indeed ill-adapted for a settlement at all,' having neither fresh water, wood, drainage, stone for roads and buildings, nor deep water near its shore. He recommended that the capital should be built on the Tamaki, near Panmure basin, on the lower slopes of Mt Wellington. The disadvantage of the river bar he considered not insuperable; smaller vessels could come upstream to the capital, while Waitemata (Auckland) might serve as a port for large ships. His judgment in this particular was not good, but he was right in attaching great importance to the isthmus between the Waitemata, Tamaki and Manukau, as 'the connecting link between the northern and southern portions of the Island . . . the very key to the whole island, north and south, the centre through which every line of communication must unavoidably pass,' and in easy reach of the Waikato and Thames-Piako valleys, which 'must become the great agricultural district of the island.' Hobson was not convinced. As soon as he recovered, he revisited the Waitemata with Captain D. Rough (Jul), and rejected the Tamaki because of the difficulty of its river

MATHEW

bar and channel in favour of the Waitemata shore near Ponsonby and Freeman's bay. In Sep Mathew returned in the barque *Hannah Hatson*, with Symonds and others, to make preparations for the erection of the government buildings. The site was purchased from the Maori without difficulty (16 Sep; confirmed 20 Oct). Mathew chose Commercial bay, at the foot of present Queen street, as the place to erect the government store, and round this nucleus the town of Auckland rapidly took shape. The place was surveyed, and a plan of the town drawn by Mathew; the Governor took formal possession of Government House in Mar 1841, and in Apr the first sale of town lots took place. During the remainder of 1841, Mathew made fair progress with the survey, despite inadequate staff and lack of proper instruments. Besides surveying and planning the towns of Russell and Auckland, his department laid out some 250 small farms in the neighbourhood of the capital, and accomplished much preliminary work of exploration in the Manukau and Tamaki districts, at Mahurangi and Kaipara to the north, and at Wairoa and the Thames to the south-east.

Mathew had the confidence of both Gipps and Hobson, and it was a surprise to all three to learn, in Nov 1841, that he was to be superseded by C. W. Ligar (appointed Surveyor-general by the Colonial Office). Government's intention in 1839 had been to make no permanent appointments till the results of Hobson's mission were known, Gipps and Hobson being empowered to nominate certain officers from local residents, on the distinct understanding that their appointment was provisional. Apparently Gipps did not make this condition clear; and when, in due course, Mathew's appointment was notified to the Home Government and approved, Gipps, Hobson and Mathew all regarded this as confirmation of a permanent appointment. The Colonial Office took a different view. Pending appeal, Mathew acted as Postmaster-general and chief police magistrate, and when the Colonial Government became financially embarrassed he resigned these posts and further declined the offer of appointment as deputy surveyor-general.

In Jan 1845, he left New Zealand for England, to make a personal appeal to Lord Stanley. While in London, he provided much useful

MATSON

information to the Colonial Office and parliament on New Zealand. Stanley confirmed his appointment as deputy Postmaster-general and resident police magistrate, but on his return to New Zealand, Governor Grey refused to implement the Colonial Office's arrangements, as he considered the police magistrate should be a military officer. Mathew declined the post office, and, disappointed and broken in health, left Auckland for England in the *Thomas King*. He intended to travel via Panama, and died at Lima, Peru, on 26 Nov 1847. J.R.

Family information from Mrs Hilda McClearv; Felton Mathew MSS.; P.R.O., London, series C. O. 209; N.Z. Archives; Internal Affairs dept.; G.B.O.P., 1840-42 (notably 1842/569).

MATSON, HENRY (1788-1867) joined the Sussex yeomanry in 1811, and two years later was commissioned as ensign in the East Kent militia, with which he served in Ireland. As a lieutenant in the 7th battalion of the 60th Rifles he served in Nova Scotia, and he was for five years in North America with the 3rd battalion. In 1823 he transferred to the 22nd Regiment. He was in Jamaica (1829-37) and, having been promoted captain (1838), he transferred to the 58th Regiment and came to New South Wales.

Matson commanded the first detachment which came to Bay of Islands in 1845 and served under Colonel Despard in Heke's war. He was deputy-assistant-quartermaster-general in New Zealand, and was promoted brevet-major for his services. He was the first field officer gazetted to the Auckland militia. Retiring in 1850, he was appointed by Governor Grey a commissioner for the investigation of land claims. In 1849 he was a member of the Legislative Council. Matson represented the City in the Auckland Provincial Council (1856-61), and was a member of the executive (1857-58). He married Amelia, daughter of George Channing (Devon). She was a member of the Parnell borough council. Matson died on 1 Oct 1867.

Buick, *First War*; Cowan; *Southern Cross*, 2 Oct, 2 Nov 1867.

MATTHEWS, ALFRED (1845-1925) was born in Wellington, the son of Charles Matthews, a sheepfarmer. Educated at a private school, he followed farming in south Wairarapa (at Wharepapa until 1870, and then at Waiorongomai). He was from 1875 a member of the Featherstone highway board (and chairman 1888-1901), and

MATTHEWS

was also a member of the county council, treasurer of the south Wairarapa river board from its inauguration (1886-89) and chairman (1889-1925). He was on the committee of the Wellington Agricultural and Pastoral association throughout its existence (and president in 1896) and then a member of the Wairarapa association. Matthews was for six years a director of the Wellington Meat Export Co. He was one of the founders of the *New Zealand Flock Book* (1893), and was first president of the Romney Marsh stud breeders' association. He established a free public library and reading room in Featherstone in 1896, and was a member of the Featherstone Literary Institute for over 25 years. He died on 3 Sep 1925.

*Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *The Dominion* and *Evening Post*, 4 Sep 1925.

MATTHEWS, JOSEPH (1808-95) was born at Deddington, Oxfordshire. At the age of 23 he offered his services to the C.M.S., and he was appointed as reader and assistant chaplain to a convict ship for passage to Sydney (1831). There he was initiated as a catechist, and on 26 Mar 1832 he landed at Paihia, Bay of Islands. In 1833 he married the eldest daughter (1812-92) of the Rev R. Davis. Appointed to assist Puckey in establishing a station at Kaitaia, Matthews rendered valuable service there for many years, especially in carrying on meetings for native teachers and operating a small printing press. He attended St John's College in 1844, and was ordained priest (1859). Matthews died on 3 Nov 1895.

Marsden, L. and J.; Ramsden; Davis; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Nov 1895.

MATTHEWS, RICHARD (1811-93) was born in England and was a brother of the Rev Joseph Matthews (q.v.). In 1832, under the patronage of the Rev Dr Wilson, rector of Walthamstow, he joined the service of the Church Missionary Society and was sent with Captain FitzRoy in the *Beagle* to accompany back to their homes the Tierra del Fuegians who had visited England. Darwin considered him a man of quiet resolution, rather eccentric and not energetic. On landing in Tierra del Fuego (Jan 1833) he was so ill-treated by the natives that FitzRoy advised him to re-embark. He continued the voyage, assisting Darwin with his specimens.

MAUDE

Landing at Bay of Islands in Dec 1835, he joined his brother at Kaitaia, where he taught in the mission school. He sawed timber and built a weatherboard house at Awanui north, and also made bricks. In 1837 he was accepted as a lay catechist. He served for a while under the Rev John Mason on the opening of the mission in the Whanganui district Oun (1840). Taking up his abode on the west bank of the river at Putikiwaranui, he had charge of the district as far as Waitotara. He mediated with eventual success in the quarrels of the Taupo and Taranaki tribes, which culminated in the battles at Patoka and Ihupuku (1841). Matthews left Whanganui soon after but was again there in 1847. He died on 27 Jan 1893.

Marsden, L. and J.; Ramsden; Joan Barlow; Chapple and Barton; *N.Z. Herald*, 24 Feb 1893.

MAUDE, SYBILLA EMILY (1862-1935), daughter of T. W. Maude (q.v.), was educated in Christchurch and Blackheath (London). After training as a nurse at Middlesex Hospital (1889-92), she was matron at Christchurch hospital. In 1896 she commenced district nursing, making her home at first with the Anglican sisters of the community of the Sacred Name. Assisted financially by Sir Heaton and Lady Rhodes, her association expanded considerably and was very successful. Miss Maude also inaugurated open-air camps for tuberculosis, the first at New Brighton and the second at Wainoni. She received the O.B.E. (1934), and died on 12 Jul 1935.

*The P.ess*, 13 Jul 1935.

MAUDE, THOMAS WILLIAM (1832-1905) was born at Langham Hall, Essex, the son of the Rev Thomas Maude, Hasketon Rectory, Woodbridge, Suffolk. Educated at Winchester College and Balliol, Oxford, where he graduated M.A., he came to New Zealand in the *Royal Stuart* in Jan 1855. Maude was engaged sheep-farming for a year or two at Mount Thomas, which he and a brother leased from J. T. Brown. They also had a place at Burke's Pass.

In 1857 he gave up farming and accepted a post in the customs at Lyttelton, under W. T. W. Hamilton. In the following year he was appointed clerk to the resident magistrate's court at Christchurch (the magistrate being John Hall). In due time this post had attached

MAUDE.

to it the duties of registrar of electors and deputy-sheriff for Canterbury. Later he became chief clerk in the provincial secretary's office and keeper of the provincial records. In 1861 Maude was elected to the Provincial Council for AsWey, which he represented until 1862. He represented Sefton 1862-66, and Heathcote 1866-67. Shortly after his first appearance in the Council, he became a member of the executive, under the presidency of Wilkin, and later of Casso. He was twice in office in 1866, under Stewart. He retired from the Council in 1867, when he accepted office under the General Government as deputy-registrar of births, deaths, and marriages, registrar of electors and returning officer. He was an ideal official. The *Lyttelton Times* said in 1862 that he was very young for the position he held, but had a grave disposition, a good-tempered face, and a mild, obliging manner. He was not then a striking speaker.

In 1860, as sheriff, Maude called the meeting at which Moorhouse propounded his tunnel proposals and had them overwhelmingly approved. In 1867 he was appointed receiver of land revenue and a commissioner and treasurer of the waste lands board; in 1868 registrar of deeds, and coroner; and in 1871 deputy-commissioner of stamps. When the portfolio of Resident Minister in the Middle Island was created Maude was appointed under-secretary (Reeves being the first Minister), and he held the post until it was abolished. In 1872 he was again elected to the Provincial Council for Rangiora (1873-76), and he was a member of the Montgomery executive as secretary of public works (1874-76).

On the abolition of the provinces Maude was employed by the Public Works department as land purchase officer, and entrusted with the purchase of all private lands necessary for the construction of railways north and south from Christchurch. In 1876 he took advantage of a visit to England to read at Lincoln's Inn, and was duly called to the bar. In 1880 he was admitted to the New Zealand bar, and he joined the firm of Harper and Co. He was the only person in New Zealand who was at that time both a barrister and solicitor and a justice of the peace.

Maude was a fellow of Christ's College. He was a nominated member of the board of gov-

MAUMAU

ernors of Canterbury College (1873-76), and an elected member (1882-93). For nine years he was a member of the North Canterbury education board. In the Church of England he was a member of the Cathedral chapter and for some time chancellor of the diocese, a member of the diocesan and general synods and chairman of committees of both bodies.

For a quarter of a century Maude was one of the proprietors of the *Lyttelton Times*, having entered into partnership with Reeves and Hamilton when Bowen sold his interest. For many years he was director of the company which afterwards purchased the paper. Maude married (1861) a daughter (d. 1904) of J. T. Brown (Mt Thomas). He died on 5 Apr 1905.

*Canterbury P.C. Pmc.*; Acland; *Christchurch Star-Sun*, 11, 12 Jul 1935 (p); *The Press*, 6 Apr 1905, 19 Jul 1930 (p).

MAUMAU, RI (? 1812-88), a chieftainess of Ngapuhi and Rarawa, of very illustrious lineage, who attended the confederation of chiefs (1828). She followed Heke in many of his journeys, and was sent by him to Waimate in 1845 to be out of harm in the new style of warfare. There she lived a solitary existence, though frequently consulted, till her death (21 Apr 1888).

Hare Hongi in *N.Z. Herald*, 5 May 1888.

MAUNSELL, ROBERT (1810-94) came of a very old Irish family, and was born at Milford, near Limerick. He received his early education at Waterford and proceeded to Trinity College, Dublin, where he took first place amongst 72 freshmen. Graduating B.A. in 1833 with a high place in classics, he intended to read for the bar, but turned from law with a view to offering his services for the mission field. He was accepted by the Church Missionary Society, and entered the training college at Islington. He was ordained deacon by Bishop Blomfield in 1833, and priest in the following year.

Without delay Maunsell sailed for Australia, and crossed to New Zealand in the *Active*. He was stationed at Mangapouri on the Waipa, in Nov 1835. There he made an assiduous study of the Maori language, of which he soon had a scholarly mastery. Maunsell was sent to Puriri for a few weeks, and then to assist Brown at Matamata and eventually to Tauranga. He travelled much between the Bay of Plenty and Waikato during the campaigns of Waharoa (1836),

MAUNSELL

and persuaded the taua of Ngati-Haua not to eat the flesh of their victims. After further adventures Maunsell reached Maraetai, near Waikato Heads. Here he opened a mission station (1836) with agricultural farm, church and day schools, which for a few years was very successful. In 1839 700 pupils were presented for examination. Volkner came here as his assistant; F. D. Fenton taught music and Stack arrived in 1853 to manage the farm. The habits of industry and steadiness which characterised the people of lower Waikato have been ascribed to the regular discipline and training of Maunsell's regime.

Maunsell devoted much time to translating portion of the Scriptures, but his manuscript was destroyed in the burning of his house. He was one of the committee of four appointed in 1844 to revise the Maori prayer book. In 1847 he revised the Old Testament, and in 1850 the Maori grammar. It is said that while he spoke in English he thought in Maori. Trinity College recognised his high scholarship by awarding him the honorary degree of LL.D. (1849).

Owing to the decrease of the native population Maunsell, on the advice of Grey, decided to move the station from Maraetai some miles up the river. The move was effected in 1853, and the new station established at Kohanga, where Volkner supervised the preparatory work on an additional area of land given by the Maori for the agricultural school. The industrial work was successful, but the farm failed owing to the poor soil. In the first year both oats and potatoes yielded less than the seed. The food shortage was serious for the mission. On the outbreak of the war in 1863 Maunsell's influence with the Maori failed, and he was compelled to send his family to Auckland. He himself took the field as chaplain to the troops, in which capacity he buried the dead after Rangiriri.

At the end of the war he went to live in Auckland. He was appointed archdeacon of Waitemata but resigned (1868) to become incumbent of St Mary's, Auckland, which position he held to 1883, when he retired. From 1870-83 he was archdeacon of Auckland. He died on 19 Apr 1894. Maunsell was described as tall, gaunt and loosely built, with a strong, weather-beaten countenance.

MAUPARAOA

*Col. Gent.*; Morton; typescript letters of G. and R. Maunsell in Turnbull Library; Stack; Buller; Gorst; Thomson; *N.Z. Herald*, 20 Apr 1894 (p); *Auckland Star*, 23 Feb 1927.

MAUPARAOA, in the first half of the nineteenth century, was a fighting chief of Ngati-Kahungunu living at Mohaka. Taken prisoner by the Ngapuhi, he became one of their war leaders. He was on Pomare's expedition to Waikato in 1826, and assumed command after the leader's death, escaping with Moetara and very few followers to Manukau. It was said that some men of Ngati-Kahungunu who were living as prisoners at Otuihu were responsible for the death of the Ngapuhi woman, which led to the war between Titore and Pomare, Mauparaoa being allied with Pomare and Whareumu. In Mar 1845 Mauparaoa joined Heke with his followers and was engaged in the fighting against the British troops. He died at Te Karetu.

S. P. Smith; Best, *Tuhoe*.

TE MAUTARANUI, or RANGI-AHO (?-1826) was a principal chief of Tuboe and Ngati-Awa, also of the Tama-Kaimoana branch of Urewera. He was descended from Toi-Kairakau, who was in Aotearoa before the fleet of 1350 A.D. arrived. When Pomare invaded Tuhoe (1822) Mautaranui, who was with a taua at Maungapohatu, sent his brother Te Iripa to reconnoitre the strange force. Finding that Pomare was with them, he sent four envoys to meet him and at his invitation proceeded to Manawaru to make a formal peace, which was lasting. At the meeting at Puketi to cement the peace Mautaranui, at the instigation of Pomare, challenged and outran the speedy Ngapuhi warrior Te Hihi.

Two years later, wishing to obtain vengeance against the Wairoa people, Mautaranui paid a round of visits to Whakatane, Tauranga (Te Waru), Hauraki (Ngati-Tamatera) and to the Ngati-Paoa and then on to Tai-a-mai, Bay of Islands. Having enlisted the help of all the tribes mentioned, he appealed successfully to Pomare, who in May 1824 rounded East Cape in his fleet to join Mautaranui at Mahia. The allied taua marched overland, and was reinforced at Ruatahuna by the Arawa, Urewera and Ngati-Awa. Before joining Pomare, Mautaranui took one division from Maungapohatu to Papuni, on the upper Wairoa river, and at Wai-

MAXWELL

reporepo severely defeated the Ngati-Kahungunu under Tu-Akiaki, Mautaranui himself wounding the chief Te Ua in the back. Meanwhile Pomare had taken Titirangi. Mautaranui had other successes at Moumouka and Pukekaroro, after which they made peace. Tu-Akiaki achieved his design by persuading Mautaranui to marry his sister Te Motu o Rube. A year later he invited him to attend a great hakari at Kaitaraha, on the birth of their child. Disregarding the warnings of Te Ua, Mautaranui accepted the invitation and with his younger brother Paetawa was treacherously killed at the feast (1826). His death was avenged by Pomare at Pohatu-roa, where Tu-Akiaki was killed by Te Whatanui.

Lambert; S. P. Smith; J. H. Grace.

MAXWELL, EBENEZER (1862-1937) was born at Kilmore, Victoria, a son of the Rev Andrew Maxwell and nephew of Alexander Johnston (q.v.). He came to New Zealand in 1866 and attended the Crofton Grammar School, Wellington. For three years he was in an insurance office, and then in a legal office. He joined the Armed Constabulary for the Parihaka operations (1881) and served for seven years, mostly in clerical employment at Opunake and in the Defence department at Wellington. For 14 years he was sheepfarming at Opunake, and thereafter at Marumarunui until 1911, when he became a valuer, assessor and consulting forester. He took a great interest in tree planting, and was at different times a member of the Egmont National Park board, the Empire Forestry Association, the New Zealand Forestry League and the New Zealand Institute of Horticulture. His publications include *Afforestation in Southern Lands*, *Forestry in New Zealand*, *New Zealand Forest Trees* and *Comparative Rate of Growth*. He was some years chairman of the Parihaka road board, and the Egmont county council; 28 years on the New Plymouth harbour board (seven years chairman), a director of the Opunake Wharf Co., and the Taranaki Farmers' Mutual Insurance Co., and a provincial office-bearer of the Farmers' Union. He was captain of the Opunake Mounted Rifles (1900), and major of the 1st battalion (1904). Maxwell married (1896) Pattie, daughter of James Johnston, Aberdeen. He died on 30 Mar 1937.

MAXWELL

*Cycl. N.z.*, vi (p); *Who's Who N.z.*, 1932; E. Maxwell, *op. cit.* and *Recollections and Reflections of an Old New Zealander* (1935).

MAXWELL, JOSEPH PRINCE (1847-1933) was born in Buckfastleigh, Devonshire, and educated in England. Coming to New Zealand in the early seventies, he entered the railway service and rose to be General Manager (1881), and later railway commissioner. Maxwell designed the Timaru breakwater and was connected with the west coast harbour works. He served on a number of commissions, had an extensive consulting practice and was a director of the Wellington Trust and Loan and other companies. In 1879, with G. Beetham (q.v.) he ascended Mount Ruapehu and viewed the crater lake. With his wife Helen (who was a daughter of George Hunter, q.v.) he was one of the founders of the Wellington convalescent home. He died on 8 Jun 1933.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Beetham, *The Ascent of Ruapehu*; *Evening Post*, 10 Jul 1933.

MAY, JOSEPH (1816-90) came to Auckland in the forties and settled near the City, farming and breeding stock. He married Helen Wilson (Edinburgh), who arrived by the *Delhi* (1840). He resided for 25 years in Epsom. May was elected to the Provincial Council in 1855, and sat throughout the provincial period (for Northern Division 1855-57; Southern Division 1859-61; Raglan 1861-73; Eden 1874-75). He was a member of the executive in 1856, 1862 and 1869-70, and deputy superintendent in 1870. He stood for Parliament without success in 1855, and represented Franklin 1874-75, making a notable speech against provincialism. May died on 10 Feb 1890.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*, and *Gaz.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 2 Sep 1875; *N.Z. Herald*, II Feb 1890. Portrait Parliament House.

MAYNE, FRANK (1867-1929) was a native of Dublin. Educated at Hatfield Hall, University of Durham, he graduated B.A. (1891) and M.A. Ordained deacon (1892) and priest (1893), he was assistant curate at St Cuthbert's, Wells, and senior class-master at Wells Cathedral School (1891-93), curate of All Saints, Wellington, Somerset (1893), assistant-master at Christ's College, Christchurch (1894-95), vicar of St John's, Roslyn (1896); canon of St Paul's Cathedral, Dunedin (1900), and of St John's

MELLOR

Cathedral, Napier (1906). He was appointed dean of the diocese of Waiapu (1918). Mayne married a daughter of R. J. S. Harman (Christchurch). He died on 3 Sep 1929.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1924; *Cycl. N.z.*, iv, vi (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 4 Sep 1929.

MEARS, ABRAHAM (1822-64) was born in county Fermanagh, Ireland, and came to Wellington in 1840. He afterwards moved to Auckland, and was engaged for many years sheepfarming in the neighbourhood of the town. He represented Northern Division in the Provincial Council (1859-61). Mears died on 20 Dec 1864.

*Parltry Record; Auckland P.C. Proc.; New Zealander*, 22 Dec 1864.

MELLISH, GEORGE LILLY (1835-81) was born in England and educated at Exeter College, Oxford, and Pembroke College. He rowed in the Oxford eight in 1854. When the Crimean war broke out he received a commission in the 44th Regiment, with which he served before Sebastopol. After the war he abandoned his studies and came to south Australia (1857), and in the following year to Canterbury, where he spent a few years sheep farming in the back country. On the outbreak of the Waikato war he received a captain's commission in the 4th Waikato Regiment. He was in charge of the camp at Onehunga for a while, and later in command of Galloway's redoubt. In 1865 Mellish was appointed resident magistrate at Picton; in 1868 at Kaiapoi, and in 1874 at Christchurch. He died on 29 Dec 1881.

*The Press*, 30 Dec 1881.

MELLOR, JOSEPH WILLIAM (1869-1938) was born at Huddersfield, Yorkshire, the son of Job Mellor, a loom-tuner, who came to New Zealand in 1879 and was employed for two years by the Kaiapoi Woollen Co. Joseph went to the Kaiapoi school, and when the family moved to Dunedin in 1881 he completed his schooling at the Linden school (Kaikorai). At the age of 13 he became a handy boy in the establishment of H. S. Fish (q.v.), and afterwards passed through the boot factories of Simon brothers and McKinlay, and finally became a clicker in Sargood and Sons.

During these years Mellor continued his education at the Dunedin Technical School and, being deeply interested in chemistry, he built

## MELLOR

a small laboratory in his garden. Determined to gain an advanced education, he matriculated in 1892 from the Technical School and by the recommendation of one of the directors (G. M. Thomson, q.v.), he was awarded a bursary which took him to the University. He had difficulty with Latin but made good progress with his studies in chemistry (under Professor Black). In 1897 he graduated B.Sc., and won a senior scholarship, and in 1899 he gained first-class honours and was awarded the Exhibition science scholarship. He taught for a few months at Lincoln Agricultural College and, having married Miss Emma Bakes (of Lincolnshire, who was brought up in Auckland) they sailed for England.

Mellor continued his studies at Owens College, Manchester, where he graduated D.Sc. in 1902. He was then appointed chemist to the Pottery Manufacturers' federation, and took up his residence at Newcastle-under-Lyme. Three years later he was appointed director of the research laboratories of the federation, which he controlled until 1937. In 1909 the federation commenced to co-operate in research with concerns interested in refractory materials, and this association continued to develop until 1920, when the British Refractories Research association was formed, under the joint auspices of the pottery federation, the gas manufacturers and the British iron and steel federation. Their fine new laboratory at Shelton, Stoke-on-Trent, which was opened in 1934, was called the Mellor laboratory.

In the early years of the century Mellor moved into the forefront of chemists, and became the leading authority in inorganic chemistry and ceramics. His researches in refractory materials comprised a vast amount of original work. During the war he was called in to advise on the production of steel and was able to replace to some extent the German scientists upon whom the industry had largely relied. He declined a decoration for his services, but received the C.B.E. in 1938 and a gift of £1,500 from the federation which he had served with such distinction. A leading authority in ceramics, he was honorary secretary of the Ceramic Society of Great Britain and was one of only 14 honorary members elected by the American Ceramic Society (1932). He was elected to the Royal Society in 1927.

## MELVILL

Mellor commenced in 1902, with the first edition of *Higher Mathematics*, the publication of a long series of scientific works of high value. In 1904 he published *Chemical Statics and Dynamics* and in 1905 *The Crystallization of Iron and Steel*. His other works include *Elementary Inorganic Chemistry* (1930), *Intermediate Inorganic Chemistry, Applied Physics and Ceramics, Modern Inorganic Chemistry* (1912), *Physics and Industry* (1925), *Treatise on the Ceramic Industry* (1913) and his monumental *Comprehensive Treatise on Inorganic and Theoretical Chemistry*, which appeared in 16 volumes at intervals between 1922 and 1937. Mellor was a great lover of poetry, whimsy and nonsense, and the Ceramic Society published in 1934 his *Uncle Joe's Nonsense*. He was a clever artist, and many of his cartoons appeared in his own books and in the *Staffordshire Evening Sentinel*. A fine private library, efficiently catalogued, enabled him to produce his noble succession of textbooks with no apparent difficulty. As a youth he learned to play chess and he competed in several New Zealand tournaments and contributed a chess column for some years to the *Evening Star* (Dunedin). He died on 24 May 1938.

Mellor, *op. cit.*; *Otago Univ. Calendar; The Dominion*, 2 Aug 1932; *New Zealand Times*, 1 Jan 1902; *Otago Daily Times*, 31 May, 1 Jun 1938; *The Times* (London), 28 May 1938; S. J. in *New Zealand Railway's Magazine*, 1 Sep 1938 (p).

MELVILL, CHARLES WILLIAM (1878-1925) was born in England, a son of Teignmouth Melvill, V.C., of the 24th Regiment. He was educated at Wellington College, England; and at the Royal Military College, got his commission in the South Lancashire Regiment (1897) and served in India. Retiring as captain (1907), he came to New Zealand and took up sheep-farming. On the creation of a territorial force (1910) he joined the New Zealand Staff corps. In 1911 he married Rita, third daughter of William Burnett of Mount Stuart. In the war of 1914-18 Melvill rejoined his regiment. In 1915 he joined the New Zealand Expeditionary Force. (Colonel 1916; D.S.O.) In 1917 he commanded the first New Zealand infantry brigade. (Ordre de la Couronne, officer; C.M.G.; Croix de Guerre; C.B.) In 1919 he commanded

## MELVIN

the Wellington military district, and later became general officer commanding. He died on 15 Sep 1925.

Studholme; *Who's Who in N.Z.*, 1924; *The Dominion*, 16 Sep 1925.

MELVIN, ALEXANDER ADAM (?-1863) was the son of an inspector-general of hospitals in Great Britain. He represented Northern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council (1861-63) and died on 12 May 1863.

MENTEATH, ANDREW AGNEW STUART (1853-1916) was born in Edinburgh and educated on the continent by private tutors. He began to study law in Edinburgh, but in ill-health left for New Zealand by the *Himalaya* in the seventies. He joined the National Bank of New Zealand in Blenheim, and managed branches on the West Coast. In 1880 he resumed his legal studies in England, and was admitted to the Bar at the Middle Temple (1883). He practised at Greymouth and Reefton, and in 1884 he was elected member of the House of Representatives for Inangahua (defeating Richard Reeves by a few votes). Moving to Wellington in 1886, he became a partner in Jellicoe and Menteath. He was M.H.R. for Te Am (1887-90), and president of the Wellington law society. A fluent French linguist, he was president of the French club and held the position of French consul. Menteath was a freemason, a Druid and a strong supporter of the Moderate League. He died on 25 Sep 1916.

*N.Z.PoD.*, 27 Jun 1916; *Cycl. N.z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Dominion*, 26 Sep 1916.

MENZIES, JAMES ALEXANDER ROBERTSON (1821-88) was born at Rannoch, Perthshire. His father belonged to a branch of the clan Menzies and his mother was a Robertson of Struan. Menzies displayed with pride an ornamented rapier said to have been given by Prince Charles to a cadet of the house of Robertson. He was educated in Rannoch, and studied at Edinburgh University, where he entered at the age of 14. He took his diploma of the Royal College of Surgeons, Edinburgh, at the age of 19. For some years thereafter he practised at Rannoch, taking an interest in village and countryside. In 1849 he was elected a member of the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland.

## MENZIES

In 1853 Menzies sailed for Port Philip, and thence to New Zealand, arriving in Wellington (Dec 1853). A few months later he accompanied Mantell on his overland journey from Otago to Southland to settle with the native owners for the purchase of the Murihiku block. They walked through south Otago, reaching the Bluff by way of Henderson's bush, Oteramika, and returned to Dunedin along the beach, crossing the Mataura river at Toetoes. Menzies inspected carefully a run near Wyndham, and at a later date came back to Mataura and took up 38,000 acres. This he carried on until 1866, when the government resumed the run for closer settlement. Menzies then reduced his holding to 8,000 acres, and purchased the freehold of Dunalister, near Wyndham. He and Mieville were the only two station holders in the district.

Menzies did not practise medicine in New Zealand, but was often called upon in cases of emergency. He had a disposition for retirement and, owing to the remoteness of his run, it was imperative that he should refrain from public affairs. He did, however, accept the offer of a seat in the Legislative Council (made to him in 1857, and confirmed in 1858), and he remained a member of that body for 30 years, never seeking admission to the elective chamber. As early as the fifties he championed Southland against the dominance of the town voters and the neglect of the Provincial Council. The grievances were real and, from being merely a stern critic of the Otago administration, Menzies became head and front of the movement for the separation of Murihiku and its erection into a new province. With this in view he gave the new provinces act (1858) his warm support in the Legislative Council. The goal was reached in Apr 1861. Menzies then moved into Invercargill, and personally guaranteed to the Oriental Bank the sum necessary to enable the new province to proceed with the election of its first Council. He was elected for Mataura, and when the Council met on 3 Aug was chosen without opposition as the first Superintendent.

The atmosphere of controversy in which Murihiku won her independence was not favourable for careful and judicious government. Nor was the temperament of some of the provincial politicians such as would help to compose long-standing differences of opinion. The sittings of

MENZIES

the Council were at times marked with great acerbity, and the attempt of the executive at one time and the Council at another to harness the Superintendent to a course of conduct in which he did not concur made for disharmony. A man of wide culture and stainless reputation, Menzies lacked business capacity. In the desire to prove that the province was well able to provide itself with facilities and amenities which it sought in vain from Otago, the Government anticipated its means and embarked upon ventures far beyond its resources for many years to come. Extensive borrowing was resorted to for harbour works and railways for which the province was scarcely ripe.

At the moment when Southland broke off from Otago the gold discovery at Gabriel's Gully brought a great influx of miners and wealth. Southland's hope of participating in this prosperity was doomed to be disappointed. The goldfields were beyond her boundaries, and Dunedin merchants had a firm hold of the distributing business. Invercargill had no hope of breaking into the charmed circle. Menzies was urged by his executive to appoint a gold receiver for the province at Queenstown and to establish an escort to Invercargill, but he spurned the proposal as an unfair intrusion upon the domain of the mother province. The condition of Southland by the expiration of the first Provincial Council was sufficiently deplorable. In eight months the revenue showed a deficiency of £46,000. The liabilities of the province were £379,553, and the new Council (elected in Nov 1864) was told by a committee: 'The province is in a prostrate condition, and unable to meet its engagements without the assistance of the General Assembly.' The Council was disposed to hold Menzies responsible for its straits, and day after day it declined to re-elect him Superintendent. Eventually (on 13 Jan 1865) Menzies gave his casting vote in favour of J. P. Taylor. He himself sat in the Council as member for Invercargill. At the general election in 1867 he was defeated (being sixth on the list of eight candidates), but he was again returned at the elections in 1869.

By this time it was obvious that Southland had no alternative but to return to the fold of Otago. The mother province was willing, but the die-hard element in Southland resisted

MENZIES

doggedly, and Wood, the Superintendent, had a difficult task to steer the reunion proposals through the Council. Southland as a province ceased to exist in 1870. Menzies was amongst the members elected to represent the extinct province in the Otago Council, and he sat for Mataura until the provinces were abolished. He might have made his mark in wider politics if his energies had not been wedded to Southland. In that championship he was single-minded, and he could see little virtue in those who differed from him. At one time he moved in the Legislative Council to have the name 'Invercargill' changed as being distasteful to the inhabitants. With a quaint naïvete he confessed that, having made the personal acquaintance of the veteran Superintendent of Otago, he found him by no means a monster, but a man of broad views and human kindness, by whose friendship he was honoured. Menzies was a man of unblemished honour, infinite charity, and inexhaustible sympathy. A political opponent once said of him: 'No mean action, no dishonest thought could have found harbour in his mental calibre. Indeed, his very chivalry of soul militated in great measure with the successful compass of the position of superintendent. His misfortune was that he did not understand business.'

A tall, stalwart, commanding figure, generally distinguished by some remnant of Highland garb, Menzies continued to take his part in public life. In 1879 he turned the first sod of the Edendale-Toetoes railway. He was a member of the Bluff harbour board, of the school commissioners of Otago, and the Southland education board. He was a strong supporter of the Caledonian Society and for many years president, and it was chiefly owing to his foresight that a fine park was reserved for the town of Wyndham. A Presbyterian of the old school, he maintained throughout life the Scots habit of family worship. He was a strong supporter of the Sunday school, in which he taught for many years, and he felt almost as a personal injury the education act of 1877 which made education in the colony secular. In his last Parliament he carried to its second reading a bill to enable school committees to introduce Bible-reading. It was thrown out by a small majority. Still he persevered and moved

MEREDITH

a resolution, which was defeated by one vote. In a memorial sermon preached at Wyndham after Menzies' death, the Rev Robert Wood said: 'This divine movement lay near his heart. On the day he died he requested that the report of the discussion of this question in the Legislative Council should be read to him—a discussion in which he himself had taken a leading part—and when this was done he thanked God that he had been permitted to take part in this work and prayed that it would be carried on till success was won.'

Menzies married (1865) Letitia Anne, daughter of Dr Featherston, Superintendent of Wellington. He died on 18 Aug 1888, and his widow on 27 Mar 1929.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago and Southland P.C. P.T.O.C.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 20 Aug 1888; Saunders; Beattie, ii; A. Mackay; Ross; Roberts, *Southland*; McIndoe; Rusden; *Otago Witness*, 28 Mar 1898; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Aug 1888, 9 May 1930 (p).

MEREDITH, RICHARD (1843-1918) was born in county Carlow, Ireland, educated at Tullow public school, and became a school teacher. In 1863 he came to New Zealand in the *Accrington*, and for 25 years was engaged in teaching (1863-88). In 1889 he began farming on Moeraki downs, and in 1890 was elected to represent Ashley in the House of Representatives. He held the seat until 1902, but was beaten for the new Hurunui electorate. For nine years Meredith was chairman of the M to Z public petitions committee. He was for 14 years chairman of the local school committee, for six years a member of the North Canterbury education board (chairman 1892) and later a member of the Technical School committee and the Timaru High School board. Meredith was also a member of the Canterbury land board for 15 years (1891-1906) and of the Farmers' union. After settling in Waimate, he was president of the local branch of the British and Foreign Bible Society, a lay preacher in the Methodist Church, and Sunday School superintendent. He was a leading Orangeman. He died on 20 Aug 1918.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Oct 1918; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Press*, 21 Aug 1918.

MERRIMAN, FREDERICK WARD (1818-65) was born at Marlborough, in Wiltshire, his father being a solicitor and banker; educated

MERYON

at Winchester College and studied law. After practising for some time he came to New Zealand in 1844 and established himself in Auckland. In 1847 he was a justice of the peace and member of the Legislative Council. In 1852 he was elected an alderman for the Eastern Suburbs of Auckland, but he resigned that position to become town clerk. On the inauguration of the new constitution he was elected to Parliament for the same constituency, which he represented until 1860, being chairman of committees (1854-55). In 1855 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Suburbs, which he represented till 1861. Most of the time he was a member of the executive, and he was twice provincial solicitor (1856, 1865). He died on 21 Jul 1865. Merriman married (1850) Susanna Augusta (1821-69), daughter of Lieut.-colonel Greene, of county Waterford, and widow of Captain Thomas Ringrose Atkyns.

*Auckland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Gaz.*; *Southern Cross*, 22 Jul 1865.

MERVYN, DAVID HUNTER, was returned to Parliament for Manuherikia in 1867. He represented that constituency till 1870, and Mount Ida from 1871-75. He was also a member of the Provincial Council for Mount Ida (1871-73).

MERYON, CHARLES (1821-68), a French artist, was born in Paris, his father being an English doctor and his mother a Parisian dancer. On her death he entered the French Naval School at Brest (1837) and in 1841 was appointed to a warship in which he saw the East. He was then commissioned as a first-class pupil in the corvette *Le Rhin*, in which he made a voyage round the world. Already trained as a draughtsman, he made pencil sketches of scenery in New Zealand, notably at Banks Peninsula, where the *Rhin* was stationed for some time from 1842. He took a room on shore to enable him to study history, politics, drawing and painting. After 1846, when he had left the sea, he was able to make use of his sketches in the production of an important series of etchings intended to illustrate the voyage. His four principal views of Akaroa were etched after 1860. It was owing to being colour blind that Meryon devoted himself to etching, which he studied under Bléry. For practice he made studies after Dutch

## MESSENGER

etchers, especially Zeeman and Adrian van de Velde. Always in indigent circumstances, he was unable to maintain himself by his art and had to do irksome manual labour. Between 1850 and 1854 he made the series *Eaux-fortes sur Paris* which, however, were never published as a series.

Though a master etcher, Meryon was not appreciated, and had to sell his plates for a few francs. He was at home with every style of architecture and of grey and lowering skies such as hang over cities, but he drew trees and foliage indifferently. Meryon died in a madhouse at Charenton in 1868, after having in despair damaged many of his plates.

*Old Paris* (etchings by Meryon, with essay by P. G. Hamerton, 1914); Joan Haslip, *Lady Hester Stanhope, 1934*; Dora Wilcox in *United Empire; The Press and New Zealand Times; Art in New Zealand*, Mar 1930; *Nouveau Larousse [Illustré]; Encycl. Brit.*, 14th ed.

MESSENGER, WILLIAM BAZIRE (1834-1922) was born in Essex. His father, William Messenger, 1801-90, a midshipman in H.M.S. *Queen Charlotte*, was wounded at Algiers in 1816, and afterwards served in the East India Company. He settled in Taranaki in 1853 and was in the naval brigade at Waireka, 1860.

Educated at Woodford House Academy, Messenger came to Taranaki with his parents in 1853 and at once took up a bush section. When hostilities broke out with the natives he joined the volunteers (1858), becoming a sergeant (1859), ensign in the militia (1860), lieutenant (1862) and captain (Jul 1863). After assisting to build the stockade at Omata, he moved into New Plymouth and accompanied Stapp's force to Waireka, where he saw his first service (Mar 1860). After much skirmishing in the neighbourhood of New Plymouth he joined the Bushrangers under Atkinson and Webster, and was present at Maohetahi (Nov 1860). When fighting was renewed he was at Allen's Hill (Oct 1863). He was then appointed to command a company of the Military Settlers from Australia (Feb 1864) which was ordered to build a blockhouse at Sentry Hill, and afterwards moved on successively to Manutahi, Poutoko and Kaitaki. In the same year Messenger was sent to occupy the redoubt at Pukearuhe.

In 1863 he was elected to the Provincial

## MICHEL

Council for Omata (which he represented to 1868). In Feb 1869 the Rev J. Whiteley called at Messenger's house on his way to hold a service at White Cliffs. He declined an invitation to spend the night, and next day was murdered by a Ngati-Maniapoto party at White Cliffs. After making sure that other settlers were safe, Messenger tried unsuccessfully to persuade friendly natives to accompany him to the scene. When Stapp's force came up they advanced from Drenui and found the bodies of the slain. Messenger received the thanks of the Government for his conduct. He was then stationed at Drenui under Good; assisted the militia to construct a blockhouse at Te Arei; and then proceeded as second-in-command of a force of Armed Constabulary, Bushrangers and friendlies to join in the pursuit of Titokowaru. He was recalled from this duty and spent the next few years in command of the post at White Cliffs and of armed parties of the A.C. making roads and bridges. He was promoted sub-inspector (1st cl.) in 1877; major in the permanent force, commanding the artillery at Wellington (1885); lieutenant-colonel 1899; commandant Royal N.Z. Artillery 1901. In 1889 he commanded the force which apprehended Te Kooti and turned him back from the East Coast.

Messenger commanded the 10th N.Z. contingent, which sailed for South Africa (11 Apr 1902). He was on the staff of Mr Seddon during his South African tour, and returned to Melbourne in command of an Australian contingent. He went on the retired list as lieutenant-colonel on 30 Apr 1903, and died on 8 Apr 1922. He married (1863) Arabella, daughter of T. Mace.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Gudgeon (p); Cowan, *N.Z. Wars*; *Taranaki Herald*, 10 Oct 1890, 10 Apr 1922.

MICHEL, HENRY LESLIE (1855-1930) was born in Newcastle, New South Wales, and came to New Zealand with his parents. Educated at Scott's Academy in Hokitika, he entered the office of Paterson and Co., in which he afterwards became a partner, and eventually managing director. He was a member of the borough council for 25 years from 1885, and mayor of Hokitika for 16 years, beginning in 1886. He was also chairman of the Westland

## MICHIE

education board, the Hokitika harbour board and the High School board, and a member of the school committee, the hospital and charitable aid board and the Greymouth harbour board; chairman of the school commissioners; president of the hospital committee; a trustee of the Hokitika Savings Bank; captain of the fire brigade and president of the fire brigades association of New Zealand.

In politics Michel was a Liberal, and he contested parliamentary seats on various occasions (his opponents including A. R. Guinness and T. E. Y. Seddon). In 1918 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death on 4 Mar 1930. Michel was a director of the Westland Timber Trading Co. and of the Ross Goldmining and Rimu goldfields companies, and invested a good deal in a local shipping company. As an Anglican, he held the offices of bishop's warden and superintendent of the Sunday school. As a freemason he was superintendent of Nelson and Westland and Dominion grand master, N.Z. constitution (1924).

*N.z.P.D.*, 1918-30; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Grey River Argus*, 5 Mar 1930. Portrait: Parliament House.

MICHIE, ALEXANDER (1853-1933), who was a son of an engineer, was born in Aberdeenshire, Scotland, and educated at Sim's Academy, Aberdeen. In 1868 he joined the Bank of Scotland and four years later the Chartered Mercantile Bank of India, London and China. In 1874 he entered the head office of the National Bank of New Zealand as accountant, and coming to New Zealand in 1884 was inspector, and subsequently manager of the Dunedin branch. In 1886 he married Catherine Mary, daughter of H. J. Le Cren (Timaru). In 1891 he joined the Bank of New Zealand as manager in Dunedin, becoming acting-general manager in 1904 and general manager in 1906. Resigning in the following year, he became a member of the London board, a London director of the New Zealand Shipping Co., and of the Dnion Steam Ship Co., and a member of the council of the Royal Colonial Institute. He was managing governor of the Royal Scottish Corporation. Michie died on 1 Jan 1933.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *The Dominion*, 5 Jan 1933.

## MILLAR

MILES, JOHN GEORGE, settled in Nelson and was member of Parliament for Waimea (1864-66). A man of independent means, he did not remain in New Zealand, but returned to England.

MILLAR, JOHN (1807-76) was born in Scotland, and trained there as an engineer and surveyor. He first came to Melbourne in the early fifties; and carried out the Yan Yean waterworks and advised on the proposed dock. He then paid a visit to England, and returned to Australia in 1855 in the *Schomberg*. She was wrecked at Cape Otway, and Millar received a presentation casket for his efforts to save life. He was engineer for waterworks and drainage for Geelong, Brighton and Hotham, and made many reports on those subjects and town improvements. In 1859 he took service under the Government of Victoria, and in 1863 was appointed engineer to the town board of Dunedin. He put forward a scheme for the Dunedin water supply in 1863 and was also consulting engineer to the borough of Port Chalmers. On leaving the service of the Dunedin municipality (1866) he continued in private practice as an engineer and architect.

Millar represented the City in the Otago Provincial Council (1867-70); and in 1867, 1869 and 1870 was defeated in elections for the mayoralty. In the early seventies he moved to Wanganui, where he was borough engineer (1874) and he was afterwards provincial engineer and chief surveyor in Nelson.

Millar wrote many papers on professional subjects to British and American journals. He usually signed himself 'Millar, F.S.A.' He died at Nelson on 15 Nov 1876.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Hocken, *Otago*; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 16 Sep 1874; *The Colonist* (Nelson), 16 Nov 1876.

MILLAR, JOHN ANDREW (1855-1915) was born at Jullundur, India, the son of Major-general J. C. Millar, of the Bengal Staff Corps. He was educated in Edinburgh. In 1870 he sailed for New Zealand with the intention of becoming a sheep farmer, but took a liking to the sea and after serving his apprenticeship to Patrick Henderson and Co. he became an officer in the Shaw Savill and Albion Co. (1881). Between that date and 1887 he was engaged in the Home and the New Zealand

## MILLAR

coastal service both as officer and as captain.

In 1887 he became general secretary of the Federated Seamen's union. The outbreak of the maritime strike in Australia, and its extension to New Zealand (1890) brought Millar into prominence, and he distinguished himself by the resourceful manner in which he conducted the affairs of the federation throughout the struggle. He was secretary also of the maritime council. In the years following the strike Millar attained some eminence in the labour movement and was instrumental in promoting the Liberal-Labour federation in politics. In 1890 seamen were granted special electoral rights.

Millar opposed James Mills for Chalmers and was defeated by 874 votes to 645. At the following election (1893) he defeated E. G. Allen by 1,748 votes to 1,627. In 1896 he was elected for the City of Dunedin, which he represented till 1905. Thereafter he was member for Dunedin Central (1905-08), and for Dunedin West (1908-14). He did not seek reelection in 1914 but was shortly afterwards called to the Legislative Council (Jun 1915). Millar soon gained a useful mastery of parliamentary procedure, and in 1899 was chairman of the labour bills committee. In 1900 he was a member of the royal commission on federation, and in 1903 was elected chairman of committees. He was not chosen for office under Seddon, but in Ward's reconstruction (1906) he was Minister of Customs, Labour and Marine. In the following year he carried through a tariff bill with considerable ability, and on the retirement of Hall-Jones he assumed responsibility also for the administration of Railways. Millar administered all these portfolios until the Government went out of office (Mar 1912). He was widely favoured as the successor of Ward, and his succession would undoubtedly have influenced the course of events in the following years; but with Mackenzie's accession to office Millar's future was decided, and he remained thereafter a private member until his death (on 15 Oct 1915). He was highly respected and had considerable influence in Liberal politics. In the session of 1908 Millar introduced a bill to establish industrial councils in place of the conciliation boards. He was one of the originators of Labour Day.

## MILLS

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1893-1914 (notably 10 May 1916); Paul; Condliffe; Stewart and Rossignol; Scholefield, *N.Z. Evol.*; *N.z. Chess Book*, 1922; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *N.z. Herald*, 20 Oct 1890; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Oct 1915.

MILLER, SIR HENRY JOHN (1830-1918) was the son of the Rev Sir Thomas Miller, baronet, of Froyle, Alton, Hampshire. He was educated at Eton and Oxford, where he excelled in athletics and rowed against Cambridge. As a young man he went to Australia. He arrived in New Zealand in 1860, and became actively engaged in pastoral pursuits in north Otago. He was a founder of the North Otago Agricultural and Pastoral association.

Miller was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for Oamaru Town in 1863, and represented it till 1867, being a member of the provincial executive as secretary for public works in 1863-66. In 1865 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until a few months before his death. He was Speaker of the Council from 1892 to 1903. In 1901 he was knighted. He was chairman of the Oamaru dock trust, the harbour board and the Waitaki High School, in the foundation of which he took a considerable part. He was interested in coalmining, and for some years was chairman of the Westport Coal Co. He married (1864) Jessie, daughter of John Orbell (Waikouaiti). He died on 6 Feb 1918. Gisborne describes Miller as a true specimen of an English gentleman; frank, hearty and prepossessing in manner; scholarly, wise, tactful and occasionally eloquent.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably 9 Apr 1919); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Bidwill; K. C. McDonald; Gisborne; *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Feb 1918. Portrait: Parliament House.

MILLS, CHARLES HOUGHTON (1844-1923) was born at Nelson, his father being in the Prisons department there. He received most of his education in the public schools in Wellington, and spent four years as a pupil teacher in Te Aro school. He then went to sea for a few years; joined the Wakamarina rush and worked on farms; finally establishing himself in a commission agency at Havelock. There he took a leading part in public life, being member of the Provincial Council for Pelorus (1874-75), a member of the Pelorus

## MILLS

road board and school committee, the Havelock town board, and the Picton hospital and charitable aid board. Later he was for some years a member of the Marlborough county council, education board and land board.

In 1887 Mills contested Waimea-Picton against Seymour and Harkness, without success; but he gained the seat in 1890. At the following election the electorate was extinguished, and he was returned for Wairau as a supporter of the Seddon Government. He held the seat until 1908, and for eight years was senior Government whip. In 1900 he joined the ministry in charge of Customs and other departments, and he held office also in the Hall-Jones ministry (1906).

Mills retired from the House in 1908, and a few months later was called to the Legislative Council of which he was a member 1909-16. He married (1871) a daughter of John Morrison and died on 3 Apr 1923.

*N.Z.P.D.* 1890-1923 *pass.* (notably 15 Jun 1923); *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Who's Who, N.Z.*, 1908; *N.z. Times* and *Evening Post*, 4 Apr 1923. Portrait: Parliament House.

MILLS, EDWARD WILLIAM (1829-1900) was born in Kensington and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Birman* (1842). Their house being burned down later in that year, causing them considerable loss in material and tools, Mills took employment, and in 1846 assisted in a building contract for the Imperial government. After spending two years on the goldfields at Ballarat, he returned to Wellington (1854) and founded a hardware business which he carried on for many years. He established the Lion foundry and undertook the repair and building of steamers, the construction of locomotives and the erection of sawmills. He was a promoter and director of the Wellington Tramway Co. and a director of the Patent Slip Co. and the Colonial and the Commercial insurance companies. Mills was a member of the first Wellington town board and the first City Council (1870-77) but refused to stand for the mayoralty. He was president of the chamber of commerce (1889) and a member of the licensing committee (1896). He served in the militia, patrolling the bounds of Wellington in 1846, and joined no. 1 company Royal Rifle volunteers, of which he was cap-

## MILLTON

tain from 1868 till it disbanded. He was a keen yachtsman and commodore of the Port Nicholson yacht club. Mills married (1854) a daughter of John F. Fortescue Wright. His death occurred in 1900.

Ward; *Cycl. N.z.*, i; *Wellington Independent*, 14 Apr 1864.

MILLS, SIR JAMES (1847-1936), the third son of William Mills (1809-1900, for many years collector of customs), was born in Wellington and educated in Dunedin. His first business experience was with James Macandrew and Co., whom he left to join John Jones, merchant and shipowner. In 1869 Mills, J. R. Jones and others organised a company to take over the *Golden Age* and other steamers and run a service between Dunedin and Port Chalmers. He became manager of this Harbour Steam Co. In 1875 he took a leading part in the foundation of the Union Steam Ship Co., of which he was appointed managing director. Under his management the company prospered and expanded widely in New Zealand, Australia and the Pacific. He was made chairman of the board in 1906.

While still a young man Mills represented Waikouaiti in the Otago Provincial Council until the abolition in 1875. From 1887 to 1893 (when he retired) he was member for Port Chalmers in the House of Representatives. In 1904 he was elected honorary associate of the Australasian Institute of Marine Engineers, and in 1907 he attended the navigation conference in London as a representative of New Zealand shipping.

Mills married in 1871 Annabella Langlands, and in 1888 Sadie Gertrude Fosbery. He was knighted in 1907. His death occurred on 23 Jan 1936.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Auckland Star*, 27 Sep 1887; *Otago Daily Times*, 29 Jun 1907, 24 Jan 1936 (p).

MILLTON, WILLIAM VARNHAM (1858-87) was a son of Captain William Newton Millton (1814-89), who came to New Zealand first in 1842 and settled in Canterbury about 1860. He was educated at Christ's College, where he was a provincial scholar (1874), a Somes scholar (1875) and a university scholar (1874-75). Millton was admitted to the bar and practised law in Christchurch. He was a fine cricketer

## MILNE

and Rugby footballer. He represented Canterbury at cricket from 1878 to 1886, playing against Auckland, Otago, Tasinania (1884), Shaw's eleven (1882) and the Australian eleven (1886). In football he represented Canterbury from 1876 to 1884. He played against New South Wales in 1882, and was captain of the New Zealand team which visited that Colony in 1884. Millton died on 22 Jun 1887.

<sup>3</sup> *Christ's College List.*; Adand; *Lyttelton Times*, 23 Jun 1887; *The Press*, 25 Jun 1887, 27 Apr 1889.

MILNE, ALEXANDER (1814-95) arrived in Wellington by the *Lady Nugent* (1840), and lived at the Hutt for nine years. He then acquired the Rose Bank property at Fern Flats, Rangitikei. A very progressive settler, he was responsible for the formation of the first road board in the district—Kahauraponga—of which he was chairman. He was chairman also of the general road board and of the Rangitikei county council, and represented Rangitikei in the Wellington Provincial Council (from 1865 till the abolition). He died on 24 Dec 1895.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); *Rangitikei Advocate*, 27, 28 Dec 1895.

## MITCHELL

and the *Auckland Budget* (1867). He contested the City Council in 1865, and the Auckland West seat in the Provincial Council (against Gilfillan) in 1867. During this campaign he made an interesting proposal for giving work to the unemployed and destitute. In 1868 he settled at Thames, where he was chairman of the hospital committee (1868). He represented Thames in the Provincial Council (1870-73) and was on the executive as goldfields secretary (1870-71). In 1885 he established the *Hauraki Tribune*, which he conducted in the Liberal interest until his death on 22 Nov 1899. He was coroner and a justice of the peace; a member of the Ohinemuri county council (1896-98), and an ardent horticulturist.

Personal information from W. D. Nicholas; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Southern Cross*, 1 Jun 1867; *Ohinemuri Gazette*, 25 Nov 1899.

MITCHELL, GEORGE (1877-1939) was born in Baldutha, and joined the firm of Andrew Lee, Dunedin, which he later represented there. He became a member of the Baldutha Mounted Rifles in 1898, and served with the 1st New Zealand Contingent in South Africa (1899-1902). As a major in the Southland Regiment he took part in the war of 1914-18, in Gallipoli and France (D.S.O.; Serbian Order of Karageorge, 4th d.).

Returning to New Zealand, Mitchell settled in Wellington, and was M.P. for Wellington South (1919-22); a member of the Wellington City Council (1923-25, 1927-31), a member and some time chairman of the harbour board (1921-29), a member of the Wellington College board of governors and the Free Ambulance Board. He was president of the Returned Soldiers' Association and an executive member of the War Relief Association. At the time of his death (on 16 Mar 1939) Mitchell was secretary of the Winter Show association.

Studholme; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 18 Mar 1939; *N.Z.P.D.*, 30 Jun 1939.

MITCHELL, ROBERT, represented Waikouaiti in the Otago Provincial Council (1867-69) and in Parliament (1868-69). He left New Zealand in 1870 for the sake of his health.

MITCHELL, WILLIAM MURRAY (?-1851) held a captain's commission in the 84th Regiment,

## MITCHELSON

with which he served in India. He came to New Zealand on furlough in 1848 in search of suitable land, and travelled overland from Auckland to Wellington with H. W. Petre (q.v.). After visiting England in 1849, he returned to New Zealand and, with E. Dashwood, explored for a suitable stock route between Wairau and Port Cooper (1850). Travelling by the Waihopai valley, they reached the Plains in May; John Tinline and Impey using the Awatere route. Mitchell returned to India to sell his commission, intending to settle on his property at Mount Grey, but died at Madras on 25 Jun 1851.

Adand; C. A. Macdonald; Godley, *Letters*; *N.Z. Spectator*, 7 Jan 1852; *The Press*, 14 Feb 1925.

MITCHELSON, SIR EDWIN (1846-1934) was born at Auckland, his parents having arrived at Raipara in the *Hannah Watson*. Educated at St Matthew's and Paterson's schools, he served his time as a carpenter, and at the age of 23 joined the staff of J. M. Dargaville at Wairoa. He rose to be manager of the company, and when certain of its activities were sold to the Sash and Door Co. he took over the rest and established the firm of E. Mitchelson and Co. at Dargaville. There he carried on a flourishing timber and kauri gum business till 1922, when he retired, leaving the business mainly to the men in his employ.

Mitchelson began public life as a member of the Hobson county council soon after its creation in 1876, and in 1881 he was elected to represent Marsden in Parliament. He silt for Marsden till 1887, and for Eden from that year till 1896, when he lost his seat in contesting the triple electorate of Auckland. Mitchelson was a supporter of Sir Harry Atkinson and held office in his government as Minister of Public Works in 1883-84 and again in 1884. When the party came into power again in 1887 he was Minister of Public Works and Native Affairs, and in 1889 also Postmaster-general and Commissioner of Customs.

When his defeat in 1896 furnished him with leisure Mitchelson rendered valuable service in local affairs. In 1903 he became chairman of the Remuera road board and mayor of the City of Auckland, holding the former office for three years and the latter for two. He was chairman of the harbour board (1905-09), a

## TE MOANANUI

city sinking fund commissioner, a member of the University College Council (1903-05); a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank and the Veterans' Home; and for some time president of the Auckland Institute and Museum. In 1920 Mitchelson was created a K.C.M.G., and in the same year he was called to the Legislative Council, in which he served till his death (on 11 Apr 1934).

As a sportsman Mitchelson became a member of the Auckland Racing Club in 1883, and he was president for 30 years till his retirement in 1932. He was one of the syndicate of eight which founded the first stud farm (under the style of the Glen Orchard Stud Co., afterwards the New Zealand Stud and Pedigree Stock Co.), with the object of breeding horses fit to race in Australia. One of his first horses was Vampire. Later the syndicate owned such horses as Whakawai, Tranter, Formo, Escutcheon, Fabulous and Corunna. Mitchelson was passionately fond of flowers, and had much to do with the beautification of the racecourse at Ellerslie, where his influence is commemorated by a bronze bust by Bertram Mackennal.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1934; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *N.z. Herald*, 12 Apr 1934; *N.Z. Graphic*, 10 Sep 1892 (p).

TE MOANANUI, TAREHA, a celebrated chief of the Ngati-Kahungunu, was a son of Te One One and grandson of Te Katino te Rangi of Ngati-Tuwharetoa. Oneone's slave wife was Hamene, a woman of Warahoe, who was captured in the fight of Kohikete (c. 1822). Tareha was well connected in Hawkes Bay and Wairoa. As a youth he was one of the chiefs captured by Waikato, Ngati-Raukawa and their allies at Pakake, where he arrived as the pa fell. Hope Blake says he was a Hercules, graceful and dignified. His pa was Te Mota Iwi. He sold the site of Napier on 11 Apr 1855. Tareha and Karaitiana daimed a block of land on which Hapuku and his brother Puhera resided. When the dispute became critical Hapuku commenced to erect a pa. He was then attacked and defeated (on 18 Aug 1857) at Pakiaka, near Clive. This secured Tareha's hold on the Heretaunga lands, though there was further fighting on 14 Oct and 3 and 9 Dec. Tareha sided with the King movement in 1858. In Oct 1868 he kept Donald McLean apprised

## MOAT

of the movements of the Hauhau force under Rangihiroa, and then hastened with his men to take part in the investment of Omarunui. He took the oath of allegiance in that year after the passing of the colonial courtmartial act, and later in the year led a contingent in pursuit of Te Kooti. In Dec he was at the fight at Makaretu, but in consequence of a dispute with Ropata he withdrew with about 500 of his followers. He took part in the expedition to Puketapu, which was countermanded.

Tareha was elected M.H.R. for Eastern Maori in 1868 (defeating Karaitiana Takamoana), and sat till 1870.

His son KURUPO TAREHA, born in 1871, was educated at the Mission School and Te Aute College. He was a sergeant-major of the N.Z. Coronation Contingent (1897) and amateur golf champion of New Zealand in 1903.

*App. H.R.*, 1858, 1874, C, p. 383; Lambert; Cowan.

MOAT, WILLIAM POLLOCK (1827-95) was born at Dunmurry, in county Antrim, Ireland, the son of a linen bleacher. Educated at the Royal Academical Institution in Belfast he was articled to a leading solicitor (1844) and admitted to practise in the Irish courts (1849). After two years' practice in Belfast, he came to Auckland in the *Lord William Bentinck* (1851), but was immediately attracted to the Victorian goldfields, and remained there engaged in mining till 1861.

Coming to New Zealand he took up a farm, but left at once for Queensland, and having returned to Victoria came back to New Zealand finally in 1868. Moat took up land at Mahurangi heads, where he farmed to 1890. He was chairman of the Eastern and Lower Mahurangi highway boards; a member of the first board of education from 1878 (of which he was deputy-chairman 1880-82 and chairman 1883-84); chairman of the education reserves commissioners (1880-83), a member of the Grammar School board and the land board (1876-83). He was M.P.C. for Warkworth (1873-75) and M.H.R. for Rodney (1884-90). His death occurred on 24 Mar 1895. Moat was a prominent freemason (E.C.).

*Parltry record; Auckland p.e. Proc.; N.Z. Herald*, 25, 27 Mar 1895. Portrait: Parliament House.

## MOETARA

MOEHANGA, a young Ngapuhi warrior of good family, lived at Patana, north of Whangarei. He attracted the attention of Dr Savage (q.v.) on his visit to Bay of Islands in the whaler *Ferret* in 1805, and accompanied him to England, by way of Cape Horn and St Helena (where he first saw European civilisation). Moehanga was well received in England, where he spent a few weeks under Savage's protection, and was presented to Lord Fitzwilliam, president of the Council. As the first New Zealander to visit the country, he attracted much attention and received many gifts of tools, with instruction in their use. He returned to New Zealand under the care of Captain Philip Skelton, of the *Ferret*.

Nicholas saw Moehanga in 1815 and Marsden met him in 1819, when he had been punished and banished by his chief for stealing an axe from a ship. P. Dillon, who considered him a chief, took him from Bay of Islands in 1827 to New Hebrides and back.

Savage, *Some Account of New Zealand*, 1807; S. P. Smith; Dillon; Nicholas; Marsden, *L. and I.*

MOETARA MOTU TONGAPORUTU (?-1864) was a powerful chief of the Ngati-Korokoro hapu of Ngapuhi, who lived at Pakanae, near the mouth of the Hokianga harbour. He was a son of Te Aitu and a brother of Moetara Rangatira. A courageous war chief, he was one of the leaders of his tribe on the Amiowhenua expedition (1819-20). Anxious from the earliest years of the century to encourage European traders to visit Hokianga (which was shunned on account of its dangerous bar), Moetara actively promoted the traffic in spars and showed every hospitality to European artisans who happened to land in Hokianga. He adopted several of those who remained from the *Rosanna* (1827).

Moetara and Rangatira were unable to protect the survivors of the schooner *Enterprise* (3 May 1828), but when the *Fortitude* (Captain Clendon) went ashore at the Whirinaki river (1833) they intervened to protect the interests of the shipwrecked people. With about 300 men they marched to the scene, being joined on the way by Tamati Waka Nene (q.v.). Fortifying themselves in Captain Young's station at One Tree Point, they recovered the papers after sharp fighting with

## MOLESWORTH

the plunderers, who belonged to the Hikutu tribe. Twenty-five chiefs of standing were killed in this affair. The friendly and strong action of the brothers, for which Moetara received a sword and the thanks of the Governor of Tasmania, overcame the objection of traders to visit Hokianga. Before 1840 the chiefs had a considerable number under their protection. Moetara was highly thought of by captains, and made several voyages round the coast with them. Though unfortunately addicted to drink, he co-operated in Macdonnell's plan to prohibit it (1835). He was reluctant to become a Christian, but requested that a missionary be stationed in his district, preferably at Pakanae. Eventually a mission was established about two miles from Pakanae, and he was baptised there. Moetara joined with Nene, Patuone and the other chiefs in the petition for British protection against outrages and foreign aggression. When the chiefs assembled to select a New Zealand flag he was asked to make the choice, and when the ensign was hoisted and saluted at Bay of Islands Moetara made a dignified speech.

MOETARA RANGATIRA was also a prominent war chief. He was present when his people were defeated by Te Rowa at Waima (1810), took part in the Amiowhenua expedition, and was one of the Ngapuhi leaders at Te Ika-aranganui (1825). After taking the captured Ngati-Whatua chiefs with him to Hokianga he liberated them. Both brothers signed the Treaty of Waitangi on 13 Feb 1840. Moetara died about Sep 1864 and Rangatira on 1 Nov 1880. The latter was the last of the chiefs who signed the Treaty. He was a Roman Catholic.

S. P. Smith; C. O. Davis; Earle; Marsden, *L. and I.*; Ramsden; Buick, *Waitangi*; Carleton; Webster; Gideon Smales in *N.Z. Herald*, 26 May 1894.

MOLESWORTH, FRANCIS ALEXANDER (1818-46), was the second son of Sir Arscott Molesworth, 7th baronet, and brother of Sir William Molesworth. Having taken an interest in the New Zealand Company, he came to Port Nicholson in the *Oriental* (1840) and took up land at the Hutt, where he erected a fine homestead and a Hourmill, for which he had brought the machinery. Pictures of his farm appear in Brees's portfolio.

Molesworth was a member of the provisional

## MONCKTON

committee in 1840. A director of the cattle company formed in 1840, he established a cattle farm at Miramar. He imported blood horses from Australia and rode them successfully at early race meetings. As a horticulturist he won many prizes. Molesworth was in business with E. B. Hopper and H. W. Petre until the death of Hopper in Sep 1840 led to the dissolution of the partnership. He erected houses on his town sections and afterwards lived there. In 1842 he presided at the meetings of land claimants, and later in the year he was elected an alderman of the borough. Having suffered injury in felling a tree, he returned to England, where he died on 4 Aug 1846. He gave evidence before the committee of Parliament in 1844. Pencarrow was named after Sir William Molesworth's seat in Cornwall.

G.B.O.P., 1845{556; *eye!*. N.z., i; N.Z.C. reports; Burke, *Peerage*; E. J. Wakefield, *Adventure*; Ward.

MOLLISON, ALEXANDER (1823-1900) was born at Laurencekirk, Kincardineshire, and was in business in Montrose. In 1856 he came to Lyttelton by the *Egmont*, proceeded to Otago by the *Julia Ann* and was employed in his brother's store and that of Harris and Young until 1858, when he started in business for himself. He sold out in 1861 to go to the goldfields, where he opened a store and then settled on a farm at Janefield, East Taieri, and later at Waiholia Park. He represented Waiholia in the Provincial Council (1863-75), and was two years on the executive (1866-68). For six years he had the contract for carting goods arriving in Dunedin by railway and then, with his brother James, he founded the firm of Mollisons, Duthie and Co. (drapers and clothiers). He was a member of the first town board and fire board and was some years on the Roslyn borough council. He married (1853) a daughter of Robert Forsyth (Laurencekirk). Mollison died on 30 Jan 1900.

*Otago p.e. Proc.*; *eye!*. N.Z., iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 31 Jan 1900.

MONCKTON, CHARLES ARTHUR WHITMORE (1872-1936) was the son of Dr F. A. Monckton (q.v.). He was educated at Wanganui College, and in 1895 went to Cooktown, Queensland, in the hope of obtaining employment in the British New Guinea native service.

## MONCKTON

Being unsuccessful at the time, he spent some years prospecting for gold and pearl fishing; returned to New Zealand and studied navigation, and again went to New Guinea as a goldminer. He was appointed to the native service, and for thirty years he carried out the duties of resident magistrate with success, gaining an exceptional knowledge of the native tribes in the interior. For eight years he was engaged in the pursuit of murderers and raiding parties in the Samari district and in governing a portion of north-eastern New Guinea which had hitherto been unadministered. In 1903 he was entrusted with the northern division, which also he reduced to order. In 1906, in face of native opposition, he made an ascent of Mount Albert Edward (13,320 ft). In order to obtain information about gold discoveries he made a dangerous exploration of the Wasia river. He also traversed the territory from Kaiser Wilhelm Land to the gulf of Papua.

Monckton was at different times gold warden, constabulary officer and member of the executive and Legislative Council. On his death (1 Mar 1936) *The Times* described him as 'one who possessed in no small degree the audacity and enterprise of the pioneers who have made the Empire.' Monckton was elected a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society and of the Zoological Society and a member of the Royal Central Asian Society. In the great war he served in India. He wrote *Some Experiences of a New Guinea Resident Magistrate* (1920); *Last Days in New Guinea* (1922) and *New Guinea Recollections* (1934).

Monckton, *op. cit.* and *Polyn. Jour.* v, 184; *The Times*, 2 Mar 1936.

MONCKTON, FRANCIS ALEXANDER (1835-1910) was born at Maidstone, Kent, his father being a solicitor and town clerk. He was educated at Corpus Christi Hall, Maidstone, and London Hospital (M.R.C.S. 1855). He at once went on service in the Crimea war, first in a frigate, afterwards in the flagship of the Baltic Squadron, in a gunboat and eventually in the *Hastings*, in which he took part in the bombardment of Sveaborg.

After two years' war service Monckton sailed as surgeon in the *Agra* for Otago. On landing he rode through to Invercargill, where he decided to practise his profession. For five years

## MONK

he practised in Riverton, where he was the first hospital doctor. There he married (1863) Sarah Annie, widow of Thomas Newton. In 1864 he found it advisable to move again to Invercargill, where he became resident surgeon of the hospital. He was later coroner on the retirement of his partner (S. Hodgkinson, q.v.). He practised again in Riverton for some years and left in 1879. He was at Ross, Westland (1881-83) and afterwards at Komara, Reefton and Nelson, finally settling in Feilding in 1886. While in Southland Monckton was for two years a member of the Provincial Council, representing Longwood (1867-69), and was twice a member of the superintendent's executive. In 1874 he leased the Auckland islands to establish a depot for supplying whalers and sealers with stores and equipment. He purchased the schooner *Mabel Jane* and made several extended voyages to the Aucklands, but the venture was a costly failure.

On settling in Feilding he took a great interest in public matters, and was elected mayor in 1889 (on the casting vote of the returning officer). He died on 25 Mar 1910. Monckton was a skilful surgeon who wrote many professional papers. He invented an accident bedstead which was awarded a prize at the Wellington Exhibition (1885). (See C. A. W. MONCKTON.)

Fulton, p. 62-75 (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Feilding Star*, 26 Mar 1910.

MONK, RICHARD (1833-1912) was born in Lancashire and came to New Zealand with his father, who settled at Hokianga before 1840. In 1849 with his father he went to the gold-diggings in California and from there to Australia, returning to New Zealand in 1853. He was a carpenter by trade and started the business of Monk and Morgan in Auckland, which developed into the sash and door factory. He was an 'expert in the designing and erection of sawmills. From 1881-87 he was associated with the Mercury Bay Timber Co.

Monk had a seat on the Auckland education board and the Waitemata county council, and in 1881 contested the Parnell seat in Parliament as an opponent of Grey. He was elected for Waitemata in 1886, and sat for that constituency till 1893. His re-election in that year being declared void, he regained the seat in

## MONRAD

1896 and held it till 1902, when he retired. Monk was a competent Maori linguist, and an eloquent public speaker. He died on 2 May 1912.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1912; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 3 May 1912; *Auckland Star*, 27 Aug 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

MONRAD, DITLEV GOTHARD (1811-87) was born at Copenhagen, Denmark, and brought up by his uncle, a merchant of Prosestoe. Showing unusual promise, he was assisted by the clergy and other citizens to prosecute his studies, and he took his degree with distinction. He read the Old Testament in the original, translated the *Arabian Nights* into Danish, and devoted much attention to philosophy. His fellow students and friends at this time included Hall (afterwards' Prime Minister), Count Knuth, Barfod and the historian Allen.

On the death of King Frederick VI (839) Monrad attended a public meeting to ask the new king for a constitution, and thenceforward was recognised as a leader in progressive politics. Though he wrote with moderation, he did not escape conflict with the law. In 1840 he was one of the editors of the *Faeredlandet*. He travelled widely in Europe and urged the liberalising of education in his own country. In 1843 he became editor of the free press organ *Dansk Folkeblad*, and three years later, through the influence of Knuth, he was given the living of Vesternsley, in Laaland. At the end of 1846 he was elected as the fourth member of the Estates for the city of Copenhagen. On the accession of Frederick VII (1848) the Liberal cause was in the ascendant, and Monrad became a member of the Government, as Minister for Church and Schools. In the following year he took the lead in drafting the new fundamental law. He was made Bishop of Laaland and Falster and elected ainembei of the Rigsdag for the fourth (Maribo) district, which he represented until 1864. He was also elected to the Rigsraad (or Assembly) for Denmark proper and Schleswig.

Unfortunately the dispute with Prussia over the duchies came to a head. Hall resigned: and Monrad reformed the ministry (Dec 1863); but the outbreak of hostilities and the loss of the duchies compelled him to resign (Jun 1864).

## MONRO

His unpopularity was such that he deemed it wise to leave the country. With his wife and family he came to New Zealand, and after spending a few weeks in Nelson and Wanganui bought land at Karere, six miles south of Palmerston North. The war on the West Coast assumed such an alarming aspect in 1868 that Monrad felt it imprudent to remain longer in so isolated a situation, the settlers lower down the Manawatu having withdrawn to Foxton. Hearing that Titokowaru was again advancing southward, he decided to hasten his return to Denmark. His books, plate and other valuables were hastily buried in the ground, and in Jan 1869 Monrad sailed with his family for Europe.

In recognition of the hospitality New Zealand had afforded him, he presented a fine collection of etchings to the Government (now housed in the Turnbull Library). Monrad died on 28 Mar 1887.

Taylor, *Past and Present*, *N.Z. Gaz.*, 16 Jan 1869; *Independent*, 19 Jan 1869; *The Dominion*, 4, 10 Sep 1926.

MONRO, SIR DAVID (1813-77) was born in Edinburgh, the son of Dr Alexander Monro, president of the Royal Society of Physicians and professor of anatomy and surgery at the university. His great grandfather was founder of the medical school, at which three generations held the chair of anatomy. Monro proceeded afterwards to the medical schools at Paris, Berlin and Vienna.

Having bought land from the New Zealand Company in London, he arrived in Melbourne as surgeon in the ship *Tasmania* in 1841 and early in 1842 came to Nelson. He followed pastoral pursuits for some years, and in 1844 accompanied Tuckett on his expedition to explore Otago for a site for the Presbyterian colony. Monro's description of this journey appeared in the *Nelson Examiner* in July 1844 and as an appendix to Hocken's *History of Otago*. With Stafford and Domett, Monro took a leading part in political controversy in the forties, and strongly resisted the attempt to load the Nelson settlers with the debts of the New Zealand Company. He was a magistrate from 1842. In 1849 he was appointed as one of the members of the Legislative Council of New Munster. When first nominated, he ex-

MONRO

pressed his regret to Grey that the upper chamber was a nominative body instead of being elective, and reminded the Governor that he himself had expressed his opinion to the same effect. Monro resigned from the Council in 1850 in view of a despatch from the Secretary of State, which suggested that nominee membership was incompatible with independence.

When the constitution was brought into force in 1853 Monro was elected to represent Waimea West in the Nelson Provincial Council, and at the same time as a representative of Waimea in Parliament. Sitting in the Council till 1857 for Waimea West, from 1857-61 for Nelson, and from 1861-64 for Amuri, he remained throughout a private member. He twice contested the superintendency against Robinson. The claims of general politics absorbed too much of his attention to permit him to take a prominent part in the provincial sphere. He sat in Parliament for Waimea (1853-55 and 1858-60; for Picton 1861, and for Cheviot 1866-70). Elected for Motueka in 1871, he was unseated on petition but then won the Waikouaiti seat, which he held 1872-73.

In 1861 Monro was elected to succeed Sir Charles Clifford as Speaker of the House of Representatives, a position which he held until 1870. Knighted in 1866, he retired from the speakership in 1870, and from Parliament in 1873. His unconventional ruling in 1862, whereby he gave his casting vote against the government in office, was responsible for the resignation of the Fox ministry and the accession of Domett to office. Monro died on 15 Feb 1877.

A nephew, ALEXANDER BINNING MONRO (1838-1918) was the son of Alexander Binning Monro, of Auchinbowie, Stirling. He came to New Zealand in the forties and settled in Marlborough. He represented Upper Wairau in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1869-70). He died on 24 Nov 1918. His brother, GEORGE HOME BINNING MONRO (1840-85) settled at Valleyfield, Marlborough, and represented Awatere in the Provincial Council (1864-65). He died on 25 Jun 1885.

*N.Z.P.D.; Cycl. N.Z., i, v (pp); Burke's Landed Gentry; Saunders; Arnold; Wigram; Hocken, Otago; J. A. Thomson; Nelson Evening Mail, 15 Feb 1877; Examiner (Nelson), 26 Oct, 9 Nov 1850. Portrait; Speakers' gallery, Parliament House.*

MONTGOMERY

MONTGOMERY, WILLIAM (1821-1914) came of an old Scotch family which settled in northern Ireland about 1620. He was born in London, the son of Josias Montgomery, who four years later was killed in the hunting field. He was then brought up at Boltmaconnel, near Belfast, and attended the Royal Academical Institution, where an uncle, Dr Henry Montgomery, an eminent Unitarian divine, was English master.

Montgomery had an adventurous disposition and was apprenticed to the sea at the age of 13 at the wage of £4 a year. He showed marked ability, became third mate, and studied navigation and astronomy. When he was only seventeen, the captain being habitually drunk and the first mate ignorant of navigation, he navigated the vessel from the Mediterranean; to London. The owners made him a captain. After running this ship for some years he bought it, and later had a new vessel built.

Montgomery at one time was on the point of joining a band of young men who were going to Chile; but after reading Dunmore Lang's *Australia Felix* he changed his mind. Landing in Melbourne in 1851, he found the gold fever raging in New South Wales, and Port Philip crowded with ships deserted by their crews. He bought an acre of land at the corner of Swanson and Bourke streets; but as diggers constantly pitched their tents on it and refused to be ejected, he sold it and bought land in the country. He was one of a party of four who found gold some miles up the Yarra river. He afterwards visited Ballarat, Forest Creek, Friar's Creek and other fields, and acquired sufficient money to purchase a station on the Darling Downs. Here he worked hard for some years until he was ruined by a severe drought.

Deciding to seek a more kindly climate, he crossed to New Zealand in 1860 and settled in Christchurch. He went into business as a timber merchant, prospered moderately, and devoted some of his ripe experience to the affairs of the community. He first appeared in public life in 1864, as a member of the Heathcote road board. For several years he served on these boards, some time as chairman. This led naturally to his election, in Jul 1866, as member of the Provincial Council for Heathcote. Before the end of the year he was a member of the

MONTGOMERY

executive, and in 1867 he was for a short time deputy-superintendent. In Mar 1868 he was again in the executive as provincial treasurer, an office which he held until May 1869. When the Council was dissolved early in 1870, he retired, but in Sep 1873 he was again returned for Heathcote, which he continued to represent until the abolition. He was in the executive from Jan 1874 to Apr 1875, most of the time as president.

While Montgomery was in the Council it abolished school fees and set up school districts with committees elected by the householders. The education ordinance of 1870 provided for non-sectarian education as the considered policy of the Superintendent and the executive. At the last moment of the election campaign, early in 1874, the denominationalists persuaded Stafford, who had recently come to live in the district, to allow himself to be nominated as a candidate. Though he had been Superintendent of Nelson he had never been a member of a provincial council; but he felt strongly on this subject and agreed to stand in the hope of having the ordinance amended. At a meeting in the Colombo road school (at which Montgomery and Sir Cracroft Wilson also spoke) Stafford, supported by Sir David Monro, made one of the best speeches of his career. The provincial government nevertheless triumphed. Montgomery polled 483 votes, Fisher 315, Wilson 230, Stafford 163.

A fortnight later Montgomery was returned as member for Akaroa in the House of Representatives (defeating Pilliet by 186 votes to 76). In Parliament his clear thinking and obvious unselfishness soon gained him the respect of both sides. A Liberal by conviction, he was, in the words of Saunders, 'the most consistent, the most unselfish, clear-headed, and clean-handed member of the party then supporting Sir George Grey.' Grey offered him the position of Colonial Treasurer in 1877; but he refused to accept, as Grey could not give a definite assurance that the Canterbury land fund would not be absorbed in the Colonial revenue. Nevertheless he supported Grey; and on his visit to Christchurch moved a vote of unbounded confidence. In 1881 he was returned unopposed for Akaroa. Ballance having been defeated, Montgomery was elected leader of the Liberal party, and was looked upon as a future

MONTGOMERY

premier. He 'sought nothing for himself. Always too ready to efface himself,' said a biographer when he died, 'and to give others the honour that the work might be done. History will never record the country's incalculable debt to this true patriot and simple Christian gentleman.'

In 1884 he once more gave evidence of his utter unselfishness. Vogel had submitted the names of a new cabinet, including Montgomery as Minister for Education and Colonial Secretary. They duly took office, but within a fortnight were defeated through the discontent of the Auckland members with the preponderance of South Islanders in the Cabinet. To meet the exigency, Vogel accepted the self-sacrifice of Montgomery, and returned to power with a due representation of Auckland. 'Such self-sacrifice and self-abnegation will never be forgotten by me,' remarked Stout in the House. At the elections of 1884 (when he defeated Anson for Akaroa) 15 members of the new Parliament had declared themselves in favour of his leadership. Montgomery cheerfully remained a private member throughout the Parliament, and retired at the end of 1887 in order to pay a visit to England.

Besides his service on the road board he was a member of the Canterbury board of education (1866-75) and chairman from 1867. He was associated with Tancred, Rolleston, Haliens and W. C. Walker in the administration of the Canterbury system. Later, on the introduction of the national system, Montgomery was a member of the education board (1876-85) and for some time chairman. He was a governor of Canterbury College (1873-1903) and for 10 years chairman. During his chairmanship many buildings were erected for the College, and the museum, the Boys' High School, the School of Art and the Public Library. He strongly opposed the Bible in schools. 'The Bible is one of the grandest of books to study,' he said. 'It contains the history of the human race in its various phases. It contains the greatest consolation for men, whether in health or in sickness. But let it not be introduced to destroy a system of education which is a credit to the colony.'

In 1892 the Liberal Government appointed Montgomery to the Legislative Council. When he resigned in 1907 he was granted the title

of 'honourable' for life. He was frequently consulted by both Ballance and Seddon, and was for two years (1893-95) a member of the executive without portfolio. 'An orderly and methodical rather than a forceful speaker, he rarely if ever indulged in harsh language even under strong provocation: remarks Saunders. Having supported manhood suffrage, and even women's suffrage, as long ago as 1879, he voted with the Liberal party on all such questions.

Montgomery died on 21 Dec 1914. His son WILLIAM HUGH MONTGOMERY, was M.H.R. for Ellesmere 1893-99.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; N.z.P.D.*, 25 Jun 1915; Saunders; Reeves; Drummond; *N.z. Times*, 17 Oct 1892; *Lyttelton Times*, 22 Dec 1914; *The Press*, 1 Mar 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

MONTROSE, CHARLES OTTO (1840-1907) was born in Kent and served for some years in the Royal Navy, being present at Sebastopol. He then spent nine years in the army, rising to the rank of regimental-sergeant major of the 40th Regiment, with which he came to New Zealand in 1860. He was at Mahoetahi and other engagements, and in 1869 retired from the army and engaged in journalism. He was sub-editor of the *Auckland Star*, and editor and part proprietor of the *Auckland Observer*. He founded a newspaper at Cambridge and was the author of some of the letterpress of *Picturesque New Zealand* (1886). Montrose wrote much of the history of New Zealand for serial publication in the *New Zealand Herald* in 1893, and spent the last years of his life as a parliamentary correspondent. He died on 9 Aug 1907.

*Evening Post* and *N.Z. Times*, 10 Jul-Aug 1907.

MOORE, FREDERICK GEORGE (1815-92), the son of Captain William Moore, R.N., arrived in Wellington in the *Bengal Merchant* (1840), having purchased land from the Company in London. Unable to gain possession of his land, he bought the brigantine *Jewess*, 130 tons, floated her off the Petone beach, and traded with some success on the coast until she was wrecked at Paekakariki (Apr 1841). In 1841 he piloted Captain Arthur Wakefield's ships into Nelson. Moore visited England in charge of New Zealand exhibits for the 1851 Exhibition. He wrote in the papers advocating a steamer service with New Zealand, and pub-

lished a pamphlet on New Zealand flax. In 1852 he married Caroline, daughter of Robert Phelps, barrister (mayor of Tewkesbury). For some time he was in business as a merchant in Melbourne, and on returning to New Zealand was interested in mining companies and in the West Wanganui Coal Co. He died on 14 Nov 1892.

¶IS. in Turnbull Library; *Evening-Post*, 14 and 15 Nov 1892.

MOORE, GEORGE (1805-77) came to New Zealand in the *Martha Ridgway* (1841) and started in business in Wellington as a general merchant. As a lieutenant in the militia he took part in the Maori war, including the operations in the Hutt valley (1845-46). In Dec 1848 Moore was nominated by Grey to a seat in the Legislative Council of New Munster. When the new constitution was inaugurated he was elected to the Wellington Provincial Council for Wellington City, which he represented (1853-54). He married (1868) Elizabeth Mary, daughter of Davis Canning, of St Andrews, Wiltshire. Moore was associated with many charitable movements in the city, and endowed scholarships at Wellington College. He died on 6 Oct 1877.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; Leckie; *N.z. Spectator*, 30 Jul 1853; *Evening Post*, 8 Oct 1877.

MOORE, GEORGE HENRY (1812-1905) was born at Billown, Isle of Man, his father, Thomas Moore, J.P., being a member of the House of Keys and captain of the parish. As a young man he emigrated to Tasmania and worked for William Kermode, of Mona Vale, whose daughter Annie he married in 1840. In the early fifties Kermode sent Moore, to Canterbury to buy land in partnership. In 1854 Moore bought the freehold of part of Teviotdale, along the Omihiri river. This property was steadily added to during the next few decades until Glenmark, extending from the Hurunui to the Waipara, was the most valuable station in Canterbury, aggregating 81,000 acres and carrying over 90,000 sheep. In 1856 the partners had bought 56,000 acres of freehold. They imported their cattle mainly from Norfolk Island, and in 1854 they shored 11,000 sheep. In 1864 Moore bought 10,000 acres of the Motunau station and in the early seventies he bought out his partner. His property steadily

increased in value and in 1882 ranked as the most important in the so-called 'Domesday Book.' Having lost his sight, Moore commenced about 1900 to sell his property, but when he died (7 Jul 1905) he bequeathed a valuable residue to his daughter (Mrs Townsend). Moore was one of the few landowners in Canterbury who sowed tussock seed on burned manuka land to shelter the finer grasses. The most important finds of moa bones in New Zealand were discovered at Glenmark. The first three skeletons were unearthed by Moore himself in 1857. In 1866 workmen digging a drain dislodged bones in amazing quantities. Von Haast identified 14 species and estimated that the bones represented a holocaust of 1,000 birds.

*Col. Gent.*; Acland; Buick, *The Mystery of the Moa*.

MOORE, JOSEPH SCHRODER, was a son of the Rev Francis Moore and a brother of the Rev Lorenzo Moore. He studied for the bar, was admitted in England and practised in Wellington in partnership with A. de B. Brandon (q.v.). In 1866 he was appointed acting puisne judge, a position he held for two years, Presiding at the criminal sessions in Auckland (Jun 1868), Moore ordered the whipping of persons found guilty of garotting.

*Southern Cross*, 15 Nov 1867; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Feb 1880, 4 Nov 1881.

MOORE, LORENZO (1808-94) at the age of 18 joined the service of the East India Company as cornet in the 5th Madras Light Cavalry. In 1830 he was promoted lieutenant, and afterwards he became quartermaster and interpreter to the regiment. (Brevet-captain 1841; captain 1842; retired 1846; major 1854.) Meanwhile he entered St Catherine's Hall, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. He was ordained priest in 1852 and appointed to Tunbridge Wells. In 1855 he became incumbent of Rochester, Derbyshire; in 1857 curate of Drypool, Hull; and in 1859 he sailed for Auckland. Hearing of native troubles in New Zealand, he remained in Melbourne and accepted temporary positions at St Paul's, Geelong, and at Brighton. In 1862 he came to Christchurch as incumbent of Papanui. After retiring (1874) he took up his residence at Port Chalmers (where he occasionally preached at Knox Church), and finally lived in Nelson. There

his wife died (7 Mar 1894), and he himself on 13 Aug. (See SIR JOHN GORST.)

*N.Z. Clergy List*, 1889; *N.z. Times*, 27 Jul 1876; *The Colonist*, 14 Aug 1894.

MOORE, RICHARD (1849-1936) was born in London and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Steadfast* (1851). Educated at Broughton's, and Merton's schools in Christchurch and Rangiora, he entered into business in Kaiapoi at the age of 21 as a coachbuilder and wheelwright, adding saddlery later. In the days of horse transport he constructed the first large wool wagons used in north Canterbury. Disposing of this business, Moore acquired an interest in the Kaiapoi Produce Co., which he afterwards took over from his partners (R. and H. Evans) and eventually sold to the Kaiapoi Produce and Shipping Co. He was a large shareholder in the Kaiapoi Woollen Co. and promoted two building societies in the town.

In public life Moore was a member of the school committee in the early eighties (chairman 14 years); a member of the borough council for eight years and mayor 1884-87; chairman of the Waimakiriri harbour board and a member of the Lyttelton harbour board (chairman 1928-30). He was a keen sportsman, a member of the boating club and president of the rifle club. Moore contested the Kaiapoi seat against E. Richardson in 1887 and was elected in 1890 (defeating Hoban). He was defeated by Buddo in 1893; turned the tables in 1896, but was again unseated by Buddo in 1899. In 1914 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until 1935. He died on 12 Sep 1936. He married a daughter of R. Woodford.

*N.Z.P.D., pass.*, 1890-1935; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *The Press*, 14 Sep 1936.

MOORE, WILLIAM (1847-1933) was born at Garran, county Derry, Ireland, educated locally, and in 1868 arrived at Port Chalmers by the *E. P. Bouverie*. For four years he worked on the land; in 1872 he opened a store near Clarksville bridge with H. Marryatt, and in 1884 he bought Peter Cunningham's store at Milton: Moore was a member of the Milton borough council and for 14 years mayor; vice-president of the Bruce Building society, chairman of the domain board, one of the founders (and chairman from 1897) of the Bruce Woollen Co., and

## MOORE

a member of the Tokomairiro District High School committee (25 years) and chairman (1886-88, 1892 and 1898-1908). In 1879 he married Jane, daughter of Edward Martin (q.v.). Retiring from business in 1919, Moore died on 6 Jul 1933.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; Scholefield, *Tokomairiro DR.s.* (p); *Bruce Herald*, 6 Jul 1933 (p).

MOORE, WILLIAM, was headmaster of the first school at Renwicktown, Marlborough. He frequently wrote verse for the Marlborough papers, and in 1867 published a volume entitled *The Farewell and Dthel' Poems*. Many were in the Scottish dialect.

*Marlborough Express*, 19 Jan 1939.

MOORHOUSE, WILLIAM SEFTON (1825-81) was born at Knottingley House, Yorkshire, the eldest son of William Moorhouse, a magistrate of the county. After receiving a good education he wished to go to sea, and was eventually apprenticed and made several long voyages. Then Sir Samuel Martin, M.P. for Pontefract (and afterwards Baron of the Exchequer), who had been assisted by the elder Moorhouse in his election to Parliament, advised putting him into the legal profession. He accordingly entered the chambers of prominent counsel in London, and in 1849 was called to the bar at the Middle Temple. For the next year or two he practised on the northern circuit, contemporaneously with Mr Justice Johnston (q.v.).

Several members of the Moorhouse family decided to emigrate to New Zealand, and William, Ben and Tom sailed in the *Comwall*, landing at Lyttelton on 10 Dec 1851. They purchased land and intended to farm in partnership. The prospect in Canterbury not being attractive, Moorhouse sailed for Wellington, and on 26 Jan 1852 took the oath in the Supreme Court and was admitted to the New Zealand bar and as an attorney. Instead of settling down at once, he and Ben spent some months in riding over a great part of the North Island, including Taranaki and Wairarapa, inspecting land. William appears to have visited Victoria, while Ben gained experience in Wairarapa. About May 1852 they returned to Lyttelton, which Moorhouse then considered the best-built town in New Zealand and likely soon to be the wealthiest. The legal profession, how-

## MOORHOUSE

ever, was overcrowded, and Moorhouse did not find it easy to finance the brothers in their farm at Sumner. He had a keen eye to trade; appears to have made profits by disposing of merchandise shipped by his father; and paid one or two visits to Australia. He was enrolled as an elector (Jul 1853) for the town of Lyttelton, as a barrister-at-law and a householder and for the Christchurch Country district.

At the first superintendency election Moorhouse nominated Colonel James Campbell as the advocate of cheap land. The magistrates at Akaroa refused to allow Campbell to be enrolled, and the returning officer warned the electors that even if he were at the head of the poll, he could not be declared Superintendent. FitzGerald was elected. Moorhouse stood unsuccessfully for the Akaroa seat in the Provincial Council, but the constituency elected him I.I.H.R., the first member elected to the Parliament of New Zealand. In Nov he went to Wellington, expecting that Parliament would be convened. Finding this unlikely, he remained there until the arrival of the ship *Northfleet* and was married by the Rev Robert Cole on 15 Dec to Jane Anne Collins (1824-1901), who was born at Maidstone, Kent. Meanwhile his brothers left for the Australian diggings, and Moorhouse, feeling his responsibility for them, persuaded his bride to go with him to Victoria. The brothers were engaged on the construction of watenorks at Yan Yean. The four lived in tents some distance away from the works, and when the contract was finished they returned together to New Zealand.

Landing in Auckland on 27 Jul 1854, Moorhouse was at once sworn in and took his part in the constitutional discussions. He dropped out of Parliament in 1855, and next year acted as magistrate at Lyttelton. About this time he bought the brig *Gratitude*, 154 tons, which made several voyages to Australia in his ownership (1855-56). Twice he was on board as owner and supercargo, taking produce for the goldfields and returning with horses for Canterbury. One cargo of horses was a disastrous failure owing to adverse weather. Only two ponies survived, and they were so emaciated that they had to be carried ashore. The *Gratitude* was sold.

In Mar 1853, Moorhouse was elected to the Provincial Council for Akaroa, which he rep-

## MOORHOUSE

resented until 1857. When FitzGerald's term as Superintendent expired (1857) there were only two candidates, Moorhouse and Joseph Brittan. Moorhouse was the inferior speaker, but he was a successful canvasser and won by 727 votes to 352. His policy as Superintendent was a vigorous development of resources and communications. Addressing his Council, he said: 'The want of a more perfect means of communication between our principal seaport and the plains has long been a source of great embarrassment in the commercial operations of the province. Having the advantage of a safe and commodious harbour, perfectly adapted to a very large commerce, it has become a matter of the very highest importance that you should at once consider and determine the best method of securing the safe and expeditious transit of our marketable productions to the place of export.' With Bray and Bowen to advise him, Moorhouse elaborated the railway and tunnel scheme. He was opposed by the 'wealth and intelligence of the province.' Even FitzGerald (now agent of the province in England) was actively hostile. Moorhouse sent Bray to England to exhibit the plan, and was encouraged by the approval of Robert Stephenson. Eventually a contract was concluded with an English firm to make both railway and tunnel. They duly entered upon the work; but soon threw up the contract. Moorhouse obtained the authority of the Council to find a contractor, and left in Jan 1861 for Australia with samples of rock taken by Haast from the tunnel workings. In May he came back with a contract from the firm of Richardson and Holmes to make the tunnel. In the midst of the struggle he was re-elected Superintendent without opposition (Jul 1861). In the same month he turned the first sod of the railway; the first stone of the tunnel was laid during 1862; and in 1863 the line was opened from Christchurch to Ferrymead.

Moorhouse represented Akaroa in Parliament (1858-60). He was defeated by A. E. White on the eve of leaving for Australia. At the provincial dissolution in 1862 he was re-elected Superintendent. In Jul he was again in Parliament as member for Heathcote, and he was associated with FitzGerald in framing resolutions with a view to the admission of Maori members to Parliament. By this time there was

## MOORHOUSE

a good deal of resentment in Canterbury against his strong personal rule and arbitrary expenditure; and early in 1863 he resigned the superintendency, and supported the candidature of Bealey, who was elected in his place. Moorhouse entered the Council as member for Kaiapoi, and was in Wilkin's executive for a few weeks. In Oct he resigned from both Parliament and Provincial Council, but in Feb 1864 he returned to the Council as member for Heathcote, which he represented until 1866. On resigning the superintendency Moorhouse returned to legal practice (in partnership with Macfarlane). He was comparatively a poor man, and often embarrassed financially. When Bealey's term expired (1866) he found himself on a new wave of popularity, and it seemed meet that he should take office to complete the great work he had conceived. In Feb he was elected to represent Mount Herbert in Parliament. Westland chose him also. He accepted the latter and fought to secure its greater representation.

Acceding to a requisition to resume the superintendency, he was vigorously opposed by J. D. Lance and W. T. L. Travers. For four months the contest was waged; and it ended in a victory for him. (Moorhouse 1,479; Lance 742; Travers 176.) The triumphant opening of the tunnel (May 1867) was followed by a grave depression. When, at the end of the year, trains ran through to Lyttelton, Moorhouse had the satisfaction of declaring his great work finished. Once more he resigned the superintendency (Apr 1868) and returned to his practice, and a few months later he retired from Parliament. Moorhouse had no personal ambition in politics. In Aug 1866, when Stafford was defeated on his amendment by 47 to 14, he was invited to form a ministry. Instead, he urged Stafford to reconstruct and carry on. He had a faculty for abandoning his opportunities of personal advancement. At the next superintendency election (1870) he unexpectedly came into the lists, 'to extend the policy of Rolleston.' But he was defeated by 1,800 votes to 897, and thus ended his activity in provincial politics. He was elected in 1870 without opposition to represent Christchurch in Parliament, but retired at the dissolution the same year, and announced his withdrawal from public life. The Provincial Council thereupon

## MOORHOUSE

voted him £2,500 in recognition of his services. With characteristic rectitude he paid the cheque over in satisfaction of debts which would never have been incurred had he devoted his great talents to his own affairs.

Moorhouse went to Wellington to practise law, and was associated for a while with Stafford and later with Edwards. At the end of 1870 he was appointed Secretary for Lands and land claims commissioner, and later, as Registrar-general of Lands, he had to inaugurate the new system of registration. He resigned both in Sep 1872, to contest the Egmont seat against Atkinson. Though not unknown in Taranaki, he was no match for Atkinson in his own province. Strong provincialist as he had been, he admitted that the provinces 'were now an expensive and helpless nuisance.' At the end of 1874 he contested the mayoralty of Wellington with the remark: 'I have never raised my voice above a whisper upon public affairs in this town. I have never obtruded my views upon this community.' He defeated Dransfield by over 400 votes. His speech in accepting nomination was a well-considered statement of his theory of municipal government. He declined the honorarium of £200. In Jun 1875, on the retirement of A. P. Seymour, member for Wairau, Moorhouse made another attempt to get back into Parliament. He had a strong opponent (Joseph Ward), who defeated him by 202 to 177. At the general election a few months later Moorhouse was again sent to Parliament for a Christchurch seat (with Edward Richardson and E. C. J. Stevens). In 1879 he won Ashley, for which he sat until his death (on 15 Sep 1881).

Moorhouse's failure to follow up the solid promise of his early career is not easily comprehensible without knowing of the disease which later sapped his spirit. A man of athletic strength, generous ideas, unbounded courage, and genial bonhomie, Moorhouse was always a popular figure. Lenient to the faults of others, he never said anything that might hurt. His speeches were original in thought and expression, and full of pithy utterances. Without being either graceful or fluent, he was a powerful speaker by reason of his sincerity. To the limited extent that a busy life permitted he was a reader, fond of Thackeray and of the human understanding of Dickens. He even

## MORAN

wrote some verse himself, with which he entertained his friends. He once remarked to Alfred Cox that Sir John Hall had in excess the qualities which he lacked: 'He is all caution; I am all enterprise. Were it possible to amalgamate us the world would look upon two first-class men available for every variety of work: Gisborne said of him: 'Wanting in method, industry, and patience, he had a mind in the depths of which there lay rich though irregular veins of precious ore, but with this exception he took no trouble to work the ore properly or bring it to the pit's mouth.' 'He built houses for other men to live in,' remarks Cox. Samuel Butler, who saw much of Moorhouse in the sixties, says: 'Moorhouse dwells ever in my memory as one of the very finest men whose path I have crossed—one of the very few men who treated me with far greater kindness than I did him. He dwells ever with me as perhaps the greatest man all round that I have ever known: (See W. FERGUSON, T. H. WIGLEY, W. B. RHODES, JOHN STUDHOLME.)

MSS. in Canterbury Museum (tunnel proposals); Civil Service records; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, iii (p); Saunders; Reeves; Rusden; Guthrie Hay; Acland; Andersen; *Cant. O.N.*; Cox; Festing Jones; Woodhouse; *Taranaki Herald*, 21, 28 Sep, 5 Oct 1872; *Lyttelton Times*, 16 Sep 1881, 30 Dec 1885; 12 Dec 1917; *The Press*, 16 Sep 1881, 25 Mar (p); 5 Apr 1930. Portrait: Parliament House.

MORAN, PATRICK (1823-95) was born at Arklow, county Wicklow, Ireland, and to the age of 12 was brought up there under a tutor. In 1836 he entered the day school of the Vincentian Fathers in Ushers Quay, Dublin, and later St Peter's College at Wexford and the College of Castleknock. There he specialised in classics, logic, metaphysics and ethics. He was at Maynooth (1840-47), three years of that time in the Dunboyne establishment, where he devoted himself to philosophy and theology. He was ordained in 1847, and in the following year sent as curate to Booterstown parish. In 1849 he was moved to Haddington road, where he was entrusted with the charge of the Christian Doctrine Society. There he cultivated his taste for catechetical instruction, in which he later distinguished himself. Every Saturday he heard confessions at Donnybrook, and he frequently gave lectures to young men. During a cholera

## MORAN

epidemic he regularly ministered to the incurable in the Dublin hospital.

In 1856 Moran was sent as vicar-apostolic to the Eastern Province of Cape Colony, being consecrated to this office in Carlow Cathedral as Bishop of Dardania in partibus. In South Africa he was keenly interested in education, and he taught regularly in Grahamstown. He also introduced Dominican nuns from Sion Hill. He was associated during most of the time with the Catholic newspaper *The Colonist*. Moran was widely popular amongst the three races of South Africa, the Dutch especially appreciating the broadness of his sympathies. It was there, too, that his friendship with Sir George Grey commenced. Attending the Oecumenical Council at Rome in 1870, he was appointed to be the first bishop of the diocese of Dunedin (Otago and Southland), which had been erected by papal brief of 26 Nov 1869. With a community of the Dominican nuns under Mother Gabriel, Bishop Moran sailed in the *Glendower* for Australia, and reached Port Chalmers by the *Gothenburg* on 18 Feb 1871. He acquired a house for the bishop's residence in Elm Row, and proceeded at once to the enlargement of St Joseph's Church for his cathedral. The foundation stone was laid in 1879, and the Cathedral was dedicated on 14 Feb 1886.

Meanwhile Moran pushed ahead with other church and religious buildings—the Church of the Sacred Heart in North East Valley; St Patrick's in south Dunedin; a home for the Christian Brothers (whom he introduced in 1878); a convent in 1876; some years later the Dominican convent; and in 1879 the Cathedral college at Wakari. This last was under the members of the Society of Jesus, but a few years later the needs of the Society elsewhere caused their withdrawal. Moran at an early date entered upon the fight for education in New Zealand by condemning the existing public school system and demanding Christian education (Apr 1871). That crusade he maintained unabated throughout his life. In 1883 he stood for Parliament for the Peninsula seat 'to protest against the gross injustice of abstracting money out of the pockets of Catholics and spending it entirely upon the education of other people's children.' The election resulted: Larnach 667; Donnelly 182; Moran 138. Moran several times administered other dioceses in New Zea-

## TE MORENGA

land, notably that of Wellington in 1872 and that of Auckland in 1876.

A highly cultured gentleman of a retiring disposition, he was nevertheless an effective public speaker and a ready and incisive debater, and many times measured lances in public controversy, generally on the subject of education. His vigorous and pertinacious battle against what he termed 'godless public education' earned the respect of those opposed to him. Moran skilfully guided his people, and left the new diocese generously endowed with church and school in every grade. He died on 22 May 1895.

*Saturday Advertiser*, 8 Apr 1882; Press Association, 24 Jan 1883; *Otago Daily Times*, 23 May 1895; *N.Z. Tablet*, 31 May 1895 (p), 27 Sep 1889 (p). Portrait: *Canterbury Times*, 6 Jun 1895.

MORELAND, CHRISTOPHER HUDSON (1867-1912) was born in north Ireland, and completed his education at Lincoln College, Oxford, where he graduated (B.A., 1890; M.A., 1894). He was ordained priest in 1896, and was curate of Scurning and vicar of Dunstan, Swainthorpe and Newton FlatInan, Norwich. From 1891 to 1903 he was master at King Edward VI school in Norwich, and from 1904 till his death (on 10 Mar 1912) headmaster of Christ's College, Christchurch. He was a keen alpinist. Moreland married Dr Alice Moorhouse.

*Christ's Coll. List.* (p); *The Press*, 11 Mar 1912.

TE MORENGA (?-1834). This fine chief of Ngapuhi (of the Uri-kapana hapu, Tai-a-mai), ranks as one of the most important figures in Maori history in the nineteenth century. A young man at the turn of the century, his life was largely influenced by an outrage committed upon his people at Bay of Islands by the pirate crew of the schooner *Venus* in 1806. Te Morenga's niece Tawaputa was carried off by the convicts and was found to have been killed and eaten by people of the Ngaiterangi tribe at Tauranga, while his sister met a similar fate at the hands of the Ngati-Porou at East Cape.

Maori custom and a dying father's injunction laid upon Te Morenga the duty of taking vengeance; but he had to wait many years before he was in a position to do so. He fought with distinction at the battle of Moremonui (1807). As a Bay of Islands chief he made the

TE MORENGA

acquaintance of Samuel Marsden on his first visit to New Zealand (1815); and their relations, extending over almost two decades, were marked by mutual regard, confidence, and understanding. Marsden found Te Morenga a man of 'very sound and deep reflection,' troubled by the state of his people, and looking with friendly anxiety towards the advent of some governing authority which could sternly ban tribal wars. During many months spent together Marsden acquired from Te Morenga a faithful insight into the history, psychology and lore of the Maori; and sage advice in his dealings with them. His journals are crowded with material gleaned from this source. Marsden took Te Morenga with him in the *Active* in 1815 visiting southern tribes and afterwards to Port Jackson, where he became familiar with the arts and institutions of the pakeha.

Te Morenga was impressed with the advantages of Christian civilisation, but he was insistent that the missionaries should teach the chiefs and their children and not those of the lower classes, who could not in any case improve their position. On his repeated request Marsden sent Shepherd across in 1820 to live among Te Morenga's people and teach them agriculture. When he himself returned to New Zealand he was unable to withdraw from the tribal wars. In Jan 1818 he at length felt strong enough to avenge the murder of his sister and niece, and he sailed with 400 warriors for East Cape. On the way he landed at the island of Motiti, where, finding Te Warn absent, he killed his uncle Te Tawhio and many others. He then landed at Whakatane, and pursued the Ngati-Awa far into the Rangitaiki country until they made a stand at Okahukura pa. The Ngapuhi attack, at first successful, was eventually repulsed with such loss that Te Morenga had to withdraw to the coast. After recuperating he took ample revenge upon the Ngati-Porou at East Cape, bringing two chiefs and many other prisoners back to Bay of Islands, where he arrived early in 1819. His relations with Hongi were never cordial and there was open fighting between their people in Dec 1819 over the potato crop at Kerikeri. But with so many tribal insults unavenged this friction was pushed aside for the time and Te Morenga took his part in Hongi's wars in all parts of the north. Early in 1820 he led a new expedi-

TE MORENGA

tion of 600 men against Te Warn, who, unrepentant, added fresh taunts to an insult 14 years old. Next day Te Morenga, having chosen his ground, awaited the first heavy volley of spears, under which one of his chiefs fell. The reply of Te Morenga's 35 muskets laid low 20 of Te Warn's men, including his father, and the rest broke and fled. Te Morenga would not permit his men to follow up the fleeing enemy, but his chiefs insisted that Te Warn had not been punished for his insulting language. Anxious to avoid bloodshed, the Ngapuhi leader sought out Te Warn's women to ascertain whether he was disposed to make peace. The answer being to the contrary, a fresh attack was delivered and Te Warn was severely defeated, leaving 400 dead on the field and losing 260 prisoners. He fled to the bush, where Te Morenga sought him out and received his submission. Te Warn was presented with a musket as utu for the death of his father and peace was made. Te Morenga and his warriors remained for three days on the field eating the bodies of the slain. The taua returned to Bay of Islands on 2 Mar 1820, an armada of 50 canoes laden with spoils and prisoners. A large canoe Te Morenga presented as a peace offering to Hongi (just returned from England).

On his visit in Jun 1820, Marsden found Te Morenga still anxious to see the cessation of tribal wars, and holding definite ideas on the introduction of civilisation. He wanted missionaries who could preach, teach the children to read and write; give medical advice when necessary, and instruct the natives in agriculture. Marsden took him in the *Dromedary* to the Thames district, where Te Morenga assisted him to interpret to southern tribes the truths of Christianity and the advantages of civilisation, exhorting them to abandon the tribal wars which caused so much distress to their women and children. Public reconciliations were effected between Te Morenga and some of his old enemies, and the travellers then returned to Bay of Islands mainly by foot, arriving in Sep. A few months later Te Morenga assaulted the celebrated pa Mau-ina-ina, but retired with loss. He is said to have indulged in eating the bodies of the slain. Returning to the Bay, he found Hongi back from his visit to England, amply supplied with arms and ammunition to pursue his old feuds. With Te Morenga in his

MORGAN

war party he reduced Mau-ina-ina (Nov 1821) and then proceeded against the stronghold of Te Totara (Dec), which was captured by a deceitful peace (in which it is said that Te Morenga participated). In 1823 he assisted Pomare and Titore in their expedition against the Urewera and Ngati-Awa of Bay of Plenty. Further friction occurred with Hongi at the Bay, culminating in fighting in the mission settlement. In spite of this Te Morenga took his part in the Ngapuhi campaign which resulted in the crushing defeat of Ngati-Whatua at Te Ika-Ranga-nui (1825). On this occasion Te Morenga suffered a grave insult through the seduction of his wife by another chief. It was fully avenged in Maori custom by the killing and eating of the woman, but Te Morenga would not partake of the flesh.

Holding aloof as much as he could from the native quarrels of the next few years, and turning his attention to wheatgrowing, Te Morenga nevertheless could not ignore the girls' war at Kororareka in 1830, inasmuch as two of the girls whose treaument caused the trouble were relatives. Te Morenga and Pomare suffered depredations developing into a general fight, which the missionaries did their best to stop. Eventually, through the mediation of Marsden, a settlement was arrived at (14 Mar). Te Morenga seems to have assisted Titore against the Tauranga people again in 1832, but in his later years was keenly interested in fostering European agriculture and the erection of flourmills amongst his own people at Tai-a-mai. True to his lifelong wish to see European authority established in the country, he was one of the 13 chiefs who signed the appeal to King William for protection against the French (Nov 1831). In 1833 he sold land at Pakaraka to Henry Williams, who established a farm on it. Through his intimate relations with Samuel Marsden, the breadth of his knowledge, his 'sound sense and deep reflection,' shrewd judgment and keen solicitude for the welfare of his people. Te Morenga's distinction is outstanding even among his great contemporaries. He died early in 1834.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Marsden. L. and J.; *Church Missionary Register*, 1834, p. 59; Carleton.

MORGAN, JOHN (1810-65). came to Bay of Islands in the *Prince Of Denmark* in 1833 to

MORGAN

join the Church Missionary Society. He accompanied the Revs Henry Williams and A. N. Brown on a visit to Waharoa, and with Mr and Mrs Preece established the mission at Puriri (Thames). In 1835 he settled at Mangapouri with a carpenter's equipment and garden seeds, but at the end of the year he was withdrawn. Morgan was for some years engaged amongst the Ngati-Haua and Arawa tribes on the Waihou, and at Matamata and Rotorua. At the last station he passed through a very anxious time, being driven by tribal wars to refuge with the Rev Thomas Chapman and their wives on Mokoia island.

In 1841 Morgan took over the station at Otawhao, where he built a new mission house and for 20 years carried on a most successful ministration as missionary and instructor to the tribes on the Waipa river. The Ngati-Maniapoto and Ngati-Ruru in particular he instructed in the arts of agriculture and fruitgrowing. In a variety of ways he scattered grass seed on his journeys. The Ngati-Apakura district at Rangiaowhia became a granary of fine wheat, studded with flourmills, and on this account was one of the principal meeting places of the King movement. The large gatherings of 1858-60 required plentiful supplies of food which only this district could furnish. He thus christianised the Waikato in a practical manner.

Morgan attended St John's College, where he was ordained deacon (1849) and priest (1853). In 1863 he handed over his principal school to the resident magistrate (Gorst) and left the district. He was a man of genuine piety and usefulness. During the troubles of the sixties he kept the government closely informed of the plans of the King's party. He died at Mangere on 8 Jun 1865.

Davis; Wily and Maunsell; Sherrin and Wallace (p); typescript letters and journals in Turnbull Library; Gorst; Cowan, *The Old Frontier*; *Te Awamutu Centenary*; *N.z. Herald*, 9 Jun 1865; 4 Aug, 1934.

MORGAN, JOHN (1832-1916) was born at Gillingham, Dorset, and came to New Zealand with his brother William in the *Berkshire* (1850). He took up land at Tataraimaka in Taranaki, but in 1853 moved to Wanganui, where he leased land from the Imlays at Balgownie. In 1861, after visiting Gabriel's Gully.

## MORGAN

he bought Newtownlees, a property of 700 acres near Wiritoa lake, which he worked till 1907. He bred Hampshire Down sheep. A conservative in politics, he represented Wangaehu in the Wellington Provincial Council (1868-75). He was a member of the first Wanganui harbour board, chairman of the Wangaehu road board, and a member of the first Wanganui county council. Morgan was a founder of the Wanganui A. and P. association and the Okoia Dairy Co. He was something of an artist with pen and ink.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.z.; Wanganui Herald*, 2 May 1916.

MORGAN, PERCY GATES (1867-1927) was born in Tasmania, and educated at the state schools there and in New Zealand and at Otago University and School of Mines. While engaged coalmining near Dunedin, he graduated B.A. (1890) and M.A. (1891) and was a junior University scholar. In 1895 he entered into business as a metallurgist; in 1896 he was appointed lecturer at the Thames School of Mines, and in 1897 director of the School at Waihi. He joined the Geological Survey in 1905, and became Director in 1911. He was for a few years also Under-secretary for Mines.

Morgan was president of the Wellington Philosophical society and a governor of the New Zealand Institute; a fellow of the Geological Society and the New Zealand Institute; an original member of the New Zealand Institute of Mining Engineers, and a member of the Board of Science and Art. He married (1900) Mary, daughter of Thomas Gilmour, Waihi. He died on 27 Nov 1927.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *N.z. Herald*, 29 Nov 1927; *The Dominion*, 29 Nov 1927 (p).

MORGAN, WILLIAM (1851-1918) was born in county Kildare, Ireland, and brought up in Galway as a saddler. He came to New Zealand in the *Dunfillan* in 1874. He was for some years in business at Cromwell, Otago, and Roxburgh, where he was on the borough council, and moved to Gisborne in 1883. There he was chairman of the school committee (from 1886) and secretary and treasurer of the Gisborne High School and Technical School board of governors, a member of the Hawkes Bay education board, and president of the chamber of commerce (1900-01). Morgan was called to

## MORLEY

the Legislative Council in 1914. He died on 18 Feb 1918.

*N.z.P.D.*, 9, 10 Apr 1918; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

MORISON, HARRIET RUSSELL, a native of Ireland, came to New Zealand as a child with her parents, who settled in Dunedin. She entered business life, but her sympathies were with the women workers, and when the sweating revelations occurred in the eighties, she ardently adopted their cause. She was elected vice-president of the New Zealand tailoresses' union in 1889. From 1890 to 1896, as secretary of the union, she improved conditions in Auckland as well as Dunedin. Miss Morison was for 14 years official visitor to Seacliff mental hospital, in 1906 she was appointed New Zealand's first woman inspector of factories, and from 1908 to 1921 she was officer in charge of the women's employment bureau of the Labour department, at Auckland. She died at New Lynn on 19 Aug 1925.

*Otago Daily Times*, 21 Aug 1925.

MORLEY, WILLIAM (1842-1926) was born at Orston, Nottingham, and at the age of 21 was admitted to the Methodist ministry in England. He began his New Zealand ministry in 1864 at Manukau, and thereafter filled some of the most important pulpits in the Church. He was an outstanding preacher, a notable organiser and a capable ecclesiastical statesman. His literary gifts were exercised as editor of his church paper for several years. In 1887 he published a pamphlet, *The Doctrinal and Ecclesiastical Position Of the Methodist Church* and in 1900 the voluminous *History Of Methodism in New Zealand*. For 21 years he was chairman of various synods. In 1892 he was principal of Wesley Training College at Three Kings. When the position of connexional secretary was created (1893) he was appointed and held the office with distinction until his transfer to Australia (1902). He was president of the New Zealand conference in 1879 and 1884, and of the general conference of Australasia (1894-97). In 1888 he represented New Zealand at the British and Irish Methodist conferences and in 1891 at the Methodist <Ecumenical Conference at Washington. In 1890-91 he was secretary of the Methodist jubilee thanksgiving fund. He was a founder, and for 20 years manag-

## MORRIS

ing treasurer, of the Methodist church building and loan fund, and was an organiser and managing treasurer of the connexional fire insurance department (the first of its kind amongst New Zealand churches).

Morley was transferred to Victoria in 1902 as managing treasurer of the Australasian Methodist supernumerary fund, a position he held until being superannuated (1922). He was president of the council of Queen's College, University of Melbourne, for some years and a member of the board of missions. He received the honorary D.D. from a Virginia university in 1898. Morley married first Hannah Watson (d. 1878), daughter of the Rev G. Buttle. He died at Melbourne on 24 May 1926.

M.A.R.P.

MORRIS, ARTHUR WILLIAM (1825-1910) was born at Irvine, Ayrshire, brought up there and engaged in business. In 1856 he bought the ship *Dunedin*, which he freighted with merchandise for New Zealand and established himself in business in Dunedin. On the formation of the Otago and Southland Investment Co. Morris was appointed manager and he held that position for many years. From 1879 he was a director of the Union Steamship Co. He was a member of First Church, Dunedin, for 40 years, and was an elder both there and at Anderson's Bay. He represented Peninsula in the Otago Provincial Council (1863-67). He died on 12 May 1910.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Otago Daily Times*, 23 May 1910.

MORRIS, GEORGE BENTHAM (1840-1903) was born in Tasmania, received his early education there, and in 1857 accepted a commission in the Royal Marines (Portsmouth division). For four years he served in H.M.S. *Caesar* in the Mediterranean, North America and the West Indies, being promoted lieutenant in 1859. In 1862 he returned home, and in 1864 was appointed to the *Irresistible* coastguard ship. In 1866 he returned to the Portsmouth division, of which he was appointed adjutant (Sep 1867). In Feb 1870 he retired on half pay to settle in New Zealand. He arrived in the ship *Countess Of Kintore* and took up land at Otahuhu, in Waikato and Tauranga. In 1873 Morris was elected to the Auckland Provincial Council for Tauranga, which he repre-

## MORROW

sented until the" abolition. In 1876 he was elected M.H.R. for East Coast, which constituency he represented until 1879 and Tauranga 1881-95. In the latter year, he was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat until his death. In the short Stout-Vogel ministry (Aug 1884) Morris was Commissioner of Customs and Minister of Marine. He died on 16 Apr 1903.

*N.z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably 30 Jun 1903); Adjutant-general Royal Marines (information); *Cycl. N.z.*, i and ii; *N.z. Herald*, 18 Apr 1903. Portrait: Parliament House.

MORRISON, ARTHUR (1846-1901) was born at Darvel, Ayrshire, and educated in the parish school to the age of nine, after which he attended night schools and taught himself. He was for some time a farm worker and later was employed in the hide and skin department of Ramsay and Co., Glasgow. In 1874 he came to Otago, and from 1875 was employed as salesman by the Walton Park Coal Co. He was prominent in the U.A.O.D., the I.O.G.T., and the freemasons. In 1887 he went to Melbourne as delegate to the Druids' conference and he was first district grand president when the U.A.O.D. received autonomy in Otago. He was three years on the Caversham borough council and was chairman of the school committee.

Morrison took some part in the Labour movement of 1890 and in 1893 was elected M.H.R. for Caversham in the Labour interest (defeating Barron by 1,335 votes to 1,199). He was a cautious reasoner, a moderately good speaker and retained an independent attitude in Parliament though consistently supporting Seddon. Morrison died on 21 Nov 1901.

*N.z.P.D.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*; 23, 26 Nov 1901. Portrait: Parliament House.

MORROW, HUGH (1806-71) was born in Ireland and lived at Corraboola House, county Longford. He joined the British Ordnance department, and after a long period of service abroad came to New Zealand in 1861 and settled at Auckland. He was a captain in the militia in 1864. He did not take much interest in public life, except on one occasion in 1867, when he stood for the Northern Division seat in the Auckland Provincial Council and defeated A. O'Neill (q.v.). His sole object in doing so, he said, was to vote against the system of

## MORSE

responsible government. He seems to have attended the Council only twice in two sessions, and ceased to be a member in 1868. Morrow died on 22 Apr 1871.

His son **ARTHUR MORROW** (1842-1937) was educated for the Royal Marines, but came to New Zealand with his father and served as a volunteer through the Waikato war. He retired as a colonel and four times won the Auckland district champion belt for rifle shooting. He was on the district staff for 20 years.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Southern Cross*, 24 Jul 1871; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1932.

**MORSE, NATHANIEL GEORGE** (1822-82) was born at Exeter. He came to Nelson in the second ship (1842), and was one of the earliest settlers in the Motueka district. He afterwards took up Wantwood, a run of 20,000 acres, and was the first settler to establish himself on the Marlborough side of the mountains. In 1846 he fixed his sheep station at Tophouse, at the head of the Wairau valley. Fox in his report on Nelson (1848) describes him as well fitted for pioneer life. He had taken his sheep to the new country even before Sir George Grey arrived to effect the purchase from the natives. Morse eventually returned to the Waimea and remained there till 1873, when he removed to Wanganui. There he died on 16 Nov 1882. He took a great interest in breeding sheep and thoroughbred horses, and won many races with horses he bred, including Ladybird, Revoke, Atlanta and Day Dawn. He was a member of the Wangaeahu highway board.

Morse was a member of the Legislative Council from 1866 to 1869, when he resigned. He was a keen volunteer, being for some time senior officer in command of Nelson district (from 1866), and he won the champion belt of New Zealand for shooting.

*Parltry Record; Cycl. N.z.*, v; C. A. Macdonald; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 17, 20 Nov 1882.

**MORTON, HENRY BRUCE** (1846-1929) was the son of Henry Morton, was educated in Guernsey, and spent a few years in business in London before coming to New Zealand with the Alberdand settlers in the *Tyburnia* (1863). His father did not take up his land but became publisher of the *Southern Cross*, and Morton in 1868 started business as a merchant in Custom street, Auckland. In a few years H. B. Morton

## MOSLEY

and Co. had their business activities all over the Auckland province.

Morton was keenly interested in New Zealand history and ethnology, and was a member of the Auckland Institute from 1867. He published in 1872 an account of an overland journey to the Rotorua district, and in 1925 *Recollections of Early New Zealand*. In 1890 he was elected to the One Tree Hill road board, of which he was chairman 1890-1903 and 1914-16. As chairman of the domain board and of the Dilworth trust board he took a great interest in tree planting at One Tree Hill, the Dilworth orchard at Papatoetoe, and on his own farm at Tauranga. Morton was a member of the committee of the Auckland chamber of commerce and the Sailors Home and of the council of the ladies' benevolent society; a member of the Anglican diocesan trust board and New Zealand mission trust board; a governor of King's College and a director of the Colonial Sugar Refining Co. He was associated also with St Stephen's school for Maori boys and the Queen Victoria school for Maori girls. Morton took a prominent part as mediator in the waterside dispute in 1890, receiving a testimonial from the unions in recognition of his impartial advocacy. He died on 3 Aug 1929.

Brett, *Albertlanders*; Morton, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 29 Aug, 9 Sep 1890; 5 Aug 1929.

**MOSLEY, WILLIAM ALFRED** (1817-1889), one of the earliest permanent settlers at the mouth of the Molyneux River in Otago, was born at Radford, the son of a Nottingham silk-lace manufacturer. He received his early education in Nottingham, but owing to the death of his father had to start early to earn a living. He married (1842) Mary, daughter of the Rev John Housley, a Wesleyan minister, and shortly afterwards they went to the United States.

Returning to England, Mosley with his wife and daughters sailed for Otago in the *John Wickliffe* (Nov 1847). He at once took up a section on the beach at Kaka Point, Port Molyneux, but resided first at Halfway Bush in a house of slabs and saplings thatched with rough grass. The section had to be dug over with the spade. In 1852 Mosley chartered the schooner *Endeavour* (Captain Sinclair) to take his possessions to the Molyneux. The weather was so rough that the captain stood off the shore for

## MOSLEY

28 days. Mosley was then taken off by Maori boatmen and the *Endeavour* returned to Dunedin. Mosley returned on foot to Dunedin, and sledged his family to their new home. Heavy rain compelled him to halt and erect his tent on the slopes of a hill overlooking Tokomairiro, which he named Mount Misery. For the first year at the Molyneux they were largely dependent on the hospitality of the Maori, who provided them with pigeons, kakas, and potatoes. Mosley planted half an acre with wheat at Kaka Point, preparing the ground with spade and hoe. He engaged some natives to help bring the *Endeavour* from Dunedin. When they brought her into Willsher Bay, the first to swim out to her was the chieftainess Makaredie, who years earlier had saved the life of Willsher by throwing her mat over him.

Though the year 1852-53 was spent at Kaka Point, Mosley had already decided to make his permanent home on Inch Clutha, where he took up one 50-acre block of land at once, and others from time to time. He engaged a Maori to help him to clear a site and build the new house, to which they paddled up the river in a canoe. The house was built with totara slabs split with an axe and thatched with rushes. The first patch of wheat (of the Golden Drop variety) yielded 60 bushels to the acre. It threshed easily with the flail, and brought 12s per bushel. Mosley ground what he needed in a steel mill. Next year the ground was turned over with a single-furrow plough obtained from James Macandrew and drawn by two bullocks. In the early years Mosley made a practice of breaking in bullocks to harness, and he had a ready market for them at £75 to £95 per pair. The first cattle he purchased from John Jones, and the first horses were acquired in 1862.

Mosley took an early part in public life, but his remoteness from settlement when he went to the Molyneux prevented him from continuing. Before going south, he helped promote the counter-petition objecting to the prayer of the Presbyterian settlers that one-tenth of the lands should be set aside as an endowment for the Presbyterian church. The failure of the original petition left the petitioners in ill-humour, but Mosley lived to see the unpopularity of the 'Litde Enemy' die out, and one of their number become Superintendent. In 1867 he was elected to represent Matau in the

## MOSS

Provincial Council, in which he sat for three years. He was chairman in later years of the Inch Clutha river board, and was instrumental in inaugurating the first drainage scheme on the island.

Mosley's first wife died at Inch Clutha (1865). He married again (1868) Adelaide (d. 1927), daughter of George Jones, solicitor, of Croydon, Surrey. He died at Ravensbourne on 23 Oct 1889.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Oct 1889, 10 Oct 1930 (p).

**MOSS, EDWARD GEORGE BRITTON** (1856-1916) was born at St Helena, the second son of F. J. Moss (q.v.). He came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Zealandia* (1859), and was educated at the Otago Boys' High School (1865-68) and at the Church of England Grammar School at Parnell. He was articled to Andrew Beveridge (q.v.) and admitted to the bar in 1877.

Moss practised successively for a few years at Greymouth, Reefton and Tauranga (1880), and in 1895 settled at Paeroa. Four years later he contested the Ohinemuri seat in Parliament against Jackson Palmer without success, but at the following election he turned the tables. He sat until 1905, when he was defeated by H. Poland (q.v.). He was a successful athlete in his younger days, and took an interest in volunteering. Later he made a study of the natural history of New Zealand and gathered a comprehensive collection of New Zealand shells. He was a Maori scholar, and wrote much on the customs and traditions of the race. Moss published in 1888 *Native Lands and their Incidents* and in 1908 *Beautiful Shells of New Zealand*. He practised later in Auckland, where he died on 9 Mar 1916.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 10 May 1916; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Otago H.s. Reg.*; Moss, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 11 Mar 1916. Portrait: Parliament House.

**MOSS, FREDERICK JOSEPH** (1829-1904) was born at St Helena and educated at the head school of the East India Company (then holding jurisdiction over the island). Going as a youth to the office of a relative in Port Elizabeth (South Africa), he did burgher duty in the Kaffir war and visited Natal, Kaffraria and other districts. In 1859 he decided to emigrate

## MOSS

to New Zealand and the family arrived at Lyttelton in the *Zealandia* late in the year.

Moss entered into business there, but on the discovery of gold in Otago (1861) he opened a branch at Dunedin and soon removed there. In 1863 he was first elected to the Provincial Council, in which he sat in 1863-67 for City of Dunedin. He had an exceptionally active career in provincial politics, being a member of the executive on three occasions (1863-64; Apr-Dec 1865; 1866). The first call to take office (as provincial treasurer) was due to the embarrassed state of the finances owing to sudden expenditure in opening up the goldfields and disapproval of New Zealand loans in London. In 1866 his executive was defeated by Vogel, but he was able to hand over to his successor full plans for the construction of railways, with an ordered programme of borrowing for the work as it progressed.

In 1868 Moss was attracted, with many other New Zealanders, to the cotton plantations on the Rewa river in Fiji. Ill-health prevented him remaining there permanently, and by 1873 he was settled in Auckland as secretary to the board of education. In 1876 he was elected to Parliament for Parnell, which he represented until 1890. He was then appointed British resident at the Cook Islands, which had just come under British protection. There he remained for nine years, establishing a federation of the islands in the group, a customs service and schools. He made the teaching of English a leading feature in the belief that a knowledge of the language is essential if the natives are to be able to take part in their own government. His wide knowledge not only of the Cook Islands, but also of the other groups, was of great value to the governments of New Zealand and Great Britain in extending British rule. Moss travelled widely. In 1886 while in the brigantine *Bustel*, he witnessed the rescue of portion of the crew of the Swedish barque *Diana* on Starbuck island. Being succeeded by Gudgeon in 1899, Moss returned to New Zealand. He published in 1889 a school history of New Zealand and in 1889 *Through Atolls and Islands*, as well as a number of pamphlets on federation and current political topics. Moss died on 8 Jul 1904.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *App. H.R.*, 1891-1900; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Moss, *Atolls* (p); Hocken, *Bibliog.*; *N.Z.*

## MOULTRAY

*Herald*, 5 Jul 1888, 2 Mar 1891, 8 Jul 1904. Portrait: Parliament House.

MOTUROA, ROPIHA (?1790-1874), a chief of the Matehou hapu of Ngati-Awa, came from Taranaki to Port Nicholson about 1835 and was one of the oldest chiefs living there when the settlers arrived (1840). A whaler named Wilkinson, who was put ashore from an American ship about 1820, married a daughter of Moturoa, who was afterwards taken to England. Wilkinson received certain lands within the Port Nicholson purchase. Moturoa fought on the side of the Government against Rangihaeata (1845) and Mamaku (1846). He died on 11 Dec 1874.

*N.Z. Times*, 14 Dec 1874.

MOUAT, JOHN (1830-1902) was born at Dist, in the Scottish Hebrides, and was educated in the parish school and at Lerwick High School. In 1852 he came to Victoria, where he engaged in goldmining. Crossing to Otago in 1861, he joined the gold rush to Gabriel's Gully. In 1864 he was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for the Goldfields. For a time he was in the executive, and in 1866, in Vogel's administration, he was provincial secretary and secretary for public works. Mouat was a member of the first mining conference held in Otago (1868). Retiring from the Council in 1871, he took up the study of law, was admitted as a barrister and solicitor in 1872, and practised in Lawrence till 1894, when he moved to Dunedin. In 1889-90 he was secretary of the mining and metallurgical committee of New Zealand. He was on the staff of the *Mining Journal* and wrote also for newspapers. He died on 1 Jul 1902.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; Pyke (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Jul 1902.

MOULTRAY, JAMES DOUGLAS (1831-1911) was born at Edinburgh, and received his first lessons in art from Walter Ferguson at the Edinburgh High School. After continuing his studies at the Royal Institute, he became a picture-restorer and so acquired a good insight into painting. His first picture was hung on the line at the Royal Scottish Academy. He was then assistant to Horatio McCullough until his death, and then commenced to work independently with such success that his paint-

## MOUNTFORT

ings were hung in the art galleries of Edinburgh, Manchester, Dundee, London and Glasgow. He was appointed (with Sir John Reid) to represent Scotland at an art convention. Moultray came to New Zealand in 1883, and resided thereafter mostly in Dunedin, continuing to work almost until his death, which occurred on 3 Mar 1911.

*N.Z. Herald*, 8 May 1886; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Mar 1911.

MOUNTFORT, BENJAMIN WOOLFELD (1824-98) was trained as an architect under Gilbert Scott. He came to Canterbury in one of the first four ships, and spent his whole life there. For many years he practised his profession in partnership with Luck. He took an interest in Christchurch Cathedral, and after the departure of R. Speechley (the representative of Sir Gilbert Scott) he became the Cathedral architect and designed all subsequent work on the edifice. He designed other churches in Canterbury, as well as the cathedrals at Auckland and Napier and British North Borneo, the Canterbury Provincial chambers and the hall of Canterbury College. In his early days in Canterbury (1856-57) he owned a photographic studio in Colombo street, and taught Dr Barker the art. Mountfort was a strong churchman, a member of the diocesan synod and many years a churchwarden at the church of the Good Shepherd. He died on 15 March 1898.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Cant. O.N.*; G. M. McKenzie (p); Wigram; Hight and Candy (p); C. R. H. Taylor, *The Canterbury Provincial Buildings*; *Lyttelton Times*, 17 Mar 1898.

MOWAT, ALEXANDER (1813-75) was born in Caithness-shire, and brought up to the sea. In 1843 he came to Nelson in the *Ralph Bernal* and two years later settled in the Awatere district, purchasing a property of 1,400 acres which he named Altimarloch. In 1851 he married a daughter of George McRae (q.v.). In the following year Mowat took up (with Captain Cross) the Middlehurst run, which they managed until his death on 27 Mar 1875. Mowat represented Awatere in the Marlborough Provincial Council 1863-66. His widow (1830-1903), who was born at Blairich, Sutherlandshire, came to Nelson in the *Mary Ann* (1842).

## MULES

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Marlborough Express*, 8 May 1903.

MULES, CHARLES OLIVER (1837-1927) was the eldest son of the Rev S. H. Mules, and was born at Ilminster, Somerset. Educated at the Grammar School and Cheltenham College, he proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated senior optime in 1860. He was assistant to the Rev W. Tuckwell at Oxford and was for three years mathematical master at New College School, Oxford. He was admitted M.A. there after taking out his degree at Cambridge. Relinquishing his post to take holy orders, Mules was ordained deacon (1864) and priest (1865). His first curacy was at Whorlton, and in 1865 he became curate to the Rev J. C. Ryle, afterwards Bishop of Liverpool. Ill-health called for a change of climate and Mules joined the party of clergy to accompany Bishop Suter to New Zealand in the *Cissy*. After a few weeks at Spring Grove, he was appointed vicar of Brightwater (1868). In 1880 he was collated to the archdeaconry of Waimea and on 24 Feb 1892 he was consecrated Bishop of Nelson. It was a difficult time in the history of the diocese. The various trusts and other funds, never adequate, suffered from the fall in the rate of interest, and in addition to this the subdivision of large estates in the south-eastern portion of the diocese by the Seddon Government threw upon the Church new demands for expansion which could not be ignored. In due time he revived the archdeaconries of Waimea (1896) and Mawhera (1908).

During Mules's episcopate 23 new churches were erected. He was most businesslike in his methods and precise in his documents. In 1903 he established the Nelson diocesan trust board, which in time took over all the local trusts. With the Rev J. R. Dart, he attended the Pan-Anglican Congress in 1908; and three years later Nelson played an important part in the general mission. The following year Mules intimated his desire to retire. Having had to rely for some years on private means to supplement his stipend, he set about the establishment of an endowment for this purpose. He actually retired on 20 Jun 1912, and lived quietly in Nelson until his death (9 Oct 1927). Bishop Mules married (1870) Laura (d. 1927), daughter of Captain Blundell. He was

## MULGAN

many years president of the Suter Art Gallery, the Harmonic Society, the New Zealand Church Society and St Andrew's orphanage.

Jacobs; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Nelson Diocesan Gazette*, Oct 1933; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 10 Oct 1927 (p).

MULGAN, EDWARD KER (1857-1920) was born at Magheralin, county Down, Ireland, the son of the Rev William Edward Mulgan (1817-1902), M.A., Trinity College, Dublin. His father was rector of Donagh when he migrated to New Zealand with his family (1875) in the *Carisbrooke Castle* with the Katikati settlers. He was a member of the Katikati school board in 1876 and of the New Zealand University commission in 1879-80, and for some years vicar of St Peter's, Onehunga.

Edward Ker was educated at Portora College and Armagh Grammar School. On arrival in New Zealand he started farming at Katikati, was in business for a while in Tauranga and edited the *Bay of Plenty Times*. Taking up teaching in 1888, he was in charge of several schools and graduated M.A. at Auckland University College with honours in natural science (1896). In 1898 he was appointed assistant-inspector of schools, and two years later inspector. In 1906 he was transferred to Canterbury, and in 1910 returned to Auckland as chief inspector.

Mulgan exerted a deep and lasting influence on education by putting forward new ideas with force and persistence. He was specially interested in nature study, handwork and technical subjects, and was an enthusiast for kindergarten teaching and one of the founders of the Auckland Kindergarten association. Convinced of the weakness of the old patronage system of appointment of teachers, he advocated national grading and was largely responsible for this change. He also did much by his own example and personality to break down the old idea of the school inspector as a policeman and to transform him into a friend and adviser of the teachers. He devoted himself whole-heartedly to the propagation of his ideals in education. The state of his health obliged him to decline the position of assistant-director of education in 1915, and he remained at his post until his death (on 14 Nov 1920).

Mulgan married Frances Maria, daughter of

## MULLER

the Rev Walter Johnston (also of the Katikati settlement). He published *The New Zealand Nature Study Book* in 1905 and collaborated with his son, Alan Mulgan (1881-) in *The New Zealand Citizen* (published in 1922).

Butchers; Gray; *N.Z. Herald*, 15 Nov 1920.

MULLER, MARY (1820-1902) was born in England, educated and married there. Having lost her husband (Griffiths), she came to New Zealand with her family in the *Pekin*. Arriving in Nelson in Jan 1850, she was teaching until on 5 Dec 1851 she married S. L. Muller (q.v.).

Before leaving England Mrs Muller held strong opinions on the inequality of the law as regards women. In Nelson she became acquainted with Stafford, Domett, Fox, Alfred Saunders and David Monro, and frequently discussed with them the rights women should enjoy in a new country. Her husband holding an official position and rather conservative views in opposition to her own, she refrained from public utterances. She had, however, a valuable ally in Charles Elliott (q.v.), the owner of the *Nelson Examiner*, and was able from time to time to publish anonymously in that paper her ideas on the social order and to maintain correspondence with others interested. In 1869, she published, under the nom de plume 'Femina: a pamphlet addressed to the men of New Zealand, which led to correspondence with John Stuart Mill and with the secretary of the Women's Christian Temperance Union in London. Unable to work openly in the women's cause, Mrs Muller nevertheless exercised much influence. She had the satisfaction of seeing the married women's property act passed. Writing to Mrs K. W. Sheppard on 6 Jun 1900 she said that a notice in the *White Ribbon* (Christchurch) in Dec 1898 was the first disclosure of her activity in the cause of women's rights. She died at Old Amersfoort, Blenheim, in Jul 1902.

Information from Dr F. A. Bett and Miss M. B. Lovell Smith; W. S. Smith (p); Muller, *op. cit.*; *Nelson Examiner, pass.*; *The White Ribbon*, Dec 1898, Aug 1900.

MULLER, STEPHEN LUNN (1814-91) was born at Camberwell, London, of French parentage, and educated at London University (M.R.C.S., Eng.). He practised for 12 years in

## MUNRO

Peckham, and sailed for New Zealand in the *Pekin* as surgeon superintendent, arriving in Nelson in Jan 1850. In 1851, having lost his first wife, he married Mrs Mary Griffiths (see Mary Muller).

Muller practised for eight years in Nelson. In 1855 he was elected to the Nelson Provincial Council for Waimea East, which he represented until 1857, being also secretary for the province during that period. Being appointed resident magistrate at Wairau, he removed to Blenheim, where he was afterwards also collector of customs (1859) and receiver of land revenue. He represented Amuri in the Nelson Provincial Council for most of the year 1857. Muller was of a scientific turn of mind and read many papers on scientific subjects (mainly meteorology) before local associations. He also kept an interesting diary of Marlborough affairs. He took a part in organising the Marlborough Art and Industrial Exhibition several years. Muller retired from his official posts in 1868, and died at Blenheim on 27 Apr 1891.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p), Portrait: *Canterbury Times*, 17 Sep 1896.

MUNRO, JOHN (?-1879) was born in Scotland. In 1818 he emigrated to Pictou, Nova Scotia, in the *Perseverance*, and for a few years kept a school at Sandy Cove, near Caribou. In 1825, in partnership with Feris, he started in business at the Bar, loading several large vessels each year with timber and Canadian produce for Glasgow, Aberdeen and Greenock. They also built their own ships for the fishing industry, and owned two grist mills.

Munro was a member of the Legislative Assembly of Nova Scotia for the county of Victoria (1851-56). His defeat by his old opponent in May 1856 clinched his decision to come to New Zealand, following the Scots emigration to Adelaide and New Zealand. He sailed in his own ship, the *Gertrude*, 250 tons (Jun 1856). At the Cape they negotiated with Governor Grey for land on which to settle should the New Zealand voyage prove fruitless. Reaching Auckland in Dec, Munro interviewed Governor Gore Browne, but could not come to terms for land for a special settlement, and was referred to the Superintendent (Williamson). The provincial government was unable to act

## MURISON

owing to the strength of the Opposition, but on Williamson's advice Munro contested a vacant seat in the Provincial Council, and was elected as the representative of Northern Division (Nov 1857). He sat for that constituency 1857-61, and in 1860 was elected to Parliament for Marsden, which he represented for six years. He again entered the Provincial Council for that seat (1866-68), and after an absence of three years returned to Parliament for Marsden (1869-70, 1871-75). Munro's election to the Council gave Williamson the required support; and in Parliament he promoted the Auckland immigration act (No. 21 of 1861), which secured for the immigrants from Nova Scotia all the advantages of the special settlement at Waipu. Munro was not a fluent speaker, but he was a forceful writer and had sound views on public affairs. He died on 20 Apr 1879. He married Miss Jessie Wilson.

*App. H.R.*, 1871, H7; Provincial Secretary, Nova Scotia; N. R. McKenzie; Macdonald (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

MUNRO, JOHN (1839-1910) was born at Glasgow and came to New Zealand in the *Lady Egidia* (1862). After a short stay in Dunedin he settled at Invercargill as a bookseller and stationer, and in 1864 took out an auctioneer's license. In 1866 he moved to Westport and established himself as a merchant. He was a member of the Westport borough council and was mayor of Westport for five terms (1876-77, 1879-81); a member of the Buller county council, president of the chamber of commerce and chairman of the school committee. He represented Buller in Parliament (1881-84) defeating Eugene O'Connor; but was defeated by O'Connor in 1884 and 1887. Munro was the first secretary of the Westport hospital board.

Barclay; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Westport News*, 28 Dec 1926.

MURISON, WILLIAM DICK (1837-77) was born at Alyth, Forfarshire, and got his education at the High School in Edinburgh. He came to Otago in 1856 in the *Strathmore*, with Dr Hulme, and after spending two years in and about Dunedin took up a run in the Maniatoto with his brother James. They spent some months opening up the easiest way to approach the property through the Shag val-

## MURISON

ley. In the spring of 1858 they were encamped at Swinburn, on the eastside of the Maniawhaki plain, and established their homestead at the foot of Rough Ridge. The brothers went through many hardships, and the financial depression forced them to give up their property.

William had a penchant for public life. In 1863 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Manuherikia, which he represented for 18 months. In 1864 he was a member of the executive for a short time. When he resigned in 1865 there was a suspicion that he had done so to permit F. D. Bell to be elected. The electors resented the supposed arrangement by proposing Macpherson, who defeated Bell at the poll. In 1866 Murison was elected M.H.R. for Wai-kouaiti; he resigned in 1868. He was interested in public affairs, and his right place was obviously in Dunedin. He was one of the small band who in 1865 guaranteed the fund for the Dunedin Exhibition. He strongly supported the establishment of Otago University. He was one of the promoters also of the Otago benevolent institution, and was a founder and first treasurer of the Otago Institute. As an intelligent observer of nature he was a valuable member of this learned society. In 1877 he read a paper on the wild dog of New Zealand, and in 1870 a paper on moa remains in Otago. He was constantly referred to as to his observations during his early days on the land. For a while he was president of the Acclimatisation Society, which he did much to develop.

From the time of its formation Murison was a director of the *Otago Daily Times* and *Witness Co.*, of which he was a large shareholder. During the absence of Vogel from the province he several times had control of the *Times*, and he succeeded Barton as its editor, becoming in 1871 permanent editor of both papers. In this post he showed great ability and natural capacity, giving to the papers a large, liberal, and cultured intelligence, a most unbending integrity, and a most earnest desire to do the right always, and the right alone. Calm and temperate in the expression of his opinions, almost judicial in the extreme impartiality with which he expressed himself, he conveyed even to those who at times differed widely from him the impression of having formed his judgment after full and calm consideration. His gentleness of manner, sound judgment,

## MURRAY

urbanity, and kindness endeared him to all. He was a prominent figure in the cricket field, but had to abandon the game about 1866 owing to ill-health. Murison died on 28 Dec 1877.

*Otago p.e. Proc.; Trans. N.Z. Inst.; O.D.T. Diamond Jubilee; Evening Star*, 29 Dec 1877; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Jan 1875; 18 Jul 1930 (p).

MURIWAI, or TUKU TAKE, was the head chief of the Popoto hapu of Ngapuhi, having his fighting pa at Karewa ki Runga, on the Hokianga river. He always opposed Hongi till 1826, when they fought together at Kaipara, defeating the Ngati-Whatua, who had treacherously attacked the Ngapuhi after being feasted by them. Muriwai was killed at Te Wera's attack on Rangihoua, Mahia, in 1826.

S. P. Smith; Marsden, *L. and J.*; J. Marmon in *N.Z. Herald*, Oct-Dec 1880.

MURPHY, MICHAEL, was practising as a lawyer at Kororareka in the early part of 1840. He was gazetted a justice of the peace and requested by Governor Hobson (in Jul 1840) to proceed with C. B. Robinson (q.v.) in H.M.S. *Britomart* to Banks Peninsula to hold sittings of the court at various points in evidence of the existence of British sovereignty. He was appointed police magistrate at Port Nicholson in Jul 1841, and sub-sheriff for that district. These positions he held until the following year, when he left the colony.

*N.z. Gaz.*, Jul-Sep 1841, 10 Jan 1842; Buick, *Akaroa*; E. J. Wakefield; Scholefield, *Hobson*; Ward.

MURRAY, JOHN (1835-1915) was born near Dumbarton, Scotland. His paternal grandfather was a small farmer at Bonar Bridge, Sutherlandshire. His father, Donald Murray, had dyeworks in Glasgow until the financial panic of 1848, after which he managed the Rutherglen branch of the City of Glasgow Bank. John Murray assisted in this branch, and in 1855 became a clerk in the head office. In 1863 he married Frances Stewart, of Dunoon, Argyllshire, and in the same year sailed for New Zealand in the *Aloe*. He joined the Bank of New Zealand. A year later he resigned to accept the position of manager of the Bank of Otago at Invercargill. This he relinquished in Apr 1866 to rejoin the Bank of New Zealand as inspector. He played an im-

## MURRAY

portant part in its development and became general manager on 24 Oct 1888. A year later he became a director, but retired when the directorate was removed to London, and his association with the bank ceased.

When the banking crisis occurred in 1894 the directors consulted Murray, and with their authority he approached the Government with a disclosure of the critical position of the Bank. Unless assistance was forthcoming, he said, it would have to close its doors. The responsibility of devising a scheme of assistance devolved upon him. Shareholders and directors accepted his advice and Seddon adopted the scheme as the basis of the banking measures of Jun 1894. M. Kennedy (q.v.) says that although Murray was out of the bank at the time the directors and general manager left the whole task to him. When the bank was re-established Murray retired in shattered health and spent the rest of his life in New South Wales. He paid several visits to Great Britain and lived eventually at Bathurst, New South Wales, where he died on 30 Jun 1915. Murray had considerable literary gifts and contributed occasionally to the press. He was a sincere philanthropist and associated himself with social movements in Auckland.

His eldest son, DONALD MURRAY (1865-) invented a multiplex telegraph-printing machine.

Information from William Watson (q.v.), Sir Harold Beauchamp (q.v.) and Donald Murray; *N.z. Times*, 15 Sep 1894; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Jul 1890.

MURRAY, ROBERT (1820-1908) was born on his father's farm near Dornoch, Sutherlandshire, brought up as a carpenter, and followed his trade in Scotland and England. In 1841 he saw the Highland emigrants leaving Brora to join the *Blenheim* for New Zealand. In 1849 he came to Otago in the *Cornwall*. He worked at his trade in Dunedin, Taieri and Tokomairiro until 1855, when he bought a farm at Clarksville the area of which he later increased to 600 acres. There he farmed till 1895, when he sold the farm and resided in Milton.

Murray was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for Tokomairiro in 1867, and sat till 1870. He was a member of the Tokomairiro road board for some years; of the Bruce county

## MURRAY-AYNSLEY

council from 1878; and of the first school committee elected under the education ordinance of 1856. Of this he was chairman in 1874 and 1883. He was an elder of the Presbyterian Church, and was a member of the building committee of the new church. Murray married (1862) Mary Esson, of Aberdeenshire, and after her death Mary Jamieson. He died on 16 Nov 1908.

*Otago p.e. Proc.; eye! N.z.*, iv (p); Alexander Brown; Scholefield, *Tokomairiro Dist. High School*; J. A. Thomson; *Milton Mirror* and *Bruce Herald*, Nov 1908.

MURRAY, WILLIAM ARCHIBALD (1832-1900) was born in Berwick, Scotland, of a family which had occupied sheep farms on lease since 1660. He came to Otago with his parents in the *Agra* (1858), and farmed for some years at Mount Stuart. During the early days of the gold diggings he made considerable profits by selling meat to the miners. In 1871 Murray won the Bruce seat (Murray 122, Cutten 87, Dyer 71, Black 31); and he represented it in Parliament till 1881. He was a strong conservative in politics, and endeavoured in 1880 to enlist the co-operation of Ormond in organising a conservative party. He was a member of the commission on manufactures and industries. Having moved to the North Island and commenced farming at Piako in 1874, Murray was defeated at the general election 1881 by J. Rutherford (q.v.). He later took up a large part of the Opuatia block, which he called Glen Murray. In 1891 he contested the Waikato seat against Lake. Murray was unmarried and died at Auckland on 26 Jun 1900.

*N.z.P.D.*, 1871-81; *Bruce Herald*, 8 Oct 1881; *N.z. Herald*, 17 Jul 1885, 13 Jan 1888, 27 Jun 1900. Portrait: Parliament House.

MURRAY-AYNSLEY, HUGH PERCY (1828-1917) was born in Gloucestershire, a son of John Murray-Aynsley, of little Harle Tower, Northumberland. Educated privately, he spent some time in Trinidad, West Indies, managing a sugar plantation for his cousin, Sir William Miles. In 1858 he came to New Zealand by the *British Queen*, and he was for some years associated with Miles and Co., stock and station agents, until the firm was incorporated. He took up the Mount Hutt run, Canterbury, in

## MURUPAENGA

1862. About 1873 Murray-Aynsley joined the New Zealand Shipping Co., of which he was a director from that date until his death (and chairman for many years). He was a member of the chamber of commerce from 1860 and president 1862-63, and president of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral association (1863-64).

Murray-Aynsley was a member of the provincial executive (1862-63) and was for some years in the Provincial Council representing Lyttelton (1864-69). He was deputy-superintendent for a few weeks in 1869. He was M.H.R. for Lyttelton (1875-79). Other public service was on the harbour board, of which he was chairman, and as chairman of the Christchurch Domain board (1893-97, 1902-06). He married (1859) Elizabeth (d. 1893), daughter of Thomas Campbell (Edinburgh). Murray-Aynsley died on 22 Feb 1917.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Col. Gent.*; Acland; *The Press*, 23 Feb 1917. Portrait: Parliament House.

MURUPAENGA (? 1760-1826), a Ngati-Whatua chief of the Ngati-Rongo hapu, lived on the eastern shores of the Kaipara river near Makarau. He was a famous warrior and made two great raids on Taranaki. In 1806, when he was about 40 years of age, he raised a taua to avenge the deaths of the Roroa people at Whakarau. They were joined by 100 of the Ngati-Whatua under Te Waru and Te Wana-a-riri, on the opposite side of the harbour. The taua fell suddenly upon the Ngapuhi pa at Te Tu-huna and Tai-a-Mai, and then concluded a peace. In the following year Ngapuhi returned to the attack and were caught in an ambush at Moremonui, 12 miles south of the Maungani Bluff, by a strong force of Ngati-Whatua under Murupaenga and Taoho. *Mter* a desperate fight, in which they had the advantage of possessing firearms, Ngapuhi were severely defeated. Several of their leaders were killed, including Pokaia, Te Waikeri, TU-karawa, Tohi, Hou-awe, Ti and Houmoka. Hongi Hika escaped by his fleetness, but two of his brothers were killed.

About 1810 Murupaenga led a taua of Ngati-Whatua (without firearms) to Taranaki, was well received by his kinsmen at Manu-korihi, on the Waitara river, and then proceeded into

## MUTER

the southern part of Taranaki. He was so pleased with the country that he composed a waiata in its praise. In 1818, with Tu-whare, he operated at Kawhia to assist Te Rauparaha. On this occasion he penetrated as far as Tata-ramaka and returned to Kaipara with many prisoners (1819). When Marsden visited Kaipara in 1820 he was attracted by Murupaenga, who was then complaining of the depredations of Ngapuhi and had several fights with Tareha in that year. As a near relative of Hongi, he accepted an invitation to participate in the Ngapuhi expedition against Rotorua in 1823. In 1825 he was present at the battle of Te Ika-ranga-nui, but escaped the slaughter. A few months later (1826), while with a small party, he was attacked by a taua of the Hikutu sub-tribe of Ngapuhi near Maunga-tauhoru and killed. His body, which was found in the sea, was buried at Mihirau, on the Puhoi river.

Of medium height, very dark, with fiery penetrating eyes, Murupaenga was a man of quick perception and commanding mien. He was the one chief of Ngati-Whatua who for many years successfully opposed the powerful Ngapuhi, until they acquired guns. D'Urville had intended writing his life as the central piece of his study of Maori manners and customs.

S. P. Smith; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Dumont D'Urville.

MUTER, DUNBAR DOUGLAS (1824-1909), served with his regiment in the Punjab campaign (1848-49) and came to New Zealand on leave in the *Steadfast* (1851), taking up the Desert station on the Waimakariri (1851) and Raukapuka (1853). He also had land at German Bay, where he settled. While there he fought his duel with C. B. Robinson (q.v.). Muter sold his property to return to India and served through the Mutiny with great distinction, being present at Delhi, commanding the 4th column at Kishingunj (brevet-major) and being deputy-assistant-adjutant-general at ROo hilkund (brevet-colonel). He afterwards commanded reinforcements to China (1860), and was later appointed a military knight of Windsor, where he died on 8 Oct 1909.

Acland; Jacobson; Mrs D. Muter, *Travels and Adventures of an Officers Wife*, 1864; Ebenezer Hay in *The Press*, 18 Jun 1924; Roberts, *Southland*; *Morning Post* (London), 9 Oct 1909.

## MYERS

MYERS, SIR ARTHUR MIELZINER (1867-1926) was born at Ballarat and came to New Zealand with his father, who settled at Thames. There he got the first of his education, which was finished at Wellington College. At the age of 16 Myers entered the office of his uncle (Ehrenfried, a brewer at Thames). On the death of his uncle in 1897 he completed the amalgamation of the firm with Brown, Campbell and Co., and became managing director. He possessed considerable administrative and business ability and was chairman also of the Campbell trustees and of the Cornwall Park trustees, a director of the New Zealand Insurance Co. and the Auckland Gas Co. and president of the AUCKLAND Commercial Travellers' association.

Myers was mayor of Auckland for four years, during which time he followed a progressive policy, carried through. important municipal works and furthered the greater Auckland movement. He was elected to Parliament for Auckland East (Jun 1910) and sat till retiring in 1921, when he became a London director of the National Bank of New Zealand. He was

## MYERS

a member of the Mackenzie JDimstry in 1912 (as Minister of Finance, Railways and Defence) and also of the National ministry (1915-19), in which he was Minister of Customs, Munitions and Supplies, and at times also of Finance. While in Parliament Myers introduced an important town-planning bill, but it did not advance beyond its first reading. Amongst the gifts he made to Auckland city were Myers Park (of 8 acres), on which he built a free kindergarten and a school for backward children; £5,000 towards the building of a Karitane hospital, and many pictures for the Art Gallery and the clock for the town hall. To Thames also he gave many gifts to beautify the town and add to its amenities. These included assistance in establishing the Technical School. Myers was major of the 1st Auckland infantry battalion and colonel commanding the motor service corps. (K.B. 1924.) He married a daughter of B. W. Levy. His death occurred on 9 Oct 1926.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1910-21 (notably 24 Jun 1927); *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 11 Oct 1926 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

---

---

# N

---

---

NAHE, HOANI (? 1833-94), a prominent chief of Ngati-Maru, was born at Te Poho, near Rerikeri. His earliest education was under a missionary catechist (Preece, q.v.) and Wiremu Turiponi, and he afterwards went to the school conducted by the Rev Mr Dudley, who taught him the New Testament, and Mr Lanfear. Later he went to St John's College, under Archdeacons Abraham and Lloyd and Mr Greenwood. Chafing under the discipline, he returned to his home at the Thames, but was taken back by Bishop Selwyn and eventually obtained a good English education, taking honours in arithmetic and first prize in general knowledge. He still had no taste for his appointed vocation, the church, and he left the College with a good conduct certificate.

Having tribal connections with Taranaki, Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Haua, Nahe was elected to represent the Western Maori in Parliament in 1876. He was a fluent speaker of wide knowledge, and a firm supporter of Sir George Grey, in whose Government he was a member of the executive representing the native race from Nov 1877 to Oct 1879.

Nahe lived for many years at Omahu, near Te Puriri (Thames), where later he was a prominent churchman and assisted in the rebuilding of the mission church at Parawai. He was very learned in the lore of his people and contributed chapters to *White's History* and the *Polynesian Journal*. He died at Taipari's house at Thames on 18 May 1894.

*NZ.P.D.*, 1876-79; S. P. Smith; *Brett's Almanac*, 1879; *Polyn. Jotlr.*, iii, 111.

NAIRN, CHARLES JAMES (1822-94), came to New Zealand in the *London* (Dec 1840). His father, John Nairn, and brothers came in the *William Bryan* to New Plymouth in 1841.

Nairn spent some time prospecting all over New Zealand for good grazing country. In 1850-51, with C. J. Pharazyn, he explored the whole of the South Island, spending some weeks in south Otago. On 27 Oct 1851 they wrote to the Superintendent of Otago reporting that they had picked up auriferous quartz on the property of Charles Suisted at Goodwood, north Otago. In 1848 John Nairn took up a station in the Patangata district, Hawkes Bay, and six years later they purchased from Lockwood and Tiffen the Omakere property of 50,000 acres. They imported some of the first shorthorn cattle into Hawkes Bay. Nairn was a member of the Patangata county council and chairman of the Patangata road board. He married a daughter of Thomas Wright (Boston, Lincolnshire). At his death, which occurred on 21 Jul 1894, he bequeathed to the Church of England land valued at £10,000.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *N.Z.C.*; Mantell papers in Alexander Turnbull Library; Pyke; Beattie, ii; Playne; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 22 Jul 1894.

NAIRN, JAMES McLACHLAN (1859-1904), born and educated in Glasgow, received his training at the Glasgow School of Art and later on the Continent. He was in view of success, and had been elected a member of the Glasgow Art Society, when ill-health compelled him to seek a better climate, and he came to New Zealand in the *Forfarshire* (1890). Nairn exhibited his pictures in Dunedin and gave lectures on art, and then moved to Wellington, where he was appointed instructor in the School of Design (afterwards the Technical College). He was an unequalled draughtsman, clever in both landscape and portraiture. Some of his landscapes (notably *A Summer Idyll*) were acquired by the New Zealand

## NAPIER

Academy of Fine Arts (of which he was a vice-president); and his portraits of judges (Richmond, F. R. Chapman and Prendergast) are in the Supreme Court. He was an uncompromising critic and the first teacher in New Zealand to conduct classes for the study of the nude figure. Nairn married Miss Smith (Greytown). He died on 22 Feb 1904.

*NZ. Times*, 23, 24 Feb 1904; *Evening Post*, 22 Feb; M. E. R. Tripe, in *Art in New Zealand*, Dec 1928 (p).

NAPIER, WILLIAM JOSEPH (1857-1925), who was born in Ireland, arrived in Auckland in 1862, and attended St Peter's Roman Catholic school and St John's College. He was called to the bar in New Zealand (1883), and in Fiji (1886), and in 1889 became adviser to King Mataafa of Samoa. He was also counsel to Sir George Grey until his death, and to Te Kooti and Rewi. From 1889 to 1902 (when he retired) he was member for Auckland City in the House of Representatives, and in 1901 he was chairman of the statutes revision committee. Napier was a member of the Auckland harbour board (1893-1907) and for a time chairman; a founder and president of the Navy league and the Victoria league in New Zealand and captain for nine years of the Devonport coastguard artillery. He was president of the English-speaking union, a vice-president of the British Red Cross committee during the war of 1914-18; a member of the council of the Auckland law society; founder (and president for several years) of the French club, and a founder of the Auckland Liberal association. Napier married Henrietta, daughter of E. W. Mills (Wellington). He died on 29 Nov 1925.

*NZ.P.D.*, 18 Jun 1926; *Cycl. NZ.*, ii (p); *Butt. Fort. Notes*, 1925, p. 200; *Who's Who NZ.*, 1908, 1924.

NATHAN, DAVID (1816-86) was born in London and educated there. After a good business training and experience in the City he sailed for Australia (1839), intending to settle in Adelaide. Accounts he received in Sydney of the financial condition of South Australia induced him to change his plans and he came in the *Achilles* to Bay of Islands, where he arrived early in 1840. He purchased 2,500 acres of Clendon's grant at Manurewa. With

## NATHAN

some others Nathan embarked in the schooner *Mary* for Thames, but being landed instead at Coromandel he eventually proceeded in a canoe in search of the new capital site on the Waitemata. Amongst those he met on this journey were Logan Campbell, William Brown, Donald McLean, Webster and the chief Taiaia. Having married at Bay of Islands (Oct 1841) Nathim in the following month moved his interests to Auckland and purchased a section in what became Shortland street. In company with Israel Joseph he commenced business as auctioneers and commission agents, at first in a tent and afterwards in a warehouse erected by themselves. This partnership lasted only until 1843, Nathan continuing in his own name thereafter, extending the business and prospering so that he was able to retire in 1867 and to hand over his interests to his sons, L. D. and N. A. Nathan.

Nathan rendered much useful service to the community both socially and financially. He was deeply interested in the welfare of the working classes, and was a constant contributor to the funds of charitable movements and of the various denominations. A staunch adherent of the Jewish faith, he placed the Auckland community under a debt of gratitude by his leadership and example. In his will he made many bequests of a social and charitable nature irrespective of sect. He was also active in the chamber of commerce and a vice-president of the Auckland Savings Bank. Nathan died on 23 Aug 1886.

*NZ. Jewish Review*; *N.Z. Herald*, 2 Apr 1881, 25 Aug 1886.

NATHAN, HENRY (1816-93) was born in London of Irish parents and was brought up as a goldsmith. He arrived in Wellington on 22 Jan 1841 in the *Slains Castle*. Finding no employment at his own occupation, he joined the police and was sent to Wanganui under sergeant Garner. He was concerned in apprehending the murderers of the Gilfillan family. Shortly afterwards he resigned from the force and started sawmilling, providing the timber for many of the houses erected in the town. He farmed for a few years at Goat valley, and on selling out returned to live in the town. Nathan was a member of the first town board and afterwards of the municipal council, and

## NATION

mayor of Wanganui. He then retired from public life. He was a prominent freemason. His death occurred on 3 Nov 1893.

*Rangitikei Advocate*, 4 Nov 1893.

NATION, HENRY MATTHEW (1810-81), entered the Indian army as an ensign in the 23rd Bengal Infantry (1828). Promoted lieutenant (1839), captain in the 3rd European Regiment (1853), and major (1858), he served during the Mutiny in command of the native police at Patna. In 1861 he retired as lieutenant-colonel, and came to settle in New Zealand. In the Waikato war he was appointed colonel of the 1st Auckland regiment of militia (Jul 1863). Nation was the first mayor of Parnell and chairman of the magistrates. He died on 12 Mar 1881, and his widow on 3 Mar 1890.

India Office records; *NZ. Herald*, 14 Mar 1881.

NAYTI, of the Ngati-Toa tribe, was a son of Mahurenga and claimed to be related to Rau-paraha. Born about 1812, when his people were at Kawhia, he arrived in France in 1837 in a French whaler, the captain of which had promised that he would see King Louis Philippe. He was at once conducted to England by E. G. Wakefield's instructions, and lived there for two years. His companion, Jackey, died of tuberculosis in Dr Evans's home. Nayti spent two years in London, learning the language and being treated with every consideration. He saw the sights of London and rode in Hyde Park. In 1838 he gave evidence before the parliamentary committee, and in the following year he returned to New Zealand with the preliminary expedition of the New Zealand Company in the *Tory*. His influence with his own people, who were settled in the neighbourhood of Port Nicholson, was not of any importance and Barrett and others acted as interpreters for Colonel Wakefield. Nayti immediately reverted to his old style of life. He occasionally visited Wakefield in Wellington.

G.B.O.P., 1937-38/680. 1840/238 p. 27; *N.Z.C.*; *N.ZoC.* reports 1844, F40; E. J. Wakefield; O'Connor; *Saturday Magazine*, Dec 1837, p. 353.

NEILL, GRACE (1846-1926), the daughter of an Argyllshire landed proprietor, was born in Edinburgh, educated in Rugby, and trained as a nurse at the Charing Cross and King's Cross

## NELSON

hospitals. She was matron of large institutions in London and Manchester, before coming to Australia in 1886 (with her husband and son). She joined the staff of the *Brisbane Daily Telegraph*, and in 1891 served on a royal commission investigating the conditions of labour in shops and factories. In 1893 Mrs Neill came to New Zealand and joined the government service as an inspector of factories, also helping E. Tregear to edit the *Journal of Labour*. In the following year she was transferred to the department of hospitals and charitable aid, and became official visitor to the Wellington lunatic asylums. Mrs Neill was one of the founders of the international council of nurses, and was responsible for many nursing reforms in New Zealand. She died on 19 Aug 1926.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); H. Maclean, *Nursing in N.Z.*, 1932; *N.Z. Times*, 26, 27 May 1897; *The Dominion*, 20 Aug 1926.

NELIGAN, MOORE RICHARD (1863-1922), a grandson of Canon Neligan, DoD., incumbent of Christ Church, Leeston Park, Dublin, was born in Dublin. He was educated at Reading school and Trinity College, Dublin. He was ordained deacon in 1886 and priest in 1887, and served in the parishes of Scalcoates, Hull (1886-87), East Dereham, Norfolk (1889), and Christ Church, Lancaster Gate, London (1890-94). From 1894 to 1903 he was vicar of St Stephens in Paddington, London. In 1903 he was consecrated Bishop of Auckland. (D.D. 1902). Neligan did strenuous work in the growing outlying districts of his diocese. His health failing, he returned to England in 1910, and died in Northern Ireland on 24 Nov 1922. He married in 1894 Mary, daughter of Edmund Macrory, K.C., of London. Neligan's publications include *The Religion of Life* ( ) and *The Churchman as Priest* (1914).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Crockford; *Who Was Who*.

NELSON, WILLIAM (1843-1932) was born in Wanvick, educated at Warwick College, and was engaged in gelatine and cement works. At the age of 20 he came to New Zealand in the *Devonshire*. He joined the militia, but by the end of the year began sheep-farming with his brother (Frederick Nelson) at Kereru, Hawkes Bay. After visiting England he farmed at

## NENE

Waipukurau (1866-69) and was flaxmilling at Mangateretere (1870-72). Later they had properties at Waipukurau and on the Heretaunga plains.

In 1875 Nelson returned to England and had experiments made at the gelatine works of Nelson, Dale and Co. which resulted in an improved machinery for the preservation of meat and the preparation of tallow. In 1880, with J. N. Williams, they installed the machinery at their works at Tomoana, and two years later a company was formed to take over the business (which was under the management of Nelson). In 1884 three successful shipments were sent to England. In 1885 Nelson Brothers opened stores in Thames street, London. To assist the sale the barque *Prince Of Wales* was fitted up with refrigerating machinery and stationed at Plymouth as a distributing centre. In 1895 the distributing business was sold to the Colonial Consignment and Distributing Co., of which his brother (Sir Montague Nelson) was the chairman. William Nelson was chairman of the Clive river board and for some years president of the free association of employers (after the maritime strike). He founded the Heretaunga Boys' School in Hastings and assisted to found Woodford House. He married (1865) a daughter of Henry Bicknell, Bangor, Wales, and died on 16 Nov 1932.

Critchell and Raymond (p); *The Dominion*, 15 Feb 1932; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 17 Nov 1932 (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald-Tribune*, 7 May 1937.

NENE, TAMATI WAKA (? 1780-1871). The son of Tapua, a noted Ngati-Hao warrior of Hokianga, Nene was descended from ancestors (Nuku-tawhiti and Ruanui) who arrived in New Zealand by the canoe *Mamari*. Tapua, who was both a warrior and a tohunga, was a man of powerful mental qualities. He married Te Kawehau, and their family consisted of one daughter, Tari, who married Te Wharerahi (q.v.), and four sons: Patuone (q.v.), Nene, Te Anga and Te Ruanui. The last two were killed in battle. By a later marriage Te Kawehau had a son, Wi Waka Turau. Tapua was fishing off Matauri on 27 Nov 1769, when Cook's ship *Endeavour* appeared off Cape Brett, and he commanded the first canoe (*Te Tumuaiki*) which went off, with 80 men, to see the navigator. As chief of the Ngati-Rangi hapu of

## NENE

Ngapuhi he was trained to arms early, and accompanied his father in the campaigns of the early nineteenth century, in which he developed as a brave fighter and a good leader. When a young man, he chased and killed a Maori who had assaulted a pakeha. In 1819-20 he accompanied the Ngapuhi taua in the *Amiowhenua* expedition to Taranaki and Whanganui, and had command of it on the return.

Nene took part in Hongi Hika's campaign against the Hauraki tribes in 1822, and later in the victorious campaign of the northern tribes with muskets against the people of Taranaki and Wellington. He visited Port Jackson in the *Enterprise* to hand over the convicts from the brig *Wellington* (1827). He early befriended the pakeha, and in 1829 shot dead a Ngapuhi who had participated in the sack of the brig *Hawes* at Whale island. He was one of the earliest chiefs to be baptised by the missionaries (when he took the names of Tamati Waka, i.e., Thomas Walker, after a supporter of the mission at Stockton-upon-Tees). In 1827, when the Wesleyan mission at Whangaroa was attacked, Nene, Patuone and Te Wharerahi led a force to its rescue and removed the missionaries to Mangungu. Nene and Patuone also exacted punishment for the murder of a Christian native at Mangamuka, where Nene stormed the pa, killed 12, and took the rest prisoners, including the leader, Kaitoke. He assisted Moetara to exact restitution from the Rarawa raiders of the schooner *Fortitude*.

Nene often came to the assistance of the British Resident, and in 1840 was one of the most convincing supporters of the Treaty of Waitangi, which he signed amongst the first on 6 Feb. In the war of 1845 he was the firm friend and ally of the pakeha. Owing to Heke's relative Hongi Hika having some years earlier insulted his matua, Te Tihi, Nene after the cutting down of the flagstaff took the field against Heke with a well-armed force. After the British reverse at Omapere he accompanied a military force up the Waikare inlet against the Kapotai tribe, whose leader, Hauraki (a brother-in-law of F. E. Maning) was mortally wounded. At Te Ahuahu Heke was defeated and wounded. At Ohaeawai Nene tried unsuccessfully to dissuade Colonel Despard from making a costly attack.

## NERHENY

In Jan 1848 Nene went with Grey and Te Wherowhero to Wellington to satisfy himself about the release of Te Rauparaha, for whom they had acted as surety. His services were recognised by the British Government, and he was granted a pension of £100 a year by the Colonial government. The *Church Missionary Intelligencer* (1850) states that Nene devoted his first year's pension to the erection of a flounnill as a peace offering for the benefit of his former enemies. Sir George Grey appointed Nene one of his esquires on his investment as a knight (Dec 1848); and when he returned as Governor for a second term he brought a chased silver goblet as a gift from Queen Victoria.

In later years Nene often attended levees at Auckland, where he was honoured by pakeha and Maori. He died on 4 Aug 1871, and at his own request was buried at Bay of Islands. His epitaph reads: 'te hoa o te Kawanatanga me te matua o te Pakeha' (the friend of the Government and the parent of the Europeans); The government memorial, erected later, describes Nene as 'the first to welcome the Queen's sovereignty in New Zealand; a consistent supporter of the pakeha.' Nene's wife Thlpera and their two daughters (one of whom was the wife of Wi Patene) died in 1837. A niece married G. F. Russell, of Hokianga.

NZ. Archives, B.R. 1 and 2; Legislative Council of N.Z., ordinances 1847, viii, no. 15; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; J. K. Davis; Webster (p); Cowan, *Wars* (p); Gisborne; Carleton; Buller; Morley; Buick, *First War* (p); *Waka Maori*, 1871, p. 8; Williams papers; Bowen; *N.z. Herald*, 9 Aug 1871, 19 Sep 1872; *New Zealander*, 26 Sep 1857. Portrait: Cowan, *Sketches*.

NERHENY, PATRICK JOSEPH (1858-1921), born in Fair Valley, county Roscommon, Ireland, moved to Manchester in 1870, where he served his apprenticeship as a bricksetter. Coming to New Zealand early in the eighties, he was in business as a working contractor, and later as a coal and firewood merchant. For 13 years he had a seat on the Auckland City Council (1908-21), being chairman of the streets committee, and he served also on the Auckland harbour board, the hospital and charitable aid board, and the council of the Auckland Sailors' home. He was a founder and president for 12 years of the Liberal and La-

## NEWALL

bour association. In 1920 Nerheny was called to the Legislative Council. He died on 2 Dec 1921.

*N.z.P.D.*, 7 Dec 1921; *N.z. Herald*, 3 Dec 1921.

NEVILL, SAMUEL TARRATT (1837-1921), the third son of Jonathan Nevill, lace and hosiery warehouseman, was born near Nottingham. On leaving St Aidan's College, he took charge of Scarisbrook parish, in Lancashire, and later proceeded to Magdalen College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. (1865) and M.A. (1868). After three years as rector of Shelton parish, Staffordshire, he was appointed Bishop of Dunedin in 1871. In the same year Canterbury University conferred on him the honorary degree of D.D. During an episcopacy of nearly 50 years there were founded in Dunedin the Selwyn Theological College (1885), St Hilda's College for girls, and the deaconess institute, and St Paul's cathedral was built. Largely through the efforts of his first wife (1834-1905), a daughter of James Parker Penny, of Heavitree, Devon, St Mary's orphanage was established. In 1904 Bishop Nevill was made Primate of New Zealand. He retired from both positions in 1919, to devote himself to literature, and died on 29 Oct 1921. His second wife was Linda, a daughter of the Rev Geoffrey Fynes-Clinton. Nevill wrote many pamphlets on theology, and in 1910 published *Spiritual Philosophy*.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; E. R. Nevill, *Bishop S. T. Nevill* (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Nov 1921.

NEWALL, STEWART (1843-1919), a native of Dumfriesshire, Scotland, came to New Zealand in 1863 from Victoria, and after gold mining in Otago joined the militia for the Waikato war. Five years later he was transferred to the Armed Constabulary and served in Titokowarn's war, and the Urewera campaign. After Te Kooti's escape (1870) he was officer in charge at Cambridge. He did police work in various parts of the North Island, exploring and supervising the construction of roads. After taking part in the operations against Te Whiti, he was transferred to the defence force in 1883, and subsequently commanded the Wanganui, Taranaki and Wellington districts. In the South African war he commanded the 5th New Zealand Contingent. (C.B. 1900.) He

## NEWMAN

married in 1872 a sister of Colonel J. M. Roberts (q.v.). Newall died on 3 Aug 1919..

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Gudgeon (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

NEWMAN, ALFRED KINGCOME (1849-1924) was born in India. His father, Captain Alfred Newman (1816-82), H.E.I.C.S., who served under Sir Charles Napier, came to New Zealand in 1853, purchased an estate near Waipukurau, and was a member of the Ahuriri Settlers' Association (1854) and of the Napier harbour board.

Newman was educated at private schools in New Zealand and in Bath, England (1863) and studied medicine at Guy's Hospital, London, and Aberdeen University (M.B., C.M., 1875; M.R.C.S., L.R.C.P.). Returning to New Zealand (1875), he engaged in commerce as a partner in the firm of Zohrab, Newman and Co., general merchants. In 1879 he married Octavia, daughter of Dr I. E. Featherston (q.v.). He unsuccessfully contested the Foxton seat in 1881, and was elected to the House of Representatives as member for Thorndon in 1884, holding the seat until 1890. He subsequently represented Hutt (1890-93), Wellington Suburbs (1893-96) and Wellington East (1911-22). He served on the Wellington City Council (1881-85), the education board, the Wellington College board of governors, the Agricultural and Pastoral association, the University senate, and several athletic bodies, particularly the N.Z. Rugby union (of which he was president). From 1922 until his death (on 3 Apr 1924) Newman was a member of the Legislative Council.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Jul 1924; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p).

NEWMAN, JOHN LITCHFIELD (1815-86) was born at Kinsale, county Cork, where he was educated and went into business as a merchant and shipowner. In 1848 he emigrated to New Zealand in the brig *Susan*. After a few weeks in Auckland he settled in Taranaki in 1849, and was engaged in trading in produce with Auckland in conjunction with R. Brown. Later he took up land in the Omata district, where he farmed till the war broke out. He served for two years, being present at Wai-reka.

## NEWMAN

Newman was keenly interested in politics, and represented his district in the Provincial Council (1859-61). When his home was destroyed he moved to Nelson, where he owned the Mitre hotel. On returning to Taranaki he had the Ship hotel for a while until returning to his farm. He died on 8 Nov 1886.

*Cycl. N.z.*; vi (p); *Parltry Record*; *Taranaki Herald*, 8 Nov 1886; *Taranaki News*, 13 Nov 1886.

NEWMAN, JOSEPH (1815-92) was born at Willoughby, near Alford, Lincolnshire, the son of a small farmer. Educated at Alford Grammar School, he engaged in flourmilling at Louth and grain-buying on behalf of his brother's firm. As a young man, he joined the temperance movement, and became a lifelong teetotaler. He offered his services to the London Missionary Society, but was not accepted. Newman later managed a provision business at Malton.

In 1840 he sailed in the barque *James* for New Zealand, several recruits for the New Zealand missions being passengers. He bought a town allotment at Auckland, but was unable for some time to acquire farming land. In 1845 he visited Great Britain and married Caroline Ewen, whose brother was afterwards his partner in business as ironmongers in Auckland. Newman now purchased 100 acres close to Kohimarama, and by 1850 he had 60 acres fenced and cultivated. He imported a portable threshing machine, and stud Lincoln sheep. In 1850 he commenced auctioneering, and for several years held successful stock sales, finally selling out to Frank Buckland. In 1857 he visited the Bathurst goldfields in New South Wales and then proceeded to England in the *Centurion*. On his return the firm's business was moved from Shortland to Queen Street, but, being burned out shortly afterwards, it was closed down. Newman settled for a few years in Hertfordshire, England, and acted on behalf of the Auckland provincial government in securing settlers on the 40-acre system of immigration. He lectured in England, Scotland and Isle of Man with great success, and had much to do with the Albertland scheme.

Returning to New Zealand in 1862, Newman helped to select the Albertland location. He was M.P.C. for Auckland (1853-68) and was a member of the executive in 1864 (during Gra-

## NEWTON

ham's superintendency). In 1852 he was an alderman of the Auckland municipal council. He stood for Parliament in 1855 without success, and represented Raglan (1866-67). In 1870 he commenced business as a sharebroker, and he was later a director of the Auckland Gas Co. He was a visiting justice, a prohibition member of the licensing committee, and a supporter of the Y.M.C.A. and the Congregational church. He died on 4 Jan 1892.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; Brett, *Albertlanders*; *N.Z. Herald*, 5 Jan 1892. Portrait: Parliament House.

NEWTON, CHARLES (1825-85) was a leading stock and station agent in Christchurch, and was interested in a number of pastoral properties, including 'The Springs' and 'Ashfield': He represented Mount Cook in the Canterbury Provincial Council 1862-63.

NEWTON, THOMAS KENNEDY (1829-96) arrived in Otago in 1849. In 1852 he moved to Napier and started business as a storekeeper, his first store being in Onepoto gully. Newton was in partnership at different times with Alexander, Alex. Brown and Irvine as wholesale and retail merchants. He was also interested in pastoral runs at Te Mahanga and elsewhere; owned two small trading vessels, and was a large buyer of Maori grain. Newton represented Napier town in the Provincial Council (1866-67 and 1869-71). He died on 2 Sep 1896.

NGAKUKU, a fighting chief of the Ngati-Haua, was a nephew of Te Waharoa (q.v.). Though friendly to the missionaries, he was not an avowed Christian. Nevertheless he sent his daughter Tarore to live with the Rev A. N. Brown and he became a Christian soon after the arrival at Matamata of the missionaries. In Oct 1836 his daughter Tarore was murdered and eaten by the Ngati-Whakaue, with whom Ngakuku afterwards became publicly reconciled. He accompanied the Rev J. A. Wilson along the Bay of Plenty and assisted in the founding of the mission stations there.

NGAPORA, TAMATI, or MANUHIRI (? 1804-85), a chief of very high rank in the Ngati-Mahuta tribe of Waikato, was a near relative of Te Wherowhero and old enough to bear arms at the time of the siege of Matakiki by Ngapuhi (1821). As a young man he took part

## NGAPORA

in the expeditions against Taranaki in 1829-30. With his wife and daughter he was early converted to Christianity. When Te Wherowhero and the Ngati-Mahuta were settled by Governor Grey at Mangere (on the south shore of Manukau harbour), Ngapora made his home there and was appointed an assessor. On 3 Apr 1848 he wrote an important letter on the state of the Maori people. A deeply religious man, he acted as native pastor (wearing clerical costume) and during 1850-53 he built a stone church in the village, raising the funds himself and doing much of the work.

When Te Wherowhero left Mangere, he deputed Ngapora to take his place as the organ of communication between the Government and the Waikato people. After the King meeting at Waikato in 1858 he reported to the Governor on the position. He favoured Potatau as chief of the Waikato tribe, but not as King. In 1858 Te Wherowhero declared Ngapora his successor in the Kingship, but Wi Tamihana te Waharoa appointed Tawhiao. Ngapora was a close friend and confidant of Sir William and Lady Martin, who found him gentlemanly, unassuming, generous and peaceable. Martin said: 'I have seldom seen anyone so steady or so well balanced in mind as he is: When Sir George Grey arrived as Governor in 1861 Ngapora persuaded the Kiug leaders at Ngaruawahia to send a deputation to him, but under Rewi's influence it demanded separation and independence. Ngapora deplored the outbreak of the Waikato war (1863), but when the Maori residents at Mangere were called upon to take the oath or leave for the other side of the aukati, he responded to his tribal promptings and took his departure, sadly enough. He was a man of peace and took no part in the hostilities. He lost his home and the church became a barracks. His education and intelligence, together with his mana as the King's uncle, soon gave him a strong position. He was a respected adviser, who for years enjoyed the authority of prime minister. Greatly disillusioned and embittered by the war, he leaned towards Hauhaism, and for some years signed himself 'Tamati Pai Marire:

When Waikato at length evacuated their territory, Ngapora went with them to Tokangamutu (Te Kuiti). It was then that he

## NGAPORA

changed his name to Manuhiri, or 'sojourner': owing to his people having to live amongst the Ngati-Maniapoto. When Matutaera married his daughter Ngapora's mana increased, and he became virtually King. In 1869 he resisted Te Kooti's appeal for help from the King tribes, and he hurried from a feast at Kawhia to stop Wetere's party from going to Taranaki; but the tragedy at White Cliffs could not be prevented. He was now unrelenting towards the pakeha. He alone stood out against the proposed visit of the Duke of Edinburgh to the King Country, and he insisted on the full demands of the King movement for self-government. Sir William Martin, whose respect for Tamati was unimpaired, urged him in statesmanlike letters to conform to the rule of the Queen, but the wrongs of his race and his own injured pride had hardened his heart, and he would not now abate any of the pretensions of the King movement; he wanted the return of the whole of Waikato.

A strong rivalry developed between Ngapora and Rewi in the late sixties. Rewi, an old man, wished to see the end of hostility to the pakeha and condemned the intransigence of Ngapora. In 1873 Ngapora strongly reproved the murderer of Ruru for his attack on the Government agent (James Mackay, q.v.). In 1878 Sir George Grey persuaded cabinet to offer him a pension, since he was too old to be a member of the Legislative Council. A pension of £210 was offered. Ngapora declined it, but under pressure by his grandson, Tu Tawhiao, he accepted a sum of money. Eventually in 1880 he accepted the pension through the persuasion of W. G. Mair (q.v.). He also had returned to him the Old Testament which he left at the Tamaki church in 1863. He died at Whatiwhatihoe on 4 Aug 1885, having for some years enjoyed a pension of £80 a year.

Ngapora was of medium height and fine physique, robust and active even in advanced years. He was closely tattooed. In council he was quiet, reserved and dignified, and firm to the verge of obstinacy.

*App. H.R.*, 1863 F3, *pass.*; G.B.O.P., 1849/1120; Cowan, *Wars*; *Sketches* (p); Gorst; Martin; Cowie; Bowen; Firth; J. C. *Firth's Conference with Tamati Ngapora*, 1869; Lady Martin, *Our Maoris*, p. 166-68; Carey, p. 38; Rusden; *N.Z. Herald*, 6 Aug 1885.

## NGATA

NGATA, PARATENE (1851-1924) was a member of the Whanau-a-Te Ao, Ngati-Rangi and Whanau-a-Karuai bapu of Ngati-Porou. A son of Wiremu Tho Karaka, of Reporua, and Hera Ruataupare, of Waiomatatini, he was brought up by Major Ropata Wahawaha (q.v.), whose wife Harata Te Ihi, was a younger sister of Paratene's mother. He saw service as a lad with Ropata during the later Maori wars on the East Coast. He married in 1871 Katerina Naki, of Akuaku. Ngata had a little education at Bishop Williams's school at Waerenga-a-Hika, Gisborne, but was largely self-taught. During the years following the Maori war on the East Coast he led a varied life as storekeeper, hotel-keeper, sheepfarmer and native land agent. Having been appointed an assessor of the native land court, he was associated with Major Mair (a judge of the court) in the investigation of title of native lands in the King Country (Rohe-Potae) and Taupo, and as agent and conductor took a leading part in the title investigation of large native blocks in the Thames, Hawkes Bay, Wairarapa and East Coast districts. He thus acquired a unique knowledge of Maori tradition, custom and tribal history. He made one effort to enter parliament, opposing Wi Pere in the 1894 election for the Eastern Maori district. The last 20 years of his life were spent at his home at Waiomatatini, taking a prominent part with the elders and chiefs of the Ngati-Porou tribe in promoting the schemes of consolidation of titles, incorporation of owners of lands for their better organisation and financial assistance, native land settlement, improvement of maraes and communal buildings and other activities in which that tribe pioneered the way for the Maori race. He was a keen educationalist, an expert in the traditions of his people, and an enthusiastic advocate of progress. For many years he was chairman of the Horouta Maori council, chairman of the Waiomatatini native school committee and manager of the Waiomatatini station.

One of his sons is SIR APIRANA TURUPA NGATA (1874-), who graduated M.A. and LL.B. at the University of New Zealand, was M.P. for the Eastern Maori (1905-) and a prominent leader of the Maori renaissance. He was a member of Sir Joseph Ward's executive (1909-12) and Native Minister (1928-35).

NGATATA

NGATATA I TE RANGI (?-1854) was a great grandson of Te Whiti Katua and Tarawhaka, the originator of the Ngati-Tewhiti sub-tribe of Ngati-Awa. His father was Rangihetiki, who married Pakanga, daughter of Kara-ki-te-rangi, eldest daughter of Te Whiti.

Ngatata lived for 30 years in Taranaki and saw much fierce fighting to defend that district against the invasions of Waikato taua armed with muskets. Fearing his inability to hold out indefinitely, he led some of his people in the Nihoputa heke (1824), which suffered from attacks by the Nga-Rauru while passing through their country. In 1826, after the death of Pomare, he paid an important visit to Waikato to enlist the help of Te Wherowhero, Te Kanawa and Tu-Korehu to avenge the death of Te Karawa at the hands of Ngati-Ruanui. As a result 4,000 men, under Te Wherowhero, Waharoa, Kaihau, Tarapipipi and Awaitaia marched southward. In 1829 he himself took the field against Nga-Rauru for an attack on the heke of 1824. In 1831 he came with his people to Whanganui-a-Tara (with Wharepouri and Honiana Te Puni) and fought to dispossess Ngati-Kahungunu from their lands in the neighbourhood. On account of the death of Matoha in this campaign he shot Te Maurio-te-Rangi at Te Roro, near Matakitaki, Palliser bay, and he went with the taua under Te Wharepouri as far north as Nukutaurua. There peace was made, and the Ngati-Kahungunu were allowed to return to their cultivations in the Wairarapa. In 1832 Ngatata took part in the defence of Ngamotu, and in the heke Tama-te-Daua to Kapiti.

When Ngatata signed the Treaty of Waitangi for the Rev Henry Williams (1840), he was very old and retiring in favour of his son, Wi Tako (q.v.). It was the latter who signed the deed of sale on his behalf. His daughter Karoraina (d. 1879) married Taiaroa, and Ngatata died at Otago Heads in 1854 when visiting her. A memorial was erected there to his memory by the Government of the day. His wife, Whetowheto, of the Ngati-Ruanui tribe, died at Wellington and was buried at Waikanae. (See WIREMU TAKO NGATATA; WHAREPOURI.)

Personal information from W. H. Love; *Wellington Gaz.*, xvi, p. 25; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Cowan; Buick, *Old New Zealander* and *Waitangi*; *Evening Post*, 19 Oct, 22 Oct 1929.

NGATATA

NGATATA, WIREMU TAKO (1815-87) was the son of Ngatata-i-te-Rangi (q.v.) and was also called Te Teoteo, or Makoere. Born in Taranaki during the wars against the Waikato, he came south with the heke Nihoputa (1824) or the heke Daua (1832), and lived on the shores of Port Nicholson. There Wakefield met him in 1839, a handsome young chief in the prime of life, owning two pas on the site of Wellington (Pipitea and Kumutoto). When the pakeha arrived Ngatata-i-te-rangi was ageing and Wi Tako, who was taking his part in the leadership of the tribe, signed the deed of sale on his father's behalf. A year or two later (1842) he succeeded Honiana Te Puni as the paramount chief of Ngati-Awa. Wi Tako's standing amongst the natives appears to have been high. He led the speeches when acting-Governor Shortland visited Port Nicholson in 1843, and supported the pakeha in the Wairau crisis. In the forties he and his followers removed from their pas in Wellington to a new position at Ngahauranga.

When Boulcott's farm was attacked in 1846, Wi Tako took command of a strong body of his people, and assisted in driving the attackers across the range, through the Horokiwi valley, and beyond Paekakariki. After the peace he was appointed a native assessor, and in that capacity assisted Sir Donald McLean in the acquisition of many thousands of acres of land in the Hawkes Bay district. That he was not unmindful of the wrongs of his own people was evident in the early sixties, when he was drawn by the injustice of Waitara towards the King movement. In a heated interview with Sir George Grey (9 Oct 1862) he said: 'Listen to me, Governor; to the first of my thoughts about joining this King work. It was the crookedness on the side of the pakeha. This is the crookedness of which I complain-Rawiri's death when he was following after the work of the Government, and the driving of Wi Kingi off his own land. This is the reason I left the side of the pakeha, because I saw the wrong. Then I took up the King's work.' Wi Tako's mana was widespread. A nephew of Keke-rengu, he married Ngawhawha, a grand-daughter of the exalted East Coast chieftainess Tamairangi. At some risk to his mana he persuaded his own people not to join the King movement, merely asking that they should be

NGATATA

given employment. When the Waikato campaign had made some progress he made peace with Sir William Fox for himself and his men, and was allowed to retain his gun. He persuaded the King chiefs in Wairarapa to lay down their arms, exercising an influence which Featherston considered decisive. Thereafter he was a beneficent factor against Hauhauism even on the East Coast, whither he went with Archdeacon S. Williams and Matene te Whiwhi to neutralise the propaganda of Patara and Kereopa, and at other times with McLean to promote the purchase of lands.

Wi Tako's co-religionist M. S. Grace (q.v.), speaking in the Legislative Council, said: 'There was a time when Wi Tako held the balance of power between the Maori King Potatau and the English Queen; a time during the war when he had 2,000 armed men under his control, and had he thrown his tomahawk to the right or the left, and lent his influence to the Maori King, I do not know what would have become of this settlement. I say we have lost in him one of the greatest natives this country, rich in great men, has ever borne. He imperilled by his loyalty to us the whole of his influence with the native race. It was when Wi Tako, failing to be carried away by the passing impulse of the moment, holding the scales between the two races, gave us the full advantage of his sympathy and, ultimately, of his support. I have heard Dr Featherston say of him, .. Wi Tako is the cleverest man, black or white, in the country.' He had no two tongues-what he promised he performed. I remember to-day with glowing admiration the chivalry, valour, and magnanimity of this great race of people, who are dying out from our midst, leaving but the memory of their achievements behind them!' In 1872 Wi Tako was called to the Legislative Council, where his quiet dignity and common-sense won him the respect of his fellows. He was a member of the board of native trustees. On his death, which occurred on 8 Nov 1887, he was accorded a state funeral. Speaking at the graveside, Archbishop Redwood said: 'We are here to-day to do honour to the remains of one who has earned the esteem, admiration, and gratitude of all New Zealand. He saw from the beginning the great advantages of civilisation and culture. As a citizen, a legislator, and a great

NICCOL

leader of men he showed himself worthy of all honour from both races during his life and of this splendid demonstration in his behalf to-day. He embraced cordially the saving truths of Christianity; he died a Christian death. As a man I admired him. As a Christian I admired him still more.' (See WHAREPOURI and TE PUNI.)

*Wellington Gaz.*, 24 Jun 1864; *Wellington Independent*, 7 Jun 1864; personal information from W. H. Love; *N.z.P.D.*, pass. and 10 Nov 1887; Wakefield; Cowan; Bowen; Ward (p); H. T. Kemp in *N.z. Herald*, 23 Mar 1901; *Evening Post*, 10 Nov 1887, 19, 22 Oct 1929 (p); *N.z. Times*, 6, 21 Nov 1887.

NIAS, JOSEPH (1793-1879), joined the Royal Navy in 1804 in H.M.S. *Nautilus*; was a midshipman in the *Comus* at the siege of Cadix (1810) and in 1818 began some years of Arctic service in the brig *Alexander* under Sir John Ross and Parry. At the battle of Navarino he was a lieutenant in the *Asia*. Promoted to command the brig *Alacrity*, he served with distinction against Greek pirates. In 1835 he attained post rank, and in 1838 was appointed to command the *Herald* on the East Indies station. In 1840 he brought Captain Hobson to New Zealand to assume the lieutenant-governorship, and he was some months in these waters assisting to complete the Treaty of Waitangi and to inaugurate British sovereignty. Nias was for two years senior officer in China and distinguished himself at the capture of Canton. (C.B.) In 1850 he commissioned the *AgincoUll* and later was flag captain to Admiral Sir Michael Seymour in the *St George*. He was superintendent of the dockyard at Devonport and in 1854-56 of the victualling yard and hospital at Plymouth. (Rear-admiral, 1857; vice-admiral, 1863; admiral, 1867.) Nias was knighted in 1867.

G.B.O.P., 1841/311; Scholefield, *Hobson* (p); Bunbury; Buick, *Waitangi*; T. D. H. Hall, *Captain Joseph Nias and the Treaty Of Waitangi*, 1938. Portrait: National Portrait Gallery, London.

NICCOL, HENRY (1819-87) was the son of William Niccol, a well-known yacht builder on the Clyde, and came to New Zealand in the *Jane Gifford* (1842). Settling at Waiheke, he built the schooner *Thistle*, which he sold to Captain Bateman. Some time later he established a yard in Mechanics' Bay, where he built a topsail

schooner, the *Albert*, to the order of Governor FitzRoy. In 1845 he built the brig *Krankin* for W. S. Grahame, in 1846 the *Undine* for R. C. Barstow and in 1850 the 90-ton schooner *Waitemata*. His partner (Sharp) having died in the early fifties, Niccol carried on the business alone, building many small vessels for the coastal and intercolonial trade and for the Government of Tonga, including the *Albatross* (in which Earl Pembroke cruised in the Pacific), the *Novelty* barque for the Circular Saw line; and the *Eclipse* topsail schooner.

In 1864 Niccol removed his yard to North Shore, where he laid down a patent slip, the only one then in the colony. There he built his first steamer, the *Southern Cross* 300 tons, and many more trading vessels and yachts, including the *Waitangi*, which won the commodore's challenge cup at Port Jackson. Altogether by 1887 he had built 181 vessels, aggregating 10,519 tons. Niccol was a member of the first Auckland harbour board and chairman of the Devonport highway board. He died on 9 Nov 1887.

His son, MALCOLM Niccol (1844-1925) who was born in Auckland, and educated at Gorie's school, was in business as a Chandler, shipbroker and agent. He was a member of many local bodies, five times mayor of Devonport between 1882 and 1902, and 20 years a member of the Auckland harbour board (six years chairman). For 60 years a freemason, he was grand secretary (1900-21). Niccol died on 27 Jul 1925.

*N.Z. Herald*, 25 Jun, 11 Nov 1887; 28 Jul 1925; *Barclay*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p).

NICHOLAS, HENRY JAMES (1891-1918) was born at Lincoln, Canterbury, the son of Richard Nicholas. He was educated at the Normal and East Christchurch schools; served his apprenticeship to a builder in Christchurch, and worked for four years at that trade in Australia. He was a keen sportsman and a successful amateur boxer. In 1916 he enlisted in the 1st field company New Zealand Engineers, and on reaching Europe was drafted to the Canterbury Regiment in France. (Lance-sergeant, Mar 1918; sergeant, Jun). Nicholas received the Military Medal for gallantry. Later he showed exceptional valour and coolness under fire, and was awarded the V.C. for

conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty during an attack, when he led a detachment forward and captured an enemy strong-point and a machine-gun post with all its crew. He was killed in action on 23 Oct 1918.

N.Z. Army records; Ferguson, *History of the Cant. Regiment*, 1921 (p); Stewart, *Official History of New Zealand's Effort in the Great War*, France, 1921; *London Gaz.*, 8 Jan 1918, 11 Mar 1919; N.Z. Press Association, 12 Jan 1918.

NICHOLAS, JOHN LIDDIARD was born in England, and came to New South Wales in the *Earl Spencer* in 1814, intending to enter into business there. He became acquainted with Samuel Marsden and accompanied him on his first visit to New Zealand in the *Active* in Nov 1814. About 1817 Nicholas returned to England and in that year published his *Narrative of a Voyage to New Zealand*, which is one of the most authoritative works on that period of New Zealand history. In 1820 he saw a good deal of Tuhi and Titore. He gave evidence before the House of Lords committee on New Zealand in 1838.

NICHOLLS, CHARLES HENRY SINDERBY (1814-88) was born in England and educated there. Having been ordained by Dr Langley (afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury), he was for 12 years engaged in clerical and scholastic pursuits in Leeds under Dr Farquhar Hook, vicar of St Peter's. He was very successful as a teacher, but in 1852, owing to ill-health, he came to Lyttelton in the *Stag*. Shortly afterwards he settled in Wanganui, where he was for a time curate of Christ Church and had charge of the industrial school for Maori children in Victoria avenue, which was afterwards merged in Wanganui Collegiate school. He was for 20 years engaged in Wanganui parish and as chaplain to the troops. About 1871 Nicholls moved to Upper Hutt, where he was curate of St John's for 10 years before retiring. He was a good preacher, and a sound English scholar. He died on 11 Jan 1888.

G. V. Kendrick, *Parochial District of Upper Hutt*, 1935; Woon (p); *N.Z. Times*, 26 Jan 1888.

NICHOLSON, JOHN ROBINSON (1831-75) was born at Redditch, Worcestershire. After qualifying as a medical practitioner he came to New Zealand and for the benefit of his health took up land at Ararimu, north Auck-

land. There he remained for a year or two, and then moved into Onehunga and practised his profession. He took a great interest in local affairs, and on the retirement of Stark (q.v.) was elected to the Provincial Council for Onehunga. At the following election he was defeated by O'Rorke (1869), but at once entered the lists for the Northern Division and was elected. Gillies called upon him to lead the executive, in which he was provincial secretary and treasurer from Dec 1869 to the end of 1870, when failing health compelled him to retire. He retired from the Council in 1873 and died on 8 Jan 1875. Nicholson was a strong advocate of total abstinence and held high office in the Good Templars.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Jan 1875.

NICHOLSON, THOMAS DICKSON (1817-64), who came from Freeth, Scotland, was a minister of the Free Church, and was at Lowick, England, when he was appointed by the Colonial committee to Nelson. He sailed in the *John Wickliffe* in 1848 and preached at the emigration barracks at Dunedin on 9 Apr 1848. In Jun he reached Nelson, where he was received by M. Campbell (q.v.), who had already organised the Nelson School Society. Nicholson's wife died in 1856, and in 1857 he resigned the Nelson charge and became Presbyterian minister for the Wairau district. He settled at Renwicktown, and was responsible for the building of the first church, and for the charge of a wide district, including Picton, the Awatere valley, and Kaikoura. He died on 16 Jul 1864.

Dickson (p); Arnold; *Marlborough Express*, 1 Sep 1937.

NIELD, DAVID (1843-1934), a son of William Nield, a cotton-spinner, was born at Oldham, Lancashire, and attended the Oldham Lyceum. He started work at the age of eight in the cotton mill. In 1863 he became secretary of the ragged school of Oldham, and married the teacher, Miss Stanfield. He was later employed as a book-keeper in Werneth, as secretary of the mechanics' institution; for three years as a worker in a shipbuilding firm in the United States; as a traveller for weighing machines in Britain and India, and as proprietor of a vegetarian restaurant at Leeds. Becoming a Seventh Day Adventist missionary,

he came to New Zealand in 1897 and conducted services in Wellington. In 1907 he married Rosalind Amelia Young, of Pitcairn Island. Pastor Nield preached the restoration of the creation week and believed in the end of the world. He supplied copies of his book, *Restitution* (1922) to members of Parliament and others. Other publications included *The Good Friday Problem* and *Eden's Initial Day-line* (1907). He died on 23 Oct 1934.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Post*, 24 Oct 1934 (p).

NIHONIHO, TUTA (1850-1914), a Ngati-Porou chief, was the son of Henare Nihoniho of the Aowera hapu of Ngati-Porou. He was educated at the mission school at Waerenga-a-hika and at the age of 14 he was with his father when he was killed in action at Mangaone, near Pukemaire, Waiapu (1865). Tuta was wounded in a three-sided combat outside the palisade of Waerenga-a-hika. With his mother he served in most of the later engagements north of Gisborne. He was with Ropata at Ngatapa and held a lieutenant's commission under Porter in the Urewera, and was at the capture of Kereopa te Rau at Waikaremoana.

After the war he often appeared before the Native Land Court and in native affairs as assessor and native land purchase officer. In 1886 he raised and commanded the Ngati-Porou Rifles (which lasted four years), and in 1900 he volunteered to raise 500 men for service in South Africa. The offer was declined, but in 1901 he was an officer in the Duke of York's bodyguard at Rotorua. He took an active part in the conference which preceded the passing of the Maori councils act.

Nihoniho married first Terena te Katohau (Ngati-Rangi hapu of Ngati-Porou), and second Rea Horomona (of Ngai-Tahu, Kaiapoi). In his declining years he lived in Wairarapa and took an interest in collecting Maori artifacts and relics for the Dominion Museum. He died in Jan 1914.

Lambert; Porter; Cowan; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

NIKORA, WIREMU KEREI (1853-1915) was born at Coromandel. He was the son of William Nicholls, a native of Falmouth (Devon), who came to Port Nicholson in the *Aurora* (1840) and afterwards settled at Tauranga and

NIKORIMA

married a sister of a Ngaiterangi chief. Educated at the Rev B. Y. Ashwell's school at Taupiri, he became a farmer, and later until 1872 a native interpreter and agent. He was a member of the first Ohinemuri county council for nine years (five years chairman). In 1913 Nikora was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member when he died (15 Jul 1915).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 16 Jul 1915.

NIKORIMA TE RANGI-NOHO-IHO (?-1876), one of the last of the old chiefs of Taranaki, traced a distinguished line of ancestry back to Ao-nui. His hapu were Ngati-Haumia and Nga-Ruahine. He is said to have lived in the time of Captain Cook. His first noteworthy expedition was under the leadership of Te Rangi-i-Runga at Patupohue, where he is said to have killed two men. Later, under the same leader, he killed three men at Te Ahoroa (Hingakaka, Waiapu). At the battle of Rewarewa in 1805 he took prisoner the Ngamotu chief Takarangi. He himself escaped severely wounded from the fight at Tawhiri-Ketetahi. Being surprised in the Pukekohatu pa with only a few children, the men and women being away, he put it in a state of defence and threw down the ladder to prevent the entrance of the enemy, who thereupon retired. Nikorima died on 27 Jul 1876.

S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*.

NIXON, MARMADUKE GEORGE (1814-64) was born at Valetta, Malta, where his father was town major, and educated at Sandhurst. He got his ensigncy in the 39th Regiment in 1831. (Lieutenant 1834; captain 1838; brevet-major 1844; regimental major 1846.) He served in India, being present at the Coorg campaign (1834) and at Maharajpur (1843). Being unable financially to continue in the army, he retired in 1851 and came to New Zealand in the *Cresswell* (1852).

Acting on the advice of Colonel Haultain, Nixon took up land at Tautauoa, Mangere, and had to encounter most of the troubles of pioneering. In 1860 he was gazetted lieutenant-colonel commanding the Royal Cavalry volunteers, which he helped to raise for the protection of the settlements at Otahuhu, Panmure and Howick, and the line of the Tamaki from the Waitemata to the Manukau. In 1861 he

NOLAN

was elected to Parliament for Franklin, which he represented until his death. When fighting commenced in Waikato, Nixon was entrusted with raising a mounted defence force, which he commanded in the field, taking part in all the early fighting. He was mortally wounded at the battle of Rangiaowhia (21 Feb 1864), while leading his men at the storming of huts garrisoned by Kingites. He died on 27 May.

Family information from Miss A. E. Hewett; Gudgeon (p); Cowan, i; *Otahuhu Borough Council* (diamond jubilee); *Taranaki Herald*, 8 May 1863; *Southern Cross*, 14 May 1868; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 May 1864.

NOLAN, SIR ROBERT HOWARD (1855-1923) was born at Bathurst, New South Wales, the son of David Nolan (1828-1901, of Londonderry and Auckland). Educated at Wesley College and Auckland College and Grammar school, he went to the Thames goldfields, where he built and operated the Eglinton battery. Returning to Auckland, he entered the warehouse of McArthur and Co., whom he represented for some years in the South Sea islands and afterwards in New Zealand. He was one of the early members of the Pakuranga hunt club and attended most of its meetings.

In 1880 Nolan established an auctioneering and stock agency business in Hawera (in which he was joined later by A. S. Tonks). The business prospered and Nolan took a leading part in the life of the district. He was secretary for many years (to 1889) and afterwards president of the Egmont Racing club; judge for the Patea and Waverley and Waitotara clubs, and secretary of the Egmont hunt club. He represented Taranaki district clubs on the racing conference, and was one of the first appeal judges in New Zealand racing. As a volunteer Nolan was a lieutenant in the Hawera Rifles. He was chairman of the Mokoia domain board before it was taken over by the government, chairman of the Hawera Gas Co. and a director of the permanent building society. Nolan married (1882) Octavia, daughter of Major D. S. Durie (q.v.). After retiring from business he spent some years in London. During the great war he managed a soldiers' club in Bloomsbury and was an untiring official of the New Zealand War Contingent Association. Created C.B.E. in 1918, he was knighted in Jun 1923 and died on 13 Jul (his widow

NOPERA

being granted the style and title of 'Lady.')

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); Chadwick; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *N.Z. Herald*, 11 Jan 1901, 14 Jul 1923.

NOPERA, NGAKUKU PANAKAREAO (?-1856), a chief of Te Patu hapu of Rarawa and of Aupouri, was the son of Te Kaka, a brave and influential chief who was driven from his lands at Oruru and took refuge in the Three Kings islands. His son took the name 'Panakareao' from an incident of the flight when Te Kaka was tangled in the vines and almost captured. With a Rarawa and Aupouri contingent, Panakareao accompanied Titore against the Thames tribes in 1831-33 and carried on a separate campaign as far as Whakatanu, where he suffered a repulse at the hands of the Ngati-Awa. A mission station was established at Kaitaia in 1833, and shortly afterwards Panakareao's wife (later baptised as Eleonora) was converted. This masterful woman was one of the three women who signed the Treaty of Waitangi.

Panakareao having adopted Christianity, was a practical missionary, carrying the Bible from village to village and urging the tribes to adopt the new faith. In 1837 he complained to Busby of the conduct of the Ngapuhi fighting in Busby's presence. He asked for a resident and soldiers at Kaitaia. Hobson was much impressed by his civilised and cleanly mode of life and fine manners. His speech in favour of the Treaty carried the meeting at Kaitaia.

In the earliest days of British sovereignty Panakareao reoccupied his tribal lands, and sold a large area to Hobson. This led in Apr 1843 to renewed fighting with Heke, against whom Panakareao built a pa. Eventually the missionaries settled the dispute and he withdrew and settled again at Kaitaia. Bishop Selwyn also was impressed by the Christian spirit of Nopera, the neat little church in which he regularly attended service, and by his observance of family prayers. Nevertheless Nopera did not enjoy the full confidence of the missionaries. At the time of the outbreak at Bay of Islands in 1845 his influence prevented the Whangaroa and Kaitaia chiefs from allowing their people to go to the Bay, and obviated the widening of the trouble. He himself rendered valuable service in the field. Colonel Despard found him shrewd, sensible, thought-

NORMANBY

ful and deliberate in his judgment. Nopera died on 12 Apr 1856 from cold contracted by riding twice through a swollen stream.

G.B.D.P., 1841-44; Buller; Carleton; Buick, *Waitangi*; W. Williams.

NORMANBY, GEORGE AUGUSTUS CONSTANTINE PHIPPS, 2nd marquis of (1819-90), was the son of the 1st marquis. At the age of 19 he entered the Scots Fusilier Guards, with which he served in Canada. He resigned his commission in 1847 and was elected Liberal member for Scarborough, a seat which he held for 11 years. He was a whip during three administrations, and was Controller of the Household (1851), treasurer of the Royal Household (1853-58) and a member of the Privy Council. In 1858 he was appointed lieutenant-governor of Nova Scotia, a position he filled until 1863, when on succeeding to his father's title he returned to England.

In 1871 Normanby was appointed Governor of Queensland. Three years later, having been created a K.C.M.G., he was appointed Governor of New Zealand. He assumed the administration on 3 Dec 1874. He was a man of considerable experience, who appeared to be indolent and good-natured, with little ability and an indisposition for trouble and responsibility. A series of constitutional disputes demonstrated, on the contrary, that he had clear perception, good political knowledge and a strict sense of public duty. He saw the provinces abolished, the counties established and the education act passed—a very revolutionary programme for those days. He had no disputes at all with Vogel, Pollen and Atkinson; but when Grey came into office it was soon clear that there would be constant friction between these two strong personalities. Every step in the conquest of ministerial supremacy over the governor was watched with interest both in New Zealand and other self-governing colonies. Knowing thoroughly the rules by which governors were then guided, Normanby was not disposed to seek the line of least resistance. Grey at an early stage asked for a dissolution, on the ground that the House had been elected (two years earlier) under the auspices of the Atkinson Government, and was not likely to enable him to carry out his policy. Normanby contended that an election would not produce any considerable change in the House. A vote

NORRIE

of censure was passed on the Governor by the House for refusing to make an appointment to the Legislative Council when a vote of no-confidence was pending. Grey and his colleagues held that the Governor had no right to take cognisance of a matter which was being agitated in the lower house as a reason for declining to act on the advice of his ministers. When Normanby asked what reply he should make to this resolution, the ministry declined to give any advice or to accept his suggestion that, failing such advice, they should resign. In both these cases the Secretary of State upheld the Governor, but he was advised to consider carefully the views of his ministers. In Dec 1877 Grey advised the Governor not to assent to the land bill which had originated with the previous Government but had been passed in the session just concluded (after Grey took office). Normanby refused on the reasonable ground that Grey should have taken the responsibility of defeating the bill in Parliament. Grey and Normanby were in conflict during the whole time they were working together. Grey accused the Governor of treating his ministers not as advisers but as servants.

Normanby was created G.C.M.G. in 1877. He left New Zealand on 21 Feb 1879, having been appointed to the governorship of Victoria. There again he was involved in somewhat similar disputes with ministers—a phenomenon of the times. It was proposed to appoint him thereafter to South Australia, but a protest was made in that colony. Consequently he returned to England (1884) and retired from public life, being rewarded with the G.C.B. He died on 3 Apr 1890. Normanby married (1844) Laura, daughter of Captain Robert Russell, R.N.

*App. H.R.*, 1877 A7; 1878 AI, A2, A4; *N.Z. Gaz.*, 1878, *pass.*; Gisborne (p); Saunders; Rusden; Dilke; Des Voeux, i, 145-6; Keith; Hight and Bamford; *The Times*, 4 Apr 1890. Portrait: Parliament House; Government House, Wellington.

NORRIE, THOMAS (1825-1905) was born at Montrose. He was a fellow student at Edinburgh with the Revs David Bruce and William Will (q.v.). Being licensed to preach, he was appointed assistant in the parish of Tolbooth, Edinburgh. Ordained in 1855 by the Free Church presbytery of Brechin, he married Eliza

NORTH

Angus Stevens (d. 1898) and sailed in the *Joseph Fletcher* for Auckland, arriving in Oct. Having first preached in the Wesleyan chapel, Norrie received a call and was appointed to have charge of the district south of Auckland, which included Papakura, Drury and Wairoa. He lived in Drury until a manse was built (1860). The Waikato war breaking out and extending into the heart of his district, he became a military chaplain, and saw a great deal of service attending to the spiritual wants of settlers and soldiers. He held a service at the camp at Rangiriri on 22 Nov 1863, after the battle. His church at Pukekohe was the centre of hard fighting in Sep. Norrie died on 11 May 1905.

Dickson (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 12 May 1905.

NORRIE, WILLIAM was born in Scotland, and educated at Greenock Academy and Glasgow and Edinburgh Universities, graduating M.A. with high honours in classics. He taught at Greenock Academy, the Edinburgh Institution and Merchiston Castle School. In 1875 he was classical master in Dr A. H. Bryce's collegiate school in Edinburgh, when he was selected as headmaster of the Otago Boys' High School. As the culmination of a public controversy as to the jurisdiction of the education board inspectors, Norrie refused to allow them to examine the school. Eventually strained relations between the headmaster and the board led to his resignation (Oct 1877). He returned to England (1878) and was appointed headmaster of the undenominational schools at Kimberley, South Africa.

*Otago H.S.O.B. Reg.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 13 Mar 1875; 5 Apr 1875, 28 Aug 1877, 3 Aug 1933 (p).

NORTH, ALFRED (1845-1924), who was born in England, was trained at Rawdon Baptist College and ordained in 1869 to the pastorate of Harborne, Birmingham. In 1882 he came to New Zealand as minister of the Hanover street Baptist Church, Dunedin. In 1900 he took up missionary work at Calcutta, and on his return took charge of the Baptist Church at Ponsonby, and later at Epsom, Auckland (retiring in 1917). North was an outstanding figure in the New Zealand Baptist church, being a founder, twice president (1884, 1886), and an executive member of the New Zealand Baptist union, and a founder of the New Zea-

NORTHCROFT

land Baptist missionary society and of the Sunday school union. He edited the *New Zealand Baptist* for several years and wrote a number of works on Baptism and its history. He died in Dunedin on 3 Dec 1924.

*Evening Post*, 4 Dec 1924.

NORTHCROFT, HENRY WILLIAM (1844-1923) was born in Chelmsford, Essex, a son of William Northcroft (q.v.). Arriving in New Zealand in 1851 by the *Cressy*, he attended Bishop Hobhouse's school in Nelson. On the outbreak of hostilities in 1860, he joined the Taranaki colonial forces, serving in Taranaki and Wanganui. During 16 years' service he saw 49 actions. In 1877 he was appointed resident magistrate for the Waikato district, later warden and magistrate of the Thames goldfields, and stipendiary magistrate at Auckland (1892). He retired in 1909. Two years later he was awarded the New Zealand Cross. In 1912 Northcroft accepted an appointment as chief justice and resident commissioner of the Cook Islands, where he drafted the Cook Islands bill, inaugurated the school system and instituted experimental agricultural plantations at Raratonga. In 1880 he married Margaret, daughter of James Henderson. Northcroft died in Dec 1923.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Gudgeon (p); *Auckland Star*, 21 Jul 1909.

NORTHCROFT, WILLIAM (1807-88) was trained as an architect and surveyor, and practised in Essex. Coming to New Zealand in the *Cresswell* (1852), he took up land at Bell Block and served in the militia during the Taranaki war. Thereafter until 1867 he was surveyor of roads and bridges. After retiring he again practised his profession. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell (1861-65), and was provincial secretary managing the business of the Council all the time. On one occasion he acted as deputy-superintendent. The Council having adopted responsible government (1866), he resigned and for a year or two was surveyor of roads and bridges. In 1868 he became secretary of the board of education and he was afterwards secretary of the education board. For many years Northcroft was superintendent of St Mary's Sunday School. He died on 11 Apr 1888. (See H. W. NORTHCROFT and C. BROWN.)

NUKU-PEWAPEWA

*Taranaki P.E. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 12 Apr 1888.

NUKU-PEWAPEWA (?-1839), a celebrated chief of the Kahukura-Awhitia sub-tribe of Ngati-Kahungunu (Wairarapa), was a son of Tamaroro and grandson of Te Ahi. As a lad he was adept at mimicry, and later contrived by stealth to learn the karakia of the tohunga. On reaching man's estate he built himself a pa (Nga-mahanga) on the Ruamahanga river, strongly fortified and provided with an underground passage. It was garrisoned by 100 men and was never taken. His first successful fight was the capture of Maungarake pa, which was occupied by Ngati-Haumoana, Waitaha and Tama-wahine under Te Toko-o-te-Rangi and Te Haupapa-o-te-Rangi. The latter was captured but spared with 400 of his people. Nuku had another triumph at the siege of Oruhi pa, on the Whareama river, where he planned an ambush and enticed the defenders to come out by sending forward a weak party to the attack.

Nuku suffered considerable loss in an attack on his pa Pehikatia by the Ngapuhi and Ngati-Whatua under Tuwhare (1820), but turned the tables by a ruse and captured many prisoners and some guns. In 1821 he followed the invaders as far as Porirua. Later, when pressed by Ngati-Awa from Whanganui-a-Tara (Port Nicholson), he retreated to Ahuriri (Napier), making a stand at Waimarama. When he took his people to Nukutaurua (Mahia Peninsula) to be nearer to European traders, the Ngati-Toa, Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Raukawa took possession of Wairarapa. Nuku returned with a taua (including Hapuku), advanced towards the greatest concentration, at Pikoke, near Featherston, and by a night attack surprised Te Wharepouri. The latter escaped with difficulty, but his wife, Te Ua-mairangi, and eldest daughter, Ripeka te Kakapi, were captured. Nuku sent the former back to Whanganui-a-Tara with a strong guard to offer peace. Having acceded to the invitation of Pareihe to assist in resisting Te Heuheu, who was besieging Roto-a-Tara, he obtained guns from the whalers at Nukutaurua. They defeated the taua of Ngati-Tuwharetoa, Waikato and Ngati-Raukawa, and then proceeded to help Ngati-Porou against their northern neighbours. Another attack having been made by

## NURSE

Ngati-Tuwharetoa (under Te Heuheu), Ngati-Raukawa (under Te Whatanui) and Whanganui (under Pehi Turoa), Nuku-pewapewa and Pareihe, assisted by Te Wera (q.v.), made an expedition to Taupo and defeated the local tribe at Omakukura, after which peace was made. Having avenged losses suffered at the hands of Rangitane, Nuku returned to his home at Ahuriri to receive the peace messengers of Wharepouri (who was, in fact, on the way), but as he entered Hawkes Bay in his canoe Nuku was drowned in a fierce gale at Te Whakaki, near Wairoa (before 1840). Wharepouri honoured the agreement come to and retired with his people to Whanganui-a-Tara, leaving the 'Vairarapa plains to the Ngati-kahungunu.

Nuku-pewapewa was of exceptional stature. He was a noted poet, his compositions revealing a deep knowledge of the mythology of his race.

*Polyn. Jour.*, vol. 25, p. 6 and vol. 45, p. 364 (T. W. Downes).

NURSE, WILLIAM HUGH (1832-85), served in the Royal Navy. He was appointed in 1852 mate in the *Salamander* on the East Indies

## NURSE

station, and on the outbreak of the Crimean war he served in the Baltic as a lieutenant in the *Ajax*. In 1855 he was appointed to the *Cossack*, in which he served in North America and the West Indies. In 1857 Nurse came to New Zealand and took up a cattle station on Lake Te Anau in company with the Hankinsons. Some time later he purchased the Blackwater estate, near Riverton, where he lived for the rest of his life. He was prominent in the movement for the separation of Southland from Otago, and was a member of the Southland Provincial Council for Aparima (1861-67). He was twice deputy-superintendent (1865), and was a member of the executive (1866-67). In Jun 1868 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he remained a member until his death (23 May 1885). Nurse was a man of retiring disposition. He spoke seldom either in Parliament or in the local bodies of which he was a member (the Aparima road board and the Wallace county council). He was a justice of the peace and a member of the licensing bench.

Admiralty records; *Southland Times*, 24 May 1885. Portrait: Parliament House.

## O

O'BRIEN, LOUGHLIN (1820-1901) was born in Dublin, and came to New Zealand in the forties. He served his articles to the law with Conroy (finishing with Merriman) and was one of the first two solicitors admitted to practise after so qualifying (1851). He represented the City of Auckland in the first Parliament (1853-55), joined the government service in 1855, and held various offices (returning officer and revising barrister; sheriff 1856; registrar of the supreme court 1865-70). In 1880 he was appointed a judge of the native land court, retiring in 1899. He died on 17 Apr 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Apr 1901.

O'CALLAGHAN, ARTHUR PYNE (1837-1930), who was born in Fermoy, Ireland, graduated B.A. at Dublin University in 1859, and two years later was ordained in the Anglican Church. Arriving in Lyttelton by the *Greyhound* in 1863, he spent two years in the Oxford parish, and resigned to take up farming in the Lincoln district and on the Peninsula. He was a member of the Springs road board (1882-88) and represented Lincoln in the House of Representatives as a supporter of the Liberal party (1881-88). For some years he was in charge of the lands department in South Canterbury, and in 1897 he was appointed supervising valuer in Christchurch. He retired in 1902 and died on 17 Dec 1930. He was a prominent freemason.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 18 Dec 1930.

O'CARROLL, PATRICK JOSEPH FELIX VAL-  
ENTINE O'NEILL was born at Castlepollan, county Westmeath, Ireland, and educated at St Vincent's College, Castleknock; St Stanislaus College, Rahan; and Dublin University. He

studied medicine at the St Cæcilia School, the Royal College of Surgeons and the Royal College of Physicians, Dublin. In 1862 he came to Melbourne as surgeon in the *Queen of the South*. Next year he was medical superintendent of the *Star of India*, which brought the Australian military settlers to Auckland. He was appointed assistant-surgeon in the militia and was later, at his own request, transferred to the Waikato militia, then to Colonel Lyon's force, with which he saw a great deal of service. In 1863 he was present at the capture of Jonathan's pa and in Nov he was sent to bring the wounded back from Rangiriri to Auckland and to take charge of native prisoners. For gallantry during a seven days' siege he was promoted captain. He was at the Gate Pa (Apr 1864) in charge of the ambulance and afterwards attached to the Arawa contingents operating on the East Coast after the murder of Volkner (1865). Towards the end of the year he was ordered to Taranaki and attached to the mounted corps, with which he marched to meet General Chute's force from the south (Jan 1866). He then settled in Taranaki, where his skill as a surgeon, his generosity and fine human qualities earned him the confidence of the public.

At the time of the White Cliffs massacre (1869) O'Carroll again took the field. In 1874 he was transferred to the Armed Constabulary. In 1881 he accompanied the Parihaka force. In 1891 he was promoted brigadier-surgeon. He married Alice, daughter of Octavius Carrington. From 1880 to 1896 he was associated with the New Plymouth hospital as surgeon and later as medical superintendent. On retiring he returned to Ireland.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Skinner (P).

## O'CONNOR

O'CONNOR, CHARLES YELVERTON (1843-1902), the youngest son of John O'Connor, was born in Gravelmouth, county Meath, Ireland; was educated at the Waterford endowed school, and apprenticed in 1859 to J. Challoner Smith, M.L.C.E., a railway contractor. After some years with railway construction companies in Ireland he came to New Zealand in 1865, and was appointed assistant engineer (under Dobson) to the Canterbury provincial government, bearing much of the responsibility for the road to the West Coast. In 1870 he was engineer for Westland, and in 1880 he rose to be inspector of engineering for the South Island, a General Government post. From 1883 to 1890 O'Connor was Under-secretary of Public Works. In 1890 he was appointed marine engineer, but the following year he went to Western Australia as engineer-in-chief. There he carried out the construction of the Fremantle harbour and the Coolgardie pumping scheme, and was also general manager of railways. O'Connor was an engineer and economist of outstanding ability. In 1897 he was created C.M.G. He died on 8 Mar 1902.

*App. H.R. (N.Z.)*, 1871-72 D; 1874-80 E; 1882 D; 1883 D2, 1887 D6; 1890 D8; 1891 (ii) D1, 3, 4; Dr Merab Harris, biography, in *Studies of Univ. of Western Australia*, Oct 1934 (p); Dobson; *Lyttelton Times*, 26 May 1881, 12 Mar 1902; *N.Z. Times*, 12 Mar 1902; *The Press*, 13 Mar; *Evening Post*, 11 Mar.

O'CONNOR, EUGENE JOSEPH (1835-1912) was born in county Roscommon, Ireland, and educated at St Omer, France, and at Esker College, Ireland. In 1854 he emigrated to Victoria, and in the early sixties came to the goldfields of Otago. In 1867 he settled at Buller. He represented this district in the Nelson Provincial Council (1869-73), and Westport (1874-75). He was provincial secretary and treasurer. O'Connor was M.H.R. for Buller (1871-75 and 1884-93), and was responsible for passing the Westport harbour act in 1884. In 1886 he was chairman of the legislative expenditure committee. He was also honorary chairman of the Westport harbour board, chairman of the Buller county council and a member of the Westport borough council. He died in Jul 1912.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 31 Jul 1912; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

## OREY

O'DONOVAN, JOHN (1858-1927) was born at Ross Carbery, county Cork, the son of Florence O'Donovan, farmer. Educated at a primary school there, he served for a while as assistant teacher at Ross Carbery under the commissioner of national education. In 1878 he came to New Zealand and joined his brother Richard (who was contracting on the West Coast and represented Okarito in the Westland Provincial Council in 1875). In 1879 O'Donovan joined the police force, in which he served for 20 years before reaching the rank of sergeant (1898). In that year he was appointed to have charge of the depot established by Commissioner Tunbridge at Wellington for the training of recruits. In 1908 he became sub-inspector, being stationed afterwards at Palmerston North (1908); as inspector in charge at Invercargill (1911); at Hawkes Bay (1912); superintendent at Dunedin (1915); and at Wellington (1915). In 1916 he succeeded John Cullen as commissioner. O'Donovan was in charge of the detachment which escorted the Duke and Duchess of York in New Zealand in 1901, and in 1920 (as commissioner) he controlled the arrangements for the visit of the Prince of Wales. (M.V.O. 1920). He retired in 1922 (L.S.O.), and died on 8 Apr 1927. O'Donovan married (1892) Josephine, widow of Richard Whitaker, of the Railway department.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; personal information.

OGSTON, FRANK (1846-1917) was born at Aberdeen and educated there. He was for some time in the North of Scotland Bank and in a mercantile office before proceeding to the study of medicine at Aberdeen (M.D. 1872), Paris, Prague and Vienna. He practised for a few years, and was then appointed assistant professor of medical jurisprudence and deputy health officer for Aberdeen. In 1886 he was appointed professor of medical jurisprudence at Otago University. He also engaged in private practice. Ogston died on 7 Sep 1917.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Univ. calendar*; Fulton; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 Sep 1917.

OKEY, HENRY JAMES HOBBS (1857-1918) was born at Frankley road, Taranaki, and educated in New Plymouth, thereafter spending many years as a cattle and sheep farmer. He was for 25 years a member of the Frankley road board (and much of the time chairman

## OLIVER

and secretary) and 12 years on the Taranaki county council (nine years chairman) and a member of the school committee. He promoted the Frankley Road Dairy Co., of which he was chairman; was once president of the Taranaki A. and P. association, and a member of the licensing bench. Okey twice contested the Taranaki seat in Parliament (on the first occasion as an independent Liberal). In May 1907 he won the seat against E. Dockerill (Liberal) and W. G. Malone (Independent Liberal). He represented Taranaki until his death on 13 Sep 1918. He married (1883) Louise Morey (New Plymouth), who died on 28 Aug 1937.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Oct 1918; *Taranaki Herald*, 14 Sep 1918. Portrait: Parliament House.

OLIVER, ARTHUR ROBERT, came to New Zealand in the early sixties and settled in the Nelson district. He represented Waimea in the Nelson Provincial Council for two years (1865-67) and in the House of Representatives for over a year (1866-67). After six years in New Zealand he returned to England (1867).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v.

OLIVER, RICHARD (1830-1910) was born in Penzance, Cornwall. Coming to Otago in the early sixties, he built the Port Chalmers railway (in partnership with George Proudfoot). He was senior partner in Oliver and Ulph and the founder and largest shareholder in the New Zealand Hardware Co. He also had extensive station properties in the province.

Oliver was member of the Provincial Council for Mount Ida (1873-75). In 1878 he was elected to Parliament for Dunedin City, which he represented until 1881. He was Minister of Public Works in the Hall ministry (1879-81); minister without portfolio for the balance of its term and afterwards in the Whitaker ministry; and Postmaster-general in the Atkinson administration (1883-84). He was called to the Legislative Council (1887). He was a director of the Dunedin and South Seas Exhibition (1889-90). About 1901 Oliver resigned from the Council and returned to live in England. He married (1858) Ellen, a daughter of William Purchase (Penzance), and (1885) Louise d'Este, daughter of J. S. Courtenay, and sister of the Rt Hon L. H. Courtenay. He died on 29 Nov 1910.

## OLLIVIER

Oliver made generous gifts of pictures to the Dunedin art gallery.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.L.*, i (p), iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Nov 1910. Portrait: Parliament House.

OLLIVIER, JOHN (1812-93) was born in Isle of Wight, the son of Claude Nicholas Ollivier. He received his education for the most part at the college at Abbeville, France, and then went into the publishing business in London, where he spent 20 years. He recalled that his firm published the first edition of Kinglake's *Eothen* in 1844. Ollivier was married (1837) to Elizabeth Morton (d. 1892) of Lincolnshire, and before they left for New Zealand the couple had eight sons and one daughter. Ollivier took an active interest in social and philanthropic movements. He was a strong supporter of the Corn Law League. He appears to have been a member of the board of guardians in the parish of St James; at any rate he was vestry clerk and clerk to the guardians. He stood throughout for Conservative principles; but his friendships were non-party. When he decided to leave for New Zealand he was presented with a cheque for 400 sovereigns at a public dinner at which two-thirds of the diners were political opponents.

Ollivier sailed with his family for New Zealand in the *John Taylor* on 10 Jul 1853, arriving on 17 Oct. He lost no time in obtaining a leasehold farming property at upper Riccarton, where he lived for six or seven years. He could not refrain from activities which had engaged him in the Old Country. In 1860 he gave up the farm and removed to Christchurch, building a house in Ferry road and starting in business with his son as auctioneers. He was elected to the Provincial Council in 1855 for Christchurch Country district, which in 1856 returned him to Parliament. He continued to represent it until the middle of 1860, when he resigned. Ollivier held office in several provincial executives. Returned to the Council for Heathcote in 1857, he took office as provincial secretary under Tancred, continued under Cass, and eventually was himself the leader of an administration for a few weeks (1859). An admirer of Moorhouse, he warmly supported the railway and tunnel project. Moorhouse referred to him as 'the Canterbury

wet nurse' and Hall remarked that 'he seemed always to have found something to do in the public interests of the province.' A witty and attractive speaker, he drew better houses in Christchurch than professional lecturers. When his official position prevented him standing for the Council, he was nominated for Seadown, simply to enable the electors to hear him make a speech.

Having resigned from Parliament (1860), Ollivier in 1861 inaugurated the agitation to secure local government for Christchurch. A petition was presented to the provincial government in Dec and received a favourable reply. In Feb 1862 the electors chose their Council and next month the Council elected its mayor. When Hall retired from the chairmanship of the City Council (1863) Ollivier was elected for the next term (1863-64). Noting the waning popularity of Moorhouse, he tried in 1863 to secure a new Superintendent who would represent a compromise between the FitzGerald and Moorhouse parties. He nominated Bealey, who was elected unopposed. At this general election Ollivier was returned for Christchurch City, which he represented until 1866. He frequently acted as chairman of committees, and occasionally as speaker. In 1865 (when Bowen retired) he was elected speaker (1865-66). During 1865 he was for a short period deputy-superintendent. At the dissolution Ollivier retired from politics to become provincial auditor of road board accounts. In Dec 1881 he was appointed resident magistrate, and for eight years he held that office at Lyttelton, Kaiapoi, Christchurch, and Ashburton. He was a member of the Canterbury land board (1884-88).

On resigning from the bench (1889), though now approaching 80 years of age, he made two efforts to re-enter Parliament. In 1889 he contested Lincoln against Alfred Saunders. He was a strong advocate of protection. Holding the views he did on politics, he declined to organise the election or take any steps beyond stating his views to the electors. Saunders won by 676 to 320. A few months later he contested Christchurch North, but was defeated by E. W. Humphreys.

Ollivier was a man of fine public spirit, quite disinterested. At a public presentation in 1887 Sir John Hall read a letter written to Ollivier

by a high official in England on the eve of his sailing for New Zealand in which he said: 'Of all the men whom I have ever encountered, you appear to me always taking the side of justice, mercy, and good order, opposing every measure of a contrary tendency; whilst the moderation and soundness of your views, and the honesty of purpose with which they have been invariably advocated, never failed to carry with them the sympathy and respect of their political opponents.' Ollivier died on 31 Jul 1893.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Cox; *Lyttelton Times*, 1 Aug 1893; *The Press*, 17 May 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

O'MEARA, JOHN (1856-1904) was born in Melbourne, educated at the model school and at St Francis and St Augustine's schools. He came to New Zealand in 1868. Entering the Post and Telegraph department at Queenstown (1871), he spent 14 years in the service and then engaged in business in the town. He was chairman of the Lake county council for three years and a member of the Queenstown borough council for eight. In 1893 he contested the Wakatipu seat in Parliament against W. Fraser (q.v.) and Larnach, being second on the poll. O'Meara then removed to Pahiatua. At the election of 1896 he won the Pahiatua seat in the Liberal interest and retained it until his death on 3 Jul 1904. For several years he was a Government whip. O'Meara was a keen sportsman and president for some years of the Pahiatua Racing Club. He married a daughter of J. A. Eissenhardt, architect, of Grey-mouth.

*Cycl. N.z.*, vi; *N.Z. Times*, 6 Jun 1900, 5 Jul 1904.

O'NEILL, ALLAN (1802-86) was born in county Leitrim, Ireland, educated in the north and trained as a surveyor and civil engineer. He was engaged for some years in the ordnance survey and on railroad construction. In 1842 O'Neill came to Tarapaki as a surveyor under the New Zealand Company. The staff being reduced soon after, he walked overland to Auckland, arriving in Sep 1842. There he surveyed the North Shore and Takapuna on behalf of the Government, laid out a number of the Auckland streets and made a map of the district between Auckland and Bay of Islands.

In 1846 he married Annie Sophia (d. 3 Aug 1901), daughter of Captain Henry H. Bell, 64th Regiment (of county Tyrone). He was elected to the Legislative Council of New Ulster (Sep 1852) for the Northern Division. The council was not convened, but in the following year he was returned for Northern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council, of which he was a member until 1865. He was a member of the Church of England and a lay representative on the diocesan synod; chairman of the Takapuna road board and of the Lake school committee. He died on 5 Jul 1886.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Auckland P.C. Pmc.; N.Z. Herald*, 6 Jul 1886.

O'NEILL, CHARLES, a son of John O'Neill, of Auckland, was by profession a civil engineer. He laid out the town of Milton (Otago) in the early sixties, and with Thomas Kingston and J. D. Baird he explored the country between vWellington and Wairarapa to discover a suitable route for a railway (1867). He practised at Thames and represented the Thames goldfields in Parliament (1866-69) and Thames (1871-75). As provincial engineer in Wellington O'Neill first proposed tramways in the City (1875), and he brought steam trams into operation there in 1878. As an architect he designed many public buildings.

'Veston; Beauchamp; 'Yard.

O'NEILL, JAMES (1819-82) was born at Manor Hamilton, county Leitrim, and came to New Zealand as a youth with his brother A. O'Neill (q.v.). He was in business in Auckland for some years, and took a leading part in public affairs. In 1853 he was elected to represent Auckland City in the Provincial Council and sat until 1857, being for the last year a member of the executive. He sat again for Auckland West (1861-68). O'Neill also represented the City in the House of Representatives (1853-55) and some years later was member for the Northern Division (1861-69). He was then called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until 1872, when he retired to live in England, where he died on 24 May 1882. He was interested in the Mechanics' Institute, was a justice of the peace and a visiting justice.

*Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); *Auckland P.C. Pmc.; N.Z. Herald*, 26 May 1882.

ONSLOW, SIR WILLIAM HILLIER, EARL OF (1853-1911) was the only son of George Augustus Cranley Onslow. He succeeded his great uncle as fourth earl in 1870. Born at Bletsoe, he was educated at Eton and was a lord-in-waiting to Queen Victoria (1880 and 1886-87). Soon after vacating this position he was appointed parliamentary Under-secretary for the Colonies, representing the Colonial Office in the House of Lords; and in 1888 Secretary to the Board of Trade. He was a vice-president of the first Colonial Conference in 1887. He was created K.C.M.G. in 1888.

In May 1889 Onslow assumed office as Governor of New Zealand, and soon afterwards was promoted G.C.M.G. He was a successful governor, business-like and straightforward in his administration, frank in character and fond of outdoor activities. He took a great interest in acclimatisation, and used his influence to get reserves set aside as bird sanctuaries. In political matters Onslow was not so happy. When the Atkinson Government was defeated at the polls (Dec 1890) it recommended the Governor to approve several appointments to the Legislative Council. Onslow refused to make more than six and that only on the assurance that they were needed to strengthen the chamber and not to reward party services. The opposition, led by Ballance, protested to the Governor against the appointments as being unconstitutional. Onslow replied that they had already been made, adding rather brusquely that he was responsible only to the Colonial Office. Lord Knutsford, in acknowledging the despatch, admitted that Onslow had acted in accordance with his instructions, but he 'did not desire to be understood to offer any opinion upon the action of your ministers in tendering such advice.'

Onslow did a service to colonial governments in requesting the Colonial Office to put upon a proper footing the responsibility of governor and ministers in regard to the exercise of the prerogative of mercy. In a despatch dated 7 Feb 1891 he stated that the cabinet (in the case of Mahi Kai) had asserted its right to advise the governor upon this as upon all other matters. Onslow did not object to this claim. He accepted the Government's advice, but asked that the matter should be made clear in the Royal Instructions. All the other colonies

## ORBELL

agreed with the New Zealand view, and it was regularised accordingly. Onslow took a considerable interest in the Maori people, who were much flattered by his action in giving his second son the name 'Huia' and presenting him for adoption to the Ngati-Huia tribe.

Onslow resigned at the end of 1891. That he was not popular was due mainly to his personal exclusiveness and his prejudice against Wellington from the fact that his son had suffered a critical attack of typhoid fever there. Before leaving on 24 Feb 1892 he was asked by his advisers to appoint a batch of new members to the Legislative Council, where an overwhelming majority was obstructing the Liberal party's legislation. Onslow refused to sanction the appointments, and was said to have left a letter for his successor advising him to the same course. In view of the reasoned decision of Knutsford on the previous incident, Onslow would appear not to have been justified either in withholding his assent or in passing the decision on to a successor who knew nothing of the circumstances. In 1895 he became Parliamentary Under-secretary for India, and he remained at the India Office till 1900. In 1903 he was president of the Board of Agriculture and was made a Privy Councillor. He was chairman of committees of the House of Lords from 1905-11, retiring on account of ill-health. He died on 23 Oct 1911.

Onslow married (1875) the Hon Florence Coulston, daughter of Lord Gardner.

*D.N.B.*; *App. H.R.*, 1891-92; Burke; Keith; Gisborne (p); Reeves; Hight and Bamford; *The Times*, 24 Oct 1911.

ORBELL, MACLEOD CLEMENT (1838-1914) was a son of John Orbell (1800-79) and came to Otago with his parents in the *Mariner* (1849). (John Orbell settled at Waikouaiti. A good farmer, he was conservative and retiring in disposition, a great reader and did duty as a justice of the peace. He died on 13 Jan 1879.) Macleod was brought up on his father's farm, and afterwards had land himself in the district, including J. R. Jones's Matanaka property, which he took on lease in 1871. He had also a lease in south Canterbury. He was the first mayor of West Hawkesbury (1866-68); represented Waikouaiti in the Otago Provincial Council (1866-67) and was a member of the

## O'REILLY

executive. In 1891 he went to live at Geraldine, Canterbury. He published his reminiscences in 1909 and died on 10 Mar 1914. Orbell married a daughter of Colonel Bamford, of the 73rd Regiment.

*Parltry Record; Otago P.C. Proc.*; Orbell, *op. cit.*; Christie; Acland; Hocken, *Otago.* Bidwill; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Jun 1891, 23 Mar 1914.

O'REGAN, CORNELIUS JOSEPH (1874-95) was born at Inangahua valley, the son of P. O'Regan, farmer. While attending the Totara Flat school, he early showed ability, winning a scholarship which gave him two years' education at the Greymouth High School. From there he matriculated (1890) after a year's coaching by B. P. McMahon, of the Roman Catholic school at Reefton. O'Regan showed poetic sensibility, thoughtfulness and a love of literature; and at the age of 17 wrote poetry of a high standard, with verbal felicity and truth of feeling. He wrote verse for the *Canterbury Times*, the *Otago Witness* and the *New Zealand Graphic*. In 1894 he published a small booklet, *Voices of Wave and T'ee*, containing verse written between the ages of 16 and 20. In 1894 he became schoolmaster at Inangahua Junction, a task to which he devoted himself with enthusiasm. He died on 7 Sep 1895. Another small collection *Poems* was published in 1896.

O'Regan was a brother of Patrick Joseph O'Regan (1869-), who was M.H.R. for Inangahua (1893-96) and Buller (1897-99); and was appointed a judge of the Arbitration Court in 1937.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1924; O'Regan, *op. cit.* (port. in *Poems*); *N.Z. Times*, 9 Sep 1895.

O'REILLY, JEREMIAH JOSEPH PURCELL (1799-1880) was born in Cork, Ireland, educated there and in France, and finally in Rome, where he joined the Franciscan Order of Friars. Ordained in 1824, he was appointed to the mission in Cork under Dr Delaney and was afterwards in the mission at Kilkenny under Dr Kinsella. In 1841 O'Reilly came to Wellington as chaplain to the Hon H. W. Petre, and he established the first Catholic Church in Boulcott street. In 1865 he made a tour through the South Island, visiting many goldfield centres, and in 1868 he visited Europe and was

## ORMOND

for a while chaplain to the Papal Zouaves. Returning to New Zealand with Bishop Viard (1870), he was actively engaged in parish work till 1879, when he retired in ill-health.

O'Reilly was the founder of the first Catholic school in Wellington. He was an ardent temperance advocate and spoke eloquently at meetings with Sir William Fox. As an author he published *Exhortatio Ecclesiae*. He died on 21 Jun 1880.

Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 13 Aug 1880; *Wellington Independent*, 16 May 1867.

ORMOND, JOHN DAVIES (1832-1917) was born at Wallingford, Berkshire, the son of Captain F. F. Ormond, R.N. Educated at Plymouth, he came to New Zealand at the age of 16 in "the *Ralph Bernal* with E. J. Eyre (lieutenant-governor of New Munster), who became his brother-in-law.

Appointed private secretary to the lieutenant-governor and clerk to the executive (5 Dec 1849), he resigned in 1852 to take up land at Waipukurau, Hawkes Bay, when there were only about a score of settlers in that part of Wellington province. He was one of a group who some time later leased and purchased the Heretaunga plains. Ormond was a strong advocate of separation from Wellington, and when this was effected he was elected to the Provincial Council of Hawkes Bay, in which he sat continuously until the abolition (for Waipukurau 1859-61; Porangahau 1862-75; Hastings 1875-76). He was speaker (1859-62); provincial treasurer and a member of the executive (1861-67); and acted in 1863, 1865, 1868 and 1869 as deputy for the Superintendent (McLean), whose alter ego he became in both the provincial and the Colonial sphere.

When McLean resigned the superintendency (1869) to accept a portfolio, Ormond was elected as his successor and he retained that office until the abolition. Following McLean, too, he acted as Agent for the General Government on the East Coast in the later days of the Maori war, directing the operations against Te Kooti with considerable freedom and authority. He was present at the engagement at Omarunui (1866). In Parliament he represented Clive (1861-81) and Napier (1884-90). In 1871 he joined the Fox ministry as Minister of Public Works. He took the same portfolio under Waterhouse, but relinquished it in a few

## ORMISTON

weeks (Oct 1812). In the Atkinson ministry of 1876 he was Secretary for Lands and Immigration, and after the reconstruction had charge of the Post Office and Public Works, retiring from the ministry in Oct 1877. In 1879 W. A. Murray tried to induce him to form a Conservative party.

Called to the Legislative Council in 1891, he remained a member of that body until his death (on 6 Oct 1917). Gisborne appraises Ormond as a man of great mental power, cool, observant, cautious and resolute; a deep thinker but lacking in sympathy. He was indifferent to office and dropped out at the first opportunity to devote himself to the affairs of his own district. On behalf of the General Government he arranged the immigration of Scandinavians, and personally settled them in the Seventy Mile Bush. He obtained Sir John Coode's report on Napier harbour, was on the harbour board from the first (1875) and chairman in 1888; was chairman of the education board, the hospital board and the Hawkes Bay county council and the Hawkes Bay rivers board; one of the founders of the Napier High Schools (and chairman of the board), a promoter of the A. and P. society (and president in 1866).

Ormond had properties at Wallingford, Karamu, Woodville and Mahia, and bred the best strains of draught horses, Lincoln and Border Leicester sheep and poultry. He had also a fine thoroughbred racing stud, and won most of the classic races in New Zealand with horses bred by himself. Ormond married (1859) Miss Richardson.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*, *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); vi (p); *N.z.P.D.*, 8 Oct 1917; Gisborne (p); Saunders; Reeves; *N.Z. Spectator*, 21 Feb 1852; *Saturday Advertiser*, 21 Aug 1882; *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 16 Oct 1925; *N.Z. Graphic*, 16 Sep 1893 (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 8 Oct 1917. Portrait: Parliament House.

ORMISTON, WILLIAM (1824-74) was born in Glasgow, and claimed descent from Gosspatrick, first sheriff of Roxburghshire (1100 A.D.), and from Sir James Ormiston, who was attainted for the murder of Darnley. Ormiston received a good education in Glasgow, and went into business in that town. In 1859, leaving his family in Cornwall, he sailed for New Zealand in the *Swordfish*, which stranded on Hobson

Point the day of her arrival in Auckland (II Jul). A week later Onniston sailed in the cutter *Glyde* for vVhangarei with the intention of taking up land. He eventually took a section on the Mangapai river. There he was joined by his wife and family, who arrived by the *Ida Zeigle*' (1861), but during the Hauhau rising moved to Auckland. Ormiston was greatly interested in the Maori people, became well acquainted with their language and customs, and championed their rights in later years with some success. He was instrumental in having three schools started in his district. He was chairman of the Mangapai road board, a member of the school and church committees, and acted in an honorary capacity as medical adviser of both Maori and pakeha. He dressed a large quantity of flax and ground local wheat into flour in small mills of his own.

Taking a great interest in politics, Ormiston at an early date condemned the weakness of the provincial system and advocated constitutional changes. He was keenly interested in the preservation of the bush and wrote to the press from 1868 onwards drawing attention to the destruction of forest for purposes of export since 1853. In 1869 he assisted in the election of Gillies as Superintendent and in 1873-74 he represented Mangapai in the Provincial Council. Ormiston was for some years a close friend of Busby (q.v.) and assisted him in presenting his case for parliamentary consideration. He died on 14 Dec 1874 of erysipelas contracted while attending a native chief.

*Auckland p.e.* Pmc.; information from E. N. Ormiston; papers in Auckland Public Library..

O'RORKE, SIR GEORGE MAURICE (1830-1916) was the son of the Rev John O'Rorke, of Moylough, county Galway, Ireland. He was educated at Dr Smyth's school at Stellerzan, near Dublin, and proceeded to Trinity College with a Dublin exhibition. There he took classical honours, graduating B.A. (1852). He then went to Victoria and had some years' experience on the goldfields as a digger and on sheep stations, including overlanding between Melbourne, the Murray, the Lachlan and Sydney.

In 1854 O'Rorke came to Auckland and with a college friend, Henry Taylor (afterwards secretary and inspector of schools for Auck-

land) he started fanning at Papakura and Onehunga. In 1857 he accepted the post of clerk to the Auckland Provincial Council, which he filled until 1860. In Jan 1861 he stood for the parliamentary representation of Onehunga and defeated Weeks by one vote. He retained the seat until 1890 (the name of the constituency having been changed to Manukau in 1881), and was then defeated by W. F. Buckland. After three years out of Parliament, he defeated his old opponent and was then continuously member for Manukau until 1902, when he was again defeated (by M. M. Kirkbride). Meanwhile, in 1865 O'Rorke was elected to the Provincial Council (for Onehunga) and he retained the seat for the rest of the provincial period. He had the unique experience of being elected speaker of the Council on the day on which he first took his seat, and he held that office with dignity and competence until the provinces were abolished. In 1874 he was a member of the executive. As speaker he became automatically superintendent on the death of John Williamson, but he held the office only pending a new election, at which Sir George Grey was returned unopposed.

O'Rorke was a staunch provincialist and separationist and in Parliament took a leading part in resisting the abolition of the provincial system. In 1868 he was admitted to the bar, being the first to take advantage of the law practitioners' act, which enabled graduates of approved universities to qualify. In Parliament he rapidly attained a prominent position and in 1869 was offered a place in the Fox-Vogel ministry, which he declined. In 1870 he was elected chairman of committees and two years later he accepted the portfolio of Lands and Immigration in the Waterhouse ministry. He continued in these offices in the Fox ministry (1873) and in the succeeding Vogel ministry. A sworn provincialist, O'Rorke severed his association with the Government when Vogel brought down his resolutions (on 13 Aug 1874) foreshadowing the abolition of the provinces. In a speech of rare eloquence and emotion he declared that he would never have accepted a seat in the ministry if he had known that his honourable colleague had in his copious armoury this treacherous dagger to stab the provinces, which they were both sworn to maintain. If he remained in the government he

would do violence to his conscience and would deserve to be branded as a base political traitor.' Taking his notes and papers from his bench, he walked across the House and sat on the opposition benches. It was a few months after this that he assumed temporarily the superintendency of the province, to make way gracefully for Grey. O'Rorke again became chairman of committees and in 1879, on the retirement of Fitzherbert, he was elected speaker. In 1880 he was knighted. During his long occupancy of the Speaker's chair he earned the reputation of being one of the finest speakers in the empire. His knowledge of precedents was perfect, his judgment and temper were never at fault and his control of the proceedings of the House was absolute. On returning to Parliament after an absence of three years (1890-93) he was again elected to the chair, which he occupied until his final retirement from the popular chamber (1902). In 1904 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death (on 25 Aug 1916). He several times moved resolutions favouring the restoration of the provinces.

O'Rorke was an ardent promoter of education. He was one of the founders of the Auckland Grammar School and was a governor from its inception in 1869 until his death, and chairman from 1880. In 1878 he was chairman of the royal commission on university and secondary education, and he was chairman of the Auckland University College council from its first meeting in 1883, and of the Auckland Technical School and a member of the senate of the University of New Zealand from 1879. His appreciation of education was very liberal. He wished to see the establishment of chairs of architecture, music, commerce, law and divinity and did much in the province to foster country libraries.

O'Rorke married (1858) Cecilia (who died on 19 Sep 1910), daughter of Alexander Shepherd.

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 13 Aug 1874 and 29 Jun 1917); *Auckland p.e. Proc.*; Gisborne; Saunders; Beaglehole; *eye!* N.Z., ii; *Public Opinion* (Dunedin), 5 Feb 1881; *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Aug 1916. Portrait: Parliament House.

OSBORNE.GIBBES, SIR EDWARD (1850-1931), the third baronet, son of Sir Samuel (q.v.), was born at Colchester England, cluis-

tened in Sydney' and educated in Auckland, being a pupil of St John's College under the Rev S. Blackburne. In 1871 he joined the government service as a clerk in the Public Works department; was transferred to immigration and in 1877 joined the staff of the new department of Education, in which he rose to chief clerk and eventually to secretary (1905-16). He married in 1879 Sara (d. 9 Jul 1931), daughter of Captain John Mitchell, of the New Zealand Militia. Sir Edward died on 29 Sep 1931, being succeeded by his son Philip Arthur (b. 1884).

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1924; Butchers (p).

OSBORNE.GIBBES, SIR SAMUEL (1803-74) the second baronet, succeeded his grandfather, the first baronet, in 1815. He served as a page to George IV, entered the Royal Military College at Sandhurst, and received his commission in the 96th Regiment. He was aide-de-camp to the governor of Nova Scotia, but shortly retired to manage his estate in the West Indies.

Sir Samuel came to New Zealand in the early fifties and settled at Whangarei, where his fine personal qualities gave him a leading place amongst the settlers. In 1855 he was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat until 1863 when he resigned. He died on 13 Nov 1874. Sir Samuel married, first (1825) Margaret, daughter of Henry Moore, of Cremorgan, Queens county, Ireland; and second (1848) Anne, daughter of Richard Penny, of Dorsetshire.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1855-63; *N.I. Herald*, 25 Nov 1874.

O'SULLIVAN, JOHN, was engaged as manager to a railway company in 1840. In 1841 he came to New Zealand and settled in Marlborough, where he was for many years inspector of public works for the province. He represented Pelorus in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1865-69).

*Marlborough p.e. Proc.*; *eye!* N.z., v, p. 413.

O'SULLIVAN, RICHARD JAMES (1828-89) was born in Ireland, received a university education there, and was a good English and classical scholar. In 1861 he arrived in Auckland and engaged in teaching (John Sheehan being one of his pupils). For some time he was publisher of the *Southern Cross*, and he was also clerk and librarian of the Auckland Provincial Council. When the Council in 1869

## TE OTANE

passed an ordinance providing for the establishment of common schools with aid from public funds he was appointed secretary to the board, and did valuable work visiting the out-districts and organising schools. In 1872 he became inspector of schools, a position in which he continued to exhibit the greatest zeal and ability in building up the education system. On the passage of the act establishing free, secular and compulsory education (1877) O'Sullivan was appointed inspector of schools in the Government service, and he continued in that post until his retirement (1888). He was the author of an excellent manual *Instructions for the Guidance of Teachers*. His death occurred on 5 Nov 1889.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; Butchers, *Young N.Z. and Educ.*; *Auckland Star*, 5 Nov 1889; *N.Z. Herald*, 6, 9 Nov.

TE OTANE, a celebrated chief of the Wairoa branch of Ngati-Kahungunu, the son of Te Maha and nephew of Tapuae. He married Whewhera, a daughter of Rangi-tuanui, of Ngati-Porou and the sister of Moewhare, chief of the Manukanui pa, where Napier parade now is. Rangi-tuanui's people having been slaughtered by Ngati-Hinganga, Otane led a taua against them and killed a party of 50 whom he surprised at the Kahaurua river. Then he surprised the Kakapo pa, and after slaughtering the defenders proceeded in three canoes up the river to attack the main pa at Te Maihi. The enemy were aware of his approach, but inadvertently left a ladder hanging, by which Te Otane gained admission and killed all the garrison. Having loaded the canoes with the bodies of the dead, he returned home. Shortly afterwards he undertook a new expedition against Te Kapu. His cousins, jealous of his overbearing manner, attacked him while his men were absent. He escaped by a ruse, defeated his assailants and proceeded to pa Makeakea to plan revenge. His cousin Taiwhaka-huka, the leader of the plot, fled to Aropaoa-nui, but Te Otane chased him and he escaped with a small following to Wairarapa, where he became chief of a tribe and was afterwards killed in battle. To propitiate Otane, now a man of great fame, the Wairarapa people sent him Taiwhaka-huka's heart in a calabash. Otane built himself a pa at Taramarama, where he was attacked by a strong force sent against

## OUTHWAITE

him by his uncle, Tapuae. He killed the commander in single combat. Tapuae then made peace and the whole tribe proceeded to seek vengeance for injuries suffered at the hands of Apanui. A taua of 2,000 under Te Otane and Te Kallu-Q-te-Rangi marched as far as Opotiki. Te Kahu's attack on three different pas failed, and Te Otane then took command and captured all three.

Lambert; S. P. Smith, *Wars*.

OTTERSON, FRANCIS (1797-1854) was born at Magherafelt, county Londonderry. In the thirties he went to London, and in 1840 he married Jane, daughter of Thomas Heveningham (vVolverhampton). Otterson came to Nelson in the *Lol'd Auckland* (1842). He was member of the Provincial Council for Waimea East (1853-54), and died 19 Oct 1854.

His son, HENRY OTTERSON (1846-1929), was born in Nelson and educated at the Catholic school there and at Nelson College (1856-63). In 1870 he was appointed committee clerk to the House of Representatives; in 1872 reader; in 1875 second clerk assistant; in 1889 clerk assistant; and in 1898 clerk. He published in 1911 notes on proceedings in committee. (C.M.G. 1913; retired 1915.) Otterson married (1875) Octavia, daughter of H. H. Turton. He died on 6 Aug 1929.

*Parltry Recol'd; Nelson Coll. Reg.; C/Cl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924.

OUTHWAITE, THOMAS (1805-79) was born in Westmoreland. He was practising as a solicitor in Paris in 1841 when he received his appointment in New Zealand, to which he proceeded in the *Tyne* with Martin and Swainson (q.v.). He was registrar of the Supreme Court at Auckland and sheriff during the early years of British rule, and had exciting experiences with natives when Maori cases were being heard. In 1843, with Martin and St Hill, he walked overland from vWellington to Auckland. When he retired (1869) Arney paid a tribute to his extraordinary firmness, patience, discretion and self-command. Outhwaite was very fond of music, and was a founder of the Auckland Philharmonic society and of the Choral society, acting as conductor to these and church choirs. He died on 14 Jul 1879.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Jul 1879.

## OWEN

OWEN, SIR RICHARD (1804-92) was born at Lancaster. He was apprenticed to a surgeon and apothecary and studied medicine at Edinburgh University and St Bartholomew's Hospital. The eminent surgeon John Abernethy advised him to accept the position of assistant conservator in the museum of the Royal College of Surgeons. There he made catalogues of the Hunterian collection; in 1836 he was appointed Hunterian professor and in 1849 conservator. He was appointed in 1856 superintendent of the natural history department of the British Museum, and his scheme of a national museum of natural history resulted in the removal of the collections to South Kensington. He retired in 1884 (K.C.B.).

In 1839 a fragment of fossil bone which had been brought from New Zealand by Dr James

## OWEN

Rule (q.v.) was offered to Owen, who could not afford to pay for it out of his **own** pocket. He studied the fragment, however, and declared definitely that it was part of the skeleton of a wingless bird as large as the full-sized male ostrich. Further research established the existence of the moa (dinornis), upon which the reputation of Owen largely rests. In the proceedings of the Zoological Society for 1840 he described the bone, and the discovery was dealt with later in *Dinomis*, pts. 6-8 (1854-56) and *Memoirs on the Extinct Wingless Birds of New Zealand* (1879). Owen made important contributions to many other branches of comparative anatomy and zoology. His life was written by his grandson, the Rev R. O. Owen, in 1894.

*D.N.B.*; *N.Z. Journ. of Science*, Sep 1885; Buick, *Dinornis*; Owen, *op. cit.*

---

---

p

---

PACKE, GEORGE (1836-82) was a son of a lieutenant-colonel of the Grenadier Guards, and got his first commission in the 23rd Regiment (Welsh Fusiliers). He served in the Crimea and the Indian Mutiny, being present at Lucknow. In 1862 Packe came to New Zealand and a few years later with his brother took over the Rain-cliff station in Canterbury. He was for some years in business with De Bourbel in Christchurch as land and commission agents. Packe commanded the Canterbury volunteer district (1868-82) with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He was a keen sportsman. His death occurred on 16 Oct 1882.

Acland; *The Press and Lyttelton Times*, 17 Oct 1882.

PACKER, RICHARD, was the owner of a brewery in the early days of Christchurch. From 1853 to 1860 he sat in the Canterbury Provincial Council for City of Christchurch, serving as provincial treasurer for a time. He was also elected member for the Town of Christchurch in the House of Representatives (1856-60).

*Canterbury P.C. PrD.c.*, 1853-60; *NZP.D.*, 1856-60; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Selwyn Bruce, *The Early days of Canterbury*.

TE PAEA, who was born in 1824, was the daughter of Te Wherowhero and sister of the second Maori King (Matutaera). She was a woman of brilliant intellectual talents, great resolution and liberal ideas. On the inauguration of the King movement she went to live in Waikato, much against the wish of her father. Sir John Gorst considered she would have made a good successor to Te Wherowhero, but she withdrew when Matutaera was proposed. She did her utmost to prevent the outbreak of war, and when it became inevitable

determined to return to her home at Mangere. She made herself responsible, however, for the safety of the government station, school and other property at Te Awamutu. Fearing that Awaitaia's road from Raglan would destroy the security of the King country, she pulled up the survey pegs.

Gorst.

TE PAERATA, HITIRI (1828-1909) was the son of Paerata and a descendant of Hoturoa, chief of the Tainui canoe. He was born near Taupo and was carried by his father in the Ngati-Raukawa heke to Waikanae. Hitiri, with his father, his brother Honi and his sister, Ahumai, took part in the defence of Orakau (Mar-Apr 1864). Paerata and his son Honi were killed, and Ahumai was wounded. It was she who called back to Mair, when he demanded their surrender, that if the men died the women and children would die also. Ahumai died at Taupo in 1908, and Hitiri at Waikanae in Sep 1909.

Lambert; Cowan.

PAERAU TE RANGI.KAITIPUAKE, a prominent chief in the nineteenth century, went in Oct 1863 with Te Heuheu and 300 followers to Waikato to assist in the King movement. In Nov 1867 he visited Napier, ostensibly to make peace, but was warned to leave. In Aug 1869 Paerau and Te Kooti swept down the Mohaka valley, sacking villages and farms. In May 1870 Paerau was inclined to break away from Te Kooti and he approached Preece (q.v.) at Ahikereru and offered to open his country to the pursuing troops. In May 1871 he welcomed Mair and Preece at Ruatahuna, and assisted in the burial of Captain Travers. Thereafter he did what he could to protect his people

PAETAHI

against pressure from Te Kooti, and in Sep took the field with a small body of scouts in pursuit of him.

Lambert; Cowan.

PAETAHI, METE KINGI TERANGI (? 1813-1883), one of the most distinguished chiefs of lower Whanganui, was head of the Nga-Poutama division, having its main settlement at Karatia. His father, Paetahi, was a leader of Whanganui against Te Rauparaha at Kapiti, and was killed by the Nga-rauru at Kai-iwi. After the death of his uncle, Hori Kingi te Anaua, he was the highest in rank on the lower part of the river. One of the old school of rangatira, he declared his loyalty at an early date, and thereafter jealously guarded the passage of the river against hostile incursions. He was chosen amongst the assessors in 1863. He intervened to preserve peace amongst the Arawa at Rotorua and later in Taranaki when Rariri was killed (but without success). When some settlers were murdered on the Whanganui river Paetahi pursued the offenders to justice and, with Donald McLean, he intervened in the tribal fighting in Hawkes Bay and conducted Hapuku back to his home. His voice was raised in the cause of peace at Kohimarama, where Whanganui and Arawa both declared for the Queen. Though unable to stop the fighting at Waitara, he held his own people quiet.

When the King movement was being discussed Paetahi attended the principal meetings and spoke against it. Though a man of peace, he took the field in May 1864 to resist the passage of the Hauhau down the river. In the fight at Moutoa (14 May 1864) he commanded the reserve and completed the rout of the enemy. He did not follow up this success at the time but later, having for the first time received Government ammunition, he returned to attack Peehi Turoa. As the West Coast campaign developed, Mete Kingi commanded his people in the field (Major, N.Z.M.) When the native forces before Weraroa heard that the settlements on the lower Whanganui were in danger they wished to succour them, but Grey persuaded Mete Kingi that they should first help to take Weraroa. This was done and the prisoners were handed over to the Imperial troops. The thanks of the Governor was ac-

PAETAHI

corded to Mete Kingi, who was popularly given the title of 'general.' He then joined up with Major Rookes to relieve Pipiriki, but arrived to find the Europeans had repulsed the enemy. His influence was now directed to inducing the Whanganui to go to Opotiki, whither they went with Majors Brassey and Stapp in the *Stormbird*. Having taken part in all the fighting, Mete Kingi brought his contingent by sea to the West Coast to help General Chute and he rendered service of great value in the march east of the mountain. During Titokowaru's campaign in 1868 he helped to save Whanganui when General Whitmore was away at the East Coast.

When the first Maori representatives were elected to Parliament (1868), Mete Kingi was returned as M.H.R. for the Western Maori, which he represented till 1870. A special act was required to legalise his election as he was a paid assessor from 1863 to his death. He made a naive speech in Parliament on 4 Aug 1868 recounting his services in the loyal cause and in reconciling the two races. He pleaded for an amnesty for the rebels and helped to reconcile Waikato and the upper Whanganui tribes. In 1871 he was defeated by Wi Parata.

Active minded, keenly interested in the welfare of the race, Mete Kingi organised conferences at Aomarama, Putiki and Taumarunui (Rewi being present at the first and last). He favoured land settlement on condition that sufficient was retained for the Maori. In this policy he was opposed by Keepa te Rangihwinui (q.v.) who showed considerable personal feeling. Mete Kingi's influence dwindled after his retirement from Parliament, and his later years were embittered by the rivalry of Keepa. Until the end he was loyal to the cause of peace. With Utiku he visited Parihaka before the law was put into force and tried to persuade Te Whiti to abandon his policy. After the operations he assisted the Government in identifying visiting natives and returning them to their tribes. He never aspired to be a warrior.

Generous and hospitable in entertaining pakeha and Maori, he built a fine meeting house at Putiki for this purpose, but his resources were reduced by loss of land and the dwindling of the tribe, and he was often accused of parsimony. He was a strong opponent of drink amongst the Maori. Mete Kingi was a

man of sound judgment, staunch and loyal though only half civilised. He died at Putiki on 22 Sep 1883 and was buried with military honours, the flag presented to the Maori after Moutoa being displayed at the funeral.

*N.z.P.D.*, 1868-70; Downes; Cowan; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Gudgeon; J. Bryce in *The Press*, 25 Mar 1903; *N.z. Herald*, 8 Oct 1883. Portrait: Parliament House.

PAGE, EDWARD (1877-1937) was born in Wellington, a son of J. E. Page, town clerk. Educated at Wellington College, he qualified as barrister and solicitor, and practised (1903-12) at Eketahuna, where he was mayor for three years (1909-12). In 1912 he was appointed stipendiary magistrate at Whangarei. He was subsequently stationed at Auckland, Palmerston North and Wellington, and he presided over a number of royal commissions. In 1925 he represented New Zealand at the international prisons conference in London, and in 1935 he was appointed judge of the Court of Arbitration. Page was chairman of the cinematograph film advisory committee, of the Post and Telegraph board of appeal, and of the railways appeal board. He conducted a number of shipping and departmental inquiries.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 10 Apr 1935, 1 Sep 1937; *Evening Post*, 31 Aug 1937 (p).

PAGE, GEORGE HYDE (1823-1908) was gazetted an ensign in the 58th Regiment in 1841, and promoted lieutenant in 1843. He came to New Zealand in 1845, and was present at the attack on Kawiti's pa. In 1846 he commanded at Boulcott's farm, where 50 men were in garrison. On the morning of 16 May a hostile force under Topine te Mamaku surrounded the post and desperately assaulted it at daybreak. Page after the first attack fought his way from the house to the fortified barn and afterwards led a sally and by skilful skirmishing held off the attacking force until reinforcements arrived from the Hutt. Eight men were killed and three wounded. The Maori losses were unknown. Page served in the Crimea with the 41st Regiment. He was promoted major-general in 1882, and lieutenant-general in 1885 and died on 8 Jan 1908.

Grimstone; Cowan; Mulgan, *The City of the Strait*; *The Times*, 10 Jan 1908.

TE PAHI (? 1760-1809), a powerful and intelligent chief who resided at Kerikeri, Bay of Islands. He was a near relative of Hongi Hika. The return of Tuki and Huru from Norfolk island (whither they had been taken by H.M.S. *Daedalus* in 1793), with pigs and potatoes presented by the Governor of New South Wales, so impressed Te Pahi with the advantages of intercourse with civilisation that he decided himself to visit New South Wales. He had exercised a beneficial influence in the intercourse of visiting ships and was regarded with gratitude by whalers and traders. In 1805, with four sons and two attendants, he embarked in the whaler *Venus*, which landed them at Norfolk island. They were submitted to some ill-treatment on the voyage. Hearing that Captain King, formerly governor of the island, was now governor of New South Wales, Te Pahi obtained a passage in the transport *Buffalo*, which landed them at Port Jackson on 27 Nov 1805 after touching at Hobart.

Captain King treated Te Pahi and his sons with great kindness and consideration, entertaining them as his guests at Government House, and having them to eat at his table. He considered Te Pahi 'a worthy and respectable chief in every sense of the word,' showed him every industry that might interest him, and was much struck by his determination to learn anything that might be of service to his people. There were 'few things of real utility that did not engross his attention; to say that he was merely civilised falls short of his character, as every action and observation showed an uncommon attention to decency of manners.' The farms, the linen and wool industries, the smiths' shops, and rope works all engaged his attention. He visited Captain Macarthur at Parramatta and was much in the company of Samuel Marsden, who had not before met a New Zealand chief. It was this encounter that fired Marsden with the determination to do something for the civilisation of a people so capable of enlightenment. Te Pahi conversed much about God, and attended divine service with great regularity and decorum. Marsden found him possessed of a 'clear, strong and competent mind, and anxious to gain what knowledge he could of our laws and customs.' Te Pahi agreed to send to New South Wales for training as shepherds a number of his own

people of the middle class, and went himself.

In order that the visitors should suffer no indignity on the voyage back to New Zealand, King sent them in the Government vessel *Lady Nelson*. Besides many minor gifts, they received boxes of fruit trees, pigs and goats and fowls to improve the stock in New Zealand, and a frame house and bricks with which to erect a residence at Bay of Islands which might be used by Europeans visiting there. As a token of the esteem of the people and government of New South Wales, King had a silver medal struck and presented to Te Pahi. The party embarked on 24 Feb 1806, and after a very stormy passage, in which Te Pahi suffered much from seasickness, they were landed at their home in Bay of Islands. The cottage was erected on a small, defensible island in the Kerikeri river, three miles below the mission station. The *Lady Nelson* received some spars and a quantity of seed potatoes (then very scarce in Sydney) as a return cargo. George Bruce, (or Druce), a seaman who had attended to Te Pahi on the voyage, remained in New Zealand and married his daughter. He was treacherously carried off with his wife in the H.E.I.C.S. *General Wellesley* three years later and had many vicissitudes in the East Indies before regaining New Zealand. Te Pahi's son, Matara, spent some months in London in 1807 and was presented to the King.

When the *Boyd* was captured and burned in Whangaroa harbour in 1809 by a party of Maoris (of whom Te Pahi was one of the leaders) the whalers on the coast suspected Te Pahi, owing to the similarity of their names. Accordingly one night armed boats from seven whalers in Bay of Islands pulled up the Kerikeri river and attacked Te Pahi's people, murdering every man and woman who came under their fire. Te Pahi himself received seven wounds, from which he died shortly afterwards. The *Boyd* incident delayed for some years the arrival of the first New Zealand mission, and the attack on Te Pahi was the cause of a long drawn out feud between the Bay of Islands and the Whangaroa tribes. Taua, a son of Te Pahi, lived for some months with Marsden at Parramatta in 1810. A passage was arranged for his return in the whaler *Fredelick*, the captain of which, untaught by the lesson of the *Boyd*, ill-treated his Maori seamen during the fishing

season, and then abandoned them on Norfolk Island.

During the minority of Te Pahi's daughter his two nephews governed at Rangihoua, and it was from one of them, Te Uri-o-Kanae, that Marsden in 1815 purchased 200 acres of land upon which the mission station was established. Marsden found Te Pahi's island desolate, without any inhabitants, and the cottage dilapidated. Hongi and Ruatara promised to afford to the mission the protection that Marsden had expected from Te Pahi. This promise was duly honoured, and Marsden eventually brought about peace between the tribes of Bay of Islands and Whangaroa.

Te Pahi at the time of his visit to New South Wales was a fine athletic man 5 feet 11½ inches in height, inclined to stoutness, and fully tattooed. He was believed then to be about 46 years of age. Marsden had implicit faith in his innocence in respect to the *Boyd* and did not rest until he had fully established it.

Marsden, L. and J. and *Lieutenants*; Ramsden; *C.M.S. Register*; *Hist. Rec. N.S.W.*; S. P. Smith, *Wars*.

PAIPAI, KAWANA, or TAWHITORANGI (?-1884) was a loyal Whanganuichief in the early pakeha days. He lost his father, Tawhito, at Whanganui on 31 May 1847. Kawana Paipai had influential connections, such as Hori Kingi te Anaua, Wiremu Hukani and Mete Kingi Paetahi, and with them he attended the Kohimarama conference in 1860 and many other meetings. He had a fine war record in command of kupapa during the disturbances of the sixties. At the battle of Ohoutahi (May 1865) he assisted in bringing in Te Peehi Turoa, Topia and Tahana. He also served on the East Coast against Te Koati. Paipai was closely associated with Governor Grey, and made many journeys with him. In 1866, with Grey and McDonnell, he visited the mouth of the Waingongoro river, where he claimed to have hunted the moa in his youth. In 1869 Kawana Paipai was chosen to accompany Kemp to Auckland to be presented to the Duke of Edinburgh. In Feb 1870 he insisted on the Whanganui contingent maintaining the pursuit of Te Kooti in Bay of Plenty. One of his last meetings was at Bay of Islands in 1882, when with Mete Kingi he met all the northern tribes. Paipai was almost the last survivor of

## PALMER

the tattooed warriors, except Mamaku. He was greatly learned in Maori lore, and traced his ancestry far back into the Polynesian period. He died on 11 Jun 1884.

Sherrin and Wallace (p); Cowan, *Wars; Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vol. xxi, p. 438; *Wanganui Yeoman*, 13 Jun 1884.

PALMER, JACKSON (1867-1919) was born in Belfast, Ireland. Coming to Auckland as a boy, he was educated at the Wellesley street school, from which he gained a scholarship to the Auckland Grammar School. He was articled to John Sheehan, and on being admitted to the bar practised in Auckland. In 1890 he was elected to Parliament for Waitemata, but suffered defeat by Monk at the following election. The election being declared void he again contested it against Massey, but was defeated. He was again in Parliament (for Ohinemuri 1900-03), but being defeated by E. G. B. Moss retired, and was some time later appointed a judge of the native land court. Palmer soon became chief judge and tried many intricate appellate cases, for which his knowledge of law and of Maori custom markedly qualified him. He died on 13 Aug 1919.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1919; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 14 Aug 1919.

PALMER, JOHN (1837-1902) was born in Oxfordshire, England. He studied at St John's College, Auckland (1861-63), was ordained deacon in 1863, and appointed a missionary at Norfolk island. In 1866 he proceeded to Norfolk island to erect the buildings for the headquarters of the Melanesian mission, and in 1867 he was ordained priest by Bishop Pateson. He married (1869) a daughter of B. Y. Ashwell (q.v.). He was in charge of the Melanesian mission in 1892-94 pending the appointment of Bishop Wilson to succeed John Selwyn. In 1893 the Archbishop of Canterbury granted him the honorary degree of bachelor of divinity. In 1894 he became archdeacon of southern Melanesia. He retired after serving 36 years in the diocese. Palmer died at Auckland on 1 Mar 1902.

*N.Z. Herald and Auckland Star*, 3 Mar 1902.

PANGO, also called NGAIHI and NGAWAI, was a chief of Ngati-Whakaue at Rotorua, and a priest with great mana. While visiting Bay

## PAPAKURA

of Islands in 1828 he was suspected of directing the bullets that killed Hongi and Whareumu. Feeling ran very high and it was through the efforts of Henry Williams that Pango and some of his people were saved from death at the hands of the Ngapuhi chief Kaingamata and shipped to Maketu on their way home to Rotorua. Others were taken by the *Herald* later. Three years later Pango sent a message to Paihia asking for a missionary, and eventually Thomas Chapman (q.v.) was stationed there. Pango was one of the leaders of Ngati-Whakaue in the attack on the Ngati-te-Rangi pa at Te Tumu in 1836, when the Arawa regained their outlet on the Bay of Plenty. He was one of the most learned men of the tribe.

PAPAKURA, MARGARET (MRS STAPLES-BROWNE) (1872-1930) was born at Whakarewarewa, the daughter of W. A. Thom and his wife, a woman of the Arawa tribe. She was brought up by her elder native relatives, Maihi te Kakau Paraoa and Marara Marotaua, and received her later education for one year at an English girls' school in Tauranga and for three years at Hukarere College, Napier. From her earlier teachers she learned much of the lore of the Maori and the history of her own tribe. In 1891 she married W. F. Denman. She acted as a guide to visitors at Whakarewarewa for some years, meeting many interesting travellers and widening her knowledge of both races. In 1911 she went to the Festival of Empire in London with a Maori troupe and a carved meeting house which attracted a good deal of attention. While there she renewed her acquaintance with R. C. Staples-Browne, whom she married. At their home in Oxfordshire, and in London, she did much to entertain Maori and pakeha soldiers during the war of 1914-18. In 1926 she became a member of the University of Oxford, where she made a study of anthropology and began to arrange her material. Part of this she presented for the degree of B.Sc. With the help of T. K. Penniman (secretary to the committee for anthropology at Oxford), she wrote a valuable volume on *The Old Time Maori*. This was published in 1938, some years after her death, which occurred on 16 Apr 1930.

Margaret Papakura, *op. cit.* (p); T. K. Penniman, *ibid*; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Apr 1930.

## PARATA

PARATA, TAARE RAKATAUHAKE (1865-1918), the youngest son of Tame Parata (q.v.), was born at Puketeraki in 1865, educated at the Normal school in Dunedin and entered the Native department in Wellington. After several years he resigned to commence business in Wellington. In 1908 he was elected secretary and treasurer of the Maori Association, and in 1911 he succeeded his father as member for the Southern Maori. In Parliament Parata was popular, tactful and energetic, constantly watchful of the interests of his people. He was very successful socially, and a keen bowler. He died on 6 Jan 1918.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 9 Apr 1918.

PARATA, TAME HAEREROA (1837-1917), a chief of the Ngati-Huirapa hapu of Ngai-Tahu, of Waitaha and of Ngati-Mamoe, was descended from Tamatea (of the Takitimu canoe). He was the son of Captain Pratt, a whaler at the Bluff, and was born at Ruapuke in 1837. As a boy he lived with his uncle (Haereroa) at Puketeraki, where he went to school and learned something of farming. Then he joined the pilot service at Otago Heads, where he spent several years. It was in this capacity that he attracted the attention of Sir George Grey, who wished to take him to Auckland for education, but he declined to leave his people. Instead he returned to his uncle, and for many years was a successful farmer at Waikouaiti. He married Eliabeth (Peti), daughter of Te Whare-rima (and Captain Brown, an early whaler of Stewart Island, and cousin of Major Brown Tunuiarangi, of Wairarapa). She was descended from the chiefs of Te Aotaumarewa, Te Ruahikihiki, Taoka, Kuri and Rangitane.

In 1885 Parata was elected to represent the Southern Maori in Parliament in succession to Taiaroa, who had been called to the Legislative Council. He was a popular and capable member, and constantly urged the rightful demands of Ngai-Tahu for their reserves of tenths in the South Island, and gained his end in the passing in 1906 of the South Island landless natives act. He was also keenly interested in the education and health of his people. After being a member of the House until 1911, he was called to the Legislative Council in the following year. In that chamber his personal popularity was responsible for defeat-

## PARATA

ing the National Government on one occasion by insisting on the inclusion of a clause in a native measure. He died on 6 Mar 1917. A grandson (Rev Hoani Parata) read the burial service.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun, 8 Oct 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii, 91; *N.Z. Graphic*, 3 Jun 1893; *N.Z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 23 Oct 1878.

PARATA, WIREMU TE KAKAKURA (? 1837-1906), a chief of Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Toa, was born at Kapiti about 1837. His father was an American whaler named Stubbs, who settled at Kapiti a few years earlier and was drowned off Pukerua in 1838. From his mother, Waipunahau, who was a daughter of Te Rangihiroa, Parata derived his descent from Hoturoa, captain of the Tainui canoe. As a boy he lived in the palisaded pa at the mouth of the Waikanae river. He was for some years at Tongaporutu and later at Ngamotu (with the Ngati-Awa). He returned to Kapiti in a European vessel, lived for a while at Te Awaiti, and then went in a European ship to Port Cooper, where he resided with the Ngai-Tahu. He is said to have taken his name Te Kakakura from the dying speech of Te Pehi Kupe (q.v.).

Possessed of much natural ability, good address and force of character, and having inherited considerable land, Parata was a man of influence amongst the tribes on the Otaki coast and even in Waikato, where he had relatives. As secretary to his kinsman Wi Tako (q.v.), the leader of the King movement in the district, he held a position of importance in the early sixties. He recognised, however, the equivocal situation in which his people were, and early in 1864 he took the oath of allegiance proposed by Sir George Grey (a step in which he was followed by Wi Tako some months later). In 1871 Parata was elected to represent the Western Maori in Parliament, defeating Paetahi (q.v.), and shortly afterwards he was called to the executive (without portfolio) in the Waterhouse ministry. He continued to represent the Maori race in the governments under Fox, Vogel and Pollen until 1876, when he was defeated by Nahe. He was sent as secretary of the North Island Maori Committee at the request of Parliament to try to make peace at Parihaka. Parata died at Waikanae on 29 Sep 1906.

## TE PARE-IHE

His eldest son, WI NAERA, was imprisoned in connection with Te Whiti's resistance in 1879. Parata offered to become surety for the good conduct of the older chiefs, but declined to ask for his son better treatment than the rank and file enjoyed.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1871-76; *N.Z. Times*, 2 Oct 1905.

TE PARE-IHE (? 1790-1845), a chief of the Ngai-te-Whatu-i-Apiti hapu of Ngati-Kahungunu, lived for many years at his stronghold at Roto-a-tara, in Ahuriri. He was celebrated for his knowledge of government and the needs of his people. When the taua of Ngati-Tuwharetoa, Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto, under Te Heuheu, came to Ahuriri in 1822, they besieged Pare-ihe for three months in Roto-a-tara. From a tower which he erected to command the causeway, Pare-ihe killed with a stone Arawai, the son of Tu Korehu (q.v.). The pa was eventually burned, but Pare-ihe made a successful sortie, killed many of the enemy, and was able to withdraw to Porangahau. Repeated invasions from the interior (mainly promoted by the Ngati-Raukawa) caused dismay to Ngati-Kahungunu, and Pare-ihe eventually made overtures to Te Wera (q.v.) for assistance against them. After a conference at his pa, Kowhai, the two spent some time together at Mallia. Pare-ihe agreed to go to Mahia for safety, but could not persuade the people of Te Pakake to do the same, and they were ovenwhelmed (1824). With the help of Te Wera, Te Whatanui was now driven out of the plains, where he had intended remaining. In 1830 Pare-ihe and Nukupewapewa were able to leave Nukutaurua, but they determined first to avenge the defeats inflicted by Te Heuheu. A strong taua defeated the Ngati-Tuwharetoa at Omakukura, on lake Taupo, and Pare-ihe then made peace with the inland tribes by marrying Te Rohu, a daughter of Te Heuheu. He persuaded his people to reoccupy the Heretaunga plains (1837). Pare-ihe was baptised some years before his death.

Personal information from J. H. Grace; Lambert; S. P. Smith.

PARK, ROBERT (1812-70), a brother of the sculptor Patrick Park, was born in Scotland, and came to Wellington with the New Zealand Company's surveying staff in the *Cuba* (Jan 1840). He prospected the land to Taranaki

## PARKER

with the Deans brothers, and in 1842 was town surveyor in Wellington. He was appointed chief surveyor to the Wellington Provincial Council, but disagreed with the government on the price of waste lands. In the general election of 1860 he contested the Wellington City seat, but was at the bottom of the poll. He then moved to Canterbury where he took over his brother-in-law's station at Winchmore, living there in the winter and surveying for the Canterbury provincial government in the summer. Park died on 10 Mar 1870, and his wife (Mary Anne, sister of Robert Hart) in 1891.

Acland; Deans; Vard; *Evening Post*, 12 Mar 1870, 16 Sep 1936.

PARKER, CHARLES (1808-98) arrived in Nelson by the *Kelso* (1849) and settled at Motueka. He was a carpenter by trade. In 1853 he was elected M.P.C., and he sat for Motueka and Massacre Bay to 1857 and for Motueka (1857-69). He represented the same constituencies in Parliament (1855-56), and in 1873 he was again elected to the Provincial Council, of which he was a member until the abolition. Parker died on 30 Jun 1898.

*Parltry Record; The Colonist*, 1 Jul 1898. Portrait: Parliament House.

PARKER, ROBERT (1847-1937) was born in London. He was educated at the Stepney Grammar School and received a musical education under Dr W. S. Hoyte, Scotson Clark, Lehmayr, Behnke and Dr C. W. Pearce, under whom he studied the violin, organ, pianoforte and choral singing. Proceeding with a scholarship to Queen's College, Cambridge, he became organist there, and later professional assistant to Dr W. H. Monk, of King's College, London. In 1869 he came to New Zealand, and was appointed choirmaster and organist at St Michael's, Christchurch. In 1878 he received a similar post at St Paul's, Wellington. While there he was conductor of the Wellington Musical union, of the Wellington Orchestral society and of the Liedertafel society (which gave part-song recitals). As conductor, as a teacher of music, as lecturer at the teachers' training college (1884-1928), examiner for the Education department and for the University, as president of the music teachers' association and chairman of the registration board, Parker rendered noteworthy service to the cause of

## PARKER

music in New Zealand. He received the C.M.G. in 1930 and died on 20 Feb 1937.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *The Dominion*, 2 Jan 1930; 21 Feb 1937.

PARKER, THOMAS JEFFERY (1850-97) was born in London, the son of Professor W. K. Parker, the eminent zoologist. Having taken his B.Sc. at London University, he became demonstrator to Huxley at South Kensington School and continuously advanced his studies. According to Professor Schufeldt, father and son could be regarded as the founders of the science of morphology. In 1880 he was appointed professor of biology at Otago University and curator of the Museum. On coming to New Zealand Parker continued to further his studies. He investigated the cerebral or pineal eye of the tuatara (on which Haeckel had done some work), and then turned to the kiwi. His observations on the anatomy and development of the apteryx were presented to the Royal Society (1891, vol. 182-3), to which he had previously submitted a paper on the blood vessels of the *Mustelus antarcticus* (1886, vol. 177). To the Zoological Society also he presented papers, notably studies in New Zealand ichthyology (1886, vol. xii) and the cranial osteology of the *Dinornithidae* (1893, vol. xiii). Meanwhile he brought out a series of studies in biology for New Zealand students. Parker's treatises published during this period in Great Britain dealt with zootomy (1884) and lessons in elementary biology (1893). At the time of his death he was engaged, with Professor Haswell (Sydney), on an important work on zoology, the last proofs of which he had already passed for the press when he died (7 Nov 1897).

Parker was the founder of the biological laboratory at Otago University and was a leading member of the Otago Institute. Before coming to New Zealand he had been elected a fellow of the Linnaean Society, and in 1881 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. In 1892 London University granted him the D.Sc. on his work in New Zealand. As a teacher he had few superiors and he was a skilled delineator.

*Encycl. Brit.*, 11th ed., vols. 4 and 20; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 Nov 1897; Thompson, *Hist. Otago Univ.*

PARKINSON, SIR THOMAS WRIGHT (1863-1935), the son of T. H. Parkinson, of Kaituna,

## PARNELL

was born in Canterbury, and entered Edinburgh University in 1886. (M.B., C.M., 1890; M.D., D.P.H. 1898.) In 1891 he married Euphemia Jessie, daughter of M. Pillman of Edinburgh. After practising in Scotland he moved to London in 1900 and became physician of the Lady Lytton military hospital. He was also a member of the Royal Society of Medicine, and of the British Medical society, and president of the Chelsea Clinical society. Parkinson died on 7 Feb 1935.

*Who's Who; The Times*, 8 Feb 1935.

PARNELL, SAMUEL DUNCAN (1810-90), the originator of the eight-hour day in New Zealand, was born in London, educated in the board schools and apprenticed to a carpenter and joiner in Theobald's Road.

As early as 1834 he became imbued with the idea that the working day was unduly long, and so started in business for himself. He was interested already in the trades union movement and did what he could to reduce working hours, but was unable to persuade his shopmates to demand a shorter day. It was with this idea that he at length decided to go abroad, and he became in 1839 a land purchaser under the New Zealand Company. Parnell and his wife, declaring their ages as 27, sailed in the *Duke of Roxburgh* in Sep and reached Wellington in Feb 1840. Their selection of 100 acres of country land they took up at Karori (where they appear as a freeholder in 1854) and their town acre was in Daniell street. George Hunter, a Wellington merchant, was a fellow passenger, and before long Parnell was engaged in building a residence for him at Korokoro and a store for his firm, Willis and Co. He stipulated in the contract that the men should work only eight hours a day. Hunter did not demur, and so the system had its origin in the colony. Parnell did not see the job through, but the carpenters who completed the work continued on the terms he had arranged, receiving 5s a day.

In 1866 Parnell was a resident of Karori. During the labour movement in New Zealand in the early nineties a good deal of attention was paid to Parnell's contribution. Saturday shilling collections were taken up to establish a memorial and he received a congratulatory address in Wellington (28 Oct 1890), just two

## PARRIS

months before his death, which occurred on 17 Dec. He was given a public funeral. Some months later a memorial demonstration was held in Christchurch.

Parnell was married twice, his second wife being Mrs Brunger, who died in 1888.

'Ward; *Builders and Contractors News*, Sydney, 1890; *Lyttelton Times*, 31 Jul 1891; *N.Z. Herald*, 11 Nov 1890 (p); *N.Z. Times*, 30 Oct, 18, 23 Dec 1890, 3 Nov 1891.

PARRIS, ROBERT REID (1816-1904) was born at Tatworth, Chard, Somerset, coming of a West of England family who had their property confiscated in the reign of James II, but restored by William III. He was some years farming in Devonshire and was a fine horseman and whip, managing a four-in-hand with great skill. He came to New Zealand with his wife and two daughters in the *Blenheim*, arriving at New Plymouth on 7 Nov 1842.

About 1846 Bishop Selwyn appointed Parris farm superintendent at St John's College, Auckland, where he gained an intimate knowledge of the Maori language and customs. Selwyn regarded him as an able and willing bailiff and a Christian man, with whom he was on terms of personal confidence. Returning to Taranaki in the early fifties, Parris was elected a member of the Provincial Council in 1853 and sat with a short intermission until the middle of 1857, when he resigned to accept the post of land purchase commissioner. His knowledge of the Maori marked him out during the troubled years of the next two decades as the most trusted representative of the Government in the province. From 1859-65 he was assistant native secretary and the principal agent of the Government in the Waitara purchase. The outbreak of hostilities (1860) involved him in many difficult positions. In that year a plot against his life by Taranaki and Ngati-Ruanui conspirators was disclosed by a Mokau chief; and the vWaikato befriended him. He was attached to the Imperial troops during the war with the rank of major in the militia, and for a while was in command of native allies.

Parris was frequently mentioned in despatches by Grey and by General Sir H. J. Warre (who found him an able interpreter and sagacious adviser, skilful in the management of natives, firm, judicious and conciliatory). In Jun 1865

## PATARA

he rode 250 miles from Taranaki to Wellington, through tribes whose loyalty was in grave doubt. He was appointed civil commissioner for Taranaki in that year. FitzGerald strongly urged that he should be charged with the entire responsibility for settling the difficulties in Taranaki. In the crisis of 1868-69 Parris's influence was mainly responsible for restraining the natives north of Opunake from joining the Hauhau. He retired from the civil service in 1875, but before reverting to private life he acted in conjunction with the West Coast commission in the settlement of native claims.

Parris showed great force of character and remarkable courage, zeal and earnestness. To an intimate acquaintance with native affairs he combined the qualities of a Christian gentleman, and the natives regarded him with esteem and affection. He was for many years a visiting justice of the gaol, a harbour board sinking fund commissioner, and vice-president of the New Plymouth Savings Bank. He died on 18 Sep 1904.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.Z. Gaz.*; *App. H.R.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Rusden; Tucker; Wells; *Waka Maori*, 1875, p. 215; *Taranaki Herald*, 19 Sep 1904. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

PATARA RAUKATAURI, or NGONGE, was an arch priest of the Hauhau sect. He was a Taranaki chief from Oakura, and was said to have lived with his mother's people in Port Nicholson, where he was employed in the store of his brother-in-law (Ashdown). Peculation of money, followed by horse thefts, caused him to leave Wellington, and marked his progress to Taranaki and Auckland, where he married a woman on promising her brothers some valuable meres. He was a relative of Matutaera, and was accused of forging letters from Rewi to the discontented natives in Taranaki. He commanded his Taranaki tribesmen against the troops at Kaitake (1863), and was said to have arranged the ambush at Tataraimaka. As one of the apostles sent by Te Ua to spread the Hauhau doctrine, he carried the head of Captain Lloyd to the tribes between Gisborne and East Cape. At Tauranga he demanded the surrender of the Rev Carl Volkner, who had endeavoured to restrain the vVhakatohea from joining the Hauhau and was regarded as a spy. After the murder of Volkner Patara tried to exchange the Rev T. S. Grace for Hori

## PATENE

Tupaea. A tall powerful man, with many of the characteristics of the revolutionary, Patara was the only one of Te Ua's emissaries who did not meet a violent death.

*App. H.R.*, 1863 E2, 9; Cowan; *Wellington Independent*, 13 May 1865; *Southern Cross*, 6 Jul 1865.

PATENE, WIREMU (WILLIAM BARTON) (1810-84) was born in the Waikato and at the period of the commencement of the Wesleyan mission at Whaingaroa (1835) had won considerable influence in his tribe. He shared fully in the prevalent practices of his race and in an intertribal conflict was observed making effective use of the deadly weapon in his hand. Confronted by the Rev James Wallis, who was engaged in successful efforts to restore peace, he became a regular attendant at the mission church and under missionary influence his life was transformed. At his baptism he received the name of William Barton, after a talented English Wesleyan minister. He became a lay preacher and rendered good service in the Waikato district. At the Wesleyan native theological institution at Three Kings he received training under Thomas Buddle and Alexander Reid. In 1859 he qualified as an assistant missionary and in 1871 was admitted to full status in the Methodist ministry. His labours were chiefly among tribes on the banks of the Waipara river who were disaffected towards the government. His powerful influence was exerted with success to suppress the spirit of rebellion. He died in Dec 1884. M.A.R.P.

PATENE TE MANU (? 1805-96), a chief of the Ngati-Taka section of Ngapuhi, was born in the first years of the nineteenth century. He was first on the warpath in 1822, when he took part in Hongi's expedition of Ngapuhi which captured the pas of Maunaina and Mokoia, on the Tamaki river. Then they proceeded in canoes to attack the Totara pa of Ngati-Maru, at the mouth of the Thames. On an East Coast expedition they attacked the Ngati-Maru at Slipper island (Whakahau) in the night, killing many of them (including three chiefs). Proceeding to Tuhua (Mayor island) they defeated the Ngati-Maru and eventually made peace. Patene accompanied a Ngapuhi expedition to Tauranga and Te-Awa-o-te-atua and met the Whakatohea near Oponiki;

## PATERSON

then to the Whanau-a-Apanui pa of Katahi. He made other expeditions to Waiapu and to Whangaroa, all being undertaken by Hongi in the pride of his new muskets. Patene te Manu then retired to live at Whangaruru, where he was baptised by the Rev Henry Williams. In 1862, with a number of other Maoris, Patene visited England in the ship *Ida Zeigler*, he being the spokesman of the party. They were presented both to the Prince of Wales and to the Queen. Most of his later years Te Manu lived on Little Barrier island. He died at Ngunuru at the end of 1896.

Cowan, *Sketches* (p).

PATERSON, ADA GERTRUDE (1880-1937) was born in Dunedin, a daughter of James Paterson, librarian of the Dunedin Athenaeum. She was educated at the Otago Girls' High School and Otago University. There she graduated M.B., Ch.B., and after a post-graduate course at Dublin University she qualified as L.M. For some years Dr Paterson practised at Picton. In 1912 she was appointed one of the first medical inspectors of schools. In 1916 she was transferred from Dunedin to Wellington, where in 1923 she became director of the school hygiene division of the department of Health, a position which she filled until her death (on 26 Aug 1937). She was closely associated with the health camp and kindergarten movements, was a member of the eugenics board, and vice-president of the Wellington University Women's club and of the international federation of university women. In 1935 she represented New Zealand at a health conference under the League of Nations at Geneva.

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1932; *Evening Post*, 27 Aug 1937.

PATERSON, JAMES (1807-86) was born at Edinburgh. He served his time with a saddler in his native city, and in 1838 went to British Guiana, where he remained for some years in business in Georgetown. In 1851 Paterson returned to Scotland. About this time George Ross, an early settler of Otago, was in Scotland overseeing the construction of a brigantine for use in the New Zealand coastal trade. Paterson came into touch with him, had his interest in New Zealand aroused, and decided to emigrate to Otago. Ross's brigantine, the *Clutha*, 250

PATERSON

tons, was ready towards the end of 1853. Amongst her passengers were James Kilgour, John Sibbald, Calder, Alexander and Paterson. The *Clutha* loaded at Leith a variety of merchandise on account of Ross and his passengers. She put into Yarmouth for a new bowsprit, and arrived in Otago on 12 Feb 1854.

Paterson started business in Rattray street, Dunedin, as a general merchant, being shortly joined by his brother-in-law, George Hepburn (q.v.). Later the firm established itself in Princes Street; purchased the local business of Macandrew and Co. and afterwards removed to Manse street, where it carried on as saddlers, general merchants, and commission agents. In Oct 1861 Paterson was elected for one of the Dunedin seats in the Provincial Council. A few months later he took office in the provincial executive. In Jun 1862 he contested the parliamentary seat for Dunedin and Suburbs against J. L. C. Richardson, but was defeated by eight votes. When Richardson resigned shortly afterwards Paterson was returned unopposed. He now took up land at Crichton, Tokomairiro, and devoted more of his time to public affairs. He was in the Provincial Council (1861-67) and was a member of three executives, part of the time as provincial secretary under the superintendency of Harris. While holding this office he carried through the Council an ordinance dissolving the Dunedin town board and appointing commissioners to manage the affairs of the city and to bring order into its finances. In Jun 1863, after a redistribution of seats, he was returned for Dunedin, Vogel being one of the defeated candidates. In the same month he defeated Vogel in a straight-out fight for the Dunedin and Suburbs seat in Parliament. In 1865 he stood for the mayoralty of the city, but was defeated by Mason.

In Oct 1865 Paterson joined the Stafford Government as a member of the executive. He was re-elected for the City in 1866 with Reynolds as colleague (Paterson 610 votes, Reynolds 609); and a few months later took office as Postmaster-general. Feeling ran high in Otago over the refusal of the General Government to delegate to Macandrew, the new Superintendent, the powers usually given to superintendents to administer goldfields, and also over proposals which threatened to take away some

PATTERSON

of the revenues of the city. Richardson, now a member of the Stafford Government, stood firmly against Macandrew. Public opinion in Otago was strongly on the side of the Superintendent, and Paterson and Reynolds both fell into bad odour. When the members returned to Dunedin there was a hostile demonstration in the Princess theatre, from which they had to escape with police assistance. When they came back from Wellington again (Nov 1868) they were invited to explain their conduct. Reynolds attended, but Paterson declined, and so terminated his political life as an elective member. Reynolds was again returned, but Paterson resigned his seat (1 Jun 1869) and accepted a call to the Legislative Council. Ill-health prevented him from taking much further active part even in this sphere, and in 1884 he forfeited his seat for non-attendance. He died on 29 Jul 1886. Paterson was a prominent member of the Presbyterian Church.

*Otago p.e. Proc.; N.Z.P.D.; McIndoe; Otago Daily Times*, 30 Jul 1886, 6 Jun 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

PATERSON, THOMAS (1832-69) was the son of a merchant at Leith, Scotland. He was educated at the High School in Edinburgh and articled as a civil engineer to Grainger and Miller, railway contractors, with whom he became managing assistant. In 1863 he was appointed railway and road engineer in Otago. In this position he surveyed and prepared parliamentary plans for the Dunedin-Clutha line and the light line northward from Dunedin, supervised the construction of the Bluff-Invercargill line for the Southland government, and reconstructed the Oreti line. He made investigations for the Lyttelton tunnel, constructed the bridge over the Rakaia and designed that over the Rangitata. Paterson was drowned in a coach mishap in the Kakanui river on 15 Dec 1869.

*Otago p.e. Proc.; Timaru Herald*, 18 Dec 1869.

PATTERSON, JOHN, or HONE PARATENE TAMANUIA-RANGI, who was born in 1826, was a full-blooded Maori chief of the Ngai-Tuahuriri hapu of the Ngai-Tahu tribe; Kaiapoi. From 1868 to 1870 he sat as member for Southern Maori in the House of Representatives. He resisted the taxation of native lands, and advocated the allocation of tenths in the

PATTESON

South Island. Patterson stood against Tainui twice in 1879, but was defeated both times.

PATTESON, JOHN COLERIDGE (1827-71) was the son of Sir John Coleridge Patteson, judge. He was educated at the Grammar school at Ottery St Mary, and at Eton (1838), where he was captain of the XI and showed much strength of character, but no distinction in scholarship. He graduated from Balliol College, Oxford (1849), and by travel stimulated his intellectual and artistic tastes. As a fellow of Merton College he assisted in devising a scheme of reform. Ordained in 1853, he became curate of Alphington. His influence was beginning to be felt when he met Bishop Selwyn (1854), with whom he left England in the following year to enter the Melanesian mission field. At St John's, Auckland, and afterwards at Kohimarama and at Norfolk Island he devoted himself to teaching Melanesian boys the rudiments of civilisation and religion, in which his remarkable linguistic powers greatly aided him. He had mastered the Maori language on the voyage out. On assuming control of the mission, to which he was consecrated in 1861, he selected the Mota dialect for use in the schools. He spoke readily 23 languages, using patient endeavours to fix the meanings of words and to utilise the simplicity of structure to express all modifications of time and place. He printed general vocabularies in three languages, and translated into Mota the third and fourth Gospels and other parts of Scripture. The mission being supported partly from his own funds-for which purpose he retained his Merton fellowship-partly by the Eton Melanesian Society, and partly by a special association formed in Australia, no salaries were paid. Patteson had a practical turn for all useful occupations in connection with the mission. After 20 years' work only 40 natives remained unbaptised out of the Mota population of 800. His life was often in danger, notably at Santa Cruz in 1864, when two of his companions died from the effects of poisoned arrows. Patteson deplored the lawless conduct of the labour traffic, which had depopulated many islands, and wished to see it regulated. Visiting Nukapu Island on 20 Sep 1871 in ignorance of an outrage having been committed by Englishmen a few months earlier, he landed alone unarmed

PATUKI

and was killed. His murder roused the Christian conscience in England and led to the regulation of the labour traffic through the High Commission for the Western Pacific, and to a considerable extension of the Mission. He was succeeded by John R. Selwyn (q.v.).

*D.N.B.; Yonge* (p); Tucker; Jacobs; *Wellington Independent*, 7 Nov 1811; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Nov 1871.

PATRICK, ANNE (1881-1937), daughter of J. L. Patrick (who arrived in the *Cressy*, 1850), was born and educated in Christchurch. On completing her nursing training at the Christchurch public hospital, she studied Sir Truby King's Plunket system of child welfare. She was on the staff of the Dunedin Karitane-Harris hospital when the war broke out, and she enlisted with the New Zealand nursing service (Nov 1917). Seconded a few months later for home service in England, she played an important part in establishing the London mothercraft training centre. Returning to New Zealand in 1920 Miss Patrick was appointed matron of the Karitane-Harris hospital in Dunedin and director of Plunket nursing for the Dominion. While holding this post she made a long visit to Canada, the United States and England, and another after retiring, and attended international congresses of nurses in 1929 and 1937. As an inspiring force within her chosen field of work her influence was wide and profound, and she earned the devotion of those with whom she came in contact to a most extraordinary degree. She retired in 1934 and died in London on 19 Sep 1937.

Studholme; *The Dominion and The Press*, 20 Sep 1937 (pp); *The Times*, 21 Sep 1937.

PATUKI, TEONI TOPI (? 1810-1900) was a leading chief of both tribes Ngai-Tahu and Ngati-Mamoe. He was born at Waipati, and lived for many years at Kaiapoi, though his real home was Ruapuke. Patuki saw a good deal of tribal fighting in his youth and was a member of the taua under Tuhawaiki, which fell upon the Ngati-Tama invaders at Tuturau, Otago, in 1836. He is said to have shot Te Puoho. Patuki afterwards came under the influence of the Wesleyan missionaries and, having been baptised by the Rev Charles Creed, was for many years a Wesleyan native teacher. He was a friend of Wohlers. About 1840 he

## PATUONE

returned from Kaiapoi to Ruapuke and he signed the deed of sale of Stewart Island. Shortland says that he had a very European appearance, dressed well, and was an expert whaler. He assisted Captain J. L. Stokes (q.v.) in the survey of Foveaux Strait.

Patuki was a nephew of Tamaiharanui and after the death of Tuhawaiki and his son Kihan (1844) he became paramount chief. He was consistently friendly to Europeans. He died at Ruapuke on 28 Sep 1900.

A son, JOHN TOPI PATUKI, was a member of the Legislative Council (1918-1925).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 28 Oct 1884; Shortland; Wohlers; Roberts, *Southland*; *Otago Daily Times* and *Southland Times*, 2, 24 Oct, 1900.

PATUONE, ERUERA MAIHI (? 1776-1872), a celebrated chief of the Ngati-Hao tribe of Ngapuhi, was born at Hokianga. He was the younger son of Tapua (a renowned warrior and priest) and his wife Te Kawehau, and the elder brother of Tamati Waka Nene (q.v.). He was educated for the sacerdotal office, but as a young man took his part in the fierce campaigns at the dawn of the nineteenth century. He first distinguished himself in the defeat of Ngapuhi at Waituna in 1806, when he killed the Roroa chief Tatakahuanui in single combat, and barely escaped with his life. In 1810 he was one of the leaders of his tribe when they were defeated by the Roroa at Waima. He first used a gun in the fight at Kuratope, where he was wounded in the leg and the arm.

Patuone and Nene were from the first benevolently disposed towards the whites. They favoured the establishment of the mission at Rangihoua in 1814, and thereafter protected all missions in the north without distinction. Samuel Marsden met Patuone at his home in 1819, when he was about to leave in command of a taua of 800 men on the Amiowhenua expedition to the south (under Tuwhare). Joined at Kawhia by a strong force of Ngati-Toa under Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata, they marched through Taranaki as far as Whanganui, where Patuone gained a victory over the Whanganui. The records indicate that the Ngapuhi taua returned from Whanganui, but Patuone told Marsden in Nov 1820 that he had gone as far as Cook Strait and crossed to the South Island. He wished then to visit Sydney for the benefit

## PATUONE

of his people. In 1822 he accompanied Hongi (to whom he was deeply attached) on his expedition to the Thames against Te Hinaki, and it was due to his advice that Hongi continued the siege of Mauinaina, which ended in the capture and death of Te Hinaki. In 1825 he was at Te Ika-a-ranganui. Patuone extended his protection to Lieutenant Thomas McDonnell's shipyard on the Hokianga, at which were built the first little vessels that carried the New Zealand flag. A few years later (1826) he welcomed the New Zealand Company's ships at Herd's Point, Hokianga, and took under his protection those who stayed behind. He and Nene went to the help of the Wesleyan mission at Whangaroa (1827) when its premises were plundered, and brought the staff away to a place of safety. They also, at Mangamuka, avenged the death of the first Christian martyr of New Zealand, and thereafter saw justice done whenever Europeans had to complain of ill-treatment. For many years they were engaged in the supply of spars for the British Navy, and they co-operated with other chiefs in protecting the European establishments on the Hokianga and traders visiting the river. In 1831 they signed the appeal to King William IV for protection.

Shortly afterwards, when fighting at the Thames on behalf of the Ngati-Paoa against Waharoa, Patuone married a Ngati-Paoa lady of high rank (Riria Takarangi). He then lived for some years at the Waitemata, which he protected against alarms of war. Though so far from his own tribe, he exercised great influence in the counsels of the district, and was constantly called in to settle local disputes. He lamented the small families of the Maori compared with those of missionaries. On the death of his second wife Patuone yielded to the wishes of his own people and returned to Hokianga. He again visited Thames with the Rev Henry Williams in the *Active* (1835), and he paid a visit to Sydney on business, returning in the *Tranmere*. Patuone took a leading part in the meeting at Hokianga to prevent the landing of liquor. He was one of the earliest signatories of the Treaty of Waitangi (Feb 1840), and in that month was baptised by the Rev Henry Williams (taking the names Emera Maihi, after the missionary's son, Edward Marsh).

In Heke's disturbances at Bay of Islands

## PATUONE

(1844-45) Patuone and Nene took the field against the rebels, and his brother, Wiremu Waka Turau, particularly distinguished himself at the taking of Ruapekapeka (10 Jan 1845). The value of Patuone's services was appreciated by Sir George Grey, at whose invitation he left the Hokianga district to the care of his brother and took up his residence on a reserve of 110 acres which the Government gave to him at Waiwharariki, on the north shore of Waitemata harbour. This bulwark of protection for Auckland against attacks from the north was balanced by the settlement of Te Wherowhero at Mangere, between Auckland and the disaffected tribes of Waikato. The ripe judgment of the old warrior was often invoked by the Government in the anxious days of native wars. When Patuone's old friends the Ngati-Paoa advanced on Auckland 500 strong in their war canoes to demand the release of a chief who had been imprisoned, Patuone helped to man the redoubts opposite St Andrew's and on Britomart Point. When hostilities were imminent in Waikato in 1863 he impressed upon Grey that whoever first crossed the Maungatawhiri would be considered the aggressor.

In Whitaker's superintendency of Auckland (1865-67) Patuone was constantly consulted on native questions, and the Government granted him a pension of £20 a year (increased in 1871 to £50). He was one of the chiefs who met the Duke of Edinburgh (1869) at Government House to present the Maori addresses. In later years he was a well known figure in the streets of Auckland, dressed in grenadier officer's uniform, with Inverness cape. On 19 Jul 1872 he addressed a letter of farewell to all of his European friends, and on 19 Sep he died. He was buried in the Church of England cemetery at the foot of Flagstaff Hill, North Shore. The state and military funeral, and the monument erected by the Government testify to the esteem in which this courageous and unflinching friend of the pakeha was held. He was for many years a pious member of the Church. Patuone had four wives. Of his family of nine sons and three daughters, only one son (Hohaia) survived him.

Marsden, *L. and J.*; C. O. Davis; Earle; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Buller; Carleton; Angas (p); *Waka Maori*, 1872, p. 129; Cowan, *Wars and Sketches* (pp); H. T. Kemp in *N.z. Herald*, 6 Apr 1901; *N.z. Herald*, 18 Sep, 2 Oct 1872.

## PAUL

PAUL, EDMUND (1838-93) was born at Ilminster, Somersetshire. Coming to New Zealand, he settled in Marlborough. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Upper Wairau (1869 and 1870-75), and was a member of the executive 1874-75. Paul died on 28 Jan 1893.

Registrar-general's department; *Marlborough P.C. Proc.*; *Marlborough Express*, 30 Jan 1893.

PAUL, JAMES (1826-81) was born in England, his father being an officer in the 65th Regiment. Paul received his ensigncy in the 31st Regiment (1843) and served in the Sutlej campaign (1845-46), including the battles of Moodkee, Ferozeshah, Buddiwal, Aliwal and Sobraon. Having been wounded, he transferred to the 65th as a lieutenant and came to New Zealand (1848). (Captain, 1849.) He served as brigade-major in Taranaki (getting his brevet-majority 1862), and though the Waikato campaign. He returned with the regiment to England, was promoted major (1866) and retired in the following year.

Paul settled in Wellington, and was for one term a member of the City Council (1872-74). In 1877 he was appointed sergeant-at-arms in the House of Representatives, which he resigned in 1880. He married (1863) Annette (d. 1863), daughter of Dugald McKellar. His death occurred on 11 Jul 1881.

War Office records; 'Ward; Cowan; *N.z. Times*, 13 Jul 1881.

PAUL, ROBERT BATEMAN (1798-1877) was the son of Richard Paul, rector of Mawgan in pydar, Cornwall. Educated at Truro Grammar School and Exeter College, Oxford, he was elected a fellow of Exeter in 1817 and graduated B.A. (1820) and M.A. (1822). He was ordained and appointed curate of Probus, Cornwall. In 1825 he was appointed bursar and tutor at Exeter College. He married (1827) Rosa Mira, daughter of the Rev Richard Twopenny, and was successively curate of Little Wittenham, Berkshire (1825), of Llantwit Major (1829), of St John's, Kentish Town (1845) and of St Augustine's Bristol (1848).

In 1850 Paul came to Canterbury with the first four ships and acted as commissary for Bishop Selwyn until the first new bishoprics were created (1851-55). He took a leading part in the establishment of Christ's College, of which he was elected a fellow in 1855. He read

prayers at the opening of the Canterbury Provincial Council (1853). In that year he was appointed archdeacon of Waimea and went to live in Nelson, residing for some years in Brook Valley without a parish. He was engaged for part of this time tutoring young men who were preparing for the English universities. He published *Some Account Of the Canterbury Settlement* (1854) and *Letters from Canterbury* (1857). He was chairman of the archdeaconry board which nominated the first bishop of Nelson, and after his installation he returned to England (1860). In 1861 he published *New Zealand as It Was and as It is*. He became rector of St Mary's, Stamford, in 1864, and a canon of Lincoln in 1867.

In 1872 Paul retired from the ministry and he died on 6 Jun 1877. His other publications included the ethics of Aristotle (1829), *Rhetoric* (1830), a history of Germany for young people (1847), many editions of Sophocles and translations from the German of handbooks on medieval geography. In 1872 he published a novel in two volumes, *The Autobiography Of a Cornish Rector*. A daughter of Paul married S. Bealey (q.v.) and another Edward Lee (q.v.).

*D.N.B.*: Ward; Godley, *Letters*; Jacobs; Wigram; Foster's *Alumni Oxon*. Portrait: Diocesan Library, Nelson.

PAULIN, ROBERT (1862-95) was born at Enfield, London, and having trained as a civil engineer, came to West Australia in 1874 and to New Zealand shortly afterwards. As a surveyor, he made a number of exploratory journeys on the west coast of Otago and in other parts of the country. Some of these are described in articles which he wrote for the *New Zealand Journal of Science* and he published in London *The Wild West Coast* (1889). Paulin married a daughter of Thomas Oliver, C.E., of Dunedin. He was accidentally killed on 14 Mar 1895.

*N.Z. Jour. of Science*, vol. i, p. 65, 119, 504.

PEACOCK, JOHN THOMAS (1827-1905) was born in New South Wales, the eldest son of Captain John Jenkins Peacock, of Hawkesbury. He was educated at Sydney College, but had to leave school early to assist his father, who had sustained severe losses in his shipping interests. At the age of 15 Peacock made his first voyage across the Tasman.

In 1844 his father purchased the brig *Guide* (formerly a Calcutta pilot boat, but now scarcely seaworthy). After calling at Port Nicholson she sailed round both islands, calling at any port at which trade might be done. At Kaikoura, Akaroa, Little Port Cooper, Ikoraki, Port Chalmers, Bluff, and Stewart island she picked up a few barrels of oil. At Kawhia, a large purchase of pigs was made, but in working out of the harbour the brig missed stays, lost a man overboard, and was soon aground. Three or four hours later she floated off. After waiting two weeks for a fair wind, the *Guide* sailed to Auckland and the pigs were landed with some difficulty in the ship's boat. The schooner then brought down cattle from Hokianga to Auckland for sale, and after being absent a year, reached Sydney with a cargo of New Zealand spars. At Hokianga the traders, being ignorant of the value of kauri gum, declined a large consignment from the natives. On a later voyage Peacock picked up 100 tons, which he sold profitably. During the troubles with Heke the *Guide* was closely followed by a cruiser on suspicion of gun-running. When she arrived at Bay of Islands it was seen that the flagstaff had been cut down, and Peacock acceded to the request of the friendly chief Patuone and furnished him with some barrels of powder, for which he received a letter of thanks from Tamati Waka Nene.

After about 12 years spent in this trade, Peacock married in Sydney (1854) and came to Wellington to start in business, but after the earthquake (1855) he moved to Lyttelton, where his father had established himself. The parents were now settled in Canterbury. Peacock built his wharf at Lyttelton under the provincial ordinance of 1857. J. J. Peacock made a great success of the business, and when he retired his son carried it on with Beverley Buchanan until 1862, when he also retired, C. W. Turner coming in. The wharf was sold to Peter Cunningham and eventually passed into the possession of the harbour board.

Peacock was elected to the Provincial Council in 1861, and represented Lyttelton until 1866. In 1868 he was returned for Papanui (where he now lived) and he sat until the abolition of the provinces. In 1869 he was in Knight's executive, and from 1875 until the abolition he was in Cracroft Wilson's. As secre-

tary for works he had control of the Lyttelton harbour improvement works. In 1868 Peacock was elected to represent Lyttelton Towil in Parliament. He was re-elected in 1871, but resigned in 1873 to accept a seat in the Legislative Council. In 1877, owing to his membership of the South Waimakariri board of conservators, he forfeited his seat in the Council, but was at once reappointed. He sat until his death.

Peacock took part in the formation and direction of many Canterbury companies. He was a promoter of the New Zealand Shipping Co. and a director until the policy of steam was adopted, when he retired. He helped to promote the Kaiapoi Woollen Co. (personally purchasing the plant to prevent its being exported from the Colony), and he was a director till his death. He was chairman of the Union Insurance Co. from 1877 until it was absorbed by the Alliance (of London), when he became a member of the local board. He was a director of the Christchurch Meat Co., a large shareholder in the Christchurch Tramway Co., a director of the Lyttelton Gas Co. (until it was taken over by the borough council), a promoter and director of the Permanent Investment and Loan Association, and a director of the Christchurch Press Co. (from 1890). He was chairman of the Lyttelton harbour board for some years; a governor of Canterbury College (1888-97), and president of the Canterbury club. A prominent member of the Memodist congregation in Christchurch, he was one of the church property trustees, and a liberal contributor to the building fund. He presented the land in St Albans on which the first church was erected. Peacock died on 20 Oct 1905. (See JOHN EVANS BROWN, F. J. GARRICK, H. R. WEBB.)

*Cycl. N.z.*, iii (p); *N.z.P.D.*, 20, 24 Oct 1905; *Auckland*; *Lyttelton Times*, 8 Oct 1884; *The Press*, 21 Oct 1905, 9 Aug 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

PEACOCK, THOMAS (1837-1922), who was born in Glasgow, was trained as an optician and maker of mathematical instruments. In 1862 he came to New Zealand and settled in Auckland. He was elected to the City Council, and was mayor of the City (1878-79). In 1881 he entered the House of Representatives, and was member for Auckland North (1881-84), for Newton (1884-87) and for Ponsoby (1887-

90). He then retired. In 1887 Peacock declined a portfolio in the Stout-Vogel ministry. He was chairman of the South British Insurance Co.; a vice-president of the Auckland Savings Bank, and a member of the Auckland Grammar School board, the education board, and the council of the chamber of commerce. His second wife (whom he married in 1881), was Margaret, eldest daughter of Alexander Campbell, of Helensburgh, Scotland. He died on 18 Feb 1922.

*N.z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1922; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Auckland Star*, 27 Sep 1887; *NZ. Herald*, 19 Feb 1922. Portrait: Parliament House.

PEACOCKE, STEPHEN PONSONBY (1813-72) was the son of Colonel Stephen Peacocke, of the 3rd Scots Fusilier Guards. Born in England, he entered the army in 1833 in the 25th Regiment, with which he served in India. Promoted captain (1839), he went on half pay in 1844. He afterwards exchanged into the 59th, from which he retired as major in 1853. He married Anne Louisa (1816-72), daughter of Sir John Brydges, Wootton Court, Kent.

About 1858 Peacocke sold out and came to New Zealand. He stayed in Canterbury a few months and then moved to Auckland and bought land near the Pensioner Settlement at Howick (1859), where he lived until his death (on 29 May 1872). On the outbreak of the Waikato war Peacocke was given command of the 3rd battalion Auckland militia and of the district from Wairoa south to Otahuhu. This line, defended by Galloway's and St John's redoubts, was practically the front at the outset. He represented Pensioner Settlements in the Auckland Provincial Council (1865-69) and was commissioner of crown lands (1867-68). In 1866 Peacocke was called to the Legislative Council, where he was a polished and effective speaker.

A son, PONSONBY JOHN RALEIGH PEACOCKE, was a member of the Provincial Council for Pakuranga (1873-75). He was an inspector of schools for Auckland province and later of Catholic schools, and died in Jan 1918.

*ParlTl Record*; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *NZ. Herald*, 31 May 1872.

PEAKE, JOHN WILLIAM (1830-1916), who was born in Denbigh, North Wales, studied

## PEARCE

law at the Middle Temple, but, disliking the profession, came to Australia in 1852. After a year on the goldfields, he crossed to New Zealand in the *Eliza* (1853), and with his brother took up land at Kai-iwi, near Wanganui. From 1863 to 1865 he represented Wanganui and Rangitikei in the Wellington Provincial Council. He was a lieutenant in the Wanganui militia (1864). In 1893 he retired from farming. Peake died on 9 Jun 1916.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Wanganui Herald*, 9 Jun 1916.

PEARCE, EDWARD (1832-1922) was born in England, and came to New Zealand in 1861. He was in business for many years as a general and produce merchant in Wellington, eventually amalgamating his interests with Levin and Co., of which he became senior partner in 1893. Pearce was a member of the Wellington Provincial Council (for Wellington City) from 1865 till the abolition of the provinces, and served on the executive under the superintendency of Featherston (1866-68 and 1869). He also represented Wellington City in Parliament (1871-77). He was associated with many local bodies, including the harbour board, of which he was a member (1880-96) and chairman (1883-86 and 1892). He was president of the chamber of commerce, a director of the Wellington Trust, Loan and Investment Co. from 1876 and chairman (1880-97), and local director of the National Bank of New Zealand and the National Mutual Insurance Co. Pearce was an enthusiastic volunteer, and commanded the New Zealand regiment of artillery at a time when it consisted of 12 batteries all over the country. He died on 13 Oct 1922.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; 'Vard; *Evening Post*, 14 Oct 1922.

PEARCE, GEORGE VATER (1863-1935), a son of Robert B. Pearce, was born in Devon, and after leaving the Barnstaple Grammar School came to New Zealand in 1878. He took up farming in Taranaki, represented his province in Rugby football, and was champion mile runner at provincial meetings. In public life he was chairman of the Patea county council for 13 years, and of the Patea harbour board and the Patea freezing works. From 1908 until he was defeated in 1919 he represented Patea in Parliament. In 1893 Pearce married Miss Powdrell. He died on 2 Jan 1935.

## PEARSON

*N.Z.P.D.*, 30 Aug 1935; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 4 Jun 1935. Portrait: Parliament House.

PEARSON, WALTER HENRY (1832-1911) was born at Mangapury, India, the son of John Thomas Pearson, and grandson of the advocate-general of the supreme court of judicature in Bengal. He went to England for his education, and returned to India in 1849. In 1852 he went from India to Australia, where he lived until 1855, when he sailed in the schooner *Caledonia* for Port Chalmers, arriving on 30 Mar 1855.

Pearson's intention was to go on the land, and, in company with James Saunders and Peter Napier, he explored the country now known as Maniatoto plain. Returning to Dunedin, he joined James and William Saunders, who had come across from Australia with him, in the purchase from Napier of the Waipori run. Pearson did not find pastoral life congenial, and in May 1857 he took a position in the land office at Dunedin. Already the settlers in south Otago were complaining of the neglect of the Otago government, and before the year was out it was decided to open a branch of the land office at Invercargill in order to obviate complaints of delay and expense. Pearson was appointed in Oct 1857 to open the office, and proceeded at once to his duties, which were carried out in a wattle-and-daub hut with a thatched roof. His commission from the Otago waste lands board was to encourage and assist the settlement of the waste lands and to remove some of the grievances of the settlers. He was an excellent official, imparting unflinching courtesy and tact into his dealings. Three months after his arrival Elles, who had been appointed collector of customs at the Bluff, moved into Invercargill as receiver of land revenue. In Feb 1858 Pearson was appointed a justice of the peace.

The grievances of Murihiku culminated in the establishment of the new province of Southland. When the Provincial Council was elected Pearson was returned as member for Waihopai, and he was forthwith entrusted with the formation of a government. His official position as commissioner of crown lands for Southland (and a member of the waste lands boards), combined with his political position as a mem-

## PEARSON

ber of the Council and head of the executive, tended to cause friction. For a year or two things went smoothly enough. Pearson and the Superintendent (Menziess) in 1863 had a radical difference of opinion as to the action which Southland should take to profit by the goldfields at Lake Wakatipu. Pearson believed that though the field was politically outside the boundaries of Southland the province ought to make a bold bid to capture the trade of the goldfields, even to the extent of appointing a gold receiver at Queenstown and providing an escort to Invercargill. Menziess would not agree, and Pearson resigned from the government and the Council. The golden opportunity for Southland, he considered, had been allowed to slip. In 1864 Pearson, hoping to find a modus operandi, returned to the Council as member for Waihopai, but only to become involved in a constitutional conflict with the Superintendent. In Jul, being again entrusted with the formation of an executive, his prospective colleagues insisted that the Superintendent should accept full and complete responsibility in the government. On purely provincial matters he was to be controlled entirely by his executive, while on matters delegated to him by the General Government he was to consult the executive. Menziess complained that to accept such terms would reduce him to the position of a cipher. There was no way out of the impasse, and Pearson once more resigned from the Council and devoted himself to his paid post as the leading official in the province.

The finances were in a disastrous condition. In 1865 he came back as a member for Waihopai, and a few months later was again head of the executive. In Feb 1867 he retired from the Council, but at the general election a few months later he was elected for Oteramika, which he represented almost until the reunion of the provinces. Under no misapprehension as to the capacity of Southland to carry on, he moved early in 1868 that the time was ripe for the abolition of the whole provincial system and the substitution of local government through county and borough councils. The motion was withdrawn for lack of support. Again that year Pearson led the executive for a few months, and in 1869, when reunion was imminent, he took office again. His masterful conduct was evident from the fact that the Sup-

## PEARSON

erintendent (Taylor) wrote complaining of his acts and correspondence with officials behind the Superintendent's back. 'A government so divided,' he said, 'can expect nothing but disaster.' The executive stood by Pearson, and Taylor took the strong course of dismissing them from office. Overtures were made by Otago for reunion, and in Aug 1869 John Ross, Pearson, and Johnston were appointed commissioners to meet three from Otago to recommend a basis of reunion. They brought down a report recommending the reabsorption of Southland in Otago, with eight members in the Otago Provincial Council, and expressed the hope that this would prove the first step towards a united Middle Island government. The report was adopted (Nov 1869) after many stormy sittings, and Southland returned to the fold, practically bankrupt.

Pearson remained at the Invercargill land office until his retirement in 1884. His reports are full of interesting and literary matter and sidelights upon the events of the time. For eight years, 1880-88, he was a member of the school commissioners of Otago. After retiring, Pearson lived in Dunedin. His last few years he spent at Napier, where he died on 1 Sep 1911.

Pearson's publications were *A Review of the Position of Southland* (1866); *In Memoriam Sir John Richardson* (1879), and *The Financial Position of the Colony of New Zealand; its Extrication by the Sale or Lease of its Railways* (1887).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken; McIndoe; Pearson in *Otago Witness*, 22 Mar 1898; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Oct 1930 (p).

PEARSON, WILLIAM FISHER (1854-88) was born at Christchurch. Educated privately, he entered the service of the Bank of New Zealand under Coster (q.v.) and in three years was stationed successively at Christchurch, Palmerston North, Nelson and Lyttelton. In 1873, when Coster went to London to inaugurate the ocean services of the New Zealand Shipping Co., Pearson went as his private secretary. On his return to New Zealand a few years later he was appointed manager of Studholme and Russell's Raglan estate (Auckland). He soon afterwards returned to Canterbury, taking up a farm at Fairfield; and was chairman of the Oxford road board. In 1880 (with H. Brettagh) he

## PEAT

took up the Worlingham estate. Next year he was elected M.H.R. for Ashley, which he represented until his death (3 Jul 1888). During part of the time he was a whip for the Atkinson Government. Pearson was one of the earliest New Zealand-born parliamentarians. His father (Joseph Pearson) came to Canterbury in 1851 as manager for Hawdon, and took up Burnt Hill.

Acland; *The Press* and *Lyttelton Times*, 4 Jul 1888. Portrait: Parliament House.

PEAT, DAVID (1838-1919) was born in Rincardineshire, Scotland, the son of a farmer, and was educated at the local parish school, and for law at Montrose. Arriving in New Zealand in 1858, he took up farming at Poyntzfield, Rangitikei. In 1869 he was elected member of the Provincial Council for Waitotara and Rai-iwi, but resigned before the next session. He served on the Wanganui borough council, as member and chairman of the Wanganui harbour board and as a director of the Wanganui Freezing Co. He died on 1 Oct 1919.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908.

TE PEHI KUPE (?-1829), a famous chief of the early nineteenth century, was partly Ngati-Roata and partly Ngati-Awa. His mother, Wai-puna-a-hau, was a sister of Rauhoe. (See TE PUOHO). His first wife, Tiaia, was of the Tainui hapu of Waikato. Te Pehi was the uncle of Te Rauparaha and superior to him in rank.

A leader of great courage and sagacity, he took part in the heke Tahutahu-ahi, from Ra-whia to Urenui (Sep 1821). On this he was accompanied by Tiaia, who prevented Te Rauparaha from killing Rangituatea and, with Te Akau, prevented the Ngati-Maniapoto from attacking the heke at the mouth of the Mokau river. In 1822 they moved on towards Rapiti, taking part en route in the reduction of the Whanganui pa at Putiki-wharanui. In 1823, while Te Rauparaha was engaged elsewhere, Te Pehi attacked the Muaupoko stronghold on Rapiti and captured it. Though older than Te Rauparaha and a very brave warrior, he accepted the domination of his nephew and faithfully supported him.

Having made up his mind, against the wishes of his people, to visit England, Te Pehi in Feb 1824 boarded the whaler *Urania*, which was passing through Cook strait and refused to leave

## TE PEHI

her despite the determined efforts of Captain Reynolds to put him ashore. Taking his turn of duty with the crew, he won the regard of all on board. At Monte Video he saved the life of the captain by jumping overboard and swimming to his assistance, and when they reached England he lived in the captain's household at Liverpool for some months. He took a great interest in agriculture and mechanics and was keenly anxious to obtain not only tools and agricultural implements, but also firearms to defend his people against the northern conquerors. The British government made Captain Reynolds an allowance for the maintenance of Te Pehi while in England, and arranged for his return passage to New Zealand by the storeship *Thames* in 1825. The government having discontinued supplying firearms, Te Pehi obtained some in Sydney by bartering the clothing and agricultural implements which had been presented to him in England.

His visit to England imbued him with a great desire for civilised society, but on his return to New Zealand he found that three of his daughters had been killed by the Ngati-Apa at Waikanae. He soon took the field with Te Rauparaha in the conquest of the South Island, for the purpose of seeking satisfaction from the Ngai-Tahu for insults Te Rauparaha had received, and for harbouring Kekerengu. After the defeat of the Ngai-Tahu at Omihi, they were pursued and besieged at Raiapohia. There Te Pehi and other chiefs were received into the pa as guests and all were killed (1829). Rangihiroa, a worthy but diffident old chief, was Te Pehi Rupe's younger brother.

Te Pehi Rupe's son, TE-HIKO-O-TE-RANGI, who succeeded him, had command of the tribe during his father's absence. He took part in the heke Tama-te-Uaua (1832) and was at Hao-whenua (1834). He was a man of commanding stature and noble, intelligent physiognomy, sparing of words and dignified in manner. He treasured highly his father's injunctions to lead an upright life, and was more concerned to receive from the New Zealand Company in payment for the land articles of use and comfort than munitions of war. Not robust in temperament, he allowed Te Rauparaha to encroach upon his mana. He signed the Treaty of Waitangi (1840). Te Hiko married Topeora, a daughter of Rangihaeata.

## PENNEFATHER

Stack; Travers; Buick, *Old New Zealander*; E. J. Wakefield; S. P. Smith, *Wars and Taranaki*; Marsden, *L. and J.*; *The New Zealanders* (Library of Entertaining Knowledge, 1830) (p); *N.z. Times*, 16 Oct 1906; *N.Z. Herald*, 9, 16 Oct 1886.

PENNEFATHER, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1852-1921) was the son of Edward Pennefather, Q.C., of Dunlavin, county Wicklow, Ireland. Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, he graduated there (B.A., 1874, LL.M. 1877 and LL.D. 1891). He read for the bar at Lincoln's Inn from 1874, was called in 1877, and in 1878 was called to the Irish bar. For a few years he practised on the south-eastern circuit. Pennefather was private secretary to Sir William Jervois as governor of South Australia (1881-83) and of New Zealand (1883-86), and in 1886 was commissioner for New Zealand at the Indian and Colonial Exhibition. In the following year he became lecturer in law at Adelaide University, and in 1890 professor. He was the joint author of *Pennefather and Brown on the Civil Code of New Zealand*, and he compiled *Murray's Guide to New Zealand* (1893). Pennefather practised in Wellington with Brown and Dean, and was acting judge in New Zealand (1898-99). Shortly afterwards he returned to Ireland, where he died on 6 Feb 1921.

*Col. Gent.*; Ifennell.

PERCEVAL, SIR WESTBY BROOK (1854-1928) was the son of Westby Hawkshaw Perceval, of county Meath, and was born at Launceston, Tasmania, while his parents were en route to New Zealand. Educated first at Merton's school, Rangiora, he entered Christ's College as a junior Somes scholar (1867) and remained there until 1872, being captain of the College. In 1873 he entered Stonyhurst College, Lancashire, to study philosophy, and in 1875 commenced to read for the bar at the Middle Temple. He was called in 1878, returned to New Zealand and commenced to practise in Christchurch with T. I. Joynt. The partnership was dissolved in 1883, after which Perceval practised alone. In 1880 he married Jessie, daughter of the Hon John Johnston (q.v.).

Perceval took part in the agitation for a railway from Canterbury to the West Coast, and assisted to form the Canterbury Electors' association to promote the railway and tariff protection. In 1887 he was elected M.H.R. for

## PERE -

Christchurch South. In 1890 he was returned for City of Christchurch, and in the following session was chairman of committees. He resigned on 15 Sep 1891 to become Agent-general for New Zealand, and filled that position till 1896. In 1894 he was created a R.C.M.G., and the Pope conferred upon him in 1891 the rank of a Knight of St Gregory. He was a governor of the Royal Colonial Institute (1892), a member of the royal commission for the Chicago Exhibition (1904) and of the Chamberlain tariff commission.

Perceval published in 1891 a pamphlet *Land in Sight* (on the Liberal land policy), and in 1892 several small pamphlets on New Zealand. In 1896 he accepted the appointment of Agent-general for Tasmania, which he held to 1898. He was a director of the Union Bank of Australia and the River Plate Land Mortgage Co. He died on 23 Jun 1928.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 3 Jul 1928; *Parltry Record*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); iii; *Christ's Coil. List.*; Hocken; *N.z. Graphic*, 3 Oct 1891 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

PERE, WIREMU (WILLIAM HALBERT), who died in 1915, was a chief of the Poverty Bay tribes Rongo-whakaata and Te Aitanga-a-Mahaki. He was a half-caste by birth, the son of Thomas Halbert, known to the Maori as Tame Poto, one of the earliest settlers at Poverty Bay (who was drowned 1866). His mother Riria te Mauharanui was captured by Tuhoe at Haurturn (about 1826). By descent he represented all the Takitimu and Horouta tribes and also some of Matatua (who were in latter days largely followers of Te Rooti and of the Ringatu cult).

Pere was Maori in his tastes and disposition, and is alleged to have had some sympathy with Te Rooti. It was through the Ringatu and Matatua support that he was first elected member for the Eastern Maori in 1884 (defeating Carroll and Tomoana) after having been defeated on his first candidature in 1881. At the next general election he was defeated (by 1,298 to 1,112) by J. Carroll (q.v.), who had opposed the Stout-Vogel Government's native land administration act. In 1894 Carroll stood for a European seat; Wi Pere was again elected, and in spite of the hostile votes of the Arawa electors, he remained member until 1905 (when

PERRETT

he was defeated by A. T. Ngata). Two years later he was called to the Legislative Council (*his seat becoming vacant through absence in 1912*).

Pere was prominent in the promotion of the New Zealand Land Settlement Co. for the East Coast (which was first mooted in 1882-83), the object being to neutralise the freetrade in native lands by developing and managing them in the interests of the native owners. He visited England with W. L. Rees in 1888, but they failed to obtain the necessary capital and, the company getting into difficulties. Pere and Carroll were in 1892 appointed trustees, and continued to act until relieved by the East Coast-trust lands act 1902. Pere was one of the most able Maori politicians. He was a man of very determined character, a quality which, combined with a thorough grasp of Maori customs and tradition and great oratorical ability, made him a formidable leader of his people. Up to his time the representation of the Eastern district was more a matter of rivalry between the different canoes than of political views. It was the Arawa section who objected to the Kaihautu, or canoe captains, being constantly elected to Parliament, and there was a long struggle between them and the Takitimu people until Ngata's election in 1905. He died on 9 Dec 1915.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1884-87, 1894-1905. 1907-12; Lambert; Sir Apirana Ngata (information). Portrait: *N.Z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907.

PERRETT, JOHN DOUGLAS (1859-1937) was born and educated in Scotland and in the eighties came to New Zealand, where he opened an art school in Dunedin. He became well-known for his landscapes, particularly his drawings of the pink and white terraces, which were completed just before the eruption occurred. He painted Government House and grounds at the request of Lord Bledisloe. Examples of his work hang in many art galleries in New Zealand. Perrett died on 17 Jan 1937.

*N.Z. Herald*, 17 Jan 1937; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Dec 1886.

PERSTON, WILLIAM AUGUSTUS, qualified as a medical practitioner and practised in Auckland and afterwards in Whangarei. He represented Marsden in the Provincial Council (1868-69). Perston in 1871 submitted to Parliament

PETERS

proposals for the development of the fisheries in Auckland province. He died in 1891.

*App. H.R.*, 1871, H7.

PETCHELL, JOHN (1843-1929) was born near Laughton-en-le-Morthen, Yorkshire, and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Stately* (1853). In 1862 he took part in the Tuapeka gold rush, and in 1869 bought land at Longwood, in the Riverton district, where he started in business as a sawmiller. He later became a storekeeper, and was elected to the Southland Provincial Council for Riverton (1869-70). He was a member of the Riverton borough council, and mayor from 1889 to 1892.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Rivertoll Record* (p); *Southland-Times*, 5 Nov 1929.

PETER, WILLIAM SPENCE (1818-91) was born at Dundee, Scotland, educated there and at the age of 19 emigrated to South Australia. There he was engaged successfully in sheep farming until 1861, when he sold out and came to New Zealand. In his later years in Australia he made extensive explorations, including the district in West Australia now known as Kimberley. Peter took up the Anama station in Canterbury, and became a successful breeder first of merinos and later of crossbreds, his stock being much sought after. He was an active member of the Anama road board and in 1867-69 represented Ashburton in the Provincial Council. In 1868 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death (23 May 1891). He married in 1856 a daughter of H. C. Seymour, of Adelaide.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p, p. 841); *Col. Gent.; The Press*, 25 May 1891; *Lyttelton Times*, 15 Jun 1891.

PETERS, EDWARD, or BLACK PETER (?-1893) was born at Bombay, India, and was an Indian or Eurasian. He came to New Zealand in the *Maori* about 1853, having had some experience on the goldfields of California. In Mar 1857 he went to Tuapeka under engagement to Davis and Bowler, and while driving a bullock sledge through the river Tuapeka found gold in the sand. He worked for six months (with John Thomson) at Evans Flat, finding nothing rich. In 1858 he found gold in the Tuapeka river, and for some years he got a little gold from the river sand at the Woolshed creek, of which he showed samples

PETRE

to J. T. Thomson, the chief surveyor, who considered this the best specimen he had seen. Peters made no secret of his discovery; on the contrary, he showed the gold, sold it to the storekeepers and told them where he obtained it. For a while he had a companion-Jenkins-fossicking at the Woolshed while he went farther afield. His success, modest as it was, encouraged Gabriel Read (q.v.).

In Jul 1861 Peters made a claim to the reward on the basis of gold discovered in the Tuapeka, Waitahuna and Tokomairiro rivers. His claim was ignored by the provincial government, but in 1885 Parliament agreed to a grant of £50 conditional on the public finding a like sum, which was done. For some years Peters lived in a cottage belonging to J. H. Jenkinson, at Port Molyneux, and subsequently, his health failing, he was cared for in the benevolent institution in Dunedin, where he died in Jul 1893.

Otago P.C. departmental reports, sess. xvi; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Pyke (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 25 Nov, 1 Dec 1885, 24 Jun 1893.

PETRE, HENRY WILLIAM (1820-89) was the second son of the 11th baron Petre (who was a director of the New Zealand Company. Whanganui took its first name from him, and a portion of Wellington was named after his seat in Essex, Thorndon Hall). Petre came to New Zealand in the *Onental* (1840) and, with Hopper and Molesworth, entered into business at the Hutt, where they erected a flourmill and farmed. His residence at Petone was pictured by Brees.

Petre was a member of the illegal provisional committee in 1840 and an officer for the organisation of the defence of the Hutt district in 1845. On the dissolution of the partnership he engaged with his relatives (Clifford, Vavasour and Weld) in landed interests in the Wairarapa. He was a keen horseman, importing horses and riding them in races. On his return to the colony in 1843 he brought the thoroughbreds Aether and Riddlesworth, an important factor in his future breeding. As a pastoralist he tried unsuccessfully to cross the Australian merino with Lord Western's breed of sheep.

In 1846 Petre was appointed treasurer for the Southern District of the Colony; in 1848 colonial treasurer for New Munster (which involved a seat on the executive); in 1851 Colonial

PHARAZYN

Treasurer and in 1853 Postmaster-general. He married (1842) Mary Ann Eleanor (d. 1885), daughter of Richard Walmsley, of Middletoil Hall, Essex. After her death he married Sara (d. 1928), widow of Julian H. Tolme. In 1853 Petre was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his final departure from the Colony about 1860. He was deputy-lieutenant for Essex, where he died on 3 Dec 1889.

G.B.O.I.. 1838/680; Burke, *Peerage*; E. J. Wakefield, ii; Ward (p); *Evening Star*, 17 Dec 1889. -

PETRIE, DONALD (1846-1925), born in Morayshire, Scotland, was educated at the Aberdeen Grammar School and University, graduating M.A. After teaching at Scotch College, Melbourne, for six years, he was appointed inspector of schools to the Otago provincial government in 1874, and in 1894 chief inspector to the Auckland education board. Author of numerous papers on botanical subjects, he was a president of the Otago Institute and of the Auckland Museum and Institute. He was elected a fellow of the Linnean Society in 1886 for his work on the flora of New Zealand, a doctor of philosophy, and Hector medallist (1923). He died in 1925.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Aug 1894.

PETRIE, JOSEPH (1848-1908), who was born in Aberdeenshire, came to New Zealand by the *Silistria* in 1860, and after a few years on the Otago goldfields, settled on the West Coast in 1865. In 1874 he married Miss Creer, and the following year was elected to the Greymouth borough council. He was mayor in 1889-90, and from 1882 to 1884 he sat as member for Greymouth in the House of Representatives. Petrie was part owner and for many years editor of the *Greymouth Evening Star*. He was a member of the harbour board, the education board and the hospital trustees. He died on 4 May 1908.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Grey River Argus*, 5 May 1908.

PHARAZYN, CHARLES JOHNSON (1802-1903) was the son of a London merchant; was educated at a private school in London, and then entered the office of Lloyds. He was in partnership with his uncle as an insurance

## PHARAZYN

broker when he first became interested in colonisation by meeting Hindmarsh in the South Australian Association's rooms in Adelphi. He sailed with his wife and three children in the *Jane*, which put into Rio in distress. Pharazyn insisted that adequate repairs be effected, and came to the rescue by pledging his own goods as collateral security in a bottomry bond.

He landed in Wellington in May 1841 and had to resort to litigation to recover possession of his goods and £600 damages for retention. This took him to Sydney, and before returning to New Zealand he invested his capital in merchandise. With this he went into business as a storekeeper for a while, but then decided to take up land. He prospected with Nairn the whole extent of the South Island. Before 1851 they had penetrated to Tukurau (Otago) and on 27 Oct 1851 they reported to Cargill having discovered quartz at Goodwood, north Otago. Later Pharazyn prospected the lower Wairarapa, and with Fitzherbert leased an area on the shores of Palliser Bay, for which he paid £12 a year rent. They soon had 500 sheep running on 5,000 acres. Some years later Pharazyn dosed his partnership accounts and went to England. On returning to the colony he went into partnership with the Hon John Johnston, the well-known Wellington merchant. After a few prosperous years he entered the firm of Levin and Co., and by 1871 felt justified in retiring from business.

Pharazyn took an interest in public affairs. He was a member of the Wellington town board before 1870, and was in the Legislative Council from 1869 to 1885, when he retired to enable his son to be called in his place. He died on 16 Aug 1903. His wife died in 1864, and he married (1867) Jessica Rankin (1818-91), an English poetess, who came to New Zealand in that year.

His son, CHARLES PHARAZYN (1831-1903) lived most of his life on his property, Longwood, Wairarapa, where he took a prominent part in public affairs. He served on several local bodies and more than once contested a seat in the Provincial Council before he was elected in 1873. For the last two years of the province he and his brother, Robert, were both members. Pharazyn took a keen interest in education, and was for many years a member of the Wellington education board. In the late seventies

## PHARAZYN

both C. J. Pharazyn and his son Charles were members of the board together, the father being chairman. He died on 18 Feb 1903.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 9 Sep 1873; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Hocken; Pyke; Beattie, ii; *Evening Post*, 11 Oct 1902, 19 Feb, 17 Aug 1903, 12 Oct 1929 (p).

PHARAZYN, ROBERT (1833-96), the son of C. J. Pharazyn (q.v.), was born in London, and came to New Zealand with his parents. Shortly afterwards he was sent to Auckland for his education at St John's College. He purchased land at Te Aute, Hawkes Bay, became a sheep farmer and took part in the agitation for separation from Wellington. He was a prominent member of the Settlers' Association and a warden of the Waipukurau highway district (1858).

Selling out to Stokes, Pharazyn spent three years (1860-63) travelling in Europe. He came back to New Zealand just before the war on the West Coast, and purchased 5,000 acres of the Waitotara block, which he owned until his death. While improving this run (Marahau), Pharazyn gave some attention to public affairs. He was a facile writer and contributed much to the press in favour of colonial control over native affairs. He was for some years chairman in the militia. From 1865-69 he represented Wellington in the Provincial Council, and thenceforward until the abolition he represented Waitotara and Kai-iwi. At the time of the abolition he was provincial secretary. When Fox resigned the Rangitikei seat in the House of Representatives (1865) Pharazyn was elected and sat for a few months. He then retired and was appointed commissioner of West Coast lands under Fox, an office which he administered with zeal and capacity until it was abolished. In 1871 he married Mrs Lomax (nee Emily Whitbread, daughter of W. N. Cole, London).

Pharazyn was for a while mayor of Wanganui (to 1874), chairman of the hospital board, and of the Wanganui and Castlecliff Railway Co., which he helped to form. In 1875-76 he was a member of the Wellington City Council, and in 1876 he contested the Wanganui seat against Bryce. He was a good speaker and a student of political science. In 1885 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he remained a member until his death. He was a member of the banking

## PHENEY

committee in 1894. Pharazyn belonged to the old Liberal party in pre-Ballance days. In 1886 he was commissioner for New Zealand at the Indian and Colonial Exhibition in London. A man of considerable culture, well informed, a keen debater and a fine conversationalist, Pharazyn had no personal ambitions in public life. 'What he did was done out of a sense of duty, but never perfunctorily. He published a small history of the New Zealand Society (1867). He died on 19 Jul 1896.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 21 Jul 1896; Gisborne; Hocken; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 16 Sep 1874; *N.Z. Times*, 20 Jul 1896; *Evening Post*, 12 Oct 1929. Portrait: Parliament House.

PHENEY, RICHARD (1803-81) was the son of a prosperous law stationer in Chancery Lane, and succeeded to his father's business. After the death of his wife he came to New Zealand in 1850 by the *Eden* and took up land at Omata, Taranaki. He edited the *Taranaki Herald* from 1852 to Nov 1856, when owing to disagreement with the policy of the paper he was dismissed. The *Taranaki News* started in May 1857, and Pheneay was appointed editor. He died on 4 Mar 1881.

'Veils; *Taranaki Herald* and *Taranaki News*. 5 Mar 1881. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coli.

PHILLIPS, PHILIP AARON (1831-1913) was the son of Saul Charles Phillips (1793-1882, who died in Auckland). He was born at Brighton, and at the age of 14 went into the office of a wholesale firm in London. In 1848 he came to New Zealand and settled in Auckland. After working in employment for a year, he started as an ironmonger and hardware merchant in Vulcan lane. In 1851 he married Annie Myers (d. 1888).

For a quarter of a century Phillips did fairly well in business. He took an active interest also in public affairs. He was chairman of the city board of commissioners 1869-71, and succeeded in introducing the municipal corporations act of 1867, under which he became the first mayor of the city. He was also elected in 1870 to the Provincial Council for Auckland East, which he represented until his resignation in 1875. He was most active during this time in legislation for the benefit of the city, which resulted in securing rich endowments and reserves. He was chairman also of the city im-

## PHILLIPS

provement commissioners. and did much to amalgamate Ponsonby, Karangahape and Graf-ton road in the city. He also assisted in the establishment of a free library. He was the representative of the Provincial Council on the education board, a member of the harbour board and president of the Mechanics' Institute. He took an active part in obtaining a market and a water supply for the city. In 1870 he was appointed a justice of the peace, and he also acted as resident magistrate. Meanwhile Phillips' business suffered from the depression following the Waikato war and after being mayor (1871-74) he retired and was appointed town clerk. a position he filled with great success till 1899. He was a prominent freemason and was one of the leaders of the Jewish community and an early president. Phillips died on 3 Jun 1913.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Jewish Review*, 1931; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 May 1881. 9 Jun 1913; *Auckland Star*, 9 Jun 1913.

PHILLIPS, COLEMAN (1846-1925), a son of Mark Phillips, was born in Weymouth, England, and educated at private schools in Weymouth and Bristol. Arriving in New Zealand in 1864 he took part in the Maori war, and received a military land grant in the Waikato. He served in various positions (including that of captain) on small trading ships on the Waikato and Waipa rivers.

In 1872, after four months in Fiji. Phillips persuaded the Bank of New Zealand to advance £45,000 to King Thakombau to consolidate his power against the German influence behind Maafu. The following year he induced Auckland merchants to purchase a ship for the island trade, and opened the service by exporting sheep and cattle from New Zealand. He also proposed a scheme for the annexation of the islands of the Pacific and in 1874 furthered the annexation of Fiji by establishing the Auckland and Fiji Banking Co. In the same year he was admitted as a barrister and solicitor.

In 1877 Phillips took up the Dry River station in the Wairarapa, where he inaugurated a system of forest tree-planting. In 1878 he laid off farms for sale on deferred payment. Phillips served as warden of the Featherston road board (1875-85), as chairman of the Otarara rabbit board (1883), and as a member of the Wairarapa South and West county councils (1886-96).

PHILLIPS

Among the many reforms for which he was responsible were the abolition of toll gates in the Wairarapa in 1879 (later followed by the rest of New Zealand); the establishment of the first co-operative dairy factory (at Greytown in 1881); a scheme for combating the rabbit pest (1883); the shipping of frozen mutton to London by the *Lady Jocelyn* (1883); the importation of Holstein cattle into the North Island (1887-88); the packing of apples for export (1888), and the construction of the first public water race (in 1894 on the Moroa plains). He was associated with the founding of the Romney Marsh flock book, and in 1890 suggested building the political capital on the Moroa plains to relieve the congestion in Wellington, and to save the public records from possible sea bombardment. Phillips was first president of the New Zealand Friesian association and chairman of the Carterton chamber of commerce (1906). He twice unsuccessfully contested the Wairarapa seat as an independent. He was the author of many papers and pamphlets on Pacific trade and industry, dairy farming, the rabbit pest and other subjects. His wife was Amy Constance, daughter of Mrs. George, of Melbourne. He died on 3 Jun 1925.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *The Dominion*, 4 Jun 1925.

PHILLIPS, WILLIAM MORGAN (1819-1910) was born in England, and for some years worked in a banking house. Arriving in New Zealand by the *Olympus* in 1849, he settled in Nelson, but later moved to Wellington, where he represented Hutt in the Provincial Council (1857-61). For a time he was engaged in farming but later joined the staff of the Government Printing office. Phillips was prominently associated with the original horticultural association of Wellington. He died on 16 Aug 1911.

*The Dominion*, 17 Aug 1910.

PHILSON, THOMAS MOORE (1817-99) was born in county Derry, Ireland, educated there and graduated M.D. at Edinburgh University. He practised three years in the Forest of Dean, and then joined the army. He was assistant surgeon in the 58th Regiment, with which he came to New South Wales and later in the transport *Ann* to Bay of Islands (1845). He was present at Ruapekapeka and served after-

PIERCE

wards in the Wanganui campaign, being present when the murderers of the Gilfillan family were hanged. In 1851 he retired to practise in Auckland, where he was coroner (1858-99), and medical superintendent of the hospital to 1883. He gave as an endowment for a medical library at the hospital the fund of £300 presented to him by the citizens on his retirement.

Philson married (1840) Matilda Willmet, daughter of Captain Anderson, R.N. He died on 22 Nov 1899.

Morton; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 10 Feb 1883, 23 Nov 1899.

PI (? -1837), a Ngapuhi chief of the Mahurehure hapu, lived at Waimea, Hokianga. He took part in many of the tribal wars. In 1822, after visiting the Ngati-Mutunga at Pukewhakamaru pa, he turned back treacherously and sacked the pa. By contact with the missions he became a convert in the early thirties, assuming the name of 'Arama Karaka' (Adam Clark). Thereafter he protected the missions (notably after the assault by Kaitoke in 1837), but he was never very strict about suppressing lawlessness amongst his own tribe. Pi was killed at Otuihu pa, Bay of Islands, in 1837 during the fighting between Pomare and Titore.

His Son, ARAMA KARAKA PI, was a man of strong Christian principles who protected all missions. He married Hariata, the widow of Hone Heke. Governor Bowen visited him at Kaipara in 1869, shortly before his death.

Marsden, *L. and J.*; Ramsden; Carleton; S. P. Smith, *Maori Wars*, Buller; Brett, *Albertlanders* (p); *Nol. Herald*, 13 May 1870.

PICARD, ALFRED CHRISTOPHER, was born in England, and was a man of considerable culture and education and a brilliant speaker. He came to New Zealand in the *Ajax* (1848) and settled in Nelson. He represented Motueka and Massacre Bay in Parliament (1853-55) and was elected for Motueka in the Nelson Provincial Council in Aug 1855. He died on 17 Sep 1855.

*Parltry Record; Cycl. N.Z.*, v.

PIERCE, CHARLES FREDERICK (1877-1936) was born at Bootle, Lancashire, the son of T. D. Pierce; and educated in Liverpool and at

PIERCE

Magdalen College, Oxford, where he graduated M.A. Having been ordained deacon (1906) and priest (1907), he was an assistant master at Cranbrook school, Kent (1906-08), at Giggleswick (1908-14), and Haileybury College (1915) and headmaster at Cranbrook (1915). From there he was appointed in 1922 headmaster of Wanganui College, a post which he relinquished on account of ill-health in 1931. Pierce was chairman of the Cranbrook parish council (1919-22). He served in the war, 1914-18 as a chaplain with the British forces (1914-17). He died on 21 Jul 1936.

Crockford, 1930; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *TFangallii Chronicle*, 21 Jul 1936.

PIERCE, GEORGE PATRICK (1825-91) was a son of Captain George Pierce, R.N., and was born at Plymouth but educated in Ireland. He was apprenticed to the publishing house of Smith, Elder and Co., came to Auckland in 1856 and became a partner in the firm of Bain, Pierce and Co. Some years later he retired to become local manager and eventually general manager of the New Zealand Insurance Co. He was a prominent freemason and churchman. In 1865, with four others, he undertook to build St Sepulchre's Church (under the direction of Selwyn). He was for years vestryman and churchwarden, diocesan trustee, diocesan and general synodman, an assessor of the bishop's court and secretary of the orphans' home. In freemasonry he was master of the Ara lodge and provincial grand master under the Irish constitution.

Pierce married (1870) Eleanor, daughter of William Connell. He died on 17 May 1891.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 22 May 1891.

PIHAMA, HONE, or TE NGOHI (?-1894), a leading chief of Ngati-Ruanui, was a man of exalted birth, great natural ability and intelligence, and unquestioned integrity. He was educated by a missionary (John Beecham), whose name he adopted. Though consistently friendly to the pakeha, Pihama was much influenced by the Hauhau movement. He is credited with having planned the attack on General Cameron's lines at Nukumaru, but it is doubtful whether he was present at this action, which Bryce describes as the best and bravest in which the Maori took part. His brother Patohe, of Taiporohenui, was wounded

PILLANS

in fighting against Cameron. In Apr 1869 the Tangahoe, under pressure of the Ngati-Porou contingent, surrendered to Pihama and gave up arms. Hone took no further part in the rising, but threw his whole influence on the side of the pakeha, was appointed an assessor, and passed the mail through his district, frequently carrying it himself. He was a close friend of Parris (q.v.). He came later under the influence of Te Whiti and, though his personal loyalty was never questioned, his wife regularly paid his government salary into the Parihaka funds. In 1881 he accompanied Captain Knollys, A.D.C., to Parihaka but failed to persuade Te Whiti to receive the governor's letter. When the expedition was proceeding to Parihaka in Nov Pihama absented himself, since it would be unbecoming for an assessor to witness the destruction of the pakeha force. After this affair he volunteered to assist in dispersing the followers of the prophet to their own districts, but at the last moment withdrew from fear of makutu.

Pihama fanned for some years at Oeo (with Captain Good), and in 1875 he owned the coach running between Oeo and Hawera. In the early eighties he had a large public house on his own property but, owing to the ill-effects of drinking on the Maori, he refused to take out a license. He died at Parihaka on 3 Apr 1894.

*App. H.R.*, 1863-69, pass.; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki; Cowan; The Press*, 23 Mar 1903; *Hawera Star*, 10 Apr 1930 (p).

PILLANS, FRANCIS SCOTT (1810-89), the son of James Pillans, of Myres Castle, Fife-shire, was born and educated in Edinburgh and travelled considerably in Europe. He arrived in Port Chalmers in the *Mooltan* (1849), and took up land at Inch Clutha, where he was the first settler after Redpath. He was a justice of the peace, and in 1863 was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member for ten years. Owing to the death of his brother, on his way to settle in Otago, Pillans retired from public life and devoted himself to his own affairs and his chief hobby, pisciculture. He owned the Manuka Island estate, Hillend. Pillans died on 12 Dec 1889.

Hocken; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 14 Dec 1889; *N.Z. Graphic*, 18 Feb 1893 (p).

PILUET

PILLIET, WALTER HYPOLYTE (1835-85) was born in France and brought up in England. He came to New Zealand in the late forties as a cadet on the Flaxbourne station of Clifford and Weld, who were relatives. Not finding this suitable, he was in business in Invercargill as a surveyor and land agent, spent some time on the marine survey and became private secretary to Donald McLean as Native Minister. In 1856 he was appointed sub-collector of customs at Picton, and later warden and magistrate on the Marlborough goldfields; at Kaikoura (1869) and Akaroa (1872).

Pilliet was member of the Canterbury Provincial Council for Bays (1874-76). He was elected M.H.R. for Stanmore in 1881 but unseated on petition. Elected again in 1882, he sat till 1884, when he was defeated. He married in 1864 Mary Ann, daughter of David Johnston (Nelson), and in 1872 Agnes, daughter of Ebenezer Hay (Pigeon Bay). His death occurred on 30 Nov 1885.

Civil service records; Guthrie Hay; *Lytelton Times*, 1 Dec 1885. Portrait: Parliament House.

PINKERTON, DAVID (1836-1906) was born at Kirknewton, Edinburghshire; received his education in the parish, partly under Dr John Hislop (q.v.), and was apprenticed to boot-making. He emigrated to Otago in the *Lady Egidia* in 1861, spent a short time at the diggings and then settled in Dunedin at his trade, which he followed as journeyman and employer until 1890.

He took a deep interest and had much success in the settlement of disputes by conciliation. In 1889 he was a member of the anti-sweating committee (of which A. Bathgate and Stout were also members). He assisted to draw up the log for the tailoresses' union, of which he was president in its second and third years. He took a keen interest in the proposal (which failed for lack of funds) to found a convalescent home for tailoresses. He was active also in the bootmakers' union, and was for three years president of the Otago Trades and Labour Council.

In 1890 Pinkerton was elected at the head of the poll to represent the City of Dunedin in Parliament, his colleagues being Hutchison and Fish. The defeated candidates included J. Allen and A. Lee Smith. In 1893 he was again

PIRANI

at the head of the poll, with Earnshaw and Hutchison as colleagues. In Parliament Pinkerton was chairman of the labour bills committee. He was defeated in 1896 (along with Hutchison, Begg and Earnshaw), the successful candidates being M. J. S. Mackenzie, J. A. Millar and Fish. Two months later he was appointed to the Legislative Council (in which he sat until his death). Here also he was a capable chairman of the labour bills committee until his sight failed.

Pinkerton was a member of the Otago Harbour Board for three years and of the New Zealand and South Seas Exhibition committee (1889-90). For some time he held the position of district chief ranger in the order of Odd-fellows. He died on 23 Jun 1906.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 28 Jun 1906; Paul, *Trades Unionism; Otago Daily Times*, 25 Jun 1906. Portrait: Parliament House.

PINKERTON, WILLIAM (1809-93) was born in Northumberland, and had a sheep farm in the Cheviot hills before leaving for South Australia in 1838. There he had land on the Torrens river and later at Port Lincoln. In 1854 he was attracted to Otago. No ship being available, he purchased the schooner *Amherst* and loaded it with sheep and cattle. Having explored south Otago, he selected the Brooksdale station at Tapanui, and brought his family there in 1857. In that year he was appointed an inspector of stock for Otago. Pinkerton married Miss Herriot (after whom the town of Heriot was named). The run being turned into hundreds about 1867, he sold his holding to his son-in-law, John McKellar, and left for California. He was ranching for some years in New Mexico, and died in Arizona on 27 Feb 1893. Pinkerton was a hardy explorer and traveller and used to ford the Molyneux above the falls. He was fond of music, and was an accomplished violinist. He represented Wakatipu in the Otago Provincial Council for a few months in 1863.

Roberts, *Southland*; Beattie, iii; *Tapanui*.

PIRANI, FREDERICK (1859-1926), the son of H. C. Pirani (1817-94), was born in Melbourne and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1864, his father being connected with a newspaper on the West Coast. He was educated at

PIRIKAWAU

the model school, Melbourne, and the Presbyterian and Anglican schools at Hokitika.

He served his apprenticeship to the printing trade in the *Wanganui Herald* office (under Ballance). In 1883 at Blenheim he had his first experience of public affairs as a member of the school committee. In 1891, with his brother David, he took over the *Manawatu Standard* (Palmerston North), which they conducted until 1903. Pirani took a vigorous part in public life in Palmerston. He was president of the Manawatu A. and P. association, a member of the Wellington land board and of the Middle District University council, chairman of the licensing committee and of the school committee, a member of the borough council (1888-91, 1901-3) and representative of his district on the Wanganui education board (of which he was chairman for many years).

In 1893 he was elected M.H.R. for Palmerston North. In politics independent, and always a trenchant critic, he was one of the young New Zealand party, which offered the most troublesome opposition to the Seddon Government in the late nineties. He retired in 1902 and never re-entered Parliament, though he contested several elections—Hutt (1902), Palmerston North (1905), Wanganui (1914), and Wellington Central (1919). In 1903 Pirani sold out of the *Manawatu Standard* and bought a share in the *Feilding Star*, in which he was interested for some years. In his later years he was connected with *The Dominion* (Wellington) and the Newspaper Proprietors' association, for which he acted as advocate in industrial disputes. He was chairman of the Kelburn school committee, and a few months before his death was elected to the Wellington education board. He was twice married, and died on 26 Oct 1926. Pirani was an inveterate critic and intrepid debater, with a passion for education, entirely disinterested.

*eye!* *N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z.P.D.*, 1893-1902 (notably 24 Jun 1927); *Evening Post*, 27 Oct 1926. Portrait: Parliament House.

PIRIKAWAU belonged to the Ngati-Toa tribe and was closely related to the principal chiefs at Waikanae, especially Hiko-o-te-Rangi (q.v.). About 1843 he went to England in charge of Beauchamp Halswell, son of the commissioner of native reserves, and he lived with that fam-

PITT

ily for some time at Gore Lodge, Old Brompton. He had already learned writing and reading from the Rev O. Hadfield (q.v.), and he continued his schooling in England and also visited Germany. While in England he wrote to Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake warning him against associating with Rangihaeata. After returning to New Zealand Pirikawau acted as interpreter to Sir George Grey and accompanied him on his visits to inland tribes. He went with him also to England and to South Africa, where he spent 18 months, and saw much of the native races. He wrote in the *Maori Messenger* in 1857 describing his experiences. Pirikawau was credited by Topine te Mamaku with having originated the King movement through circular letters which he sent to the chiefs describing what he had seen abroad of the enslavement of native races by the pakeha. He died on 12 Aug 1875.

PUT, ALBERT (1841-1906) was born in Hobart, a son of Captain Pitt, harbourmaster; educated there, studied law and was admitted to the Tasmanian bar. Having married, Pitt left for Otago and was admitted to the bar in Dunedin (1864). In the following year he proceeded to Nelson, where he practised at first in partnership with Henry Adams as Adams and Pitt, with a branch in Wellington in charge of E. T. Conolly (1877), and later with Edward Moore.

Pitt represented Nelson in the Provincial Council (1867-68 and 1873-75) and was on the executive in 1874 as provincial solicitor. He contested the parliamentary seat for Nelson in 1878 as an opponent of Grey without success, but in the following year was returned. He took a leading part in the stonewall on the representation bill in 1881, when the interests of the West Coast seemed to be jeopardised. Nelson having lost a seat, he was out of Parliament in 1881 and did not re-enter politics for many years. He was, however, prominent in local matters. He was chairman of the inland communications committee, a governor of Nelson College (1881-1904), a member of the council of Victoria College (1905), a synodsmen, and chancellor of the Anglican diocese of Nelson, and throughout was engaged in a busy legal practice. In his early days he defended the Maungatapu murderers. He was for many

## PITT

years city solicitor and crown prosecutor.

Pitt was a keen volunteer. Having joined first in Tasmania, he held a commission in the Nelson artillery cadets and volunteers from 1865 to 1871. In 1873 he became captain of the Nelson battery. He rose to be lieutenant-colonel and to command the district (1877). In 1881 he commanded the majority of the Nelson volunteers who took part in the operations at Parihaka. In 1895 he again commanded the district, and he had charge of the contingent from New Zealand to the Queen's jubilee (1897).

In 1898 Pitt was chairman of the police commission, and in the following year he was called to the Legislative Council. On the retirement of W. C. Walker (q.v.) in 1903 he became leader of the Council and a member of the ministry. He held the portfolios of Attorney-General under Seddon (1903-06); Attorney-General and Minister of Defence under Hall-Jones, and the same offices (with the addition of that of Colonial Secretary) under Ward (1906). His health was now seriously undermined, and he died on 18 Nov 1906.

*N.z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1907, *et pass.*; *The Colonist*, 19, 21 Nov 1906; *Wellington Times* and *N.z. Times*, 19 Nov 1906. Portrait; Parliament House.

PITT, GEORGE DEAN (1781-1851) was born in Ireland. He received his first commission in the 42nd Regiment in 1805 and transferred to the 96th. (Captain, 1809; major, 1814; lieutenant-colonel 80th Regiment, 1837; major-general 1846.) He saw service at the capture of the Danish West Indies (1807), at Martinique (1809) and in the Peninsula (1811-14), being present at Albuera, Vittoria, Pampeluna, the Pyrenees and the siege of Badajoz. (C.B.; K.H.)

After some time as inspecting field officer in Great Britain he was appointed to the command in New Zealand (1847). He took the oath as lieutenant-governor of New Ulster (14 Feb 1848) and assumed office when Sir George Grey left the province in Aug and Nov. In Aug 1849 he was rewarded for distinguished service and in the same year was called to the Legislative Council. Pitt died in office on 8 Jan 1851. He was a Knight of the Royal Hanoverian Guelphic Order. The name of 'Pitt' was assumed in 1818, in which year he married Susan Bail-

## PLIMMER

lie.. A daughter married General J. H. Laye, C.B.

His eldest son, GEORGE DEAN PITT, who was an ensign in the 48th Regiment (1839) and was promoted captain in the 80th Regiment (1849), was private secretary to his father as lieutenant-governor of New Munster (1848). In 1863 he proceeded to Australia with F. D. Bell and Gorst to raise volunteers for the Waikato war. The first Waikato Regiment, of which he was gazetted lieutenant-colonel in Jun, was known as 'Pitt's Four Hundred'. He was afterwards assistant military secretary and later was in the office of the Keeper of the Crown jewels.

The second son, WILLIAM AUGUSTUS DEAN (1833-90) was an ensign in the 60th Rifles (1852); transferred to the 55th as lieutenant (1856), and sold out in 1857 to settle in Australia. He married a daughter of the Hon J. T. Gellibrand and was prominent in organising the Victorian volunteers. Pitt came to New Zealand in 1864 and took up land at Blueskin, Otago, a few years later. In 1886 he moved to Auckland.

*N.Z. Ga.*, 1848-51; P.R.O., W.O. 42.38.205; *Army Lists*; Gudgeon, 211; Buckingham and Chandos papers, Brit. Mus., 1862-64; Cowan; *New Zealander*, 11 Jan 1851; *N.z. Herald*, 10 Nov 1890, 9 Jul 1926; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924.

PLIMMER, JOHN (1812-1905) was a Shropshireman, the son of a builder and timber merchant, and was born at Upton-under-Amon, near Shrewsbury. Educated in the local school, he obtained some experience and skill as a forester by working near Bewdley and in the forest of Dean. He was already married and had two children when he embarked in 1841 in the *Gertrude* for New Zealand. When she arrived at Port Nicholson in Oct the settlers were moving from the old town of Britannia to the new site on Thorndon flat.

Instructed to land at Kaiwarra, Plimmer set foot ashore on 3 Nov and erected a cabin at Te Aro flat, which was then covered with fern and flax. In this habitation, well covered against the rain but with only an earthen floor, the family lived for the first year. Plimmer was busy cutting timber and burning charcoal for himself and other settlers. He also made some money by limeburning until the earthquake of 1848 discouraged building in brick and brought

## PLUNKET

wooden houses again into favour. Plimmer's house was erected at the top of Ingestre street, but in 1844 he removed to the site of Barrett's hotel and built in brick. In 1850 he purchased for £80 the wreck of the American ship *Inconstant* and obtained permission from the governor to tow it to the foreshore near Lambton quay and erect a pier out to it. Merchants at Te Aro tried to frustrate the scheme, but Plimmer persisted and thus established his wharf and warehouse, which survived the other private wharves and was berthing small vessels as late as 1883. The lower deck was a bonded store, and Plimmer did very well from the dues he was able to collect.

As he accumulated capital Plimmer helped his fellow-settlers in financing public companies. The most important was the Wellington and Manawatu Railway Co., of which he was a shareholder from the outset. He moved the first resolution pledging the company to construct the railway, and with John Wallace canvassed the city for shares. He was on the board of the company until his death. The first public meetings in connection with this undertaking were held in Sep 1880; and by 1886 the line from Wellington to Longburn (84 miles) was in operation.

Plimmer was a member of the 'Wellington Provincial Council for Wellington (1856-57), and got a bill passed to vest in the town its remaining reserves. He was a member of the town board under the act of 1867. He died on 5 Jan 1905.

His son, ISAAC PLIMMER (1834-1908) was licensee of the Albert and Barrett's hotels in Wellington and associated with him in business. He represented Wellington in the Provincial Council (1869-71).

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*, *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Ward; Young (p); *N.Z. Times*, 6 Jan 1905; *Evening Post*, 16 Sep 1929 (p), 7 Oct 1929.

PLUNKET, SIR WILLIAM LEE PLUNKET, 5th Baron (1864-1920) was the son of the 4th baron, who was Archbishop of Dublin and Primate of Ireland, his mother being Annie Lee, daughter of Sir Benjamin Lee Guinness and sister of Lord Ardilaun and Lord Iveagh. Educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Dublin (where he graduated B.A. and was captain of the rowing club), he joined the diplomatic ser-

## POLACK

vice in 1889 as honorary attaché to the embassy in Rome. In 1892 he was transferred to Constantinople. Retiring in 1894, he became private secretary to Lord Cadogan, Lord-lieutenant of Ireland, and was decorated with the C.V.O. for his services in arranging the details of the visit of Queen Victoria. As private secretary to Lord Dudley, he had to do the same work in connection with two visits paid by King Edward VII (who raised him to K.C.V.O.). In 1904 Lord Plunket was appointed Governor of New Zealand, a position he held with success until the end of his term (which was extended to 1910). He was a freemason in Ireland and grand master in New Zealand. He was also a knight of grace of St John of Jerusalem.

Plunket married (1894) Lady Victoria Alexandrina, daughter of the first marquis of Dufferin and Ava. He died on 24 Jan 1920.

Burke; *The Times*, 26 Jan 1920.

POKAIA (?-1807), a chief of Ngapuhi, was the uncle of Hone Heke and lived at Kirioko, near Kaikohe. In 1805 he joined a taua of Te Roroa to avenge the seduction of the wife of Pinaki by a Ngati-Whatua. In the fight Pokaia's son Te Tao was killed by Te Hekeua, thus giving him a casus belli against both Te Uri-o-Hau tribe and Te Roroa. Pokaia, moreover, was in love with Kararu, the sister of Hongi Hika. Being rejected, he fell upon a pa of Taoho's called Whakatau, in the Kaihu valley, killing and eating all the occupants. As the operations against Taoho continued long after utu was satisfied, Taoho retired to Te Puka on the Wairoa river, where Pokaia again attacked him and was repulsed. In this fighting Hongi Hika took part. Pokaia was killed at Moremonui in 1807 in a great ambush by the Ngati-Whatua under I furupanga and Taoho.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*.

POLACK, JOEL SAMUEL, was born in England of Jewish parents, and was a man of considerable education and artistic and scientific talents. He travelled in Europe and North America (being in California in 1849). He was in the commissariat department in South Africa, and also in the ordnance branch, and came in the *Chalcedony* to Australia, where he was a ship chandler. Shortly afterwards he visited New Zea-

## POLAND

land and he was in business as a storekeeper and flax trader in Kororareka and Hokianga. In 1838 he gave evidence before the select committee on New Zealand, and he was a member of the Colonial Society in London. After the colonisation of New Zealand he returned here, settling first at the Bay of Islands, where, in 1842, he fought a duel with B. Turner (both parties being slightly wounded). He afterwards settled in Auckland, but eventually went to live in California.

Polack published in 1838 *New Zealand; being a narrative of Travels and Adventures during Residence in the Country between the years 1831 and 1837*; and in 1840 a two-volume work *Manners and Customs of the New Zealanders*.

G.R.D.P., 1838/680; *N.Z. Gn.*, 1841, p. 87; Ramsden; Marsden, *L. and J.*; New Zealand Archives, HR. 1 and 2; Polack, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Jun 1895.

POLAND, HUGH (1868-1938), a son of John Poland, was born in Tuakau, and attended the Tuakau school and Auckland Grammar School. He was a prominent amateur athlete, and between 1887 and 1894 represented Auckland several times in Rugby football. After teaching for two years, he was engaged in flax-milling in Helensville, in storekeeping in Rotorua and Paeroa, and eventually in Paeroa. He was a member of the Ohinemuri County Council (1898-1908) and chairman (1901-05). In 1908 he defeated E. G. B. Moss for the Ohinemuri seat in the House of Representatives. Until he was defeated by A. M. Samuel in 1925, Poland held the seat as the 'miners' advocate: For over 30 years he was secretary of the Ohinemuri Jockey club. He died on 3 Jan 1938.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Mar 1938; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Jan 1938; *Zealandia*, 20 Jan 1938. Portrait: Parliament House.

POLLEN, DANIEL (1813-96) was born at Kingsend, Dublin, Ireland, on 2 Jun 1813, the son of Hugh Pollen (d. 1835) and his wife Elizabeth O'Neill. Pollen's early life is shrouded in obscurity. He is believed to have attended school in Dublin, and may have spent some years in the United States, where his father was engaged in the building of the Capitol (finished in 1827). He studied medicine,

## POLLEN

and appears to have graduated M.D. He is believed to have come to New South Wales in the late thirties, and is said to have crossed to North Auckland in a privately chartered schooner late in 1839 or in Jan 1840; He signed as 'D. Pollen, M.D.: the address of welcome from the white residents of Kororareka to Captain Hobson (1 Feb 1840). He witnessed the proceedings at the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi, and on 17 Feb was elected a member of the provisional committee of the New Zealand Banking Co. at Kororareka.

Pollen is stated to have spent a year or two in medical practice in Sydney, either before coming to Bay of Islands, or after Feb 1840. In Sep 1841 he bought a small farm (7 acres) at the land sale in Auckland, and with J. F. Hoggard (q.v.) a town section in Auckland. They were in business together for a while, Pollen living in Parnell and practising medicine. In 1844 he was appointed coroner (holding office till 1848). On 18 May 1846 he married Jane Henderson, daughter of Lieutenant Essex, R.N., of Demarara, and in the following year he accepted the post of medical officer of the Scots company which was mining copper at Kawau. There Pollen spent several years. He took a great interest in various societies and institutions for the benefit of the workers on the island, Maori and European, and presided at meetings of the Total Abstinence Society, the scientific association and the library. He engaged also in journalism, and in contributions to the *New Zealander* showed himself an accomplished controversialist, notably on the burning question of the late forties self-government. He is said to have edited this paper for a while.

When the constitution was brought into operation (1853) Pollen was appointed (Feb 1854) chief clerk in the Superintendent's office, and shortly after the establishment of the Provincial Council he was appointed to the executive (14 Mar 1854), in which he held office under the superintendencies of W'nyard, Williamson and Whitaker. He was, however, unable to get himself elected at the first polls in 1853 either to the Provincial Council or to Parliament. Late in 1856, however, he was elected a member of the Provincial Council, in which he represented Auckland Suburbs (Dec 1856-Feb 1857, and Nov 1857-Sep 1861) and

## POLLEN

Auckland East (11 Feb 1862-Sep 1865). He twice acted as deputy for the Superintendent (in 1862 for Williamson, and in 1866 for Whitaker). Pollen sought official employment, and in Aug 1858 was appointed commissioner of crown lands for Auckland, a post which he held until Mar 1862. In those days he evinced a strong sympathy for the Maori, whose cause he championed in the *New Zealander*.

In 1861 Pollen was called to the Legislative Council, in which he represented the Fox ministry (without portfolio) until Aug 1862. For some years (to 1863) he was a member of the public domains board. He was appointed receiver of land revenue at Auckland (1866) and in 1867 resigned from the Council to become agent for the General Government at Auckland. In Jun 1868 he was again called to the Council (by Stafford) and for the next twelve months he was the Government representative in that chamber (without portfolio). He was a candidate for the superintendency of Auckland in 1869, but withdrew after a hostile meeting at Thames. By holding the post of agent for the General Government in 1870 he was disqualified for continuing as a member of the Legislative Council, which he accordingly resigned. In Jan 1870 he was censured by the Fox Government for approving a tentative offer made by J. C. Firth (q.v.) to Te Kooti not to renew the campaign, but at the request of the Government he withdrew his resignation. He was now receiver of land revenue, commissioner of confiscated lands, commissioner under the native land act 1870, and immigration officer. When Vogel came into office in 1873 he recalled Pollen to the Council and the executive, and two months later Pollen first became Colonial Secretary. He remained in office until being called upon himself to reconstruct the ministry in 1875. In Feb 1876 his government gave way again to Vogel, but he continued a member of the 'Continuous Ministry: administering the department of Colonial Secretary under Vogel and Atkinson until Oct 1877. Thereafter he enjoyed a Government pension until his death on 18 May 1896, sitting all the time as a member of the Legislative Council.

A man of high culture and genial temperament, Pollen spoke with warmth but never discourtesy. His mind was large and logical,

## POMARE

and he had great political foresight. In the Legislative Council he was a ready and polished debater; though never quite free from official restrictions he was always straightforward and outspoken. He remarked on one occasion: 'I have, I am happy to say, no constituents, and when I talk I address myself to this Council: Pollen had a shrewd insight into human nature, a kindly and humorous approach in debate, and a pungent and persuasive style. He had a faculty for quick decisions and accurate perception without any political bias, and had a remarkable knowledge of detail and legislation. As agent in Auckland he showed great vigour and ability. As an administrator he was eminently safe and trustworthy, with a distinctly Tory belief that what was best administered was best. He supported the women's franchise league. As a business man Pollen had considerable success. The brickworks at Avondale were established by him in the seventies, and he received a medal at the Dunedin Exhibition (1865) for his zealous efforts to foster the manufacture of pottery. He was chairman of the East Coast Native Land Settlement Co.

His eldest son, HUGH POLLEN (1851-1912), was clerk to the agent for the General Government in 1871; entered the Colonial Secretary's office as an extra clerk; became chief clerk (1879), and Under-secretary (1892). He died on 11 Jan 1912.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.z. Gaz.*; *N.z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 11 Jun 1896); information from family and Rev E. C. Good, Avondale; Rusden; Saunders (p); Gisborne (p); *Evening Post*, 19 May 1896; 'Mercurio' in *N.Z. Herald*, 11 May 1889; *N.Z. Herald*, 19 May 1896. Portrait: Parliament House.

POMARE (?-1826). This powerful Ngapuhi chief, whose original name was Whetoi, was a son of Tu Whanga and Puhi. His hapu was Uri Karaka and his pa was Otuihu, at the junction of the Waikare and Kawakawa rivers (just opposite the present wharf at Opuā). Pomare was a contemporary of Hongi Hika and took part in many of his campaigns. He was in the heyday of his fame when Kendall arrived in Bay of Islands in 1814. At the end of that year Marsden stayed a night in his pa, and a few months later Pomare went as a passenger in the *Active* to Port Jackson. He made less use of his opportunities than Hongi (q.v.),

and when next Marsden visited him at Wai-kare (1819) he complained bitterly that he had no blacksmith living with him. Impressed with the success of the ruling dynasty of Tahiti in the civilisation of their kingdom, Whetoi assumed their name in place of his own. In 1820-21 he accompanied Te Wera on an expedition against the people at East Cape. Finding the pa Te Whetu Matarau impregnable, they attacked first Okau-whare-toa, which they captured with much slaughter. Amongst their prisoners was a woman of very high rank, Te Rang-i-Paia, the wife of Tokomauri and ancestor of Henare Potae (q.v.). Pomare aften'ards took her to Bay of Islands as his wife. Finding the attack on Te Whetu unavailing, he sat down on the flats to besiege it and for months subsisted on the cultivations of the defenders. Then he ostentatiously withdrew to his canoes and retired with his whole force round Matakaoa cape. When the unsuspecting defenders emerged from their pa and fell upon the remnants of their food supplies Pomare, doubling back quickly in the darkness, easily captured the stronghold and many prisoners. The remainder of the local people then retreated into the forest.

Pomare returned to his home (Apr 1821) genuinely anxious to make peace with Ngati-Porou and bring to them the blessings of the Gospel. Late that year he accompanied Hongi against the Ngati-Maru, but withdrew rather than be a party to the treachery at Te Totara. He went instead to attack Tuhua island, in Bay of Plenty. In 1822, with a powerful force, he sought vengeance against Ngati-Pukeko and Ngati-Awa for losses sustained by his people in the expedition of Te Morenga in 1818. Ngati-Awa fled from Whakatane on the first alarm, and Pomare, laden with spoils, including many preserved heads for the European trade, returned to his home, where Kendall was living under his protection. In the early months of 1823 he took part in Hongi's expedition against the Arawa at Rotorua. After the defeat of the Arawa Pomare and Hongi had some disagreement on the plan of campaign, and Pomare withdrew his people to the sea coast at Waihi and effected a junction with Te Wera, who was on a new expedition to East Cape (Aug 1823). After capturing the Ngati-Awa pa of Puketapu they advanced up the valley by Rua-

toki as far as Te Hua and Tunanui, killing many of the fleeing Ngati-Awa and Urewera. Scouts of Urewera got into touch with Pomare and a party of chiefs opened negotiations for Te Mautaranui, with whom Ngapuhi made a satisfactory peace. Pomare then embarked his taua and proceeded eastward, harrying the Whakatohea and the Whanau-a-Apanui, but suffering a reverse at the hands of the latter at Te Kaha. Turning the tables at Whangaparaoa, Pomare went on to Te Kawakawa and sought there, through the mediation of Rang-i-Paia, to make peace with Ngati-Porou. Distrusting these overtures, and encouraged by the weakness of the embassy, Ngati-Porou attacked them, but were severely repulsed by the Ngapuhi guns. Pomare co-operated for a while with Te Wera in his operations at Waiapu and Wairoa, and then returned to Te Kawakawa, where finally peace was made, thus ending hostilities with Ngati-Porou which had lasted since the killing of the Ngapuhi girl in 1806. Ngapuhi then returned to their homes, taking with them some Ngati-Porou who were anxious to hear the Gospel (1824).

Later in that year Te Mautaranui appeared at Bay of Islands to seek help against his old enemies of Ngati-Kahungunu. Pomare consented, and in May left the Bay to join forces with Te Wera at Mahia and co-operate from 'Vairoa with a strong taua of inland tribes. The Ngapuhi took part in the attack on Titi-rangi and Pomare is said at this or some other time to have traversed the plains of Ahuriri. This was almost the last of his successful wars. Harboured the hope of revenge against Waikato, he refused to listen to the warnings of Hongi against breaking the peace that had been made through a woman after Matakiki. After a visit to Thames to cut spars for Dillon he tried to get his hosts to join him against Waikato. Dejected by their refusal, he returned to Barrier island. There Te Rauroha tried to dissuade him and Te Wherowhero was also disposed to remonstrate. Deaf to all warnings, Pomare persisted. He had reached the neighbourhood of Te Rore, on the Waipa (May 1826) when he was suddenly attacked by Ngati-Tamaoho, Ngati-Paoa (under Taraia Ngaku'i) and Ngati-Tipa (under Nini). He was mortally wounded by a son of Kukutai and by Taraia, and a mere remnant of his people re-

gained their homes, with only the chiefs Moe-tara and Te Mau-paraoa and none of their canoes.

On Pomare's death the direct line failed, his only son having been killed a year earlier. He was succeeded in the leadership by Te Mau-paraoa (q.v.), a Ngati-Kahungunu who had been captured on one of the Ngapuhi raids and brought back to the Bay. In subsequent campaigns he showed great bravery and force of character and he was accepted by the tribe as the war leader.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Buick, *First War*; Cowan; Carleton.

POMARE (1775-1850). Pomare's successor as chief was his nephew, Whetoi, the son of his sister Haki and Te Tautoro (killed at Wairua). He assumed the name Pomare on his uncle's death (1826) so that all who addressed him might be reminded of their duty to obtain revenge against Waikato. Born late in the eighteenth century, he was tall and powerful, and well tattooed. D'Urville says that he cut off the head of the father of Hinaki and sold it to the French commander. Pomare was constantly engaged in hostilities with other sections of Ngapuhi, and in 1830 ceded Kororareka asutu for the death of Hengi in the battle of the girls. H.M.S. *Alligator's* people in 1834 were much struck by his appearance and conduct, and considered he was justified in seizing a schooner from a dishonest settler. In 1837 Pomare and Titore were engaged in a war which the combined efforts of Hobson and Marsden could not compose. Titore with 800 men in 40 canoes failed to take Pomare's pa and died of wounds (1 Jun 1837).

Pomare collected toll on shipping at Wahapu and Otuihu until the advent of British authority destroyed this source of revenue. In the early days of British sovereignty he was dissolute, overbearing and violent, cunning and rapacious. Nor was his loyalty above suspicion. On the outbreak of Heke's hostilities letters were intercepted in which he encouraged hostility to the pakeha. As a precaution he was captured at his pa (30 Apr 1845) and taken to Auckland. A few months later he offered his services against Heke and led his men to Ohaeawai but withdrew before the attack. Pomare's troublesome character undevent a change

shortly before his death (in 1850), when he and his brother both became Christians. His only son was killed at Hokianga (aged about 20).

S. P. Smith; Buick, *First War*; Cowan; *New Zealander*, 5 Oct 1850.

POMARE (?1804-51) was a chief of the Ngati-Mutunga branch of Ngati-Awa. He married Tawhiti, a daughter of Te Rauparaha. About 1825 or 1826 he led his people in a heke to take possession of the district about Cook Strait, where by permission of Te Rauparaha he occupied the shores of Whanganui-a-Tara (Wellington harbour). When other sections of the tribe followed from Taranaki after the fall of Pukerangiora (1831) there were disputes over land, and some fighting. Pomare's brother Tiwai having been killed at Haowhenua (1834), his wife's brothers dug up the grave. Pomare thereupon abandoned her, and sent her back to her people with the two younger children. He himself kept the eldest. Pomare then took to wife Hera Wai-taoro, daughter of Te Manu-tohe-roa (of Puketapu). Topeora endeavoured unsuccessfully to heal the breach with the Ngati-Toa, bringing back Tawhiti and offering also Topeora, a daughter of Rangihaeata (aftenwards the wife of Te Hiko-o-te-Rangi). Pomare made over his rights at Port Nicholson to Te Puni, Wi Tako and Wharepouri (1834), and began to consider seriously the proposal of Pakiwhara that they should move to the Chatham islands, then occupied by a well fed, inoffensive people (the Moriori). Pakiwhara and Te Wharepa, son of Te Poki, had tapued Pitt island. At a meeting held at the Kumutoto pa in 1835 it was decided that Ngati-Mutunga and Ngati-Tama should undertake the expedition. Accordingly they seized the schooner *Rodney*, then in harbour, and compelled her to make two trips to the Chatham islands (14 Nov and 30 Nov) taking, it is said, about 900 Maori and seven large canoes. The Moriori were incapable of making any resistance, and in two years they were quite enslaved and reduced in numbers (by violence and cannibalism) to 200 souls. Mter the death of Patukawenga (1836) Pomare became the leading chief of Ngati-Mutunga. He agreed with Te Poki to make war on the Ngati-Tama for Waitangi (Chathams). Pomare sold the

land to R. D. Hanson in 1840, and the Ngati-Tama were taken to New Zealand by the *Cuba* (Jun 1840).

Pomare returned in Oct 1842 to Wellington, where he owned land. He was firmly reprovved by Wi Kingi te Rangitake for his conduct towards the Ngati-Tama and the Moriori. In Apr 1844 Pomare was baptised by Hadfield at Waikanae with the name of 'Wiremu Piti Pomare.' He died at the Chathams on 29 Jan 1851. He left no direct descendants and was succeeded by his nephew, Wiremu Naera Pomare.

*App. H.R.*, 1867, A4, p. I, i; *Polyn. Jour.*, vol. i. 84, 155; Selwyn, *Annals*; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*, 522-3; White, *Ko Nga Tatai Whakapapa . . . Tainui*, 1889, p. 33.

**POMARE**, SIR MAUI WIREMU PITI NAERA (1876-1930) was born at Pahou, near Urenui, on 13 Jan 1876, the son of Wiremu Naera Pomare, chief of Ngati-Awa. Pomare was related to Ngati-Toa through his mother, and less closely to the "Vaikato tribes. He received his early education in the Chatham islands and at St Stephen's school, Auckland, from which he proceeded to the Boys' High School in Christchurch, and finally to Te Aute College. In the late nineties he went to the United States where he studied medicine at the Medical Missionary College at Chicago and at Battle Creek sanatorium. He took his degree of M.D. at Chicago in 1899.

On his return to New Zealand Pomare was appointed the first medical health officer to the Maori people, and entered upon his task with enthusiasm. He issued year by year valuable reports on the state of his people, and by personal visits and advice did a great deal to arrest the decline of the race both in New Zealand and in Polynesia. At Te Aute he had been one of the founders of the Young Maori party, which taught that the individual should attempt to stand alone, since the communal system of pre-pakeha days was effete, and should no longer be encouraged. Pomare was himself to see tangible results from his policy, which was carried on by his successor Te Rangihiroa (Dr P. H. Buck) when Pomare was elected to Parliament.

Pomare represented the Western Maori in Parliament from 1911 till his death. An eloquent and inspiring speaker, he made an early

mark in Parliament, and when the Massey Government came into office in 1912 he was member of the executive representing the Maori race. This office he held also in the National Government (1915-19), with the addition of the portfolio of the Cook Islands (1916-19). In the Massey Government of 1919-25 he held these portfolios and was also from 1923 Minister of Health. In this capacity he carried through many measures for the benefit of the Maori and Polynesian people. He again visited the Cook Islands (on which he had made a useful survey in 1906), and was able to note that the population had at length ceased to decline. With Dr Ellison (native health officer) he transferred 40 lepers from Rarotonga to Makogai. Pomare held office continuously also in the Coates ministry (1925-28), in which also he was Minister of Internal Affairs, 1927-28.

In the war of 1914-18 he was chairman of the Maori recruiting board. (C.M.G. 1920; K.B.E. 1922.) He was president of the Polynesian Society and of the Maori Arts and Crafts Board and the Maori Ethnological Research Board.

He died on 27 Jun 1930, being survived by Lady Miria Pomare, O.B.E. 1917 (a daughter of James Woodbine Johnson (q.v.), and Mere Hape, 1854-1935, a chieftainess of Ngati-Kahununu). Before his death Pomare had prepared many Maori legends and stories for the second volume of *Legends of the Maori*, which was published in 1934.

*N.z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably I Jul 1930); Pomare and Cowan, *Legends of the Maori*, ii, 1934 (p); *App. H.R.*, 1901-11; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post* and *The Dominion*, 30 Jun 1930 (pp).

**POMPALLIER**, JEAN BAPTISTE' FRANCOIS (1801-71) was born in Lyons, France, on 11 Dec 1801, the son of Peter Pompallier, a landowner and member of the lesser nobility. He was educated for the priesthood at the Seminary of Lyons, receiving the tonsure in 1827 and being ordained a priest two years later. He was appointed parish priest of St Madeline de Tarare, and in 1832 chaplain to the school of La Favorite, Lyons. While there he undertook the establishment and direction of the Third Order of Mary, but his rule had to be considerably modified as 'demanding too much of people living in the world.'

It was Father Cholleton, Vicar-general of

Lyons, who recommended Pompallier to the Apostolic administrator for the office of first vicar-apostolic of Western Oceania, to which he was appointed by a papal brief of Gregory XVI in 1836. He was consecrated as titular Bishop of Maronee in Rome on 30 Jun 1836. On Christmas Eve he sailed from Havre in the *Delphine* with four priests and three catechists (nearly all Marists, who were the nucleus of a special congregation approved by papal brief of 29 Apr 1836 and entrusted with the new vicariate). After an eventful voyage, in which one of the priests died, the ship lost her rudder and the water ran short, they reached Valparaiso. Two months later they sailed in the American ship *Europa* for Tahiti, calling at Gambier island. The first fruits of the mission was the baptism at Tahiti of the New Zealand-born child of a sailor. Chartering the schooner *Raiatea*, Pompallier then proceeded to Tonga, where he found the Protestants established. The first Catholic mission was established on Wallis island, with Fathers Bataillon and Luzy. Two others were set down at Futuna, and, declining an invitation to station a priest at Rotuma, Pompallier arrived at Sydney on 9 Dec 1837. Setting sail again, the schooner reached Hokianga harbour on 10 Jan 1838.

The vicar apostolic was received by Thomas Poynton (q.v.) and other Irish Catholics; and on 13 Jan celebrated what was probably the first Mass in New Zealand. Pompallier took up his residence in a house placed at his disposal by Poynton and, sending the schooner back to her owner in Tahiti, devoted himself to studying the Maori and English languages, both essential in the prosecution of a mission which embraced so many islands in which English was the most common foreign tongue. He had intended establishing missions only in countries where Christianity had not already been introduced; and was not prepared to find so many Protestant missions within a short distance of Hokianga. His first success was with the Wirinaki tribe, on the Hokianga river. The tense relations existing between Britain and France at the time and the hostility of the majority of the British settlers made the position of the French mission precarious. The arrival of French warships served to heighten the impression that the mission had a political significance. The corvette

*Héroïne*, which spent some days in the Bay of Islands, offered every hospitality and deference to the vicar, thus greatly strengthening the position of the new mission. The new residence at Papakauwau, Hokianga, having been completed by Jun 1838, Pompallier celebrated Mass and for the first time preached in Maori. Having no printing press, he laboriously wrote out short instructions on the faith and morning and evening prayers for use in the widely scattered villages. For seventeen months, after his arrival in New Zealand Pompallier received neither reinforcements nor funds from France, and was unable to pay visits to the stations he had established in the Pacific. In Oct 1838 he paid a fruitful visit to the tribe at Mangakahia, on the Kaipara.

In Jun 1839 three priests and three catechists of the Society arrived in the schooner *Reine de Paix*, 40 tons, which had been purchased for the mission but had already proved to be unsuitable for the work. Money which he received on this occasion enabled Pompallier to buy a house at Kororareka to establish the headquarters of the vicariate. Here also a printing press was set up. Having made a short voyage to Mangonui and Whangaroa in the *Reine de Paix*, Pompallier was convinced of her unsuitability and sold her. In Jun 1839 a mission was established under Father Epalle at Whangaroa. In Dec 1839 another reinforcement of four priests (including Father Viard, q.v.) and one catechist arrived, which enabled him to strengthen the stations in the Pacific. On the arrival of Hobson to treat with the natives for the cession of sovereignty Pompallier paid his respects to the prospective Governor and attended the meeting of chiefs at Waitangi at which the Treaty was discussed. In view of the hostility to French and Catholic interests he intervened before the meeting closed to ask for an official assurance that the Catholic religion would have the same protection and freedom in New Zealand as all others. Hobson complied immediately. In Feb Pompallier extended his work to Tauranga, Opotiki and Whakatane, visiting also Coromandel, Hauraki, Matamata and Waikato. The arrival of further help in the frigate *Aube* (Jul 1840) enabled the bishop to purchase the topsail schooner *Atlas*, which he rechristened the *Sancta Maria* and first employed in a comprehensive cruise of

## POMPALLIER

the South Island, establishing Father Comte at Akaroa and making preliminary arrangements for the settlement of a priest at Port Nicholson in 1842. He returned to Bay of Islands by the East Coast in Mar 1841 after an absence of six months. In Jun a new reinforcement arrived and he commenced another visitation of the New Zealand missions. At Auckland, now the capital with 3,000 inhabitants, he was well received by Hobson, who granted him a site for church and cemetery. On this journey Pompallier visited coastal stations and penetrated inland as far as Rotorua and Matamata.

At Akaroa he heard from the corvettes *Allier* and *Héroïne* of the martyrdom at Futuna (Apr 1841) of Father Pierre Chanel, who made the first Marist profession (24 Sep 1836). This distressing news made him anxious to visit at once the isolated missions in the Pacific, but it was not until Nov that he was able to sail in the *Allier*, his schooner in company. Finding the mission at Wallis in difficulties owing to the opposition of the chief, he stayed there for some months while the *Allier* proceeded to Futuna and received the remains of the murdered priest. Pompallier meanwhile baptised practically all of the Wallis islanders and, having received fresh supplies from New Zealand, went on to Futuna, where the catechist Sam was elected chief. Successful visits were paid to Fiji and Tonga, and the Bishop reached Kororareka in Aug 1842. The *Sancta Maria* was now sold and a schooner hired for the next visitation of New Zealand stations. In the course of his next tour Pompallier travelled overland to Rotorua, Wai-kato and Mokau. He directed the whole of the Pacific missions until 1843, when other bishops were created to share the burden. By that time it was claimed that 164 tribes in New Zealand, comprising 45,000 catechumens and 1,000 neophytes, had embraced the Catholic religion.

In 1846 Viard (q.v.) was consecrated in Sydney as his coadjutor and the Bishop left on his first ad limina visit to Rome. In 1850 he returned with French and Irish priests and a party of Sisters of Mercy from Carlow. In that year the see was divided into two bishoprics, Pompallier being made Bishop of Auckland, with the special charge of the northern portion of New Zealand, and Viard being made Bishop of Wellington, including the southern portion. Again in 1858 he visited Rome, returning early

## POND

in 1860 with a new reinforcement of priests for work amongst both races. During the Maori wars many Irish soldiers served in New Zealand, and assisted in the building of churches where they were stationed.

Pompallier retired in 1868 and returned to France in the following year, taking up his residence in the village of Puteaux, in the suburbs of Paris. At the Vatican Council in 1870 he voluntarily took the place of the Archbishop of Paris and others in administering the sacraments, and he was honoured by being made titular Archbishop of Amasia. He was appointed canon of the Church of St Denis. Throughout the siege of Paris by the German armies he suffered much anguish and privation. He died on 21 Dec 1871. Pompallier's life was one of sanctity and missionary zeal. 'If he had a fault it was that he was over-zealous. It may be that he endeavoured to do too much in too short a time. He exchanged the ordered routine of parish and college life for the perils and sufferings of an apostle . . . with a grateful heart.'

Pompallier, *Early History of the Catholic Church*, 1888; Scholefield, *Hobson*; Larousse *Illustré*; Kennedy, *New Zealand*; Buick, *Waitangi*; *New Zealand Catholic Centenary* (programme and souvenir), 1937; *Annales de la Propagation de la Foi*; *Southern Cross*, 18 Feb 1868; 7 Dec 1868.

POND, CHARLES ALEXANDER McLEAN (1864-93) was the son of B. C. Pond, chemist, Brixton, London. Educated at the City of London School and London University, he graduated B.A. and became a classical master at Liverpool College. Proceeding then to St John's College, Cambridge, he graduated B.A. in 1887, and M.A. (1st class classical tripos), being Prendergast student of the University (1890) and fellow of his College. In 1891 he was appointed professor of classics and English at Auckland University College, a position he held to his death (28 Oct 1893). Pond was president of the Auckland Institute and of the Literary Societies' union (1892); assisted Sir George Grey in founding the students' library and established a branch of the Australian Society for the Encouragement of Home Reading.

*N.Z. Herald*, 6 Apr 1891; 3 Nov 1893.

## POPE

POPE, JAMES HENRY (1837-1913) was born at St Helier, Jersey, educated there at private schools and emigrated with his parents to Victoria (1852). He was engaged mainly on the gold diggings, but devoted much attention to self education and was appointed in 1858 headmaster of a large primary school at Ballarat. He gained the highest qualifications of the Victorian denominational board of education. In 1863 he came to Otago and was assistant master at the Boys' High School till 1871. In 1872 he joined the staff of the Girls' High School as senior assistant and four years later he was appointed headmaster of the Ballarat college. Ill-health compelled him to relinquish this post, and he returned to the Girls' High School as senior assistant till 1880, when he was appointed inspector of native schools under the act of that year. For 25 years Pope occupied that position. A scholar, a philosopher and a highly trained teacher, he succeeded in establishing the present system of Maori education and incidentally doing much to arrest the decline of the race. He retired in 1903.

Pope's publications included *Health for the Maori* (1884); *The State* (1887), and several class books. He was an accomplished linguist, an astronomer and a botanist and was keenly interested also in music and mental science. He married (1862) Helen G. Rattray. His death occurred on 3 Aug 1913.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Butchers; *Otago B.H.S. List*; *Fifty Years of National Education* (1928); *N.Z. Times*, 4 Aug 1913; *Otago Daily Times*, 11 Feb 1864, 30 Jun 1876.

PORTER, ADAM (1845-94) was a native of Glasgow. Being orphaned very young, he came to New Zealand at the age of 12 and worked in the flaxmill of Whitelaw and Co., Auckland, and afterwards gardening at Remuera. He was attracted to the goldfields of Otago, and later walked across the Alps to the West Coast in 1865. There he kept a store in the Grey district, selling out on a new rush occurring; and he acted for a while as a gold buyer for the Bank of New Zealand in Greymouth. In Westport he built and managed the Empire hotel.

Moving to Thames in 1868, he was associated with many mining enterprises at Thames and Coromandel, and prospected with Wera-

## PORTER

hiko at Ohinemuri and Te Aroha. He was a member of the Thames county council and chairman of the Thames drainage board, and twice contested parliamentary seats. In 1881 he settled in Auckland and married Elizabeth Mary (d. 1901), daughter of Charles Atkin, with whom he was a partner in a coachbuilding business: He was chairman of the Eden Terrace highway board and of the licensing committee both there and in the City. He was chairman of the Auckland harbour board (1894) and president of the chamber of commerce (1893-94), and chairman of the Hukurangi Coal Co. He was an ardent horticulturist and advocate of public parks and had a fine mineralogical collection. Porter died on 18 Aug 1894.

*Auckland Star*, 18 Aug 1894; *N.Z. Herald*, 20 Aug 1894.

PORTER, THOMAS WILLIAM ROSE (1840-1920) was a son of Major Porter, of the Indian Army and was born in India. As a midshipman in the Royal Navy (1857-59) he took part in naval operations on the coast of China 1858. In 1860-63 he was attached to the 70th Regiment in New Zealand, and from 1863-66 was with the Colonial Defence Force cavalry commanding native forces. He commanded the blockhouse at Mohaka, and distinguished himself at Vaerenga-a-hika in assisting the wounded. When the Colonial forces were disbanded he served with the Armed Constabulary (1866-71). In 1868, on the escape of Te Kooti, he served throughout the East Coast campaign, and received £1,000 for the capture of Kereopa Kaiwhatu, the murderer of the Rev C. Volkner. He was later appointed staff adjutant of the East Coast militia district and native land purchase officer. He was four times mayor of Gisborne.

During the Boer war Porter commanded the 7th New Zealand contingent. (Queen's medal with four clasps; C.B. 1902.) For a time he was acting Under-secretary for Defence. In the war of 1914-18 he was partly responsible for promoting the national reserve. He published in 1897 a life of Major Ropata Wahawaha (q.v.) and in 1925 *Legends of the Maori and Personal Reminiscences*.

Porter married a daughter of Tama i Wha-Kanehua-i-te-Rangi. He died on 12 Nov 1920.

## PORTER

*Who's Who N.I.*, 1908; Gudgeon (p); Cowan; Whitmore; *Evening Post*, 12 Nov 1920.

PORTER, WILLIAM FIELD (1784-1869) was a successful merchant and shipowner in Liverpool in the early thirties of the eighteenth century. Falling into financial difficulties about 1838 he decided, after satisfying his creditors, to emigrate to the colonies. In Aug he sailed with his family in the *Porter*, a brig of 250 tons (built by himself), accompanied by the brig *Dorset*, 90 tons. He had with him livestock, trees and plants, and two 18-pounder guns. In the *Dorset* were a number of tradesmen with their families, who came out on the understanding that they would work for Porter until the cost of their passages had been defrayed. At the Cape of Good Hope, Porter sold a stallion for 400 guineas and embarked a Cape mare and some black servants. On reaching Adelaide the *Dorset* was sold. Porter was not satisfied with prospects there, and spent 18 months visiting various Australian colonies before deciding to make for New Zealand. The *Porter* arrived in the Waitemata in May 1841, after landing at Great Barrier the Abercrombie family from Sydney, who were shipbuilding and coppermining there. The Porter family lived aboard the brig for three months until a house was available for them. At the ensuing land sales Porter purchased 200 acres at west Tamaki (or Waiparera) and commenced with a wooden plough and bullocks to break it in.

When he had been in Auckland only a few months Porter was called to the Legislative Council of New Zealand (27 Oct 1841) and appointed a justice of the peace. He resigned from the Council in 1844. In 1852 he was elected to represent the Southern Division in the Legislative Council of New Ulster (which did not meet owing to the promulgation of the new constitution). That he was highly thought of was evident again when the new legislative institutions came into being. He was elected to represent the Suburbs of Auckland in the Provincial Council and the House of Representatives, and sat in both from 1853 to 1855, when he retired. In Parliament Porter strongly championed the rights of the Maori, and contended that the Treaty of Waitangi was not being fully observed. In 1854 he was convenor

## POTAE

of a committee on bribery at elections. In 1854 he was chairman of the first board of harbour commissioners. Porter died on 30 Mar 1869.

*Nol.P.D.*, 1854-55; *Auckland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.I. Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Brett, *White Wings*, ii (containing diary of son, W. F. Porter).

POSTLETHWAITE, WILLIAM was born at Broughton-Furness (Cumberland), and was for some years high sheriff of the county. He came to New Zealand with a good deal of capital in 1872, and settled first at Opawa and Riccarton. He also took up land in south Canterbury, purchasing the Raukapuka estate from A. Cox (1875) and holding pastoral country in Peel Forest. At one time he shored 12,000 sheep.

Postlethwaite took a keen interest in public affairs, and as an independent member (supporting Hall) he represented Geraldine in Parliament (1881-84), defeating Edward Wakefield. He was chairman of the Geraldine road board and a member of the Geraldine county council from its inception (1877). As a member of the Timaru harbour board he promoted the construction of the breakwater. Postlethwaite took a keen interest in the frozen meat industry in south Canterbury. He was one of the promoters, and for many years chairman, of the South Canterbury Frozen Meat Co., and was a promoter of the Farmers' Co-operative Association and of the Geraldine Dairy Co. (of which he was chairman for many years). He was the first farmer in South Canterbury to grow dun oats, and he had a celebrated stud of light horses. He was also an ardent supporter of the Geraldine beagle pack.

Postlethwaite left New Zealand in [89] for California, where for some years he was engaged in fruit-growing. He then returned to England and re-purchased the family estate in Cumberland, where he died on 11 Apr 1908.

*Cycl. N.I.*, iii (p); *Parltry Record*; *Acland*; Andersen (p); *Timaru Herald*, 1 May 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

POTAE, HENARE, a distinguished chief of Ngati-Porou, the nephew of Tama i Whakanehua-i-te-Rangi, was descended from Rangi-i-paia (the aunt of Hine-matiaro) who was taken prisoner by Pomare (of Ngapuhi, q.v.) after the fall of Te Whetumatarau pa and made his wife.

## POTTS

He was the younger son of Te Potae-aute, one of the paramount chiefs of the Poverty Bay-East Coast district, who ranked with the more celebrated Te Kani-a-Takirau. He first came into prominence when in his efforts to check the spread of Hauhauism (1865) he drove 300 Hauhau converts out of the Tokomaru district. Offering their services to the government, Potae's Ngati-Porou people, 200 in number, were garrisoned in Te Mawhai pa (Tokomaru Bay) while he went to collect loyalists. They were attacked by Hauhau from Pukepapa, but saved by the gallant defence of Hati te Houkamau and Henderson (a whaler, who was mortally wounded). Potae, with Ropata Wahawaha, captured the rebel fort at Pukepapa (Tokomaru Bay) and took many prisoners, though the majority had evacuated the position. He fought a sharp engagement at Pakarae, Ropata arriving in time to relieve him. They then defeated an enemy force between Tolaga Bay and Anaura and invested the Tahutahu-po pa, where many of the rebels surrendered and took the oath. Potae took an active part in furnishing men for the pursuit of Te Kooti (1868-71). He was mainly responsible for establishing European traders and settlers at Tokomaru Bay, and for founding the friendly relationship between Maori and pakeha which characterises the people of this locality.

POTTS, THOMAS HENRY (1823-88) was born in England, educated there and trained as a gunmaker. He had a prosperous business in Birmingham, and was able to devote much of his attention to his hobbies, botany, entomology and horticulture. In 1853 (having married Charlotte Jane, daughter of Henry Phillips) he sold his business and came to Canterbury in the *John Taylor*, bringing with him in specially designed cases a fine assortment of English and European plants (including gazalea and rhododendron). He acquired a large section at the corner of Tuam and Antigua streets in Christchurch and soon had a fine garden. In 1856 he took up land at Ohinetahi, Governor's Bay, which by hard work and artistic planning he transformed from a wilderness into a garden. Here he brought up his family and indulged his study of nature and the habits of birds and animals. For many years he wrote weekly notes 'Out in the Open'

## POWDITCH

in the *New Zealand Country Journal*, and a volume of them was published in 1882. His graceful prose gave distinction to their unique interest. He was elected, a fellow of the Linnaean Society. Potts was a generous benefactor alike of philanthropic and scientific objects. He made numerous gifts to the Canterbury Museum and for some years, as a governor of Canterbury College (1873), he was on the museum and school of art committee. He was in the Provincial Council for Port Victoria (1858-61, 1866-75) and was M.H.R. for Mount Herbert (1866-70). His death occurred on 27 Jul 1888.

*Parltry Record*; *Nol. Jour. Science*, vol. ii (p); *Natural Hist. Cant.*; Potts, *op. cit.*; *Lyttelton Times*, 8 Apr, 28 Jul 1888. Portrait: Parliament House.

POWDITCH, WILLIAM (1793-1872), in 1821 commanded the *Royal George*, 500 tons, chartered by Alexander Berry, which brought Sir Thomas Brisbane to assume the governorship of New South Wales. He was living in Valparaiso, Chile, in 1825, when he had several children, and afterwards came to New Zealand, where he commanded the brig *Bee*. In 1831 he was at Bay of Islands, where he made up mails for New South Wales. Between 1835 and 1839 he purchased over 4,000 acres of land round Whangaroa harbour.

Powditch was settled at the Bay of Islands before the arrival of Busby, and took part in most of the public affairs of the settlers. In Aug 1841 he was gazetted a magistrate of New Zealand. Later in the forties he removed to Auckland. He was a commissioner for the Epsom East ward of Auckland in 1851, and an alderman of the first Auckland municipal council in the following year. In 1853 Powditch was elected to the Provincial Council for the Pensioner Settlements, which he represented 1853-56 and 1857-61. He represented Onehunga 1861-65, being defeated by O'Rorke and Kirkwood on the separation question. From 1857 to 1865 he was speaker. He was also for some time clerk and librarian to the Council. In 1866, as the provincial government could not grant him a pension, it revived the vacant office of deputy-auditor for the Auckland province, and appointed Powditch (1 May 1867). He died on 22 Aug 1872. His widow died on 5 Nov 1882, aged 83.

## POWDRELL

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; N.Z. Archives, B.R.1; Ramsden; Marsden, L. and J.; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Sep 1872.

POWDRELL, WALTER DUTTON (1872-1921) was born at Wairoa, Hawkes Bay, and at the age of seven moved with his parents to Taranaki. There he was educated and began dairy farming. He was a director (and some time managing director) of the Kaupokonui and Whenuakura Cooperative Dairy Companies; chairman and managing director of the Patea Farmers' Freezing Co. and a director of the National Dairy association. Powdrell was elected to the House of Representatives for Patea in 1919, and died on 9 Mar 1921. He published in 1920 *Dairy Farming in New Zealand*.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1919-21 (notably 11 Mar 1921).

POYNTER, JOHN (1800-68) was born in England and educated for the law. He came to Nelson in the *Fifeshire* early in 1842. One of his first ventures in the colony was the purchase of the wreck of that vessel. In 1843 he was appointed crown prosecutor for the Nelson district, a position which he held until being appointed resident magistrate (1854). In the meantime he had been provincial treasurer (1843-47) and for some years to 1847 sub-treasurer for the General Government, a position he held after retiring from the magistracy (1856-67). In the fifties he acted as commissioner of native reserves and for the investigation of land claims.

Poynter was elected to the Provincial Council for Nelson in 1855, and sat for three years. He was a member of the executive in 1854 and again 1865-67, and was for some years treasurer. In public life he had a peculiarly easy temperament. He died on 30 Aug 1868.

*The Colonist*, 10 Aug, 1 Sep 1868; *Marlborough Press*, 9 Sep 1868.

POYNTON, THOMAS (1801-90) was born at Ballivor, county Meath, and educated in France. He married in Sydney Mary (1812-91), daughter of Thomas Kennedy, of county Wexford, and in 1828 crossed to New Zealand to take charge of a store and sawmill at Hokianga. In 1835, hearing of the appointment of Dr Polding as Bishop of Sydney, Poynton went to Port Jackson to ask that a priest be sent to New Zealand, and returned with a letter of

## PRATT

instruction for Catholics (the first document connected with the Catholic Church in New Zealand). On the arrival of Pompallier's mission at Hokianga on 10 Jan 1838 they were welcomed by the Poyntons at Totara point and given the use of a house until one could be built for the priests. Poynton had a vessel trading with Sydney. He raised a considerable number of cattle, and during Heke's war drove them through hostile territory to feed the troops. He was an enthusiastic advocate of the Irish nationalist cause, and was visited by John Dillon at Hokianga. He died at Takapuna on 9 Mar 1892, his wife having predeceased him on 15 Oct 1891.

*N.Z. Catholic Centenary Souvenir*, 1937; *N.Z. Herald*, 17 Oct 1891; *Auckland Star*, 10 Mar 1892; *Marist Messenger*, 1 Mar 1938 (p).

PRATT, THOMAS (1835-1910) was born in Liverpool, left in 1860 for Australia and in 1864 arrived in Southland, where the following year he contracted for the building of the railway station at Invercargill. He then went into business with John Hare as merchants until 1880 when he commenced Hourmilling. He represented Invercargill in the Provincial Council (1868-69) and was on the executive in 1869. He cooperated with Lumsden, Garthwaite, Jaggers, Scandrett and others in erecting the municipality of Invercargill and was a member of the first borough council and the third mayor. Pratt died on 5 Mar 1910.

*Southland Times*, 7 Mar 1910.

PRATT, SIR THOMAS SIMSON (1797-1879) was the son of a military officer and, after being educated at St Andrew's University, received his commission in the 37th Regiment (1814). He saw service in Holland, China, India, Australia and New Zealand. (Capt., 1825; lieut-col, 1841; maj-general, 1856; C.B., 1841.) He arrived in Taranaki as general officer commanding on 3 Aug 1860, reorganised the defences of New Plymouth and conducted the operations against Hapurona's forces. On 9 Sep he led the largest force that had yet taken the field in New Zealand, and engaged the enemy at the peach grove at Huirangi. On 9 Oct he advanced towards the native position at Te Arei, and two days later commenced the long sap. On 5 Nov at Mahoetahi the allied tribes were defeated in a stubborn engagement in

## PREECE

which the Ngati-Haua and other northern tribes displayed unrivalled gallantry. Redoubts were built at suitable positions, but the Maori with great pertinacity came out under cover of darkness and filled in the large sap. Hostilities were suspended for three days (12-14 Mar) at the request of Wiremu Tamihana. British reinforcements arrived from Australia and a heavy siege train was brought into operation, but on 19 Mar hostilities ceased, the Government having agreed to investigate the Waitara purchase.

Pratt left shortly afterwards for Australia. He attained field rank in 1865 and became a full general in 1873. (K.C.B. 1861.) He died on 2 Feb 1879.

*D.N.B.*; *App. H.R.*, 1861-63; Cowan; Grace; Harrop, *England and Maori Wars*; *The Times* and *Evening Post*, 6 Feb 1879.

PREECE, GEORGE AUGUSTUS (1845-1925) was born at Coromandel, the son of James Preece (q.v.). Living with his parents at the mission station at Ahikereru, he learned Maori thoroughly, and in 1864 was appointed clerk and interpreter to the magistrate's court at Wairoa, Hawkes Bay. In the war he was attached to Colonel Fraser's column as interpreter, and at the conclusion of hostilities in 1866 he returned to his civil duties. When Te Kooti's war commenced Preece received his ensigney in the colonial forces, and he served throughout under Richardson, Tuke, Lambert and Westrupp. After the massacre at Poverty Bay he was promoted lieutenant and attached to the native contingent at Wairoa. Accompanying Major Ropata's force at Ngatapa he showed distinguished bravery in reconnoitring the enemy position. During the first attack he scaled the forest cliff with 16 Maoris and found himself face to face with the enemy at a distance of 30 yards. They dug themselves in and held on until relieved by Ropata late in the day. Preece received the thanks of the Government and later the New Zealand Cross. He served under Whitmore throughout the East and West Coast campaigns (1868-69), being mentioned several times in despatches. He was also mentioned three times for services under Herrick and McDonnell at Taupo and Te Papa. Promoted captain in Feb 1870, he commanded the native contingent in the Urewera

## PRENDERGAST

(1870-72) until the escape of Te Kooti to the King Country.

Preece was a sub-inspector in the Armed Constabulary until 1876, when he was appointed resident magistrate at Opotiki. He was afterwards for 12 years at Napier and for some years second magistrate in Christchurch. He resigned (1892) to enter into business in Palmerston North, where he lived for 33 years, taking a prominent part in the affairs of the city. He was a keen advocate of the use of hydro-electric power, and urged the Government to develop the power resources of Waikaremoana. Preece was chosen to guide the Duke of Edinburgh to the historic spots in the Bay of Plenty (1870-71). He died on 10 Jul 1925.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; Gudgeon (p); Whitmore (p); Cowan (p); Gascoyne; *Manawatu Times*, 12 Jul 1925.

PREECE, JAMES (1801-70), arrived at Bay of Islands in 1829 to join the Church Missionary Society. In 1834 he helped to open the new station at Puriri, Thames. The site being found to be unhealthy, it was moved a few years later, when Preece was stationed at Kauaeranga (1836). In 1838 he moved again to Herewaka, Thames, where he remained until 1847, when he was sent to open the station at Ahikereru, in Urewera. He retired in 1856 and died on 25 Dec 1870. He married (1833) at Kerikeri, Mary Ann Williams.

Marsden, L. and J.; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Dec 1870; *Southern Cross*, 29 Dec.

PRENDERGAST, SIR JAMES (1826-1921) was the youngest son of Michael Prendergast, Q.C., of the Middle Temple, recorder of Norwich, and one of the most prominent special pleaders in the sixties. His mother was the sister of George Dawe. R.A. Educated at St Paul's School, he proceeded to Cambridge, entering at Gonville and Caius. Afterwards he went on an entrance scholarship to Queen's College, where he graduated B.A. (1849). For a short time in 1850 he was master at Routledge's school, Bishopthull, Somersetshire.

With his brother Philip and others Prendergast emigrated to Victoria in the *Francis Henty* (1852), and had some success with a claim at the Eureka diggings, Ballarat. Suffering a bad attack of dysentery, they withdrew to

## PRENDERGAST

Melbourne, where their elder brother was practising at the bar. Prendergast was appointed clerk of petty sessions at Elephant Bridge, and promoted to Carisbrook, and in 1854 to Maryborough. His wife having joined him (1856), they returned to England and he read law at the Inner Temple, where he was called in the same year; He practised in London as a special pleader until the death of his father (1859), and he sailed for Otago in the ship *Chile* (1862). He was admitted a barrister of the Supreme Court, and his first client was Sir Julius Vogel. Towards the end of 1863 he was appointed a revising officer and acting-provincial solicitor in place of T. B. Gillies. In 1865 he was appointed crown prosecutor in Dunedin.

Prendergast was called to the Legislative Council in Jul 1865 and in Jun 1866 was appointed Attorney-general (then a non-political office) and conveyancing counsel for the examination of titles. The office being later provided for by act, Prendergast resigned from the Legislative Council and from his Otago offices and practice, and in Mar 1867 was appointed Attorney-general under the new conditions. During the next seven years he set himself the task of consolidating the criminal law of the Colony, and succeeded in getting passed by Parliament no less than 94 acts with this object. Gisborne considered that his progress was the gradual outcome of laborious work and steady perseverance. He was slow, sure and safe, careful and cautious. He was not a politician, and therefore did not suffer from his inability to speak well. He was a member of a commission which changed the common law procedure to the present system. His legal opinions Gisborne says were literary labyrinths, but when the meaning was found it was well worth the trouble. In Apr 1875, on the retirement of Arney, Prendergast was appointed Chief Justice, a position which he occupied for almost a-quarter of a century. In his early years he had to preside at all sittings of the Supreme Court in Wellington, on the west coast of both islands and as far north as Gisborne and Wanganui. One of his noted cases was the Attorney-general's appeal for the cancellation of the commission appointing W. B. Edwards (q.v.) as a judge of the Supreme Court. The contention of Prendergast and Conolly that the appointment was ultra vires

## PRIME

was overruled by the majority, but upheld by the Privy Council. He was also upheld by the Privy Council against a majority of the Appeal Court of New Zealand in the celebrated Horowhenua block judgment. In 1881 he was knighted (K.B.).

Prendergast was elected a fellow of the New Zealand University (1885). In 1891 he represented New Zealand at the conference in London on the Privy Council. In 1897 he went as commissioner to Rarotonga to inquire into the proceedings of a prominent official there. While Chief Justice, he was six times administrator of the government pending the arrival of a new governor. On one of these occasions (1881) it fell to him to sanction the operations against the natives at Parihaka. He resigned the office of Chief Justice in May 1899. Thereafter he devoted himself to business interests, being for some time a director of the Bank of New Zealand and until his death of the Wellington Trust, Loan and Investment Co. and of the Colonial Mutual Life Co. Prendergast owned from 1871 to 1910 the Tiritea estate (at Fitzherbert and Bunnythorpe) and was the first president of the Manawatu Agricultural and Pastoral association. He died on 27 Feb 1921.

Family information; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *N.z.P.D.*, 11 Mar 1921; Gisborne; *N.z. Times*, 19 Jan 1883, 28 Feb 1921. Portraits: by J. M. Nairn in Supreme Court, Wellington; General Assembly Library.

PRESHAW, GEORGE OGILVY (1839-90), came from Scotland to Australia in 1852 by the *Garland*, with his father (Dr Preshaw, who settled at Castlemaine, Victoria). He spent some time on the Victorian gold fields, where he joined the staff of the Bank of New South Wales. In 1864 he was transferred to New Zealand, where he opened a branch of the bank at Hokitika, in the early days of the gold rush. Preshaw gives a good account of life on the goldfields in his book, *Banking Under Difficulties* (1888). He died on 29 Nov 1890.

Preshaw; Larkworthy; Harrop, *Westland*.

PRIME, FREDERICK LAMBERT (1825-1916), who was born in Cambridgeshire, was brought up to the grocery trade at Colchester, Essex. Arriving in New Zealand in 1855, he established himself as a general-storekeeper in Auckland, and, later as a land and financial

## PRITT

agent. For six years he sat in the Auckland City Council, serving as mayor in 1874. He represented Auckland "West" in the Provincial Council from 1872 until the abolition. Prime was a member of the volunteer rifles during the Maori war, and a member of the education board. For over 30 years he was treasurer and secretary of the Wesleyan home mission fund. He died on 6 May 1916.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 7 May 1916.

PRITT, LONSDALE (1822-85) was born in Lancashire, and educated at the Charterhouse and at Trinity College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. in 1844. He was ordained deacon (1845), and at the suggestion of Selwyn took up teaching as a preparation for missionary work in New Zealand. In 1855 he came to Nelson as chaplain to Bishop Hobhouse, and in 1858 was attached to the headquarters of the Melanesian mission, then established at Kohimarama. There he organised the central school as a model training institution, and was for eight years right-hand man to Bishop Patteson. In 1866 he was stationed at Hopuhopu (Waikato), where he shared in the hardships of missionary life and home mission work. He was collated archdeacon of Waikato (1871). In 1873 he was appointed vicar of St Mark's, Remuera, where he remained until 1885. He was a governor of St John's College.

Pritt married first (1863) Mary, daughter of C. Otterson (Nelson), and second (1876) the youngest daughter of G. Williams (Auckland). He died on 31 Oct 1885.

C. M. Yonge; *Life of John Coleridge Pattesoll* (1874); *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 2 Nov 1885.

PROSSER, EVAN, was born in Wales, educated there and trained as a pharmaceutical chemist. In 1863 he was residing at Queenstown, and a few years later he followed the gold discoveries to Westland, where he was in business as a chemist and druggist in Hokitika. He was mayor of Hokitika in 1868, represented the West Coast Goldfields in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1865-66) and was later a member of the first Westland county council. He was one of a party of seven who bought a large water race on the goldfields. Returning to Dunedin, he entered into business there and became one of the founders of the firm of

## PUAHA

Kempthorne, Prosser and Co., of which he was a director on its incorporation (1879). In 1873 he was elected to the City Council. He also stood twice for the Provincial Council in that year without success, being defeated in the first case by Fish by 612 votes to 534 (Apr 1873). In 1882 Prosser purchased the wholesale drug business of Edward Rowand Co. in Sydney, and in 1886 resigned from Kempthorne, Prosser and Co.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv and v; Harrop; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Jan 1882.

PROUDFOOT, PETER, was a son of James Proudfoot, of Dunedin. He served on the survey of Otago under C. H. Kettle, and afterwards continued in the office. When the department was in a neglected condition in 1855 he accepted the dual position of chief surveyor and commissioner of crown lands. He initiated the surveys for the towns of Bluff and Invercargill but, his health being delicate, he transferred the field work to J. T. Thomson in 1856. He represented Eastern District in the Otago Provincial Council from 1855 till his death (on 14 Oct 1857), and was commissioner of lands during the same period and a member of the education board. His daughter married G. Fenwick (q.v.).

Hocken, *Otago*.

PUAHA, RAWIRI KING! (?-1858), a Ngati-Toa chief of high rank and influence, was born at Kawhia, and traced his descent from the leaders of the Tainui canoe. He was the eldest son of Hinekoto and Te Matoe (who was killed at Pararewa in 1821). He married Ria Waitohi, daughter of Te Pehi Kupe (q.v.).

In 1819-20 Puaha was a leader in Tuwhare's expedition. Though not compelled to do so, he remained behind at Marakopa during the heke Tahutahu-ahi to protect the women (1821), and later he went south with the heke under Te Rauparalla. He was early influenced by Christianity and disposed to be friendly towards the pakeha. He was baptised by the Rev S. Ironside (1 Aug 1841) and became a Wesleyan teacher.

Puaha warned Captain Wakefield against the survey of the Wairau block, which he always asserted was not included in the territory sold to the New Zealand Company. He refused to

accept a schooner in satisfaction of his own interest in the land and tried to dissuade Wakefield from attempting to arrest Te Rauparaha and Rallgihaeata. At Tua Marina on 17 Jun 1843 his people were unarmed, and in the midst of the korero he read from his Bible and passionately appealed to the disputants not to resort to violence. *Mter* the dash he and his wife protested in vain against the killing of the prisoners. Puaha was present when Te Rauparaha was captured and was taken on board H.M.S. *Driver*, but was at once released and cooperated actively with the colonists and troops, only desisting when Rangihaeata had fled from his positions in the Horokiwi valley.

After the death of Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata, Puaha took a more prominent part in the affairs of the tribe. He died at Takapuahia, Porirua, on 6 Sep 1858, widely respected as a consistent and conscientious Christian.

G.B.O.P., 1844/556; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Cowan, *Wars*; Buick, *Marlborough* and *Old New Zealander*; H. T. Kemp in *N.Z. Herald*, 23, 30 Mar 1901.

PUCKEY, WILLIAM GILBERT. (1805-78). William Puckey, who had been a sea captain living in Cornwall, was one of the earliest lay missionaries in Tahiti under the London Missionary Society. When they were driven out in 1798 he went to New South Wales, where he came in contact with Marsden, with whom he made several visits to New Zealand (the first in 1819-20). His son William Gilbert, was born at Penrhyn, Cornwall, on 5 May 1805, and came to Australia as a small boy when his father returned there. They took up land at Parramatta. In 1819 they came to New Zealand with Marsden, Puckey having offered his services to erect the buildings for the mission at Kerikeri. He also at Marsden's request made a survey of the harbours of Hokianga and Kaipara.

Puckey, junior, who was quiet in demeanour and fond of the natives, soon acquired a good command of the Maori language, and he entered the service of the mission in 1821. In 1831 he married Matilda, daughter of the Rev R. Davis. His parents having returned to Australia, Puckey in 1833 established a new mission station at Kaitaia amongst the Rarawa.

Not being ordained, he was assisted by the Rev Joseph and Mrs Matthews. He attended at St John'S College with a view to entering holy orders, but as it would have necessitated leaving Kaitaia with only one ordained clergyman he continued to labour as a layman throughout his life. In 1837 the weatherboard house was completed and in 1843 the church. In that year Puckey was slightly wounded while meditating between Nopera Panakareao and his enemies. He had great influence with the Aupouri and Ngapuhi tribes, amongst whom he lived. His knowledge of Maori was invaluable to Bishop William Williams in the first translation of the New Testament (1837), and he still collaborated in 1844, when he was regarded as one of the best Maori scholars. In 1846, with his son (Walter), he went to Herekino to protect the wreck of H.M.S. *Osprey*. In that year he established bees at Kaitaia, where he had a good flock of merino sheep. He built several whaleboats and the schooner *Phantom*, burned lime and shells for building and agriculture, established a printing press, constructed bullock drays and bridges and opened outlying schools. Puckey died on 27 Mar 1878, and his widow on 15 Jul 1884.

W. Williams, *William Gilbert Puckey*, 1929 (p); Marsden, *L. and J.*; Jackson; Ramsden; Carleton; Stock; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Jul 1884.

TE PUNI, HONIANA (?-1870), a Ngati-Awa chief of high lineage, was descended from Takarangi and Rau-mahora. His own father was Rerewha-i-te-Rangi, son of Aniwaniwa and Tawhirikura, the originators of the Tawhirikura sub-tribe of Ngati-Awa. He was one of the principal chiefs at the defence of Rewarewa by Taranaki (1805-10), where his father was killed and he escaped by jumping over a cliff into the river. Te Puni lived at Pukeariki and took part in the successful defence of Otaka against the Waikato. The three guns of John Love (Hakirau) were a deciding factor. Afterwards he accompanied the followers of Wharepouri, Rawa-Kitua and Ngatata southward in the heke Tama te Uaua. Te Puni and his people settled in the neighbourhood of Cook Strait (1832), his pa being on the beach at Pito-one. A few years later he was with Te Wharepouri when he welcomed the arrival of the pakeha, and he was one of the first to greet

Wakefield and his pioneers at Port Nicholson. •One of mature years, named Epuni, or Greedy, advanced with much dignity of manner to meet Barrett as an old and respected friend. The old man, Barrett told us, was as famous for his wisdom in council as for his former deeds of war. He eagerly inquired the motive of our visit and expressed the most marked satisfaction on hearing that we wished to buy the place.'

Te Puni was one of the signatories of the treaty of Waitangi and the deed of purchase of the land about Wellington. He accepted the portion of the payment due to the natives of Pito-one; had a store built for Colonel Wakefield in his pa, and was proud of the trust reposed in him as custodian of the Company's stores. His own canoe he placed at the disposal of the principal agent to meet incoming ships, and his youngest son Henare accompanied Chaffers in his survey of Wellington harbour. Wallace describes Te Puni as 'a venerable old chief.' The leading position he held is evident from the fact that the toast at the opening of Barrett's hotel in 1840 was 'Te Puni and the Chiefs.' Along with Wi Tako, Te Puni took strong measures to defend the pakeha when Boulcott's farm was attacked (16 May 1846). Major M. Richmond, reporting to Grey on the operations, wrote: 'I was much gratified by the chief Epuni coming forward and offering his assistance with 100 followers. By this determination of Epuni to unite with us in repressing the rebellious natives we secured the alliance of the whole of the Atiawa tribe, which being the most powerful in this part of the country, will prove of the greatest service to the government.' Te Puni at first proposed to pursue the hostile natives to their stronghold at Pahautanui, but later realised that his force was not strong enough to achieve its object. This opinion was corroborated by Grey, who wrote gravely doubting the wisdom of the pursuit. In recognition of his friendly services, Te Puni was presented with a silver cup in 1848 by Alexander Currie (chairman of directors of the New Zealand Company). Mrs Petre handed the cup to the old chief 'as a mark of approbation of his uniform and upright conduct towards the colonials since the establishment of the settlement.'

In 1848 Te Puni was appointed an official

visitor at Wellington hospital. Grey chose him as one of his esquires on being knighted. Later in that year he witnessed the death of his friend Colonel Wakefield, and acted as a pallbearer at the funeral. In 1850 he went with Rawa-Kitua back to his Taranaki lands. During the Taranaki troubles of 1854 his son Henare was at Rewarewa and assisted to erect a strong pa'at Mangaone hill. Te Puni died on 5 Dec 1870. He was buried at Pito-one with every show of respect from the two races. The pallbearers were Sir Donald McLean, Fitzherbert, Ludlam, Hunter, Lyon, J. C. Crawford and George Crawford. Hadfield remarked that the dead chief had been the very first to welcome the pakeha to the shores of Port Nidolson, and had since been their steadfast friend. Fitzherbert, in a panegyric worthy of the occasion, described Te Puni as a born gentleman, one of nature's noblemen. •Had he ever listened to suggestions less than those of gentleness and nobleness, or to men of lower minds than his own, how different might have been the early history of Wellington. The colonisation of New Zealand might have been indefinitely postponed, if not abandoned for years.' From 1853 Te Puni enjoyed a small annual pension.

The descendants of Honiana te Puni have no knowledge of how he received the name of 'Greedy.' Prior to the battle at Rewarewa he was simply Honiana. Mter he escaped he was given the name 'Te Puni Kokopu' from having made his escape by jumping into a deep dark hole where mountain trout were to be found (te puni, or te pa puni, a deep hole in a river; kokopu, a mountain trout). A grandson of Honiana te Puni and Nokuru Wi Tako Love (a grandson of Wi Tako Ngatata) attended Queen Victoria's diamond jubilee. Honiana was presented to the Queen and both received the jubilee medal. Mrs Ripeka Love (nee Matene), a descendant on her paternal side of Honiana te Puni, was awarded the O.B.E. (1918.)

Family information from W. H. Love; *New Munster Gaz.*, 21 Aug 1850; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Cowan; Wakefield; Ward (p); Bowen; *Wellington Independent*, 25 Sep 1858; *The Dominion*; 10 Aug 1927; *Evening Post*, 26 Oct 1929 (p).

TE PUOHO KI TE RANGI (otherwise Te Manu, or Ngarau) was a celebrated fighting

## TE PUOHO

chief and high priest of the Ngati-Tama tribe. Born at Poutama, near Kawhia, he was directly descended from one of the crew of the Tokomaru canoe. Through his father, Whangataki, and his mother, Hinewairoro, he was connected also with Ngati-Awa. He was full brother to Te Kaeaea (q.v.).

Te Puoho fought in many campaigns. Under pressure of the Waikato tribes, Ngati-Tama moved south with Te Rauparaha and took up their residence at Pukearuhe (north Taranaki). About 1818 Te Puoho's daughter, who had married a son of the Whanganui chief Takarangi, was grossly insulted by her husband. Calling upon Waikato and Ngati-Toa for assistance, Te Puoho joined the taua under Tuwhare which was on its way south, and attacked the Whanganui chief Te Anaua and his brother at Puma pa. The Ngati-Tama, possessing a few muskets, crossed the river on mokihiki. Puoho's next campaign (1820) was to obtain utu from Ngati-Maniapoto on account of the reverse at Tihimanuka on the heke from Poutama (1819). In that year, when the Ngati-Toa passed through en route to Cook strait, Te Rauparaha left his wife Te Akau at Turangarua pa in the care of Te Puoho, who as high priest would be able to make provision for the baptismal ceremony of the unborn child, Tamihana te Rauparaha (q.v.).

Te Puoho took part in the Tataramoia heke to Cook strait in 1822. Returning with his brother, Te Rangitaka-roro, he then joined the second heke (Nihoputa) in 1824. By his military prestige and his high standing as a priest he exercised great influence with Te Rauparaha, and when he contemplated moving his people to Cook strait the adjacent part of the South Island was assigned to him. During the early years in the new district Te Puoho took a leading part in compassing the destruction of the Rangitane by inviting them to a feast at Waikanae, from which only Te Awe Awe (q.v.) escaped. About 1827 he led down from Taranaki a heke of Ngati-Tama. In 1831 he led a small taua to assist the Ngati-Awa besieged in Pukerangiora, but was not strong enough to relieve them. Proceeding to the South Island, he took part in the attack on Kaiapohia (1831). Two years later (1833) Te Puoho brought his tribe down in the heke Hauhaia. He established himself at Massacre Bay

## PURCHAS

and Taitapu and proceeded to occupy a portion of the northern end of the South Island. In 1834 he was temporarily at Ohariu and is said to have been implicated in the massacre of the Muaupoko, but he did his best to save some of his wife's relatives.

He now turned his attention to the conquest of the Ngai-Tahu. With a small force of Ngati-Tama and a few Ngati-Awa he sailed down the West Coast in canoes as far as the Awarua river, calling at Mawhera in an unsuccessful attempt to enlist the help of Niho (Ngati-Toa). Leaving the canoes, Puoho crossed the Haast pass and reached lake Wanaka, where he met a few of the Ngai-Tahu. Then passing down the Matau river, he fell upon an eeling party at Waikaia, and sacked their pa. One of the party who escaped reported the incursion to Tuhawaiki at Ruapuke. A taua hastily raised by Tuhawaiki, Taiaroa and Patuki crossed to the mainland and marched swiftly to Tuturau, where Puoho was caught unawares and shot by Patuki. The whole party were killed or captured, Te Puoho's stepson and nephew, Wahapiro Paremata, being taken into captivity by Taiaroa. One fugitive bore the news to Te Puoho's wife, Kauhoe, at Parapara. Her son, Wi Katene te Puoho, who also bore the names Te Manu and Wi Nga Manu, was the father of Huria, who married Hemi Matenga. (See HURIA MATENGA.)

*App. H.R.*, 1936, G 6B; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; J. Cowan in *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Jun 1931.

PURCHAS, ARTHUR. GUYON (1821-1906) was born at St Arvans, in the Wye valley, Monmouthshire, educated privately, and at the age of 18 entered Guy's hospital, where he studied for three years, took his diploma of M.R.C.S., and came under the philosophical influence of F. D. Maurice. He was for some time resident surgeon at the Southern and Toxteth hospital, Liverpool, and in 1844 sailed as surgeon of the *Slains Castle* for New Zealand. After visiting Nelson and Auckland he returned to England at the end of the year. Having married, Purchas came to Sydney in the *Penyard Park*, and to Auckland in the *Maukin* (Oct 1846). He was master at St John's College, and spent three years as resident surgeon of the first hospital in Auckland. In 1847 he was ordained deacon and

## PURDIE

in 1853 priest, having meanwhile been inducted to the charge of St Peter's, Onehunga, in which he ministered to 1875. He then turned to the practice of medicine, devoting his spare time still to church work. He took a great interest in church music and was one of the compilers of the New Zealand hymnal (1866), which contains some of his compositions. He was a member of the diocesan synod and of the general synod from its foundation; and in 1895 was appointed an assessor of the bishop's court. The other interests of Purdie included the Blind Institute, the Auckland Institute and the scenery preservation society. He promoted the movement to obtain a good water supply for the City, sent samples of Waikato coal to the great Exhibition of 1851, patented a process for flax dressing (for which he erected a mill at Waiuku), and patented an oil engine (1887). Purchas died on 28 May 1906.

Purchas, *op. cit.*; J. K. Davis; Cowie; Gorst; *N.Z. Herald*, 29 May 1906; J. Giles in *N.Z. Herald*, 31 May.

PURDIE, ALEXANDER CALLENDER (1824-99) was born in the parish of Fenwick, Ayrshire, educated there, and trained as a wire-worker in Glasgow. While working at his trade he saw many country residences throughout the United Kingdom and had an opportunity of studying botany. Before coming to Otago in the *Pladda* (1860) he had already made contacts with leading botanists. He was associated with the Exhibition of 1865, and thereafter devoted himself mainly to scientific pursuits. With Beverly, G. M. Thomson and others, he formed the field naturalists club, and he was a staunch supporter of the horticultural society. He sent a species of whale to the British Museum collection. Purdie for many years contributed notes on natural history under the nom de plume of 'Pakeha' to the *Otago Witness*. He died on 24 Jun 1899. A son became professor of geology in the School of Mines in Adelaide.

*Otago Daily Times*, 5 Jul 1899.

PURDIE, WILLIAM (1797-1876) was born at Airdrie, Lanarkshire, the son of a farmer. He educated himself as a boy, and eventually got to Glasgow and apprenticed himself (1822) to Walter Rankin, a surgeon of Airdrie. He at-

## PURDIE

tended the lectures in anatomy at McKenzie's dissecting rooms in Glasgow, riding 10 miles each way every day. A year or two later he attended James Armour's lectures in midwifery, and eventually he passed for his degree in surgery in 1825. He started a practice in Edinburgh, taking lectures at the Royal Infirmary. In 1829 he was admitted a burgess in the parish of Canongate, either because he was a freeholder or for public services rendered.

In 1831 Purdie's studies were interrupted by the outbreak of cholera. In Edinburgh the epidemic gained an alarming hold in the parish of Canongate. Purdie did Trojan service in combating it, and received a handsome testimonial from the public. In 1833 he gained his degree of M.D. at Glasgow University. He then made a few voyages to Greenland as surgeon in Scottish whaling ships. Here he enforced a strict regime in the use of alcohol, and succeeded in making a reputation for his crews by resisting the ravages of scurvy. Throughout life he was a teetotaler. Purdie having married, settled down to practise in Edinburgh, attracted by the opportunities it gave him for postgraduate study and contact with the highest intellects in medicine. He was a prompt convert to vaccination, and brought a supply of lymph in 1849 to Otago, where it is believed he was the first practitioner to use it. He also recognised the advantages of chloroform, and in 1846 adopted the homeopathic system of treatment. His busy practice did not prevent him taking part in social and religious movements, notably the Edinburgh Mission, the Magdalen, and the Monthly Tract Society.

Purdie had been practising for nearly 25 years when he became interested (through John McGlashan) in the Otago settlement. He obtained appointment as surgeon to the *Mooltan*, and sailed with his wife and six children. Before the vessel was two days out cholera broke out. It needed all Purdie's stern courage and firmness to enforce discipline amongst the passengers so as to check the outbreak. There were 20 cases, of which nine were fatal. The *Mooltan* arrived in Otago harbour on 26 Dec 1849. Purdie made up his mind to remain in the province. Before long he acquired 10 acres in North-East Valley, where he was practically the only resident. The 'Woodside' residence stood until 1905. His practice was arduous in

the extreme, but not very lucrative. Appointed a magistrate (Jul 1850), he devoted himself faithfully to his judicial work, often sitting on the bench with Strode. He was one of the justices who in 1853 considered the attempts that were being made to stuff the electoral roll with names of Maori voters. It was he who administered a stern rebuke to Mr Justice Stephen when, charged with assault, his Honor protested: 'Do you think I would wait for the slow and tedious process of the law?'

In 1854 Purdie was elected to the board of commissioners for the management of the public lands in Dunedin and in 1855 he was elected to the new town board, on which he served until 1860. He was a member of the waste lands board (1856-59). In Sep 1857 he was elected to represent the Western District in the Provincial Council, in which he sat until resigning in 1862. For a few months in 1860 he was in the executive. He worked in connection with the missions at Port Chalmers and North-East Valley, and as an active member of the congregation at Knox Church. Although a Baptist by conviction, he attended regularly at Knox until his own congregation was strong enough to open a church. He died on 30 May 1876.

*Otago P.c. Proc.*, Hocken, *Otago*; McIndoe; Fulton (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 31 May 1876, 25 Jul 1930.

**PURNELL, CHARLES WILLIAM** (1843-1926) was born and educated in London, and came to Taranaki, where he was in the militia. He was engaged in journalism until 1878 when, having been admitted to the bar in Dunedin, he commenced to practice in Ashburton. He was one of the first captains of the Ashburton Guards. Purcell wrote extensively on scientific and political subjects, his main works being *An Agrarian Law for New Zealand* (1874), *The New Zealand Confederation* (1877), *An Agrarian Law* (1878), *The Moa and the Maori* (1880) and *The Intelligence of Animals* (1893). His first volume of poems appeared in 1868, followed in 1912 by *The Modern Arthur and Other Poems*, and in 1922 *The Serpent and Other Poems*. His wife was Flavia Marie Hyde, daughter of Herbert Wilson, of Jersey. He died on 7 Dec 1926.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924.

**PYKE, VINCENT** (1827-94) was born in Somersetshire and came to South Australia in 1851. At Adelaide he learned of the discovery of gold in Victoria, and he tramped from Adelaide to the nearest diggings, at Mount Alexander. At Forest Creek and Fryer's Creek, Bendigo, he spent the next two years mining with varying success. In 1853 Pyke opened a store at Forest Creek. He was a staunch supporter of miners' rights, and exercised considerable influence amongst the miners. He was selected to lay before the governor (Sir Charles Hotham) their objections to the exorbitant license fees that they had to pay, and suggestions for the amendment of the mining regulations. When the police, on mere suspicion of sly grog-selling, burned down a store at Forest Creek, Pyke curbed the fury of the people and persuaded them to seek redress constitutionally. He was one of the promoters of the railway from Castlemaine to Melbourne.

In 1855, when the goldfields were permitted to send eight representatives to the partially elective Legislative Council, the miners insisted on nominating Pyke. In that Council he presented a petition with 800 signatures in favour of the ballot. The fight on this point was a memorable one. The Government, still appointed by the crown, resisted the ballot stubbornly. Eventually it was carried by the help of the miners' representatives. Stawell, the Attorney-general, refused to draw the bill, and a meeting of supporters of the ballot called upon H. S. Chapman (q.v.) to draft it. In a letter to the *Otago Daily Times* Pyke claimed that Chapman was the author of the Australian ballot system, but he himself was one of its active originators. In 1856 he was again elected for the Castlemaine Boroughs under the new system. In 1857 he was appointed emigration agent to proceed to England, with the Hon Hugh Erskine Childers, on behalf of the Colony. While there, at the request of the Ballot society, he delivered lectures in favour of the new system of voting. Returning to Victoria at the end of 1858, he was appointed warden and police magistrate at Sandhurst.

Eighteen months later a public meeting demanded that he should re-enter politics, and subscribed £500 for his expenses. Pyke resigned his post and was duly elected for Castlemaine Boroughs. Towards the end of 1859 he

joined the Nicholson ministry as commissioner of trade and customs, and a year later he became president of the board of lands and works and commissioner of lands and surveys. Having charge of the administration of the goldfields, he was responsible for sending out several expeditions, under Alfred Howitt and others, which opened up new fields in Gippsland. In the third Parliament Pyke was elected for Castlemaine (1861), which returned him altogether seven times. The goldfields of Otago (1861) attracted from Australia to New Zealand a coterie of men who had made their mark in the parliamentary life of Victoria—Chapman, Wilson Gray, James Mackintosh and Pyke. (Chapman, Mackintosh and Pyke remained for life executive councillors of Victoria.) While still in the Victorian Parliament Pyke paid a health visit to New Zealand in 1862 and inspected the goldfields. He was invited by the provincial government to apply his experience to the organisation of a goldfields department. On 23 Dec 1862 he was gazetted secretary for the goldfields. In the five years during which he held that office Pyke drafted very carefully, and amended from time to time, the necessary regulations; and drafted the acts for the Provincial Council. The office was abolished in 1867 owing to the General Government asserting its right to control the fields. In the following year was held a conference of delegates appointed by the provincial government and local interests of the mining population. Pyke was chairman. The result was an amended code which provided for the new methods of mining. In Victoria Pyke was the author of a mining companies act, which was afterwards used in framing New Zealand legislation. Appointed warden and resident magistrate at the Dunstan, he at first had his home in Clyde, but later moved to Lawrence.

In Aug 1873, after a stiff contest with four other candidates, Pyke was elected M.H.R. for Wakatipu. This district (afterwards extended to Dunstan) he represented until 1890, when he contested Mount Ida against M. J. S. Mackenzie and was defeated. He was a staunch advocate of Central Otago. He was first chairman of the Vincent county council, which was named after him. He foresaw a great fruit industry when the district was irrigated from the

Clutha. He proposed a railway to Dunedin, and in 1876 carried an empowering bill. Three years later he turned the first sod, but it was a slow movement. In 1887 he brought in a bill to allow a syndicate to carry out the work, but it was thrown out. Next year he proposed that it be constructed out of land revenues, but the Legislative Council rejected it. In 1889 he piloted Sir Harry Atkinson over the route, but he did not see the fulfilment of his schemes.

Pyke was the first chairman of Vincent county council (1877-82). He returned to Parliament for Tuapeka in 1893. His outside interests were active and varied. He took part in the exploration for a pass between the lakes and the west coast of Otago, by way of the Hollyford river. He was a keen volunteer, and held a captain's commission. As a freemason he was grand master for Otago under the Scottish Constitution. A strong churchman, he was lay reader at Clyde until a vicar was obtained. He was an accomplished elocutionist and an entertaining lecturer; but his real profession was journalism. He started the *Southern Mercury* in Dunedin (1874) to advocate the popular cause, and contributed to it a humorous column signed 'Timon.' A year or two later he gave up control of the *Mercury* and edited the *Guardian* for a short term. He was proprietor and editor of one of the publications known as *Dunedin Punch*. He published handbooks on Otago (1868) and the New Zealand land laws (1893), and in 1887 brought out his *History of the Early Gold Discoveries in Otago*. Pyke did his best literary work as a novelist. His best-known stories, *Wild Will Enderby* (1873) and *The Adventures of George Washington Pratt* (1874), are full of colonial colour and are well conceived and written. Both were published in Dunedin. In 1884 he wrote a prize story, *Craigiellinn*, for the Ayrshire association, and in 1886 a series of old identity stories in the *Tapanui Courier*. Few men in Australia or New Zealand have had a more versatile life. Pyke died on 4 Jun 1894. His wife (née Miss Renwick) died on 7 May 1898.

Victoria Leg. Assembly debates; Pyke, *op. cit.*; Barclay; Gilkison; Ross; *Saturday Advertiser*, Apr-Jun 1881; *Melbourne Argus*, 5 Jun 1894; Pyke in *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Jan 1893; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Jun 1894, 26 Sep 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament Home.

---

---

# Q-R

---

---

QUICK, WILLIAM HENRY (1843-1911) was born at Sierra Leone, the son of the Rev W. A. Quick, afterwards president of Horton College, Ross, Tasmania, at which the son received his education. He served his articles in Sydney, and passed as a solicitor in 1866. Coming immediately to New Zealand, Quick practised in Wanganui till 1870 and afterwards in Wellington. He married (1868) Anne Elizabeth, daughter of Captain George Thomas. Quick was a member of the Wellington City Council (1884-87), chancellor of the Anglican diocese, a trustee of Wanganui College, chairman of the Wellington conciliation board, and a member of the Te Ante and other trusts commission (1906). He was a director of the Bank of New Zealand (1906-II). He died on 13 Sep 1911.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Bank of N.Z. reports, 1907-11 (p); *N.Z. Times*, 14 Sep 1911.

RAMSAY, KEITH (1843-1906) was born at Alyth, Perthshire, Scotland, and educated at Blairgowrie. Coming to New Zealand in 1862 by the *Jura*, he entered the firm of Cargill and Co. in Dunedin, and three years later established his own business as a shipowner. In public life Ramsay was a member of the Dunedin City Council (1871-73) and mayor in 1874; chairman of the Otago harbour board (eight years); president of the chamber of commerce, and vice-president of the Dunedin Savings Bank. He was a founder of the National Insurance Co. and the Westport Coal Co., and a director of both until his death (on 3 May 1906); and was chairman of the stock exchange proprietary and of the Perpetual Trustees, Estate and Agency Co. In 1871 Ram-

say married Janet Torry, daughter of Archibald Douglas, of Edinburgh.

*eycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 7 May 1906.

RANFURLY, UCHTER JOHN MARK, 5th Earl of (1856-1933), was the younger son of the third earl, by his marriage with Harriet, daughter of John Rimington. Educated at Harrow, he passed through the *Britannia* for the Navy, but went instead to Trinity College, Cambridge.

Having succeeded his brother in 1875, he spent some years in Australia, where he engaged in fruit-growing in the Mildura country. He installed an irrigation plant, and was regarded as an authority on fruitgrowing. He had also studied at the Geological Institute in London, and was interested in practical mining. In 1888 he visited New Zealand. He was lord-in-waiting to Queen Victoria (1895-97), and in the latter year was appointed Governor of New Zealand, taking up his duties on 10 Aug.

Lord Ranfurly's term of office in New Zealand included the whole period of the South African war, and he took a keen interest not only in the raising and despatch of contingents to the field of war, but in the reception of the men on their return and their subsequent welfare. He was the founder of the Veterans' home in Auckland, and compiled the list of war services known as the *Roll of Honour, 1840-1902*. During his governorship New Zealand adopted penny postage, largely increased her contribution to the Royal Navy, played her part in the opening of the Pacific cable, established Empire Day and passed the preferential trade act. The boundaries of New Zealand were extended to embrace certain

## TE RANGIHAEATA

groups of islands in the Pacific, and Lord Ranfurly visited them to proclaim British sovereignty. He left New Zealand on 19 Jun 1904.

In 1897 he was created K.C.M.G.; in 1901 G.C.M.G.; in 1905 sworn of the Privy Council of Ireland; and in 1923 of the Privy Council of Northern Ireland. He was a bailiff grand cross of the order of St John of Jerusalem, and an officer of the Legion of Honour. He died on 2 Oct 1933. Ranfurly married (1880) Constance Elizabeth, daughter of the 7th Viscount Charlemont. Their eldest son and heir, Viscount Northland, was killed in France in 1915.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Burke; *N.Z. Herald*, 5 Nov 1888; *The Times*, 3 Oct 1933.

TE RANGIHAEATA, or MOKAU (?-1856), a celebrated fighting chief of Ngati-Toa, was the son of Rakaherea and Waitohi (sister of Te Rauparaha), and a brother of Topeora. He was in the prime of life when the first Europeans met him, and was described as manly, well-formed and athletic, about six feet two inches in height, with curly black hair, a piercing eye and haughty bearing.

Rangihaeata was prominent in the fighting against Waikato tribes at Kawhia; in Taranaki (where he gained the name of Mokau); and in the hekes to Cook Strait. He was one of the leaders of the Ngati-Toa on the expedition of Tuwhare (1919-20). In a fight at Rangitikei he captured Pikinga, a Ngati-Apa woman of high rank, whom he married. His only child was drowned crossing the Mokau on the heke Tahutahu-ahi (1821). On returning from the campaign against Rerewaka (in the sounds of the South Island), Rangihaeata found that the Ngati-Ira chief Kekerengu (q.v.), who had been received as a fugitive at Waikanae after the massacre of most of his tribesmen in the Port Nicholson region, had been guilty of an amour with his wife. Fearing the vengeance of Rangihaeata, Kekerengu fled to Kaikoura, in the South Island. Swift on their track a Ngati-Toa taua, led by Te Rauparaha and Te Rangihaeata, overtook the enemy at Omih, routed them and passed on to attack the Ngai-Tahu pa at Kaiapohia. At the tangi following the death of Rangihaeata's mother at Mana in 1839, the old quarrel between Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Awa was revived and a fierce battle was fought on the sandhills at Kuititanga.

## TE RANGIHAEATA

Rangihaeata received a share of the goods paid by the New Zealand Company for the purchase of the Ngati-Toa rights in and about Wellington and he also, at the invitation of Major Bunbury, affixed his signature to the Treaty of Waitangi. He firmly contended, however, that certain lands claimed by the Company were not in the sale and he opposed the Porirua surveys. When the Wairau dispute occurred he went to Nelson with Te Rauparaha and Te Hiko (q.v.) and protested against the survey of land that had not been sold. In subsequent developments he was fair and considerate, but unbending in his determination not to allow the survey to proceed. He led the party that burned the surveyors' huts, and held himself haughtily aloof from argument with the arresting party from Nelson. Only when his wife Te Rongo (the widow of Rauparaha's nephew Te Whaiti) had been killed by a shot from the gun of a pakeha did he become violent and demand full utu by the killing of pakeha prisoners of high rank. To this demand Te Rauparaha yielded, and the prisoners were put to death. Retiring to the North Island, Rangihaeata fortified a pa six miles up the Waikawa river. He was not punished for his part in the Wairau affair, Governor FitzRoy having decided that the Europeans were to blame. Nevertheless Rangihaeata held sullenly aloof from the Government, and passively resisted the penetration of the settlers. He took part in 1846 in the operations following the attacks on the settlements in the Hutt Valley. After that at Bouleou's farm in May he retreated to his strong pa at Pahautanui, where for some time he resisted the operations conducted by Sir George Grey. After the erection of the blockhouse at the mouth of Porirua harbour and the capture of Te Rauparaha at Taupo (Plimmerton), Rangihaeata retired up the Horokiwi valley, closely followed by troops and militia, assisted by naval detachments which operated with gunboats on Porirua harbour. Disappointed in his hope that Ngati-Toa and Ngati-Raukawa would take up arms, he made a skilful retreat under great difficulties northwards along the foot of the Tararua mountains.

Having evaded pursuit, he built himself a pa at Poroutawhao, where he lived in retirement despite the efforts of Sir George Grey to

## TE RANGIHIWINUI

establish friendly relations. For some years he maintained a tollgate on the beach to prevent settlers from driving cattle to their stations north of the Manawatu, and he resisted road-making until Grey persuaded him to have a road to his pa instead of the tollgate on the beach. Later a school was opened in the pa, and Rangihaeata yielded to the allurements to the extent of buying a buggy for his own use. In his later years he had several distinguished visitors, and when Grey's governorship terminated he wrote him a letter expressing warm regard for his old adversary, and gave him Nga-hue's historic greenstone mere from Hawaiki.

In 1853 Rangihaeata visited Wellington in a friendly spirit. In his relations with the pakeha he was always scrupulously honest, and used his chiefly influence to enforce honesty amongst his people. He had a jealous nature, easily took offence and was very touchy about his mana. He never adopted Christianity. Rangihaeata died at Poroutawhao in 1856, and was buried there beside his wife Pikinga, a sister of Arapata Hiria, of Ngati-Apa, against whom Rauparaha and Nene were fighting when he captured her (1820).

Cowan; Bevan (p); Buick, *Old New Zealander* (p); McKillop; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Cowan and Pomare, *Legends of the Maori*; Stack.

TE RANGIHIWINUI, KEEPA (1823-98) was the son of Tanguru, a Maupoko chief who had a fortified pa at Katihiku when the Amiwhe-nua expedition invaded the southern district in 1820-21. Tanguru sallied out to attack the besiegers and was captured, but escaped in the confusion. A powerful man and brave warrior, he once challenged Rangihaeata to single combat with the taiaha against the tomahawk, but was declined. Many of Rangihiwini's relatives were killed in the massacre at Ohariu in 1835. His mother, Rere-o-Maki, belonged to the tribes Ngati-Apa, Rangitane and Nga Rauru. In the forties Rangihiwini distinguished himself in fighting on the Whanganui river. He married a Whanganui woman, but fell out with his uncle Te Anau (q.v.) with whom he was not reconciled till the sixties. He was a member of the Maori police force, and for some time carried mails between Wellington and Whanganui.

When the Hauhau rising occurred Tanguru

## TE RANGIHIWINUI

was ageing and Rangihiwini was practically chief of the tribe. Early in 1864 he was gazetted ensign in the native contingent under Colonel McDonnell, and he distinguished himself in the field on many occasions. Whitmore found him brave, modest and generous on all occasions, with a great capacity for military operations, deliberation and courage. At the battle of Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu (Sep 1868), he commanded a native contingent of 110 who scouted and outlanked the pa, and later carried off the wounded. He was present at the reverse at Moturoa in Oct, with 300 of his Whanganui men, and again covered the retreat and brought off the wounded under heavy fire. For this he received the New Zealand Cross, and was promoted captain. At the capture of Weraroa he caught the Hauhau rearguard and inflicted considerable losses upon them, and he continued intrepidly in the chase of Titokowarn until he escaped at Whakamara. Rangihiwini then took the field against Te Kooti, whose forces he pursued across the central plateau and assisted to rout finally at Porere (Oct 1869). At Tapapa he captured all of Te Kooti's horses, and he continued the chase into the Bay of Plenty. At Waipunapa he assisted to besiege the fort, from which Kereopa escaped. In the operations in the back country he met Tamaikowha and made peace (without the sanction of the Government, but afterwards approved). Rangihiwini then returned with his men by steamer from Opotiki to Wanganui.

When the campaign ended Te Keepa (now a major) and Kawana Hunia took advantage of their arms and high prestige in the field to assert their claim to lands in Horowhenua and Manawatu which they had lost through Te Rauparaha's invasion and the sojourn of the Ngati-Raukawa in that region. When the native land court (under Judge Rogan) sat at Foxton in 1873, Te Keepa demonstrated with an armed force and brought pressure to bear upon the adjudication. The boundaries of the land assigned to the Muaupoko were increased, and he afterwards agreed to transfer 1,200 acres to the Ngati-Raukawa.

Litigation and fractiousness lost Keepa his position as an assessor and land purchase officer, and he remained under a cloud until the Stout-Vogel Government came into office and Balance reappointed him to his position and pen-

## TE RANGIPUAWHE

sion. Shortly before his death he spoke strongly against the further sale of native lands. He stood for the Western Maori seat in 1876, but was defeated by Nahe. Te Rangihiwini died on 15 Apr 1898.

App. H.R., 1868-73, 1907, G 1a, p. 16; Gudgeon; Gorton; Cowan (p); Whitmore (p); Bowen. *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Apr 1898.

TE RANGIPUAWHE, TE KEEPA (1826-1905) was a high Arawa chief of Tuhourangi, and an authority on the history and traditions of his people. His father, Rangipuawhe, led an attack on the Ngai-Terangi stronghold at Te Tumu (1836) which failed owing to the muskets of the defenders. Rangipuawhe served under the Government in the Arawa contingent, operating against Te Kooti (1868-70), and later received a small pension. He stood for the Eastern Maori seat in 1876 (being defeated by Karaitiana by 401 to 373), and again in 1884, when he was defeated by Wi Pere. He lived at Te Wairoa (Tarawera) until the eruption of 1886, in which he had a narrow escape. Rangipuawhe was chosen, with Te Heuheu, to represent the Maori race at the reception to the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall and York at Rotorua in 1901, and received the royal medal. He died on 27 Jun 1905. This Arawa chief traced his descent from the Hawaiki chief Houmai-tawhiti, father of Tama te Kapua.

R. A. Loughnan, *Royalty in New Zealand*; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Jul 1905.

RANGITAAHUA, JABEZ BUNTING (? 1816-56) was the son of Te Tuhi, a chief of the Maungaunga hapu at Purapura, Waikato. On the death of his parents he was taken under the protection of his uncle, Wiremu Wetere te Kauwa (a well-known Waikato general), whose children had died; and he became a leading chief of Ngati Tama-oho. In his teens he came under the influence of the Missions and was baptised at Hokianga. Pious and zealous, Bunting for many years lived an exemplary life. He was one of the secretaries of the evangelical alliance (1851), was prominent in all native matters and spoke at many meetings to eradicate evil customs. Just before his death (on 22 Apr 1856) he handed over to justice at Waiuku the young men who were implicated in the assault on Sutton.

## TE RANGITAKE

TE RANGITAHAU (? 1830-1900), one of Te Rooti's lieutenants, belonged to Ngati-Tuwaharetoa tribe and came from Taupo, where he was a principal man of Waipahihi and Waitahanui. Tall, powerful, blackbearded, he was the typical warrior tohunga. As a pupil of the renowned Werewere te Rangi-pu-mamao, he was credited with powers of second sight, which gave him considerable mana amongst the superstitious followers of Te Kooti. Energetic, savage, ruthless and callous, he acted as chief executioner for Te Kooti. Te Rangitahau took a prominent part in the raid on Hawkes Bay (Oct 1866), being deputed to ravage the farms and join in the attack on Napier. He was captured at Omarunui and was sent with others to the Chatham islands. Escaping with Te Kooti (1868), he led one of the parties in the attack on Poverty Bay and was with Nikora responsible for the sacking of Biggs's house. At Te Huki and Hiruharama he was one of the party which killed the Ngati-Pahauwera. He was with Te Kooti until early in 1870. Te Rangitahau died in 1900.

Cowan, ii, 134, 223 (p); Lambert.

TE RANGITAKE, WIREMU KINGI (? 1795-1882), a chief of Ngati-Awa, was one of the three sons of Reretawhangawhanga and his wife Te Kehu. He claimed relationship with Ngati-Whatua. Owing to a quarrel between the heads of the tribe in the neighbourhood of Maungatautari, one section migrated southward to the Waitara, where one of the brothers married a woman belonging to a younger female branch of the family of Te Teira. The Ngati-Awa had their pa at Manukorihi, on the north bank of the river, where Te Rangitake was born about 1795. Reretawhangawhanga devised the reconnaissance of 80 picked men which brought about the defeat of Waikato at Metunui in 1822. He went south with Te Rauparaha, but was disappointed with the prospect and returned north. In 1824 he took some of his people in the Nihoputa heke to the south. Five years later, as one of the leaders of Ngati-Awa, he took part in the reprisals against Nga-Rauru for interfering with his heke. In 1831 Reretawhangawhanga was with Te Rauparaha at Kaiapohia. While he was absent a taua of Waikato, under Te Wherowhero, captured their pa at Pukerangiora and killed or took prisoners

TE RANGITAKE

many of the vanquished. Some accounts say that Te Rangitake was amongst the prisoners; others that he had gone to Kapiti before the invasion and placed himself under the protection of Te Rauparaha.

About 1833, his hapu having adopted the name 'Manukorihi,' abandoned the pa on the Waitara and joined the Taranaki tribe in the Paukena heke to Cook strait. There quarrels quickly ensued with Te Rauparaha and Ngati-Raukawa over the allocation of land, and there was never a satisfactory settlement. In 1834 the Ngati-Awa were attacked by the Ngati-Raukawa at Pakakutu pa (Otaki). Reretawhangawhanga led a successful sortie and moved to Haowhenua, where he was again attacked. Through the mediation of Te Heuheu a truce was at length established, and Te Rangitake settled down with his people at Waikanae. The truce was broken in 1839 by the Ngati-Raukawa attacking the Ngati-Awa, the Taranaki and the Ngati-Ruanui at Kuititanga. It was about this time that Te Awaitaia suggested to Rangitake that he might solve the dispute by returning to Waitara. Rangitake was deeply influenced by the teaching of Ripahau (q.v.), who married his daughter, and whom he invited to leave Kapiti and reside with him at Waikanae. When Hadfield opened the mission at Otaki Rangitake was one of his earliest converts. He always evinced a friendly disposition towards the pakeha. When Colonel Wakefield arrived in the *Tory* (1839) he was one of the first chiefs of Ngati-Awa to sign the Queen Charlotte Sound deed, under which Wakefield endeavoured to persuade the tribe to part with their rights in Taranaki. Reretawhangawhanga died at Waikanae on 26 Sep 1843. After the affray at Wairau Te Rangitake stood firmly with Hadfield against the warlike influence of Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata. In 1846 again, when the settlers in the Hutt valley were attacked by Rangihaeata, he resisted the disturbers and was largely responsible for protecting the settlement at Port Nicholson.

In the early years of British sovereignty Wi Kingi paid a visit to the Ngapuhi. A quarrel about land between him and Kati (the younger brother of Te Wherowhero) showed that the claims of Waikato to Waitara were not yet abandoned. In 1847, while accompanying Governor Grey in the *Inflexible* on his visit to

TE RANGITAKE

Taranaki, Wiremu Kingi firmly declined to abandon his claims at Waitara, and later in the year he evacuated his lands at Waikanae and led 500 of his people with all their possessions back to the ancestral lands. He intended to re-occupy the old cultivations on the north bank of the river at Manukorihi, but finding a party of Waikato (under Rewi) in possession, he obtained permission of Tamati Rum (the father of Te Teira) to settle on the south bank. In the summer of 1849-50 he erected a strong pa at the mouth. Encouraged by the demand for produce for the goldfields in Australia, Wiremu Kingi's people worked industriously at their farms and prospered exceedingly. In 1854 they were said to own 150 horses, 300 cattle, 40 carts, 35 ploughs, 20 pairs of harrows, 2 winnowing machines and 10 wooden houses. In the late fifties the chief's demeanour changed. Though still loyal to the Government, he was irritated by the land hunger of the pakeha and the gradual transfer of broad acres from Maori to pakeha ownership. Grey was unable fully to regain his cooperation, and Wi Kingi (who now called himself 'Wiremu Kingi Whiti') for a while cultivated a friendship with the Puketapu chief Katatore. Though he held aloof from the Ngati-Ruanui Land League, he found himself involved in a critical dispute over the land which he occupied at Waitara. In the presence of Governor Browne at New Plymouth (7 Mar 1859) he declared his determination to oppose the sale by Teira. Nevertheless he indignantly refused in Dec of that year to accept the King flag, declaring that he loved the pakeha but would keep his land. The sale was completed, however, early in 1860, and surveyors entered upon the block. When the natives under Wi Kingi's influence obstructed and ignored the orders of the Government to desist, troops marched against Waitara (5 Mar 1860). Only then did Wi Kingi turn to the King movement in the hope of receiving the assistance of Waikato. His people erected a pa (Te Hurirapa) and pulled up the survey pegs. Fighting commenced on 17 Mar and practically concluded on 8 Apr, when Wi Kingi's general (Hapurona), defeated at Huirangi, tendered his submission. Some of Wi Kingi's young men, without his consent, went to Nga-ruawahia and took the King oath (Apr 1860). The King tribes thereafter considered Waitara

TE RANGITAKE

to be under their mana and they joined in the fighting. At the instigation of Rewi a Ngati-Maniapoto party was allowed to go to Taranaki, and it beat off an attack at Puketakauere. Wi Kingi went to visit the King at Kihikihi. Fox saw him at Hangatiki in 1861 and they discussed the dispute. With the question still unsettled, Wiremu Kingi retired into the inland Ngati-Maru district, where he lived in seclusion for the next 12 years in close association with the Maori King. When the removal of Sir John Gorst from the Waikato was being discussed at Te Awamutu (Apr 1863) he counselled sending away all the pakeha settlers and seizing their houses. About this time Sir George Grey learned new facts about the Waitara purchase.

In 1867-68 Kingi lived for 18 months with the Taranaki tribe at Warea. He visited Titokowaru, but rejected an invitation in 1868 to join in his insurrection. Later he lived for nearly five years at Parihaka with Te Whiti. It was during this period that he restrained his people from resisting the passage of the Ngati-Maniapoto after the massacre of White Cliffs. Though he was never again on terms of cordiality with the pakeha, Kingi had business relations with them, and never interfered with the settlers. Parris recommended in 1869 that his people should receive grants of land. Kingi's wife and grandson emerged from their seclusion in that year to visit New Plymouth, and three years later the chief himself met the Native Minister (McLean) and was received in friendly fashion by the whites (16 Feb 1872). In his later years, preferring seclusion when he found his influence failing through the spread of European customs, he lived a purely native life. For some time he resided at Manutangihia, and later he moved to Kaingaru, where he died on 13 Jan 1882. He left one son (Emera) and a daughter (Georgiana). His grandson Emera Kingi afterwards became chief.

Rangitake was tall and in later years stout, with a forbidding countenance and blustering manner. M. S. Grace describes him as a subtle council chief, a white man's Maori with imagination and a turn for affairs. Having lived long with pakeha of high intellectual order like Hadfield, he was enthusiastically in favour of the English constitution and was 'forced into war by Governor Gore Browne's pragmatic in-

RATTRAY

capacity.' The Government's treatment of him over the Waitara block is a controversial incident in New Zealand history. Grey was anxious to remedy what he considered an injustice, and both Sir William Martin and Bishop Selwyn warmly championed the chief whose arms in early days had so often protected the pakeha.

Information from Bishop H. W. Williams; *App. H.R.*, 1863, E2, E2A, 1867, A18; Cowan (p); Ward; M. S. Grace (p); Buller; Wells; Gorst; Saunders (notably ii, 296); Martin, *The Taranaki Question*; H. T. Kemp in *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Mar 1901; Rusden; *Taranaki Herald*, 18 Jan 1882.

RATANA, TAHUPOTIKI WIREMU (1870-1939) was of the Ngati-Apa and Ngati-Ruanui tribe and was a cousin of Robert Tahupotiki Haddon (q.v.). In early manhood he farmed near Wanganui. During the epidemic of 1918 he was very sick and subject to visions. Having read the Scriptures deeply under Presbyterian missionaries, he became a faith healer and claimed to have cured thousands of Maori men and women of various forms of sickness, paralysis and other disability. Having a large following all over the country, Ratana established a modern settlement at his own pa, Ratana, near Wanganui, created the Maori United Welfare Bank, and invested £34,000 in an attempt to recover from the state lands which he claimed had been unjustly taken from his people. In 1924 he led a deputation to England to lay these grievances before the King. In the following year he founded a church which soon had 22,000 followers, 100 clergy and 400 lay preachers. A few years before his death he moved to Matamata, where he founded a similar settlement. He died on 18 Sep 1939.

A son, HAAMI TOKOURU RATANA, contested Maori seats on several occasions, and was elected to Parliament for the Western Maori district in 1935.

*Wanganui Herald*, 19 Nov 1920; *The Dominion*, ib. (p).

RATTRAY, WILLIAM (1806-87) was born in Scotland. A master-mariner, he came to Melbourne in his own barque, the *Elizabeth*, in 1853, and shortly afterwards to Auckland, where he established himself with Captain Lillewall as ship chandlers. They prospered for many years, and sold the business to H. F. Anderson and Co. Rattray had strong religious views, and

took an active part in politics, being member of the Provincial Council for Auckland East (1861-65). He was a member of the Christian Brethren for 60 years, and one of the originators of the Freedom of Religion Society, which opposed state endowments to any religious body. Rattray died on 13 Oct 1887.

*Parltry Record; Auckland Star*, 14 Oct 1887.

**TE RAU-ANGAANGA, TAKEREI** (1816-78), a leading chief of the Ngati-Mahuta tribe, was closely related to Tawhiao. Though not equal in rank to Te Wherowhero, he was a considerable landowner. Te Rau-Angaanga adopted the name 'Takerei' during Grey's first governorship. His opposition to the King movement annoyed Potatau. Determined to farm efficiently, he found his people divided against him, and they resented his serving on the bench, so he left the settlement at Whakapaku and went to Karakariki (1857). He lived in a good house and dressed well, and with his wife and family was educated in Auckland.

Although he had given 1600 acres in Waikato for education and religious purposes, Takerei could not keep out of the war of 1863. His eldest son was killed at Rangiriri and a daughter accidentally shot by the soldiers. He himself was captured in the redoubt and imprisoned in the hulk *Marion* at Auckland. With Tioriori of Ngati-Haua he was liberated on parole in Auckland. He lost his whole estate by confiscation; his disasters preyed on his mind and he held aloof from the Europeans. Jealous of the King movement, Takerei wished to supplant his relative Te Wherowhero and got into debt by extravagance. He removed to Hikurangi and died at an advanced age in 1878.

Gorst; Cowan; *N.z. Herald*, 19 Jan 1878.

**TE RAUPARAHA** (? 1768-1849), the most renowned chief of the Ngati-Toa, was born at Maungatautari. His father, Werawera, was killed in battle, and he was called Te Rauparaha (convolvulus leaf) because the chief who devoured his father threatened to eat him also as a relish for his feast. Te Rauparaha was descended direct from Toa-Rangatira, founder of the Ngati-Toa branch of Tainui. His mother was Parekowhatu (a Ngati-Raukawa woman) and his sister Waitohi was the mother of Ran-

gihaeata (q.v.). Brought up in the chiefly tradition at Kawhia, Te Rauparaha was specially favoured by his mother's people at Maungatautari, with whom he spent a good deal of his boyhood. Though he displayed high mental qualities early in life, his mother favoured the elder brother, Nohorua. A mere girl, Marore, was assigned to him as wife, and a slight was put upon her by a Waikato man. (One account says that Marore was killed at the instigation of Te Wherowhero.) In consequence, Te Rauparaha led a taua against Waikato, but his plans were suspected by Te Haunga, who chased the Ngati-Toa off. Te Rauparaha then, adopting a ruse which he often employed in his later warfare, hid in the scrub, took the pursuers in the rear, and killed 140 of them, including Te Haunga himself, whom he ate as utu for Marore.

Te Rauparaha cultivated the company of strangers, and travelled much to consult famous warriors. On a visit to Ngati-Maru at Thames he was presented with a gun and cartridges. His first noteworthy campaign, a naval expedition against Whaingaroa to avenge a foray upon Raglan, yielded him a decisive victory. His killing of the Waikato chieftain Te Uira in utu for the death of Ngati-Toa had fateful results. In the fighting that followed Te Rauparaha was generally successful, but, lacking muskets, he feared the alliance of Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto. A taua of 1,600 hostile warriors under Te Rauangaanga (father of Te Wherowhero, q.v.) had already made some headway against him, taking the pa of Hikuparaea and investing that of Te Totara, when Te Rauparaha concluded an expedient peace. He tried to form an alliance against Waikato, but Te Wherowhero's understanding with Te Waharoa (q.v.) dashed his hopes, and the prospects of his people became gradually darker. Throughout 1818 and 1819 he was engaged in hostilities with both Waikato and Taranaki. He was also in difficulties with the Ngati-Rahiri, north of Waitara. With the help of Tuwhare, of Roroa, and some muskets he besieged the hostile stronghold, but after a long investment he concluded peace and proceeded as far as Tataraimaka, on the coast southward of New Plymouth. This was taken with great slaughter, Murupaenga also assisting.

Te Rauparaha then returned to Kawhia to gain reinforcements for his southern expeditions. He was joined by Patuone and Nene and by Tuwhare, so that the total force which advanced through Taranaki in Nov 1819 numbered something like 1,000 warriors, with many muskets. The Manukorihi persuaded the northern army to attack Pukerangiora pa but, finding it too strong, they moved on against the central stronghold of the Ngati-Maru, Te Kerikeringa, which was commanded by Tutuhanga. When the defence had lost hope the pa was evacuated, Tutuhanga and Patuwairua being killed. The Ngati-Ruanui and the Nga-Rauru then stood out of the path of the conquering taua, which passed on to Te Anau's pa, Purua, on the Whanganui river. They built a fleet of mokihi to cross the river, took the pa and passed on through the deserted country till they reached Otaki. Having gained information of the movements of the Rangitane, the conquerors invested them in the pa at Hotuiti (Awahou), took it and killed all their prisoners, including the chief. The only important survivors were his son Mahuri and Te Awe Awe (q.v.). Te Rauparaha then joined Nene at Otaki, the island of Kapiti being held by Potau and Kotuku. The next step was the routing of Muaupoko at Waimapihi and the seizure of their canoes. The Ngapuhi contingent had a serious disaster when 100 of their warriors were swamped in their canoes off Sinclair Head. The invaders then gathered at Whanganui-a-Tara (Port Nicholson), and carried on the war against Ngati-Ira with varying success. After pursuing Ngati-Kahungunu and Ngati-Ira as far as Porangahau the northern taua, suffering from disease and hunger, betook themselves to the West Coast, where in Jun 1820 they saw a ship (believed to be the Russian cruiser *Mirny*) passing through the straits. This apparition decided Te Rauparaha to establish himself at Kapiti, and he hastened back to Kawhia to seek support for this new enterprise.

Unfortunately for his plans, the old quarrel with Waikato blazed up again, and a hostile taua numbering 1,000 defeated his 300 at Karaka, on Lake Taharoa. Meanwhile Te Wherowhero captured the Waikawaupa pa on the Mokau river, and then moved to join the victors of Te Karaka. Te Rauparaha made a judicious retirement to his stronghold at Te

Ariwi, protected on all sides by the sea, and laid plans for the southern migration, which was now inevitable. While he was visiting Ngati-Raukawa at Maungatautari to enlist support, their chief Hapi Taurangi died, and Te Rauparaha seized the leadership. He then bargained with Te Wherowhero, offering to give him the Ngati-Toa lands at Kawhia if he would not oppose the migration. He negotiated with Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Tama also for a right-of-way through their Taranaki lands, and arranged for the planting of crops on the way. Late in 1821 Ngati-Toa commenced the march. Te Rauparaha left his wife Te Akau (of Tuhourangi, the relic of his predecessor Hapi Taurangi) at Puohoki, Taranaki; and when he returned from his first journey he found she had borne him a son (Katu, later Tamihana te Rauparaha, q.v.). Beating off the attacks of Ngati-Maniapoto at the mouth of the Awakino, Te Rauparaha made good his escape and harvested the crops at Urenui. His old enemies Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto came in force to besiege him at Pukerangiora, but, making use of one of his famous ambuscades, he defeated them heavily at Motunui, only Te Wherowhero and Te Waharoa making good their escape. Ngati-Awa now came to Te Rauparaha's help, but his journey to Taupo to interview Te Whatanui (of Ngati-Raukawa) and Te Waru was fruitless. The net result of this pilgrimage was the accession of a few Ngapuhi from Pomare's people at Rotorua and about 400 Ngati-Awa under Reretawhangawhanga (the father of Wi Kingi te Rangitake, q.v.).

Accordingly in the autumn of 1822, with a force of 800 men and their families, Te Rauparaha advanced through Taranaki to Patea. There he seized a number of large canoes, which enabled him to transport the women and children by sea. At the Rangitikei mouth the friends of Pikinga (see RANGIHAEATA) came to see the travellers, but the rest of the Ngati-Apa tribe kept out of the way. Once more punishing the Rangitane, whom he encountered near the mouth of the Manawatu, Te Rauparaha pushed on until he reached the Ohau river, where he built a pa and started cultivations. Disregarding a warning, he accepted the invitation of Muaupoko to see their canoes at Papaitonga lake, and was attacked in force at dawn by Muaupoko and Rangitane. Te Rau-

paraha himself escaped with difficulty, but his two daughters were captured and sent to Wairarapa. Te Rauparaha pretended to move northward, and the following morning his uncle, Te Pehi Kupe (q.v.), launched his canoes and captured Kapiti by surprise. Muaupoko having entrenched themselves on artificial islands in the lakes Papaitonga and Horowhenua, Te Rauparaha captured them in detail, only a few escaping. In 1823, Reretawhanga-whanga having left for Taranaki with his Ngati-Awa, Te Rauparaha again appealed to Maungatautari for allies. Te Whatanui had already tried to join him with a taua by way of the East Coast, but had been opposed and driven back by Ngati-Kahungunu. Now a younger chief, Te Ahu Karamu, raised a band of 120 and came south to join Te Rauparaha, and a few more Ngati-Awa came from Taranaki. Te Rauparaha renewed his attack on the Muaupoko, this time at Paekakariki, but his success was spoiled by a raid of Ngati-Kahungunu, who drove him back to Waikanae and then fled across the hills. In face of this new menace Te Rauparaha erected three fortified pas on Kapiti. By treachery he killed the principal chiefs of Rangitane at Hotuiti, after inviting them to parley. Ngati-Apa, under Te Hakeke, made a hurried but successful attack on Rauparaha at Waikanae, killing 60 of his people, including the four daughters of Te Pehi Kupe.

In 1824 Te Raki formed a defensive alliance of Muaupoko, Ngati-Apa and Rangitane, and led a great combined armada against their oppressor at Kapiti. At the north end of the island the surprise failed, and the attackers were driven back. Te Rauparaha then intervened at the centre and threw his forces against Ngati-Apa, who were driven back with great slaughter, many of them being drowned. Their chief Rangimairehau, disdaining to fly, threw himself upon the mercy of Rangihaeata and was killed out of hand. The position at Kapiti gave Te Rauparaha the advantage of a growing intercourse with whalers, from whom he obtained a supply of guns and ammunition. The allotment of the land amongst the various tribes caused some difficulty. Eventually Ngati-Awa were given the country south of the Kukutauaki to Wellington harbour; and Ngati-Raukawa were settled in Horowhenua between the Manawatu and Rangitikei rivers. Te Raupara-

ha was reinforced by a band of Ngati-Tama from Taranaki (under 'Ie Puoho) and Ngati-Raukawa from Maungatautari under Te Ahu Karamu, Te Whatu and Te Whetu. In the years 1827-28 he completed the subjugation of Muaupoko and Rangitane and ravaged the northern shores of the South Island, where he left his own people in possession. He then turned with a taua of 1,000 men to punish Whanganui for their hostility, and after a siege of eight weeks took the pa at Putikiwaranui. Meanwhile Te Pehi Kupe had returned to Kapiti with a good supply of arms obtained in Sydney for gifts given to him in England. Te Rauparaha with his help and the reinforcements of Whatanui renewed his campaign against the South Island tribes. Approaching Rangitoto (D'Urville Island) in 1829 with 300 men, he surprised Rerewaka, and took him prisoner with the loss of 1,000 killed. Then he undertook the long-delayed punitive expedition against Kekerengu (q.v.), whose adulterous conduct was unexpiated. The offender was pursued and defeated at Omihi and many prisoners were taken. On the urgent advice of Te Pehi Kupe, Te Rauparaha agreed to continue the campaign southward and lay siege to the Ngai-Tahu stronghold at Kaiapohia. But fugitives, preceding them, had warned Ngai-Tahu of the coming raid, and the pa was well prepared. Feigning friendship, Te Rauparaha permitted some of his chiefs to enter the pa. In the hope that they would be able to detect weaknesses in the defences. The plot being suspected, the defenders turned upon the chiefs and killed eight of them, including Pokaitara and Te Pehi Kupe. Te Rauparaha, seeing the futility of persevering with the force he then commanded, withdrew to Kapiti to await his time.

Towards the end of the following year (1830) the brig *Elizabeth* touched at Kapiti and her captain (Stewart) entered into an infamous bargain to purchase a full cargo of flax by taking some of the Ngati-Toa incognito to Akaroa to seize Tamaiharanui. The *Elizabeth* sailed on 29 Oct with 170 Ngati-Toa warriors hidden on board, including Rangihaeata, Te Hiko and Tungia. The ruse succeeded completely. Tamaiharanui, his wife Te Whe, his daughter Nga-roimata and a large number of Ngai-Tahu were taken prisoner, and the pa

of Tahapuneke, in Akaroa harbour, was stormed without difficulty. Tamaiharanui saved his daughter from a worse fate by strangling her in her sleep. For six weeks the *Elizabeth* lay off Kapiti awaiting her full cargo. Then the prisoners were handed over to the Ngati-Toa and the brig sailed. The Ngai-Tahu chief was killed by Te Pehi's chief widow Tiaia, and the rest of the prisoners were massacred and eaten.

Te Rauparaha now prepared an expedition of 750 men (Ngati-Toa, Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Raukawa), all well armed with muskets and fully provisioned to proceed to Kaiapohia. The first division landed at the Wairau and marched overland to the mouth of the Waipara river, the rest joining them by sea. The pa at Kaiapohia was found to be occupied mainly by women and children and old people, the rest having gone to Whareraupo to bid farewell to the southern chief Taiaroa. Two attacks having failed, Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata decided to besiege the pa. Taiaroa, apprised of the danger, returned with his men and took charge of the defence, which continued for three months. Three saps were driven towards the palisade, one by each tribe, and faggots were piled up in the hope of burning it. At this stage Taiaroa, seeing the hopelessness of the position, withdrew with his men to create a diversion in Otago. The tohungas of both sides prayed for a favourable wind for the conflagration. No sooner had the faggots been kindled than the breeze turned against the defenders, and only 200 escaped from the ruined stronghold. Then Te Rauparaha turned his attention to the pas of Ripapa (Lyttelton harbour) and Onawe (Akaroa). The avenging Ngai-Tahu from Otago, under Tuhawaiki, overtook the retreating conquerors at Cape Campbell, and surprised them with the rapidity of their march. Te Rauparaha himself had to swim off to his canoes and escaped with difficulty to Cloudy Bay. Losing no time in gathering reinforcements of Ngati-Awa from Wairau, Te Rauparaha turned in pursuit, and overtook Tuhawaiki at the Flaxbourne river. About 140 Ngati-Awa were destroyed in trying to cut off Tuhawaiki's retreat, and after a drawn battle the southern chief made good his escape to Kaikoura. When at length he got back to Kapiti Te Rauparaha found Ngati-

Awa, Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Ruanui quarrelling over their land boundaries on the Manawatu coast. Enfeebled by his recent campaigns, he appealed to Te Heuheu (q.v.) to settle the dispute. The Taupo chief brought a taua of 800 warriors and soundly defeated the Ngati-Awa at Pakakutu, at the mouth of the Otaki river. (Takarangi being killed). Peace was then concluded, but Te Rauparaha, uneasy at the troubled aspect of affairs, prepared to lead his followers back to the north with "Te Heuheu. At the Ohau river he yielded to the appeals of his people to remain. But his campaigning days were over. He again visited the settlements in the South Island, and seems once more to have had a narrow escape from the daring Tuhawaiki. Later a taua from "Otago under Taiaroa encountered him at Waitohi and retreated intact after a few days' fighting. In the north there was again an opportunity for revenge against Rangitane. Te Rauparaha destroyed a force under Mahuri, but suffered the loss of 60 of his followers at the hands of Te Awe Awe. At the tangi following the death of Rangihaeata's mother. (Waitohi), disputes arose between Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Awa which Te Rauparaha did nothing to compose, and he was a satisfied spectator at the bloody battle of Kuititanga, in which Ngati-Raukawa were beaten, on the very day (6 Oct 1839) that the *Tory* hove to off Kapiti to see him.

On the following morning the New Zealand Company's ship fired a salute of heavy guns in honour of Te Rauparaha. On the 24th, after protracted negotiations, both Te Rauparaha and Te Hiko signed the agreement of sale of territory about Kapiti and in the South Island. Te Rauparaha insisted upon receiving guns and munitions of war in payment; Te Hiko had his mind set upon clothing and tools. On 14 May 1840, Te Rauparaha signed the Treaty of Waitangi in the presence of the Rev Henry Williams, and on 19 Jun he signed again in the presence of Major Bunbury. He always insisted that he had sold nothing in the South Island except D'Urville Island and Blind Bay, and when the Wairau dispute arose in 1843 he warned Captain Wakefield not to persist in the survey, which he opposed deliberately and consistently at every stage. On 1 Jun he went with Rangihaeata and burned the surveyors' huts throughout the disputed area. Dur-

ing the fatal argument with the magistrates from Nelson he was firm but conciliatory; his resistance to violence only broke down upon Rangihaeata's impassioned demand for utu for the death of Te Rongo. Mter the disaster Te Rauparaha proceeded to Waikanae and Otaki to explain the affair to his people. Feeling rash, and the truculent counsels of Rangihaeata (in which Te Rauparaha appears occasionally to have participated) were only neutralised by the influence of the Rev O. Hadfield and Wiremū Kingi te Rangitake. Te Rauparaha contemplated retiring into the interior to consolidate his forces in view of an attack by the troops, and he made conciliatory overtures to Ngai-tahu in the South Island. The incident was closed on 12 Feb 1844 when Governor FitzRoy, with Major Richmond and William Spain, visited Waikanae and heard the chief's story of the occurrences. FitzRoy declared that the pakeha were undoubtedly in the wrong and, much as he deplored the murder of the prisoners after they had surrendered, he decided not to exact punishment.

Sir George Grey, who took office as Governor in Nov 1845, was not able, in the unsettled state of native affairs, to feel any confidence in the conduct of the Ngati-Toa chiefs. After the attack in the Hutt Valley by Rangihaeata, he came reluctantly to the conclusion that Te Rauparaha's conduct was not above suspicion, and that his influence was liable to fan the flames of sedition. In this belief he took the extreme step of having him arrested at his pa at Taupo (Plimmerton) and taken on board H.M.S. *Driver* (23 Jul 1846). He was transferred to the *Calliope*, and kept a prisoner, but was never brought to trial. Mter ten months in the *Calliope* he was allowed to live in Auckland on security being given by Te Whero-whero and Nene for his good behaviour. A great gathering of Hauraki chiefs was held in his honour in Sep 1847.

Te Rauparaha then petitioned the Governor to allow him to return to his own people, and he was taken thither in Jan 1848 in H.M.S. *Inflexible*, the Governor and Lady Grey, Te Wherowhero, Taraia and other chiefs being also on board. He landed on 16 Jan at Otaki, where thereafter he lived very quietly, and where ttle Ngati-Raukawa built a fine clmrch. He saw mucll of Hadfield, but he was never

baptised. He died at Otaki on 27 Nov 1849 and was buried opposite the church.

Te Rauparaha was rather short in stature, but very powerful. According to Mundy, his countenance was 'repulsive beyond description.' He had an aquiline profile, retreating forehead and overhanging upper lip. At 60 he was hale and stout and looked much younger. Hadfield considered him a man of high intellect.

G.B.O.P., 1840/238, 1844/556; *Hist. Rec. Aust.*, xvi, 237; Stack; Shortland; E. J. Wakefield; Buick, *Marlborough* and *Old New Zealander* (p); Thomson; McKillop; Cowan; Bevan (p); H. T. Kemp in *N.z. Herald*, 23 Mar 1901.

TE RAUPARAHA, TAMIHANA or KATU (1819-76), a Ngati-Toa chief, was the younger son of Te Rauparaha (q.v.) and his Tubourangi" wife Akau, and was born at Turangarua pa, Puohoki, during the migration.

A young man of singular strength of character and steadfastness of purpose, Katu was early impressed with the benefits of Christianity, by meeting Marahau (q.v.), a native who had studied in the mission school at Paihia. Determined to adopt Christianity, he and Matene te Whiwhi (q.v.) studied with Marahau and then decided to ask for a missionary for their people. With this object they wished in 1839 to go to Bay of Islands, but the older chiefs, fearing reprisals by their ancient enemies, refused permission. Katu and Te Whiwhi then smuggled themselves on board a whaler. Arrived at the Bay, they found to their mortification that the Church Missionary Society had just ordered the concentration of its efforts in the northern part of New Zealand. Their persistent appeal, however, so impressed Octavius Hadfield (q.v.), a young catechist, that he volunteered for the dangerous service, and in Nov 1839 he was installed by ttle Rev Henry Williams at the new station at Waikanae. At his baptism by Selwyn in 1843 Katu took the name of Tamihana (Thomson). He and Matene zealously studied the Gospel and became the first native apostles to the South Island. At Hadfield's suggestion they went there in a small open boat, in which they sailed 1,000 miles round the coasts.

In 1844 Tamihana accompanied the Bishop in his visitation of ttle South Island in Tubawaiki's schooner *Perseverance*. Selwyn found

him 'good-hearted and earnest, not very adroit in controversy, and sometimes a little overbearing.' He received some education at St John's College, Auckland. Tall, handsome, active, and mentally alert, Tamihana dressed well, and strove in every way to show his people an example of civilised life. He formed a club the members of which engaged themselves to live in English houses, with rooms and chimneys, and to wear European clotlung. He was ordained as a clergyman, and when his father returned from his exile in Jan 1848 Tamihana met him dressed in clerical garb. In 1848 he and other chiefs gave a considerable area of land as an endowment for the education of children of the Ngati-Toa, Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Raukawa people. In 1849 he was appointed a native assessor.

In 1852 Tamihana visited England with Bishop Williams, was presented to Her Majesty and raised money for a college at Porima. While there he conceived the idea of a single king for the native race in New Zealand and he so strongly imbued Matene te Whiwhi with it that in the following year (1853) the latter made his first attempt to unite ttle Maori tribes. Tamihana proposed to call ttle King 'ingiki: a title which he had noticed in his reading of Robertson's *History of America*. On returning to New Zealand he became a successful sheepowner. In 1869 he visited the South Island with Governor Bowen, Wi Tako, and Mete Kingi in H.M.S. *Challenger*. His wife, Ruth, died on 10 Jul 1870, and Tamihana on 22 Oct 1876.

Buick, *Old New Zealander*; Selwyn, *Annals*; Carleton; Travers; Godley, *Letters*; Bevan (p); H. F. McKillop.

RAWLINS, CHARLES CAMPION (1846-1918) was born in Liverpool and educated at Allesley Park and Cheltenham. He had served portion of his articles as a mining engineer when his health broke down. Arriving in New Zealand by the *Mermaid* in 1875, he joined ttle geodetic survey on the West Coast, and afterwards qualified and followed the profession of mining engineer. He was manager of the Island Block Goldmining Co. in Otago. (F.G.S., London.) A convinced freetrader, Rawlins contested the Tuapeka seat in 1893 and 1896, and in 1898 was elected. He was defeated by J.

Bennet in 1899, and did not regain a seat. He died on 10 Jul 1918.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Oct 1918; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908.

RAWSON, THOMAS EDWARD (1810-79) was born at Windsolt, in Leicestershire, and received his medical education at Kings College, London, of which he became an associate in 1841. After practising for some years at Kegworth, in his native county, and at Notting Hill (London), he came to New Zealand in the *Mary Ann* (1858) and settled on a farm at Tataraimaka, in Taranaki. There his wife died. Native troubles caused him to retire to New Plymouth with his family, but he was appointed surgeon to the militia and volunteers (Jun 1859), and was present at Waireka and other engagements. At the close of hostilities in 1861 he resigned his commission and moved with his family to Auckland, but being disappointed there he returned to Taranaki and was gazetted coroner (1862). He acquired an extensive practice. In 1863, on the renewal of hostilities, he was appointed provincial and hospital surgeon, and he held both appointments until retiring from practice in 1878. Rawson enjoyed the confidence of settlers over a wide district on whom he conferred a great benefit by the publication of his 'Medical Hints' in the *Taranaki Almanac*. He was a deeply religious man. While in England he was an adherent of the Congregational Church, being deacon of the Horbury chapel in Notting Hill. After coming to New Zealand he was a staunch Wesleyan. Rawson's second wife (d. 10 Nov 1907) was Sarah Hannah, daughter of the Rev J. Whiteley (q.v.). Rawson died on 14 Dec 1879.

Skinner, *Pioneer Medical Men of Taranaki* (p); *Taranaki News*, 20 Dec 1879.

READ, GEORGE EDWARD (1816-78) was employed by W. B. Rhodes in his early activities in New Zealand. He engaged in whaling on ttle East Coast and resided at Te Mawhai, near Tokomaru, but about 1845 he settled in Poverty Bay, and a few years later bought out an American trader. He erected a store on the banks of the Turanganui river and became the leader of the settlement, which gradually developed into Gisborne. Read ran a number of small vessels in the coastal trade and to Auckland, and took a prominent part in the days

when settlers commenced to arrive in Poverty Bay. Many families he established on farms on deferred payments, for which he provided the money. At the time of Te Kooti's war he showed great spirit in defending the settlement and keeping open sea communications. When a wharf was required at Gisborne, he offered to erect one if permitted to collect dues to reimburse himself. The Auckland provincial government accepted the offer and the contract was carried out.

In 1876 Read was returned as M.H.R. for East Coast, but unseated on petition on the ground of irregularity. He died on 23 Feb 1878.

*Appr. H.R.*, 1876; W. L. Williams; *eyel. N.z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 25 Feb, 4 Mar 1878; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924.

READ, THOMAS GABRIEL (1824-94). Of the early life of Read there is little to record. He was born in Tasmania in 1824, the son of Captain G. F. Read, who came to Hobart in 1816, and received a land grant which the family still holds. He was well educated, and had some facility in the writing of verse, with which he amused himself in moments of idleness. His people seem to have been well-to-do, and Read himself had town property in Hobart.

In 1849, when quite a young man, he heard of the discoveries of gold in California, and with two others secured a small schooner and went thither. Their luck was not sufficiently attractive, and they sailed from San Francisco with a varied cargo to trade amongst the islands. It is said that the vessel was wrecked at Hawaii, and that Read found his way back to Hobart about two years and a-half after leaving. A brother was in the Western district of Victoria as a runholder at Lal Lal, near Buninyong. Gold had just been discovered in that district, and before long Read was on the Victorian fields-at Fryers Creek, Mount Alexander, Bendigo, and Mount Kerong. He made no fortune here, either, but he enlarged his knowledge of the ways and interests of a mining population, and took his part in their affairs. The clash at Eureka took place while Read was in Victoria. Though he was not involved in it, he left Victoria with feelings of bitterness against the squatters.

He appears to have been back in Hobart for some time when rumours reached him of the

discovery of gold in small quantities in the rivers of Otago. He first heard of the discoveries in the Mataura river in 1856, and thought of coming across, but the opportunity did not present itself. In 1858 Black Peter (q.v.) washed some sand in the Tokomairiro river, and showed the dust to J. T. Thomson (q.v.). Later in the year Thomson himself found traces in the Lindis river. In Jan 1861 Read took passage in the schooner *Don Pedro II*, which was carrying horses from Hobart to Otago. She reached Port Chalmers on 8 Feb, and proceeded to Dunedin three days later. As she lay alongside the wharf, Read watched the ship *Cashmere* disembarking a carriage which had been purchased in England by a son of John Jones, and he struck up an acquaintance with Jones which ripened in later months. Read lost no time in getting on the road for the Mataura, wearing a red shirt and carrying a noticeably small swag. When he arrived at Tokomairiro he encountered John Hardy (q.v.) mowing a field of Chevalier barley at his place at Helensbrook. Read was obviously an educated man, with a ripe experience, and Hardy was attracted to him. He told Read that Leatmonth, a Victorian miner, had been at Tuapeka, and had stated that he would soon have 10,000 miners on that field. Read also heard of the finds of Black Peter in the Tokomairiro river, and in the hills towards Tuapeka. Next day he left on his way to the Mataura. He walked as far as the Clutha ferry, where he had a meal and heard discouraging accounts of the prospects. After proceeding four or five miles southward, he returned to Tokomairiro. There he remained for some little time, employed by Hardy in digging a drain through a swamp. In the evenings they continued their discussion of the goldfields, which Hardy was confident would be discovered and would cure the economic depression.

On 11 Mar, just a month after his arrival in Otago, Read sailed from Dunedin for Lyttelton in the *Omeo* to visit the property of his cousin, John Terry Murphy, at the Cust. A fellow passenger in the cabin was John McLean (q.v.), on whose property were the Lindis diggings; and there is little doubt that Read and McLean discussed them. While he was in Canterbury the diggings were on every tongue, and many parties were being formed

to go there either on foot or by steamer through Oamaru. To Read the prospect was not sufficiently enticing; and there is no evidence that he ever went to north Otago. In Canterbury he spent some time with Robert L. Higgins (q.v.), whom his cousin had sent from Victoria in 1851 to take up the Cust properties. At a later date Read sent Higgins a packet of seeds of Tasmanian forest trees collected by the botanist Dickenson, in the hope that they would help to clothe the bare hillsides of the Cust valley. After spending a month or six weeks in Canterbury Read returned to Otago. Early in May, if not before, he was back in Tokomairiro. One day John Fischer, a German, came to Helensbrook and showed Read some gold he had obtained at the Woolshed. This was the first Otago gold that he had seen. The harvest being now over, Read took Edwin Hardy with him to the Canada bush, where they found traces of gold. On 9 May Read attended a meeting at which Alexander McMaster, a candidate for the superintendency, addressed the electors of Tokomairiro. Read disliked him because he was a squatter, and joined issue with him over statements he made about the Squatters' Association of Victoria. John Lillie Gillies, who had also been on the Victorian goldfields for some years, was at the meeting, and he afterwards got into touch with Read.

According to Read's statement and Pyke's book (1887), it was due to the enthusiasm of John Hardy, who was a member of the Provincial Council, that Read eventually undertook a serious expedition. Hardy was the one man who firmly believed that payable gold would be found and that Read was the man to find it. •There are riches yet to come from the wool: he said, •but I am afraid that they may come too late for many. What we want is a good goldfield, and we all believe it is somewhere about here. I believe if you would only try you are the man to get it: They discussed raising a subscription to equip Read, but the enthusiasm of the settlers was as limited as their resources; Hardy was the only one who backed his belief in this direction. The superintendency election was held, and Read walked into Dunedin before 24 May bearing the results of the polling in Tokomairiro. Major Richardson was elected, and Read, who had been struck by

the Superintendent's views on the welfare of the province, made a point of calling upon him. Richardson remarked that Strode had reported rather despondently about the Lindis. Read said he had practically decided to give up the search, as he was not very sanguine, but that Hardy seemed to think he would discover a field. Richardson asked him on his way back to distribute some papers to settlers who had supported his candidature, and warned him that if he did go prospecting he should not take dogs with him or get foul of the runholders, who were touchy about prospecting on their land. When Read got back to Tokomairiro Hardy was still sanguine, and offered to send his son Edwin with him if he would go prospecting. Mrs Hardy baked him some bread, and eventually they set off. Proceeding to Peter Robertson's to ascertain where Black Peter had been working, Read went up the river to a place where James Smith's cattle had broken down the banks. Here, with spade, tin dish, and butcher's knife, he set to work, and before long he had about seven ounces of clean gold. That night he spent at Munro's, and next day started on his return to Tokomairiro. About 10 a.m. on Sunday, 2 Jun, he reached Helensbrook, and displayed his gold on the table of the sitting room. •

On the strength of that expedition Read felt justified in announcing to the Superintendent the discovery of a payable goldfield. He wrote on 4 Jun that he had been 10 days on the exploration, and had travelled 35 miles inland, examining the ravines and gullies of the Tuapeka and Waitahuna. From the outset he took an entirely unselfish attitude, and Hardy advised him as to the wording of the letter. •Although being able to work secretly for a time would greatly benefit me: he wrote, •I feel it my duty to impart these facts. These communications are made in confidence that my secret is safe with Major Richardson, but if a disclosure is of any benefit to the public interest you are at liberty to treat this as a public communication to the Superintendent. . . At all events, I leave myself as a client under your Honor's patronage, convinced that by so doing I take the most certain course to ensure the benefit to which I may some day be considered entitled for this important discovery: He advised Richardson that if the field proved to be

READ

a good one the flow of population must go through Waiholā and Tokomairiro, and not through Oamaru. A young man named Brooks, who worked for Hardy, was sent into Dunedin with the letter, and with an order from Hardy for an outfit of shovels, picks, and gum-boots for three men. While waiting for the outfit, Hardy and Read rode out towards Tuapeka, and Hardy had the satisfaction of seeing a little gold washed at the Woolshed. The equipment arrived by the next schooner and the expedition was fitted (tut at Helensbrook, tools, tent, and tucker for some months being loaded on a bullock dray to be driven by Hardy's eldest son, Thomas. The miners were Read, Edwin Hardy, and Brooks. They went out by way of Adams Flat, over Mount Stuart, and down to the Waitahuna, then up to Peter Robertson's, and finally reached the Tuapeka gully. Next day the dray left for Tokomairiro, and the miners, carrying their equipment, tramped up the gully to the spot where Read had found gold. They pitched their tent, made a sod chimney and a bed of ferns, and turned in. On 11 Jun Read paid a visit to Peter Robertson, to whom he showed a handful of gold. A fortnight later the rush began. In a single day 1,000 men arrived on the field.

On 28 Jun Hardy, now a member of the provincial executive, announced from the ministerial benches in the Provincial Council the discoveries made by Read, in whose company he had prospected country' about 31 miles long by five broad, and in every hole they had sunk they had found the precious metal.' On the same day the Superintendent transmitted to the Council a message stating that the prospects indicated the existence of gold in large quantities and easily obtainable, and that the reports would necessitate the adoption of immediate measures for the administration of the field. He asked to be invested with unusual powers. The Council responded generously, thus enabling the Superintendent to make adequate provision for the arrival of the 'New Iniquity.' Even before 24 Jun the field had been called 'Gabriel's Gully.' Read's party of three in 14 days obtained 112 oz of gold. In Dec 1861 there were 27,163 people in Otago, as compared with 12,700 a year earlier.

Read had no desire to participate in the wealth at hand. Once the field became known,

READ

his main concern was to place at the disposal of the miners the experience he had gained in California and Victoria. He left the working of his claim to Hardy and Brooks, and spent his time showing new arrivals round. The first essential was some means of controlling affairs on the field. On 7 Jul a meeting was called at which J. L. Gillies presided. Gillies spoke very warmly of the unselfish manner in which Read had made his secret public for the benefit of the province. Read gave a long address to the miners, most of whom were amateurs, advising them of the experience on other fields, how to go about their work, and how to govern themselves. He urged them to have small claims so as to give everyone a chance, and to select from amongst themselves a committee of responsible men. He was elected one of the committee, of which Gillies was chairman, and he was asked to act as umpire for the settlement of disputes. A small news-sheet was published on the field by Thomas Birch (q.v.), and Read contributed a leading article to one of its early issues. He used his experience to protect the miners. As the banks offered only a low price for gold in the early days, he sent a parcel on his own account for assay at the Sydney mint. The report showed the miners what they ought to get for their dust, but Read had to bear the cost of the experiment. He imported a large quantity of seeds from Tasmania, which he presented to the Superintendent in the hope that they would be usefully distributed in the province. Read was also keenly interested in the moral welfare of the new community and took steps, with J. L. Gillies, to provide for Sunday services. The first two services were taken by Gillies himself, and thereafter clergymen from different churches in Otago took turns to visit the fields. For this purpose Read contributed £50 from his own pocket. He had deep religious convictions, by which he was prompted in most of the relations of life.

Having seen the first field established, Read lost no time in continuing his explorations. Receiving a regular salary from the government, he started on 18 Jul, with the Superintendent and Captain Baldwin, and by following up the river discovered the Waitahuna field. In Sep Read made explorations west of the Molyneux, finding a little gold in the Waipāli

READ

and Pomallaka. He tried the headwaters of the Waipori, and the sources of the Waitahuna and the Tuapeka, and then went south to the Ullibrella range. Writing to the Superintendent on 6 Nov, he said: 'Mter I had the pleasure of seeing you in the front ranks fighting nobly for the cause of humanity, a fortnight had not elapsed from that time when I became the sole possessor of a secret which provided a panacea for the evils which were impending over the province. I believe in the daily interposition of an over-ruling Providence. I felt I had been His agent and took the course which has led to the present results.' He declared himself unqualified to prosecute his searches further, and asked to be relieved of further duties. Read had neglected many opportunities to make his own fortune, and the Superintendent suggested to the Council on 4 Nov that 'such recognition of Mr Read's services should be made as would be an honour to the province and a fitting reward for such disinterested and generous service.' When the Council was asked to vote £500 J. L. Gillies proposed that the amount should be £1,000. The higher sum was rejected, but the £500 was agreed to without division. In May 1862 Richardson again brought the matter before the Council. A further sum of £500 was then voted. Meanwhile Hardy had recommended certain measures with a view to settling the miners as permanent residents of the province.

Read left Otago, spent some time in the North Island, and probably visited Cust again. He states in his recollections that he prospected the likely-looking sandbanks of 'the noble rivers of the Wairarapa.' He later returned to Hobart. Edwin Hardy says that he was in Otago early in 1864, when he entertained the All England cricket team at a champagne supper. He is said also to have visited the New Zealand Exhibition (1865), when he was awarded a bronze medal 'as the first person to give practical value to the discovery of gold in Otago.' At a later date he appears to have married. His recollections were partly written in 1887 and partly later. His last years he spent in an institution at Sandy Bay, near Hobart, and he died there on 31 Oct 1894.

It was at the instance of Pyke that Read started to write his recollections, the first part being produced probably in 1886. This appears

READING

in Pyke's book on gold discoveries in Otago, the balance being preserved in the Dunedin Public Library.

Family information from G. F. Read; T. G. Read, *op. cit.*; E. Hardy in *Otago Witness*, Sep 1929; *Otago P.C. PTOC.*; McIndoe; Acland; Pyke (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Oct 1930 (p); *Hobart Mercury*, I, 5 Nov 1894.

READER, HENRY ELMHIRST (1826-85) was born at Naples, and entered the Royal Military College at Sandhurst about 1843, receiving his commission in the 39th Regiment. Exchanging into the 14th Light Dragoons, of which he was for five years adjutant, he saw much service in India. In 1848 he participated in the pursuit of the Sikh army until its surrender at Rawalpindi. Reader then returned to England (1855) and, exchanging into the 12th Lancers, served in the Crimea, mostly in command of a troop. He received the Crimea and Turkish medals, but declined to wear them as he was never under fire. Back in England in 1856, the regiment was ordered at once to Madras, and had marched almost to Bangalore when it was diverted to Bombay and fought with Whitlock's column to Hyderabad. In 1860 Reader returned to England. Two years later he sold out and, coming to Canterbury late in 1863, took up the Teviotdale station. Owing to trouble with scab, he abandoned it three years later. In Jun 1867 he was appointed to command the Canterbury militia and volunteers, and six months later was transferred to Wellington. In Jan 1878 he was acting Under-secretary for Defence (confirmed in Mar 1879) and in Dec 1879 he was appointed also commissioner of Armed Constabulary. These posts he held at the time of his death (29 Sep 1885).

Acland; *N.Z. Times*, 30 Sep 1885; *Lyttelton Times*, 7 Oct.

READING, JOHN BROWN (1812-76) was born in Birmingham and came to New Zealand in the *Duke of Roxburgh* (1840). A carpenter and builder, he worked at his trade in Wellington for some years and then settled on a farm at Karori. He represented Wellington Country in the Provincial Council (1856-57), and Karori and Makara (1865-69). Reading died on 2 Nov 1876.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Times*, 16 Nov 1875.

READY

READY, WILLIAM (1862-1927) was born in London of Roman Catholic parents who died while he was young. At six years of age he earned his livelihood in London at street tumbling and as boot-black and crossing-sweeper. A city missionary sent him to George Muller's orphan home in Bristol, from which he twice absconded in his first year. He was apprenticed to a flour-miller named Perryman at Chagford, Devon (a local preacher of the Bible Christian Church). Through his influence Ready became a local preacher and his manifest gifts led to his call to the ministry. He was sent to Shebbear College, Devon, and in 1885 began his ministry at Hatherly. In Feb 1887 he sailed for New Zealand, and served in Christchurch and at Banks Peninsula (under the Rev John Orchard). He married (1890) Miss Fanny Luxton. In that year he went to Dunedin to inaugurate work for the Bible Christian Church. He and his wife held their first meetings in the streets, soon gathering crowds about them. Ready then engaged first the Rattray Street Hall and later the Lyceum Theatre. Each in turn proved too small and he engaged the Garrison Hall, where every Sunday he preached to from 1,200 to 1,800 people. His work rapidly developed into the Dunedin Methodist central mission. In 1896 the Bible Christian Church united with the Wesleyan Methodist Church. In 1899 Ready was transferred to the Pitt Street church, Auckland. He was elected president of the Methodist conference in 1912. He later served at Christchurch and in Invercargill. In 1917 he was chaplain with the New Zealand Expeditionary Force in the hospital ship *Maheno*.

Ready was a strong and attractive personality, a lover of the poor, and a trusted counsellor of the rich. He had a tireless passion for social reform. He was superannuated in 1926 and died on 7 Sep 1927. His life story has been recorded by the Rev Lewis H. Court in a book *Ready, Aye Ready*. M.A.R.P.

REDMAYNE, ROBERT (1822-84), came to New Zealand from San Francisco in 1863, and settled in Dunedin. In 1865, with his brother Thomas, who had preceded him by some years, and who was a member of the town board, he published the *Dunedin Punch*, in which they displayed some ability as humorists. Thomas,

REDWOOD

who was responsible for the illustrations, made many caricatures of members of the Otago Provincial Council. Only 41 numbers were issued. Thomas left New Zealand for California in 1874, and Robert died in Sep 1884.

Hocken, *Bibliog.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Oct 1884.

REDWOOD, CHARLES (1837-1915) was a son of Henry Redwood (1794-1873) and came to Nelson with his parents in the *George Fyfe*. He had a property in Marlborough for many years and was a member of the Provincial Council for Lower Wairau from 1874 till the abolition of the provinces. He went to Queensland some years later and had a sheep station on the Darling Downs till his death (on 3 Oct 1915).

Marlborough P.C., minutes; *Brisbane Courier*, 4 Oct 1915; *Marlborough Express*, 5 Oct.

REDWOOD, FRANCIS (1839-1935) was born at Lower Hanyard, Staffordshire, the son of Henry Redwood (1794-1873, q.v.), his mother being one of the Gilberts of Penkrudge. In 1842 he came to Nelson in the *George Fyfe* with his parents and the rest of the family, who settled at Waimea West. As a pupil at Father Garin's school, he showed such promise that his parents were prevailed upon to give him a better education. He was taken with some others for a week to board in Nelson with Father Garin to prepare him for his first communion, and it was to this priest that Redwood owed his decision to become a priest. He was in fact the first New Zealand boy to elect for the Catholic priesthood. For more than three years he remained as a boarder with Father Garin, going home to Stafford Place, Waimea, once a month. While at school he was taught by another pupil to play the violin and it became his lifelong pastime and accomplishment. He gained a good mastery of Latin and French under Garin, his assistant (Moreau), and Brother Claude Bertrand, and in his holidays he worked in the harvest field and did other farm duties.

In 1854 Redwood sailed in the brig *Mountain Maid* for Sydney, and thence in the *Lady Ann* for London, Father Comte being a fellow passenger. He became a student in 1856 at St Mary's Marist College at St Chamond, in the department of Loire, where by hard work he

REDWOOD

found himself capable of holding a place about the middle of the class. At the end of his course (1860), he shared with another student most of the prizes and won the award in rhetoric for French discourses. He then entered the scholasticate of the Marist Fathers, at Montbel, near Toulon, where he formed friendships with John Ireland (later Archbishop of St Paul, Minnesota) and Thomas O'Gorman (later Bishop of Sioux Falls). Having made his year's novitiate at St Foy, near Lyons, Redwood was appointed professor of Latin and Greek at St Mary's College, Dundalk. He made his profession in the Society of St Mary on 6 Jan 1864; was ordained in 1865; and a short time afterwards raised to the priesthood at Maynooth, county Kildare. He then studied for the licentiate of theology and spent a winter in Rome for the sake of his health.

Returning to Ireland in 1869, he was appointed almost immediately professor of dogma to the Marist scholastics in Dublin. On the death of Bishop Viard (1872) a vacancy occurred in the bishopric of Wellington, and Redwood was called to the episcopate, the first New Zealand bishop (as he was later to be the first Marist archbishop). He was consecrated by Cardinal Manning at St Anne's, Spitalfields, London, on 17 Mar 1874 and in Nov took charge of a see which then extended from Wellington to New Plymouth and Wairoa in the north and to the Waitaki river in the south. At the time of his becoming Bishop there were 31 priests, of whom two were invalids and two were resting in Sydney; 56 churches and 34 schools.

Redwood threw himself with zeal and energy into the development of his diocese. The creation of the bishopric of Christchurch in 1887 synchronised with his own elevation to the status of Archbishop and Metropolitan of New Zealand. He was Archbishop for almost 50 years, and witnessed a great increase in the priesthood and institutions of the Church. One of his notable achievements was the establishment of St Patrick's College in Wellington; he watched over the establishment of many other institutions, including those of Mother Aubert; and took a warm interest in higher education outside the purely denominational sphere. He was a member of the senate of the University of New Zealand (1877-1903). At the celebra-

REDWOOD

tion of the golden jubilee of his episcopate, in 1924, Redwood was created assistant at the Pontifical throne. He published in 1922 a small booklet of his *Reminiscences Of Early Days in New Zealand*. He died on 3 Jan 1935.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; Redwood, *op. cit.* (p); *ATchbp. Redwood's Diamond Jubilee* (p); *Evening Post*, 26 Feb 1934, 4 Jan 1935 (p); *The Dominion*, 26 Jan; *N.Z. Life*, 10 Dec 1927 (p); *The Month*, Jan 1935 (p).

REDWOOD, HENRY (1794-1873) was born on the estate of the Cliffords at Tixall, Staffordshire. He was a man of great physical strength and brilliant mentality. In 1842 he sold his farm in Staffordshire and sailed for New Zealand with his wife and eight children in the *GeOl'ge Fyfe*. Taking up land at Waimea (Nelson), he and his sons worked for some years two farms (Stafford Place and Hedgford), and also operated a flourmill. He was one of the first settlers (about 1854) to take up land in Marlborough. The Bluff run, upon which he started, included what were later Ugbrooke, Vernon and Wither Hills, and he was one of the first to drive sheep there from Nelson.

Redwood was a member of the Nelson Provincial Council for Waimea West (1859). He died on 19 Jun 1873. (His sons included HENRY REDWOOD, THOMAS REDWOOD and FRANCIS REDWOOD, q.v.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; F. Redwood, *Reminiscences*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *The Colonist*, 24 Jun 1873; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 11 Dec 1926 (p).

REDWOOD, HENRY (1822-1907) was born at Tixall, in Staffordshire, and was the son of Henry Redwood (q.v.), with whom he came to Nelson in the *George Fyfe* (1842). After farming with his father at Waimea, he took up a large farm at Spring Creek (1863), where he established a flourmill (1865). In 1863 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Waimea West, which he represented till 1869, being a member of the executive (1865-67). Brought up amongst horses, he owned and rode a mare called Tixall Lass, and other horses before coming to Nelson. His farm at Spring Creek became famous not only as an agricultural estate, but also from the fine horses that he bred there. Hedgford, his father's place at Waimea, was cropped heavily and cultivated by the most modern methods. At Spring Creek the son kept

## REDWOOD

up the tradition, being one of the first settlers to use the traction engine, steam plough and reaper and binder.

In 1865, when he moved to Marlborough, he transferred the stables and stud from Hedgford to Spring Creek, where he had many years of success on the turf. Redwood began his stud with seven imported stallions (including Sir Hercules) and 20 mares. Amongst the horses which he bred or owned were Manuka, Strop, Peeress, Lurline, Bay Middleton, Zoe, Zingara, Le Loup and Flora McIvor. He frequently took horses to race in Australia. Redwood was himself a fine horseman, and a first-class shot at deer and pigeons, winning many competitions in Australia and New Zealand as a gunshot. He also sailed his own yacht, the *Torea*. He was a member of the Nelson Provincial Council for Tuamarina (1868). He died on 9 Nov 1907.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*, 1863-69; Marlborough P.C., minutes, 1868; F. Redwood; *Cycl. N.L.*, v; Chadwick (p); *Marlborough Express*, 12, 13 Nov 1907.

REDWOOD, JOSEPH HENRY (1847-1918) was the son of Henry Redwood (1822-1907). He was born in Nelson, educated at the public school there, and became a jockey at the age of 10, riding his father's horses for seven years. He then went to assist on the family farm at the Wairau, and in 1870, with his brothers, took over the whole property and flourmill. The mill was driven by water power and adopted the roller system in 1885. Redwood was chairman of the Spring Creek road board for 25 years, and of the river board for 12. In 1874 he was elected to the Marlborough Provincial Council for Spring Creek, which he represented until the provinces were abolished. He was a member also of the Marlborough education board, the Wairau hospital and charitable aid board, the Marlborough land board and land purchase board, and various other local bodies.

*Cycl. N.L.*, v; *Marlborough Express*, 9 Sep 1918.

REDWOOD, THOMAS (1833-1918) was born in Staffordshire, the son of Henry Redwood (1794-1873). Educated at Upper Hanyard and Tixall College, Stafford, and at Ward's school in Nelson, he was brought up to farming, and in 1848 drove a flock of sheep to Wairau. Four years later he took over the management

## REED

of Bank House station, leased by his father from Dr Monro, and later also the Vernon run, which he managed to 1876. He then bought Burleigh station, which he managed for 23 years, when he disposed of it and bought Woodbourne, near Renwicktown.

Redwood was member of the Marlborough Provincial Council for Clarence (1865-68), and of the provincial executive (1866-67); and was a member of the Wairau licensing committee. He owned some successful thoroughbred horses, and won the Marlborough and Wellington Cups and the Christchurch Derby (1866). He married (1863) Charlotte Eleanor (1840-1925), daughter of S. E. Grimstone. His death occurred on 11 May 1918.

Marlborough P.C., minutes and *Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.L.*, v (p); *N.L. Herald*, 14 Dec 1925; *Marlborough Express*, 13 May 1918.

REECE, WILLIAM (1856-1930) was born in Christchurch and attended the Christchurch Boys' High School. Returning in 1879 from England, where he had completed his education, he entered his father's firm, Edward Reece and Sons, ironmongery and hardware merchants. In 1880 he married Eva, daughter of Thomas Raine. Reece was a captain in the Canterbury rifles (1888-90); and served in public life as president of the chamber of commerce (1890), president of the Agricultural and Pastoral association (1898), mayor of Christchurch in the Jubilee year (1900), chairman of the tramway board (1903-07), commissioner of the New Zealand Exhibition (1906-07), and a member of the prisons board (1911-23). He was also chairman of directors of the Westport-Stockton Coal Co. and the Christchurch Gas Co., and a director of the Bank of New Zealand and of the New Zealand Shipping Co. He died on 17 Jul 1930.

*Cycl. N.L.*, iii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924.

REED, GEORGE McCULLAGH (1832-98) was born in county Monaghan, Ireland, and educated at Queen's College, Belfast, where he took several scholarships and graduated B.A. (1856). After being ordained to the ministry of the Presbyterian Church, he spent some time travelling on the Continent, and in 1858 came to Victoria to take charge of the North Melbourne Presbyterian Church. While there he was elected first moderator of the United Pres-

## REED

byterian churches of Victoria. In 1860 Reed took charge of the church at Ipswich, Queensland, and there he married Jessie Chalmers, daughter of John Ranken (squatter and police magistrate). Prompted by a strong interest in social conditions, he resigned from the ministry (1866) and contested the parliamentary seat for Ipswich against the Attorney-general (R. Pring), whom he defeated. His election was petitioned against but upheld, and he sat in the Queensland Parliament until the dissolution (May 1867). In 1870 Reed came to Auckland and started the *Evening Star*, in which he was joined shortly afterwards by Henry Brett (q.v.). About 1876 he sold his interest to Brett, and accepted the editorship of the *Evening News*, which had been established in Dunedin to defend the provincial system. In Apr 1876 he purchased the *Otago Guardian*. He induced George Fenwick to take a share in this enterprise, and they soon acquired the *Otago Daily Times* and *Otago Witness*, in which the *Guardian* and its weekly (the *Southem Mercury*) were merged (Oct 1877). When a company was formed to take them over, Fenwick became managing director and Reed editor of both papers.

In 1878 Reed accepted the position of immigration agent for New Zealand in Ireland, and went with his family to live in Belfast. Returning to New Zealand about 1881, he became associated with Rees's East Coast settlement scheme. He spent some time in Melbourne, where he was a leading contributor to the *Argus*, and then returned to Auckland and joined the staff of the *New Zealand Herald* (1884), for whom he soon afterwards went to London as English correspondent. There he started the *Anglo-New Zealander*. In 1886 he disposed of this property and returned to New Zealand to become editor of the Auckland *Evening Bell*, also contributing, under the nom de plume of 'Pollex,' to the *New Zealand Herald*. This connection displayed his fine talent for writing, and graceful style equally happy in pathos, eloquence and (when he cared to use it) in invective. He was described as the 'Junius of colonial journalism: Before long he resigned from the *Bell* and joined the *Herald*. In 1889 he went to Melbourne to edit the *Evening Standard*, and in 1890 he was a leader writer in the *Sydney Morning Herald*.

## REES

In 1895 he returned to Auckland once more, and became leader-writer on the *Herald* and a constant contributor of regular columns under the name of 'Colonus: In 1887 he published *Calamo Currente*, including the *Finding of Noah's Ark* (a highly successful literary hoax); and in 1896 *The Angel Isafrel; a Story of Prohibition in New Zealand*.

Though he was never in politics, Reed for many years wielded considerable political influence both as journalist and speaker. He did, in fact, represent Takapuna in the Auckland Provincial Council (1872-75); was a member of the executive, and in 1873 provincial secretary. In the closing months of that period he took a leading part in inducing Sir George Grey to enter provincial, and then colonial, politics. He was a member of the charitable aid board, a promoter of the Anglo-Israel association and, at the time of his death, president of the Auckland branch of the New Zealand Journalists' institute. He died on 13 Nov 1898.

Of his sons SIR JOHN RANKEN REED was a judge of the Supreme Court from 1921, and VERNON HERBERT REED was M.P. for Bay of Islands (1908-22) and M.L.C. (1924-31).

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Hocken: *Otago Daily Times*, 9 Dec 1878, 14 Nov 1898; *Saturday Advertiser* 14 Dec 1878; *The Press* 8 Jun 1907; *N.L. Herald*, 14 Nov 1898, *et pass*.

REES, GEORGE (1810-58) was born in London, the son of a Thames pilot. He qualified in medicine and came to Port Nicholson in 1841 as surgeon in the *Lord William Bentinck*. Starting practice in Wanganui, he was shortly joined by his brother Joseph (1808-61), who, however, soon gave up medicine and farmed up the river. George Rees had a lucrative practice, and was also colonial surgeon and medical officer to the natives. He acquired a good deal of property in the town and district of Wanganui, and when he died (on 19 Sep 1858) he left a bequest of about [5,000 to establish an educational endowment, from which the Girls' College and the Technical College in Wanganui benefited.

'Voon; T. W. Downes in *The Index, Wanganui Tech. Coli.*, Nov 1913; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 20 Sep 1858.

REES, WILLIAM GILBERT (1827-98) was born in Wales, the son of Commander W. L. Rees,

R.N., and a cousin of Dr W. G. Grace. Educated at the Royal Naval school at New Cross with a view to joining the Royal Marines, he turned his attention to engineering and served his articles in Wales, later acting as tutor at Mount Radford school, Exmouth, Devon. In 1852 he came to Australia and managed two of R. Tooth's stations in Queensland. Returning to England in 1858, he married a daughter of G. M. Gilbert, and came to New Zealand in that year as working partner with R. Campbell, of Buscott Park. With N. von Tunzelmann he explored central Otago, being one of the first to settle on the shores of Wakatipu, where he took up 300,000 acres for the firm, including what was known as the Arrow run. The sheep were brought from Victoria and grazed at Shag Valley before being driven to the lakes. The homestead was situated on the site of Queenstown.

In 1862 Maori Jack reported the discovery of gold in the Arrow river, and the run was resumed by the Government for mining purposes, Rees removing his homestead to The Falls. The partnership expiring in 1867, he became manager of Galloway station for the Hon R. Campbell (q.v.). In 1883 he took employment under the Stock department as an inspector in south Canterbury, and subsequently in Westland, Blenheim and Wellington (1894). He died on 31 Oct 1898. Rees was a prominent cricketer and athlete, being amateur champion of south Canterbury in 1872. His daughter ISABEL (1867-94) was tennis champion of New Zealand in 1890-92.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Bowen; Don; Beattie, ii; A. H. Duncan, *The Wakatipians*; Gilkison; *Otago Daily Times*, 13 Nov 1898.

REES, WILLIAM LEE (1836-1912) was born in Bristol, the son of Dr James Rees, who died while he was an infant. Having received private tuition in early life, Rees came to Australia as a young man, and was articled to Carrington and Cresswell, barristers and solicitors, in Melbourne. He did not complete his articles, but turned towards religion, and after the approved course of study became a minister of the Congregational Church.

After spending four years in the ministry at Melbourne and Beechworth, he resumed his

legal studies and was called to the bar (1865). He practised in Melbourne for a few months, and in 1866 came to Dunedin, where he was admitted to the New Zealand bar. For three years he practised at Hokitika, and then removed to Auckland. His first brief was for the plaintiffs in the case of Whitaker and London v. Graham. In the last days of provincialism Rees was elected to the Provincial Council for Auckland East (Apr 1875). Here he came into close association with Sir George Grey (then Superintendent of the province), to whom he was for a while provincial solicitor. In 1876 he was elected to Parliament for Auckland City East, and he co-operated actively with Grey in the formation of the young New Zealand party and the enunciation of a Liberal policy. Rees was offered the Attorney-generalship, but declined, proposing Stout as giving the south better representation in the ministry. During this Parliament he made a stonewalling speech of 24 hours' duration. Having moved to Napier, Rees lost ground in his constituency and was defeated in Auckland North by T. Peacock (1881). During 1879 he settled in Gisborne. Though always closely associated with Grey, and taking a large part in the formulation of the Liberal policy, especially the suffrage proposals, Rees now remained outside Parliament for ten years. In 1885 he propounded his co-operative land and labour company, and in 1888 he visited England to promote a scheme of co-operative colonisation. Rees was again elected, for City of Auckland, in 1890 and took part in launching the Liberal policy under Balance and Seddon. He was chairman of committees (1891-93). In 1893 he accepted the challenge of Cadman to contest a seat of his own choosing. He selected the City of Auckland and was defeated, thus retiring from politics. He was chairman of the native land commission, and was for many years interested in the East Coast native lands trust.

As a writer Rees was constructive and forceful. His first book, *The Coming Crisis*, appeared in 1874 and his novel, *Sir Gilbert Leigh*, in 1878. He published also an economic essay *From Poverty to Plenty* (1888), *The Science of Wealth in the Light of the Scriptures* and (in collaboration with his daughter, Lily Rees) *The Life and Times of Sir George Grey* (1892). Rees married in 1863 a daughter of

Opie Staite. Miss Rosemary Rees, author and actress, is a daughter. He died on 18 May 1912.

*N.z.P.D.*, 1876-81; 1890-93 (and 27 Jun 1912; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*, 1875; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii; Rees, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Times*, 20 May 1912; *Taranaki News*, 9 Dec 1890; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Aug 1885.

REESE, DANIEL (1841-91) was born at Wishaw, Lanarkshire, Scotland, educated there, and trained as a carpenter and builder in the Mothenvell ironworks. In 1862 he came to Canterbury in the *Zealandia*, worked for Joseph Bailey for a few years; visited the West Coast goldfields (1865), and started in business in Christchurch with Rankin and Greig. Later, on his own account, he built many of the outstanding buildings, including St Paul's Church, Lincoln Agricultural College, the School of Art and Holy Trinity Church. He was chairman of the West Christchurch school committee and a member of the City Council (1882-85, 1888-89).

Reese represented Stanmore in Parliament (1884-87), and was a supporter of the West Coast railway. He was a prominent oarsman, one of the four who built the Black Eagle and rowed her down the Avon and round the coast to Lyttelton, where they competed successfully at the regatta until 1874. Later he was a keen draughts player and first president of the Christchurch draughts club. He died on 4 Oct 1891.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Lyttelton Times*, 5 Oct 1891. Portrait: Parliament House.

REEVES, CHARLES STEPHEN (1836-1912), a native of Enniscorthy, county Wexford, Ireland, was educated at the Barrow and Tarvin schools in Cheshire, and in 1854 came to Victoria. Crossing to New Zealand eight years later, he settled in Dunedin, and established the firm of Reeves and Co., accountants and commission agents. In public life he was a member of the City Council (1873-76), and mayor (1876-77). He represented Dunedin in the Provincial Council (1874-76) and served as chairman of the harbour board; as a member of the land board (1879-85), as a hospital trustee and as representation commissioner (1904). In 1863 he joined the Dunedin Artillery; he was captain of the North Dunedin Rifles for nine years, and commanded the first battalion of Otago volunteers (1885-90). Reeves was a master mason and an oddfellow. He died on 29 Nov 1912.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Dec 1912.

REEVES, RICHARD HARMAN JEFFARES (1836-1910), who was born in Enniscorthy, county Wexford, Ireland, and educated at the Barrow Grammar School and at Tarvin, Cheshire, went to sea in the late forties, and in 1852 arrived on the Australia goldfields. Joining the rush to the West Coast of New Zealand, he was engaged as miner and storekeeper. In 1866 he was elected to represent Hokitika in the Canterbury Provincial Council, and in 1876 he was member for Grey in the Nelson Provincial Council. He served on the Westland county council from 1869. A consistent supporter of the Liberal party, Reeves sat in the House of Representatives as member for Grey Valley (1878-81), and for Inangahua (1887-93). He was defeated by P. J. O'Regan. In 1895 he was called to the Legislative Council, and in 1905 he was reappointed. He was chairman of committees for some years, and acting-speaker in 1905. In Westport he was a member of the harbour board. His death occurred on 1 Jun 1910.

*N.z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably 26 Jun 1910); *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

REEVES, WILLIAM (1825-91) was born at Clapham, London, his father being in the civil service. He received his education at a private school in London and entered the service of Kennard's Bank as a clerk. After a few years there he went on the stock exchange, where he was fairly successful.

Reeves married (1853) Ellen, daughter of John Ross Pember, of Clapham Park. They sailed for New Zealand in the *Rose of Sharon*, and reached Lyttelton on 25 Jan 1857. His first occupation in the Colony was as a clerk in the customs, followed by farming at Fernside, Rangiora, in company with C. O. Torlesse, for whom he managed the place for a year or two. He was associated with Hamilton Ward for a while, and then returned to Christchurch and started a carrying business. Most of the merchandise for Christchurch was taken by sea over the Sumner bar and landed in the river at Ferrymead, whence it had to be carted into Christchurch. After a year or two of this life Reeves joined Crosbie Ward and W. J. W.

Hamilton in taking over Bowen's interest in the *Lyttelton Times*. He and Ward were actively associated with the paper, and when it was formed into a company Reeves became manager. He wrote regularly to the leading columns in a plain, straightforward style, simple, clear and grammatical. Ward and Reeves were personal friends, and generally saw eye to eye on public questions. When Ward resigned from Parliament (1867) Reeves won the seat (Avon) but resigned in the following year in order to give his whole time to the paper. Early in 1871 he stood for Selwyn against Stevens (in the protection interest), the main issue being the duty of sixpence a bushel on Australian wheat, which the farmers of Canterbury felt to be essential to their welfare. Reeves won by a single vote, and had the satisfaction of seeing the duty reimposed during his term in Parliament. He was a strong supporter of the Fox Government, and when the office of Resident Minister for the Middle Island was instituted (in 1871) he was appointed to the post, which he held until the defeat of the Government in the following year. When Vogel came to power in 1872, Reeves declined to take office or the chairmanship of committees. He supported Vogel's railway policy, but in a year or two **definitely** fell out with Vogel on the question of the abolition of the provinces, and crossed the floor of the House, in company with O'Rorke, as a protest against the proposed changes (Aug 1874). •It is a shameful thing,' he said, •that such a measure as this can be introduced in a fit of temper, and that great constitutional changes may be due simply to the passing humours of the head of the government.' At the general election in 1875-76 Reeves was defeated by Fitzroy by a narrow majority on the abolition issue. He did not again stand for Parliament, but was called to the Legislative Council by the Stout-Vogel Government in 1884. Though a natural orator, he was nervous and diffident when speaking, and he had a reserve which did not assist him with the public. He recognised that he had entered politics too late in life to be successful. He was always a Liberal, and lived to see his son (W. P. REEVES, q.v.) holding office in a Liberal government.

In the life of the city of Christchurch Reeves took his part. He did much to encourage edu-

cation, and was on the board of governors of Canterbury College (1879-91). He was passionately fond of music, and was president of the Christchurch Musical society. His interest in native fauna and flora was lifelong. In the Legislative Council he spoke strongly against the importation of stoats and weasels as likely to prey on bird life. At the Canterbury Jockey club meeting in 1876 Reeves's horse Daniel O'Rourke won the New Zealand Derby and the New Zealand Cup for Patrick Campbell.

A very good business man, Reeves assisted to promote a number of companies in Christchurch. For years he was a director of the New Zealand Shipping Co., which he helped to form. He was chairman in 1875, but disagreeing with the introduction of steam, he resigned from the board (1882). He was a promoter of the Union Insurance Co. and on the board throughout, and was also on the local board of the Mutual Life Association of Australia from the time it started business in Canterbury. As managing director of the Lyttelton Times Co., he took a great interest in the welfare of its employees. He was the first chairman of the United Press Association of New Zealand, and presided till his death (on 4 Apr 1891).

Family information from W. P. Reeves; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 6 Apr 1891, 11 Jan 1926; *The Press*, 6 Apr 1891, 30 Aug 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

REEVES, WILLIAM PEMBER (1857-1932) was born at Lyttelton on 10 Feb 1857, just over six years after the first Canterbury settlers arrived at that port, and before Christchurch had ousted Lyttelton as the chief centre of the settlement. He was the son of the Hon William Reeves (q.v.). During his boyhood English, provincial and colonial politics were familiar topics of conversation, and political discussion was carried on at a high level in the infant colony. In England Gladstonian Liberalism was coming into its full strength; there was much talk of democratic equality, of the second reform bill, of the rights of trade unions and of educational reform. The colonists in New Zealand followed these controversies with the keenest interest, though with a long time-lag. It was the period of letter-writing, of lengthy discussions in pamphlets and in the quarterlies. The first great scientific agnostics were

challenging religious articles of faith. Though the material environment in New Zealand was at a crude pioneer stage, intellectual activity ran high. Christ's College grammar school, established soon after the settlers arrived (1850-51), was giving sound classical instruction on English public school lines by the time that Reeves was ready to attend it (1867).

The home in which Reeves grew up was a centre of political and literary discussion. His father represented local constituencies in the House of Representatives (1867-68 and 1871-75). In 1869-72 he was in the Fox cabinet, and in 1871-72 was resident minister for the Middle Island. Both his father and mother were typical pioneer colonists, drawn from west-county upper middle-class families. From this stimulating environment Reeves emerged a sensitive, cultivated young man. He had a normal love of games and represented his province both at cricket and at Rugby football. He was senior Somes scholar (1873) and New Zealand University scholar (1874). Having matriculated in 1874, Reeves left Christ's College and went to England with the intention of taking a degree at Oxford, but he became ill and returned to New Zealand. He was admitted as a barrister and solicitor and acted as reporter to the Canterbury Law Society, but was soon attracted to journalism and joined the literary staff of the *Lyttelton Times*. To this paper he contributed articles which later became his first published work: *An Introduction to the History of Communism and Socialism*. These were brief descriptions of Utopias and are significant only as showing the way in which his political ideas were tending. He was for a while editor of the *Canterbury Times*, and in 1889 was appointed to the editorial chair of the *Lyttelton Times*. His main interests were, however, political, and in 1887 he was elected to Parliament as liberal member for St Albans.

Though the rest of his life was to be dominated by political activity, he retained a keen interest in literature. Before leaving New Zealand he published, in collaboration with G. P. Williams, two volumes of verse, *Colonial Couplets* (1889) and *In Double Harness* (1891). Much of this was light political or social satire, and some was rather of the undergraduate level; but in his best verse Reeves attained fair descriptive quality. In 1898 he published in

London *New Zealand and Other Poems*, containing the hymn to New Zealand; which, with •The Passing of the Forest: is perhaps the best of his work. In the hymn there is abundant evidence of the humane temper that made him a pioneer of political and social reforms. His prose, however, is better than his poetry, much of the writing in *The Long White Cloud* reaching a very high level. He is best known by his writings descriptive of the social experiments in which he took so large a share. Indeed, he once said to the present writer that his success as an author had prevented him gaining recognition as a statesman. The best-known and most readable of his books, perhaps the best book ever written on New Zealand, is *The Long White Cloud*. He had an exciting and dramatic story to tell of the early days of white settlement. Later scholars, working meticulously over the historical records that were not available to Reeves, have corrected many of his statements; but none has approached him in the dramatic quality of his writing and the clarity of his prose. He took a little too easily the point of view of the colonists in their struggle with the Colonial Office. We know now that the permanent officials in London were neither stupid nor obstructive in their protection of Maori interests against the clamour of colonists eager for land. The later story of the social experiments in which he himself played a prominent part also needs supplementing. Written soon after the heat of the battle, it states a strong case against the land-owning •squattocracy.' He was indeed regarded in many quarters as a renegade from his class. Something of the political struggle gets into the first edition of *The Long White Cloud*, but it was pruned out later. The third and last edition, published in 1924, is noteworthy for the care he took to draw portraits of his political contemporaries. These he himself regarded as one of his most important contributions to New Zealand history. The new matter in this edition, written by a collaborator, does not reveal either Reeves's political penetration or the qualities of his style.

In 1902 his two-volume study of *State Experiments in Australia and New Zealand* was published. It is a careful and documented description of the movements towards electoral reform, closer land settlement; labour regula-

tion, old-age pensions, immigration control and liquor legislation that swept these colonies from 1881 onwards. While it does not always give the popular origins of such reforms as old-age pensions, and is apt to present them as inventions of an enlightened political leadership, it remains a mine of information concerning the actual period studied. It was reprinted by photographic process in 1923 and never revised. Most of the substantial journal articles which Reeves wrote were incorporated in this volume, which gives his considered first-hand account of the first period of legislative experiment. It is noteworthy that there is no 'state socialism' to be recorded. Reeves was a Liberal, and the experiments for which he was largely responsible were humane rather than doctrinaire. These experiments attracted much attention in England, on the Continent and in the United States. The legend of New Zealand as an innovating country of radical legislation persisted long after government had passed into the hands of Conservatives. In large part it was due to the fact that foreign investigators found their chief source of information and ideas in the urbane and versatile minister who was almost the only social theorist of his party. This fact, together with the influence of his own writings, spread a view of New Zealand radicalism that survived for two or three decades after the temper of the New Zealand Parliament had completely changed.

Reeves represented St Albans (1887-90) and City of Christchurch (1890-96). His career as a minister was very short. He entered Balance's Liberal-Labour ministry in 1891 as Minister of Education and Justice. In 1892 he became the first Minister of Labour, transferring the portfolio of Justice to Cadman. He was again Minister of Labour, Education and Justice in Seddon's ministry till in 1896 he was appointed Agent-general for the Colony in London. It was a strange combination that held together the astute, domineering and comparatively unlettered Premier and his urbane Minister of Labour. Seddon was a man of the people, graduated from local to colonial politics, rugged, overbearing and herculean in his dogged strength. In debate he used bludgeons where Reeves's wit flashed like a rapier. Stout, the other outstanding intellectual of the Liberal Party, was never able to combine with

Seddon, and it was perhaps with some reason that Reeves left the ministry in 1896. The three years' partnership, however, was a fruitful one. It is difficult to say how much Reeves contributed to the general body of legislation concerned with breaking up the great landholdings, though he was clearly in full sympathy with the measures of graduated taxation and compulsory powers that were taken. As Minister of Education he was liberal and enlightened; but his chief claim to political fame rests upon the conciliation and arbitration act, in which for the first time in any country not only was trade unionism given legal encouragement, but provision was made for compulsory arbitration of labour disputes. The regulation of factory conditions and the stamping-out of the sweated conditions of home labour that had been revealed by the 1890 inquiry owed much to his ingenuity and persistence; but his name is connected most with arbitration. He was himself proudest of this achievement, and extremely disappointed when the act was emasculated just before his death in 1932. He did not live to see it restored and strengthened by the Labour Government.

In London Reeves was an efficient Agent-general until 1909, and during that time was closely in touch with social reform movements in England. Some of the anonymous Fabian pamphlets were written by him, and he enjoyed a considerable reputation in Fabian circles as a man who had actually carried through social legislation. He was an attractive and witty speaker, with a gift for epigram and apt quotation, and soon became one of the most popular after-dinner speakers in London. Like many other colonial statesmen, he had ambitions to enter British political life, but these he could never realise for lack of sufficient income. He did, however, influence in some degree the trend of Liberal policies, and in still greater degree the shaping of labour policies while they were still the subject of discussion in intellectual circles outside of practical politics. In 1908 he became Director of the London School of Economics. He gave his full time to that work from 1909 till 1917, when he became chairman of directors of the National Bank of New Zealand, continuing as part-time director of the School till 1920. The School was a comparatively new venture when he took

it over as the third director, and was still very much under the influence of Sidney Webb. Graham Wallas, another of the original Fabian essayists, was professor of political science, and Edwin Cannan was teaching economics there; a fact which enabled Reeves to refer on one occasion to the army class, which had come somewhat reluctantly at Haldane's behest to take economics, 'seeking the bubble reputation, even in the Cannan's mouth.' He was a fellow of London University. Reeves devoted much time towards the end of his life to the chairmanship of the Anglo-Hellenic League. For this work he was given an honorary degree by the University of Athens (1919) and was decorated by the King of Greece as a Knight of the Redeemer (1914). He also served as a representative of New Zealand at various international conferences, and was a member of the royal commission on shipping rings, as well as the commercial intelligence committee of the Board of Trade.

To cite references to him, his political achievements and his writings would involve mentioning most of the studies of the first period of legislative experiment in New Zealand. It is curious that this man of wide culture and literary ability, the product of intense intellectual activity in a small and remote English colony, should have as his most enduring achievement a pioneer piece of labour legislation. To those who knew him in later life he was an urbane and courtly figure, invariably generous and encouraging to youthful effort; but in fact his ambitions were political rather than literary. Perhaps he was too sensitive and of too fine a temper for the rough-and-tumble of practical politics; but the driving force of his life was the desire expressed in his own verses to contribute towards the building in a new and beautiful land of a kindlier society.

Reeves married (1885) Magdalen Stuart, daughter of W. S. Robison (Christchurch). He died on 16 May 1932. J.B.C.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1887-96 and 23 Sep 1932; Reeves, *op. cit.*; Condillie; Rossignol and Stewart; Scholefield, *N.Z. Evol.*; Saunders; Gisborne; *Christ's Coll. List.*; *Who's Who N.I.*, 1908, 1924; *Diet. Social Sciences*; H. D. Lloyd, *A Country Without Strikes, 1900, Newest England*, 1900; Caro Lloyd, *Henry Demarest Lloyd*, 1912; S. and B. 'Vebs, *Industrial Democracy*, 1897; *Aust. Rev. of Rev.*, iii, 255; *Otago Witness*, 2 Nov 1893; *N.I. Herald*, 15 Jul

1893; *Christchurch Times* (p), *The Times* (p), 17 May 1932; *Evening Post*, 17 May and 27 Jun 1932; *N.Z. Graphic*, 27 Aug 1892 (pp). Portrait: Parliament House; London School of Economics.

REGNAULT, PETER (1856-1928) was born at St Brieux, Brittany, and educated at the lycees of St Meen and Glouguernerel. He studied philosophy at St Brieux and, having joined the Marist order (1881), he studied at Dublin and Dundalk and was for a while professor at Senlis and Montlucon. In 1886 he joined the mission in New Zealand, where he was first curate at Timaru and afterwards at Hokitika. He was priest at Waimate from 1889 until 1907, when he was appointed provincial of the Society of Mary for New Zealand. He was at St Mary's, Wellington, for seven years, and was afterwards administrator to the Archbishop. Dean Regnault founded the Marist band of missionaries in 1908. He died on 26 Jan 1928.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Evening Post*, 27 Jan 1928 (p).

REID, ALEXANDER (1821-91) was born at Edinburgh, and spent his childhood in Glasgow. After leaving school at the age of 11, he was engaged for some years in forestry and horticulture, meanwhile studying at night school. Bent on entering the teaching profession, he spent some time at Glasgow Training College and was one of the earliest teachers trained under Dr David Stow's system. Out of 70 applicants he was appointed master at a Wesleyan day school. He taught at Glasgow, Oxford and Bath (where he married).

By birth and education a Presbyterian, he accepted the Arminianism of Methodism, and joined the Methodist Church. He was accepted for its ministry in 1848, and was sent to Perth. As his preference was for mission work he was designated for Africa, but a request having been received for two ministers for New Zealand, his course was diverted and he sailed with Joseph Fletcher in 1849. Reid took charge of the training institution for native teachers at Three Kings, receiving from his predecessor (H. H. Lawry) a class of 160 scholars. He threw himself with great zeal and success into the work; grounding his pupils thoroughly in the English language, religious training and industrial pursuits. Meanwhile he had acquired a mastery of the Maori language. He

was early impressed by the idealism of the King movement and, believing he could work with success amongst the Waikato tribes, he resigned his teaching position in 1858 and accepted charge of the mission at Te Kopua, on the Waipa river (in succession to Buttle and Buddle). Reid initiated sheep-farming on a practical scale, and induced the natives to send their wool to market in Auckland. He tried to restrain the Ngati-Maniapoto from taking part in the Taranaki war. He deprecated Europeans making war upon the Maori, and fully sympathised with the native desire for self-government with the initiation of law and order. As the movement took a stronger form in opposition to the authority of the Queen he felt it getting out of hand, and when the Ngati-Maniapoto advised him that they could no longer protect the mission he reluctantly withdrew (1863). For a while he devoted himself to the spiritual welfare of the soldiers, and then he was appointed to a post in New Plymouth. While there Mrs Reid died (on 23 Nov 1864) and he married again (on 5 Dec 1866).

Reid was sent in turn to Christchurch, Dunedin, Auckland, Wellington, then back to Christchurch and again to Auckland. In 1885 he again became head of the training institution, in succession to Buddle. In 1881 he was delegate to the Oecumenical Methodist conference, and in the following year visited the Holy land. He was president of the New Zealand Wesleyan conference in 1876, and was a member of the revising committee for the translation of the Scripture into Maori. In 1885 he visited Fiji to share in the celebration of the mission jubilee. During his later years in Auckland Reid was secretary of the home mission fund and a member of the council of Auckland University College. He was a man of highest integrity and earnestness, and as a missionary showed an outstanding degree of self-sacrifice. He died on 25 Aug 1891.

Information from M. A. R. Pratt; Morley: *N.Z. Methodist; N.z. Herald*, 26 Aug 1891.

REID, CHARLES (1828-97) was born in Edinburgh, and came to New Zealand in the late forties. For some time he followed his calling as a bricklayer, and then became clerk of the Dunedin town board. In 1862 he started in

business as a COMMISSIONER agent, and in 1867 he established the Standard Property Investment Society, of which he was manager till 1885. He also founded the Standard Insurance Co. and managed it for some years, besides being interested in several terminating building societies. He acted as shorthand reporter of the proceedings of the Otago Provincial Council for the *Otago Witness* and for many years he contributed comical and satirical notes to that journal. Reid lived for some years in San Francisco, where he died in Sep 1897.

*Otago Daily Times*, 8 Oct 1897.

REID, DONALD (1833-1919) was born at Newton Farm, Strathay, Perthshire. He was educated at Burns's academy in Edinburgh, and afterwards at Daniel Stewart's endowed school in his native village. At the age of 15 he sailed for New Zealand in the *Mary*, and after calling at New Plymouth, Nelson, and Wellington, he landed on 10 Apr 1849 at Port Chalmers. His first employment was on Valpy's farm at Forbury.

For his first three years in Otago Reid worked at harvesting in the summer and cutting and splitting timber in the winter. His determination was to be a farmer and he was able in 1852, out of his earnings, to buy 20 acres in south Dunedin, about where the benevolent institution was later erected. In the following year he acquired 180 acres of swampy land, on which in later years arose the suburbs of South Dunedin and St Kilda. After farming here for three years he sold out, and in 1857 purchased the farm at Taieri which he called Salisbury and occupied until 1912. Reid was a good farmer and a far-seeing forester, and in time he made Salisbury a model estate of 6,300 acres, well grassed and with extensive plantations, mainly of bluegums raised by himself.

Shortly after he had settled down here the diggings broke out (1861) and Reid, in view of the difficulty in keeping farm labour, made a bargain with his men to stay with him until the summer work was over, on the understanding that they should all go together for the winter months, he providing transport, equipment and rations. Accordingly they took up a claim together and had more than the average run of luck. But seeing that more was to be made by providing for the needs of the

miners, he commenced carrying farm produce and stores to the fields, making one trip with a bullock dray each way per week to Gabriel's by way of Maungatua and Waipori. For the first few trips he got as much as £100 per ton freight.

Reid made his first appearance in public life in 1858 as a warden for the Taieri hundred. Five years later he was elected to the Provincial Council for the Taieri. He was not a fluent speaker, but improved greatly with experience, and in later years he could make a telling speech on the platform and was a formidable debater. He represented Taieri throughout the provincial period, being four times elected, and at the end he was a stalwart defender of the provincial system in Parliament. His convictions on the land question dictated his political actions. He strongly advocated liberalising the regulations so as to make it easy for good men of moderate means to get land, and he was one of the earliest advocates of the deferred-payment system. In 1866 he assisted to pass new regulations through the Council, and in that year he was elected to represent Taieri in Parliament. Here again he furthered his views by every means in his power, taking a leading part in his first year in the passing of the land act. In 1868 he became provincial secretary and treasurer for the first time; only for two days on this occasion, but he came back to office in May 1869 and (except for 1872-14) remained in office until the abolition.

In 1869 Reid resigned his seat in Parliament, but he was again elected in 1871, and continued as member for Taieri until Jun 1878, when he resigned for good. He was throughout a strong supporter of Stafford, and was for a few weeks in 1872 his Minister of Public Works. In 1871 Reid contested the superintendency of Otago against Macandrew, mainly on the land question. In certain districts he gained a majority, but the town vote defeated him: Macandrew 3,242, Reid 2,950. This was his only defeat in politics. In 1871 he carried amended land regulations in the Council, providing for the sale of land on deferred payment, and next year he carried a land act through Parliament. In the beginning of 1877, having fought centralism to the last ditch, Reid found himself Minister of Lands and Immigration in the reconstructed Atkinson cabinet.

There he introduced the first general land act for the colony, which consolidated the provincial regulations and extended deferred payments to Southland and Canterbury. The Government was defeated in Oct but the Grey Ministry adopted the bill, which was fathered by Stout and Macandrew, and duly became law.

Though still comparatively a young man, Reid now felt that he had made a worthy contribution to politics and should pay more attention to his own affairs in the interests of his family. He retired from Parliament in 1878 and commenced a stock and station business in Vogel street, which flourished under his careful administration. He remained at its head until 1918. In 1912 he sold his farm at the Taied and bought a place near Abbotsford, where he lived for the rest of his days. He took a deep interest in the Otago harbour board (of which he was one of the first members), and strongly advocated the deepening of the channel to the upper harbour. In later years he took an interest in the Otago Early Settlers' Association, of which he was president.

Reid married first (1854) Frances (d. 1868), daughter of John Barr (Mavis Bank). In 1873 he married Sarah Gordon, widow of the Rev E. H. Price, of New South Wales, and at that time teaching on the staff of the Girls' High School. Reid died on 7 Feb 1919. (See DONALD REID 1855-1920.)

Family information from Miss E. N. Reid; *Otago P.C. Proc.; N.z.P.D.*, 29 Aug, 2 Sep 1919; *Cycl. N.z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Nov 1875, 8 Feb 1919, 1 Aug 1930 (p).

REID, DONALD (1850-1922) was born at Dunedin, the son of Charles Reid (q.v.) and nephew of Donald Reid (q.v.). He was educated at Livingstone's school and the Otago Boys' High School (1863-68) and articled to G. K. Turton. Having qualified in law he began to practise at Milton in 1874. He was mayor of the borough (1879-80) and again (1894-98), retiring to visit England. In 1885 he was elected M.H.R. for Bruce, defeating J. C. Anderson, J. McDonald and W. Hutchison, but at the following general election he was defeated by Anderson. Reid was an enthusiastic volunteer. For many years he commanded the Bruce Rifles and he won many

## REID

trophies for marksmanship. He married (1885) Alice Charlotte, daughter of Francis C. Fulton (Napier). Reid died on 3 Sep 1922.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1885-87 (and 7 Sep 1922); *Otago B.H.S. Reg.*; *Evening Star*, 4 Sep 1922. Portrait: Parliament House.

REID, DONALD (1855-1920) was born at Caversham, Dunedin, the eldest son of Donald Reid (1833-1919, q.v.) and of Frances, daughter of John Barr. Educated at the Taieri school and Otago University, he entered the law office of Smith and Anderson, Dunedin, in 1874. Mter being admitted to the bar (1880), he practised in partnership with his brother until 1889, when he joined the firm of Donald Reid and Co., of which his father was head. In 1897 he resumed legal practice. Reid sat in the House of Representatives for Taieri (1902-08). He married (1906) Catherine Agnes, only daughter of David McMillan, of Southbridge, Canterbury. Reid was a keen student of economics and a supporter of bi-metallism, being for a time secretary of the New Zealand Bi-metallic League. He wrote many articles on this subject. He was a deacon in Knox Church, and was president of the Roslyn branch of the Workers' Educational Association. He died on 25 Aug 1920.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1902-08, and 31 Aug 1920; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Aug 1930. Portrait: Parliament House.

REID, JAMES (1838-1920) was born at Carmyllie, Forfarshire, Scotland, and educated at Arbroath High School. After teaching for three years at Podge school, Carmyllie, he entered the Edinburgh Training College in 1860 with a Queen's scholarship, and then spent a year in training at Moray House. Mter teaching in Scottish schools until 1865, he came to New Zealand as first assistant in the Auckland High School. From 1868 to 1870 he was amalgamator to the "Whau Gold Mining Co., Thames, and in 1871 he went to Otago to resume teaching. He was appointed in 1880 rector of the Tokomairiro district high school, of which he was in control till his retirement in 1906. Reid was a sound classical scholar and a courageous modernist. In 1880 he introduced the teaching of chemistry, and in 1881 woodwork classes. In 1885, after consulting the education board, he introduced other technical subjects, and

## REID

later he instituted commercial classes and home science. Reid died on 16 Nov 1920.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Scholefield, *Tokomairiro District High School* (p).

REID, JOHN (1829-1912) was born at Longside, Aberdeenshire, and arrived in Otago by the *Pudsey Dawson* in 1854. He joined the provincial survey department in 1858, became chief draughtsman and then started as a storekeeper and goldbuyer at Waitahuna, afterwards with Captain Sutter (q.v.). In 1866 he established a business with his brother, G. F. Reid, and Edward Herbert as buyers and forwarding agents. In 1868 they purchased the business of Cain, Munro and Co. of Timaru, from which Reid sold out in a few years. In 1870 he bought the Comer Bush estate at Merton, which he greatly improved. Moving to Dunedin, he entered into partnership with J. W. and George S. Duncan as land surveyors, civil engineers and estate agents. They carried out government contracts in Canterbury and Otago and for the West Taieri and Henley river boards and built the Roslyn and Morningson cable tramways. In 1885 George Duncan withdrew to undertake the Melbourne tramway construction, and Reid carried on the firm as John Reid and Sons until his death (on 30 Jul 1912). In 1878 Reid acquired an interest in the Monte Christo estate, where he had a model farm and bred Shropshire sheep. He was on several river and road boards, and was a director of the Colomal Bank during its first years, chairman of the Standard Fire and Marine Insurance Co., and a member of the Presbyterian Church board of property.

*Otago Daily Times*, 12 Aug 1912.

REID, JOHN (1835-1912), who was born near Stirling, Scotland, entered commercial life in Glasgow. In 1853 he emigrated to Australia, and 10 years later crossed to New Zealand. He settled in 1865 on the Elderslie estate in north Otago, the area of which he increased to 34,000 acres. He stocked it at first with merinos and later with long-woolled sheep. Reid was a member of the Waitaki county council, the Otago waste lands board (1868-72), the Oamaru road board and harbour board; was twice president of the North Otago Agricultural and Pastoral association; was a founder of the Colonial Bank; a governor of the Waitaki High

## REID

School (1882-87), and a railway commissioner (from 1880). In 1887 he contested a seat in Parliament.

To encourage the frozen meat trade and break the monopoly of the shipping companies Reid persuaded Turnbull, Martin and Co. to purchase the steamer *Elderslie*, and he freely supported the experiment by sending his own sheep forward. With J. T. Thomson Reid made a valuable report on the conservation of New Zealand forests. He married (1855) Agnes, daughter of James Humphries, of Paisley. He died on 16 Aug 1912.

His son, JOHN BENNIE REID (1861-1930), was a well-known racing owner, some of his successful horses being Wolverine, Skirmisher and Gladsome. He raced with success also in Australia and England. J. B. Reid was a director of the National Bank of New Zealand.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Critchell and Raymond; K. C. McDonald; *Otago Daily Times*, 9 Sept 1912, 12 Jan 1930; *Evening Star*, 27 Sep 1887.

REID, ROBERT CALDWELL (1832-97) was born in the north of Scotland, where his father owned the *John o' Groats Journal*. He left for Victoria in the early fifties, spent some time there and then came to the West Coast goldfields. He bought sections at Greymouth which he sold at a profit, and followed the rush to Okarito. There and at Hokitika he acted as storekeeper and as gold buyer for the Bank of New Zealand. In 1862 he accompanied the Otago expedition to the West Coast Sounds, which he described in *Rambles on the Golden Coast* (1884). Reid was associated with the *West Coast Times*, the *New Zealander* (Wellington), the *Dunedin Herald*, the *Greymouth Star* and the *Westport News*. He married (1869) Emily, daughter of James Manning (Dunedin). In the same year he represented Buller in the Nelson Provincial Council. He was chairman of the first school committee in Hokitika (1874). He was M.H.R. for Hokitika (1879-81), Seddon being the other member. In 1879 he was a member of the Young New Zealand Party. Reid died on 18 Mar 1897.

*Parltry Record*; *Col. Gent.*; *Nelson P.C. Pmc.*; Preshaw; Reid, *op. cit.*; Hindmarsh; Harrop, *Westland*; *Grey River Argus*, 20 Mar 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

## REISCHEK

REID, WALTER SCOTT (1839-1920), born in Edinburgh, was the son of Captain James Reid, of the 45th Regiment, who was a staff officer in Tasmania in 1852. Educated in Scotland and in Tasmania, he was admitted to the bar in 1862. In 1865 he came to New Zealand and started to practise in Wellington. He was registrar of deeds for Southland for some months and then went into partnership with C. E. Button (q.v.) in Hokitika.

Reid was elected a member of the Westland county council and education board. Mter four years as assistant law officer in Wellington, he was appointed Solicitor-general in 1875 and he drafted the abolition of the provinces act 1875 and the education act 1877. He assisted in the consolidation of the statutes which was published by the Government in 1881 and adapted the criminal code (passed in 1893). In 1882 he served on the judicature commission, which prepared the code of procedure for the Supreme Court and Court of Appeal. Until he retired (in 1900) Reid was chairman of the boards of the Public Trust office and of the Government Insurance department. He was a member of the commission which considered the advisability of New Zealand joining the Commonwealth of Australia and was appointed chairman of the land commission (1905) but did not act. Reid refused a seat on the Supreme Court bench. He died on 1 Feb 1920.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 3 Feb 1920.

REISCHEK, ANDREAS (1845-1902) was born at Linz in Austria, the son of a tax-collector. After a few years of schooling he was apprenticed to a baker, who took him on nature study excursions. In the war of 1866 he fought in the Tyrol. Having married (1875), Reischek settled in Vienna as a taxidermist. In 1877 he accepted Hochstetter's invitation to go to New Zealand as assistant to Von Haast in arranging the newly-opened Christchurch Museum. The engagement was for two years, but it was 12 years before Reischek returned to his home. During this time he arranged the museums in Christchurch, Auckland and Wanganui, and a number of private collections, and made eight extended expeditions (with his dog Caesar) in New Zealand and the adjacent islands, carrying out a careful study of the flora and fauna.

REMINGTON

In 1889 he returned to Austria with his valuable collection, which was presented to the nation and housed in the state museum. Some years later he was appointed superintendent of the Francis-Caroline Museum in Linz, where he died on 3 Apr 1902. For his work he was elected a fellow of the Linnean Society. Many of his articles were published in the *Tmnsactions* of the New Zealand Institute. The English edition of his book *Yesterdays in Maoriland* appeared in 1930.

*Trans. N.Z. Inst., pass.*; Reischek, *op. cit.* (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Apr, 16 Jul 1887, 10 Mar, 5 May, 3 Jul 1888, 2 Apr 1891, 6 Apr, 17 Dec 1892; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 May 1926, 10 Jan 1885.

REMINGTON, ARTHUR EDWARD (1856-1909), who was born in New Plymouth, was educated at a private school in Jersey (Channel Islands). Returning to New Zealand, he established himself as a chemist in Bulls. He was chairman of the Bulls town board (1879-90), a member of the Rangitikei county council (1881-91), and of the Wanganui hospital board (1887-91). Mter moving to Hunterville, he was elected chairman of the Hunterville town board (1905-06) and he was a member of the House of Representatives for Rangitikei from 1902 until his death on 17 Aug 1909.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 7 Oct 1909; *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Times*, 18 Aug 1909. Portrait: Parliament House.

RENALL, ALFRED WILLIAM (1813-1902) was born at Heybridge, Malden, Essex, and came to New Zealand with his father in the *Martha Ridgway* (1840). Having previously had some experience as a carpenter and miller, he found employment in Port Nicholson for some years. Then he took up bush land in the Hutt valley. About 1849 he completed a mill which Charles Mabey had commenced to build, and in 1850 started the first watermill in the valley, which he worked for many years with success. The flood of 1858 destroyed his mill, and with other settlers he petitioned Grey to make land in ttle Wairarapa available for settlement. As a leading member of the Small Farms association he chose his sections in Masterton, and had to do with the formation of Greytown also. In Masterton he erected a mill, with three sets of stones and other equipment from the Ngahauranga and Taita mills. It was opened in

RENNIE

1862 and worked for many years. Renall represented Hutt in Parliament (1858-66). In 1853-57 he represented the same constituency in the Provincial Council and in 1866 he was returned for Wairarapa West, which he represented till 1873, being chairman of committees in 1869. In 1863 he established the first road board in Masierton, of which he was chairman and engineer. He was later a member of the town board, sketched out the boundaries of the borough, and was several times mayor. He was a justice of the peace from 1859. Renall died on 31 Jan 1902.

Carter; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 2 Feb 1902.

RENNIE, ALEXANDER (1811-89) was born at Old Meldrum, Aberdeenshire. He received a fair education; was taught the tailoring trade, and practised it on his own account in his native village for some years. Rennie sailed for New Zealand in the *Phoebe Dunbar* (Jul 1850). Arriving in Oct, he entered upon his own trade in Dunedin, but associated with it the business of a seedsman, of which he had gained some knowledge. He imported seeds from Scotland and was especially successful in the distribution of the yellow turnip for which Aberdeen was famous. An advertisement in the *Otago Witness* in 1851 reads: 'The subscriber has for sale a quantity of turnip seed which consists of six of the most approved kinds of that article. They were raised at Old Meldrum, Aberdeenshire, a place celebrated for producing turnip seed.'

A man of great public spirit and unwavering loyalty to his opinions, Rennie was a thorough voluntary.' He believed it was no part of the duty of the state to provide religious instruction for the young. On this he came into collision with the stalwarts of the Otago settlement, which was founded upon state provision for religion and education. He was never a popular man, and did not aspire to be a political leader. Quite early he opposed with all his power the suggestion of the provincial executive to grant lands in Dunedin for a church and parsonage for the Church of England'r He opposed the provision in the Otago education ordinance for religious instruction in schools; and by the same reasoning the clauses in the Colonial education act which prohibited the

RENWICK

teaching of the Bible as part of the school course had his full concurrence. Rennie had no difficulty in being elected to the first Provincial Council as a member for Dunedin City, which he represented for six years (1853-59). In the succeeding four years he represented Central, and for three years (1863-66) Taieri, where he was at that time engaged in farming. For two years, 1861-63, he presided over the Council as speaker, and in 1865 he was a member of the provincial executive. In 1855 he was a member of the old Dunedin town board.

Selling his farm in 1865, Rennie paid a visit to the Old Country, and on returning he lived privately, taking a constant interest in philanthropic and social questions. Throughout life he directed much energy towards the total abstinence movement. In 1855 he was president of the Otago Maine law league, the form that organised temperance took at that time. One of his hobbies was the Otago benevolent institution, with which he was associated from its earliest years, and of which he was a trustee (1869-89). Here again his opinions brought him strong opposition, and even contumely. He refused to consent to an illegitimate child being admitted to the institution, and strained every rule to prevent the institution handing over a child to the custody of its father, against whom nothing could be alleged morally except that he was a freethinker. Rennie devoted himself with zeal to church and Sunday school, and was intimately associated with Dr Stuart and Knox Church as an elder. He died on 2 Jun 1889.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Hocken, *Otago*; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Jun 1889, 28 Jun 1930 (p).

RENWICK, THOMAS (1818-79) was born at Dumfries and educated at Edinburgh, where he graduated M.D. Mter practising for some years in Kent, he made one voyage to India as surgeon to a passenger ship and in 1842 came to New Zealand as surgeon-superintendent of the *Thomas Harrison*. Renwick settled in Nelson and had a wide medical practice. In 1846 he was present as an onlooker at the capture of Ruapekapeka pa. In 1848 he took up the Dumgree estate in Marlborough, which was managed for him by George MacRae. He took a prominent part in the life of the province and was one of the first members for Nelson

REREPU

City in the Provincial Council (1853-61). For some years he was chairman of the hospital committee. In 1863 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death on 28 Nov 1879.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); Carleton, ii, 127; Buick, *Marlborough*. Portrait: Parliament House.

TE RERENGA, HONE WETERE (1844-88), of Mokau, was a Ngati-Maniapoto chief of very high rank who traced his descent for 55 generations. He was noted for his ability and energy, and became a Hauhau out of resentment at the erection of the blockhouse at Pukearuhe to hinder the passage of recruits from Waikato to Taranaki. On 13 Feb 1869 a taua of his people from Moleau destroyed the blockhouse and massacred neighbouring settlers and the missionary John Whiteley (q.v.). Te Rerenga denied that he had taken part in the massacre. He was, however, outlawed till 1883, when he was included in the pardon. He was consistently friendly to Europeans, and in 1878 helped Joshua Jones to open up the trade of the Mokau. In 1882 he went to Wellington to interview the Minister, and urge the opening up of native lands, but hurried away on hearing that a warrant was out for his apprehension. Long disputes ensued over the purchase of the Mokau lands.

Te Rerenga continued friendly to the pakehas and for some years enjoyed a government pension. He was the recipient of the bronze medal of the Royal Humane Society for saving the life of C. W. Hursthouse and other Europeans who were capsized on the Mokau bar. He died on 9 Mar 1888.

Cowan, *Wars*; Wells; G. T. Wilkinson, *My Rata Tree*; E. S. Brookes, *Frontier Life, Taranaki, 1892*.

REREPU, PAORA, was a distinguished Mohaka chief in the early days of the Colony. His father was once tied up during a dispute as to the chiefship, but lived to be accepted as chief of Mohaka. He was descended from Kahungunu through Tuteilionga. Rerepu took a leading part in the defence of the East Coast against the invasion of the Hauhau, and in May 1866 he received the surrender of Te Warn and his party. His son Ropihana was one of the garrison of Te Huki pa when it was sacked by Te Kooti (Apr 1869). Paora and Ihaka Whanga were absent on an expedition

and unable to help, but they arrived in time to relieve the twin pa Hiruharama.

Cowan; Lambert.

REVANS, SAMUEL (1808-88) was born in England, the son of a doctor-apothecary, who brought him up to the printing trade. From his early years he was a militant radical. In 1833, with H. S. Chapman (q.v.) he went to Canada, and together they ran the *Montreal Daily Advertiser*. The proprietors were generally at loggerheads with the official and wealthy classes, and the paper never paid. When Chapman was sent by the Liberal party in Canada on a political mission to England, the paper closed down (1834). Revans stayed on for a short time in Canada, to become involved, it is said, in the rising under Papineau (1837). When it failed he made his way into the United States, and thence to England.

There the Chartist movement was at its height, and Revans became associated with Henry Vincent, Roebuck, and Cobden. He acted as second to Roebuck in a duel with Black, the editor of the *Morning Chronicle* (1835). Shots were exchanged twice without effect, and in an altercation Revans offered to fight the other second. Revans became interested in the colonisation of New Zealand, and on 21 Aug 1839 issued from his office, 16 Little Pulteney street, St James's, London, the first number of the *New Zealand Gazette*. On that same day he was appointed secretary under the provisional constitution drawn up by the intending emigrants for their own governance when they should land in New Zealand. The next issue of the paper was to appear as soon as possible after the landing of the newspaper plant, which Revans took with him in the *Adelaide*. The vessel arrived at Port Nicholson on 7 Mar 1840, and Revans landed with his Columbia printing press on the beach of Pito-one. There, on 18 Apr 1840, he brought out the second issue of the *New Zealand Gazette*. One of his staff was Thomas Wilmor McKenzie (q.v.). When the settlement was moved to Lambton the paper was called the *New Zealand Gazette and Britannia Spectator*.

Revans took an important position in the community. The provisional council met for the first time on 4 Apr, and all of its official documents until it was declared illegal by Lieut-

Governor Hobson were signed by Revans as secretary. In 1843 he published the first *Wellington Almanac*, which for many years was an accurate chronicle of the events of the province. In the same year he sold the paper to a company, and William Fox became editor. The founder for a while devoted his energies to the importation of merchandise from England and cattle from Australia. In 1846, after the hostilities in the Hutt Valley, he presided over the public meeting held to consider measures of defence. In 1847 he severed his connection with journalism, and joined W. Mein Smith in the ownership of a large run in the Wairarapa. At one time they had 22,000 acres of freehold and 30,000 acres on lease.

Revans was a member of Parliament for Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay (1853-55) and for Hutt (1856-58). In provincial politics he was member for Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay (1853-57), and on two occasions he held office in Featherston's executive. He was a member of the Council's first committee on education (1853). The run was not always successful, and in 1851 Revans chartered the barque *Thames* and loaded her with timber and potatoes for California. He was forestalled by earlier cargoes; the timber was not a success, but the potatoes found a good market.

When the leases fell in (about 1872) part of the Wairarapa property passed into the hands of Waterhouse. Another portion, where Martinborough now stands, was bought by John Martin. Revans continued to reside with his partner at Woodside. He and Smith were almost the first to take an interest in the timber industry in the Wairarapa, but the want of a railway was a serious drawback. Revans died on 14 Jul 1888.

N.Z.C. papers; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *cycl. N.z.*, L; R. E. Leader, *Life and Letters of John Arthur Roebuck* (1897); Ward; E. J. Wakefield; *Otago Daily Times*, 25 Nov 1874; *Evening Post*, 14 Sep 1929 (p), 20 Sep 1929 (by H. Fildes). Portraits: General Assembly Library.

REVELL, WILLIAM HORTON (1829-93) was born at Wicklow, Ireland, the eldest son of Thomas Revell, who settled at Kaiapoi in 1854 (and died there 17 Oct 1868). He joined the Canterbury provincial police and in charge of the northern district showed himself a man of great courage and determination. On one

occasion single handed he stopped a prize fight from being held on the banks of the Waimakariri river. He took a great interest in volunteering, and induced many bushmen to join No 5 Company rifle volunteers (1858), which offered its services for the Maori war. In 1863 he received an ensign's commission. Besides being a good drill, he was an expert marksman, winning one of the first four rifles offered in New Zealand for marksmanship. He was inspector of police at Timaru when he retired on the reorganisation.

On 1 Jan 1864 he was appointed agent of the provincial government on the West Coast, when small finds of gold were reported. Accompanied by H. D. Macpherson, Revell reached the mouth of the Grey river by the schooner *Mary* on 24 Jan 1864. He established a store there, and in the next few months made arduous journeys throughout Westland, as far south as Ross. He purchased the first gold on 27 Jan. It had been intended to withdraw in Sep, but when Revell returned from Canterbury in Aug he found that an important discovery had been made at the Greenstone Creek. Miners soon poured in, and in Dec 1864 Revell marked off sections for the town of Hokitika. He was appointed warden and magistrate on 3 Mar 1865 (issuing the first miner's right on the 21st). On the arrival of the commissioner (Sale, q.v.) Revell was transferred to Greymouth. He showed admirable tact in the administration of a difficult office. In 1879 he was appointed to Westport and Reefton, and about 1890 to Lawrence, where two years later ill-health compelled him to retire.

Revell married in 1867 Emily O'Callaghan. He died at Timaru on 22 Sep 1893.

Harrop, *Westland*; Preshaw; Hindmarsh; *Grey Star*, 25 Feb 1928. *The Press*, 25 Sep 1893.

REWA, or MANU (1780-1862), a leading chief of Ngapuhi in the early nineteenth century, was one of three brother chiefs of Ngati-Wake. In 1807 his father and two brothers were killed at Moremonui. Thereafter he distinguished himself on many campaigns, becoming one of Hongi's leading generals and, after the death of Hongi and Pomare, the greatest Ngapuhi commander. In Tuwhare's expedition to Taranaki (1819-20) Rewa shot the Taranaki chief Mokowera at Orangi.tuapeka pa. In 1820 he

and his brother Moka followed Tareha on the Kaipara expedition. The following year the three brothers played their part in the deception which brought about the fall of Te Totara. In 1822, Rewa was at Matakaitaki (Waikato) with Hongi and Moka. He sincerely desired peace with Waikato and in 1824 his daughter Matire-toha was given in marriage to Kati to cement the peace. In that year also he accompanied Pomare to the East Coast seeking a peace with Ngati-Porou.

In 1825 the brothers were at Te Ika-a-Ranginui, where Moka was severely wounded and saved with great gallantry by Taiwhanga (q.v.). In 1828, through the intervention of the missionaries, Rewa made peace with the Hokianga tribe. Marsden in 1829 met Rewa again and was much impressed by his generous character, outstanding intelligence and disposition to stop tribal warfare. Marsden's arguments towards a Maori sovereignty were sympathetically discussed, but Rewa could see no hope of its acceptance owing to the jealousy of the chiefs. He appreciated the benefits arising from the presence of missions, protected the Rev J. Butler at Kerikeri, and insisted on taking missionaries south to occupy the lands conquered in 1823. Marsden held him in high respect and had great influence over him, but could not prevent him from making a human sacrifice on the death of his second wife. Though involved in the girls' war of 1830 by the fact that one of the girls was a close relative, he maintained a position almost of neutrality and seconded Marsden's efforts for a settlement. Rewa and Wharerahi signed the petition asking King William for protection (1831). Now a good Christian, he assisted the Rev Henry Williams in converting others and strove energetically to inaugurate a regime of law and order.

Williams, however, reposed greater faith in his brother WHARERAHI, whom he baptised as Hori Kingi. He too strove for peace and protected the missions after the burning of Kororareka (1845). A venerable, dignified figure, Wharerahi was in 1828 already old and decrepit, but he lived to cooperate in bringing about peace with Waikato (1835). The third brother, MOKA (who took the name of Te Kai-ngamata) was less well disposed to the pakeha. Williams found him self-willed, quarrelsome, daring, impatient and without one good qual-

ity.' Before 1840 the three brothers had drawn away from the influence of the missions and were somewhat hostile to the acceptance of the Treaty of Waitangi. Their loyalty, however, was unquestioned and Rewa aided the military against Heke (1845) with both arms and advice. He died in Aug 1862.

Marsden, L. and J. amf *Lieutenants*; Ramsden; Barton; Carleton; S. P. Smith, *Wars*.

REWI MANGA MANIAPOTO (? 1815-94), one of the last fighting chiefs of the Ngati-Maniapoto, was a man of high rank, claiming descent from Hoturoa, who navigated the Tainui canoe to New Zealand, and was related to Te Heuheu Iwikau. His father was one of the chiefs of the taua from Waikato which took Puke-rangiora (1831) and he accompanied his father on this campaign. Coming under the influence of the Roman Catholic missionaries, he was baptised as Rewi, a name that he renounced in the height of the King movement.

On the outbreak of the Taranaki war Rewi was sent to inquire into the causes of the quarrel, and Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto acted upon his report that the resistance of Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake (q.v.) was justified. Rewi showed great courage in the Taranaki fighting. He was one of the leaders in the desperate night attack on No. 3 redoubt at Huirangi, which was repulsed with great loss. He took Wiremu Kingi back with him to Kihikihi. Moved by the conviction that the government intended to undermine Maori nationality, he threw himself with fiery energy into the King movement. It was he who hoisted the King flag at the meeting at Ngaruawahia when Potatau was elected King. He was regarded as the King's prime minister and was (T. S. Grace says), 'a far greater man than the King himself.' He did actually resent the King's trying to exercise influence over his tribe (Ngati-Maniapoto).

When Gorst (q.v.) arrived at Te Awamutu charged with the duty of inaugurating English civilisation and education amongst the Maori, Rewi adopted an attitude of stern hostility. He personally warned Gorst to leave, and wrote to Governor Grey a letter, which was never answered, exhorting him to remove his representative before he came to harm. The Waikato and Ngati-Haua sections of the Kingite

Maori condemned Rewi's conduct, since the land at Te Awamutu was in possession of the King; but he persisted in his opposition, took offence at Gorst's paper, *Pihoihoi Mokemoke*, and organised a party to remove the offending magistrate. He looked on while Aporo sacked the office of the paper and ejected Gorst from his post (24 Mar 1863). Though he maintained that he was averse to fighting, and his sincerity is beyond question, the impetuosity of Rewi did much to precipitate war. When he received a letter from the King meeting at Mataitawa (Taranaki) reporting that the Governor had completed the barracks at Tataraimaka Rewi replied, without consulting his fellow chiefs, 'Strike the pakeha!' He himself mustered a taua and moved to Hangatiki with the intention of creating a diversion by canoeing down the Waikato river and raiding the settlements at Te Ia. Overruled by Wiremu Tamihana and others, he led his men into the Hunua forest. Rewi fought with great energy throughout the Waikato campaign. It was against his advice that the King forces made their stand at Orakau in a weak position chosen by the older men. For three days they held out against an overwhelming British force, replying to General Cameron's demand to surrender with the historic defiance: 'Ka whawhai tonu, ake, ake, ake!' ('I will fight on for ever and ever'). Eventually he decided to evacuate the pa in the night and the operation was carried out successfully, though with the loss of about half of the Maori force. Reaching the Puniu river, Rewi halted to rest the remnant of his force (about 60 men) and then retreated into the heart of the King country.

Though he was not a practising Christian, Rewi insisted that the campaign should be carried on according to the customs of the pakeha, and sternly discountenanced mutilation of the dead and other ancient observances with regard to them. Early in the war a reward was offered for his apprehension, but no further steps were taken against him and the government had good reason in later years to value the influence which he exerted in improving the relations between the two races. He welcomed Sir Donald McLean's visit to Waikato in 1869 as 'a streak of light before the dawn.' When Te Kooti visited Waikato in that year to obtain assistance from the King tribes Rewi accom-

panied him back to Taupo to see whether he was as invincible as was supposed. After Te Kooti's defeat at Porere Rewi returned to Waikato, angrily declaring that Te Kooti's gods were imposters. In later years Rewi's influence was eclipsed by that of Tamati Ngapora (q.v.). When he relented towards the government and desired to meet the Duke of Edinburgh at Ngaruawahia it was Tamati who objected and prevailed. Nevertheless Manga, as Rewi was called after the war, was always a man of importance in the King country, and he exerted his influence constantly in the interests of the Maori and of good fellowship with the pakeha. He saved the life of James Mackay (q.v.) in 1873 when his investigations into the death of Timothy Sullivan at Pukekura brought him into disfavour with the King natives.

In 1879, at the invitation of the Native Minister (Hon J. Sheehan), Rewi paid his first visit to Auckland for twenty years. He received a cordial welcome, both popular and official, attended many banquets, and returned to Waikato in company with the Governor (Sir Hercules Robinson). In 1883 he joined in the petition from the King country against land-selling, drink and immorality, and he resisted successfully the endeavour to introduce liquor amongst the King Maoris by licensing a public-house at Otorohanga. Once more, in 1890, Rewi visited Auckland by invitation to participate in the jubilee celebrations. He was for some years in frail health and lived quietly at Kihikihi in a house built for him by the government. There Seddon visited him in Mar 1894.

In Apr at the public expense a monument was erected to Rewi as 'an upholder of good between the European and Maori nations and a constant supporter of the seal of the treaty of Waitangi.' Two months later, on 21 Jun 1894, he died, widely honoured by both races. Physically Rewi was below the average height and somewhat slender. Europeans found him after the war careworn, sad and thoughtful.

*App. H.R.*, 1860-80, *pass.*; T. S. Grace (p); Gorst, *Maori King and N.Z. Revisited* (p); Cowan (p); *Sketches* (p); White (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Jun 1894 (p).

REYBURN, ROBERT (1809-92) was born in Scotland, and arrived in New Zealand in the

*John Scott* (1859). He settled at Whangarei, devoting himself at an early stage to fruit-growing. He was prominent in the Presbyterian Church, and represented Marsden in the Provincial Council (1868-73). In 1880 Reyburn returned to England, and lived for eight years at Macclesfield. He died on 21 Oct 1892.

*Parltry Record*; *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Oct 1892.

REYNOLDS, HENRY (1848-1925), who was born in Cornwall, came to New Zealand in 1868 in the *Maori*. He drained and managed the Piako swamp estate, in the Waikato, and in 1886, with his brother Richard, he established at Pukekura the first separator butter factory in the North Island. Reynolds paid a visit to England to investigate the market and opened a cool-storage depot. In 1896 when most of the pioneering obstacles had been overcome and the business had increased, he sold out to the New Zealand Dairy association. For a time he was interested in mining in the Hauraki peninsula, but, turning his attention to the Argentine, he took a prominent part in the development of the dairy industry there. For a short time before his death (on 22 Sep 1925) he resided in London.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Philpott (p); *The Dominion*, 23 Sep 1925.

REYNOLDS, WILLIAM HUNTER (1822-99) was born at Chatham, Kent, the son of Thomas Reynolds, a retired lieutenant of the Royal Navy, who invested in cork plantations in Spain and Portugal. Reynolds passed his early days at Oporto, but a revolution in 1828 compelled the family to leave. He was educated at Nicholson Street Academy and Fountain Bridge school, Edinburgh. At the age of 12 he returned with his parents to Oporto, and attended a school kept by an Englishman, on whose death he went into his father's business. In a few years he acquired a thorough knowledge of the stripping and preparation of cork for the market.

Returning to London in 1842, Reynolds found it necessary to study English afresh to acquire facility. For some years he managed the London house of the firm, which in one year had a turnover of £185,000. Then he went into business for himself in London. During these years Reynolds became acquainted

with James Macandrew (who married his sister), and he also conceived an interest in the Otago Association. They all sailed together for New Zealand in the iron schooner *Titan* (reaching Dunedin in Jan 1851). They acquired a house in High street, and their store was at the corner of Stafford and Manse streets. As soon as the merchandise had been put under cover, Reynolds set off on foot through south Otago as far as Jacob's river in search of produce to make a cargo for California, where the diggings had opened up a lucrative market. Before leaving on this voyage the *Titan* loaded at Hobart with produce and stores for the business. The vacant space was filled up with Otago potatoes, barley, and lime. The *Titan* reached San Francisco just after the great fire of 1851, and Reynolds not only disposed of the cargo at a good profit, but was able to buy a return cargo advantageously. Most of this he disposed of profitably in Sydney. Filling up there with cattle and sheep, he returned to Dunedin, having made a profit of £8,000 to £9,000 on the voyage.

Reynolds was soon appointed to the commission of the peace, and he was agent for Lloyds until 1888. While still a member of Macandrew and Co., he acted on occasion as managing editor of the *Otago Witness* during the absence of Cutten. The circulation of this sixpenny weekly was then only 130 copies, and when the compositors struck for overdue wages Reynolds, by means of an energetic canvass, raised the subscription list to 300, and handed the paper back to Cutten as a sound proposition. On the introduction of representative government (1853) he was elected to the Provincial Council for the City of Dunedin, and when the provinces were abolished (1876) he had the record of having been a member of the Council throughout. Between 1854 and 1865 he was eight times a member of the executive. In 1867 he was elected speaker, a position he held with dignity for three years. During his occupancy of the chair he introduced (or reintroduced) the practice of wearing gown and bands. Reynolds first went into Parliament for Dunedin and Suburbs South (against Vogel and Cutten) in 1863. Three years later, when Macandrew had been re-elected Superintendent and the Stafford Government refused to delegate to him the usual powers respecting

goldfields, feeling was so strong in Otago that those who had taken the side of the •Centralists'-Paterson, Reynolds, and Richardson-were hooted on their appearance in Dunedin. In the Waterhouse Government (1872) and that of Fox (1873) Reynolds was Commissioner of Customs, and he was Colonial Secretary in Vogel's ministry for a few months in 1873.

Though he had always been a provincialist at heart, he saw no hope of turning back the hands of the clock. Nevertheless, his retention of his portfolio cost him his seat in Parliament. In 1875 the Centralist candidates were beaten by over 400 votes by three provincialists-Macandrew, Stout, and Larnach. A few days later Reynolds was returned by Port Chalmers, and he afterwards took office in the Pollen Government. In 1876 he was strongly favoured for the speakership, but Vogel propitiated Fitzherbert with the post. Reynolds in 1878 resigned his seat, and was called to the Legislative Council, of which he remained a member until his death. On two occasions (1884-85 and 1886-87) he was a member without portfolio of the Stout-Vogel Government. In 1855 he went to Victoria, and succeeded in bringing to Otago in the *Gil Blas* a considerable number of immigrants. In 1856 the firm of Macandrew contracted with the provincial government to bring 2,000 immigrants from the United Kingdom. Reynolds went to London to superintend the shipping arrangements, while James Adam secured the immigrants. When Reynolds returned to New Zealand his partnership with Macandrew was dissolved, and he built some warehouses at the foot of Jetty street.

While he was provincial secretary Reynolds carried through the Otago education ordinance. The poll tax was not popular, and some of his constituents called upon Reynolds to resign. Once more he refused. He had his justification in the Otago system of education, recognised as one of the soundest in the colony. He was for some years a member of the board of school commissioners, a governor of the High Schools and a member of the board of church property. From 1869 he was a member of the council of Otago University. While Minister of Trade and Customs he promoted the establishment of a training ship for boys at Kohimarama as a means of dealing with ju-

venile crime. In Parliament he took charge of many measures affecting municipal government in Dunedin. He helped to reserve the town belt and to secure for the hospital the buildings used for the Exhibition of 1865. He was an original trustee of the Dunedin Savings Bank (1864), and remained one until his death. He was associated with the establishment of the Colonial Bank and was a director until the amalgamation with the Bank of New Zealand and was a director also of the Westport Coal Co., the Perpetual Trustees, Estate, and Agency Co., and the *Otago Daily Times* and *Witness* Co.

Reynolds married (1856) Rachel Selina (1838-1928), daughter of William Pinkerton (q.v.). He died on 1 Apr 1899.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z.P.J.J.*, 26 Jun 1899; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Hocken, *Otago; Col. Gent.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Apr 1899, 7 Mar 1930 (p).

RHODES, ARTHUR EDGAR GRAYENOR (1859-1922) was the third son of George Rhodes of the Levels. He was educated at Christ's College (1868-77) and at Jesus College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. and LL.B. 1880. In 1882 he was called to the bar at the Inner Temple, and two years later he commenced to practise law in Christchurch. In 1887 he was elected to represent Gladstone in Parliament, and in 1890 to represent Geraldine. He contested Pareora unsuccessfully in 1893 and 1896. Rhodes took a great interest in all forms of sport, and was president of the Canterbury Rugby Union and the Canterbury rowing association. In public life he was a member of the board of governors of Christ's College and of Canterbury College (some time chairman). He was a keen student of public finance, and was associated with many companies, being chairman of the New Zealand Shipping Co. and the Christchurch Press Co. and a director of the Waihi Goldmining Co. He was president also of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral association and a knight of justice of the Order of St John of Jerusalem. In 1901 Rhodes was elected unopposed as mayor of Christchurch, in which capacity he entertained the Duke and Duchess of York. In 1917 he was decorated with the O.B.E. He married (1892) Rose, daughter of J. W. Moorhouse. His death occurred on 26 Dec 1922.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1887-93 and 9 Feb 1923; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Woodhouse (p); *Christ's Coll. School List*; *The Press and Lyttelton Times*, 27 Dec 1922 (pp).

RHODES, GEORGE (1816-64), the fourth son of William Rhodes, of Epworth, and Balby, Yorkshire, spent his early years on his father's farm, and came to New Zealand in 1843, taking charge of the cattle station at Akaroa of W. B. Rhodes and Co. In 1847, with W. B. Rhodes (q.v.), he purchased Purau from the Greenwood brothers and made his home there until about 1850, when the three brothers in partnership took up numerous pastoral runs on Banks Peninsula and elsewhere in Canterbury. Applying for a licence for three runs in south Canterbury, they received the Governor's permission to occupy this country.

In 1851 Robert and George drove a mob of 5,000 sheep from the Peninsula runs southward. After considerable difficulty in crossing the rivers, they reached Timaru, and established the first sheep station in south Canterbury (which was then unoccupied by white people). In 1854 they were granted the first pastoral licences for runs outside the Canterbury block (numbers 1, 2, and 3), their country running from the Opihi river in the north to the Pareora in the south, and from the sea to the Snowy mountains, an area of about 150,000 acres. George managed the Timaru station, which was named the Levels. In 1858 they had 30,000 sheep on the run. It was from the Levels that James Mackenzie (q.v.) drove off a flock of 1,000 maiden ewes and took them through the mountains to the country afterwards known by his name. In 1851 the Government reserved an area for a township at Timaru (the position not being defined). In 1853 the Rhodes brothers bought 120 acres to the north of this reserve. Samuel Hewlings commenced to lay out the government town in 1856 and E. H. Lough laid out Rhodes Town, the two townships being divided by North street.

Rhodes took a keen interest in all stock, and also in the development of the town and district. He was a justice of the peace, and one of the first wardens of St Mary's Church, Timaru (for which the Rhodes brothers gave the land). He married (1854) Elizabeth, daughter of John Wood, of Retford, Nottinghamshire. His death occurred on 18 Jun 1864, and in

## RHODES

the following year the Levels was sold to the Canterbury and Otago Land Association. (See JOSEPH, A. E. G., and R. H. RHODES.)

Personal information from Mrs P. R. Woodhouse; Woodhouse; Andersen.

RHODES, JOSEPH (1826-1905) was born in England, the youngest son of William Rhodes, of Balby, Yorkshire. He went to sea very young, but returned home and in 1843 came to New Zealand, and spent about a year on the cattle station at Akaroa belonging to W. B. Rhodes and Co. Later he went to Australia, where he acquired property, and married Fanny, daughter of James Reid. In the early fifties he took up land in Hawkes Bay, known as Clive Grange estate, and brought his wife and family over to Port Ahuriri in his own vessel, which he commanded himself. He lived at Clive Grange until 1869, when he sold it, and from that time made his home at Milton Grange, Napier. He also acquired the Edenham and Springhill stations, both in Hawkes Bay.

Rhodes represented Clive in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council during the whole period of its existence (1859-75), and was a member of the executive in 1864, 1867, and 1869. He acted as deputy-superintendent every year (1863-71). In 1863 he was appointed captain in the Napier militia, with which he served at Omarunui. He was a justice of the peace, and a member of the first Napier harbour board. Rhodes married a second time in Australia. (See S. LOCKE.) He died in 1905.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; Woodhouse.

RHODES, ROBERT HEATON (1815-84) was born at Rotherham, Yorkshire, the third son of William Rhodes, of Epworth, Lincolnshire, and Plains House, the Levels, Yorkshire. He studied farming and surveying, and in 1837 sailed to New South Wales, where he managed the property belonging to his elder brother W. B. Rhodes (q.v.). In 1850 he came to New Zealand, and entered into partnership with his brothers W. B. and G., who were already settled in the country. The three held numerous runs in Canterbury under pasturage licence, including Akaroa, Purau, Kaituna, and Ahuriri on Banks Peninsula; and the Levels in south Canterbury. Robert made his home at Purau. In 1863, R. H. and G. Rhodes

## RHODES

and Robert Wilkin purchased the St Leonards station in the Waiau district and acquired other property in Canterbury and Otago. Rhodes held land in the North Island (frequently in partnership with his youngest brother, Joseph). In his business dealings and his management of the various estates, he showed keen foresight, tireless energy and thrifty husbandry, which did much to consolidate the fortunes of the family. He had a good knowledge of stock, and was judge of cattle at the first show held in Christchurch (1853).

In 1866 Rhodes moved from Purau to Christchurch, where he built a house and named it Elmwood. The Levels was sold in 1865; but the other large runs were held until the seventies, when most of the partnership property was disposed of.

Rhodes was one of the founders of the New Zealand Shipping Co. and Kaiapoi Woollen Co. He was chairman of the Canterbury Meat Preserving Co., and one of the first churchwardens of the Merivale church. He took an early interest in the political affairs of Canterbury. He was elected to the first Provincial Council in 1853, and sat almost continuously (for Akaroa, 1853-61; Port Victoria 1861-62; Bays 1862 and 1866-74). He was in the provincial executive (1869-70) and acted as deputy-superintendent during the absence of Roileston. Rhodes was M.H.R. for Akaroa (1871-74). He was a beneficent citizen, always generous to philanthropic movements. In memory of his brother George he donated the tower and peal of eight bells to Christchurch Cathedral, thus giving an impetus to the completion of the Cathedral.

Rhodes married (1858), Sophia Circuit, daughter of Robert Latter (Lyttelton). After his death (on 1 Jun 1884) his family built the Rhodes convalescent home to his memory.

A son, SIR ROBERT HEATON RHODES (1861-) was M.H.R. for Ellesmere (1899-1925) and M.L.C. (1926-). He was Postmaster-general (1912-15) and Minister of Defence (1920-26), and was created K.B.E. (1920) and K.C.V.O. (1927).

Family information from Sir Heaton Rhodes; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Woodhouse; Andersen; *Lyttelton Times*, 3 Jun 1884; *The Press*, 16 Aug 1930. Portrait: Parliament House.

RHODES, WILLIAM BARNARD (1807-78) was the eldest son of William Rhodes, of Ep-

## RHODES

worth, Lincolnshire, Plains House, the Levels, and Balby, Yorkshire. He went to sea at an early age, and in 1826 was second officer of the ship *Samdaney*, in which he sailed to India and China. He made other voyages to the east in trading vessels, and in 1831 commanded the brig *Harriet*, in which he held a third share (in partnership with Will Ashley and Porter). The next five years he spent trading in many parts of the world. In 1836 he sold the *Harriet* to Weller brothers and acquired property in Australia, including land which he stocked with sheep, cattle, and horses. In the same year he took command of the barque *Australian* (in partnership with Will Cooper and Levy, merchants, of Sydney), and he spent the next two years whaling in the Pacific and particularly round the New Zealand coasts, where he learnt something of the country.

In 1839-40, on behalf of Cooper, Holt and Rhodes, he established trading stations on the New Zealand coast, including one at Entry Island (Kapiti), of which he held the original grant. His claim to have purchased from the natives a large area in Hawkes Bay was disallowed by the commission. He purchased 100,000 acres of land at Akaroa from Captain Francis Leathart (who had acquired it from Taia-roa and other chiefs). In Nov 1839 he brought from Sydney in the barque *Eleanor* nearly 40 pure-bred Durham cattle and landed them at Akaroa, establishing the first cattle station in the South Island, and leaving William Green in charge. Rhodes gave up his seafaring life and made his home in Wellington, where he established himself as a merchant and landowner and erected at Te Aro in 1841 the first substantial wharf in the town. He advised his younger brothers (Robert Heaton, George, and Joseph, q.v.) to come to New Zealand, and with the two former took up large pastoral runs in Canterbury. These were managed by Robert and George, although William had a controlling interest for several years. The brothers imported large numbers of sheep from Australia. Rhodes also owned considerable property in the North Island, including Heaton Park estate, Rangitikei, and a large area now covered by the City and suburbs of Wellington. In the sixties, he built at Wadestown a fine home called The Grange. Practically the whole of the country between the

## RICH

Wadestown and Hutt roads, as far north as the Kaiwarra stream, he used as a run. In the sixties a herd of alpacas, imported from South America by the Provincial Council, was depastured here for some years, until the Government was forced to admit that the venture was hopeless financially. The alpacas were taken over by Rhodes, who sent them to Purau, Banks Peninsula. Among many undertakings in which Rhodes played his part were the establishment of the New Zealand Shipping Co., the Bank of New Zealand and the New Zealand Insurance Co. He was a man of great business ability, prudent and industrious. He was M.H.R. for Wellington Country District (1853-55) and for Wellington City (1858-66). In the Wellington Provincial Council (1861-69) he consistently supported Featherston. He was a member of the Legislative Council from 1871, until his death (on 2 Feb 1878).

Rhodes married first (1852) Sarah (d. 1862), daughter of John King, solicitor, Wellington; and second (1869) Sarah Anne, sister of William Sefton Moorhouse (q.v.). (See GEORGE, JOSEPH, and ROBERT RHODES.)

Family information from Mrs P. R. Woodhouse; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Woodhouse; Ward; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Call. ON.*; *The Dominion*, 7 Aug 1929; *N.Z. Times*, 3 Feb 1878; *Evening Post*, 24 Apr 1917, 19 Sep 1929. Portrait: Parliament House.

RICH, ALFRED GEORGE (1835-91) was a civil engineer. He came to New Zealand in the fifties, and had landed interests in Canterbury and Otago. He represented Kaiapoi in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1862-63).

RICH, FRANCIS DYER (1828-1901), arrived in New Zealand in the *Chelydm* (1840) with his father George Rich (a Somersetshire farmer, who brought to Auckland long-wooled sheep and Ayrshire cattle and later some merinos. G. Rich bought a portion of Clendon's grant at Manurewa). Rich was later in partnership with his father at Mount Eden, breeding sheep and selling them in Australia. He prospected the South Island, and as a result his father took half the stock to Canterbury and he took the other half to Otago. There he maintained the quality of his flock and herd and continued shipping animals to Australia. He was awarded a certificate for wool at the Dunedin Exhibition (1865). In

## RICHARDS

partnership with John Jones, Rich took up other runs in Otago and Canterbury. He purchased Bushey Park, which he cultivated highly and stocked with sheep, cattle, deer and game. While there he bought and developed the Shag Valley coalmine.

Rich was elected M.H.R. for Waikouaiti (1869), but sat only till the following year. He again contested the seat (in 1875) against G. McLean. In 1873 he bought Clive Grange and Matapiro in Hawkes Bay from Joseph Rhodes, selling the former soon afterwards to Whitmore and working Matapiro with his son-in-law (W. Shrimpton, q.v.), who afterwards bought him out. Rich paid a short visit to the Thames goldfield, and in 1878 took a share in the Patetere Land Purchase association (which acquired 250,000 acres of native land), and in the railway from Thames to Rotorua which would open it up. He promoted the railway company, which eventually sold the line to the Government. In 1881 he went to England and formed the New Zealand Thames Valley Land Co. (to take up 168,000 acres) which he managed from 1885. He leased the Woodstock estate at Okoroire, and introduced Chewing's fescue as a pasture grass. Rich died on 5 Dec 1901.

Roberts; Christie; New Zealand Exhibition, 1865 (report); *N.z. Herald*, 13 May 1893 (p); 9 Dec 1901. Portrait: Parliament House.

RICHARDS, ISAAC (1859-1936) was born at Tavistock, Devon, and educated at the Wesleyan College, Taunton, and at Exeter College, Oxford, where he graduated M.A. He was ordained deacon in 1882 and priest the following year, when he became curate of St Paul's, Truro. There he married (1885) Gertrude, daughter of Dr Robert Oxland. In 1886 Richards came to New Zealand and accepted the charge of St Mark's, Remuera. In 1895 he was appointed warden of Selwyn College, Dunedin, and five years later he became vicar of Tuapeka (and afterwards archdeacon of Queenstown). In 1916 he was appointed to St John's church, Invercargill, with the local archdeaconry, and subsequently canon of St Paul's, Dunedin. In 1919 he was elected Bishop of Dunedin (to which he was consecrated in Jan 1920), and he occupied the see until ill-health compelled his retirement early in 1934. He afterwards lived in Christchurch, where he died

## RICHARDSON

on 10 May 1936.

Richards was a man of high literary and theological attainments, charming personality and catholic sympathies. He published in 1912 *The Church in Danger* and later *The Lord and Giver of Life*. As a young man he played cricket at Oxford (where he captained his college eleven), and afterwards for Auckland province and for Otago (Opoho Club). His son, R. J. RICHARDS, M.A., became headmaster of Christ's College.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1932; *The Press*, 11 May 1936 (p); *Church Chronicle*, 1 Jun 1936; *Otago Daily Times*, 11 May (P).

RICHARDSON, EDWARD (1831-1915) was born in London. After receiving his education at the City of London school, he was trained as a civil engineer on the London and South-Western Railway Co., and as a mechanical engineer on the Great Southern and Western Railway of Ireland. Coming to Melbourne in 1852, he was employed by the government as road engineer until 1855, when he commenced business in partnership with George Holmes as a contractor. He was a member of the first volunteer corps in Melbourne and rose to be captain in the horse artillery. In 1861 he came to New Zealand under contract to construct the Christchurch-Lyttelton railway, which included the Moorhouse tunnel. The following year he was elected a member of the Institute of Mechanical Engineers. Entering public life in 1870, he was member for Lyttelton in the Canterbury Provincial Council till the abolition. He also sat in the House of Representatives for Christchurch City West (1871-75) and for Christchurch City (1875-81). From 1872 he held office as Minister of Public Works during the administrations of Waterhouse, Fox, Vogel, Pollen and Atkinson, until ill-health from ovenwork compelled him to resign (4 Jan 1877). (C.M.G. 1897.) Again elected to Parliament as member for Kaiapoi in 1884, he held office as Minister of Public Works in the Stout-Vogel Governments (1884 and 1884-87). He retained his seat until 1890. He was a member of the Legislative Council (1892-99). Richardson afterwards became manager of the Patent Slip Co. at Wellington. He died in 1915.

*N.z.P.D.*, 25 Jun 1915; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, iii; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *New Zealand Times*, 17 Oct 1892.

## RICHARDSON

RICHARDSON, FREDERICK HALL (1806-81) was born and educated at Cheltenham. He studied medicine in London, taking his L.S.A. in 1829 and M.R.C.S. the following year. He then settled down as a family doctor in Cheltenham for 20 years, varied with courses of study at Paris and Gottingen Universities. He married 1840 Mary Stokes (d. 1890), of Pauntly Court, Gloucestershire. In 1847 he was appointed an emigration medical officer. He was passionately fond of plants and flowers, and had a remarkable collection of them at his home in England.

In 1851 Richardson was appointed surgeon superintendent of the *Dominion*, in which he reached Otago in Sep. He at once entered into practice in Dunedin. In 1852 he walked to the Waitaki with F. L. Mieville with the object of selecting a sheep farm. This he did eventually in 1854 at Toitoto, Southland. His son (G. F. Richardson, q.v.) drove the sheep to the run and Richardson with his wife went there in the schooner *Endeavour*. He soon had a fine homestead at Oaklands, where he planted many imported trees and shrubs. He named the township of Wyndham after a Crimean general. In the early sixties Richardson returned to live in Dunedin and resumed practice. He was many years medical officer to the benevolent institution, and in 1874 was the first president of the Otago medical association. In 1865 he was one of the commissioners for the Dunedin Exhibition. Richardson was a staunch supporter of the Church of England, and took an active interest in the erection of St Paul's, which received many gifts from him. When he came to Otago he brought with him an organ and stained-glass windows which were used in the original St Paul's, and some doors, bolts and locks of the old Westminster school. He also assisted by means of endowments in the erection of All Saints' Church. He took part in the establishment of the Otago Medical School (1872). Richardson died on 16 Jul 1881.

Fulton (P); *Cycl. N.z.*, iv; Beattie, i, ii; *Otago Daily Times*, 18 Jul 1881.

RICHARDSON, GEORGE FREDERICK (1837-1909) was born at Cheltenham, England, his father being Dr F. H. Richardson (q.v.). Educated at the Rev Alexander Watson's school, he came to New Zealand by the *Dominion* in

## RICHARDSON

1851, finished his education at Dunedin, and spent some years on his father's run in Southland. In 1860 he entered the Government service, qualifying as a surveyor under James McKerrow. On the separation of Southland he joined the staff of that province under Heale, but shortly resigned his appointment to become town surveyor at Invercargill, with the right of private practice. After the reunion he was entrusted by Otago with the surveys of the district west of Matura. During this time he farmed at Oaklands and, as surveying shrank with the development of the province, he gave more attention to public affairs. He was a member of the road board and chairman of the Southland county council (1876-84). In 1884 he was elected to Parliament for Matura, which he represented until 1893 and again from 1896 till 1898. Richardson was Minister of Lands and Immigration in the Atkinson Government (1887-91), of Mines (1887-89) and of Agriculture (1889-91). During his retirement from Parliament 1893-96 he returned to his profession and established the firm of Richardson, Reardon and Co., Invercargill. In 1902 he again entered the Government service as computer in the Lands and Survey department and later was technical assistant to the land purchase commissioners. He was a member of the Institute of Surveyors for many years and president 1895-98, 1900-07 and finally in 1909. He was a man of high integrity, well-informed and witty.

Richardson married (1867) Augusta, daughter of Thomas J. White (Invercargill). He died on 25 Oct 1909.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Oct 1909; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; Beattie, ii; *N.z. Surveyor*, Dec 1909. Portrait: Parliament House.

RICHARDSON, SM GEORGE SPAFFORD (1869-1938) was born in England. Disliking commercial life, he enlisted in the artillery at Woolwich in 1887. For 16 years he served in the ranks, rose to master-gunner, and after a gunnery course at Shoeburyness was appointed gunnery instructor to the New Zealand Government in 1891. In 1907 he retired from the army, and was gazetted a captain in the New Zealand defence force. In 1912 he entered the Camberley Staff College in England, graduating the following year. Just before the war

of 1914-18, with the rank of major, he represented New Zealand at the War Office, and after hostilities commenced he helped to organise a force of 25,000 men (mainly of the Royal Naval Division) for the defence of Antwerp. He served as quartermaster-general of the Naval Division at Gallipoli, and in 1917 was appointed general officer commanding the New Zealand forces in England. (C.M.G. 1915; C.B. 1917; C.B.E. 1919; Legion d'honneur; Belgian Croix de Guerre.) From 1919 to 1923 he was in charge of administration in the Dominion, and from 1923 to 1928 (when he attended the mandates committee and Assembly of the League of Nations) he was administrator of Western Samoa. (K.B.E. 1926.) Returning to live in Auckland, Richardson was elected to the City Council, and was active in the cause of ex-servicemen. He died on 11 Jun 1938, and was survived by his wife, Caroline, daughter of William Warren of Wellington (married 1892).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; Studholme; *The Dominion* and *Evening Post*, 13 Jun 1938.

RICHARDSON, SIR JOHN LARKINS CHEESE (1810-78) was born in the Bengal Presidency, India. He was sent home for his education, and since he was destined for the Indian army he went to Addiscombe College. Early in 1829 he returned to India as an artillery cadet, passed for the Bengal Horse Artillery, and entered the service of the East India Company in 1830. For 22 years Richardson served with distinction. In the Afghan campaign he was with Pollock's army which forced the Khyber pass and reoccupied Kabul, and he distinguished himself in the attack on the forts. Three years later, when the Sikhs crossed the Sutlej, he was serving under Lord Gough and Sir Harry Smith. At Ferozeshah he carried a wounded soldier out of action under heavy fire, and was severely wounded himself. For these campaigns he received the medal, with several clasps. (2nd lieutenant 1828; lieutenant 1837; captain 1846). Appointed to the general staff, he was for some years in charge of the powder magazine at Durn-durn. He was secretary and treasurer to the Kabul relief fund, and became a personal friend of Havelock and Lawrence.

In 1850 Richardson visited Cape Colony on furlough, and in 1851 he retired from the ser-

vice. Next year he came to New Zealand in the *Slains Castle*, made long journeys in the south of Otago, and from Wellington made an adventurous trip overland to New Plymouth. These experiences are described in a scholarly volume, *A Summer's Excursion* (1854). About the same time he published a volume of blank verse, *The First Christian Martyr in New Zealand*. Having decided to settle at Puerua, in south Otago, Richardson returned to England to settle his affairs, and came out in the *Strathmore* (1856). He purchased Suisted's interest in the Otepopo run, north Otago, the other half of which was owned by Edward McGlashan. His disposition was to live the quiet life of a country gentleman, but after avoiding politics for three years he consented to be nominated for the Provincial Council, and was elected for Clutha in 1859. He was forthwith chosen as speaker, a position that threw upon him 18 months later the unpleasant duty of having to impeach the Superintendent (Macandrew) and to assume his office. The address which Richardson made at the time, full of reluctance and a sense of the pressing duty falling upon him, yet warm with indignation at the stigma resting upon the people of the province, is of a piece with the character of the man. Years later, when the people of Otago had again elected Macandrew Superintendent the rigid integrity of Richardson forbade him even to put to the Council the motion for the preferment of Macandrew to a public post, and stiffened the Stafford ministry against delegating to him the powers usually conferred for the administration of goldfields.

In May 1861 Richardson was formally elected Superintendent in Macandrew's place. Almost at once there was a great influx into the province from Australia and California of men of robust and liberal character. They wanted a more managing hand at the helm, and their votes elected John Hyde Harris Superintendent (17 Apr 1863). Richardson was returned to the Council for his old seat (Clutha), and was again speaker (1863-67). His constituents made him a presentation of £230 to recoup him for his expenses, and he devoted the sum to founding scholarships.

Meanwhile he had made a mark in the wider field of colonial politics. Nominated for Dunedin City early in 1862, he withdrew owing to

an informality; but a few months later defeated James Paterson. He resigned the seat at the end of the year, and a few months later was returned for Dunedin and Suburbs North, which he represented 1863-66. He lost his Dunedin seat owing to the return to popularity of Macandrew, and the fight between the provincialists and the centralists; but a vacancy was found for him in New Plymouth, for which he sat until his elevation to the Legislative Council in 1867. Richardson was a member of the Weld and Stafford ministries in the former as Postmaster-general and Commissioner of Customs (1864-65), and in the latter as a member of the executive without portfolio (1866-68). In 1868 he was appointed as speaker of the Legislative Council, a post in the gift of the Government, which he filled with dignity for the remainder of his life. High honours in colonial politics did not wean him from those of the province. Clutha again returned him to the Provincial Council (1873-74). In declining the speakership, he indignantly repudiated the suggestion that it was derogatory for one holding his position in the General Assembly to be speaker of a Provincial Council. 'No possible dignity can be conferred upon me,' he said, 'which would induce me to forego for a moment my rights as a citizen of New Zealand.' Richardson was knighted in 1875 in recognition of his services as Speaker and as New Zealand commissioner in the long and intricate investigation of accounts between Great Britain and New Zealand in respect of the services of Imperial troops in the Maori wars.

Gisborne says of him: 'He was an able, earnest, and conscientious man, guileless, and of whom it may with truth be stated that he was without fear and without reproach. He had a lovable simplicity of thought and character and a heart as courageous as that of a lion. Singularly unselfish, he only thought of his duty, and all his aspirations were pure and patriotic.' He was largely responsible for the passing through the Legislative Council of Bradshaw's factory act, and inspired Bradshaw and others in many social reforms. His pamphlet on the employment of women and girls in factories was published by Bradshaw in 1881.

Richardson was a stalwart in the cause of education. He had much to do with the founda-

tion of the Girls' High School in Dunedin, and of the Universities of Otago and of New Zealand. His pamphlet, *Thoughts on Female Education* (1870) embodied his views on the movement that was then at his heart. He succeeded Burns as chancellor of the University of Otago in 1871, and resigned in 1876. Richardson died on 6 Dec 1878.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; N.Z.P.D., pass.; App. H.R.*, 1877, B5, 5A; Richardson, *op. cit.*; Pearson; Gisborne; Reeves; Saunders; Beaglehole; Rusden; Hocken; *Otago Witness*, 28 Nov 1862, 22, 29 Oct 1870; *Bruce Herald*, 10 Dec 1878; *Otago Daily Times*, 7, 19 Dec 1878; 21 Feb 1930 (P). Portrait: Parliament House; Girls' High School, Dunedin.

RICHARDSON, JOSEPHUS HARGREAVES (1856-1932) was born in Nelson, the son of an early settler. He attended the bishop's school and Nelson College, distinguishing himself in mathematics (1871-73). Joining the civil service in 1874, he was appointed a cadet in the Government Insurance department, but afterwards spent four years in the New Zealand branch of the Mutual Life Association of Australasia (1878-82). Returning to the Government service, he rose to the position of insurance commissioner (1890). He was acting-commissioner of taxes and acting valuer-general (1910), and a member of the Public Trust investment board, the State Advances board, the Public Service Superannuation board, the Teachers' Superannuation board, and the board of appeal of the Land and Income tax department. Richardson was president of the Insurance Institute of New Zealand (1900), and, as a freemason, was past master of lodge Wellington and a founder of the grand lodge of New Zealand. He was created C.M.G. in 1918, and retired from the public service in 1923. He died on 10 Jan 1932.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Nelson Coll. D.B. Reg.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *The Dominion*, 11 Jan 1932.

RICHARDSON, RALPH (1812-97) was born at Capenhurst, in Cheshire, and educated at Chester Grammar School and Edinburgh University, where he graduated M.D. He then proceeded to Downing College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. and became a fellow. At the age of 28 he married a daughter of G. T. Seymour, of Wrackham, Somerset. In 1851 Richardson sailed in the *Maori* for New Zea-

RICHMOND

land and settled in Marlborough, where he bought the Meadowbank estate, near Blenheim. He never practised his profession. In 1853 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member for three years. He was chosen in 1856 for territorial reasons as a member of Fox's short-lived executive. Returning to England in 1858, he bought an estate in Devonshire and lived there until the eighties, when he removed to London. He died in 1897.

His son, RALPH RICHARDSON (1848-95) was member of Parliament for Nelson Suburbs (1871-73), when he resigned to return to England.

Family information from G. B. Richardson; *Parltry Record*; Saunders; Buick, *Marlborough*.

RICHMOND, ANDREW JAMES (1832-80), was a son of Matthew Richmond (q.v.), and came to New Zealand with his father (1840). In 1852 he became assistant private secretary to Governor Grey. For many years he managed Richmond Brook, Marlborough, for his father, and he always took a keen interest in the affairs of the district. In 1861 he was elected to Parliament for Collingwood, which he represented to 1868, and from 1873 to 1880 he represented Nelson Suburbs, where he was now residing. Richmond held moderate views in politics and spoke rarely. He married (1856) Anna Selina, daughter of Captain F. H. Blundell (11th Light Dragoons) who came to Nelson by the *Maori* (1851). He died on 15 Nov 1880.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1861-68, 1873-80; *NZ. Times*, 3 Dec 1880; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

RICHMOND, CHRISTOPHER WILLIAM (1821-95) was born in London in 1821, the eldest son of Christopher Richmond, a conveyancing barrister in the High Court of Chancery (who was himself admitted to the Middle Temple 1806, called 1812, and died 1832). William got his education first at the Hackney Grammar School in London, and later under Dr Richard Hutton at the Unitarian school at Hove House, Brighton. From his earliest youth he was delicate. This took him to France where he gained a facility in the French tongue, but he suffered increasingly from asthma throughout his life. Richmond did not proceed

RICHMOND

to either of the great universities, but at University College, London, he came into close association with leaders of thought and men of culture, making lasting friendships with Arthur Clough (the poet), William Shaen (the friend of Mazzini) and Richard Hutton (many years editor of the *Spectator*). The fine culture which distinguished him throughout life originated in these associations and developed in the rough surroundings and turbulent atmosphere of the colony of New Zealand. Destined for the law, Richmond entered at the Middle Temple in 1844, gained experience with a London solicitor (William Sharp), proceeded to the chambers of a famous conveyancer, Lewis Duval, and was called to the bar (1847) while with Charles Hall, after\ards vice-chancellor of England.

For some years Richmond practised in London. His future was determined by his indifferent health and his marriage (1852) to Emily Elizabeth Atkinson, of Frindsbury, Kent, sister of H. A. Atkinson (q.v.). Two of his brothers had gone to New Zealand to settle. William decided to join them. With his wife and his mother and sister and H. and A. Atkinson, he sailed in the *Sir Edward Paget*, arriving in Auckland on 25 May 1853. Without delay they proceeded to join the brothers, who had taken up farms between New Plymouth and Mount Egmont, in what was afterwards famous as the Grey and Bell district. Needless to say, the new surroundings were foreign to Richmond's past experience and his cultured and artistic tastes. The little West Country community that had settled the district needed strong arms and wise counsellors. Richmond was wise, at any rate. At the first meeting of the Provincial Council (Oct 1853) he was appointed provincial attorney and clerk under the superintendency of Charles Brown. Two years later, no other candidates coming forward, he was elected to the House of Representatives and to the Provincial Council for the town of New Plymouth. Gisborne and Saunders, from different political points of view, bear testimony to the purity of the political motives of Richmond, and his honest, generous, and lovable nature. Taranaki was his home and that of his relatives. The Taranaki settlers felt convinced and Richmond agreed with them—that they could win through to peaceful colonisation only by a strong policy towards the Maori. In Jun

RICHMOND

1856 his outstanding abilities and strong character prompted Stafford to invite him to be a member of the ministry. In the important offices of Colonial Secretary and Treasurer his amazing capacity for work and for conscientious detail overcame all obstacles and produced order out of chaos.

When Stafford went to England for a year, Richmond dominated the cabinet, and as native questions became more pressing, his opinions swayed the Governor (Gore-Browne), who in those days was responsible for native policy. Events moved irresistibly towards war in Taranaki. Gisborne says that: 'Once embarked in a cause, Richmond soon became an enthusiast. He was not influenced by mean or selfish motives, but in the assertion of what he considered a grand principle he was ready to throw aside all practical considerations.' Richmond was Minister of Native Affairs from the middle of 1858 till the end of 1860, a period full of tragedy. It fell to him to write the fateful message to the Superintendent of Taranaki intimating that the Governor, on the advice of his executive, intended to proceed with the survey of the Waitara block. This decision brought him into conflict-political only, for they were on terms of warm personal friendship with men like Selwyn and Hadfield, whose integrity was equal to his own, and whose concern for the Maori race was dominant. On the provincial question, too, he was at variance with many of his friends, for quite early he saw the defects of the system, the precarious position of minorities in the provinces if they were not protected by a strong central government. A man of less principle, or motives less translucent, could never have survived the tragedy of Waitara in the regard of his fellow-men on both sides of politics. Richmond was not happy in politics. He did what he conscientiously believed to be right and just; he reasoned clearly and logically; 'he was wealthy only in friends, in character, and in talents.' Throughout his political career he yearned for the quiet shades, for cultured society and intellectual exercise. His speeches abound in classical allusion and philosophical thought. He had entered political life only because no one else could be found for the New Plymouth seat. In relinquishing his seat in the Provincial Council, he confided to his friends as

RICHMOND

early as 1860 his yearning for more peaceful and philosophic occupation. His great intellectual and moral qualities designated him for the bench; but it would not have been surprising if his precarious bodily health had caused him to view with uncertainty the arduous days and nights which a judge must devote to his duty.

While in "political life Richmond had been interested in legal practice in Auckland in partnership with Whitaker. On going out of office in 1861, Richmond and Whitaker were appointed commissioners to adjust the provincial debt between Otago and Canterbury. They gave their award early in Aug. Otago was entering upon a wave of prosperity arising from the discovery of gold, and Richmond, now free of political ties, made up his mind to move to Dunedin, where he soon enjoyed a lucrative practice in partnership with Prendergast and T. B. Gillies. For some years, with Bell and Stafford, he was interested in a run in the Ida valley. Richmond was always interested in social and philosophic subjects, and delighted Dunedin audiences with his thoughtful lectures on democracy and the borders of metaphysics. He was interested also in art and literature, and was in particular a lover of Robert Browning.

On 20 Oct 1862 Richmond was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court. It was a post for which his qualities and talents were outstanding. He brought to his duties amazing powers of concentration and patient industry. His utterances were always terse, lucid, quiet, and forceful; his judgments keen in perception, logical in reasoning, and finished in diction. Henceforward he withdrew himself from association with public movements of any kind and with public companies. The independence and purity of the bench were with him a passion. A political critic says that 'no New Zealander has ever yet shone with more intelligence, more gentleness, or more justice.' His capacity for work was immense. As the end drew near he seemed more and more to seek relief from his bodily infirmities in intellectual recreation. As jurist, judge, and scholar he was not excelled in Australasia. His private life was irreproachable and his home life ideal.

From the time of his appointment to the bench Richmond was sole judge in Dunedin

RICHMOND

until 1864, when Chapman was appointed to assist him. In 1867 he was transferred to Nelson, with jurisdiction over that province and Westland, then booming with the new population attracted from all parts of the world by the gold discoveries. In Otago Richmond presided at the second trial of Captain Jarvey (1865). In Hokitika he heard the charges against the Fenian demonstrators. In 1873 he made his last move, to Wellington; and two years later he revisited England. Except for that respite, he fulfilled his heavy duties without cessation until 1893, when his health forced him to take a short rest. He was in the full exercise of his office when he died (3 Aug 1895). Though worn out with physical infirmity, he was preparing when he died a paper on Browning. Mrs Richmond died on 28 Nov 1906. (See J. C. and H. R. RICHMOND, H. A., W. S. and D. ATKINSON.)

Personal information Sir Frederick Chapman and F. J. Rolleston; family information from M. and E. Richmond; *Taranaki P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z.P.D.* and *App. H.R.*, pass (notably 1858-62); Richmond papers; Rusden; Saunders (p); Reeves; Cowan i; *Taranaki Herald*, 20 Jan 1862; *Nelson Examiner*, 8 Dec 1858; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Mar 1863, 6, 8 Aug 1895; *N.Z. Herald*, 31 Dec 1881, 6 Aug 1895; *N.Z. Times*, 4 Aug 1894, 6 Aug 1895; *Evening Post*, 5 Aug 1895, 25 Aug 1934 (p); *The Press*, 7, 10 Aug 1895. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

RICHMOND, DOROTHY KATE (1861-1935) was born in Auckland, a daughter of J. C. Richmond (q.v.), himself an amateur water-colourist of ability. She was educated in England and on the Continent and, winning a scholarship, spent two years at the Slade School of Art under Legros (1878-80). In 1899 she again studied in France and England and, returning to New Zealand in 1903, began teaching in Wellington. In 1904 she was elected to the council of the New Zealand Academy of Fine Arts, of which she became a life member in 1928. In her work, many examples of which are in galleries in New Zealand, she was a romantic, with a confident mastery of colour and brushwork. She used both oils and water colours, her chief works being landscapes, flower studies and still life. She died on 13 Apr 1935.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1924, 1932; *Art in New Zealand*, Sep 1935 (p); *The Dominion*, 15 Apr 1935.

RICHMOND

RICHMOND, HENRY ROBERT (1829-90) was born in London, the youngest of a family of four. His father, a barrister of considerable ability and reputation in the conveyancing department of the High Court of Chancery, died early. His mother (nee Wilson) was the daughter of a shipbuilder at Stockton-on-Tees. As a boy Henry spent some months with the family at Argilez, in the Pyrenees. Most of his early education he obtained (1838-44) at the school of University College in London, where he came under the notice of Professor Thomas H. Kay (the distinguished philologist). Proceeding to University College, Richmond distinguished himself in mathematics and chemistry (under Morgan), took lectures under Faraday and Tyndall, and is mentioned in a text book on chemistry as having discovered an error. He was a friend at this time of Richard Hugh Hutton (editor of the *Spectator*), and of his father the Rev Dr Hutton, whose ministry the family attended in the ancient chapel in Little Carter Lane, E.C.

With his brother J. C. Richmond (q.v.), Henry came to New Zealand in the *Victory* (Feb 1851). He married his cousin Mary Blanche, daughter of John and Helen Hursthouse. Richmond served in the Taranaki militia (captain 1850). He took for some years a prominent part in public affairs in Taranaki, representing Grey and Bell in the Provincial Council in 1857, and New Plymouth in 1869-73. For six months (1864-65) he was deputy-superintendent of the province, and in Sep 1865 he was elected Superintendent, an office which he held until 1869 along with the post of resident magistrate. In his superintendency campaign in 1869 Richmond undertook to be the representative of both races. He believed that in matters of crime there should be one law for all, but in other matters certain allowance should be made for the Maori, otherwise they would be driven into the interior. They could not rise to the level of civilised beings at once, and he had proposed to D. McLean a native council to help the civil commissioner in promoting their improvement.

For a short time Richmond was editor of the *Taranaki News*, and later he established a school in New Plymouth (of which Truby King and E. Rawson were pupils). A few years later he decided to qualify in law, and during

RICHMOND

the years 1875-77 he was in the office of Fell and Atkinson, at Nelson. Passing his examinations, he was duly admitted at the age of 45 and returned to practise in New Plymouth. A man of high intellectual attainments, warm-hearted and generous, he was widely respected both in Taranaki and Nelson. He had advanced views on scientific subjects and published more than one pamphlet setting forth theories regarding the atom which were later recognised.

Richmond died at Christchurch on 7 Dec 1890. After the death of his first wife, Richmond married (1868) Emma, daughter of R. Parris. She was a member of the Taranaki education board (1886-89). (See also C. W. RICHMOND.)

*Taranaki P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *C'd. N.z.*, vi.; Richmond papers, pass; 'Vells; Selfern; *Taranaki Herald*, 8 Dec 1890.

RICHMOND, JAMES CROWE (1822-98) was born in London, the son of Christopher Richmond, and brother of C. W. Richmond (q.v.). The Richmonds being Unitarians, James went to the Unitarian School at Hove House, Brighton, under Dr Hutton. He then went to University College, London, and trained as a civil engineer in the firm of Samuda, where he made the acquaintance of a fellow student, John Atkinson, thus initiating an important family relationship. (See H. A. ATKINSON.) After qualifying, Richmond was employed for some time under Sir Isambard Brunel, then engineer to the Great Western railway. Already he showed great ability as a painter in water colours. Though he had little teaching, he studied the work of contemporary artists and made substantial progress. His tastes throughout life were distinctly artistic. The health of an elder brother, Christopher William, made it desirable that the family should leave England. James and Henry sailed in the *Victory* and on 1 Feb 1851 they landed in Auckland. After a few days there they set out on foot overland to Taranaki by way of the Waikato and Kawhia. During this journey they gained their first acquaintance with the Maori people.

In 1852 he contested the Taranaki seat in the Legislative Council of New Ulster. The Richmond and Atkinson families took up their farm sections together between New Plymouth

RICHMOND

and Egmont. The first section, a small one, had been partly cultivated by a former holder. They added to it, and, when the rest of the family arrived (1853) they increased their total area to 1,000 acres, in eight holdings. To the present day there are paddocks known as 'Uncle James's: 'Uncle Henry's' and 'Uncle Arthur's.' Shortly after settling down James returned to Europe, where he married Mary Smith, a first cousin of the Atkinsons, and a sister of the second wife of H. A. Atkinson. He spent some time on railway construction work under an English company near Namur, in Belgium; and also before returning to New Zealand did a considerable amount of painting in the isle of Arran. They had not been long in New Zealand before native affairs assumed an unfavourable aspect. The Rawiri-Katatore feud had plunged the Maori into a desultory tribal war. When the Taranaki Volunteer Rifle company was formed (1858) under C. Brown (q.v.), Richmond joined as a private, and was second only to Messenger as a rifle shot.

In Nov 1858 he was persuaded to allow himself to be elected to the Provincial Council for the Grey and Bell constituency. Shortly afterwards he and T. King were appointed to the executive by the Superintendent. (Cutfield, q.v.) That Richmond's disposition towards the Maori was very friendly was attested by his contributions to the *Taranaki Herald*. Early in 1860 the Governor (Gore-Browne) wrote intimating that he intended to proceed with the Waitara purchase. The executive earnestly advised Cutfield to apprise the Governor of the probable issue of his policy before allowing the surveyors to commence the work. Cutfield disagreed, but Richmond and King insisted, on threat of resigning, and Richmond as provincial secretary carefully drafted a letter stating that the province would support the Government but repeating the warning that hostilities were liable to be far-reaching. When fighting commenced Richmond was in the field as a volunteer and inspector of defences. He was present at the fiasco at Ratapihipihi and the night operations after Waireka (Mar 1860) searching for stragglers. His own farm was raided, and the stock driven off. The house was preserved by the Maoris as a convenient rest-place, but was accidentally burned after the

war by carpenters engaged on reconstruction.

In the middle of 1860 he was elected to the General Assembly as representative of Omata. 1861 was a dark year for the province. On Cutfield's retirement from the superintendency Richmond contested it against Brown and was defeated by 167 votes to 98 (24 May). In his election campaign he strongly urged the settlers, weak and few as they were, to adopt a conciliatory tone in their peace demands and to remember that those who were then enemies were potential friends. The Stafford Government's policy was very distasteful to Taranaki, and Richmond suffered politically from his relationship with the Colonial Treasurer (C. W. Richmond). A week later he was re-elected to the Provincial Council, though at the bottom of the poll. Later in the year he decided to remove with his young family to the less troubled atmosphere of Nelson. He and King were personally responsible to the extent of £4,000 for relief in housing and feeding fugitive settlers. He had been correspondent for some time of the *Nelson Examiner*, and he moved to that province on receiving the offer of the editorship of that paper. While there he also practised occasionally his profession as consulting engineer to mining companies. In Mar 1862 Richmond was appointed by the Superintendent (J. P. Robinson, q.v.) to the post of provincial secretary. In Nov he became commissioner of crown lands for the province. In this capacity he made many overland journeys on horseback down the west coast and to Canterbury, and some voyages by the ketch *Jane* down the coast. These travels enabled him to add to his collection of sketches, and he made drawings of the coal seams at Brunner. Until Jan 1862 Richmond remained M.P.C. for Grey and Bell, and actively assisted in the succour of the Taranaki refugees in Nelson. He also continued throughout his sojourn in Nelson to be member of Parliament for Omata. In Aug 1864 he regularised his position in the provincial executive by becoming member of the Nelson Provincial Council (for Amuri).

1865 was a year of great significance in his life. Saunders came into office as Superintendent on the death of Robinson (Mar), and Richmond resigned from the executive, it being considered that this post was incompatible with his tenure of the commissionership of

crown lands. In Jun Weld offered him the post of Colonial Secretary with a seat in the Legislative Council. He accordingly resigned from the House and the Provincial Council. His wife having died, he moved with his family to New Plymouth to be near their relatives. The short tenure of office of the Weld ministry (11 months) was a very difficult time. Weld was pledged to work for peace by an amnesty, by making roads and by assuming sole responsibility for native affairs; in short by self-reliance. He at once removed the seat of government to Wellington, and had the satisfaction of seeing his policy hopefully initiated before his Government was defeated (Oct 1865). Richmond incurred subsequent odium for having, as Colonial Secretary, signed the proclamation confiscating lands in Waikato. In Mar 1866 he took the opportunity of returning to the popular chamber (as member for Grey and Bell), and a few months later (Aug) Stafford invited him to join the ministry. The portfolios which he took were nominally those of Customs and Stamp Duties. Stafford explained in the House that native affairs had so much improved that there appeared to be no longer any specialty in dealing with them: As long as there was a line of demarcation between the management of European and of native affairs there would continue to be causes of dissatisfaction and irritation, and he thought it a step in the right direction to do away with the office of native minister. Though Richmond accepted these essentially civil portfolios, he was destined immediately to have the native problem upon his shoulders in a very insistent form. He rode hundreds of miles visiting restless native tribes, dealing tardy justice to wronged hapus and rewarding with adequate reserves the good service rendered by Taranaki chiefs at the wreck of the *Lord Worsley*. In Sep 1866 he was chairman of the native affairs committee, and was answering all questions under this head. In Jun 1867 he was openly addressed as Native Minister, and in that capacity he attended a great native gathering in Poverty Bay, where he delighted the tribe by withdrawing any claim to the land on the part of the Government on the understanding that they did not dispute amongst themselves.

Throughout this year the Hauhau rising had extended from district to district. When por-

tion of the Ngati-Ruanui tendered their submission Richmond went with Parris to Patea after a tribal meeting at which Hone Pihama presided, and five considerable reserves were set apart upon which this chief and his followers lived peaceably through the succeeding years of trouble. Richmond as Native Minister acted throughout the war in close association with the Defence Minister (Haultain, q.v.) and spent many weeks in the field. It was due to the dissuasion of Governor Bowen that he did not open friendly conversations with the Maori King at his headquarters in the Waikato. Early in 1868 he sent Rolleston, the Native Secretary, to the Chathams to report on the prisoners from Poverty Bay (including Te Kooti, q.v.), who were interned there. On his recommendation the period of banishment was extended, but the guard was so reduced in strength that Te Kooti was encouraged to make his escape. In Jul he appeared at the head of an invading force in Poverty Bay. In this emergency Richmond showed remarkable energy and resource. He at once went to Poverty Bay (with McLean) to see that the garrison of Wairoa and the settlers were in a state of preparedness. Arrangements were made for erecting a redoubt and stockade at Poverty Bay, and Richmond specially warned Major Biggs not to allow settlers or friendlies to sleep outside the pa. Then he went south and assisted in bringing up a force of 200 European troops under Whitmore (q.v.). He remained with the force on the march for some days; personally helped to carry wounded natives on a litter, and persuaded the Ngati-Porou contingent to pursue the enemy. Then he went to Maketu and Rotoiti, and brought reinforcements from the loyal tribes to assist in the reduction of Ngatapa. He started with Whitmore's column from Matata, but left shortly afterwards to organise a third force to operate from Wairoa towards Waikaremoana. Having handed over the command of this new column to Herrick, Richmond proceeded to Waikaremoana to construct a flotilla of boats to carry the column across the lake. On the day the force started the orders were countermanded, as Te Kooti had withdrawn to the westward. Richmond had no part or responsibility in the offering of a reward of £1,000 for Te Kooti's capture. The defeat of the Government in Jun 1869 put an end to his

active participation in the campaign. The responsibility for native affairs fell to McLean, though the office was not revived in name until 1872.

At the dissolution late in 1870 Richmond found himself strongly opposed to the rising mana of Vogel. He contested two seats simultaneously without success. In Nelson he was third on the poll to Curtis and Lightband, and in Wellington City he was defeated by Pearce, Hunter and Travers. If Brown had retired he would have stood for his old constituency, Grey and Bell.

Out of Parliament at last, Richmond left in 1872 for England with his three eldest children. While they were at school he lived in the Tyrol and Switzerland, and did much painting. For three years (1873-76) he was engaged under an English company on railway construction in Algeria, between Oran and Tlemcen. Another three years he spent in London, and in 1880 the combined families returned to New Zealand. In Melbourne they picked up John Gully (q.v.), and the two artists spent some time sketching at Milford Sound, the first point at which they landed in New Zealand. Richmond settled down in Nelson, made one more attempt to enter Parliament by contesting the Waimea seat (1881), and then lived the retired life of an artist. He was called again to the Legislative Council in Mar 1883, and left his studio each session to attend to his duties in Wellington until his final retirement (7 Jul 1892). Richmond died on 19 Jan 1898 and was buried at Otaki.

Gisborne describes Richmond as being talented without genius, and philosophic without enthusiasm. His ability is above the average and his mind is cultured and well stored with information. His speeches, in spite of a rather hesitating delivery, are pointed and forcible. He has not the faculties which secure the highest distinction in political life. His mind is too bent on refining, and is of that wavering order which hesitates when promptitude and decision are needed. His political opinions generally were moderate and sensible, but unfortunately they were, in native affairs, characterised by that fatal idea . . . that the native race needed to be made, once for all, loyal by force, and that peace, to be permanent, must be conquered: A straightforward nobility of

RICHMOND

character and high principles were evident to his contemporaries. It may aptly be said, in the words of one who knew him, that his temperament was ideal and poetic rather than practical. He detested the clamour and dust of the parliamentary arena.' His intellectual recreations were painting (with definite flashes of genius), writing verse and reading the classics in Greek, Latin, Italian, French and German. His tomb bears Johnson's epitaph on Goldsmith: 'He touched nothing that he did not adorn.'

Family information; *Taranaki and Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *N.Z.P.D.*, pass (notably 7 Sep 1865, 18, 25 Jun 1869, 1 Aug 1888); Gisborne (p); Rusden; Saunders; Gudgeon; Cowan, ii; *Art in New Zealand*, Mar, Sep 1932; *Evening Post*, 18 Sep 1934 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

RICHMOND, MATHEW (1801-87) was the son of Major Richmond (of Kilmarnock, Scotland) and of the Scots Greys. His father having died in 1808, he entered the Royal Military College (1814), but left in 1817 and went to South Africa. In 1820 he received his commission as ensign in the Cape Corps, from which he transferred in the following year to the 11th Regiment of Foot. (Lieutenant 1823; captain 1826; to 96th Regiment 1839; major 1841.) He served in Canning's expedition to Portugal in 1828-29 and in the Ionian islands (1829-38). While acting as resident in the island of Paxo, he earned the reputation of a just, mild and efficient administrator, and a man of moral habits and dear judgment. He received a gold medal on leaving and was farewelled by the Regent, the bishop and other high dignitaries. Richmond then went to New Brunswick as deputy-judge-advocate, and from there with his regiment to New South Wales.

In Jun 1840 he was appointed one of the commissioners to examine claims to land in New Zealand. He was in Wellington at the time of the Wairau affair (1843) and maintained order and control in the whole district of New Munster. On 12 Jul he was appointed chief police magistrate for the Southern division, and a few months later Superintendent of the Southern Division (1 Feb 1844). In this capacity Riclillond had onerous and trying duties to perform for several settlements, including Nelson and Wellington, which demanded all his tact and courtesy. During the

RIDDIFORD

outbreaks in Wellington in 1845 he was commanding the forces. Having retired from the army he was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the Wellington militia battalion (23 Jul 1845) and had charge of the disposition of the militia and volunteer forces until the arrival of the regular troops.

In 1847, Eyre having arrived as lieutenant governor, Richmond proceeded as resident magistrate to Nelson. In 1848 he was deputed by Governor Grey to arrange the details of the purchase of 40,000 acres of native lands at Wanganui. In 1853 he retired from his post as magistrate, and in the same year was called to the Legislative Council as a recognition of the highly important services he had rendered to the local government for many years, during which very arduous duties had devolved upon him.' He remained a member until his death, being chairman of committees for some years (1865-79). He was commissioner of crown lands for Nelson (1853-58). (C.B. 1860.) Richmond died on 5 Mar 1887.

G.B.O.P., 1844, xxii/556; 1845/131; 1846/337; 1847/763, 892; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1853-87; *N.Z. Ga%*, 1845 et seq; Cowan; Ward (p); Broad; Buick, *Marlborough*. *The Colonist*, 24 Mar 1887. Portrait: *Nelson Evening Mail*, 11 Dec 1926; Parliament House.

RICHMOND, MAURICE WILLIAM (1860-1919), son of James Crowe Richmond, was educated at Nelson College (1869-73). He afterwards spent several years in Berne, Switzerland, and took science lectures at Heidelberg and at University College, London, graduating B.Sc. with honours in experimental physics (1880). He then studied law in New Zealand and practised from 1883 till 1900, when he was appointed lecturer at Victoria College. In 1904 he graduated LL.B. He was lecturer in constitutional history and jurisprudence (1903-05) and professor of English and New Zealand law (1906-11). He practised law in Christchurch from 1916 to his death on 26 Feb 1919.

*The Spike (Vict01'ia College Review)*, JULI 1905 (p); *Nelson O.B. Reg.*; *The Press*, 27 Feb 1919.

RIDDIFORD, DANIEL (1814-75) was the stepson of Dr G. S. Evans (q.v.), whom he accompanied to New Zealand in the *Adelaide*, arriving in Port Nicholson in Mar 1840. Riddiford brought out a house in sections, and erected it

RIDINGS

at Pipitea. After acting for a few years as an agent for the New Zealand Company, he moved to the Hutt and erected a new home, Woburn. About 1845 he purchased the Orongorongo property, where the family lived for 10 years, returning to Woburn after the earthquake of 1855. The Te Awaiti property (including Tora, Lagoon Hills and Tuturumuri) was acquired about 1850. Riddiford died on 20 Mar 1875.

*NZ.C.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *St John's Parish Mag.*, Jul-Oct 1938; *NZ. Times*, 24 Mar 1875.

RIDINGS, RICHARD (1808-68), born in England, came in the *Bombay* to Wellington (1840) and reached Auckland in 1843. For some years he held a responsible position in the post office, from which he retired to enter into business with his brother-in-law (W. Connell) as auctioneers and commission agents. In this he gained a competence which enabled him to retire in 1865. Ridings was one of the earliest members of the Auckland town board, and served for some years in the Provincial Council (representing Northern Division 1863-64 and Auckland East 1865-66). He was a strong separationist. He was a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank, and a director of the Bank of New Zealand and of the New Zealand Insurance Co. Ridings died on 15 Oct 1868.

*Southenz Cross*, 16 Oct 1868.

RIEMENSCHNEIDER, JOHANN CARL (1817-66) was born at Bremen, Germany, and educated at the free schools there and at the Sunday schools, where arithmetic, writing, reading and SO'ipture were taught. He was much influenced by the preadling of Hermann Muller, in the parish of St Stephen'S. 'Working as an errand boy, he continued his studies as a member of the Bremen young people's club (formed in 1834). The North German Missionary society was formed in 1836, and between the years 1837-42 Riemenschneider and Wohlers (q.v.) were fellow students at the mission house in Hamburg. They studied the classics and subjects likely to aid them in mission work (including English, geography, natural history, algebra, trigonometry and music), and travelled together during their holidays. With Trost and Heine they reached Nelson in the *St Pauli* (15 Jun 1843). After ministering to the German colonists at Nelson for some time Riemenschneider proceeded in 1844 to found a mis-

RIES

sion at Taupo but, finding the district already occupied by the Catholic missionaries, he settled at Motu Karamu, on the Mokau river (Taranaki). There he laboured for a number of years, being the spiritual teacher of both Te Whiu and Tohu, upon whom his teaching had great influence. On the outbreak of the Taranaki war he acted as a go-between for the Government with the Maori tribes, and made a valuable report to Colonel Gold (15 May 1860).

The natives having turned against religion, Riemenschneider was advised by them and by the Governor to leave the district. He moved his family to Nelson (Feb 1861), but returned himself to his station. In 1862 he was offered the post of missionary to the Maori in Otago and he settled at Otago heads, where he preached and kept a school. In 1863 he became a minister of the Free Church of Scotland.

Riemensdmeider married (1849) Katherine, daughter of the Rev William Woon. He died on 31 Aug 1866.

*App. H.R.*, 1861; Richmond papers; Wohlers; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; L. Tiesmeyer, *Eine Deutsche Missionarbeit auf Neu-Seeland*, 1875; Buller; Carey; C. S. Ross, *The Story of the Otago Church and Settlement* (1887).

RIBS, HANS MADSEN (1860-1926) was born in Schleswig, Denmark, one of the large family of a small farmer. After receiving a sound primary education in his native village, he took a position as teacher in a public school. Deciding to become a missionary in India, he entered the Lutheran divinity school in his native province, where he spent five years. His health then appeared unequal to life in the tropics, and in 1886 he accepted a call to the new Danish settlement at Norsewood, where he was ordained and commenced his ministry in 1887, the year before the settlement was swept by fire. He married in 1887 and shortly afterwards became honorary minister and entered into business to supplement his stipend. In 1890 he brought from Denmark another party of settlers, including his mother and sisters.

Ries erected on his own property and managed for six months the first butter factory in southern Hawkes Bay, and he began to import machinery required by the rise of the dairy industry. In 1895, being relieved of ministerial duties by the arrival of two clergymen from Denmark, he moved to Dannevirke and opened

## RIKIHANA

a large business, H. M. Ries and Sons. In an honorary capacity he ministered to the Lutherans living in and around Dannevirke, and as president of the Evangelical Lutheran Emanuel Convention of New Zealand and Queensland he paid a visit to Australia. He took a leading part in public affairs, being at different times a member of the borough council and five years mayor (1905-10); chairman of the technical school, a member of the Hawkes Bay hospital and charitable aid board, the education board, the Waipawa county council and licensing committee, and the Dannevirke power board. He was on the executive of the Hawkes Bay district lodge of Foresters and the friendly societies' council; chairman of the Dannevirke hospital board, and vice-president of the chamber of commerce. He was a Liberal in politics and a strong advocate of no-license. He died on 14 Apr 1926.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Dannevirke Evening News*, 15 Apr 1926; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 16 Apr 1926.

RIKIHANA, WIREMU (1849-1933), a leading chief of Rarawa, was born at Hokiangā in 1849, a member of the renowned Papahia family. He was one of the most respected chiefs of the north; a leading authority on Maori history and lore; a devout Roman Catholic and a lifelong teetotaler. In 1883 he took up his residence at Kaihu on a block of 200 acres which was presented to his father by Parore in recognition of services rendered by the Rarawa to the Ngati-Whatua tribe. Eventually this block became the site of the town of Kaihu. In 1923-30 Rikihana was a member of the Legislative Council. He died on 10 Jul 1933.

*NZ.P.D.*, 1923-30 (and 22, 26 Sep 1933).

RING, CHARLES (1822-1906) was born in Guernsey, the son of William Joseph Ring, who lost his money in a bank failure and emigrated to Tasmania. Educated at Hobart, he left in his teens for Adelaide and entered into business. His premises were burned down (1841) and he decided to come to New Zealand.

Arriving in Wellington in 1841, he proceeded to Auckland and bought two farms, one near the pa at Onehunga and the other at Mt Roskill, for which he bought 500 sheep from James Busby and two cargoes of cattle from New South Wales. A hitch having occurred in re-

## RING

celvmg the crown grant for his land, he sold the cattle at auction and, with his brother Fred, sailed in the brig *Fanny* for California. Purchasing a boat there, they prospected some of the rivers. In hastening from the Yuba to the Sacramento rush, Ring lost all his merchandise by the capsizing of his boat. In disgust he decided to return to Australia. Taking passage in the Dutch barque *Ceres*, he was wrecked on a reef in Fiji. The survivors, trying to reach Queensland in an open boat, were picked up by an American whaler, who brought them back to Auckland. Ring believed some of the disappointed miners from the *Ceres* might be induced to prospect in New Zealand. Accordingly on landing (23 Sep 1852) he interviewed Whitaker and Heale to ascertain whether a bonus would be offered for the discovery of gold. A public meeting was held and arrangements made for the offer of a reward for such a discovery between 34.50 and 38 degrees south latitude. Ring and his brother, finding themselves unable to leave for Australia (as no vessel was advertised to sail) turned their attention to the Coromandel and Thames ranges, where they considered the geological formation resembled that of California. In 1852 they discovered gold at Cabbage Bay (Coromandel), at McCaskill's Driving Creek (Ohinemuri) and at Te Aroha. Horetā Taniwhā resented their activities, but finally allowed them to proceed. Ring hurried to Auckland and reported his find, showing samples of the gold. The committee was not satisfied that the gold had not come from California. Eventually W. S. Graham lent the schooner *Undine* to take the prospectors and a deputation to the field (accompanied by interpreters and the native secretary, Nugent). The deputation was satisfied that the gold was there, but the committee wished to ascertain whether it was in paying quantities. The Ring brothers accordingly registered their claim to the reward. This was not granted, but in 1870 they received £200 from the provincial government 'as a matter of grace not of right.' The Rings were engaged in mining enterprises for many years subsequently. Charles lived in Auckland from 1875, and died there on 24 Mar 1906.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Galvin, *Mining Handbook*; Weston; C. Ring in *N.Z. Herald*, 14 Sep-26 Oct, 30 Nov 1895; *NZ. Herald*, 26 Mar 1906.

## RIPAHAU

RIPAHAU, or MATAHAU, was a southern native who was taken as a slave to Bay of Islands. His master having been killed, he lived for some years at the mission stations, where he received regular instruction. When the Ngāpuhi were fighting with the Arawa against the Thames tribes he started overland for the south, visiting relatives at Taupo and Rotorua. At Otaki his knowledge of the Scriptures evoked the interest of Tamihana te Rauparaha and Matene te Whiwhi, and for some months they studied together, reading from a single copy of the Prayer Book and writing on scraps of paper obtained from the whalers. They gathered a few other students about them and retired for security to Kapiti. Ripahau later went to Wai-kanae, where he was well received by Te Rangitake and married his daughter. On 30 Nov 1839, after the battle of Kuititanga, he was selected to ratify the peace between Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Awa. On 4 Dec he was baptised by the Rev Henry Williams with the Christian name 'Hohepa.' Wi Kingi himself was soon aftenwards baptised. Tamihana te Rauparaha and Matene te Whiwhi earnestly demanded a missionary for their people, and Williams had almost decided to go himself. Octavius Hadfield, who was in ill-health, had just arrived from England with Bishop Broughton. He volunteered for the post, and was ordained and appointed.

Jacobs; Carleton; W. Williams; Ward; E. J. Wakefield; Selwyn, *Annals*.

RITCHIE, JOHN DOUGLAS (1853-1933), son of Alexander Ritchie, a farmer, was born at Cupar Angus, Scotland, and educated at the Cargill parish school and at the Perth Academy. Arriving in New Zealand in 1877 by the *Halcione* he took up farming at Mount Royal, Otago, and in 1891 joined the public service as chief inspector of stock. In the following year he became Secretary for Agriculture. In 1909 he took charge of the Lands for Settlements department, and as land purchase officer acquired over 800,000 acres for the state. Retiring in 1927, he died in Wellington on 30 Jul 1933, survived by his wife, Margaret, daughter of James McKerrow (q.v.).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post*, 31 Jul 1933.

## ROBERTS

ROBERTS, SIR JOHN (1845-1934) was born in Selkirk, Scotland, and attended the Cheltenham Grammar School, the Edinburgh Academy and the Edinburgh Institution. On leaving school he spent two years in his father's woollen mill in Selkirk before sailing for Australia in 1864 to study wool production. After four years he came to New Zealand and founded the firm of Murray, Roberts and Co. in Dunedin in 1868. In public life he was a member of the Otago Provincial Council for Kaikorai (1873-75) and for many years chairman of the Taieri county council. He was mayor of Dunedin in 1889, president of the New Zealand and South Seas Exhibition (1889-90), and a member of the council of Otago University (1885-1921). Four times he was president of the Otago Agricultural and Pastoral association, and he was on the Otago harbour board and chamber of commerce. He was a member of the royal commission on federation in 1901 and of that on enemy aliens in 1915. Roberts was a director of the New Zealand Refrigerating Co., the Mosgiel Woollen Co., the Union Steam Ship Co., the Milburn Lime and Cement Co., the Dunedin Saleyards Co., the New Zealand Hardware Co., the Colonial Bank, Donaghy's Rope and Twine Co., and the Trustees, Executors and Agency Co. (C.M.G., 1891; K.B., 1920.) In 1932 he was admitted a freeman of Selkirk. He died on 13 Sep 1934, surviving by 12 years his wife Louisa, daughter of Charles H. Kettle (q.v.).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (P); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Otago Witness*, 21 Jun 1932 (p); *Evening Post*, 14 Sep 1934.

ROBERTS, JOHN MACKINTOSH (1840-1928) was born in Bombay and educated at the Academy at Inverness. At 15 he came to New Zealand in the *Carnatic* with his parents, who took up land at Hunua, Auckland. In 1860 he went in a small schooner to Otago and tried his luck at Gabriel's Gully. At the beginning of the Waikato war the farm buildings were burned by hostile natives, and Roberts joined the Forest Rangers under Major Jackson (Aug 1863). In Nov he was given his ensigncy in von Tempsky's company, and in Mar 1864 promoted lieutenant. He was an intrepid scout and bush fighter and earned the title of 'Deer-foot' in von Tempsky's diary. He distinguished himself at Rangiaowhia and Harini (Feb 1864).

## ROBERTS

At Orakau he and Captain Ring led the stonning party, Ring being mortally wounded (2 Apr).

At the conclusion of hostilities Roberts was appointed resident magistrate at Rotorua, with charge also of the Taupo district. In 1868 he was gazetted sub-inspector of the Armed Constabulary and proceeded with that force from Waikato to Patea on the outbreak of hostilities. Serving again under von Tempsky he was present at the relief of Turuturumokai (12 Jul) and was left in command of that post. At Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu (7 Sep) he recovered the body of von Tempsky and, returning for Buck, found him dead. He very skilfully led 80 men out of the ambush, showing reckless bravery and having narrow escapes. He displayed resolute bearing, coolness, courage and judgment on this occasion. At the battle of Moturoa two months later (7 Nov) he covered the retreat, giving confidence and inspiration to new troops which had gone into action as soon as they arrived at the front. It was mainly due to him that the force in the dense bush was able to draw off in good order. For these services Roberts received the New Zealand Cross and was promoted major (inspector, A.C.). After serving at Ngatapa (Jan 1869) he was again transferred to the West Coast; here he was present at the defeat of Titokowaru at Tauranga-ika (2 Feb), Otautu (13 May) and Whakamara. He led the right column in the pursuit of Te Kooti in the Bay of Plenty and Urewera, and at the conclusion of hostilities was appointed, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, to command all the Colonial forces mobilised for the operations at Parihaka. After that he was appointed to command the Armed Constabulary in Auckland and in 1889 was appointed magistrate at Wairarapa, and later at Tauranga and Opotiki. He remained in service until 1909, when he retired to live in Rotorua. Roberts was the beau ideal of a frontier soldier, cool, courageous and dashing. He married Jessie (d. 16 Feb 1908), daughter of Major Clare, N.Z.M. Roberts died on 12 Oct 1928.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Maxwell; Whitmore (p); Gudgeon; Cowan, i and ii (p); Gorton; *N.Z. Herald* and *Auckland Star*, 15 Oct 1928.

ROBERTS, WILLIAM HENRY SHERWOOD (1834-1917) was born at Tenby, Pembroke-

## ROBERTSON

shire, Wales, the son of Captain Thomas Turner Roberts, H.E.I.C.S., and a member of an old Worcestershire family. He was educated at Swansea and at Palace school, Enfield, London, and, after studying bookkeeping and surveying, came to New Zealand in the *John Phillips* in 1855. His cattle run, near Invercargill, which he bought in 1856, he lost in 1859 by the land and lease ordinance, and in 1871 he lost his sheep run at Tapanui. Settling in Oamaru, Roberts entered into business as an auctioneer and agent, and became a member of the Oamaru borough council (1879), the hospital committee (1882), and the Otago Anglican synod. He published several historical works, including *Southland in 1856-57, With a Journey from Nelson to Southland in 1856* (1895), *History of Oamaru and Early North Otago* (1890) and *Maol'i Nomenclature*. In 1867 he married Emma, only daughter of Captain Peter Williams, of Dunedin. He died on 22 Jan 1917.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (P) ; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Jan 1917.

ROBERTSON, JAMES (1809-82) was born in Glasgow, and learned the trade of ropemaking with his father. He emigrated to New Zealand in the *Duchess of Argyle* (1842), and for many years carried on a ropewalk at Mechanics Bay, Auckland. He was a close friend and confidant of Sir George Grey, Dr Sinclair and other leaders of Auckland, and was one of the founders of St Andrew's Church and later of the Presbyterian Church at Otahuhu. Robertson retired from business about 1855, and took a farm at Mangere. He died on 18 Sep 1882.

Sinclair Papers, G.A. Library; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Oct 1882.

ROBERTSON, JAMES WILLIAM (1826-76) was born in New Brunswick, went to California as a young man, thence to Australia. He worked on the Turon field and at Ballarat but eventually, with a partner, engaged in sawmilling in the Bullarook forest. In 1861 he came to Gabriel's Gully, followed the rushes to Fox's diggings at Wakatipu and the Arrow, and eventually settled in Queenstown when the Shot-over field was proclaimed. He and his partners soon turned their attention once more to timber, selected a site for their mill near mount Bonpland and brought the machinery from Melbourne. Robertson engaged in building in

## ROBIN

Queenstown. About 1868, in company with B. Hallenstein (q.v.), he erected the New Brunswick flourmill at Frankton. They built the steamer *Antrim*, took up land for a small farm on Frankton Hat, erected two wharves (at Kinloch and mount Bonpland) with a railway 2½ miles long to the mill, and jetties at Frankton, Queenstown and Kingston. The small fanners were paid for ploughing in the first instance, and were assisted to gain their freeholds and the mill was erected when not more than 50 acres was under crop.

Robertson was a man of fine public spirit and a good organiser. He was the first mayor of Queenstown. During the three years that he occupied that position (with Henry Manders as town clerk), he inaugurated civic government and laid out the town efficiently. In 1871 he was elected to the Provincial Council for the Lakes, which he represented till 1872. Robertson died on 23 Jan 1876.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Don; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Feb 1876.

ROBIN, SIR ALFRED WILLIAM (1860-1935), a son of James Robin, was born in Dunedin and educated at the Otago Boys' High School. He then joined his father's coach building business. Always interested in volunteering, he rose to captain of the Otago Hussars. In 1897 he commanded the New Zealand mounted troop at Queen Victoria's diamond jubilee. On his return he was given command of the Otago Mounted Rifles, and in 1898 he became mounted infantry instructor for New Zealand. In 1899 he commanded the 1st New Zealand Contingent in the South African war. (Queen's medal with five clasps; C.B. 1900.) On returning from South Africa he commanded the Otago district, and in 1907 was promoted chief of the general staff, first military member of the Council of Defence, and general officer commanding the New Zealand forces. In 1910 he was appointed adjutant and quarter master-general. After serving at the War Office, London, as Dominion representative on the Imperial General Staff (1912-14) Robin was stationed in New Zealand during the war of 1914-18 as acting commander of forces within the Dominion. From 1920 to 1922, as major-general, he was acting-administrator of Western Samoa. (C.M.G., 1912; K.C.M.G., 1920.) In

## ROBINSON

1933 he was awarded the order of the Silver Wolf in the boy scout movement. He died in Wellington on 2 Jun 1935, unmarried.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 3 Jun 1935 (p).

ROBINSON, CHARLES BARRINGTON (1812-99) was the son of Joshua Robinson. He read for the bar and had a good practice, besides being well versed in languages. Robinson came to New Zealand in 1840 and settled at Akaroa, buying five acres from the Nanto-Borde-laise Company, on which he erected his house. He was a freemason and superintendent of Lodge Francaise Primitive Antipodienne (1840). Shortly after the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi he called on Captain Hobson at Bay of Islands and was commissioned (Jul 1840) to proceed with M. Murphy in the *Britomart* to hold courts at Akaroa and other places and to remain as resident magistrate at Akaroa. The ceremony took place at Akaroa on 11 Aug. Robinson occupied that position, as well as the collectorship of customs, till Aug 1845, when he resigned to visit England. Returning in 1850 in his own vessel, the *Monarch*, in which he brought shorthorn cattle and English pheasants, he made several voyages to Australia for stock and then sold the ship.

In 1853 he married Helen McHutcheson, daughter of Francis Sinclair (q.v.). He had acquired a good deal of land in Canterbury, but after another visit to England (1864) he disposed of his holdings and returned to England, where he died on 28 Dec 1899. His widow died in 1913. Robinson fought a duel with Captain Muter.

Family information from Aylmer F. Robinson and Eric Knudsen; *Cant. O.N.*; Barclay; Deans; Godley, *Letters*; J. Hay; Buick, *Akaroa*; Scholefield, *Hobson*; Acland; *The Press*, Jul 1924, 5 May 1930; *Lyttelton Times*, 12, 19 Feb 1853, 16 Dec 1925.

ROBINSON, EDWARD TERRY (1838-94) was born at Clapham, London. He arrived on the West Coast in the early days of the gold rush. He was a member of the Westland county council, and represented Kanieri in the Provincial Council (1874-75). For some time he was a member of the executive and provincial treasurer. Aftenvards he became secretary to the Westland education board, and at the time

## ROBINSON

of his death (12 Apr 1894) was inspector of schools in the Grey district.

Harrop, *Westland; Westland P.C. Proc.; Grey River Argus*, 13 Apr 1894.

ROBINSON, JOHN PERRY (1809-65) was born in Surrey and trained as a wood and ivory turner. He was in business in Binningham before coming to New Zealand in the *Phoebe* (1842). On settling in Nelson he opened a school under the Nelson school society and spent some years in charge of it. He was then for four years in business in Auckland. Returning to Nelson, he commenced farming and then established himself as a sawmiller at Motupipi.

In 1855 Robinson was elected to the Nelson Provincial Council for Massacre Bay, and at the end of the following year he was invited to contest the superintendency, which had become vacant by the resignation of Stafford. Though opposed by Dr Monro, he won the election and was re-elected on two subsequent occasions. Robinson had seen much of politics while living in Birmingham, where he became imbued with Liberal principles. He was a man of considerable intellectual attainments, with a practical and logical judgment, and was often consulted both by public men and by the officials of the General Government. His influence more than once prevented trouble in days of economic depression. In 1860 he stood for the parliamentary representation of Nelson, but was defeated by two titans (Domett 193 and Stafford 185 elected; Robinson 149). He met his death on 28 Jan 1865, being drowned on the bar of the Buller river while on an unofficial visit to the south-west gold and coal fields. Robinson married Miss Gaskell, of Derby.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; Saunders; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *The Colonist*, 31 Jan 1865.

ROBINSON, WILLIAM (1814-89) was born at Bold Hall, Warrington, Lancashire. In 1839 he emigrated to South Australia, where he purchased the River Hill estate and made considerable money dealing in stock between South Australia and the other colonies. In 1856 he sold out and came to New Zealand. Settling in Nelson, he purchased from the provincial government the Cheviot Hills estate, between the Hurunui and Waiau rivers, and earned the

## ROBLEY

soubriquet of 'Ready-money Robinson' by payillg for it in cash. Robinson increased the property to 84,000 acres and established on it one of the finest homesteads in New Zealand. He stocked the run with sheep from good flocks, and in 1888 the clip amounted to 2,079 bales. In Grey's 'Domesday Book' (1885) he appears as the second largest landowner in New Zealand, his property being valued at £291,812. At Port Robinson he provided shipping facilities to enable him and his neighbours to load their wool.

In his early days in Nelson Robinson made many interesting journeys between Nelson and Canterbury. He took little part in public affairs, but was M.P.C. for Amuri 1857-59. He had a distinguished career on the turf in three countries. In 1862 he imported the horse Golden Grape and later Ravenswood and the mares Skybird and Coronaria; but did not race. Going to England in 1864, he backed his mare Gratitude to win the Cezarewitch Stakes, but she was beaten. Next year his horse Eltham ran third in the Derby and Gratitude won the Royal Hunt Cup at Ascot. On his return to New Zealand Robinson bought Strop from Henry Redwood and presented it to his brother-in-law (Wood) for whom it ran with remarkable success in Australia. The first horse he trained in New Zealand was Skylark (1868). He purchased Papapa from Redwood, but for family reasons refrained from racing until 1878, when he purchased Natator the day before he won the Canterbury Derby. After the death of J. W. Mallock he joined H. P. Lance, and they raced with great success, amongst their best horses being Foul Play, Grip and Vanguard. "

The resumption of the Cheviot estate in 1893 initiated the Liberal government's policy of subdivision of large estates. Robinson was a member of the Legislative Council from 1869 till his death (on 9 Sep 1889).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 10 Sep 1889; Acland; Reeves; *Cant. ON.*; Roberts, *Southland; Col. Gent.*; *The Press*, 10 Sep 1889; *Lyttelton Times*, 10 Sep, 2 Oct 1889.

ROBLEY, HORATIO GORDON (1840-1930) was born at Madeira, the son of a captain in the Indian Army. His parents were both artistic and he early showed similar tastes. In 1858 he was appointed ensign in the 68th Regiment, with which he went to India and saw the final

## ROBLEY

stages of the Mutiny. He was stationed for some time in Burma in charge of Bahadur Shah II, King of Delhi. There he travelled and sketched a good deal. On the king's death in 1862 Robley was appointed lieutenant-instructor in musketry. He came to New Zealand in the transport *Australian*, landing in Auckland with the headquarters staff on 8 Jan 1864. Without delay he purchased a Maori vocabulary and Maning's *Old New Zealand* to acquire a knowledge of the language and customs of the natives. The war having been brought to a stalemate, the 68th moved to Tauranga in Apr and was soon involved in the reverse at Gate Pa, followed by the victory at Te Ranga. Robley served throughout as a lieutenant and instructor in musketry, and made many sketches of New Zealand and Maori life for English illustrated papers. In 1865 the regiment returned to England. Promoted captain in 1870, Robley exchanged into the Argyll and Sutherland HigWanders. In 1870, as major, he went to Mauritius and in the next year he rejoined headquarters in Cape Colony. As a lieutenant-colonel he served in the Cape, Natal and Zululand and in 1883 he was promoted to command the regiment. In 1884 he organised its mounted infantry in Zululand. He retired in 1887 with the rank of major-general and resided in London until his death on 29 Oct 1930.

As an author, Robley wrote first the history of his regiment. Having taken a keen interest in the moko (tattooing) of the New Zealanders, which he studied scientifically, he published in 1896 his first book on that subject, *Moko*. In the pursuit of this study he gathered a fine collection of Maori dried heads, numbering 35, of which 30 were sold to the New York Museum of Natural History (1909). His notes for a new edition of *Moko* he was not able to finish, and they were acquired for the Hocken Library. In 1905 the New Zealand Government purchased for the Dominion Museum 70 of Robley's water-colour sketches, mainly scenes in the Tauranga campaign. His sketches for illustrations to Maning's *Old New Zealand* were presented to Sir Douglas Maclean (some of them being used in the 1922 edition). In 1915 he published *Pounamu; Notes on New Zealand Greenstone*. For many years Robley contributed sketches of Maori subjects to the *Graphic* and the *Illustrated London News*.

## ROCHFORD

*Polyn. Jour.*, vol. 40, p. 39 (p); Fildes collection, Victoria University College; 'Var Office records; Hocken in *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Apr 1897; *The Times*, 30 Oct 1930.

ROCHE, HUNGERFORD (1841-1914) was born in Dublin, the son of Thomas Hungerford Roche, of Glandore Castle, county Cork, Ireland. He completed his education at the Albert modei training farm college, Glasnevin. In 1863 he arrived in Auckland by the *Ida Zeigler* and he was employed in the commissariat during the Waikato war. Afterwards he settled in Waikato. Roche represented Waipa in the Auckland Provincial Council (1873-75), and later contested the parliamentary seat as a supporter of Grey (1879). In 1891 he opened an estate agency at Ohaupo. He married (1876) Emily Adela, daughter of Neil Malcolm, barrister of the Inner Temple. He died on 24 Nov 1914.

*Parltry. Record; Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (P); *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Nov 1914.

ROCHFORD, JOHN (1832-94) was born and educated in London, and apprenticed to civil engineering under Sir Isambard Brunel. He had some experience on the goldfields of Australia before coming to Nelson in 1858 in the *Marmora*. He settled with his family at Motueka. He became a competent Maori scholar and as a surveyor made good use of native guides. While carrying out a contract for the Nelson government to make a survey on the West Coast he lost all his stores in the Buller, but managed to carry on for months, subsisting on what food the forest yielded. On this expedition Rochfort discovered coal seams at Mt Rochfort and traces of gold in the Buller. In 1859, with two men, he surveyed the Nelson-Canterbury boundary, passing down the Tere-makau to Lake Brunner, and by the Arnold and Grey rivers to the coast and then to the mouth of the Buller. James and Alexander Mackay, crossing from Canterbury, met him at Lake Sumner (Mar 1860), and while travelling together Mackay saved Rochfort from drowning in fording a river.

According to Harrop it was Rochfort who first used the name 'Westland' (in 1859). In 1863 he accepted a position in Canterbury, and had charge of one of the parties sent out by the Canterbury provincial government to cut

## ROCHFORD

tracks on the West Coast. He reported on the Karamea pass. In 1864 he surveyed the coastline of south Westland. Rochfort laid off the town of Greymouth Oul 1865). In 1869 he entered the service of the General Government. In 1872 he was engaged in laying off the Rimutaka line and in 1874-76 he was engineer to the Timaru and Gladstone board of works. In 1883 he commenced the first engineering reconnaissance of the North Island main trunk line, between Marton and Te Awamutu. In spite of much opposition from chiefs of the King party, he completed his task in 1884. He also made trial line sun'eys for the Wellington-Masterton railway, and constructed two large traffic bridges in the Waimarino. Rochfort's last years were devoted to surveys in Westland, mineral investigations in Nelson and projects in south Auckland. Physical attributes and an eye for physiography made him an ideal explorer. He died in 1894.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; Royal Geog. Society's *Jour.*, v. 32; *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Oct-Nov 1933 (p); *N.Z. Soc. Civ. Engineers, Proc.*, 1922-23; Hindmarsh; J. Rochfort, *The Adventures of a Surrellor* (1853); Reid; Harrop; Dobson; Jourdain; *Nelson Examiner*, 24 Aug 1859; *Westport Times and Sln'*, 28 Dec 1926; *Wellington Independent*, 27 Jan 1860.

ROCHFORD, SINGLETON, who was born in 1817, was admitted to the bar in Victoria in 1852. Shortly afterwards he came to New Zealand, and was appointed in 1855 provincial solicitor in Auckland. In this capacity he declared all the acts of the Auckland Provincial Council in sessions i and ii void and also the creation of the Auckland City Council. A few months later he resigned and he was in the Indian service for several years. Returning to Victoria, Rochfort practised at the Victorian bar. In 1860 he published a masterly commentary, *The Constitutional Law of England in its Relation to Colonial Settlements* (with a special bearing on the claims of James Busby, q.v.). In 1870 he was appointed examiner of titles at Napier and district judge for Hawkes Bay, a post he resigned in 1872. He married Isabella, daughter of Alexander Shepherd (q.v.).

*Victorian Law List.*

RODRIQUEZ DE SARDINHA, ANTONIO (1832-1905) was a native of Madeira and of

## ROLLAND

good Portuguese family. While living in Madeira he made the acquaintance of T. Mace (q.v.) and in 1852 came to New Zealand with him and E. de Castro in the *St Michael*. Settling in Taranaki, Rodriquez joined the mounted settlers at the outbreak of the war and greatly distinguished himself in the field, especially in rescuing wounded under fire at Poutoko (2 Oct 1863) and at Kaitaki (11 May 1864). He was mentioned in garrison orders and repeatedly by General Warre, and was awarded the New Zealand Cross, which was presented to him by Atkinson in 1877. Rodriquez was farming at Patoka for some years. He died on 12 May 1905.

N.Z. Army records; Gudgeon; Cowan; Wells; *Taranaki Hemld.*, 8 Aug 1927, 13 May 1905. Portrait: *Taranaki Hist. Coll.*

ROGERS, HENRY, arrived in Southland about 1857 and took charge of the Castle Rock station (then known as The Elbow) for J. P. Taylor. He was member for Oreti in the Southland Provincial Council (1863-64). Rogers married the eldest sister of Shea Lawlor, of Riverton.

*Southland P.C. Proc.*

ROGERS, JOSEPH (1836-96) was born at Lamplough, Cockermonth, Cumberland. He was educated there and served in a bank. He married (1864) Mary McKellar, sister of David and Peter McKellar (q.v.) and after her death (in 1875) he married her sister, Annie McKellar. Rogers came to New Zealand in 1860 or 1861 to join his brother William, who had taken up the Glenquoich run, at Athol, western Otago, a year earlier. William was drowned in Lake Wakatipu on 9 Aug 1862, and Joseph carried on the property for many years himself. He was a fine type of settler and did much for the development of the district. He represented Oreti in the Otago Provincial Council from 1873 to 1875. Rogers died on 9 Dec 1896.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Beattie, i, ii; *Cycl. N'z.*, iv, p. 1015, 1018.

ROLLAND, JAMES (1802-89) was born at western Luscar, Fifeshire, the second son of a privy councillor for Scotland. He belonged to the Rollands of Gask, who suffered for their convictions at the time of the two most important religious movements in Scotland. James was a writer to the signet, and after retiring

## ROLLAND

from his legal practice in Edinburgh came to New Zealand in the *Alpine* (1859) in the hope of finding prospects for his sons. He bought land in the Clutha district, his first permanent home being Gask Lodge on the banks of the Clutha, near Kaitangata. In 1862 Rolland purchased the Blackstone Hill station, 30 miles from Naseby, where in 1865 he was running 12,000 sheep. In 1865 he was called to the Legislative Council, but in the following year he decided to return to Scotland, and transferred his estate to his sons Adam and Henry. He lived in Edinburgh until his death on 20 Nov 1889. His wife, a daughter of Captain W. Stothert, of the Coldstream Guards, died in 1861.

*Parltry Record; Otago Witness*, 24 Feb 1931; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Don.

ROLLAND, JEAN BAPTISTE (1834-1903) was born in the department of Meuse, France, and educated at the seminary of Verdun. On being ordained, he chose to enter the foreign mission field, and joining the Society of Mary (1861), he came to Sydney (1863) and to New Zealand the following year. After being assistant to Father Forrest at Napier, he was transferred to Taranaki, where he did fine service amongst both races for eight years, and established a monastery for lay brothers at Kotu. As a chaplain he went through the campaign against Titokowaru and showed great gallantry at the battles of Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu in attending to the wounded under heavy fire. He was afterwards on two occasions stationed on the West Coast of the south Island. On being sent there finally he was stationed at Ahaura for eight years, in which time he paid off a parochial debt of £1,000 and maintained a very efficient school (at which Mr Justice O'Regan was educated). His remaining years he spent at Reef-ton, where he died on 13 Jul 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); Gudgeon; Cowan, ii; *Grey River Argus*, 14 Jul 1903; *Marist Messenger*, 1 Mar 1938 (p).

ROLLESTON, WILLIAM (1831-1903) was born at Maltby, near Doncaster, Yorkshire, on 19 Sep 1831, and was a son of the Rev George Rolleston, M.A., rector of the parish and squire. He was educated at Rossall under the headmastership of Dr Woolley (afterwards principal of the University of Sydney). He then passed on to Cambridge, entering at Emmanuel

## ROLLESTON

College in 1851. Next year he won a foundation scholarship, and in 1855 he graduated B.A. with honours in the classical tripos. A brother, Dr George Rolleston, M.D., F.R.S. (d. 1881) was a distinguished professor of physiology at Oxford.

After leaving Cambridge Rolleston spent some time in private tuition, and in 1858 sailed for New Zealand in the *Regina*. He had made up his mind to go on the land, and without delay took up a run at Mount Algidus in the forks of the Rakaia, close to Lake Coleridge. Rolleston threw himself heart and soul into the arduous work of landowning and did everything possible to improve his property, particularly in the treatment of the soil and the planting of trees. The fact that much of the surrounding country was explored by him accounts for the prevalence of classical names in the neighbourhood. Later he took up a property on the sea coast near the mouth of the Rangitata river, where he lived during most of his public life.

Rolleston took an early interest in public affairs. In 1863 he was appointed a member of a select commission to suggest a scheme of education for the province, his colleagues being Tancred, Dr Lillie, and Saunders. They visited all the schools in the province and brought down a report which recommended placing the whole of them under the control of a board of education. In 1875, when he held the more responsible position of Superintendent and had a Colonial position as well, Rolleston said: 'Our best policy would be to make education free in all Government schools; and such a result is, as I think, but the corollary upon the adoption of any responsibility by the state in the matter of education.' Two years later, when the Colonial system was under discussion, he declared himself convinced that the education provided by the state should also be secular. At the end of 1863, when Bealey was Superintendent, Rolleston was persuaded to let himself be elected for Heathcote to the Provincial Council, and to assume the office of provincial secretary, which he held until Jun 1865. In that year gold digging commenced at various points on the western side of the Alps, and in Mar a great rush of miners set in to Westland from other provinces of New Zealand and from Australia. Though Canterbury was a pastoral province, it

was essential that she should see that people on both sides of the range reaped the fruits of the new prosperity. As provincial secretary, Rolleston proceeded across the range with Rochfort and other officers to set up the machinery of government there. Rolleston and Hall, as representing the Canterbury government, and Dobson, Rochfort, and the other officials who went with them, did everything possible to meet the emergency. Rolleston's part was so well done that when Bealey retired from the superintendency in the middle of 1866, he was requested (but declined) to stand for the chief magistracy. He was, in fact, deeply engrossed in the duties of Under-secretary for Native Affairs, which he accepted in Jun 1865 at the invitation of Weld and carried out with zeal and efficiency for three years. In this post he demonstrated not merely his interest in education and his sympathy with the Maori people, but his capacity for administration. His term of office had a most beneficial effect upon the native village school system.

In May 1868 Rolleston resigned from the Native office to devote his full attention to provincial affairs. The superintendency had again become vacant and his supporters, preferring his caution to the freer disposition of Moorhouse, persuaded him to stand. He was duly elected, and took office as a strong provincialist, but not altogether satisfied with the provincial system as it then existed. He frankly wanted it simplified, but did not look with favour on the proposal, which was then before the country, for the severance of the whole of the province south of the Rangitata and its erection, for all practical purposes, into a separate province. He was quite willing to give the southern district the whole of its revenue for local works, but 'unity of government' (he declared) 'is essential to our future greatness as a nation.' He took a strong stand also upon the administration of the railways, which he contended must be independent of the changing politics of the day. On the constitutional question Rolleston strove hard for a solution of the friction that existed amongst council, superintendent, and executive. In common with such shrewd provincialists as Ormond and McLean, he believed that the superintendent should have a seat in the council and be in close touch with it, instead of communicating

by means of messages and addresses. He went so far as to be nominated for a seat in the Council, but at the last moment withdrew and sought a solution in another direction by offering to regard the whole Council as his executive and to carry on the administration himself with the assistance of a clerk or two. From the outset of his superintendency he saw clearly the spectre of abolition in the future and urged his Council to take steps betimes to simplify and improve the system, though unquestionably it had enabled Canterbury to do very much for herself. During his superintendency Rolleston promoted immigration as the best precaution against slumps in the future. Though he strongly opposed the Vogel policy of borrowing, he entered heart and soul into the immigration proposals, and was proud of the fact that the population of Canterbury increased from 45,000 in 1870 to 59,000 in 1874.

Rolleston had to defend the superintendency in 1870 against Moorhouse, who came out unexpectedly as a candidate and was defeated by 1,800 votes to 897. At the end of that term he was re-elected unopposed, and saw the provincial system to its close. He promoted public works throughout the province, especially the harbour works at Lyttelton and Timaru, and the railways, which, however, were taken over by the General Government before the abolition. In Feb 1876 Rolleston presided at the opening of the railway from Christchurch to Timaru, and a few days later at the opening of the Amberley line. To meet the discontent of the outdistricts, he agreed to the setting up of the Timaru and Gladstone board of works, which for several years before the abolition, had the spending of the whole of the revenues raised in its district. He took an interest in the establishment of the Museum at Christchurch, which he opened, and the words cut over the entrance door were placed there by him at a later date. A provincial exhibition was held during his superintendency. The question of education was never at rest for long. In 1870, and again in 1874, bills were passed by the Provincial Council dealing with the Canterbury system, which was one of the most successful in the colony. Rolleston strongly opposed the administration of education by the executive of the day. He believed that salaries of teachers and administra-

tion should be entirely removed from the vicissitudes of party politics. When an ordinance was presented to him in 1875, which proposed to hand over the administration to the executive, he refused to sign it.

In the parliamentary struggles on abolition, Rolleston staunchly defended the provinces, and was able to adduce good evidence from the case of Canterbury that they had justified themselves. When at length they were extinguished, in 1876, he received a valuable mark of the esteem of the people of Canterbury. A few weeks after his election to the superintendency in 1868 Rolleston was elected unopposed to succeed Reeves as member for Avon in the General Assembly. He went to Wellington well equipped by official experience in native matters, and he launched a well-informed attack upon the native policy of the Stafford government, which he declared could never produce peace on the west coast of the North Island. Next year he moved for the appointment of a commission to visit every native district and ascertain the position of the natives. Rolleston's position in the House steadily improved, and he was plainly marked out for office as soon as the party which he supported should gain the ascendancy. The great popularity of Grey staved this off for a while. Rolleston had come out in 1873 as a champion against the 'grid-ironers' in Canterbury, and many of his supporters could not understand how he could oppose Grey in 1877. When at length Grey's government came to an end (Oct 1879) and Hall took office, Rolleston was entrusted with the departments of Lands, Immigration, and Education, for each of which he had special qualifications. Later he took also Justice and Mines, and for a few months in 1881, during the retirement of Bryce from the ministry, he administered Native Affairs. Always cautious, and leaning towards clemency to the Maori, he was reluctant to put into effect the Parihaka policy which was eventually adopted by the government. Rolleston resigned from the cabinet, but when the policy was adopted he insisted on signing the proclamation, and when Bryce set about carrying it through Rolleston proceeded to Pungarehu, and by his presence identified himself with the Government. Though he had to bear the odium which this policy excited in a South Island constituency,

he was returned' unopposed for Avon at the general election of 1881.

Rolleston in the next few years put into effect some liberal ideas in land legislation. He believed in deferred payments, but he feared to establish a tenantry either of the money-lenders or of the crown. Preferring the latter as the less evil, he introduced the perpetual lease into his land bill of 1882. Continuing to hold the portfolios of Lands, Mines, and Immigration in the Whitaker and Atkinson governments, he got the perpetual lease extended in 1884. At the general election in that year he defeated A. Cox for Geraldine, but on the retirement of the Atkinson government a few weeks later he became a private member. In 1887 he was defeated for Rangitata by S. Buxton. In 1890 he fought the Halswell seat against F. S. Parker, and won, and during this Parliament he was leader of the Opposition. In 1893 he again sustained defeat (in the Ellesmere electorate), his opponent being W. H. Montgomery. At the general election in 1896 Rolleston defeated G. W. Russell for Riccarton by 1,834 to 1,443. In 1899 the tables were turned, Russell winning by a single vote (1,867 and 1,866).

Rolleston then retired definitely from politics. Amongst his activities outside of Parliament education always had him as its servant. For many years he acted on the Canterbury education board. For a few years (1873-75) he was a member of the board of governors of Canterbury College. From the foundation of the New Zealand University in 1871 until his death he was a member of the senate. He was also on the governing body of Christ's College from its early years until his death. The foundation of the Deaf and Dumb Institution at Sumner in 1880 was due almost entirely to the interest which he took in the matter as Minister for Education. Many Canterbury educational buildings came into existence during his administration as Superintendent and as Minister, and he took steps to endow them from the landed estate of the province. After the election of 1899 Rolleston retired to his estate at Rangitata, where he died on 8 Feb 1903. He married in 1865 Elizabeth Mary, daughter of Joseph Brittan, one of the Canterbury Pilgrims. Two of his sons, FRANCIS JOSEPH (born 1873) and JOHN CHRISTOPHER (born 1877), became

ROLLESTON

members of the House of Representatives in 1922. The former was Attorney-general and Minister for Justice and Defence in the Coates ministry (1926-28).

Gisborne says of Rolleston: •There is nothing volatile, in the ordinary sense, about Rolleston; on the contrary a vein of doggedness runs through his nature. When he wavers it is from excess of conscientious doubt as to what is right, but he is firm enough in trying to do it when convinced, and that quality has made him from time to time amenable to the logic of facts. As Minister for Lands, he has been liberal, prudent, and far-sighted, and has done much to discourage mere speculation and to promote real settlement. He is a very good administrator. He dislikes red tape and procrastination, and has a horror of the system of how not to do a thing which he thinks should be done. He has a great aptitude for official business, and in its transaction he is clear, methodical, and industrious. He is intelligent, well-educated, earnest, and animated by the highest motives. What he lacks is decision of character and definiteness of purpose. He is too sensitive and emotional. His feelings are too highly charged, and move him to and fro by jerks and starts. He is so anxious to do what is right that he is more afraid of doing what is wrong; and he wavers between opposite poles. These dual forces make his political motives somewhat unsteady, and, in a party view, irregular.'

Saunders says: •He was the most profound thinker, the most highly educated, the best read, and the most experienced and well-informed minister upon practical political questions. His fastidious determination to say exactly the right thing in exactly the right words made him usually hesitate over the selection until the main effect of his speech was spoiled.

As a writer or conversationalist he was effective, interesting, and very original.' Sir Robert Stout said: •I do not know anyone who gave a better example of what classical culture could do in humanising mankind. It was an education in itself to discuss with him some literary, historical, or political subject.'

*App. H.R.*, 1901, A4; *Cant. P.C. Proc.; N.I.P.D.*, pass (notably 30 Jun 1903); Gisborne (p); Cox; Saunders (p); Reeves; E. Wakefield; Beaglehole; *Stafford: Otago Daily Times*, 7 Jan 1874, 18 Sep

RONALDSON

1901; *The Press*, 10, 16, 19, 20, 22 Feb 1903, 19 Mar 1903, 2 Apr 1903, 8 Mar 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

RONALDSON, WILLIAM (1823-1917) the son of a wine merchant, was born in London and educated at the Hackney Grammar School. To satisfy his fascination for the sea, his father allowed him to make the voyage to Sydney in 1838 in the ship *Roxbul'gh Castle*. At Sydney he shipped aboard the whaler *Elizabeth* for a cruise of 18 months. In 1843 he returned to England and in the following year sailed for New Zealand to join his uncle, Dr Peter Whison, of Wanganui, on whose farm he worked for a year. He was then persuaded to accept the post of schoolmaster of the Church of England school at the Maori pa at Putiki. For this he received only 10s a week, but he was paid the ordinary 'pence' for teaching the settlers' children at two schools-one in the morning and one in the afternoon. He was also postmaster at £40 a year. During this time he lived with the Rev Richard Taylor (q.v.).

In 1849 Ronaldson returned to England to offer his services to the Church Missionary Society. Though accepted, he was unable owing to the illness of his father to enter the training college at Islington for another year. In 1852 he attended Tamihana te Rauparaha at his audience of Queen Victoria. He was ordained deacon, and in 1855 priest (while holding the curacy of South Collingham, Nottinghamshire). Early in 1855 he married Miss Ridge, of Newark, and a few months later they sailed for New Zealand, reaching Wellington in Nov. Bishop Selwyn (by whom he had been confirmed in 1845) was glad of the opportunity of employing a clergyman who spoke Maori, and he appointed Ronaldson to Greytown and later to Papawai, where a college was opened in 1857 on land given by the Maori people. After spending eleven years there, Ronaldson was transferred to Motueka, where he had charge of the native population at Collingwood and the Whakarewa College. In 1871 he was appointed to the church at Picton; in 1877 to St John's, Milton, and in 1880 to St Peter's, Caversham, where he concluded his active ministry in 1882. In

that year he became a freemason and eight years later was appointed secretary to the grand lodge, which post he held until 1900. He was several times secretary of the Diocesan Synod.

RONAYNE

Ronaldson died at Dunedin 20 Aug 1917.

*Stack, More Maoriland Adventures; Otago Daily Times*, 21 Aug 1917.

RONAYNE, THOMAS (1849-1925) was born at Youghal, county Cork, Ireland, and received his elementary education there, afterwards proceeding to school at Wakefield, Yorkshire. He was with Smith, Knight and Co., who were building the Doncaster-Wakefield railway, and afterwards served his apprenticeship to the Great Southern and Western Railway Co. in Dublin. After a few years in the Atlas locomotive works at Manchester he came to New Zealand in 1875 and was in charge of the railway construction works at Helensville and later at Greymouth. In 1886 he became locomotive and resident engineer at Wellington and in 1888 at Addington; in 1890 organised the Grey-Brunner line, and in 1895 became general manager of railways, which the government had resumed from the commissioners. He retired in 1914, receiving the I.S.O. Ronayne was killed on 7 Sep 1925.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p).

ROOKES, CHARLES CECIL (1819-1909) was born at Exeter, Devon, educated at Bath, and in France, and was for two years a midshipman in the Royal Navy on the China and West India stations. After a period at the French military riding school at St Omer (1839-41), he joined the 2nd West India Regiment. (Ensign, 1842; lieutenant, 1842; captain, 1846.) He saw much service commanding the government armed steamer *Wilberforce* in anti-slavery operations in Sierra Leone and Gambia (1843-44), and in 1846 became private secretary and aide-de-camp to the governor of Bahama and Trinidad. Selling out of the army (1858), he came to New Zealand and settled at Howick. On the outbreak of war he was given employment in the Defence department (1860) and he afterwards commanded the Wanganui district and raised a cavalry troop which did good service. Rookes received the thanks of the Governor for his enterprise and leadership at the reduction of Weraroa (Jul 1865), but was shortly afterwards superseded. He married (1855) a sister of General Cafe, and died on 4 May 1909.

*App. H.R.*, 1861, AI, p. 1-3, 6; A2, p. 15; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Gorton; Gudgeon; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 7 Oct 1865.

ROPATA

ROPATA WAHAWAHA (1807-97) was a chief of the sub-tribe Te Aowera of Ngati-Porou. In a land dispute between the Ngati-Porou and Rongowhakaata, the Ngati-Porou were defeated, and Wahawaha became the slave of Rapata \Yhakapuhia. Hence his first name. It was always distasteful, and he afterwards took D. McLean's pronunciation, •Ropata: He was ransomed some years later by Tama-i-Whakanehua-i-te-Rangi (of Whanau-a-Rua and Aowera, who signed the Treaty of Waitangi on behalf of the East Coast tribes). On his journey home Ropata saw at Whangara the preserved hands of a relative who had been killed and eaten. Arriving at Tokomaru, he reported the matter to his patron, and a taua proceeded to take vengeance. The offending chief was captured and killed, Ropata taking part in this expedition. His patron died in 1850.

Ropata was a native member of the first Waiapu diocesan synod (1861). He was already in middle age when he first distinguished himself in the field on the Queen's side against the Hauhau. While attending the opening of a church at Popoti, early in Jun 1865, the Ngati-Porou heard of the arrival of a body of Hauhau at Pukemaire. At once an armed party of 40, principally of Ropata's hapu, took the field under their chiefs. Ropata immediately made a name for himself as a resolute, skilful and ruthless leader. He distinguished himself in his first skirmish at Mangaone (10 Jun). In the fight at Tikitiki he killed a Hauhau chief in single combat with his stone mere. Early in Aug he was summoned to relieve the garrison at Tautini, and after the fall of Pukepapa pa he shot with his own revolver several of his people of Aowera who had joined the Hauhau. At the Pukemaire pa on 3 Oct he personally directed the pulling down of a section of the stockade, and in pouring rain secured the body of a dead Hauhau out of the pa. Proceeding against the forest pa of Hungahungatoroa, he scaled the precipice under heavy fire and engaged the enemy. Later he outflanked a body of Hauhau between Anaura and Tolaga Bay and defeated them after a stubborn fight, in which he killed two men (one with the tomahawk and the other with the rifle). In Nov 1865 he did good service at the siege of Waereinga-a-Hika, which resulted in the capture of 800 Hauhau prisoners. The campaign now

developed an intense character. Ropata was co-operating with Major Fraser in the northern Hawkes Bay and Waikaremoana districts. On 13 Jan 1866 friendly troops fell into a trap in approaching the strongly fortified position at Te Kopane, near the lake. The Ngati-Porou numbered 150 and the Ngati-Kahungunu 200. Ropata, leading the advance guard, was caught by the Hauhau fire on both flanks. The Ngati-Kahungunu had many casualties, and a retreat seemed inevitable when Ropata suggested that advantage be taken of the direction of the wind to fire the fern and smoke the enemy from their position. Following close behind the smoke screen, the friendlies were able to enfilade the Hauhau rifle pits, and the enemy retired with the loss of 80 killed. That he retained some of the barbaric tendencies of the old Maori was evident from his shooting of the Ngati-Kahungunu chief Tuatine Tama-i-ongarangi and three other prisoners taken at Waikaremoana. His uncle Rawiri Hika-rukutai was killed on that day.

Ropata rendered valuable service in the operations after the Poverty Bay massacre. In Nov 1868 he personally reconnoitred Te Kooti's position at Makaretu, and on the following day led a party of Ngati-Porou and Ngati-Kahungunu down a bushy slope on the enemy's left. Emerging boldly from the bush, he advanced through the fern, keeping up a steady fire, and charged the works with his Ngati-Porou, driving the Hauhau into the river in their rear, and disposing of 63 of them, including the notorious chief Nama. The climax of his services was at the storming of Ngatapa, where Te Kooti was strongly fortified with a garrison of 300. In the first assault (5 Dec 1868) he and Preece climbed a cliff with a few followers and all day enfiladed the Hauhau trenches, capturing a portion of the outer works. Left with only 30 followers, Ropata established himself close in front of the formidable pa. After fighting at close quarters the whole night without reinforcements, he retreated at dawn, carrying off his wounded, and was not pursued. He lost six killed and seven wounded out of his 30. For this day's service he received the New Zealand Cross. In the final attack on the pa, on 4 Jan 1869, Ropata again showed conspicuous gallantry, exposing himself without fear to the enemy fire. After the fall of this position Ropata dealt with the

prisoners, and as they were brought in and stripped over a hundred were shot on the edge of the cliff. In Feb 1870 Ropata with 370 Ngati-Porou continued his campaign in the Urewera and fought his way through to Waimana, on the Bay of Plenty. While Colonel Porter was taking the Horoeoka pa Ropata was involved in a hard fight at Te Kakari, a few miles distant. He then made his way out to the coast to meet the Whanganui contingent. Porter commanded the advance guard, and at the junction of the Waioeka and Waipuna rivers Ropata led the harassed rearguard. Hearing that Te Kooti was in the pa at Maraetahi, he led skirmishers up the exposed riverbed until they reached the cover of an overhanging bank. There they formed, poured in a hot fire and stormed the pa, from which Te Kooti had fled. Late in 1871 Ropata's force, consisting mainly of Aowera, captured near Ruatahuna Kereopa (who was implicated in the murder of Volkner). He thoroughly subdued the Urewera. His column, the last to be in the field, embarked in the *Luna* at Whakatanu in Dec and landed at Ropata's pa at Open Bay, East Cape.

Ropata was appointed officer in charge of the Ngati-Porou district at a salary of £200; and assessor at £100 (increased in 1879 by £100 for duty as land purchase officer; and later reduced to £50). Some years later he received a sword of honour from Queen Victoria, and from the New Zealand Government a pension of £100 a year. In May 1887 he was called to the Legislative Council as a life member. He attended fairly regularly, but only once made a noteworthy speech. Ropata died at Gisborne on 1 Jul 1897. He was buried with military honours upon the rock fortress of Pupaka, in the Waioamatani valley, the scene of many Maori exploits.

Speaking in the Legislative Council, the Hon M. S. Grace said Ropata was one of the bravest men he had ever seen in action. He was astonished that so great a man, so noble a character, so gallant a chief, was so little known.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1897-98, p. 6, 7, 9-10; W. L. Williams. *Hist Records; Polyn. Jour.*, iv, 28, xi, 219; Cowan, *Wars* (p); *Sketches* (p); *Gudgeon* (p); biography by T. W. Porter (p); Lambert (p); *Trans. N.z. Inst.*, xxx, 55.

ROSMEAD, SIR HERCULES GEORGE ROBERT ROBINSON, first Baron Rosmead (1824-97) was the second son of Admiral Hercules Robinson, of Rosmead, Ireland. Educated at Sandhurst, he received his ensigncy in the 87th Regiment. (Lieutenant 1844.) Retired in 1846, he did special service during the Irish famine (1848) and was appointed to inquire into fairs and markets in that country (1852). In 1854 he was appointed president of Montserrat, West Indies, and a year or two later lieutenant-governor of St Christophers, where his principal achievement was making arrangements for the reception of Indian indentured labour. In 1859 he was knighted and promoted to Hongkong, where he negotiated the cession of the territory of Kowloon, on the mainland of China. In 1863 he was a commissioner to inquire into the financial situation of the Straits Settlements, and in 1865 he assumed the administration of Ceylon. From organising the development of that flourishing crown colony he was transferred to New South Wales. (K.C.M.G. 1869.) He negotiated the tariff arrangement for the New South Wales-Victoria border traffic. In Sep 1874 he proceeded to Fiji to carry out the wishes of the chiefs to cede the group to the Queen.

Robinson inaugurated the machinery of the new government and remained in Fiji until the arrival of the first governor, Sir Arthur Gordon (q.v.). (G.C.M.G. 1875.) In 1879 he was appointed to New Zealand, assuming the government on 26 Mar. He found the country suffering a depression, native difficulties serious and the Grey government tottering to its fall. Soon after Parliament met Fox moved a vote of no-confidence in the Government, which after a fortnight's debate was carried by 48 votes to 34. Grey demanded a dissolution, which Robinson granted, but on strict terms. He insisted that Parliament should be dissolved with the least possible delay, that meanwhile no new measures should be proposed nor any contested motions brought forward, and that the new Parliament should be called together at the earliest possible moment. Parliament was accordingly dissolved on 15 Aug. Grey wished the Governor not to accept the resignation of Sir John Hall from the Legislative Council, which would free him to stand for the lower chamber, but Robinson replied that if such advice were

tendered he would reject it and it would then be for Grey himself to resign. Hall won the Selwyn seat, and was thus available for the premiership when the Government was defeated. The new Parliament met within six weeks of the prorogation of the old. Hall moved a want-of-confidence resolution which was carried, but only by a majority of two. It was expected that Grey might accept this as an intimation to reconstruct his ministry, but Robinson did not ask for advice. He sent for Hall to form a cabinet, which took office on 8 Oct 1879. Though the election brought 35 new members into Parliament the parties were more evenly divided than before, and a compromise had to be effected. Robinson relinquished his duties towards the end of 1880 to accept the important post of Governor of Cape Colony and High Commissioner for South Africa. He arrived there at a most critical time." The Boers had declared their independence, and his first and most pressing task was to negotiate a peace and try to alleviate the antagonism between the two races. By dint of his great personal influence he arrived at an understanding with the Boers and got British sovereignty accepted over Bechuanaland (1885). (P.C. 1882.) In the following year he went to Mauritius to investigate charges against the governor, whom he suspended. His term of office in South Africa having been extended in 1888 he made a treaty with Lobengulato prevent the Boers from expanding northward, and thus prepared the way for the chartered company. In 1889 he returned to England, was created a baronet and settled down to financial interests in London. He was a director of the London and Westminster Bank.

Relations between the races in South Africa continuing to deteriorate, Robinson was again sent out (1895), and was negotiating delicate matters with the Transvaal republic when Jameson made his raid upon the Rand (29 Dec 1895). Having heard rumours of his intention, Robinson tried without success to intercept him by telegraph. He managed to secure the release of the raiders and returned to Capetown and thence (in May 1896) to England. There he was created Baron Rosmead of Rosmead in Ireland and Tafelberg in South Africa. Returning to the Cape, he did his utmost to conciliate the inflamed passions of both.

ances, but failing health compelled him to retire for good (Apr 1897). He died on 28 Oct. Robinson ranks as one of the great colonial governors. He was a man of high mental activity, prudent in council and energetic in action. He took care to study problems for himself and was strong enough to press his views even with responsible ministries. He married (1846) Nea Arthur Ada Rose d'Amour, daughter of Viscount Valentia. Robinson was a keen sportsman, and while in New Zealand was associated with Sir George McLean in the ownership of several racehorses, including Lady Emma, Legerdemain and Gitana.

*App. H.R.*, 1879, A1 and 2; *DN.B.*; Burke, *Peerage*; Mennell; Saunders; Keith; Rusden, *Australia*; Gisborne (p); Ross; *The Times*, 29 Oct 1897.

ROSS, ARCHIBALD HILSON (1821-1900) was born at Newcastle-on-Tyne, educated there and went into business. He lived for some years at Sunderland, where he was a member of the town council and a guardian of the poor. In 1859 he emigrated to Otago, was for a time chief draughtsman in the survey office and then entered into business as an optician. He was chairman of the Wakari school committee and road board, a member of the first Roslyn borough council, and mayor in 1879. At the same time he had been a member of the Dunedin City Council and he was elected mayor in 1880. He was a member also of the benevolent trustees and the harbour board (of which he was chairman for five years). Ross twice contested the Roslyn parliamentary seat against Driver. In 1887 he was elected (defeating Carlton and Hutchison). Being defeated by Dawson at the election of 1890, he did not seek re-election. Ross was an enthusiastic astronomer and was actively interested in observing the transits of Venus in 1874 and 1882. He contributed several papers to the proceedings of the Otago Institute, of which he was a member. On retiring from business he resided in Hawkes Bay, where he died on 9 Dec 1900.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1887-90; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Dec 1900.

ROSS, CHARLES STUART was born in Scot- in 1840 and was a student at King's College, Aberdeen University. Ordained by the Presbyterian Church, he came to New Zealand and in

1869 was appointed to the parish of Roxburgh and Alexandra, in Central Otago. He was subsequently called to Riverton (1872-77), Anderson's Bay (1877-83), and Hawkes Bay, and in 1885 to Shipton, near Ballarat, Australia. Ross wrote a number of historical works on Otago and Southland, including *The Story of the Otago Church and Settlement* (1887), *Education and Educationalists in Otago* (1890), *Life and Times of Donald McNaughton Stuart* (1894), and *Early Otago* (1907).

Chisholm (p); Ross, *op. cit.*; *Riverton Rec.*

ROSS, GEORGE ARTHUR EMILIUS (1829-76) came to New Zealand and in 1852 was engaged as a cadet by Henry Tancred on his run at Malvern Hills, Canterbury. In 1854, with Charles Harper as partner, he bought Waireka, which he sold in 1862 to take up land at Lake Cole- ridge and at Fourpeaks. In 1858 Ross entered the Provincial Council as member for Rakaia, serving till 1865. He was an executive member in 1859 and from 1863 to 1865, and was the first clerk of the Provincial Council. He died in 1876.

*Parltry Record*; Acland.

ROSS, SIR JOHN (1834-1927) was born at Halkirk, Caithness, of an old Sutherland family. Educated at Rangag and Calder, and finally in the parish school at Halkirk, he left school at the age of 13 and walked 40 miles to Lybster, where he apprenticed himself to a merchant named Wallace, serving three years without pay. He then spent a few years as assistant to a merchant in Thurso, and was eventually offered a partnership in a newly established business in Dunedin. He sailed in the *Velore* in 1861 with merchandise to the value of £3,000. The partnership did not materialise, but he became a member of the firm of Begg and Christie, drapers. At the end of a year he bought out the other partners and took in Robert Glen- dining. In 1866 they sold their retail business to Brown Ewing and Co. and established themselves in the wholesale trade in Stafford street. In 1870 Ross returned to England to manage that end of the business, and he married in that year Margaret W. Cassels, who was born in Fife. In 1879 the firm commenced manufacturing hosiery, and soon afterwards they erected a mill at Roslyn, in the Kaikorai valley, for the manufacture of woollens and worsteds. In 1900 the

capital of the company was £600,000, and in 1927 it was increased to £1,250,000 (another factory being operated in Auckland). Ross returned in 1905 to live in New Zealand. He interested himself in the welfare of his workers, for whom he established a restaurant and a profit-sharing scheme. He made many benefactions to his Church, including £20,000 to Knox residential college, £5,000 for the Presbyterian home for the aged and destitute, and smaller sums to the Y.M.C.A. and the Y.W.C.A. He built the Ross institute on the spot in Halkirk where his little school stood.

Ross was for some years on the councils of Otago University and Knox College and the High Schools board. (K.B. 1922.) He died on 5 Jan 1927, and his widow on 29 Nov 1934.

*Otago Daily Times*, 3 Jan 1922, 6 Jan 1927.

ROSS, JOHN, came to New Zealand in the sixties, and took up land at Myross Bush in Southland. He sat as member for Invercargill in the Southland Provincial Council from 1867 to 1869, and was a member of the executive. He died in 1897.

*eycl. NZ.*, iv, 1056.

ROSS, MALCOLM (1862-1930), a son of Alexander Ross, of Dingwall, Scotland, was born in Dunedin and attended the Palmerston High School and Otago University. He was a versatile athlete, an Otago Rugby representative, and a pioneer in alpine-climbing and exploration. Ross began his journalistic career on the staff of the *Otago Daily Times*, was private secretary for several years to Sir James Mills (q.v.), and for many years acted as parliamentary and Wellington correspondent to *The Press* (Christchurch) and the *Otago Daily Times*, and as New Zealand correspondent for the *London Times* and *Melbourne Age*. He went to Samoa during the hostilities in 1899 as a correspondent, was New Zealand secretary to the Dominions royal commission (1913), and during the war of 1914-18 was official correspondent with the New Zealand forces in Egypt, Gallipoli and France. Ross was a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, a member of the London Alpine Club (1909), vice-president of the New Zealand Alpine Club, editor of the *Alpine Journal* (1893-94), and author of many publications, including *A Climber in New Zealand* (1914),

*Through Tuhoë" Land* (1904), *Aorangi* (1892), and (with his son Noel Ross) *Light and Shade in War* (1916). He died on 15 Apr 1930.

His wife, FORRESTINA ELIZABETH (d. 1936) was a daughter of George Grant, of Dunedin. She was the author of *Round the World with a Fountain Pen*, and *Mixed Grill* (1934).

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1924; *Evening Post*, 16 Apr 1930, 30 Mar 1936.

ROSS, RODERICK, was a brother of the Hon William Ross (Nova Scotia). He came to New Zealand from Nova Scotia in the *Margaret* (Oct 1851) and eventually settled in Waipu. He married a daughter (d. 1888) of the Rev Norman McLeod (q.v.). Ross started a Hourmill at Waipu (1859), taking one-tenth of the *Hour* in payment for his services. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Marsden (1859-66). He died on 2 Dec 1866.

Macdonald: N. R. McKenzie.

ROUGH, DAVID (1815-99), after several voy- ages to the East came in 1839 from India to Sydney. He was present in Apr 1840 when Cap- tain Hobson landed at Paihia, Bay of Islands. In Jun 1840, in the cutter *Ranger*, he accom- panied the Governor to the Waitemata, where he took exhaustive soundings of the harbour before the site of Auckland was fixed. He was present at the sale by the natives, and was appointed harbourmaster of the new port (May 1841) and immigration officer (1842). He mar- ried Miss Ellen Short (d. 1894), governess to the Hobson family. In 1843, in the brig *Ariel*, he took a force to Big Mercury Bay and recaptured the brig *Hannah Kirk* from a piratical band. Rough's meteorological observations are em- bodied in Dieffenbach's book on New Zealand. He was superintendent of works under the Fitz- Roy administration (1844), and made some im- portant journeys to the Hot Lakes and the Wai- kato district on official business. His account of these travels was published by the S.P.C.K. in 1851.

In 1848 Rough accompanied Sir George Grey on his visit to the South Island in H.M.S. *In- flexible*. In 1856 he was appointed collector of customs at Nelson and in 1868 he retired. He was also chairman of the education board. In 1874 he was deputy-superintendent of the pro- vince. He lived thereafter mostly in England.

## ROUS-MARTEN

He made interesting gifts to Auckland Museum in 1893. His death occurred on 22 Apr 1899.

*N.z. Gaz.*, 1841-56; *Nelson P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*, 1856-74; Scholefield, *Hobson*; *N.z. Herald*, II, 18, 25 Jan 1896, 9 Jun 1899; *Colonist Jubilee Souvenir*.

ROUS-MARTEN, CHARLES (1841-1908) was born in Sussex, the son of a London merchant, William Marten, F.S.A. (1809-92), who suffered considerable losses through the failure of a bank and came to New Zealand in the ship *Palmyra* in 1857 hoping to re-establish his fortunes. He had intended going to the north, but left the ship in Otago (Mar 1858) and took up a run at Ryal Bush, Southland.

Charles received most of his education before leaving England. He early evinced an interest in science and engineering, and his acquaintance with W. Conyers led him to enter the Railway department, in which he soon rose to have charge of a country station. He had already some ambitions in public life. At the age of 23 he entered the field for the Riverton seat in the General Assembly, but owing to a hitch his nomination miscarried and Hankinson was returned unopposed (Feb 1866). In Aug 1867 he unsuccessfully contested the Waihopai seat in the Provincial Council as an advocate of railway extension. Marten's interest in railways continued, and in later life he was a recognised authority in the engineering world. His knowledge of locomotive construction and running speeds was outstanding, and for many years he was invited to travel in trains in Great Britain and Europe to observe the performance of new engines. His educational equipment led him towards journalism, in which he gained his earliest experience in Invercargill and afterwards moved to Wellington. Joining the staff of the *Evening Post* (in 1877) he rose to be sub-editor and finally editor.

Marten was widely read, had a sound knowledge of music and the literature of music, and possessed one of the finest musical libraries in the colony. He was a member of St Peter's choir in Wellington, and sang tenor solos in many oratorios produced in New Zealand. He was a keen meteorologist. For some years he contributed to scientific papers observations taken in Southland, then, the most southerly station in the world. On the strength of these he was elected a fellow of the Royal Meteorological Society.

## ROWE

He was a member also of the Royal Geographical Society. Marten was a staunch Anglican, and for some years was a lay member of the Wellington diocesan and the general synods. In 1883 he resigned the editorship of the *Post* and paid a visit to England. After his return he accepted the control of the *New Zealand Times*. In 1890 he went to London as representative of the *New Zealand Herald*, *The Press* and the *Otago Daily Times* (and later of the *Evening Post*), a position which he held with distinction until his death on 21 Apr 1908. Marten married Emily, daughter of W. Hickson (q.v.).

*Evening Post*, 29 Nov 1892; *The Press*, 23 Apr 1908; *Southland Times*, 24 Apr 1908.

ROUT, WILLIAM (1830-1909) was born in Essex and managed his mother's carpet and furniture business before coming to Nelson by the *Maori* in 1853. He was engaged in building at Richmond for 18 months, and then took up farming at Massacre Bay, but soon moved to Nelson and became a manufacturer of furniture and builder. In 1862 he established a land, estate and commission agency. He represented Nelson in the Provincial Council (1873-75) and was in the executive as provincial treasurer (1874-75). He was government valuer for land tax in Nelson for some years, and on retiring removed to Cambridge (1894), where he founded the technical school. Rout died on 20 Aug 1909.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.z.*, ii (P).

ROUTLEDGB, WILLIAM (1839-85), who represented Petane in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1871-75), was in business in Napier from 1861. He held a commission in the New Zealand militia (ensign 1864), and was captain of the artillery volunteers. For a short time he was major commanding the district. Routledge died on 20 Mar 1885.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.; Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 21 Mar 1885.

ROWE, WILLIAM (1819-86) was born at St Ann's, Cornwall, educated there, and was employed for many years in the Cornish mines. He came to New Zealand in the forties under engagement to the Great Barrier Copper Mining Co. Later he engaged in carrying in and about Auckland, and was for a few years em-

## ROWLEY

ployed in the Waikato coalmines until the opening of the Thames goldfield (1867). Rowe stood for the Suburbs seat in the Provincial Council in 1855. In 1861 he was elected for Newton, which he continued to represent until 1868, when he moved to Thames. He was a member of the provincial executive during 1867-69. Rowe's first appointment at the Thames was as manager of the Kuranui mine, and he was afterwards a promoter of the Thames Gold Mining Co. He helped to float the Thames Investment Co., and for some years (to 1871) he managed the Caledonian mine when it was entering upon its most prosperous phase. He also managed the Moanataiari from 1873. Rowe stood for the mayoralty of Thames against Davies without success (1875), but in the following year he was returned with Sir George Grey for the House of Representatives, Vogel being third on the poll. In Parliament his authority on mining matters was recognised. He sat until 1879, when he was defeated. He was invited to contest the superintendency against Grey in 1875, but declined. Rowe later engaged without success in various mining ventures, and in 1882 made a commercial exploration of Lord Howe island. He was a strong Wesleyan, and owed much of his education to the Wesleyan Sunday schools. In later life he was a local preacher. Rowe died on 1 Jul 1886.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Parltry. Record*; Weston (p); *Thames Advertiser*, 2 Jul 1886. Portrait: Parliament House.

ROWLEY, THOMAS, a son of the first dean designate of Christchurch Cathedral (who did not come to New Zealand to take up his duties), arrived in Canterbury in the early fifties. He bought the Sandy Knolls estate in 1854, and the Alford estate on the Waimakariri in 1860. He sat in the House of Representatives as member for Ellesmere from 1861 until he resigned in 1862, when he sold his share in the property to his partner (Tooth) and returned to Scotland. He married a daughter of Archdeacon Mathias Acland; Don.

RUATARA (? 1787-1815), a son of Kaparu, belonged to the Hikutu hapu of Ngapuhi, and lived at Tepuna. He was a nephew of Hongi, being the son of his sister, and was a relative of Te Pahi, who was wrongly accused of the Boyd massacre. He married Mike, a daughter of Wha-

## RUATARA

raki. In 1805, 'when 18 years of age, Ruatara shipped with two other Maoris as seamen in the whaler *Argo* and served' for 12 months in New Zealand and Australian waters, attached to one of the whaleboats. Discharged in Sydney without receiving any pay (1807), he shipped again in the whaler *Albion* and after a cruise of six months was returned to his home at Bay of Islands: 'In the hope of seeing England he shipped in the *Santa Anna* for a sealing cruise; and with 13 others was landed on Bounty island. In five months they secured 8,000 seal-skins and, the ship being full, she sailed for England. In indifferent health Ruatara landed in London in Jul 1809. His ambition of seeing the King was disappointed, he fell ill, and in Aug was shipped in the convict ship *Ann* for Botany Bay. During the voyage his desperate state of health attracted the attention of Samuel Marsden (q.v.), who befriended him. Ruatara became particularly attached to John King (q.v.), who studied Maori under his tuition, while Marsden learned all he could of his uncle Te Pahi. Ruatara also made good progress with the English language. He was an intelligent and amiable young man.

On their arrival in Port Jackson (Feb 1810), Marsden took Ruatara to Parramatta as a guest in his own house, hoping to teach him some of the useful arts and employ his good offices in opening a mission in New Zealand. In Oct he entrusted Ruatara to the captain of the whaler *Frederick*, who promised to return him to his people, but six months later when the ship was full Ruatara was landed almost destitute on Norfolk Island. He was brought to Port Jackson by another whaler, the *Ann*, which later, through Marsden's intervention, took him back to New Zealand. There Ruatara assumed his position as chief and set about energetically planting the seed wheat he had received, cultivating on European lines and teaching his people pakeha arts to supply their wants. Marsden, as opportunity offered, sent him more seeds, implements; and finally a small mill to demonstrate to his people the possibility of making flour. With his authority enhanced by an order in council of New South Wales (1 Dec 1813), Ruatara exerted his influence to get the Sabbath observed on ships visiting the Bay of Islands, and he encouraged his young men and other chiefs to visit Port Jackson and get in

RUDDENKLAU

touch with Marsden. From his unhappy experience he harboured suspicions against the Europeans, but he was genuinely desirous of introducing civilisation and acquiring knowledge. His moral character was blameless. Though he commanded 400 fighting men he never again went on the war path. When at length Marsden obtained permission to explore the mission field in New Zealand he gave Thomas Kendall a letter to Ruatara invoking his help and inviting him to bring some other chiefs to Parramatta. Accordingly when the *Active* returned (Jul 1814) she had on board Ruatara, Hongi, Korokoro, Tuhi and Tuhi's brother, who stayed at Parramatta until Marsden was ready to sail. They reached Bay of Islands again on 22 Dec 1814, and it was mainly through their influence that the mission was established at Rangihoua. Ruatara himself built the pulpit from which Marsden preached his first sermon in New Zealand. The great missionary says that but for Ruatara's determined support he could never have gained a footing in New Zealand. Ruatara's health was failing when Marsden returned to Port Jackson and he died on 3 Mar 1815, divided between Christianity and native superstitions. He was the brother of Waikato (q.v.). His widow, Rahu, hanged herself according to custom.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Ramsden; Marsden, *L. and J.*, and *Lieutenants*; Stack; Carleton; **W. Williams**.

RUDDENKLAU, JOHN GEORGE (1829-91) was a native of Hesse-Cassel, and was brought up to the bakery trade. In 1850 he went to London, and in 1857 emigrated to New Zealand. After following his trade for a few years in Christchurch, he became licensee of the City hotel, from which he retired (1869) and engaged in the grain business and other undertakings. He was on the Christchurch City Council (1866, 1873-77) and mayor 1882-83. Ruddenklau died on 15 Dec 1891.

*Cycl. N.z.*, iii; Hubner; *Lyttelton Times*, 19 Nov 1882; *The Press*, 16 Dec 1891.

RULE, JOHN, was born in England in 1775, a member of an old naval family, and nephew of Vice-admiral Peard. Having qualified as a surgeon and physician, he spent some years as assistant surgeon in the Jamaica naval hospital. In 1800 he was appointed surgeon in the

RUNDLE

packet department on the Falmouth station, and in 1806 he became a member of the Royal College of Surgeons. Retiring from naval duty in 1825, he practised in Cornwall until 1833, when he accepted a position as medical officer of the Australian emigrant ship *Layton*. While in Australia in 1837 he received from John Williams Harris (q.v.) a piece of moa bone, which he took to England, aware of its origin. Having interested Sir Robert Owen (q.v.), who later wrote *Extinct Wingless Birds of New Zealand* from this original piece of evidence, he sold it to the museum of the Royal College of Surgeons. In 1843 an article by Rule appeared in the *Polytechnic Journal*. He later came to New Zealand, and practised in Wellington, Motueka and Nelson. He left for Australia in 1857.

Buick, *The Mystery of the Moa, The Discovery of Dinornis*; *Southern Cross*, 15 Jun 1868.

RUNCIMAN, JAMES (1829-99), who was born in the south of Scotland, came to New Zealand by the *Nimrod* in 1839 with his parents, who settled in Whangarei. Driven off by the Maoris in 1865, they bought land at Drury. During the Waikato war, James joined Nixon's light horse, in which he rose to the rank of captain. For six years he served on the Waikato county council, and for 19 years he was chairman of the Tamahere road board. As a pioneer of the dairy industry, Runciman was making cheese on his own farm in 1879, and in 1882 was one of the first to import dairy-factory machinery from America. Later he stressed the importance of suitable containers for butter and cheese. He also advocated the introduction of sugar beet into New Zealand. He died in 1899.

*Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); Philpott.

RUNDLE, RICHARD (1806-94) was born at Werrington, near Launceston, Cornwall, educated there and trained as a carpenter and wheelwright at Clawton, north Devon. Having married Ann, daughter of John Veale (q.v.), he came to New Zealand in the *Amelia Thompson* (1841), and at once established himself at his trade in New Plymouth. With Oxenham he built for Richard Brown the first substantial wooden house in the settlement. In 1843 he erected the Alpha flour mill (the first in the province), and he entered into partnership

RUSDEN

with Samuel Oliver (a miller), Rundle carrying on his trade as a builder. With R. Barrett he carried on a whaling station at Moturoa, and he farmed on Barrett's reserve at Ratapihi-pihi. In 1855 they launched the only vessel ever built in Taranaki, the schooner *Taranaki*, designed by Cutfield. Having purchased sections in Bell Block, Rundle farmed there until 1860, when he served in the mounted volunteers, carrying despatches. He was M.P.C. for Omata (1853-55) and for Grey and Bell (1862-65). After the war he took up bridge-building and erected many of the most important bridges in the province, as well as that over the Wanganui river. He was on the New Plymouth borough council (1878-80) and was a promoter of the first New Plymouth friendly society. Rundle died on 10 Feb 1894.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 12 Feb 1894.

RUSDEN, GEORGE WILLIAM (1819-1903) was born at Leith Hill Place in Surrey, the son of the Rev G. K. Rusden, M.A., of Pembroke College, Cambridge. In 1834 he accompanied his father to Australia and got employment as a jackeroo on a station and later as a journalist. In 1849 he went to Port Phillip to establish schools under the National Board of Education in Sydney, and in 1850 he was on the same duty in Moreton Bay (Queensland). On the separation of Victoria in 1851 Rusden was appointed chief clerk in the Colonial Secretary's office at Melbourne. In the following year he became clerk to the executive council and on the establishment of responsible government Clerk of Parliaments and of the Legislative Council. He was an original member of the Melbourne University council and a member of the Victorian Board of Education (1853-60).

In 1874 Rusden decided, on the advice of Anthony Trollope, to write histories of Australia and New Zealand, which he published in England after retiring in 1881. The history of New Zealand involved him in a libel action brought by the Hon John Bryce (q.v.), who obtained heavy damages for statements in Rusden's description of the fight at Handley's woolshed, Nukumaru. Rusden returned to Victoria in 1893 and published revised editions of his books. He was prominent in the movement to

RUSSELL

celebrate in Victoria the tercentenary of Shakespeare, and was mainly responsible for the foundation of the Shakespeare scholarship at the University. Shortly before his death (on 23 Dec 1903) he published *William Shakespeare; His Life, His Works and His Teaching*. His other books were: *Morgana, An Australian Legend; The Discovery and Settlement of Port Phillip; Aureretanga, Groans of the Maori; Lectures on Work and Learning; The Old Road to Responsible Government; The Character of Falstaff; Constitutional Rights; Causes Premonitions; Letter to General MacArthur*; and *Status of Colonial Bishops*.

RUSSELL, ANDREW HAMILTON (1812-1900) was the son of Captain Andrew Hamilton Russell, of the 28th Regiment, who died near Badajoz on the retreat to Corunna. In 1828 he received his ensigney in the 22nd Foot from the Duke of Wellington (in recognition of his father's services). He served in India at the capture of Sind, exchanged into the 58th, and was promoted captain (1842). Russell came to New Zealand in time for the operations in the Hutt valley, and was stationed at Wellington in command of a detachment. Grey appointed him in 1846 superintendent of military roads, and he constructed several of the important roads between Wellington, Hutt and Porirua. (Brevet-major 1854; brevet lieutenant-colonel 1856; major 58th Regiment 1858.) In 1859 he retired and took up the Mangakuri station in Hawkes Bay, which he sold prior to returning to England (1874). During 1861-72 Russell was a member of the Legislative Council. He was in Stafford's executive (1865-66), holding the portfolios of Native Affairs and Defence. He married Eliza Ann Hewlett. His death occurred in England on 20 Jul 1900. (See his son, Sir W. R. RUSSELL, and grandson, H. A. RUSSELL.)

Family information from Maj-gen. Sir A. H. Russell; War Office records; *Parltry Record*; *N.Z. Gaz.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 31 Jul 1900; Gisborne; Cowan, i; *The Times*, 23 Jul 1900; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 1 Aug 1900.

RUSSELL, GEORGE FREDERICK, was at Hokianga before 1830 and built the *Sir George Murray* there in that year. He married a niece or close relative of Tamati Waka Nene. Russell had a good timber business at Hokianga

and loaded with sawn timber the first ship, the *Bolina*, for Logan Campbell to take to the English market (1844). He was with Nene when he erected his pa at Okaihau against Heke (1845), and saw much of the fighting in that campaign. In 1846 he with difficulty persuaded the commander of H.M.S. *Osprey* not to attack the Ihutai tribe, since Heke and Nene had both declared Hokianga to be neutral. Russell died in 1855.

His son, FREDERICK NENE RUSSELL, was elected unopposed to represent the Northern Maori in the first parliament in which the native members sat (1868). He declared that Maori representation would be a sham if the natives were not permitted to choose European representatives if they wished. He did not contest the seat at the election of 1871. Nene left to Russell's family the goblet presented to him by Queen Victoria.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1868-70 (notably 4 Aug 1868); Scholefield in *N.z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907; Webster; Bowen, i, 298; *N.Z. Herald*, 29 Mar 1889.

RUSSELL, GEORGE GRAY (1828-1919) was born in Perthshire, Scotland, and educated at Dunfermline and Edinburgh. For many years he was in business in London. In 1864 he came to Dunedin and established himself as a merchant in partnership with John Macfarlane Ritchie (1842-1912). Russell managed the Timaru branch. In 1878 the business was taken over by the National Mortgage and Agency Co., and in 1885 Russell retired. He was a governor of the Otago High Schools and a member of the Otago University council from 1886 till 1905, when he returned to England. He made many donations for public purposes, including £1,000 to the Otago High School board of governors for scholarships (1882).

*Otago Univ. Calendar*, 1938.

RUSSELL, GEORGE WARREN (1854-1937) was born in London and came to Tasmania with his parents. He was educated privately and at the Launceston Grammar School. He served his apprenticeship in the *Evening Post* office in Wellington and after spending three years as a probationer for the Wesleyan ministry, he definitely turned to journalism. In 1878 he accepted a position as sub-editor of the *Wellington Chronicle*, from which he retired the same year to establish the *Manawatu*

*Herald* (Foxton). While there he contested the Foxton seat in Parliament (1881), being defeated by J. G. Wilson and C. B. Izard. Russell became part owner of the *Manawatu Times*, and a few years later he took over the *Waikato Times*. While in Hamilton he again contested a seat in Parliament, being defeated for Waikato by J. B. Whyte by 677 to 522 (1887).

Russell removed to Christchurch, and there contributed for a time to the *Lyttelton Times* and founded the printing firm of Russell and Willis, which in 1889 established the *Spectator*. He contested the Heathcote seat as a Liberal in 1890, but withdrew in favour of Tanner, the Conservative candidate being R. H. Rhodes. In 1893 he defeated W. Boag for the Riccarton seat, but in 1896 was defeated by Rolleston by 391 votes. In 1899 he regained the seat by one vote. A keen, incisive speaker and debater, his growing independence dissatisfied the party, and he was opposed in 1902 by Witty, who defeated him by 285 votes, and again in 1905. In 1908 he stood against Tanner for Avon and won on the second ballot by 542 votes. In 1911 he retained his seat against three other candidates, including J. McCombs (q.v.). Russell accepted office as Minister of Health and Internal Affairs in the short-lived Mackenzie Government (1912). During the absence of Sir Joseph Ward in 1912-13 he was acting-leader of the Liberal party. In 1915 he joined the National Government as Minister of Internal Affairs and Health, and later also of Marine and Customs. During this time he was president of the national war funds council and had full control of sick and wounded soldiers from the war, for whom he created hospitals at Rotorna and Hanmer. At the general election in 1919 Russell was defeated for Avon by Sullivan, who retained the seat against him in 1922. Apart from politics, he did valuable service on the North Canterbury education board, the Canterbury College governors (of which he was chairman) and the Lyttelton harbour board. He published *A New Heaven* (1919) and *The Duties of Life* (1920).

Russell married in 1879 Charlotte (d. 1924), daughter of G. M. Park. He died on 28 Jun 1937.

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass.; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post* and *Star-Sun*, 28 Jun 1937; *The Dominion*, 29 Jun (p).

RUSSELL, HAROLD ARTHUR (1871-1938) was born at Hastings, the son of Sir William Russell (q.v.). Educated at Bradfield College, England, and Lincoln Agricultural College, Canterbury, he learned farming on his father's property, Sherenden, which he afterwards managed. He farmed for himself at Puketapu (1908-18), and then moved to his father's estate at Flaxmere, which he afterwards managed for himself. He also owned Apley station on the Mangaone river, where he raised black cattle. While he managed the Flaxmere stud for his father it produced one of the greatest steeplechasers in the Dominion (Nadador), as well as Tigritiya, Corazon, Bells of Shannon, and others. He took an interest also in the breeding of remounts. Russell hunted and played polo for many years, and was a gentleman rider with some success. He was president of the Hawkes Bay jockey club (1923-24), a life member of the Hawkes Bay hunt club, and president (1922-24). He captained the polo team which won the Savile cup (1906), founded the Hawkes Bay polo club in 1892, and was president in 1918, and a member of the committee of the New Zealand polo association. He was president of the Hawkes Bay Agricultural and Pastoral association (1921-23) and served on the Hawkes Bay county council, the Napier harbour board, the Napier High School and Te Aute College boards, and the licensing committee.

Russell married (1897) Eva (d. 1935), daughter of William Nelson. He was called to the Legislative Council (1934). His death occurred on 14 Jul 1938.

*N.z.P.D.*, 14, 15 Jul 1938; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Dominion* and *Evening Post*, 15 Jul 1938 (pp); *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 15 Jul 1938. Portrait: Parliament House.

RUSSELL, HENRY ROBERT (1813-91) was born in Scotland, and was a brother of T. Purvis Russell. He was one of the early settlers of Hawkes Bay, taking up a considerable area of land in the Waipukurau district, and he was associated with the purchase of the Heretaunga block. In 1860 he laid out the town of Waipukurau, drawing the plans himself and providing for future amenities. He insisted that only one business of a kind should be established, and that all persons intending to erect buildings

should submit plans for his approval. Russell had considerable influence with the natives in Hawkes Bay and was appointed agent for the General Government on the East Coast in succession to D. McLean. From 1862 to 1885 he was a member of the Legislative Council. He died on 30 Apr 1891.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1862-85; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 7 Jul 1872, 16 Jun 1891. Portrait: Parliament House.

RUSSELL, THOMAS (1830-1904) was born in Cork, the son of a small farmer who emigrated to New Zealand with his family in the *Lady Leigh* (1840) and lived for a few months at Bay of Islands before settling at Auckland. Russell, senior, earned his livelihood as a small farmer and carpenter, while his wife kept a store in Shortland street. Thomas, the eldest son, was educated privately, mainly by Dr Comrie. He enjoyed the interest of the Rev Walter Lawry, then head of the Wesleyan Church in New Zealand, and married his niece, a daughter of Henry Vercoe, of Mangere. Under Lawry's guidance he became a lay preacher. He served his articles in the law office of Thomas Outhwaite (q.v.) and, having satisfied the examiners, was admitted to practice as one of the first two New Zealand lawyers (4 Nov 1851). Failing to obtain a partnership, Russell entered into practice on his own account. He joined Whitaker in 1861, and Thomas Buddle entered their employ later, eventually becoming a partner. Russell was a religious man, keenly interested in the welfare of his church; practical-minded, astute in business, a clever but somewhat adventurous financier. He was the leading spirit in the flotation of the Bank of New Zealand (1861) and of other important financial companies, including the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co. (1865), the New Zealand Insurance Co. and the Colonial Sugar Co. In association with his partner, with James Williamson and others he invested deeply in lands, first in Auckland province and afterwards in the South Island. He conceived the draining of the Piako Swamp, and the great sum of money lost in that venture did not discourage him from co-operating with John Grigg (q.v.) in the acquisition and development of a similar property in Canterbury. To finance his land interests Russell formed the Waikatō Land Association (1879), with a capital of £600,000,

## RUSSELL

and the Auckland Agricultural Co. (1882) with a capital of £1,000,000. When gold was discovered at Thames he took an interest in various flotations and was a founder and chairman of the Waihi Goldmining Co. Russell's activity as virtual director of the affairs of the Bank of New Zealand and of the Loan and Mercantile Agency Co. embarrassed both himself and the Government during his years in politics. Representing Auckland City East in the General Assembly 1861-66, his masterful character and strong views on the native question gave him great influence in Parliament. When only 32 years of age, he joined Domett's executive (6 Aug 1862), and thenceforward dominated both that and the Whitaker-Fox ministry. He administered the department of Colonial Defence from 22 Jul 1863 until the fall of the latter administration in Nov 1864. He pursued a strong war policy and showed vigour in organising regiments in Australia and New Zealand and keeping the troops in the field equipped and provisioned. Though he retired from general politics at the election of 1866, he still for years had great influence in the government of the Colony through the domination of the Bank of New Zealand. He liberally supported Vogel's development policy in the seventies. On the removal of the capital from Auckland he became an ardent separatist and was elected to the Provincial Council in that interest (Nov 1865). The affairs of the province, however, were scarcely important enough to keep his attention and he resigned a year later.

About 1874 Russell went to live in London, and in 1889 he retired from his legal firm. (C.M.G., 1877.) He died on 2 Sep 1904.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1861-66; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Gisborne; Rusden; Saunders; Morton; J. W. Fortescue, *Hist. of the British Army*, vol. xiii; Larkworthy; *N.z. Herald*, 29 Nov 1865, 11 Apr 1877, 6 Sep 1904.

RUSSELL, THOMAS PURVIS (1819-1906) was born in Scotland, and came to New Zealand as a young man with his brothers. He took up land first in the Wairarapa and then in Hawkes Bay. He was the owner of the Woburn estate (now Hatuma), the acquisition of which by the Government led to long litigation. Mter parting with that property, he retired to live in Warroch, Kinross-shire, Scotland, where he

## RUSSELL

died on 30 Jan 1906. Russell was a member of the Wellington Provincial Council for Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay (1856-57), and of the Hawkes Bay Council for Waipukurau (1863-67). He married (1859) Mary Glass, daughter of J. P. Sainsbury (Bath).

*N.Z. Times*, 2 Feb 1906; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 3 Feb 1906.

RUSSELL, SIR WILLIAM RUSSELL (1838-1913) was the son of A. H. Russell (q.v.). Born at Sandhurst, he was educated at the Royal Military College, and in 1855 received his ensigncy in the 58th Regiment. Two years later he came to New Zealand in the *Chapman* to join the headquarters of the regiment. Returning to England in 1859, he exchanged into the 14th Regiment and came to New Zealand, retiring in the following year with the rank of captain. With a brother he took up the Tunanui and Flaxmere properties in Hawkes Bay, retaining Tunanui and Sherenden when the partnership was dissolved.

Russell represented Waimarama in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1869-71), and Napier Country (1871-75). In 1875 he was elected to Parliament for Napier, which he represented till 1881, when he was defeated by Sutton. In 1884 he re-entered Parliament (for Hawkes Bay) and sat till 1905. He was defeated by Dillon in 1905 and again in 1908, and then retired from politics. In the short-lived Atkinson Government of 1884 Russell was Postmaster-general. When Atkinson next came into power he remained a private member, but on the defeat of Rolleston he took office as Colonial Secretary, Minister of Defence and Minister of Justice (Oct 1889), holding these portfolios until the defeat of the Government at the election of 1890. He was chairman of the Midland railway commission (1883) and in 1890, with Sir John Hall, he attended the first Australasian federation conference at Melbourne. When the conference resumed in 1891 he again represented New Zealand (with Atkinson and Grey). On that occasion he voted against the other New Zealand delegates in opposition to Grey's elective governor proposal, and questioned whether the existing system of self-government was satisfactory. He was a member of the federation commission in 1900. A capable and careful administrator, Russell

## RUTHERFORD

showed great consideration for his subordinates and was generally popular and respected. He was elected leader of the opposition in 1894, but relinquished the post early in 1903, and sat thereafter merely as member for Hawkes Bay.

Mter spending eight years in retirement he was called to the Legislative Council a few months before his death, which occurred on 24 Sep 1913. Russell took an active part in local affairs as a member of the Hawkes Bay education board, county council, hospital and charitable aid board, waste land board and rabbit board and a governor of the Napier High School. He was captain of the Meanee company of militia and later of the Hastings Rifles. In 1902 he was created a knight bachelor. He married (1867) Harriette Julia, daughter of George Hodgkinson, of Chichester, Sussex. (See H. A. RUSSELL.)

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *N.Z.P.D.*, 24 Sep 1913; Gisborne; Saunders; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 24 Sep 1913.

RUTHERFORD, ANDREW WILLIAM (1842-1918) was born in New South Wales, the son of George Rutherford (q.v.), and attended a private school in Adelaide. Coming to New Zealand with his parents, he took over the management of the Mendip Hills station in 1861 and specialised in the breeding of merino sheep. He represented Amuri in the Nelson Provincial Council (1870-71) and was a member of the Amuri road board from 1864 till it merged with the Amuri county council, on which he held a seat for 25 years. He was for 12 years in the Cheviot county council (and three years chairman). For 20 years Rutherford was a member of the licensing committee, and of the north Canterbury charitable aid and hospital board. From 1902 to 1908 he was member for Hurunui in the House of Representatives. In 1873 he married a daughter of R. Monk of Conway village, Cheviot. Rutherford published in 1911 *Impressions of a Pastoralist on Tow.* He died on 12 Nov 1918.

*N.z.P.D.*, 13 Nov 1918; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Rutherford, *op. cit.* (p); Playne; Acland; *The Press*, 17 Feb 1885. Portrait: Parliament House.

RUTHERFORD, SIR ERNEST, 1st Baron Rutherford of Nelson (1871-1937), was born at

## RUTHERFORD

Brightwater, Nelson, the fourth son of a wheelwright, James Rutherford who came to Nelson from Scotland in 1842. His mother, Martha Thompson, came to New Plymouth in the early fifties. They were married in 1866, and had a family of 12. Mrs Rutherford was a woman of good education and high character, a good organiser and musician. Ernest attended the schools at Foxhill and Havelock, and from the latter won a Marlborough education board scholarship, gaining 580 marks out of a possible 600. This took him to Nelson College (1884), where he came under the influence of W. S. Littlejohn (q.v.), who took a great interest in his progress and gave him a thorough grounding in mathematics. He won all the prizes and scholarships in classics, French, English and mathematics, and in 1888 was dux of the College. He was a keen footballer and a popular boy. In 1889 Rutherford won a junior university scholarship, being third on the list. W. S. Marris (later his rival at Canterbury College, and now Sir William Marris, principal of Armstrong College, Newcastle), was first. At Canterbury College Rutherford came under the influence of C. H. H. Cook (professor of mathematics) and A. W. Bickerton (professor of physics). He graduated B.A. in 1892 with a senior scholarship in mathematics and M.A. in 1893 with first-class honours in both mathematics and physics (a very rare event). In 1894, while teaching at the Christchurch Boys' High School, he carried out researches on a magnetic detector of Hertzian waves, which he described before the Canterbury Philosophical Institute (29 Nov 1894). These researches were carried out in a rough basement cellar with a battery made by Rutherford during his holidays on his father's farm at Pungarehu (Taranaki). The detector was higWy sensitive and led to many other magnetic detectors of wireless waves (for one of which Marconi took out a patent in 1902). In 1894 he graduated B.Sc. and was awarded the 1851 Exhibition science scholarship (which had been offered to J. C. Maclaurin, q.v.). He had to this point assisted his father during his holidays and helped to finance the education of his sisters.

In 1895 Rutherford entered Trinity College, Cambridge, as one of the first graduates of overseas universities admitted as research students. He entered upon his work at the Cavendish Laboratory with great enthusiasm under Profes-

## RUTHERFORD

sor J. J. Thomson, who was then at the zenith of his powers, and had for 10 years been concentrating on problems associated with the passage of electricity through gases in a partially evacuated chamber. In Nov 1895 Rontgen discovered that electricity passed through at high voltage with a high degree of vacuum produced invisible rays which could pass through the glass walls of the vessel and through outside opaque objects and could affect a photographic plate. Working under Thomson, Rutherford •devised very ingenious methods for measuring various fundamental qualities and obtained very valuable results which helped to make the subject metrical, whereas before it had been only descriptive.' They published their results in Nov 1896 in a paper which was the foundation of the ionisation theory of conduction of electricity through gases. These experiments attracted wide attention. After Madame Curie's discoveries with uranium ore, Rutherford applied his knowledge and technique to radiation from uranium and thorium, and in 1898 completed an analysis with a complete verification of the ionisation theory. The most important result was the identification of alpha, beta and gamma rays. The first named (which were doubly charged atoms of helium) specially appealed to Rutherford and later proved effective in unravelling many atomic secrets. With his reputation based on such promising investigations, he was in 1898 offered the research professorship at McGill University, Montreal, where, through the generosity of Sir William Macdonald, he enjoyed exceptional facilities for research. He soon gathered about him a band of workers from Canada and elsewhere, and prosecuted with enthusiasm his researches into the radio-activity of thorium. In association with Professor Soddy, who undertook the chemical work, he investigated the nature of various radio-active substances. Together they discovered thorium X, and in 1902 enunciated the bold disintegration theory of radioactivity, according to which atoms were no longer regarded as permanent and indivisible, and radioactive elements disintegrated spontaneously.

In 1901 Rutherford was made D.Sc. by the University of New Zealand. In 1903 he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society, which awarded him the Rumford and Copley medals,

## RUTHERFORD

and in 1904 he outlined the science of radioactivity in the Bakerian lecture., He lectured at many American universities.' In 1907 a chance came for his return to Britain when he accepted the Layworthy professorship of physics in the University of Manchester. There he continued his researches into radioactivity and the structure of the atom and developed his third great theory, the nuclear theory of atoms, in which he pictured the atom as a miniature solar system. This was developed by Rutherford in association with many brilliant co-workers, including Moseley and Niels Bohr. Throughout his work his aim was to elucidate the complete structure of the atom, and, having discovered the radioactive properties of particular atoms, he proceeded to investigate the general structure of all atoms; next, the constitution of the nucleus of the atom; and lastly the methods and results of transmuting atoms from one form to another, which he described in the process of transmutation of matter and artificial disintegration. In his work on the atom Rutherford was the first to point the way to the vast possibilities of atomic energy. Although as a scientist he stressed experimentation as opposed to speculation, he suggested many brilliant theories; he favoured quantitative physical methods of investigation and selected electrical methods, which are capable of great refinement in experienced hands. Some years before Rutherford's death Sir William Bragg wrote: •He possesses a keen love of research for its own sake. He has a fine judgment of the essential, and goes to work in a way which when the end is reached, is seen to have been obviously direct. He has the courage to break with precedent and to try out his own ideas. Rutherford has upset many theories, but he has never belittled anyone's work. He has added new pages to the book of physical science, and has always taught his students to venerate the old, even when the writing has become a little old-fashioned.'

In 1908 Rutherford was awarded the Nobel and Bressa prizes, and in 1914 he was knighted. In 1919 he was created a Fellow of Trinity College and in the same year succeeded Sir J. J. Thomson as head of the Cavendish Laboratory and professor of experimental physics. Throughout the war of 1914-18 he was a member of the board of inventions and research, which he represented on the French naval and military

## RUTHERFORD

IllisslOn to the United States of America. In 1921 he was made professor of natural philosophy in the Royal Institute. From 1925-30 he was president of the Royal Society, and in 1930 he acted as chairman of the advisory council of scientific and industrial research. Rutherford received 20 honorary degrees from universities of high scientific standing. In 1925 he was elected to the Order of Merit, and in 1931 he was raised to the peerage as Baron Rutherford of Nelson. Shortly afterwards the University of New Zealand conferred on him the honorary degree of D.Sc.

His publications include *Radioactivity* (1904), *Radioactive Transformations* (1906), *Radioactive Substances and their Radiations* (1913), *Radium and the Electron* (1921), *Electrical Structure of Matter* (1925), *Radiations from Radioactive Substances* (1930), *Artificial Transmutation of the Elements* (1933), and *The Newer Alchemy* (1937). In 1900 Rutherford married Mary Georgina, a daughter of Arthur Charles Newton, of Christchurch. He died on 19 Oct 1937.

*Who's Who NZ.*, i908, 1924, 1932; C. M. Focken, *Lord Rutherford of Nelson*; A. S. Eve, *Rutherford* (1939); E. Marsden in *Trans. Roy. Soc. NZ.*, vol. 68 (p); *Nelson Coll. O.B. Reg.*; *The Nelsonian*, Dec 1937 (p); Hight and Candy; *NZ. Railways Magazine*, Dec 1937; *Otago Witness*, 28 Jul 1931; *The Dominion*, 10 Jan 1938; *The Times*, 20 Oct 1937 (P).

RUTHERFORD, GEORGE (1816-85) was the son of a tenant farmer at Jedburgh, Roxburghshire. He left in 1840 with his wife for New South Wales, where he became a farm manager. In 1846, with the Hon John Crozier, he took up a run on the Edward river; in 1850 he bought Kulmine, on the Murray, and in 1856 he established a stock agency in Adelaide. He brought stock to New Zealand in 1858 and bought 30,000 acres of freehold at Leslie Hills. In 1865-67 George Rutherford represented

## RUTHERFORD

Amuri in the Nelson Provincial Council. He died on 13 Feb 1885.

*The Press*, 17 Feb 1885.

RUTHERFORD, JAMES (1825-83) was a native of Dublin, was educated there and entered into business as a seed merchant (1851). He was a man of outstanding energy integrity and acumen "and had a wide connection allover Ireland. In 1879 his health broke down and, having achieved a competence, he converted the business into a company (in which he retained a holding) and came to New Zealand. After spending a few weeks in Dunedin, he purchased the Summerhill estate at Kaitangata. In 1880 he was elected to the Bruce county council, and at the general election of 1887 he was successful in the contest for the Bruce seat. Standing as a Liberal, he defeated W. A. Murray and J. Adam. He died on 16 May 1883.

*NZ.P.D.*, 23 May,!, 23 Jun, 18 Jul 1882; *Dublin Farmers' Gazette*, 21 Jun 1879; *Bruce Herald*, 14, 28 Oct 1881; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 May 1883. Portrait: Parliament House.

RUTHERFORD, JOHN, who was born in 1776 at Manchester, was employed for some years in a cotton factory, and went to sea when he was about 10 years of age. He took part in the storming of San Sebastian in 1813, and in 1816 was aboard the American trader *Agnes*, which was driven into a bay near the mouth of the Thames, New Zealand, and attacked by Maoris. Rutherford was one of those who were not killed and eaten. He was taken captive, and for 1 year he lived among the natives, tattooed like a Maori, and having two wives. He was created a chief. In 1826 he managed to escape on a trading ship, returned to England and dictated an account of his adventures. His subsequent history is unknown.

Craik, *The New Zealanders* (1830); J. Drummond: *John Rutherford, the White Chief* (1908).

---

---

# S

---

---

SADLIER, WILLIAM CHARLES (1867-1935), born at Bandon, county Cork, Ireland, was the son of a journalist and came to Australia in the eighties. He entered Trinity College, Melbourne, and in 1892 was ordained in the Church of England. (B.A., 1894; M.A., 1896.) Sadlier was curate of Pyramid Hill and Bendigo, and principal of Perry Hall theological college in Bendigo (1897-99). In 1899 he was appointed co-editor of the *Church of England Messenger*, and in the same year took over the parish of Christ Church, St Kilda. In 1904 he was created canon of St Paul's Cathedral, and from 1907 to 1910 was lecturer in theology at St John's College and examining chaplain to the bishops of Bendigo and Gippsland. (B.D., London, 1909; D.O., 1918.) In 1912 he succeeded Dr Mules as Bishop of Nelson. Sadlier was chaplain to the Australian forces (1896-1912), and during the war of 1914-18 was senior chaplain to the New Zealand forces. He died on 1 Feb 1935. His wife was Edith E., daughter of William Lievesley of Victoria.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 2 Feb 1935.'

ST GEORGE, JOHN CHAPMAN (1844-69) was a son of Mrs Mary George (who with her husband kept a school in Wellington 1844-46). On his father's death the family lived in Nelson, where he completed his education. His mother having married Alfred Domett (1856), the family moved to Wellington. St George took up land in Hawkes Bay.

On the outbreak of the Waikato war he joined the Hawkes Bay squadron of the Colonial Defence Force. (Sub-inspector, 11 Jul 1863). He was one of the few European officers engaged at Te Kopane (Jan 1866) and contin-

ued in service through the war. On 27 Jan 1868 he was gazetted captain. Early in 1869 he and his brother (F. N. George) took up a run near Taupo, and they were engaged stoeking it when Te Kooti ordered the run to be pillaged and the stock killed. St George was stationed at Tapuaeharuru (Taupo), in command of the Arawa contingent. On receiving information of the affair at Opepe (Jun 1869), he set out with his force to cross the lake to reinforce the post at Tokaanu. Delayed by wind, he arrived too late for the fight at Tauranga-Taupo, from which Te Kooti had withdrawn to the southward, driving off the horses of the besieged force. St George displayed great skill and intrepidity in the operations at Ponanga (Sep). At the final engagement at Porerere (3 Oct), leading the constabulary and friendlies up the slope to enter the work, he was killed by a bullet in the head. The body was buried on the field, but reinterred in Napier in 1872.

St George's brother, FREDERICK NELSON GEORGE, born about 1842 and educated at Nelson College (1856-58), joined the Forest Rangers. (Captain, Oct 1863.) He was slightly wounded, but distinguished himself at the relief of Phipiriki (Jul 1865) and was promoted brevet-major. He served later in Bay of Plenty. George was a well-known racing owner. He died in England 23 Oct 1914. He married Amelia Emma Sutton (1845-1931) of Otago.

Cowan, ii (P) : Gascoyne; Gudgeon; Whitmore; *Nelson Coll. a.B. Reg.*; Ward; *Southern Cross*, 4 Oct 1869.

ST HILL, (JAMES) HENRY (1807-66), a prominent Wellington settler, reached New Zealand by the *Adelaide* on 7 Mar 1840. He was the son of Henry Charles St Hill, of Bradninch,

## ST HILL

Devonshire, who served many years in the British ordnance department, mainly in the West Indies, Ceylon and Hongkong, retired and died at Wellington on 12 Mar 1861. (James) Henry was born at Trinidad, West Indies, and educated at Christ's Hospital, London. He was a member of the Church of England Society for the appointment of a bishop for New Zealand (1839), and also of the provisional committee set up by the settlers for their own government at Port Nicholson (1840). Early in 1841 he was gazetted a magistrate for the territory, and in Jan 1843 sheriff for the southern district. A few months later he was called on to accompany Wakefield and the magistrates to Nelson to investigate the circumstances of the Wairau clash. He went with Bishop Selwyn to Taranaki and with Martin to Taupo to investigate native reserves, of which he was commissioner (Nov 1843). In Apr 1845 St Hill was appointed magistrate and sheriff at Wellington, and he took a leading part in the enrolment and training of the militia in Port Nicholson during the hostilities of 1845-46. He was a trustee of the Mechanics' Institute (1848), sometime acting auditor-general and auditor for the Wellington Provincial Council (1854), and some years manager of the bank of issue.

St Hill was a member of the Legislative Council (1853-56). At the opening sitting (27 May 1854) he moved that a clergyman of the Church of England should read prayers, but the Council, fearing the establishment of a precedent, decided that the Speaker should read them. On 6 Jun he moved a resolution in favour of an elective legislative council, as being more in accordance with the democratic spirit and more likely to command respect than a nominee chamber. Dillon Bell alone supported the motion, which was negatived. In 1858 St Hill was brought forward by the Reform party in Wellington province to oppose Featherston's re-election as Superintendent, but was defeated. His high character and social standing were of great service to the young community, which honoured him in 1864, when a fatal disease compelled him to retire and return to England. He was a close friend of Colonel Wakefield, Te Puni and Selwyn, a strong churchman and a lay member of the first general synod (1859). He died in London on 5 Jun 1866.

## SALE

A brother, ASHTON ST HILL (1825-1904), arrived by the *Glenbervie* (1840), was a member of the Wellington Provincial Council for the Country District (1857-61) and settled in Hawkes Bay. He died on 18 Dec 1904.

Another brother, HARRY WOODFORD ST HILL (1828-1907), was educated at Christ's Hospital and at St John's, Auckland (1850-53). He was ordained deacon (1852) and priest (1859); held several charges; was headmaster of the Crofton boarding school (1865-75); vicar of Havelock North and Clive; and canon of Napier Cathedral (1883). He died at San Remo on 15 Jan 1907.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; J. K. Davis; Jacobs; Wakelin; C. H. St Hill (information); *N.Z. Spectator* and *Wellington Independent*, pass. Portrait by Pickersgill in Magistrate's Court, Wellington.

SALE, GEORGE SAMUEL (1831-1922) was born at Rugby, England, his father being a master at Rugby School, where he was educated (under the headship of Arnold). In 1850 he proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated (B.A., 1854; M.A., 1857). He took first-class honours in classics. Being elected a fellow of Trinity (1856), he was next year appointed a lecturer in classics.

In 1860, owing to ill-health, Sale came to New Zealand in the *Minerva*, and was for a short time manager for Ross and Harper at Lake Coleridge station, Canterbury. On the establishment of *The Press* (May 1861), he became its first editor, but after holding that position for six months went to the Otago goldfields, where he spent nine months goldmining. He then returned to Canterbury and received the appointment of provincial treasurer and receiver of land revenue (Jun 1864). On the discovery of gold in Westland it was considered wise to send a man to organise a well ordered society there and Sale, who was in charge of the provincial treasury at Christchurch, proceeded there at the request of the provincial government as agent and commissioner for the goldfields. In this capacity he had wide powers to inaugurate every department of the government, and he enjoyed among the miners the title of King Sale: His appointments included those of warden and judge (1 Apr 1865), commissioner (3 Apr), provincial sub-treasurer and

resident magistrate (7 Apr), resident commissioner (13 Aug 1867); under-secretary for the goldfields and commissioner for waste lands (22 Feb 1868).

On the separation of Westland from Canterbury Sale resigned his post (4 May 1869) and proceeded to England, entering at Lincoln's Inn with the intention of being called to the bar. The new University of Otago, however, offered him in 1870 the chair of English and classics, which he took up willingly and held until 1908 (being relieved in 1877 of the teaching in English). As one of the three first professors Sale had a powerful influence upon the academic life of the University. A man of wide and deep culture, a stem demeanour and great force of character, he held lofty ideals and insisted on a high standard of efficiency. He drafted the first code of regulations. He took an interest in all branches of sport and warmly championed the demand of the School of Mines to be allowed to grant diplomas. As a member of the council, he did much to persuade the University of Otago to merge itself in the University of New Zealand, on the senate of which he sat from 1877 to 1908. He was a member of the royal commission on the University of 1879. He was also a member of the committee on unemployment in Dunedin (1870), which expressed the opinion that the depression arose in no small degree from the excessive rates of wages and the unwillingness of the men to accept a reduction.

On his retirement Sale was appointed a professor emeritus and went to live in England, where he died on 26 Dec 1922. He married (1874) Margaret, daughter of James Boswell Fortune (Canada).

Thompson; Beaglehole; *Otago Univ. Calendar; N.z. Univ. Calendar; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Westland P.C. Proc.*; Harrop, *Westland* (p); Hindmarsh; *The Times*, 27 Dec 1922; *The Press*, 16 Feb 1903 (on Rolleston), 25 May 1911, 29 Dec 1922.

SALMON, JOHN (1808-73) was born in Aberdeen. At the age of 14 he was apprenticed to the sea and became master of some of Dunbar's ships. His brother, who was a merchant at Kororareka, having died, he came to New Zealand about 1842 and took over the business. After being interested in whaling on the East Coast, he established himself as a merch-

ant in Auckland, where he prospered for the next twenty years, retiring in 1867. Salmon owned the schooner *Kate* and other ships. He was elected by the City of Auckland in 1852 to the Legislative Council of New Ulster, which, however, did not meet. On the promulgation of the new constitution he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member from 1853 to 1868. He was a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank and of the orphan home at Parnell. Salmon died on 26 Mar 1873.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Mar 1873.

SALMOND, SIR JOHN WILLIAM (1862-1924) was born at North Shields, the son of William Salmond (q.v.), with whom he came to New Zealand in 1876. He completed his schooling at the Otago Boys' High School (1876-79) and proceeded to Otago University, where he graduated (B.A., 1882; M.A., 1883; junior scholar). He then studied law at University College, London, where he graduated LL.B. and LL.D. and was Gilchrist scholar.

Admitted a barrister of the Supreme Court of New Zealand, he practised in Temuka for about 10 years and was then appointed professor of law at Adelaide University. During his occupancy of this post (1897-1906) Salmond made a reputation as a jurist. In 1901 he published *Essays in Jurisprudence and Legal History*, and in the following year a textbook on *Jurisprudence* which became one of the classical works on the subject (9th ed. 1937). He was appointed to the chair of law at Victoria College, Wellington, in 1906. In the following year appeared his book on *Torts*, which was speedily recognised as a work of high authority (8th ed. 1934). His knowledge of law was profound. The same close scrutiny and lucid expression which made his legal textbooks standard works placed him in the front rank also of authorities on constitutional and international law. He was appointed in 1907 counsel to the law drafting office, and three years later became Solicitor-general. In this capacity he co-operated with Sir Francis Bell in devising the intricate and novel legislation and regulations called for by the needs of the war of 1914-18. Bell entertained a high opinion of his ability and standing in the legal world and deferred to him in many instances of difficulty.

In 1920 Salmond was appointed a judge of

the Supreme Court, and in the following year he represented New Zealand at the disarmament conference at Washington. There his authority amongst lawyers of international standing was at once recognised, and he was awarded the Ares medal of Harvard University. He was knighted in 1918. Salmond married Anne Bryham, daughter of James Guthrie, of Newcastle-on-Tyne. He died on 19 Sep 1924. A volume on *Contracts* appeared posthumously in 1927.

W. D. Stewart; *Otago B.H.'s List; Otago Univ. Calendar; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Evening Post, Otago Daily Times, The Dominion*, 20 Sep 1924 (pp); *The Spike*, June 1906 (p), Sep 1924; *Law Quarterly Review*, vol. xl (1924).

SALMOND, WILLIAM (1835-1917) was born in Edinburgh, and educated at Heriot's Hospital, the High School and the University in his native city. Graduating B.A. in 1853, he spent four years studying theology in Scotland and Germany and, ordained by the Presbyterian Church, served as minister at North Shields, Northumberland, from 1858-75. In 1876 he arrived at Port Chalmers by the *Corona*. After 10 years as professor of theology in the Presbyterian Church of Otago and Southland he was appointed in 1886 professor of mental and moral science at Otago University. He was created D.D. of Glasgow University in 1882 and of Edinburgh University in 1885. From 1888 to 1912 he was on the New Zealand University senate. Resigning his chair in 1915, Salmond was made professor emeritus. He died two years later (on 6 Mar 1917).

Salmond published a number of sermons and lectures, and was a frequent contributor to periodicals. He married a daughter of the Rev James Young, of Dunfermline, and was the father of Sir J. W. Salmond (q.v.), and CHARLES FRANCIS SALMOND (1870-1933), professor of mental and moral science of Canterbury University College.

Thompson, *Hist. Otago Univ.*; *Cycl. N.z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; Hight and Candy; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Jan 1886, 7 Mar 1917; *The Press*, 7 Dec 1934.

SAM, SETH, was medical officer to the 3rd Wai-kato Regiment (Jun 1865) and saw some service. He was in the confidence of some of the King chiefs and attended Wiremu Tamihana

te Waharoa till his death (Dec 1866). Sam afterwards practised at Thames, where he founded the masonic Lodge of Light (I.C.). He represented Thames in the Provincial Council (1870).

*Auckland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; Barclay.

SAMUEL, OLIVER (1849-1925) was born at St Heliers, Jersey, the son of the Rev Dr Jacob Samuel, D.D., LL.D. (1800-82) (who was a student at Wilsey, Poland, in 1812) and with whom he came to New Zealand in 1855. He was educated at Nelson College, where he gained several scholarships. On leaving he was appointed to the Crown Lands department (1866), from which he was transferred in 1869 to the deeds registry office at Auckland. On the Thames goldfield he was in the office of receiver of goldfields revenue, from which he resigned and had some success on the Thames and Coromandel fields. In 1870 he rejoined the government service in Wellington.

In 1873 Samuel was articled to W. Sefton Moorhouse (q.v.). Admitted as a barrister and solicitor in 1878, he was about to start practice in Christchurch when Moorhouse died. Samuel commenced practice in New Plymouth (1879), where he had a distinguished career at the bar and as counsel to public bodies, notably the harbour board in their action against the sinking fund commissioners. In 1881 he conducted the prosecution of Te Whiti, Tohu and Hiroki. In 1884 Samuel entered Parliament, defeating T. Kelly for the New Plymouth seat, which he represented until he retired in 1890. About 1903 he withdrew from general practice. He was called to the Legislative Council in 1907, and sat until his death on 11 Jan 1925, being chairman of committees for the last seven years. (K.C., 1919.)

Samuel married a daughter of Octavius Carington (q.v.). He was a staunch patron of the turf, president of the Taranaki Jockey Club and for many years a member of the New Zealand racing conference.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *N.z.P.D.*, 26, 30 Jun 1925; Chadwick (p); *Nelson Coli. Reg.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 12 Jan 1925. Portrait: Parliament House.

SANDERS, WILLIAM EDWARD (1882-1917) was born in Auckland, and educated at the Nelson street school there. He then went to sea in the steamer *Karapuni* in the coastal

trade, and transferred to the Government steamer *Hinemoa*. He was later first mate in the *Joseph Craig*, which was wrecked at Kaipara in 1914. Sanders had gained his extra master's certificate and joined the Union Steam Ship Co. before the outbreak of the war of 1914-18, for which he volunteered forthwith. Not being accepted for eighteen months, he proceeded to England and was commissioned as a sub-lieutenant in the Royal Naval Reserve. He was promoted to lieutenant-commander and in command of a patrol launch saw much anti-submarine service. In May 1917 he was awarded the Victoria Cross for conspicuous bravery and consummate coolness and skill while in command of a vessel which was attacked by a submarine. On 12 Jun he was again commended, and awarded the D.S.O. for similar service: He was killed in action on 14 Aug 1917, when his ship was blown up.

*London Gaz.*, May-Aug 1917; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Aug 1917. Portrait: National Gallery, Wellington.

SANDFORD, EBENEZER (1846-97) was born in England and trained as a compositor on the *London Echo*, of which his father was foreman. He came to Otago in 1872, worked on the *Gum'dian* as compositor, and was part owner of the *An'ow Observer* (Arrowtown) until it was burnt out (1883), when he moved to Invercargill and thence to Christchurch. There he was a compositor on the staff of the *Lyttelton Times*. A strong Labour advocate, he was one of the delegates sent to Wellington during the strikes of 1890-91, and at the end of 1891 he was elected to Parliament for the City of Christchurch (when Sir Westby Perceval retired). He was one of the first batch of Labour members elected. He was defeated at the general election of 1893 and did not stand again, being afterwards appointed to the office of the public works department in Christchurch. Sandford was a founder of the Christchurch typographical association, and a president of the Canterbury trades and labour council. He died on 17 Dec 1897.

*Parltry Record*; Drummond; *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Nov 1891; *Lyttelton Times*, 18 Dec 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

SAUNDERS, ALFRED (1820-1905) was born at Market Lavington, Wiltshire; educated at Dr Day's Academy at Bristol and left at the age of 14 to follow the calling of his father as

a farmer and miller. He was from his youth a total abstainer; at the age of 16 he was secretary of the Lavington Temperance society, and in 1840 a delegate for the Bath society at the conference in Bridgwater. In Sep 1841 Saunders sailed in the *Fifeshire* for Nelson. He founded the first New Zealand temperance society on board, and carried it on in the colony. Soon after his arrival he was appointed secretary of the land purchasers' society, but he resigned after the Wairau affair in the belief that the society had exceeded its functions. He lived in Australia (1845-49), returning in time to be active in the demand for self-government.

Shortly after the constitution was brought into force, Saunders was elected M.P.C. for Waimea South (1855). In 1859, on account of a letter he wrote in the *Examiner* criticising the district judge (Travers), he was tried and sentenced to six months' imprisonment and a fine of £150. An influential public demonstration and his re-election to the Provincial Council while he was in prison caused the government to release him, and Travers resigned from the bench. Saunders was also elected M.H.R. for Waimea and restored to the commission of the peace, from which he had been removed. Fox offered him the post of Colonial Treasurer, but he declined. In 1864, owing to pressure of work as provincial secretary (1863-65), he resigned from Parliament, and a few months later was elected Superintendent of Nelson following the death of J. P. Robinson (q.v.). He was re-elected later in the year. Saunders took a strong attitude in arresting, without legal evidence, the four men suspected of the Maungatapu murders.

Early in 1867 he resigned the superintendency to visit England, where he spent five years (1867-72). While there he was elected president of the Bath temperance society and he did much work in this cause and in the press in defence of New Zealand settlers. On returning to New Zealand he made his home in Canterbury. In 1877 he was elected to Parliament for Cheviot, and again in 1879. He was a strong supporter of Sir George Grey throughout. In 1880 the Hall government appointed him chairman of the royal commission on the civil service. The report of the commission brought a good deal of disfavour on

the members, and Saunders lost his seat. Uncompromising in his political views, which followed closely those of the English radicals, he was out of favour with the electors for some years. Five times he contested seats without success. At length in 1889 he defeated Ollivier for Lincoln, which he represented for that Parliament only. In 1890 he was returned for Selwyn, where in 1896 he suffered defeat by Wason (by 1,676 votes to 1,494).

Meanwhile he was indefatigably busy in his country and literary pursuits. In 1883 he published *Our Domestic Birds* and in 1888 *Our Horses*. He was keenly interested in horse breeding, and paid much attention also to his studs of English Leicester and Southdown sheep and Berkshire pigs. Saunders was always devoted to the cause of education. He helped to get the Nelson education act passed, he was a governor of Nelson College and a member of the board of education there, and in Canterbury was chairman of the education board and a governor of the Ashburton high school. He was also on the Ashburton county council. Saunders published in two volumes (1896 and 1899) his history of New Zealand, which is a notable contribution to the personal history of his own period. He first married (1846) a daughter (d. 1898) of William Flower (Nelson); and, secondly, a daughter (d. 1904) of Richard Box (Southampton). He died on 28 Oct 1905.

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass (notably 30 Oct 1905); Saunders, *op. cit.*; *Parltry Record*; *Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii, v (P); Broad; Gisborne; *Lyttelton Times*, 18 Jan 1889, 30 Oct 1905; *The Press*, 30 Oct 1905. Portrait: Parliament House.

SAUNDERS, WILLIAM (1851-1935), born in Pembroke, Wales, was educated at the county school, Bedford, and studied for the ministry at Hackney College, London. Ordained in 1884, he had charge of Bromley-by-Bow till 1890, when he came to New Zealand as minister of the Moray Place Congregational Church, Dunedin, from which he retired in 1928. Saunders was chairman of the Ross Home committee and of the local branch of the London Missionary Society; vice-president of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and a member of the Bible-in-schools committee and of the Dunedin crematorium society. For a number of years he was chaplain to the forces,

and he was largely responsible for the organisation of the Council of Churches. He was four times chairman of the Congregational Union of New Zealand. In 1890 he married a daughter of D. Hutchinson, of London. He died on 8 Jun 1935.

*Cycl. N.z.*, iv (P); *Who's Who N.z.* 1908, 1924, 1932; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Jun 1935.

SAVAGE, JOHN (1770-1838) was born in South London, qualified in medicine, and was assistant surgeon in the *Melville Castle* (1796-97). In 1802 he was appointed assistant surgeon in New South Wales, whither he sailed with his wife in H.M.S. *Glatton*, arriving in 1803. A follower of Jenner, he introduced in the colony vaccination by calf lymph. Early in 1804 he was appointed magistrate for the county of Cumberland, and a few months later acting-magistrate at Parramatta. During the insurrection of the Irish convicts (Mar 1804), he was appointed captain of the Parramatta Associated company of volunteers (afterwards the Parramatta Loyal Association Company). As a magistrate he did duty also at Norfolk Island and Van Diemen's Land. In Jun 1805 he was court-martialled on a charge of refusing to attend a settler's wife; found guilty and cashiered. Governor King disapproved of the sentence. He could not intervene, but granted Savage permission to go to England.

Savage left Sydney in the whaler *Ferret* and spent some weeks in Bay of Islands, during which he made notes for an interesting little volume, *Some Account of New Zealand, particularly the Bay of Islands and Surrounding Country*, which contained sailing instructions for the northern coasts. Having gained the confidence of the natives, he was importuned by several who wished to accompany him to England, and he eventually consented to take Moehanga (q.v.), the first Maori to visit Great Britain. Savage was well received by Lord Fitzwilliam (President of the Council); the sentence of the court-martial was reversed, and he was confirmed in his appointment. He did not, however, return to New South Wales, but entered the service of the East India Company (1807), from which he retired in 1833. He died on 27 Apr 1838.

India Office records; F. M. Bladen, *Historical Records of New South Wales*, vols. v, vi; Savage, *Some Account of New Zealand* (1807).

## SAWTELL

SAWTELL, HENRY (1834-1913) was elected a member of the first Christchurch City Council in 1868, represented Christchurch City in the Provincial Council (1870-74). In 1872 he was mayor of Christchurch. He was a partner in the firm of Wilson, Sawtell and Co., general merchants.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The P'ess*, 21 Jun 1913.

SAXTON, JOHN WARING (1806-66) was born at Whitchurch, Shropshire. He lived in Shrewsbury before coming to Nelson by the *Clifford* in 1842 with his brother, Charles Waring Saxton. Saxton contested the superintendency of Nelson in 1853 against Stafford, the result being: Stafford, 251; Saxton, 206; F. Jollie, 150. He represented Waimea South in the Nelson Provincial Council (1853-57). He was a man of considerable talent, a fine musician and a skilled water-colour painter. His diary, copiously illustrated with sketches, is a valuable contribution to the early history of Nelson. He made five sketches for illustrations to E. J. Wakefield's *Adventure in New Zealand*. He died on 14 Nov 1866.

CHARLES WARING SAXTON graduated M.A. at Oxford, and later received the D.D. He also came to Nelson in 1842, and held services there till he returned to England in 1843. He was headmaster of the Newport Grammar School in 1846-70, and in 1887 was living in Shrewsbury. Joseph Somes (q.v.) married a sister of the Saxtons.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; Broad; Dr F. A. Bett (information).

SCHAW, HENRY (1828-1902) was born in England, educated at the Royal Military College, Woolwich, and received his commission in the Royal Engineers in 1847. He served in the Crimea and was afterwards engineer in charge of public works in Ceylon. He blew up the fortifications of Corfu when that island was transferred to Greece, and was later professor of fortification at Sandhurst Military College, commanding engineer at Gosport and deputy-inspector of fortifications; and inspector-general of fortifications (from which post he retired with the C.B. and the rank of major-general in 1887). Schaw settled in New Zealand, and gave his services gratuitously in advising the Government on coast defences and organ-

## SCHNACKENBERG

isation. He took a keen interest in scientific matters, contributing many papers on optics and meteorology to the proceedings of the Philosophical Society and the New Zealand Institute. He was a supporter also of the Bible-in-schools movement. Schaw died on 14 Aug 1902.

*N.z.P.D.*, 10 May 1888; *Trs. N.Z. Inst.*; *N.Z. Times*, 16 Aug 1902.

SCHMITT, KARL GUSTAVUS (1834-1900) was born at Frankfurt-am-Main, the son of Dr Aloys Schmitt, a German composer and hof-capelmeister at the court of Bavaria. He was educated in Germany and became an accomplished violinist. Schmitt came to Auckland in the early sixties and was a successful musical teacher. Later he became organist in Sydney to a Congregational and other churches and conductor of the Philharmonic society. Mter spending some time in Germany he came to Tasmania as aide-de-camp and musical director to Sir Frederick Weld (q.v.), who was governor (1875-80). In 1881 he returned to Auckland as conductor of the Choral society. He was a founder of the Auckland Amateur Opera club and of the young ladies' orchestra, and at the time of his death lecturer in music at Auckland University College. He took a great interest in volunteering and was honorary captain in the College rifles and the Southern Wanoa rifles, and captain in the New Zealand militia. Schmitt died on 22 Mar 1900. Schmitt received Italian and Belgian decorations for his compositions, some of which were performed in St Patrick's Cathedral and St Benedict's, Auckland.

*N.z. Herald*, 23 Mar 1900.

SCHNACKENBERG, CORT HENRY (1812-80) was born in Wilstedt, Hanover, and brought up in the Lutheran faith in a devout home. His father dying when he was 13, Cort found his way to London and entered commercial life. Mter a few years there he sailed for Sydney (1837), and two years later was sent to New Zealand as agent to purchase flax and other produce from the Maori. He sailed from Sydney in the *Bee* (Nov 1839). Schnackenberg had joined the Independent Church in Sydney. In 1839 he was at Paparua (Kawhia). There he became acquainted with Whiteley (q.v.), who was impressed by his piety and his knowledge

## SCHULTZE

of Maori, gained during many journeys in the interior. In 1844 he consented to become a catechist in the Wesleyan mission, and he was stationed first at Mokau, reopening a station which had been abandoned owing to native and other difficulties. There he rapidly gained the confidence and esteem of the natives and became a valuable missionary. In 1853 he was received on probation for the Wesleyan ministry, and in 1857 he was taken into full connection, being ordained in the High street chapel, Auckland. The next few years he spent at Kawhia, until the outbreak of the Waikato war. Thereafter he remained at Raglan until his death, ministering to Europeans and Maori over a wide and difficult district. He supervised the Government schools amongst the natives, and was frequently called upon to advise the Government on native matters. He died on 10 Aug 1880.

Schnackenberg married (1864) Annie Jane (d. 2 May 1905), daughter of Edward Allen of Mount Albert, formerly of Leamington, Warwickshire, who arrived in the *Black Eagle* (1861). She was for 10 years president of the W.C.T.U.

Buller; Morley; *N.z. Herald*, 16, 25 Aug 1880, 3 May 1905, *Auckland Star*, 23 May 1930.

SCHULTZE, CHARLES WILLIAM (1818-79) was born at Edinburgh, the family having settled in Scotland from Germany a century earlier. His father was a West Indian merchant. In 1836 Schultze emigrated to Australia. He obtained a position in the firm of Weller Brothers (formerly of Amersham, Buckinghamshire). They were merchants, shipowners and whalers, and in 1831 they established a whaling station in Otago harbour, where they met with keen opposition from J. Jones (q.v.). In 1832 their station was destroyed by a fire which burned down 80 houses and raupo huts.

Giving evidence before the Legislative Council of New South Wales in 1839, George Weller claimed to have purchased 500,000 acres of land in Otago from Tairaroa, and announced his intention of settling a colony of white people upon it. A month or two later Schultze was sent down in the schooner *Henry Freeling* (91 tons), which was to bring back a cargo of Otago potatoes. She was wrecked at Tautuku about Sep 1839, and it was some months before

## SCOTLAND

Schultze found his way back to Sydney in the schooner *Lucy Ann*. He had an interest in Otago, and in 1844, when the New Edinburgh scheme was postponed, he obtained a refund of money paid to the New Zealand Company for two sections of land.

Having married Anne Meek (d. 1887), a daughter of Joseph Weller, Schultze returned to New Zealand in 1842 in the schooner *Shepherdess* which he commanded. Mter a few voyages to Tahiti for fruit, he settled in Wellington, operating a flourmill at Kaiwarra for 20 years, when he retired. The granary was in Willis street.

Schultze was an officer of militia, being gazetted captain in 1863. From 1853 until his death he was a justice of the peace. He was a member of the Settlers' Constitutional association. At the first election for the Provincial Council he was defeated, but in 1854 he was elected to represent Wellington Country, and he continued in the Council almost continuously until 1865. During Featherston's superintendency he was speaker (1861-65), and on four occasions he acted as deputy-superintendent. Schultze was a useful member of the Council, but his speakership was stormy. Politics ran high and a jury found for Schultze ili a libel action and bound the paper over in recognisances of £200.

Schultze was a Presbyterian and a member of the building committee of St Andrew's Church in 1866. He was also a prominent freemason, being an early member of the Pacific Lodge. He was one of the first directors, in 1877, of the Wellington Steam Tramways Co. He died on 2 Mar 1879.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; J. G. Wilson; Ward; Ingram and Wheatley; *Evening Post*, 18 Nov 1929; *Otago Witness*, 13 Dec 1856.

SCOTLAND, HENRY (1821-1910) was born at Muswell Hill, London, the youngest son of George Scotland, C.B., chief justice of Trinidad. Educated at the Merchant Taylors' School and St John's College, Oxford, he read for the bar and was called in 1849. In the following year he came to New Zealand in the *Eden* and settled in Taranaki, living close to New Plymouth, where he practised law for many years. In 1852 he contested the Taranaki seat in the Legislative Council of New Ulster (against

## SCOTT

Wicksteed and J. C. Richmond). In 1868 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was one of the last life members. He inclined to favour single-chamber government, but in later years consistently defended life nomination as giving the members greater independence of the party in power. Scotland attended to his duties punctiliously until within a few weeks of his death. He lost a considerable part of his fortune in the bank crisis of the nineties, and afterwards left Taranaki and lived at Pahi, Auckland. He died at Wellington on 27 Jul 1910.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jul. 3 Aug 1910; *N.Z. Herald*, 15 Feb 1875; *Evening Post*, 27 Jul 1910. Portrait: Parliament House.

SCOTT, HENRY ARTHUR (1815-1908) was born in England and served in the 12th Lancers. He came to New Zealand in the fifties and settled in Canterbury, taking up the Glenthorne run and living at Glenmore, at the foot of the Port hills. He started the first volunteer corps in Canterbury. Scott was a member of the provincial executive in 1860. He sold his property in 1872 and returned to live in Wales, where he died in 1908. He was the father of Talbot Scott and of H. A. Scott, the secretary of the Midland Railway Co.

*Parltry Record*; Acland.

SCOTT, JOHN HALLIDAY (1851-1914) was born in Edinburgh and educated at the Edinburgh Institution and at the University, where he qualified. (M.B., and C.M., 1874; M.R.C.S., Eng., 1876; M.D. 1877; F.R.S., Edin., 1879.) After a year as house surgeon and 18 months as demonstrator in anatomy at Edinburgh University, he was appointed dean of the medical faculty and professor of anatomy and physiology at Otago University (1877). He was a member of the Otago University council (1908-14), and was on the New Zealand University senate (1890-1912, 1914). Scott was a water-colour artist and was for many years secretary of the Otago Art society. In 1882 he married a daughter of John Bealey, of Canterbury. He died on 27 Feb 1914.

Thompson. *Hist. Otago Univ.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

SCOTT, MATTHEW (1820-1904) was born in the north of Ireland and emigrated to Victoria

## SCOTT

as a young man. Disappointed there, he moved to Queensland as a pioneer farmer, and then came on a visit to New Zealand. After exploring in the Western district of Southland he decided to settle there, and in 1856 took up a pastoral run at Fairfax, to which he brought sheep from Sydney. On the run being opened for settlement, he retired to live in Stewart Island and later in Auckland. Scott was a member of the Southland Provincial Council for New River (1861-64), and was on the executive in 1862, and deputy-superintendent. He died on 10 Jul 1904.

*Parltry Record*; *Southland Times*, 13 Jul 1904.

SCOTT, ROBERT JULIAN (1861-1930) was born in Plymouth, a son of Rear-admiral R. A. G. Scott, R.N., and a cousin of Captain R. F. Scott, the Antarctic explorer. Educated at the Abbey school, Beckenham, Kent, and at the Royal School of Mines, he had railway engineering experience in England, and in 1881 joined the New Zealand railway service as locomotive draftsman and manager of the Addington workshops. He designed, and operated several new types of locomotives and wagons. The first locomotive to be made in the Dominion was called the Prairie, or Scott.

When the Canterbury University College school of engineering was founded, Scott was appointed lecturer in engineering (1888). He became lecturer in charge (1890), and professor in charge (1894), and until he retired in 1923 he was the dominating influence in the school. He was a member of the New Zealand University senate (1903-23) and acted as chairman of the royal commissions on railway rolling stock, on tramway brakes, on the Addington workshops, and on munitions. He published a number of papers on engineering subjects, as well as official reports. Scott was an enthusiastic yachtsman; designed and raced his own vessels, and was a founder of the Royal Port Nicholson yacht club. (M.L.M.E.; M.L.C.E.; F.A.L.E.E.; M.N.Z.Soc.C.E.) He died on 8 Nov 1930, surviving by many years his wife (Gert-rude, daughter of Sir Charles Bowen).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Hight and Candy; *The Press*, 9 Nov 1930.

SCOTT, THOMAS (1816-92) was born at Cupar, Fifeshire, and came to New Zealand in the *Olympus* with his wife (1841). A man of

## SCOULLAR

strong physique and courage, he distinguished himself by carrying despatches on foot between Wellington and Taranaki. In this duty he established trading relations with the tribes on the coast. Scott served in the militia during the campaign against Rangihaeata; was present at the capture of Te Rauparaha and was one of the force of 50 picked men who were stationed at Waikanae as a buffer against the hostile tribes from Wanganui. There he lived on terms of friendship with Wi Kingi te Rangitake. He settled in Rangitikei in 1846 as ferryman, pilot and storekeeper at the mouth of the Rangitikei river. Scott took little part in politics or local government. He died on 16 Jan 1892.

J. G. Wilson; *Rangitikei Advocate*, 18 Jan 1892.

SCOULLAR, ARTHUR (1830-99) was born at Stewarton, Ayrshire, educated in the parish school and sent to work at the age of seven. For eight years he was engaged in making Kilmarnock bonnets, and he was then apprenticed to cabinetmaking in Glasgow till 1850. In 1854 he sailed for Melbourne as carpenter's mate in the *Contest*. He worked at his trade there and on the diggings, and in 1862 was attracted to Otago by the Dunstan rush. There he made some money and in 1863 he started business as a cabinetmaker in Dunedin in partnership with Henry North. The latter retiring in 1890, the firm became Scoullar and Chisholm, and Scoullar went to live in Wellington. He was a member of the Dunedin City Council for four years, and mayor in 1884-85; and was an elder of Knox church. His death occurred on 11 Jun 1899.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Jun 1899.

SEAFIELD, FRANCIS WILLIAM OGILVY GRANT, 10th Earl of (1847-88), and 29th chief of Clan Grant, was born in Ireland. He became a midshipman in the Royal Navy, but retired and joined the merchant service. About 1870 he settled in New Zealand, taking up a farm at Waiareka, near Oamaru. He married (1874) Ann Trevor Corry, only daughter of Major George Evans. Having lost his money in the farm, Grant took employment as a labourer wherever he could obtain it and was so engaged until 1884, when he succeeded to the title of Lord Reidhaven. In that year he contested the Oamaru seat as a Liberal against Shrimski,

## SEALY

and again in 1885 against T. W. Hislop. Succeeding his father in the earldom (1888), he interested himself thereafter in philanthropic movements. Seafield died on 3 Dec 1888, being succeeded by his son, the 11th earl (q.v.). His widow died in 1935.

Burke, *Peerage*; *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Dec 1888; *North Otago Times*, 22 Jul 1884, 19 May 1885, 4 Dec 1888.

SEAFIELD, JAMES OGILVY GRANT, 11th Earl of (1876-1915) and 30th chief of clan Grant, was born at Oamaru and educated there and at Christ's College (1890) and Lincoln Agricultural College. He was a lieutenant in the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry. Succeeding his father in 1888, he proceeded to Scotland and devoted his attention to the estate and tenantry at Cullen House, Banffshire. He was deputy-lieutenant of Banffshire (1913). On the outbreak of the war in 1914 Seafield joined the Cameron Highlanders, served for some months as a recruiting officer, and then in France as a captain in the 5th battalion. He died of wounds on 13 Nov 1915. The earl married (1898) Mary Elizabeth Nina, daughter of Dr Joseph Henry Townend (Christchurch). He was succeeded in the earldom by his daughter and heir, Nina Caroline (b. 1906) and in the barony of Strathspey and the baronetcy by his brother, the Hon Trevor Ogilvy Grant (1879-).

Burke, *Peerage*; *Christ's Coll. List*; *The Times*, 15 Nov 1915.

SEAGER, CHARLES (1833-1918), who was born in Hampshire, England, was educated as an engineer. Arriving in New Zealand by the *Acasta* in 1858, he settled in Wellington, where he founded and conducted for 18 years the Phoenix foundry. He established and later managed the Wellington Steam Packet Co. From 1871 to 1873 Seager sat in the Provincial Council as member for Wellington City. He died on 16 Oct 1918.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Ward; *Evening Post*, 16 Oct 1918.

SEALY, EDWIN PERCY (1839-1903) was born in England, educated at Clifton College, and came to New Zealand in the *Clontarf* (1859). After spending two years on Patoka station, he joined the survey staff in Hawkes Bay and in 1865 became provincial surveyor in Canterbury. He was an enthusiastic alpinist, making many

journeys in the Mackenzie country and being the first to explore the Tasman and Hooker glaciers. He collected moths, butterflies and birds' eggs, of which he had fine collections. He also took many alpine photographs for the Canterbury Museum, and was awarded a gold medal at the Vienna Exhibition. On retiring from the service he farmed at Southern Down, but lost money. He was a promoter of co-operation among farmers and was chairman of directors of the Farmers' Co-operative association, of which he was the founder. Sealy died on 30 Oct 1903. He married (1873) a daughter of T. Sanderson (North Canterbury).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (P) ; *Timaru Herald*, 31 Oct 1903.

SEATON, JAMES (1822-82) was born at Sorn, Ayrshire; was trained as a cotton manufacturer, and came to Otago in the *Philip Laing* (1848). He took up land at Portobello, which he cleared and farmed successfully. In 1867 Seaton was elected to the Provincial Council for the Peninsula, which he represented till 1872. He resigned upon being appointed with T. Birch as immigration agent for the colony. In 1875 he was elected M.H.R. for Caversham, which he represented till 1879 (when he retired). In 1881 Seaton again came out for the Peninsula, which he won after a keen contest. He was a member of the general road board and the Otago education board, and rendered valuable service to his own district and the City of Dunedin. He died on 18 Nov 1882.

*Parltry Record; Otago Daily Times*, 1 Dec 1882.

SEDDON, RICHARD JOHN (1845-1906) was born at Eccleston, near St Helens, Lancashire. His father was headmaster of the Eccleston Hill Grammar School and his mother, Jean Lindsay, who came from Annan in Dumfries-shire was mistress of the denominational school. On their marriage the denominational school was closed. Seddon received a good education in his father's school, including Latin as an extra subject for which he stayed after school hours. He was good at mathematics (for which he received the prize), but soon became impatient of school and was sent to his grandfather's farm.

At the age of 14 he was apprenticed to Dalglish and Co., engineers, of St Helens, and on completing his term he found employment as a journeyman in the Vauxhall foundry at

Liverpool. He had scarcely entered upon this when he decided to emigrate, and in 1863 he left for Victoria in the *Star of England*. He took employment in engineering shops in Melbourne, but was soon attracted by the goldfields at Bendigo. This was a short interlude. He had no luck and was glad to return to Melbourne and obtain employment in the railway workshops at Williamstown. A clever athlete (especially in running, wrestling and boxing) Seddon won a prize at the eight-hours demonstration at Williamstown. In later years on the West Coast he frequently distinguished himself as a wrestler. He was a corporal in the Williamstown artillery. While there he met Louisa Jane, daughter of Captain John Stuart Spotswood, and granddaughter of Captain John Spotswood of the 84th and 98th Regiments, and of Major-general Waddington, H.E.I.C.S.

At the end of 1866 Seddon left Melbourne in the *Alhambra* for New Zealand. Landing at Hokitika, he made his way to the goldfields at Waimea, or Six Mile, where his life in New Zealand began. Equipped with a knowledge of engineering and mining methods in Australia, he and his party introduced hydraulic sluicing, constructing dams and flumes to work the auriferous terraces on the Right-hand Branch. He was connected with the celebrated Band of Hope water-race, and as a result of his experience he urged the local authorities and the Government to make races on a large scale to provide water for the miners. Seddon made a good deal of money at this time, some of which he invested in opening stores on the fields. One of these stores was at the Big Dam. In 1869 he was married, and he then settled down in Kumara, where he kept a store and took a prominent part in the affairs of the town and district. He practised with success as a miners' advocate at Stafford and Goldsborough.

In 1869, also, he made his first appearance in public life, being elected by the miners as a member of the Arahura road board, of which he was chairman from 1870 until it merged in the county. He was a candidate at the same time for the Westland county council, but was defeated. On Westland becoming a province (1874) he was elected to represent Arahura in the Provincial Council, in which he sat till the abolition (1876). He was chairman of committees for a time, and in this capacity he made a

study of the standing orders, the rules of conducting meetings and parliamentary procedure according to Todd and May. When the comity was re-established (1877) he became a member of the council, of which he was chairman most of the time until becoming a minister of the crown (1891). In 1878, being now one of the oldest residents of Kumara, he was elected first mayor of the borough. In the laying-out of the town he took a leading part, calling in the warden to ensure that the streets should be straight and the blocks square. Seddon first stood for Parliament in 1876. In a contest for the return of two members for Hokitika, he entered the field rather late and, not being so well known in Hokitika as the other candidates, he was unsuccessful. Barff and Button were elected, the figures being: Barff, 648; Button, 586; Reid, 527; Seddon, 343; Hoos, 6. Seddon returned thanks with a confident assurance that he would be elected at a future time. Button resigned his seat in May 1878, and at the by-election Seddon assisted in the return of Seymour Thorne George (q.v.), a nephew and follower of Sir George Grey. At the dissolution of 1879 George retired from Hokitika to contest the Rodney seat and Seddon, as chairman of the Liberal election committee, received a telegram from Grey advising him to become a candidate for Hokitika. Standing as a radical and out-and-out follower of Grey, Seddon condemned large land holdings and Chinese immigration, and proposed to pacify the Maori in the North Island by constructing railways through their lands. He considered Grey the only possible premier at the time. The poll resulted in the return of Reid and Seddon. (Reid, 917; Seddon, 800; Dungan, 561, Cumming, 90.)

On appearing in Parliament Seddon declined to speak on the address-in-reply until late in the debate, contending that it was the duty of new members to listen to the arguments of those who had long parliamentary experience and to act as jurymen. He was continuously a member of Parliament (for Hokitika 1879-81; Kumara 1881-90; Westland 1890-1906). In his first Parliament he was one of the group of Liberal members who formed the Young New Zealand party. Equipped with a competent knowledge of the standing orders, he made a favourable impression as a stonewaller, when, in associa-

tion with all the Nelson and West Coast members, he opposed the attempt to reduce the number of members allotted to Westland under the representation bill. During the 10 years that he spent as a private member, mostly in opposition, with short intervals supporting the Government in power, Seddon managed to get many of his proposals passed into law. He failed to gain exemption of goldmining property from property taxation, but after seven years' perseverance (in which it was several times carried in the House of Representatives) he got the gold duty abolished by an act which was adopted as a conservative measure. For seven years in succession he introduced a bill to protect the public against abuses by auctioneers, and eventually secured its passage. Seddon was a member of the goldfields and other committees, and he frequently acted as teller for his party. He was a master of parliamentary procedure, alert in seizing upon points of advantage, persistent in criticism and a staunch stonewaller. He was one of the first to appreciate the political implications of the rise of the Labour party in New Zealand politics. From the outset he believed that the Liberal party should advocate labour's just demands, and during the eighties he voted consistently for all measures which aimed at improving the conditions of the working class and widening the franchise. He made as yet no claim to leadership.

From their first meeting in 1876 (when he thought of settling in the North Island), Seddon recognised Ballance as an advanced thinker and the obvious successor to Grey in the leadership of the Liberal party. Ballance, for his part, appreciated the robust energy and parliamentary acumen of Seddon, and frequently put him forward to criticise the Government. Long before the Liberal party came into power he was designated for cabinet rank. After the general election of Dec 1890 Ballance invited him to join the ministry, and entrusted to him the departments of Public Works (then very important), Mines and Defence. From the outset Seddon was supreme in his own departments. Though he had no previous experience of administration he rapidly mastered the technique and became a thorough efficient minister. At that time finance was not necessarily the cabinet duty next in importance to the premiership.

A knowledge of parliamentary procedure was at all times important, and when Ballance was incapacitated in 1892 from taking his place in the House Seddon automatically took charge. In the months that followed Ballance relied more and more upon his vigorous lieutenant, and when he died (27 Apr 1893) there was no real question as to the succession. Stout, whom many favoured as leader of the liberals, was out of Parliament for nearly six years, and before he regained a seat (at a by-election for Inangahua on 7 Jun 1893) Seddon was securely installed as premier. When he took office (on 1 May 1893) his cabinet consisted of Buckley (Attorney-general), Reeves (Education, Labour and Justice), McKenzie (Lands, Immigration and Agriculture), Ward (Treasurer and Postmaster-general), Cadman (who shortly took Justice and Mines) and Carroll (representing the Native race). Montgomery was a member of the executive without portfolio (1893-95). In 1895 Buckley was appointed to the Supreme Court bench. In the early weeks of 1896 Reeves became Agent-general; and W. C. Walker was appointed Minister of Education, Hall-Jones Minister of Public Works, Justice and Marine, and T. Thompson Minister of Industries and Commerce. A few months later Ward resigned from the ministry and Seddon assumed charge of the Treasury and Post and Telegraph department. For three years he bore a very heavy burden of departmental responsibility. The return of Ward to office at the end of 1899 enabled him to resign some of the heavier departments, but he did not relinquish the Treasury. Ward became Colonial Secretary, Postmaster-general and Minister of Industries and Commerce, and a few weeks later assumed control of the new department of Public Health. Thompson now retired, and Seddon took into his cabinet McGowan (Jan 1900, Justice and Mines), Duncan (Jul 1900, Lands and Agriculture), and Mills (Trade and Customs). Walker having resigned in 1903, the leadership of the Legislative Council became vacant, and Pitt was appointed to that chamber as Attorney-general.

Seddon's control of his departments was always firm and personal, and his leadership of the ministry was never questioned. When he assumed office the Government was involved in litigation over the resumption of the Cheviot

estate under the land and income tax assessment act. This was warmly contested as a test question, and opened the way for a series of acts (sponsored by Sir John McKenzie) with the object of making land more easily available to persons of moderate means. The land act of 1892 provided several easy methods of acquiring land and the formation of small farms associations, of which a considerable number were established in succeeding years. In his first session Seddon extended the franchise to women and passed the local option act to enable the electorates to declare upon liquor-licensing policy every three years. In Nov the first election was held at which women voted. Meanwhile the passing of the workmen's wages act foreshadowed a series of laws which were to be brought forward by W. Pember Reeves. In 1894 the industrial conciliation and arbitration act was passed on its third introduction, having been twice thrown out by the Legislative Council. It was followed by the shops and offices act (1894), and acts to regulate the attachment of wages and to protect the homes of workers against mortgage or sale for debt. McKenzie passed his advances to settlers act, the acts for the subdivision of large estates were widened, and unimproved rating was introduced. The dairy industry act of 1894 introduced compulsory grading and inspection and inaugurated the expansion of the dairy industry on sound lines. The franchise was amended by the abolition of the non-residential or property qualification (1896) and by a new municipal franchise (1898). The most noteworthy social measure of this period was the old age pensions act of 1898. Its origin, as far as the liberal administration is concerned, remains obscure, but Seddon took it up as a policy measure which eventually buttressed the popularity of his Government. Its benefits were extended in 1905. In 1894 Seddon courageously accepted the responsibility of rescuing the Bank of New Zealand from imminent collapse by advancing a large sum of money and guaranteeing a new share issue. This eventually made the state a large shareholder in the institution, and enabled him to resist the demand of the left wing of his party for the establishment of a state bank. In like manner, by granting instalments or approaches, he was able to placate the insistent cry of his more advanced followers for

single-taxing of land and government ownership of industries. With continued prosperity prices in New Zealand continued to rise, and from time to time he found it necessary to legislate to counteract them. Thus came into existence state coal mines (1901), state fire insurance (1903) and working men's dwellings (1905). To the Labour influence in the Government is also to be ascribed the workers' compensation act, the establishment of maternity homes and the liberalising of the education act, particularly the facilities for secondary education, which were made available to a wider section of the population, and the introduction of technical education.

By such means Seddon led the parliamentary liberal party hand in hand with Labour, which had elected half a dozen members to the Parliament of 1891 and had also genuine representation in the Legislative Council. The success of his expensive social legislation, which was made possible by the steady improvement in prices of produce, enhanced Seddon's reputation outside New Zealand. Confident in the stability of his administration, he attended the Diamond jubilee celebrations in 1897 and displayed an independent and masterful attitude at the Imperial Conference. There he expressed the view that the time had come when more formal ties should be devised to bind together the component parts of the Empire. The development of his leadership as a result of that experience was obvious, but he deferred to Labour principles by declining titles more than once proffered. His outlook on Empire affairs widened considerably, and thereafter he adopted a robust and independent tone in his communications with the Imperial Government. On topics in which he conceived the whole Empire was interested he consistently exercised his right of criticism. On the outbreak of the Boer war Seddon boldly solved the enigma of oversea loyalty by offering on behalf of New Zealand to send a contingent to serve in South Africa. He was almost unanimously supported by Parliament and subsequent contingents, amounting in the aggregate to about 10,000 men, were despatched before the war ended. Even during the war Seddon did not hesitate to voice the complaints of his people on the conduct of the campaign. He carried on a heated correspondence with the Imperial Government following the disclosure

of the agreement with Germany by which British rights in Samoa were abandoned and the group was apportioned between Germany and the United States. He insisted (1900) that Tonga and the Cook group should be annexed to New Zealand. As to the latter, he gained his point in 1901, but Tonga remains in the position of a British protectorate. He further demanded that Fiji, where the whites were restive and dissatisfied, should be administered by New Zealand; but the Colonial Office, deferring to the protest of New South Wales, declined his request. His vigorous protest against questions of Imperial interest being decided without full consultation with the Colonies concerned seemed to bear some fruit; and yet the last despatch that he penned was a protest (concerted with Australia) against another such incident in regard to the New Hebrides. About 1900 Seddon adopted the title of Prime Minister instead of Premier. This was actually warranted by the civil list act as far back as 1873. The title was used in the New Zealand Year Book in 1900 and in Hansard from 1902.

Having received the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall in New Zealand (1901), Seddon left in Apr 1902 to be present at the coronation of King Edward VII. On his way he visited South Africa during discussion of the terms of peace. His wide Imperialism was firmly demonstrated not only in the contributions of the Colony to the Imperial Navy and to the forces in South Africa, but in the introduction of penny postage (1 Jan 1901), the contribution to the Pacific cable (1899), the proclamation of Empire day (1903), the passing of a preferential and reciprocal trade act (1903) and the stand he took on the introduction of Chinese labour for the development of the Rand gold mines. All through his political life Seddon had opposed Chinese labour in New Zealand, and as recently as 1900 he with difficulty persuaded the Imperial Government to assent to the New Zealand restriction act of 1899.

Seddon's leadership of the liberal and Labour parties in New Zealand was never challenged. It is true that as his earlier colleagues passed from the scene they were occasionally replaced by men of less calibre and personality. Yet he was always able to retain the loyalty of the allied parties, and no serious rift ever occurred in their relations. A rugged figure of great

personal influence, ceaseless energy, force and courage, Seddon had an enormous capacity for work and no desire for devolution upon others. Throughout his administration practically every departmental decision of importance was made by him or in consultation. He was an adept parliamentarian, a master of the rules of procedure, ruthless in using them, and direct in purpose and method. With a large-hearted sympathy for the working class, he combined a genius for public affairs, in which he revelled. As a speaker he was fluent and forcible. He made good use of invective, told an occasional apt story, and invariably scored against his political opponents, both on the platform and in Parliament. His importance in New Zealand history is not easily measured. When he came into politics no party that was not conservative had ever been in power. Liberalism had only recently been enunciated by Sir George Grey. Infinitely more practical than Grey, he served willingly and loyally under Ballance, for whose person he felt affection and for his leadership respect. It is inconceivable that Stout or any other Liberal leader could have succeeded Ballance in 1893, or that any other, having done so, could have implemented the Liberal programme with the same sure vision and ready opportunism that Seddon applied to his task. In his last general election (1905) the manifestos presented him to the electors as a humanist. He had demonstrated this again in 1904 by introducing legislation to safeguard maternity and child life. After an overwhelming victory at the polls (Dec 1905) he visited Australia early in 1906 to discuss reciprocal trade and mutual and Empire interests. On his return from Sydney he died suddenly on board the *Oswestry Grange*, on 10 Jun 1906.

On his visits to Great Britain Seddon received the freedom of Edinburgh, St Helen's and the Royal burgh of Annan, and the honorary doctorate of Cambridge and Edinburgh Universities. He was a prominent freemason, being grand master of New Zealand. He was also for many years an oddfellow.

Seddon's widow died on 9 Jul 1931. She was president of the Women's Social and Political League, the Navy League and the Victoria League.

The eldest son, Captain RICHARD JOHN SPOTSWOOD SEDDON (1882-1918) was killed in France

in the war of 1914-18. Another, THOMAS EDWARD YOUND SEDDON (1884-) was a member of Parliament for Westland 1906-22, 1925-28.

*Westland P.C. Proc.*, 1874-75; *N.z.P.D.*, 1879-1906 (notably 7 Nov 1901, 28 Jun 1906); Reeves; Condliffe; Keith; Hight and Bamford; Hindmarsh; Reid; Drummond (p); Harrop, *Westland*; J. H. Allen in *Empire Review*, Nov 1908; Gisborne; Scholefield, *Pacific and N.z. Evol.*; Saunders; M. W. S. Myers in *Windsor Magazine*, Sep 1901; *M.A.P.*, autobiography (reprinted in *Lyttelton Times*, 12 Jun 1906); *Methodist Times*, 12 Aug 1897; *Weekly Press*, 4 Jul 1895; *West Coast Times*, 19 Jan 1876, 3 Sep 1879; *N.Z. Times*, 27 Aug 1918; *N.z. Herald*, 16 Aug 1902, 4 Dec 1905, 18 May 1906; *Evening Post*, 9 Jul 1931; *Lyttelton Times*, 12 Jun 1906. Portrait: Parliament House (by Tennyson Cole); bust by Nelson Illingworth in Parliamentary Library.

SEED, WILLIAM (1827-90) came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Martha Ridgway* (1840), settling in Taranaki. In 1841 he was in the employ of W. B. Rhodes (Wellington). On the settlement of Otago the family moved south (1849) and lived for a while in Tokomairiro. Seed was employed by the New Zealand Company (1846-51); was for a short time private secretary to Sir George Grey, and in 1853 joined the Customs department at Wellington. In 1855 he was sent to Ahuriri as sub-collector and treasurer, and two years later returned to Wellington. On Grey's return as Governor, Seed again acted as his private secretary (1862) and in the following year became permanent Under-secretary in the Executive department, with charge of defence during the Waikato war. In 1865 he was appointed collector at Wellington and next year acting-Secretary for Customs and civil service commissioner. In 1868 he was appointed deputy-auditor, and in 1882 Secretary and Inspector of Customs and Marine. He retired in 1887. Seed paid a visit to Samoa in 1870 to report on trade in the islands, and in 1875 he made a tour of British lighthouses. In 1886 he represented New Zealand in the negotiations for a trade treaty with Fiji.

Seed married -first, Eliza, a daughter of J. Cook (Makara), and second, a daughter of George Allen (Wellington). He died on 6 Feb 1890.

*Cycl.*, i (P); Customs Dept. records; *New Zealand Times*, 20 Feb 1890.

SEFFERN, WILLIAM HENRY JOHN (1829-1900) was born in England, brought up to printing, and came to Australia in 1851. He was on several Sydney papers (including the *Sydney Illustrated News*) and in 1856 came to Auckland. *Mter* some years in journalism on the *Southern Cross* and the *New Zealander*, he took the latter paper over from Williamson and Wilson. Dr Kidd and James Heron were his partners for a while and later, with C. F. Mitchell, he brought out the *New Zealander* as the first morning paper published in New Zealand at a penny. In 1866 they started the *Penny Jounzal*, and in 1867 the *Auckland Budget*. Early the following year he accepted the position of editor and manager of the *Taranaki Hemld*, which he occupied till 1896, when he retired from active journalism. In 1869 it became a bi-weekly and in 1877 a daily. Besides acting as correspondent for papers Seffern wrote a good deal on New Zealand history, including *The Early Settlement of New Zealand* (1888), *History of Taranaki (1890)*, *The History of a Colonial Newspaper*, and *The Chronicles of the Garden of New Zealand* (1895), and *The Maori Rebellion during the Sixties*. He was a keen supporter of amateur theatricals and of the Taranaki Agricultural society, and organised many ploughing matches. Sefferndied on 26 Oct 1900.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (P); Seffern, *op. cit.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 26 Oct 1900.

SELWYN, GEORGE AUGUSTUS (1809-78) was the son of 'William Selwyn, Q.C., and was born in Hampshire. "His mother was Letitia Frances, daughter of Thomas Kynaston, of Witham, Essex; and his' father, a distinguished constitutional lawyer, was treasurer of Lincoln's Inn and instructor to the Prince Consort in the constitutional laws of England. George was educated under Dr Nicholas Ealing at Eton, where he was a contemporary of W. E. Gladstone and of Bishop Harold Browne, of Winchester. He was the best boy on the river and first in almost every branch of study. At St John's College, Cambridge (1827-30) he did not care for mathematics, and was low among the junior optimes; but he was second classic and was elected a fellow of St John's College. He was a very strong swimmer, a tireless walker and a skilful horseman. From his school days he endured hardness, and was a firm believer

in fitness and temperance as the basis of health and efficiency. In the first boat race between the universities (1829) Selwyn pulled seventh oar for Cambridge.

On graduating (B.A., 1831; M.A., 1834) he returned to Eton as private tutor to the sons of the Earl of Powis. He was ordained in 1833, and became curate of Boveney, near Eton, and later assistant-curate of Windsor. There he had practically sole charge of the parish and did not omit to devote his attention to its slums. In 1839 he married Sarah Harriet, daughter of Sir J. Richardson, judge of the court of common pleas. Having thus vacated his fellowship, he was dependent on his earnings. In 1841 the episcopal council at Lambeth recommended the appointment of a bishop for New Zealand, and the new see was offered to Selwyn, after it had been declined by his brother William (afterwards Lady Margaret professor of divinity at Cambridge). In the letters-patent the solicitors made a mistake in the latitude describing the bounds of the diocese of New Zealand, the effect of which was to give Selwyn jurisdiction over a region, mostly water, extending many degrees north of the equator. He noted the mistake, but did not challenge it. Before being ordained, he asked the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel for an annual grant for the purpose of endowment, so as to ensure that the Church in New Zealand should not be a continually increasing burden. He was consecrated at Lambeth chapel on 17 Oct 1841 by the Archbishop of Canterbury. Nine days later he received the degree of doctor of divinity from Cambridge University, and Oxford also conferred its degree on him.

On 26 Dec Selwyn and his wife sailed in the *Tomalin* from Plymouth, accompanied by the Rev C. L. Reay, of the Church Missionary Society; four other clergymen (the Revs Cotton, Whytehead, Cole and Dudley); three catechists (Messrs Butt, Evans and Nihill) and a schoolmaster and mistress, all placed at his disposal by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. During the voyage, with the help of a Maori passenger, Selwyn mastered the Maori language, and with the aid of the ship's officers the art of navigation. Arriving at Port Jackson on 14 Apr, Selwyn found the brig *Bristolian* about to sail for Auckland, and with Cotton he took passage by her, leaving the rest of the party in

the *Tomatin*. On the morning of 30 May he landed in Auckland. *Mter* one or two small expeditions Selwyn decided to fix his headquarters at Waimate, near Bay of Islands, where the Church Missionary Society had buildings and a farm available for his occupation. At the end of Jul he started on his first visitation, which took him to Taranaki, Nelson and Wellington, and thence overland, up the Manawatu river and into Ahuriri, across country to Rotorua and back to Auckland. He thus visited all the settlements and missions in the North Island, and arrived at Bay of Islands again on 9 Jan 1843, having travelled 2,685 miles, of which 1,400 was accomplished by sea, 397 by boat, 126 on horseback and 762 on foot. The Rev T. B. Whytehead, the head of St John's College, died on 19 Mar. The rest of the year was devoted to establishing the projected Polynesian college and its adjuncts. In Mar Selwyn visited the stations to the northward, and in May opened St Paul's Church in Auckland. He ordained three more European deacons (Bolland, Spencer and Butt). In Oct, with the Revs Cotton and Nihill and George Clarke, the Chief Protector of Aborigines, Selwyn started on another long visitation, diagonally across the North Island through Thames, Rotorua, Taupo (where he met the Chief Justice, W. Martin, q.v.), Wanganui, New Plymouth, Nelson, Wellington and Waikanae. Then he sailed in the schooner *Richmond* for Otago, and thence with Tuhawaiki to Ruapuke and Stewart island. Some difference of opinion as to spheres of labour in the south developed between the Bishop and the Wesleyan missionaries. In Feb he reached Wellington on his return and met the Governor (FitzRoy), with whom he had many opinions in common in regard to the natives. On 20 Mar he was back at Bay of Islands. His activities on these important visitations are fully described in the annals published in 1847 by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel.

The Church Missionary Society having resolved to resume possession of the farm and mission buildings at Waimate, Selwyn decided to remove his headquarters to Auckland so as to be more centrally situated for the white and native population and the Government, with which he was to have many dealings. He had intended in 1844 to visit the Bishop of Australia to dis-

cuss church matters, but was deterred by the first symptoms of disaffection towards the Government on the part of some of the native tribes. The year was marked by the holding of the first synod (without full ecclesiastical authority) to frame regulations for the management of the mission and the government of the church in New Zealand. The move to Auckland involved heavy work and thought in connection with the establishment of the college in its new surroundings, with schools for boys, girls, native adults, half-castes and English children, and a hospital. Selwyn did not soon live down the suspicion in the minds of some natives that he was sent on behalf of the Queen to help undermine Maori customs and the mana of the chiefs. On the day the flagstaff at Kororareka was first cut down (Aug 1844) Heke proceeded straight from that deed to the beach at Paihia, where Selwyn was busy with the native school, and danced the war dance before him. FitzRoy was a guest at St John's College, Waimate, during these disturbed days. When fighting broke out Selwyn, with a complete disregard of danger, moved from point to point without fear or fatigue ministering to the spiritual needs of the soldiers and wounded of both sides and both races. Throughout the day on which Kororareka was sacked (11 Mar 1845) Selwyn and Archdeacon Henry Williams moved about in the town tending the wounded and getting them off to the ships, and next morning burying the dead. In council, too, he was fearless, speaking his mind freely to those in authority, and not refraining from warm controversy when the natives were ill-treated or deceived or their interests seemed in danger of being ignored. During the next year he again undertook a task of some danger in mediating between the Christian tribes of the West Coast and the invaders from Taupo.

The arrival of Sir George Grey as Governor (1845), with personal introductions from Gladstone, inaugurated a period of interesting co-operation for the benefit of the Maori people, which was marred, however, by serious disagreements on the interpretation of Earl Grey's despatches relating to the Maori title to their lands. About this time Selwyn had an unhappy dispute with some of the senior missionaries regarding their land purchases. During the troubles at Wellington he remained at Wai-

kanae to restrain Te Rauparaha, whose son was a zealous native Christian. In 1848 the arrival of H.M.S. *Dido* gave Selwyn an opportunity (as temporary chaplain) of visiting the islands of Melanesia and making his plans for evangelising them. Visiting Tonga, Samoa, New Hebrides and New Caledonia, he brought back some Melanesian young men for instruction at St John's. The little schooner *Flying Fish*, 17 tons, which he had used for the past few years in his visitations, was unequal to the longer voyages which he now contemplated, and he acquired the *Undine*, 22 tons. His first voyage in her, to the South Island and the Chathams, was of 3,000 miles. In 1849 he took some of his young Melanesians as evangelists back to their homes in the New Hebrides. On this voyage he met H.M.S. *Havannah*, and again he took some boys for training in his college. In 1850 the Rev C. J. Abraham (q.v.) arrived to take charge of the college. In May some Melanesian boys were returned to their own islands, others being brought away to take their places in the college. Later in the year Selwyn paid a visit to Australia for the meeting of the synod. There the Australian board of missions was formed, and it was decided to obtain a larger vessel, the *Bolder Maid*, of 100 tons. In her Selwyn, with Bishop Tyrrell of Newcastle, made a perilous voyage to the New Hebrides. While watering at Malekula the party, divided into three, was surrounded by strong bands of hostile natives and in grave danger of being attacked. Selwyn's courage never flagged. With great self-possession and deliberation he completed his task and led his party back to the shore, where they managed to board the vessel and to get her under sail amidst a fleet of hostile canoes. In Oct he reached Auckland, bringing 13 new boys for the work. Two years later it was decided to establish a mission at Nengone, in New Hebrides, with a resident missionary (Rev W. Nihill) in charge. In 1852 he held a synod at Canterbury with four clergy, met J. R. Godley, and before returning to Auckland visited Otago, Ruapuke, and Chatham islands. In 1853 he ordained his first Maori deacon (Rota Waitoa).

*Mter* again visiting Melanesia (1853) Selwyn left for England in 1854 with his wife and two eldest children. His main objects were to visit his ageing father, and to lay before the auth-

on a scheme which he had elaborated for the self-government of the diocese of New Zealand (by means of a general synod), and the formation of new dioceses. His mission was entirely successful. His plans were adopted, Melanesia was created a separate see and £10,000 raised for this purpose. Friends of the mission gave the schooner *Southern Cross*, and Charlotte Yonge set aside all the profits of *The Daisy Chain* for the purpose. To his disappointment, the schooner was not ready for the voyage out, and he had to come back in the *Duke of Portland* (1855) in company with Henry Sewell. He left his two elder sons in England, and brought out John Coleridge Patteson (q.v.), who later became Bishop of Melanesia. On his arrival he left at once for Taranaki to mediate in a tribal dispute, a task in which he incurred the anger of the settlers. He explained his position in a pastoral letter. Selwyn made one voyage in the *Southern Cross*, visiting 66 islands and effectively occupying the field where other organisations were not already in charge. On a visit to New South Wales he tried to persuade the governor to allow the headquarters of the Melanesian mission to be located at Norfolk Island, but Denison required it for the Pitcairn people.

Four new bishops were now consecrated, and the legal constitution of the Church in New Zealand was put forward in 1857, adopted by Parliament in 1858, and fully established at the first general synod in 1859. As an organiser, Selwyn had great influence on the church both in New Zealand and abroad. In 1861 Patteson was appointed Bishop of Melanesia, and Selwyn paid several visits with him to the northern islands. The mission headquarters were removed from St John's to Kohimarama, where they remained till 1867. Selwyn at this time was in a financial quandary. The Parliament of New Zealand, when responsible government was introduced, declined to recognise the existence of an established church in New Zealand by continuing to vote each year the moiety (£600) of the salary of the bishop. Selwyn had already donated the other half of his salary to the fund for the establishment of new sees. When he heard of the decision of Parliament he determined to return to New Zealand in any circumstances, and declined the offer of the bishopric of Sydney.

Shortly after his return he became involved again in controversy on behalf of the Maori chiefs who resisted the sale of their lands to the Government. He was uncompromising in insisting that the good faith of the British Government, upon the strength of which the chiefs had signed the Treaty of Waitangi, should be vindicated. He attended the King conference of 1857, when Potatau was elected, and again in 1860, but withdrew when the King flag was hoisted. In 1862 he exerted all his influence at Wi Tamihana's conference at Matamata. With Martin, Hadfield and Swainson he firmly maintained his position, incurring the censure of the government and the opprobrium of the settlers of Taranaki, who upbraided him in warm terms for taking the part of the natives. Selwyn even found himself at variance with Grey, on the interpretation of despatches from the Imperial government. The Government of the day, he thought, showed too little regard for the rights of the Maori, who were at the mercy of the more sophisticated whites. Throughout the wars in Taranaki and Waikato Selwyn was constantly in the field as chaplain to the troops, ministering without distinction to the needs of both races and both sides in the conflict. After the murder of Volkner he hastened to Opotiki to bring away Grace.

The influx of diggers to Otago (1861), Westland (1865) and Thames (1867) raised new problems of organisation which Selwyn promptly solved. In 1867 he again visited England, to attend the first Pan-Anglican synod, which had originated in his own work of church organisation. While there he was offered the vacant see of Lichfield, which he firmly refused because the native race, to whose service I was first called, requires all the efforts of the few friends that remain to them: He wished no new field of work. His organisation there was not yet complete, the church was not endowed, his health was still good, and his heart was in New Zealand and Melanesia. The Archbishop of Canterbury urged the appointment upon him, and finally at Windsor Castle (on 1 Dec 1867) the Queen expressed her strong desire that he would accept the see in England. Yielding as an act of obedience, he was enthroned on 9 Jan 1868, and at once returned to New Zealand to close up his activities here. His final departure from the colony (20 Oct 1868) was

marked by Widespread demonstrations of regret.

Selwyn introduced in his new sphere the methods of church organisation and administration which he had adopted in New Zealand. He was again a missionary in his approach to the needs of the Black Country; distinguished himself by his exertions in the colliery disaster at Pelsall in 1872, and established a mission to the bargees, appointing a resident chaplain in the barge *Messenger* who ministered to the large floating population on the Trent and Mersey canals. Amongst Selwyn's publications, apart from official reports and controversial letters, are: *Are Cathedrals Useless?* (1838), *Sermons Preached in the Church of St John, New Windsor* (1842), and *A Verbal Analysis of the Holy Bible* (1855). Selwyn paid two visits to Canada and the United States (1871 and 1874). He was deeply affected by the martyrdom of Patteson in the Melanesian islands in 1871. His own son, J. R. SELWYN (q.v.), whom he had ordained, became a worker in these dangerous islands and was eventually selected as Patteson's successor and consecrated on 18 Feb 1877. Selwyn died on 11 Apr 1878, and his widow on 25 Mar 1907.

*G.B.O.P.*, 1849/1120; *App. H.R.*, 1853-66 (notably 1854 I, p. 300, 1856 A6, 1858 L.C. E5, 1860 El, Elb, E4, 1861 DIO, E3, E3b, E3f, 1863 E7, E71, 1864 E2, E2a, E2c, E5; Buick, *First War*; Selwyn, *op. cit.*; Gorst; Thomson; Carleton; Rusden; Saunders; Buller; Davis; Gudgeon; Gisborne (p); Curteis; Godley, *Hampstead Parish Church Magazine*, Apr-Aug 1909 (pp); Tucker; Boreham; How; *Southern Cross*, 21 Oct 1868; *The Times*, 12 Apr 1878.

SELWYN, JOHN RICHARDSON (1844-98), the younger son of George Augustus Selwyn (q.v.) was born at Waimate, educated in part at St John's College, Auckland, and proceeded to England (1854), where he went to Eton and Trinity College, Cambridge. He was a good oarsman. Not a keen scholar, he graduated B.A. (1866) and M.A. (1870). He intended entering the legal profession, but was so impressed with the work of his father when he visited New Zealand in 1867, and by Bishop Patteson that he decided to enter the church. He was ordained by his father (then Bishop of Lichfield) in 1869. He was curate at Alrewas for more than a year, then curate-in-charge at

St George's, Wolverhampton, where he became vicar. On the death of Bishop Patteson (1871) Selwyn offered his services for Melanesia. He married (1872) Miss Clara Innes and they reached their station at Norfolk Island late in 1873.

Selwyn soon showed gifts of leadership which marked him out for the direction of this difficult and unhealthy diocese, and his nomination was confirmed by the general synod of New Zealand in 1877. He was consecrated at Nelson in Feb and entered upon his work. The loss of his wife and his father spurred him to further devotion to the cause. In 1885 he married Miss Annie Mort. In 1889 recurrent attacks of rheumatism and ague caused permanent disability, which necessitated his retirement from Melanesia (1890). He was then invited to accept the mastership of Selwyn College, Cambridge, which had been founded as a memorial to his father, and he held that post until his death on 12 Feb 1898. Selwyn was a typical missionary bishop, tactful, industrious and courageous, with a simple religious faith and a manly endurance of pain. His influence was largely responsible for the establishment of Cambridge House in London, and he introduced many undergraduates to the mission field. He published *Pastoral Work in the Colonies and the Mission Field* (1897).

J. K. Davis (p); *D.N.B.*; F. D. How; Curteis; *Auckland Weekly News*, 19 Feb 1898.

SEW HOY, CHARLES (1837-1901) was born in Canton, and as a young man went to San Francisco. In the fifties he followed the gold rush to Victoria, where he was in business, and in 1869 he started business in Dunedin. He was always interested in mining, and was the promoter of the Sew Hoy Big Beach Co., whose success led directly to the first dredging boom in Otago. He later engaged in hydraulic sluicing, and was interested in the Nokomai Co., for whose operations water was brought a distance of 20 miles. Sew Hoy, who was an enterprising merchant and a generous contributor to benevolent objects, died on 22 Jul 1901.

*Otago Daily Times*, 23 Jul 1901.

SEWELL, HENRY (1807-79) was born in the Isle of Wight, the fourth son of Thomas Sewell, solicitor and steward of the island, and of Jane,

daughter of John Edwards, curate of Newport. He was educated at Hyde Abbey School, near Winchester, and, having qualified as a solicitor, joined his father's firm in 1826. He practised successively at Newport, Pidford and Brockhurst. On 15 Mar 1834 he married Lucinda Marian, eldest daughter of General William Needham (of Mt Olive, Jamaica, and Widcombe, Bath; who was member for Athenry in the last Irish Parliament, 1798-1800). On her death 10 years later Sewell went to live in London, and there married (1850) Elizabeth, second daughter of Captain Edward Kittoe, R.N., of Deal.

Shortly after his arrival in London Sewell began to take an interest in the affairs of the Canterbury Association, and it was on his motion that the Society of Canterbury Colonists was formed. In Jul 1850 he was appointed chairman of the committee of management, and shortly afterwards deputy-chairman of the New Zealand Company, a post which Hutt had administered with indifferent success. Edward Gibbon Wakefield, always the power behind the throne in the affairs of the Association, described Sewell at this time as 'a conscientious and able man of business, of high character, with his heart in the thing as an intending colonist, with no defect that I know of unless his Puseyite name should prove hurtful: On another occasion Wakefield described him as highly gifted, with acuteness, circumspection, judgment, industry, elevation of view and refinement of taste, all governed by strong conscientiousness and a single-minded, unambitious wish for the success of the work, which he was undertaking from love of it. He even went so far as to attempt to have Sewell appointed chairman in the absence of Lyttelton. Yet not long after we find Wakefield confessing to a certain amiable weakness in his treasure: About this time Sewell appeared as the chief adviser of the South African delegates in resisting the intention of Earl Grey to withdraw the constitution already granted to South Africa but held in abeyance owing to the Kaffir war. Thoroughly versed in constitutional law, he contended that the crown had no power to withdraw a franchise once granted, except for cause shown in the courts. Sewell had already determined to emigrate, but there is possibly something in the suspicion of Godley

(1851) that he and Wakefield were too fond of power to allow the Canterbury Association to go out of existence. While the New Zealand constitution bill was being laboriously framed Sewell played his part. He collaborated with Norton and Wakefield in the deliberations at Hams Hall, and propounded to Gladstone an attractive scheme for the federation of colonial settlements.

Towards the end of 1852 the work at home was finished, and the Canterbury Association was already in financial difficulty. Sewell was therefore sent out to settle matters on the spot. He arrived in New Zealand by the *Minerva* (Feb 1853) at the very moment when the new constitution was published. Later that year Fitzgerald was elected first Superintendent of the province, and he eagerly availed himself of the great knowledge Sewell possessed to induce the Canterbury Provincial Council to accept the powers and privileges of the Association and to assume its financial liabilities. This agreement, which was carried through in 1855, was completely satisfactory to the Association. 'Nothing could be more creditable.' Godley wrote to Lord Norton, 'both to the Association and the colonists than the way in which it has been done and, take it how you will, no verdict could be more complete on the merits of the Association's work. That a colony four years old should be able to adopt a liability of £30,000 without serious, indeed ruinous, inconvenience, is a most remarkable proof of its material prosperity, and that they should be willing to do so is an equal proof of moral wellbeing.' The deeds were signed by Sewell and formally transferred to the Superintendent in the presence of the Council. Sewell had intended to return to England in 1855 but, being invited by the inhabitants of Canterbury, he was not able to resist the temptation to participate in provincial politics. Fitzgerald had appointed him provincial solicitor at the outset, as the best way of utilising his special knowledge; and in Mar 1855 he was elected to represent Lyttelton in the Council (resigning in Jun 1856).

By this time Sewell was deep in colonial politics. From 1853 to 1856 he was member of Parliament for the Town of Christchurch, and in Jun 1854, as the outcome of the constitutional debates then proceeding, he found him-

self a member of the Colonial executive without portfolio. But he was not altogether at home in the rude young Colony. Though Wakefield got on easily with 'the unwashed' and liked them, Sewell had habits of thought which did not so easily accept the democratic omission of 'Mr' by people who called a carpenter 'Mr Smith.' He was naturally reserved and aloof, a defect which was more and more obvious as he got deeper into the controversies of Colonial politics. Sewell entered the first Parliament almost as the tool of Wakefield. Sharing with him a passion for responsible government, he allowed himself as soon as the House met to be nominated to the executive (along with Weld and FitzGerald). Matters came to a quick crisis on 17 Aug, when the Administrator (Wynyard) intimated his intention of proroguing Parliament. Determined not to be balked, in their demand for full responsibility, Sewell and his followers took prompt measures, locked the doors to preserve a quorum; and Sewell proceeded to move a series of resolutions asserting the right of Parliament to control expenditure and protesting against the position of Wakefield as the secret adviser of the administrator. When a member G. Mackay, q.v.) appeared in the chamber with his hat on and claimed, by virtue of a *Gazette* notice, that parliament had been prorogued, Sewell lost his temper, seized him by the collar and commenced to belabour him, thereby precipitating a melee.

During the recess the new Governor (Gore-Browne) assumed office empowered to grant full responsibility. Parliament met in May 1856 and Sewell, called upon to form a government, took office as first Premier of New Zealand, with Bell, Whitaker and Tancred as his colleagues. Sewell's opposition to the provinces, as opposed to centralism, was so well-known that the strong provincial following in the House treated him with suspicion. This estrangement made it impossible for him ever to lead a government with success. His ministry lasted only a fortnight. After a few days in opposition (while Fox was in office), Stafford, the only man with whom Sewell could work, succeeded him as Premier, with Sewell as Colonial Treasurer and later as Commissioner of Customs. When Parliament prorogued Sewell resigned his seat (he had already withdrawn from the Canterbury

Provincial Council) in order to go to England on private and public business. In addition to the affairs of the Canterbury Association and the Church of the Province of New Zealand, both of which he served with his great knowledge of constitutional law, he was authorised to negotiate for an Imperial guarantee for the £500,000 loan which the Colony required to raise. This was embodied in an Imperial bill of 1857, and Sewell returned to the Colony with enhanced reputation (Feb 1859) to resume his duties at the Treasury and Customs until the Stafford Government went out of office. During most of 1860 he again represented the Town of Christchurch in Parliament, resigning in Nov to assume the office of Registrar-general of Lands. He was sent to Taranaki as commissioner to hear war compensation claims.

In Aug 1861 Fox called Sewell to the Legislative Council, and entrusted him with the portfolio of Attorney-general and the leadership of the Council. This office he held also in the succeeding ministry of Domett, and resigned finally in Jan 1863. Towards the end of 1864 Sewell contemplated visiting England, but at Weld's earnest request again took office as Attorney-general in the new ministry. During this term, in May 1865, he resigned from the Legislative Council, and was elected to represent the Town of New Plymouth in the lower house. In Oct the ministry went out of office, and in Jan 1866 Sewell accepted the post of counsel under the land-registration act, which necessitated his resignation from Parliament. His political opinions were apt to be dictated by prejudice, and at this period he was as strong a critic of Stafford as he had formerly been an admirer. The financial difficulties of the sixties, induced largely by the supineness of Domett towards the demands of the provinces, gave Sewell a new opportunity of serving the country in England. During 1868 he spent many months at Hams Hall, and collaborated with FitzGerald in bringing the British Government to terms regarding the loan policy of New Zealand.

On his return from England he wished to get elected for a Taranaki seat, but was too late. Fox offered him the post of Registrar-general of Lands which he declined and, on his suggestion, Fox again called him to the

Council (Jun 1870) and made him Minister of Justice. The importunities of Vogel became troublesome, and it was soon clear they could not both remain in cabinet together. Fox had to choose, and he felt he could not dispense with Vogel, to whom in Nov 1871 the portfolio of Justice was transferred. Complaining that he was not even consulted on Vogel's immigration and public works bill, Sewell resigned and joined the opposition. Within a year he was again in office as Colonial Secretary to Stafford. Waterhouse rebuked him for his 'undue haste and unseeably greed after office.' The ministry was defeated a month later. Sewell retired owing to family circumstances, and in Nov 1873 he finally turned his back upon New Zealand politics. In the spring of 1876 he left the Colony for good and took up his residence at Romford, Essex, where his son was curate. Some time later he moved to Cambridge, where he died on 5 May 1879. His widow died on 29 May 1880.

It is not easy to account for Sewell's failure in New Zealand politics except on the grounds of inherent political weakness. Gisborne says that he was a man of culture and ability. His conversation sparkled with cleverness and wit, and he excelled in happy classical quotation. He was an apt administrator and a good debater, occasionally eloquent and effective, and quick at seeing points. 'His nature was supple and pliant; and it was not robust enough to stand alone. His mind had breadth, but it was slippery and unable to grasp closely great principles; its strength was dissipated on small things. There was in him no fixity of purpose. There was an utter want of repose in his temperament. He was fussy, restless, too easily impressionable and full of false alarms.' Yet he put his great intelligence and unwearied industry always at the service of the country. Cox found him a capital departmental head, with an erratic mind and fertile resource to meet difficulties. He was probably the best debater in the House, and had a wonderful mastery of bluebooks and figures; yet 'there was probably never a time when he knew his own mind for two days consecutively.'

Privately Sewell was a delightful companion, genial, pleasant and witty. He wrote a number of pamphlets, notably *Thoughts on the Relations of Men to the External World* (1848),

## SEYMOUR

*The New Zealand Native Rebellion* (Auckland 1864), a letter discussing his constitutional differences with Sir George Grey (1853) and a letter to the Bishop of Wellington (London, 1867). Then there was, of course, the journal which he kept from 1853-56, and which is in the possession of the Bishop of Christchurch. A tablet in St Paul's, Wellington, commemorates his services in the early organisation of the Church in New Zealand.

Sewell's brother, RICHARD CLARKE SEWELL (1803-64), was a prominent legal writer and reader in law at Melbourne University.

N.Z.C.; *New Zealand Journal*; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Sewell, *op. cit.*; Godley, *Letters*; N.Z.P.D., *pass.* (notably 17 Aug 1860); D.N.B.; Gisborne (p); Saunders; Rusden; Reeves; Cox; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Oct 1874; *N.z. Times*, 30 Jul 1879; *Lyttelton Times*, 16 Dec 1925; *Evening Post*, 21 Jul 1934.

SEYMOUR, ARTHUR PENROSE (1832-1923) was born at Marksbury, Somerset, and came to New Zealand in 1851, settling in Marlborough. In 1855 he married a daughter of Frederick Huddleston, of Nelson. Seymour had a large run in the Awatere valley. He took a prominent part in the affairs of Marlborough, and was a justice of the peace from 1857. When the province was separated from Nelson he was elected to represent Picton in the Provincial Council, in which he sat almost continuously throughout the provincial period (for Picton 1860-65; Awatere, 1866-69; Picton, 1869-74; Awatere, 1874-75). In the first session Seymour moved that provincial buildings be erected in Picton. The removal of the capital from Blenheim was a disturbing factor in Marlborough politics for many years. The Blenheim party was led by Eyes. Seymour was a member of the executive in 1860 and in 1864. Later in 1864 he was elected Superintendent (in succession to Carter). The struggle continued until the end of 1865, when the Picton party was defeated and Eyes became Superintendent.

Seymour was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till 1872. In 1870 he was again elected Superintendent, and a year or two later Eyes became a member of his executive. This enabled Seymour to be elected again to represent the Wairau constituency in Parliament, and he remained its member till 1881, when he was defeated by H. Dodson. Six

## SEYMOUR

years later he was returned to Parliament for Waimea-Picton, which he represented till 1890, when he finally left politics. He was chairman of committees in the House in 1873-75 and 1879-81. Seymour was a member of various local bodies, including the Marlborough education board (of which he was the first chairman in 1877), the land board (for 36 years) and the Victoria College council (1898-1904). He died on 3 Apr 1923.

*Marlborough P.C. minutes*; Buick, *Marlborough*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); N.Z.P.D., *pass.* (notably 15, 19 Jun 1923); *Marlborough Express*, 4 Apr 1923.

SEYMOUR, HENRY (1794-1883) was born in Worcestershire. He came to Nelson in the *Martha Ridgway* (1842) and started in business there as a commission agent, the company being afterwards sold to N. Edwards and Co. He and his son-in-law (A. G. Fell, q.v.) drew their sections in the Wairau, where Blenheim now is, after the selection in 1848. He was the principal agent of the absentee landowners and was on the committee which chose Waitohi as the port. Seymour was appointed in 1849 a member of the Legislative Council of New Munster, and from 1853 till 1860 he was a member of the Legislative Council of New Zealand (under the new constitution). He took a prominent part in the constitutional debates and matters of procedure. He was also much interested in education, and on 24 Jul 1854 carried a resolution setting up a committee to consider the matter. He died on 31 Mar 1883.

N.Z.P.D., 1854-60; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 30 May 1883.

SEYMOUR, HERBERT CAM (1836-1915) was born at Wraxhall, Somerset, the son of George Turner Seymour and brother of A. P. Seymour (q.v.). He came to New Zealand in the *Pudsey Dawson* in 1854, and in the following year with his brother took up the Wakefield Downs estate. In 1867 he took Okakuri (Marlborough) and later Brooklyn. He represented Picton in the Provincial Council (1867-69). About this time he engaged in surveying and after completing work for the Blenheim-Picton railway he became timber inspector for Brogden brothers. Entering the provincial government service, he became stationmaster and wharfinger at Picton and then manager of that section of the railway. Seymour resigned from the service about 1897

## SHAND

to take over the Tynesfield estate, which he worked advantageously for some years, and then sold to live in Picton. He was a member of the borough council and the Wairau licensing committee, a prominent churchman and a keen cricketer. Seymour died on 7 Aug 1915.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Marlborough Express*, 10 Aug 1915; *Picton Press*, 15 Aug 1915.

SHAND, ALEXANDER (1840-1910) was born in Wellington, his parents having arrived by the *Oriental* earlier in the year. His father, Archibald Watson Shand (1808-78) had a farm and Hourmill at Waiwetu. In 1850 the family moved to Dunedin (where the father was sub-collector of customs), and in 1855 to the Chatham Islands (where he was collector and resident magistrate). In 1863 Alexander was appointed clerk and interpreter to the resident magistrate, Captain W. E. Thomas (q.v.), with whom he was involved when the Hauhau prisoners escaped from the island in 1868. Retiring from his official position in 1869, he engaged in sheepfarming on the island, and made a special study of the Moriori people, about whom he wrote several papers in the *Polynesian Journal* (vols. i-vi). He died on 2 Aug 1910.

*N.z. Gaz.*, 1855; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Polyn. Jour.*, vols i-vi; *Polyn. Soc. Mem.*, vol 2, 1911 (p and biog.); *Trans. N.z. Inst.*, vol 4, 357, vol 37, 144; H. D. Skinner, *The Morioris of Chatham Islands*, 1923; *Wellington Independent*, 19 Jun 1867.

SHAND, JAMES (1835-89) was born in Aberdeenshire and came to Otago as a lad with his father, who died in the following year. Working hard on his mother's farm at Green island, and carting to the diggings, he saved sufficient by 1858 to buy from the Government what became the Abbotsford property, which he cleared and improved, making it one of the model farms of the Taieri. He increased the area to 1,200 acres, and in 1866 purchased Centre Bush, near Winton, and later Mount Hyde and Traquair, all of which proved fairly remunerative. He also bought and developed the Otokia station near Henley and took an interest in promoting the frozen meat trade. In 1881 he established a large butchery business, which proved a financial failure; his purchase of the Edendale estate in Southland was also unfortunate. Shand was a member of the Otago

## SHANKS

Provincial Council for Taieri (1869-75) and was one of the Otago representatives in the negotiation of the reunion with Southland, where he had considerable interests. He was active in the conservation of the Taieri plain against flooding and was a member of the board of conservators, the Taieri county council and the local road board. He married a daughter of George Duncan, and died on 18 Sep 1889.

*Parltry Record*; *Otago P.C. Proc.*; Critchell and Raymond; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Jul 1880, 20 Sep 1889.

SHAND, JOHN (1834-1914), born in Elgin, Scotland, was educated at the Elgin Academy and at Aberdeen University, graduating M.A. in 1854. For 12 years he was teaching at the Ayr and Edinburgh Academies and in 1870 he was appointed professor of mathematics and natural philosophy at Otago University. He came to Port Chalmers by the *Wild Deer*. In 1879 Shand served on the royal commission on the University of New Zealand; in 1886 he was appointed to the separate chair of natural philosophy; and in 1889 was awarded the LL.D. by Aberdeen University. He was a member of the New Zealand University senate (1877-1914), of the council of Otago University (1895-1914), chairman of the professorial board (1892-95), and a member of the Otago education board and the High Schools board of governors. (C.M.G., 1913.) Shand retired in 1914, and died on 30 Nov.

Thompson, *Hist. Otago Univ.*; Beaglehole; *Cycl. N.z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Dec 1914.

SHANKS, JAMES STEWART (1835-1911) was born in Scotland and came to Otago with his parents in the *Kelso* in 1849. In company with a brother he first worked at a sawmill in the bush near Clutha, and later on the survey of Southland under J. T. Thomson and Robert Gillies. A year or two later, with his brother William, he prospected for a station in north and central Otago and eventually acquired the Marairua run of 28,000 acres near Tuturau. He was chairman of the school committee and a member of the road board and of the Southland county council and education board. The brothers suffered from the depredations of diggers on their stock and from scab introduced into their flocks by sheep from Nelson. When

the run was resumed by the Government, Shanks settled in Matura (1862) as an auctioneer. He was a member of the county council and the education board and represented Matura in Parliament from 1879 to 1881. He died on 13 Oct 1911.

Beattie, ii; Kinross; *Otago Daily Times*, 6 Nov 1911.

SHAPTER, THOMAS BLACKALL, a son of Dr T. Shapter, of Exeter, England, was a barrister and solicitor practising at Shortland, Thames, when he married (1870) a daughter of Henry Bunny (q.v.). He shortly afterwards moved to the West Coast, where he represented Westport in the Nelson Provincial Council (1873-75). He was goldfields secretary in the provincial executive (1874-75).

SHARLAND, JAMES CRAGG (1819-87) was born in Devon, educated there and apprenticed to a chemist. He came to Taranaki about 1847 and for some years conducted a prosperous business in New Plymouth. He was chairman of the town board and represented New Plymouth in the Provincial Council (1857-61, 1864-66). In 1859 he visited England. On his return with a large shipment of stock, he found the town almost in a state of siege and his family lodging in a warehouse after leaving their home at Bonithorn, which had been damaged by hostile natives in Mar 1860. Sharland went on to Nelson with his stock, realised it there and returned to Taranaki, where he remained until the middle sixties. In 1866 he was a provisional director of the Taranaki Petroleum Co. After the war he visited Hokitika and Thames, spending a few months in business in each of these places. Finally, about 1866, he settled in Auckland, purchasing the chemical business of J. N. Manning, which under his management developed into a prosperous undertaking. In 1883 he stood for the town board. In 1886 the wholesale and importing business was formed into a limited company (Sharland and Co.) and he retired. Sharland died on 23 Jul 1887.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc.; N.Z. Herald*, 14 Dec 1883, 25 Jul 1887; *Pharmaceutical Jour. of N.Z.*, Sep 1933 (p).

SHARP, JOHN (1828-1919) was born at Maidstone, Kent, and on leaving Chatham House College, Ramsgate, he joined the merchant ser-

vice and saw a native rising in the West Indies. In 1843 he came to New Zealand by the *Ursula* as clerk to F. D. Bell (q.v.), and he was later engaged as surveyor to the New Zealand Company, clerk to the Superintendent, resident magistrate and registrar of the Supreme Court at Nelson. As sheriff Sharp was responsible for the trial and execution of the Maungatapu murderers. In public life he represented Waimea East in the Nelson Provincial Council (1855-57), and later Amuri (1873-75). For three years he served as provincial treasurer (1867-70). From 1875-79 he sat as member for Nelson City in the House of Representatives. In 1888 Sharp retired from his position as resident magistrate, and in the following two years he was mayor of Nelson (1888-90). He was a captain in the Nelson Rifles and a member of lodge Southern Star. His wife was Erica Catherine, daughter of A. S. Collins. Sharp died on 4 Jun 1919.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 5 Jun 1919. Portrait: Parliament HOLLSE.

SHAW, EDWARD, an English barrister, was teaching at Bishop's school in Nelson before being appointed warden and magistrate at Inangallua, Reefton and Westport. In 1879 he was appointed a district judge, and was stationed at New Plymouth. On the resignation of T. S. Weston in 1883, he was elected to Parliament for the Inangahua seat, defeating E. Wakefield (q.v.). He retired at the dissolution in 1884.

SHAW, HENRY (1850-1928), who was born in Birmingham, England, came to New Zealand in 1859. Taking up the study of accountancy, he became a fellow of the New Zealand Society of Accountants and a president of the New Zealand Accountants and Auditors association (1908-11). He was a life member of the Leys Institute and a member of the Auckland Society of Arts. From 1909-12 Shaw sat in the Auckland City Council, serving on the library committee. Specially interested in illuminated manuscripts and incunabula, he engaged for a number of years upon bibliographical and literary work in the Auckland library and in 1912 presented his collection to the City. He was the author of a *Guide to the Auckland Library* (1914). Shaw died on 3 May 1928.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 May 1928.

SHAW, JOHN (1813-94) was born at Glen-shee, in Perthshire. He studied for the bar at Glasgow University, but relinquished law for farming and in 1838 bought New Barns in Forfarshire, which he farmed for 14 years. In 1852 he came to Otago in the *Maori* with his sister, and took up a farm of 50 acres at Clutha. He devoted his attention to sheep-breeding and increased the area of his Finnegan estate to 2,000 acres. Shaw was a member of the Clutha river board and school committee and an elder of the Presbyterian Church. He represented the Southern district in the Provincial Council (1855-59). His death occurred on 18 May 1894.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Jun 1894.

SHEATH, ISAAC BRETNALL (1814-97) was born in England. He was a member of a flourishing firm of gunmakers (Hollis and Sheath), when he decided to emigrate, and came to Canterbury in the *Chrysolite* (1861). He had a sheep run in the Mackenzie country, and coalmines at Malvern. In 1869 he started "1001-scouring works at Woolston, and later joined R. A. Loughnan in flaxmilling at Halswell. Eventually he was in business in Christchurch as an ironmonger. Sheath was in the Provincial Council for Mt Cook (1866-67) and for Timaru (1870). He died on 19 May 1897.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Lyttelton Times*, 20 May 1897; *The Press*, 21 May.

SHEEHAN, JOHN (1844-85) was the son of David Sheehan (a carpenter who settled in Auckland in the forties, made careful investments and became the owner of Governor Browne hotel. He represented Northern Division in the Provincial Council 1861-69). Born at Auckland on 5 Jul 1844, he was educated in part by R. J. O'Sullivan, and in 1862 was articulated to the law with F. W. Merriman. Completing his term with R. W. Wynn and J. B. Russell, he was admitted to the bar (1867) and commenced to practise in Auckland. He was one of the founders of the Auckland Catholic institute, in which he gained useful forensic experience and confidence.

During the Waikato war he served as a sergeant in the Auckland Cavalry Volunteers (1863). In 1869, on his father retiring from the Provincial Council, Sheehan was elected for the Northern Division, which he represented

(1870-73). As leader of the group which defeated the executive then advising Gillies, Sheehan took office and himself administered the portfolio of goldfields secretary (1870-73). He was a confirmed provincialist. In the Council and also in Parliament he showed great powers of debate and oratory, and a faculty for repartee. From the outset he favoured free, secular and compulsory education, which he advocated throughout his political career, often against the policy of his own faith.

When Farnall resigned from Parliament to go to England (Jan 1872) Sheehan was elected unopposed, the first European born in New Zealand to sit in Parliament. He represented the Rodney constituency till 1879, and then Thames (1879-84). (Ormond defeated him in another constituency, Clive, in 1879). When Sir George Grey began to gather about him a young liberal following Sheehan became his first lieutenant. He was one of the moving spirits in the Young New Zealand party, which gradually exerted its influence towards the defeat of the Atkinson government. In the Grey administration (1877-79) Sheehan was Minister of Native Affairs and Justice. At the general election of 1879 he and Grey were returned unopposed for the Thames, but the Government was defeated immediately afterwards. Sheehan at this time was following his profession in the native land courts and had a lucrative practice in Napier, where he resided. He contested the Napier seat against Ormond in 1884, but was defeated. A year later a vacancy occurred in Tauranga, and he defeated W. Kelly. A few weeks later he died (12 Jun 1885). Sheehan was a man of sparkling qualities and brilliant promise; able, intellectual, generous and warm-hearted. He was the first native-born New Zealander to hold cabinet rank.

*Brett's Almanac*, 1879; *N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Jul 1872, *ct pass.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii, 540; *N.Z. Herald*, 13, 15 Jun 1885; *Auckland Star*, 13 Jun 1885; *Lyttelton Times*, 14 Jun 1885. Portrait: Parliament HOLLSE.

SHEPHARD, JOSEPH (1822-98) was born in England and brought up to the law. He was town clerk of Newcastle-on-Tyne and was engaged in parliamentary bill work in that city when he decided to come to New Zealand. Arriving by the *Donna Lita* (1861), he settled in Nelson, purchasing a farm at Fern

## SHEPHERD

Hill, on the upper Wai-iti river. As a member of the Provincial Council for Waimea South (1869-75), he strongly advocated the improvement of communication with the West Coast goldfields and presided over the parliamentary committee which recommended that the work be entrusted to a public company. He took a keen interest in education, being a member of the education board and board of examiners, a school commissioner and a governor of Nelson College (1885). In 1870-72 and 1874 he was provincial treasurer.

Shephard contested a parliamentary seat unsuccessfully in the sixties. In 1871 he was returned for Waimea, which he represented 1871-75 and 1879-85. On retiring he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death (on 25 Oct 1898). Shephard was a good writer with a fine grasp of colonial affairs. He edited *The Colonist* for some years.

*Parltry Record., Nelson P.C. Proc., The Colonist*, 26 Oct 1898. Portrait: Parliament House.

SHEPHERD, ALEXANDER (1798-1859) was born in Aberdeen, and held government appointments at Demerara and Berbice, British Guiana. While there he married. Ill-health brought him back to England, and in 1842 he was appointed Colonial Treasurer in New Zealand. He came out in the *New York Packet* and assumed office on 9 May 1842. He was a member of the Legislative Council. In 1848 he was Receiver-general of New Ulster and a member of the Council there. As the outcome of the grant of responsible government Shepherd retired from the position of Colonial Treasurer on 7 May 1856. He died on 20 Jul 1859. He rendered valuable service to the Auckland Savings bank and other institutions. (See SIR F. WHITAKER, SIR G. M. O'RORKE and SINGLETON ROCHFORD.)

*New Zealander*, 23 Jul 1859.

SHEPHERD, JAMES (1796-1882) was born at Sydney, the son of a pious, hardworking colonist, who was deeply interested in missions. The son also evinced an interest in evangelism, and attracted the attention of Marsden. When quite young he entered on a mission schooner to study navigation, and Marsden gave him an opportunity of visiting New Zealand to become acquainted with the Maori (1817). In pur-

## SHEPHERD

suance of his policy of manning the mission with artisan-catechists, Marsden early in 1820 sent Shepherd to Bay of Islands, primarily to satisfy the urgent desire of Te Morenga to have a missionary in his territory, but also to introduce systematically the arts of agriculture and gardening, in both of which Shepherd was expert. Though wanting in education, Shepherd was a man of high natural abilities, in whom Marsden always had complete confidence. His letter of instruction, urging him to travel much amongst the tribes, to plant wheat, barley, maize and other cereals; to devote his attention to the culture and preparation of phormium tenax, and to encourage the Maori to bring forward their produce for market, is an important document in the history of the period. On his next visit (1823) Marsden was fully satisfied with the fruits of Shepherd's work at Okura, west of Kerikeri, and with his competent command of the language. Marsden had intended settling the Rev Henry Williams at Whangaroa, with Shepherd to help him, but unexpected changes led him to keep Williams at Paihia, and he proceeded with Shepherd and others to purchase a site for the Wesleyan mission under Leigh. *Mter* visiting Whangarei they went north to Whangaroa, and chose the site at Kao, where Leigh had started work (Jun 1823) with Shepherd as his assistant. On the removal of Leigh through illness (Aug 1823) Shepherd was withdrawn and stationed at Te Puna with King. He continued his work there, teaching at the station and travelling amongst the tribes instructing them in agriculture and the Christian religion. In 1830 they had 400 souls within an hour's walk and 1,000 whom they visited.

In 1833 he was at Te Puna, and afterwards at Paihia, where he translated some hymns into Maori and assisted the Rev William Williams in the translation of the first complete New Testament (published 1837). In 1840 Shepherd went to Whangaroa, where he erected a dwelling and place of worship and laboured for 37 years. He was never ordained, but was an exemplary Christian teacher. In 1877 his wife (nee Nelson) whom he had married in Sydney in 1823, died. Shepherd's death occurred on 1 Oct 1882.

Marsden, *L. and J.*, and *Lieutenants.*, Ramsden; Barton; *N.z. Herald*, 14 Oct 1882.

## SHEPHERD

SHEPHERD, JOHN (1836-1911) came to New Zealand with the Albertland settlers in the *Hanover* (1862). Till 1890 he was manager of the co-operative Society's stores, which he afterwards purchased. Shepherd represented Marsden in the Auckland Provincial Council (1870-73) and Albertland (1873-76). A staunch temperance advocate, he introduced in the Council one of the earliest permissive bills for the control of the liquor traffic. He once contested a parliamentary election, and was the second choice of the electorate when W. F. Massey came out in 1894. He was a member of the Rodney county council. Shepherd died in 1911.

Brett and Hook, *Albertlanders* (p); *N.Z. Methodist Times*, 9 Oct 1937.

SHEPHERD, RICHARD, served in the 68th Regiment in New Zealand, and later joined the Armed Constabulary, in which he held the rank of sergeant. He was awarded the New Zealand Cross for distinguished bravery at Otautu (near Patea) on 13 Mar 1869, when he was dangerously wounded while holding a difficult observation post. Shepherd was residing at Thames from 1876 to 1913.

N.Z. Army records; Gudgeon.

SHEPHERD, THOMAS LUTHER (1829-84) was born in London. He came to Victoria, and was managing clerk to a firm of solicitors at Sandhurst. Then he moved to Melbourne, and came to New Zealand with the rush to Hokitika. From there he moved to Queenstown, and was employed as a law clerk and afterwards practising on his own account. Wilson Gray thought highly of him. In 1867 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Goldfields (with J. C. Brown and Mouat). In 1870 he was defeated. Having moved to Naseby, he defeated Fraser in 1871 for Dunstan, which he represented until 1873. From 1871-75 also he was M.H.R. for that constituency. After being defeated he retired from politics. Shepherd was later employed as clerk of the court and gold receiver at Naseby and subsequently at Palmerston, Charleston and Ahaura. He died on 28 Oct 1884.

*Parltry Record., Otago P.C. Proc., Evening Herald* (Dunedin), 29 Oct 1884; *Otago Witness*, 8 Sep 1931. Portrait: Parliament House.

## SHEPPARD

SHEPHERD, THOMAS VIRET (1845-1916) was born at Auckland, the son of Alexander Shepherd (q.v.), educated privately and joined the army as an ensign in the 109th Regiment (1861). He served at home and in India till 1883, when he retired with the rank of major and settled in Auckland. There he was adjutant and commandant of the militia district (1883-90), rising to the rank of colonel. Shepherd was sergeant-at-arms of the House of Representatives (1902-15), and died on 19 Dec 1916. He married (1879) Grace, daughter of Major-general G. Shakespear, R.A.

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; *N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1917.

SHEPPARD, KATE WILSON (1848-1934) (nee Malcolm), one of the foremost pioneers in the woman suffrage movement in New Zealand, was born in Islay, Scotland, in 1848. She inherited from her father a talent for music and metrical expression, and mainly from an uncle a devotion to the Free Church and sympathy for social causes. Educated in Scotland, she was brought up as a Congregationalist.

In the late sixties she came to New Zealand with her mother and sisters, settling in Christchurch, where she married Walter A. Sheppard (1836-1915). Mrs Sheppard became prominent in the women's movement in New Zealand, to which she was attracted by the visit in the eighties of Mrs Mary Leavitt, to found a branch of the Women's Christian Temperance Union. For many years this was the leading women's organisation in the country. Mrs Sheppard's qualities of graciousness, enthusiasm, geniality and clarity of vision were of inestimable value in commending the claims of her sex to politicians. She met with much opposition, not always from the opposite sex, but was fortunate in securing the alliance of John Hall and John Ballance. In 1891 she inaugurated, in *The Vanguard*, a page for women which she conducted anonymously as an Esperanto student. This first page of women's activities was transferred four years later to the *White Ribbon*, of which Mrs Sheppard was editor (with Lucy Lovell-Smith as associate).

On female franchise being won (1893), Mrs Sheppard set to work to organise women's societies to study social problems. The first National Council of Women was held in Christchurch in 1896. She was president and held

## SHERA

other offices until financial troubles caused the suspension of its activities. In the middle nineties Mrs Sheppard travelled abroad, making many contacts from which the movement received new inspiration. About the time of the war of 1914-18 the National Council was revived, with her as president, but she took an early opportunity of retiring in favour of younger leaders.

Mrs Sheppard lost her husband, and married some years later W. S. Lovell-Smith (d. 1929), author of *Outlines of the Women's Franchise Movement in New Zealand* (1905). She died on 13 Jul 1934, having survived by a few months the election of the first woman to the New Zealand Parliament (Mrs E. R. McCombs, q.v.).

*Lytelton Times*, 26 Jun 1907 (tribute to Sir J. Hall); W. S. Smith, *op. cit.*; Jessie Mackay in *Woman To-day*, Apr 1937 (p).

SHERA, JOHN McEFFER (1840-1906) was born at Coote Hill, county Cavan, Ireland, the son of a merchant. After receiving his education at Wesley College, Sheffield, he learned the softgoods business in Londonderry, and then returned to his home town to manage for his father. In 1867 his Londonderry employers (McArthur and Co.) commissioned him to wind up their business in South Australia, after which he established the firm of McArthur, Shera and Co. in Auckland with himself as managing partner (1868). The partnership was dissolved in 1877, but Shera remained in the softgoods business for some time and then became a sharebroker. In 1887 he contested the City West seat and in 1890 he was elected at the head of the poll to represent Auckland City in Parliament (retiring in 1893 when he was defeated). He supported Grey. Shera was a member of the conciliation board for the Auckland district, a commissioner of education reserves, and a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. He held a captain's commission in the Auckland Cavalry. Shera married (1873) Jemima, daughter of Colonel Balneavis (q.v.). He died on 19 Sep 1906.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 20 Sep 1906. Portrait: Parliament House.

SHERRIFF, FRANCIS (1801-97) was born in Kent. He was brought up to the cotton trade, was in business with Richard Cobden for some

## SHORTLAND

years (Cobden, Sherriff and Jillett) and was a member of the Haberdashers' Company. Being interested in the colonies, he invested and lost a good deal of money in colonial lands, but having sections in Wellington, Nelson and Wanganui he came to Wanganui with his son (1853) and occupied a farm at No. 3 Line. Returning to England, he dissolved his partnership, sold his home at Tonbridge Wells and in 1863 came to New Zealand again with his family and a plant for making agricultural implements. In 1876 he moved to Wanganui. Sherriff was much interested in music and possessed a fine musical library. He was prominent in the Church of England. He died on 22 Aug 1897.

Woon; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 23 Aug 1897.

SHERRIN, RICHARD ARUNDELL AUGUR (1832-93) came to New Zealand in the late fifties. In Jan 1863 he was engaged with his brother William prospecting and pioneering on the West Coast of the South Island. Jacob Lauper (q.v.) tried to reach their camp at the mouth of the Grey river after the death of Whitcombe. He was in camp with Townend at the mouth of the Taramakau when Howitt (q.v.) was lost, and he took a leading part in the search. Sherrin's boat was swamped in the Grey river in Sep, he and a Maori being the only survivors of five occupants. He afterwards engaged in journalism, and was for a time (about 1879-80) editor of the *New Zealand*, which was established to support Grey in Wellington. In Auckland he edited the *Freeman's Journal* in the early eighties and *Labour* (a weekly) in 1884-85. He published a pamphlet demanding an inquiry into the financial condition of New Zealand (1881) and compiled an official handbook of the fishes of New Zealand (1886). Sherrin's best known work was a history of New Zealand from the earliest times to 1840, which formed the first half of Brett's large publication in 1890. He died on 7 Jan 1893.

*Canterbury Gaz.*, vol x, no 10; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Howitt, ii, p. 441; Hindmarsh; *The Press*, 21, 24, 25 Mar 1863.

SHORTLAND, EDWARD (1812-93), the third son of Thomas G. Shortland, was born at Courtlands, Devonshire. Educated at Exeter Grammar School and at Pembroke College, Cambridge, he graduated B.A. (1835) and M.A.

## SHORTLAND

(1839); then studied medicine, and was admitted an extra-licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians (1839). Attracted to New Zealand by his brother Willoughby (q.v.), he was appointed private secretary to Hobson (Jun 1841). In Aug 1842 he was appointed police magistrate and sub-protector of aborigines. He afterwards became protector, and in 1843-44 accompanied Colonel Godfrey as interpreter during the investigation of land claims in the South Island. He himself reported on many claims, and took a census of the South Island Maori. The substance of his researches and travels he published in England in 1851 under the title *The Southern Districts of New Zealand*. In 1854 he published *The Traditions and Superstitions of the New Zealanders*. Shortland became M.R.C.P. in England in 1860 and before returning to practice in Auckland he served in the Sicilian campaign and married a Sicilian lady. Thereafter he practised for many years in Auckland. He was a profound Maori scholar and besides his other books wrote *Maori Religion and Mythology* (London, 1882) and *How to Learn Maori*. He returned to England for good in 1889 and died at Plymouth on 2 Jul 1893.

His eldest son EDWARD GEORGE, born at Auckland on 2 Nov 1855, entered the Navy (1869) and attained flag rank in 1909. He had a distinguished career, mainly on the instructional side. After commanding several training vessels he was lieutenant in Admiral Lyon's flagship *Swiftsure* in the Pacific (1882-85); served in the *Hyacinth* in China (1889-92) and was promoted commander in the battleship *Nile* in the Mediterranean (1894). Captain in 1900, he commanded the *Narcissus* (1901-03), the cruiser *Hogue* in China and the battleship *New Zealand* in the Channel fleet (1908). In 1908 he was commodore commanding the Royal Naval Barracks at Portsmouth and in 1909 was promoted rear-admiral. There being no vacancy for a flag, he retired (1912). Volunteering for service in the war of 1914-18 he received the C.B. for his services as principal naval transport officer (1915). He was promoted vice-admiral 1915 and admiral 1918. Shortland married in 1898 Blanche, daughter of Vice-admiral Rombulow Pearse. He died on 7 Apr 1929. The second son, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1861-1925), was born at Plymouth, and practised law at

## SHORTLAND

Auckland, Taumarunui and in Otago. He was author of several legal textbooks (*Police Court Practice and Procedure*, *The Family Lawyer*), works on bankruptcy and *Tales of Maoriland*. He died on 27 Feb 1925.

G.B.O.P. 1845/247; *DR.B.*; Shortland, *op. cit.*; Scholefield, *Hobson*; A. Mackay; *N.Z. Herald*, 19 Oct 1889, 28 Feb 1925.

SHORTLAND, WILLOUGHBY (1804-69) was the eldest son of Captain T. G. Shortland, R.N. and brother of Dr Edward Shortland (q.v.) and Vice-admiral Peter F. Shortland. Educated at the Royal Naval College, he entered the service in Jan 1818. A lieutenant in 1828, he served in the *Galatea*, 42 guns, and the *Ranger*, 28 guns (on the Jamaica station). After some years in the Mediterranean, he was mate in the *Blanche* on the South American station. As acting-lieutenant of the *Victor*, he served under Captain Hobson (q.v.) in the West Indies and nursed him through an attack of yellow fever. Promoted lieutenant, and appointed (1831) to command the schooner *Skipjack*, five guns, he served until he was invalided home (Jun 1833). His period of inactivity lasted until Hobson took him out to New Zealand in 1839. Gipps gave him the appointment of police magistrate in New Zealand; but soon after landing he was acting as the principal government official. During Hobson's illness he assumed the authority of the Governor and visited the far north to obtain signatures to the Treaty. When a separate government was established (1841) Shortland was Colonial Secretary, and he spent three months at Port Nicholson displaying the dignity and importance of the Crown and establishing a proper administration. Shortland and other officials were reprimanded by the Colonial Office for taking improper advantage of the privilege of purchasing lands in the Colony.

On Hobson's death (Sep 1842) Shortland became administrator. Embarrassed throughout by native troubles and financial perplexities, he had the temerity to govern without the assistance of the Legislative Council, which was not convened during his administration. He tried to raise money in New South Wales, at 15 per cent. interest, and when that failed he resorted to the expedient of issuing bills on the British Treasury. These were dishonoured, but the Colonial Office advanced an equal

## SHRIMPTON

amount to enable the Colony to carry on. Shortland's relations with the colonists were characterised by high-handedness and lack of sympathy; but he cannot be accused of lack of vigour following the affair at Wairau, and he managed to restrain the settlers, who resented his strictures and appealed to New South Wales for assistance. FitzRoy, arriving at the end of 1843, treated Shortland rather more brusquely than he deserved, and he resigned, making way for Andrew Sinclair, who had come to the Colony with FitzRoy. Shortland returned to England. He was appointed in 1845 president of the island of Nevis (West Indies), and in 1854 governor of Tobago. This post he held until 1856, when he retired to live in Devonshire. In 1864 he was gazetted a commander on the retired list. He died on 7 Oct 1869. Shortland married at Auckland (1841) Isabella Kate Johnston, daughter of Robert A. Fitzgerald (q.v.) of Geraldine, county Limerick.

G.B.O.P., 1841/311, 1844/566, 1845/108, 1846/337; *D.N.B.*; Sinclair Papers; *N.Z. Gaz.*; Wakefield; Rusden; Saunders; Sherrin and Wallace (p); Scholefield, *Hobson*; Harrop; Thomson.

SHRIMPTON, WALTER (1842-1936) was born in England, and arrived in Canterbury in the *Charlotte Jane* (Dec 1850). After farming with his brother for a short time he moved to the North Island and took up virgin land in the Matapiro block, Hawkes Bay. He established a fine herd of red deer (from the South Island) in 1876. He broke in this country and farmed it with great tenacity and perseverance. In later life he took an energetic part in public affairs, serving for many years on most of the local bodies in his district. He was chairman of the Okawa road board and afterwards represented the Okawa riding in the Hawkes Bay county for many years (being often elected chairman). He was an early trustee of the Napier hospital and represented the county on the united Hawkes Bay charitable aid trustees from 1898 until 1909, when the Hawkes Bay hospital board was formed. He was a member of that body (1909-27), and chairman (1909-22). During 30 years of participation in hospital administration he made many handsome gifts, including the Shrimpton ward, which was built in 1913, destroyed by earthquake in 1931 and rebuilt. He presented to Hastings hospital the

## SIDEY

first radio equipment so installed in New Zealand. From 1910-27 he was on the committee of the Parke Island old people's home and chairman many years. Shrimpton was for a while a member of the East Coast native land trust, an official of the Hawkes Bay A. and P. association and an officebearer of the Hawkes Bay Jockey club. He died on 25 Jul 1936. He was twice married. (See F. D. RICH.)

Playne; *Hawkes Bay Herald* and *Daily Telegraph*, 26 Jul 1936.

SHRIMSKI, SAMUEL EDWARD (1828-1902) was born at Posen, Prussian Poland, and received his early education there. He was then for 12 years in London engaged in mercantile life, and at the end of the fifties emigrated to Melbourne. He entered into one of the gold rushes and in 1861 came to Otago and settled at Oamaru as draper and storekeeper. He was in partnership with Joseph Moss until 1870, when he carried on alone as auctioneer and Government land agent. He became very prominent in the life of the community, being a borough councillor (1868) and mayor of Oamaru (1871), the originator and first chairman of the Waitaki High School (1879-82), a member of the education board and the harbour board, treasurer of the hospital trustees and a founder of the Athenaeum. He represented Waitaki in Parliament (1876-81) and Oamaru (1881-85). On retiring from the House of Representatives he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death (on 25 Jun 1902). Shrimski married Deborah, daughter of W. H. Neumegen (Auckland).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1876-1902 (notably 1 Jul 1902); K. C. McDonald (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Parltry Record*; *Otago Daily Times* and *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Jun 1902. Portrait: Parliament House.

SIBBALD, JOHN (1822-92) was born in Aberdeen and came to Otago in the *Clutha* in 1852. Entering into business in Dunedin as a tailor, he afterwards took over the Provincial hotel, which he let to tenants. Sibbald represented the City of Dunedin in the Provincial Council (1867-70). He died on 7 Sep 1892.

*Otago Daily Times*, 4 Oct 1892.

SIDEY, DAVID (1827-1914) was born at Pitcairn Green, near Perth, Scotland, and was a

## SIDEY

United Presbyterian minister at West Calder before coming to New Zealand in 1872 as minister of St Paul's church in Napier. In 1879 he was moderator of the Assembly and in 1883 he retired from active duty at St Paul's. He afterwards became clerk and treasurer of the General Assembly, and clerk of the Hawkes Bay Presbytery. Sidey took a great interest in education as secretary and treasurer of the Napier High Schools board of governors and a member of the Hawkes Bay education board. He died on 25 Jul 1914.

Dickson; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 26 Jul 1914.

SIDEY, SIR THOMAS KAY (1863-1933) was born in Dunedin, and was a son of John Sidey, who arrived in the *Blundell* (1848). He received his early education at Napier and at Barrett's collegiate school in Dunedin, the Otago Boys' High School (1876-81) and Otago University. (B.A. 1885; LL.B. 1889.) He was for some time in a law office and then practised law. Sidey took an early interest in politics. He contested the Caversham seat against Morrison in 1896, and on Morrison's death in 1901 he won it against five opponents (including Earnshaw, Bedford, Hally and J. J. Meikle). He retained the seat continuously (as Dunedin South after 1908) till retiring from the House in 1928.

Sidey was a consistent Liberal and a supporter of Seddon and Ward. His efforts in politics were mainly directed towards the enactment of measures of law reform and of his daylight saving proposal. In 1909 he introduced a bill which proposed to extend the daylight time for one hour during the summer months. Each year his summer-time bill was brought in and secured a first reading, but failed to make any further progress, the main opposition coming from the country districts. In 1915 it passed the House after an all-night sitting, but the Legislative Council rejected it. In 1926 it had the same treatment. In 1927 it was passed by both Houses, but with a proviso that it should operate for one year only. In 1928 it was re-enacted, but the period of extension was reduced from an hour to half an hour; and in the following year the act became permanent. Sidey brought into Parliament also proposals regarding indeterminate sentences, the control of legal training and of dentists (involving the sound establishment of the Otago Dental

## SIEVWRIGHT

School), and the registration of music teachers. He was deputy-leader of the Liberal opposition prior to the election of 1928 and on the accession of the Liberal party to office, having been called to the Legislative Council, he became Attorney-general and Minister of Justice. In this capacity he completed the daylight-saving legislation, and carried out many measures of law reform, including the establishment of a council of legal education. In 1930 he attended the Imperial Conference with the Prime Minister, and he was responsible for the inclusion in the Statute of Westminster of the clause exempting New Zealand from its operation except in so far as the Parliament of New Zealand might enact. In 1931 he resigned his portfolios in order to enable the Prime Minister to form a coalition cabinet. He was knighted in 1930.

Sidey was a member of the Caversham borough council (1892-1902) and mayor (1894, 1899 and 1901). He was a member of the school committee (1890-1901) and president of the Dunedin and Suburban school committees' association (1893); a governor of the Otago High Schools (1901-02 and 1905-29), and chairman (1914-19); a member of the council of Knox College; and of the council of Otago University, of which he was vice-chancellor (1921-25), and chancellor (1925-33). As a member of the senate of the New Zealand University he was specially associated with the movement to grant theological degrees. Sidey was associated with many public bodies and associations and public companies. He married (1903) Helena, daughter of David Baxter (Dunedin). His death occurred on 22 May 1933.

*N.Z.P.D.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 23 May 1933; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1932; Sidey, *A Record Of Public Service* (1933). Portrait: Parliament House.

SIEVWRIGHT, MARGARET HOME (1843-1905) was born at Pencaitland, north Berwick, Scotland, the daughter of John Richardson, later of Riversdale, county Chateauguay, Canada. In girlhood she devoted her attention to teaching the waifs and strays of Edinburgh. Trained as a nurse under Florence Nightingale, she served for some years in hospitals, and in the seventies came to New Zealand. In 1878 she married William Sievwright (d. 1909), a solicitor who had been practising in Lerwick,

## SIM

Shetland islands. They settled in Wellington (on the invitation of Sir Robert Stout, whose Wellington office he joined), and after wards moved to Dunedin. In 1883 they removed to Gisborne, where they lived for the rest of her life. In spite of frail health Mrs Sievwright took a strenuous part in social movements, temperance work and the franchise campaign. She was founder of the National Council of Women, and president till her death (on 9 Mar 1905). Every aspect of women's life had her full sympathy, as much after the gaining of the franchise as before. She believed that political power could only be exercised advantageously if women were fully educated for the duty. She was enthusiastic in organisations for the benefit of child life, and was for many years a member of the Waiapu licensing bench. Naturally averse to public activities, she nevertheless exerted her whole influence on behalf of women.

*Evening Post*, 8 Jun 1905; Jessie Mackay in *Woman To-day*, May 1937; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 9 Mar 1905.

SIM, SIR WILLIAM ALEXANDER (1858-1928) was born at Wanganui, and educated at Wanganui collegiate school. Articled to C. H. Borlase (1872), he completed his term in 1877, and in the following year proceeded to Dunedin, where he was employed as chief common law clerk to Sievwright and Stout. In 1879 he was admitted to the bar, and a few years later became a partner in the firm of Stout, Mondy and Sim. Sim was chairman of the first conciliation board in Dunedin under the industrial conciliation and arbitration act. In 1907 he was appointed judge of the Arbitration Court and in 1911 of the Supreme Court. In 1913 he was designated to the Otago and Southland district. He was chairman of the taxation royal commission (1923-25).

Sim was a founder of the Dunedin cremation society (and later president), a trustee of the Dunedin Art Gallery society, chairman of the prisons board and a supporter of the Patients' and Prisoners' Aid society. His legal publications include: *Divorce Act and Rules of New Zealand* (1892 and 1902) and (with Sir Robert Stout) *The Practice of the Supreme Court and Court of Appeal of New Zealand*. He married (1886) Frances Mary, daughter of Joseph Walters (Victoria). He was knighted in 1924 and died on 29 Aug 1928.

## SIMMONDS

*N.z. Law Jour.*, Apr 1928; *Evening Post* and *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Jan 1907, 30 Aug 1928 (p); *The Dominion*, 31 Aug 1928. Portrait: Supreme Court, Dunedin.

SIMEON, CHARLES (1816-67) was a son of Sir R. G. Simeon, 2nd baronet. He held a commission in the 75th Regiment, from which he retired with the rank of captain. Simeon married Sarah Jane, daughter of Philip Williams, K.C.

Having retired from the army he became associated with the movement for the colonisation of Canterbury and when W. G. Brittan sailed for New Zealand (in 1850) he was appointed chairman of the Society of Canterbury Colonists. Arriving in New Zealand the following year, he relieved J. R. Godley as resident magistrate for Lyttelton and Christchurch. He was commissioner of police for Lyttelton (1853), and sheriff for the province. From 1853 to 1855 he represented Christchurch Country in the Provincial Council, acting as speaker throughout. Simeon was a captain in the New Zealand militia. He died on 29 May 1867.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Godley, *Letters*; *Canterbury Papers*; Burke, *Peerage*, 1938; Wigram.

SIMMONDS, JOSEPH (1819-89) came to Nelson in the *Fifeshire* in 1842 and settled at Spring Grove, where he took up a bush farm. He represented Waimea South in the Provincial Council (1857-69). Simmonds died on 7 Jul 1889. (See J. H. SIMMONDS.)

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *The Colonist*, 8 Jul 1889.

SIMMONDS, JOSEPH HENRY (1845-1936) was born at Spring Grove, Nelson, the son of Joseph Simmonds (q.v.). Educated in Nelson and at Canterbury College, he had some experience in farming, goldmining and school teaching before being accepted in 1869 as a minister of the Wesleyan Methodist church. He was stationed in Waikato (1869-70), in Fiji (1871-73) and thereafter in various New Zealand circuits till 1894. In 1895 he was president of the New Zealand Methodist conference and assumed control of Three Kings College, of which he was principal till 1916. He was a governor of the Theological Institution (1896-1910) and of the Auckland University College Council. Simmonds studied trees and forestry very deeply and published (1927) an important book on

## SIMMONS

eucalypts in New Zealand. He died on 30 Jun 1936.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Jul 1936 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Aug 1933 (P).

SIMMONS, FRANK CHURCHILL (1829-76) was born in Guernsey, the son of Captain F. F. Simmons, R.A., and was educated at Rugby under Dr Tait and at Lincoln College, Oxford, where he graduated M.A. He was ordained to the ministry and for some years conducted a large school at Dundee. In 1863 he was appointed rector of the Otago Boys' High School, and he took up the post in May 1864. He was very popular, and excelled as a teacher of English history and classics, but his opinions brought him into controversy. In writing to the Bishop of Brechin, he criticised the religious organisations of the province with a freedom which caused widespread offence when his letter was published. As a result of the ensuing controversy, Simmons resigned in 1867 and was appointed to Nelson College (1868). There also he was very successful as a teacher, especially of English language and literature. He took a leading part in the movement to make university education available to students in the provinces, and proposed in 1865 that scholarships should be established by the Government to enable New Zealanders to attend universities in England. A select committee of Parliament approved the proposal, but R. Campbell proposed the creation of a university, which was provided for by a provincial ordinance of Otago (1869).

Simmons died suddenly on 16 May 1876. He had considerable literary ability and a graceful style. He contributed to the *Otago Daily Times* and for some time edited the *Colonist*. A biographer wrote that 'it fell to him to realise the undeniable hardness of colonial life and society.'

*Nelson Coil. Reg.*; *Otago HS. Reg.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Dec 1870, 5 Jun 1876; *The Colonist*, 16 May 1876; Beaglehole.

SIMMS, WILLIAM HENRY (1834-92) was born at Hamburg, Germany, of English parents. He married Miss Dunnage. On coming to New Zealand he took up the Albury run in south Canterbury. While there he was a member of the Canterbury Provincial Council (for Waitangi 1862-64; Timaru, 1864-65). For some

## SINCLAIR

years Simms was a music teacher in Christchurch (where he was leader of the Lieder-klub); and in 1887 he established a commission agency. He was German consul. He died on 8 Jul 1892.

*The Press*, 9 Jul 1892.

SIMPSON, ROBERT KIRKPATRICK (1837-1921) was born in Argyllshire, Scotland, educated privately at Morven, and brought up to sheep-farming. Coming to New Zealand in 1859 by the *Queen of the Avon*, he engaged in sheep-farming at Turakina. In 1862 he purchased Closeburn, Bonny Glen, where he remained unmolested by the Maoris during the war. In 1878 he bought land at Hunterville and began clearing it. For 26 years Simpson was inspector of sheep for Rangitikei and the West Coast, rising to senior inspector for the Colony. He was a member of the highway board from 1863 until it was abolished, when he was elected to the Rangitikei county council, of which he was treasurer for many years. He was a witness before the federation commission (1901) and sat in the Legislative Council (1914-21). He died on 5 Aug 1921. His wife was a daughter of Alexander Grant (1808-97, of Inverness, who arrived in New Zealand in 1840 and in Rangitikei 1846).

*N.z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1921; J. G. Wilson; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i. Portrait: Parliament House.

SINCLAIR, ANDREW (1796-1861) was born at Paisley, of a family engaged in trade in the town. He got a sound Scots education, and in 1814 commenced his medical studies at Glasgow College. He was there and at Edinburgh until 1818; took a course in the hospitals in Paris, and in 1822 was appointed assistant-surgeon in the Royal Navy. In 1823, while on the Cape station in the *Owen Glendower*, he did his first botanical work, and sent specimens to the British Museum. He spent 10 years at the Cape and in the Mediterranean and, after taking further lectures in medicine, was posted (1835) to the *Sulphur* for Beechey's expedition in South America.

This duty gave him many opportunities for scientific investigation, and he sent home specimens from Mexico, Central America, California, and Brazil. Early in 1839 he was invalided from Central America. He was in Great Britain for

the next year or two, but was at Bay of Islands in 1841, when he accompanied Hooker on some of his botanical ramblings. In 1842 he returned to Scotland and reported upon openings for investment in Sydney. Either at this time or soon after Sinclair presented to the British Museum such a fine collection of shells and insects that Dr John E. Gray was encouraged to commence his first scientifically-arranged catalogue. Thereafter scarcely a year passed but Sinclair made some gift or sale of importance to the Museum from his discoveries in New Zealand. Early in 1843 Sinclair was posted as surgeon to the convict ship *Asiatic*, conveying convicts to Tasmania. Having landed his people at Hobart (Sep), he signed off and proceeded to Sydney with the object of getting a passage back to England. There he met Captain Robert FitzRoy, R.N., on his way to New Zealand to assume the governorship. He discussed the prospects of doing exploration work and FitzRoy agreed to bring him, without pay.

The officer whom FitzRoy had intended to make Colonial Secretary was sick from wounds received exploring in Australia, and during the voyage to Auckland in the *Bangalore* FitzRoy made up his mind to utilise the services of Sinclair. In Jan 1844, he persuaded him to accept office as Colonial Secretary, with membership of the Legislative Council. Sinclair was not only a man of wide experience, he was a shrewd business man, and a sagacious and cautious adviser. Within a year trouble broke out at Bay of Islands, and Sinclair accompanied FitzRoy to the scene. On his advice the flagstaff was re-erected when Heke cut it down. Sinclair worked cordially with the Attorney-General (Swainson) and the Chief Justice (Martin), both firm friends of the Maori. He had to inaugurate a civil service for the Colony with the material at hand. His immediate colleague was Shepherd (q.v.), the Colonial Treasurer, but his subordinates he had to choose and train. When he resigned 12 years later there was the nucleus of a really efficient service, with men like G. S. Cooper and Gisborne in key positions. FitzRoy and Grey both treated Sinclair as their personal adviser and took his advice in their own investments.

The development of responsible government involved the retirement of the three permanent officials whose appointments were made by the

Home government, and the Governor refused to accept the reform until their pensions had been provided for. This having been done in the session of 1856, Sinclair retired on pension and devoted the rest of his life to scientific pursuits. He proceeded at once on a visit to Scotland and Europe. He already had an established name in the scientific world through his gifts to the British Museum and his botanical contributions to Beechey's voyage; and in 1851 he had contributed to Hooker's *Journal of Botany* some notes on the vegetation of Auckland. He had discussed scientific matters with Darwin and Huxley, and had had correspondence with Owen from 1847. Late in 1858 he returned to New Zealand with the intention of gathering material for Hooker's *Flora* in one or two districts that had not been covered. Hooker referred frequently to Sinclair's herbarium, and did him the honour of naming a genus after him.

In 1859 Sinclair was elected a fellow of the Linnean Society. His journals show that he botanised in the vicinity of Whangarei and Manukau, in Otago and Southland, and in the Nelson and Marlborough districts. In Hooker's *Flora* it appears that he sent specimens from East Cape, Auckland, Bay of Islands, Great Barrier and Waiheke, Whangaroa, Nelson, D'Urville Island, Wairau, the Dun mountain and Tarndale (where he ascended to a crater at a height of 6,000 feet). Hooker considered Colenso the foremost botanical explorer in New Zealand at that time, with Sinclair second as a man of great attainments in many ways. Early in 1861 Sinclair was in Canterbury for the purpose of accompanying von Haast on his exploration of the Southern Alps. On 20 Mar they made their headquarters at Samuel Butler's station, Mesopotamia. On 22 Mar they set off up the Lawrence, a tributary of the Rangitata, and were about to proceed to its source when Sinclair volunteered to return to Mesopotamia to collate specimens. On 26 Mar he was travelling with another member of the party on foot. Attempting to cross a stream, he lost his footing and was swept away. The body was discovered next day and buried at Mesopotamia. Von Haast gave the name of Sinclair" to a peak (7,022 feet) at the head of Forest Creek. A fine collection of specimens obtained by Sinclair and mounted by his nieces was shown by Sir

George Grey at the Dunedin Exhibition (1865) and presented to Sydney University.

Sinclair died possessed of considerable property. He was a Christian gentleman of high principle, a generous philanthropist, and had been a liberal supporter of the Presbyterian church of St Andrew's, of which he was one of the founders. He was an originator of the Auckland museum (1853). He was unmarried. (See T. B. GILLIES.)

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1854-56; *App. H.R.*, *ib.*; *Canterbury Gaz.*; Admiralty Records; Sinclair papers (General Assembly Library); family information from Dr Sinclair Gillies (Sydney); Beechey, *Voyage of the Sulphur*; *Cant. O.N.*; Bunbury; Gisborne; Saunders; Thomson; Rusden; Shortland; Cheeseman, *Manual of N.Z. Flora*, p. xxvii; Hochstetter; Hooker; Cox; H. F. Jones; H. T. Kemp in *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Mar 1901; *Lyttelton Times*, 3 Apr 1861; G. H. Scholefield in *Evening Post*, 29 Sep 1934 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 7 Apr 1894.

SINCLAIR, DONALD (1802-71), a farmer, who claimed to have been in the army, came to New Zealand in 1843 by the *Phoebe Dunbar*. In 1844 he was appointed chief police magistrate for Nelson and representative of the Government under the Superintendent of the Southern division. In the following year he became commissioner of the court of requests, and later magistrate, which he resigned in 1847. Sinclair was a member of the Nelson Provincial Council (for Nelson 1853-57, and for Wairau 1858-59) and was speaker of the Council from 1853-57. He died on 13 Sep 1871.

Broad; Mackay.

SINCLAIR, FRANCIS (1797-1846) was the son of George Sinclair, of Prestonpans, Scotland (belonging to a Caithness branch). His father was a master mariner, and Francis shared some of his experiences in the French war. In 1824 he married Elizabeth McHutcheson. For some years he was a supervisor of the inland revenue at Stirling, and as the family increased he decided to emigrate. In 1840 he sailed with his wife and children in the *Blenheim*, arriving at Port Nicholson in Feb 1841. The land they had bought not being yet available, they took employment where it offered for a year or two. At the suggestion of Colonel Wakefield Sinclair visited Wanganui, taking his family in a whale boat and landing each night to sleep ashore.

Disappointed there, they leased a section from Fitzherbert at Richmond, on the Hutt river, and built the schooner *Richmond*, 45 tons. After visiting Taranaki they called at Nelson, Banks Peninsula, Waikouaiti and Otago. In 1843 Sinclair took the Deans family to Canterbury and his own family and the Hays to Banks Peninsula. Selling the *Richmond* to W. B. Rhodes for 30 cattle, they settled at Pigeon Bay, where they worked hard to establish themselves on their farm (Craigforth), milking cows and making butter and cheese for the Wellington market. Selwyn, Grey and Godley enjoyed the hospitality of their home, and admired their industry and courage. The Sinclairs built several schooners, and had one trading between Banks Peninsula and Wellington. In 1845 Sinclair and his son George sailed for Wellington with their farm produce in a new schooner, the *Jessie Millar*, which was lost at sea with all hands.

The eldest daughter, Jean Robertson, married Captain Thomas Gay; and the second, Helen McHutcheson, married C. B. Robinson (q.v.). A few years later Mrs Sinclair decided to look for a more promising country to settle her family. With this object they embarked in the *Bessie*, commanded by Gay, and visited several Pacific islands. In 1863 they spent a few months in Vancouver island, but finding the climate too severe, they returned to Hawaii and eventually bought from Kamehameha IV the island of Niihau, containing about 70,000 acres. There they settled (Oct 1863). Some time later they purchased a similar area on Kauai, where Mrs Sinclair established her home and resided till her death in 1893. The family successfully developed their estate as a sheep and cattle station, and later as a cattle ranch and sugar plantation. (See C. B. ROBINSON, FRANCIS SINCLAIR.)

Family information from Aylmer F. Robinson, W. McHutcheson, Eric Knudsen and H. C. Tennent; *Cant. O.N.*; Godley, *Letters*; Guthrie Hay; J. Hay; Deans; Woodhouse; Isabella Bishop, *Hawaiian Archipelago*, 1875.

SINCLAIR, FRANCIS (1834-1915), the son of Captain Francis Sinclair (q.v.), was born in Scotland and came to New Zealand with his parents (1840). He went to Hawaii with his mother (1863). Later he owned a sheep station in the North Island of New Zealand, and re-

## SINCLAIR

sided in Auckland. Returning to California before 1906, he afterwards resided in England. Sinclair married first Isabella, sister of William McHutcheson. She wrote a valuable book on the indigenous flowers of the Hawaiian islands (illustrated by her own paintings), and was engaged on a further volume when she died. He afterwards married her sister, Wilhelmina McHutcheson Sheriffs.

Sinclair himself wrote *Ballads and Poems from the Pacific* (pseud. 'Philip Garth') (1885); *Where the Sun Sets* (1905); *Under North Star and Southern Cross* (1907); *From the Four Winds* (1909); and *Under Western Skies* (1911). He died in 1915.

Family information Aylmer F. Robinson; Sinclair, *op. cit.*

SINCLAIR, JAMES (1817-97) was born at Lybster, Caithness, Scotland. With his wife and children he came to New Zealand in the *Agra* (1852), and soon afterwards removed from Wellington to Nelson, where he opened a store. In 1852 he settled at Wairau, where he had built for himself the first wooden house. Sinclair soon became on friendly terms with the natives with whom he did business and for many years he acted as merchant and banker for runholders. He was generally regarded as the founder of Blenheim, which he represented in the Marlborough Provincial Council when it was still called Beaver (1860-62). He continued in the Council for Upper Wairau (1862-63) and for Lower Wairau (1864-65, and 1869-74). Sinclair was largely responsible for the separation of Marlborough from Nelson, and later for fixing the capital at Blenheim instead of Picton. He married (1850) Christina (d. 1895), daughter of John Sutherland. His death occurred on 9 Aug 1897.

*Marlborough P.C. minutes; Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); Buick, *Marlborough; Marlborough Express*, 24 Dec 1895, 10 Aug 1897.

SKERRETT, SIR CHARLES PERRIN (1863-1929) was born in India, came to New Zealand with his father (Peter Perrin Skerrett) at the age of 12, and was educated in Wellington. His first position was that of telegraph messenger. He was a cadet in the Treasury in 1878, and on 6 Mar 1879 became a cadet in the Justice department. It was as a clerk in the magistrate's court in Wellington that he first

## SKERRETT

learned something of law and the necessity for strict attention to detail. His father, who was messenger and court crier, was advised to read law, and he and his son were admitted to the bar about the same time.

Skerrett served his articles with Bell, Lewis and Gully, and having passed in all subjects first in his year, he was admitted as a barrister and solicitor in 1884. He commenced practice on his own account, quickly gained the reputation of being a powerful pleader, and was noted for the facility and lucidity with which he presented complicated cases. From 1887-93 he was a member of the firm of Brown, Skerrett and Dean. In 1893 he retired from the partnership, and in 1894 he was joined by Andrew Wylie. From this partnership (Skerrett and Wylie) by amalgamation with the business of Chapman and Tripp, evolved the firm of Chapman, Skerrett, Wylie and Tripp which, in 1913 (on the retirement of Martin Chapman, K.C., and Andrew Wylie) became Chapman, Skerrett, Tripp and Blair. When the dignity of King's Counsel was created in New Zealand (1907) Skerrett was one of the first on whom it was conferred. He retained his connection with Chapman, Skerrett, Tripp and Blair until Feb 1926, when he was appointed Chief Justice in succession to Sir Robert Stout. During his career at the bar Skerrett was connected with many important cases before the Court of Appeal and the Privy Council, and as counsel in numerous election petitions, including those of Thomas Wilford (Hutt), Maui Pomare (Western Maori) and James Parr (Eden). For many years he was regarded as the leader of the bar, although Sir Francis Bell was his senior. None excelled him in the power of concentration. He possessed a remarkably quick mind, and an unusually comprehensive grasp of the principles of law. As Chief Justice he maintained the high standard he had set at the bar and strengthened the reputation and standing of the Supreme Court bench. He was knighted in 1927.

Skerrett's interests outside the profession were numerous. He was an expert horseman and a keen polo player. He was captain of the Wellington Polo club before it disbanded in 1906, and played in many tournaments. He was deputy-master of the United Hunt club, and once won the Hunt steeple on his own horse,

## SKEVINGTON

Halicore. He was a vice-president of the Wellington Racing club, and as a member of the New Zealand Racing conference he took a leading part in framing the rules and regulations. He was a keen fisherman and golfer, and delighted in deer-stalking. At one time he played for the Poneke football club. He was also a patron of Association football, and president of the New Zealand football association (to which he presented the Skerrett Cup for competition among secondary schools). He was president of the New Zealand Sports Protection league, the New Zealand Welfare league and the Licensing Reform association, and he served several terms as president of the Wellington and the Wellesley clubs. His wit, charm and felicity of expression stamped him as a fine alter-dinner speaker. He was several times president of the Wellington district law society, and from 1918-26 was president of the New Zealand law society. He was also for many years a member of the Rhodes Scholarship selection committee. Skerrett was unmarried. He died on 13 Feb 1929.

J.H.B.S.

*N.Z. Law Jour.*, 5 Mar 1929; Beauchamp; *The Times*, 18 Feb 1929; *Evening Post*, 19-21 Feb 1929.

SKEVINGTON, JOHN (1814-45) was born at Nottingham and entered the Wesleyan ministry in 1839. He was appointed to minister to the tribes on the West Coast about 1844, his headquarters being at Heretua, on the Waimate plains. He persuaded the Ngati-Ruanui to return the prisoners taken at Patoka from the Ngati-Tuwharetoa taua which had invaded their territory. On one of his visits to Auckland Skevington was accompanied by Titokowaru, who was baptised, with the name of Hohepa. Skevington's influence against land selling was considerable. He died suddenly at Auckland on 21 Sep 1845, after preaching in connection with a district meeting.

Morley; E. J. Wakefield, *Adventure*, ii, 345.

SKEY, SAMUEL (1817-61), a boatman, sat in the Provincial Council as member for Wellington City (1856-57). His election, as a representative of the working class, caused much controversy at the time. He died on 22 Aug 1861.

Ward; *The Spectator*, 25 Oct 1856; *Wellington Independent*, 23 Oct 1856.

## SLADE

SKEY, WILLIAM (1835-1900) was the son of a London lawyer who died while he was an infant. He worked on a farm, and under the influence of one of his guardians, who had leisure and means to pursue the hobby, he made a study of chemistry. He erected a laboratory on the farm to test manures. On another place he experimented in distilling spirits from beet-root, and for three years operated a still, but at a financial loss. In 1860 he came to New Zealand with his brother Henry, spent two years bushfelling and mining at Gabriel's Gully, and in 1862 was appointed laboratory assistant to Hector in the geological survey of Otago. There he pursued his studies under the analyst (Charles Searles Wood, A.R.S.M., F.C.S.), whom he succeeded in charge of the laboratory. In 1865 he was transferred to Wellington as assistant in the Geological Survey department, from which he was transferred in 1893 to the Mines department. Skey made discoveries in metallurgy and chemistry which were of great value to the mining industry. He contributed many scientific papers to the Philosophical Society and the *Chemical News*, and published also a volume of verse *The Pirate Chief and Other Poems*. He died on 4 Oct 1900.

*Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, *pass.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); family information; *Evening Post*, 4 Oct 1900.

SLADE, WILLIAM (1859-1916) was born in Staffordshire and came to New Zealand in 1878. He was accepted for training in Three Kings College for the Methodist ministry. He worked amongst the Maori people at Raglan (1881-83), at Tauranga (1884) and Port Chalmers (1885). Slade married (1885) Margaret Jean Gilmour. In 1886 he went as a missionary to Fiji and for 17 years worked with initiative and indomitable energy. He was revered by the natives as a champion of their rights and honoured by the Europeans for his dauntless courage. He returned to New Zealand in 1902, and spent a year in deputation work on behalf of missions (inaugurating the Methodist women's missionary union.) In 1907 he was president of the Methodist conference and was appointed to superintend the Dunedin Methodist central mission. Here he initiated the movement to build the Octagon Hall. His visit to England to seek assistance for this work was interrupted by the war. Ultimately he brought it to fruition but

## SLATER

overtaxed his strength and his health broke down. He was a man of genius, an eminent churchman and a great administrator. He died on 20 Apr 1916. M.A.R.P.

SLATER, ROBERT (1850-1931) was born at Lamplough, Cumberland, his father being manager of a co-operative society. Educated at the parish schools at Frizington and Cleator, he worked for some years with a stonemason, in a mine and in a grain store. He commenced business as a carrier in 1872 and in 1879 came to Otago. Finding his first employment on railway construction, he organised the workers into a union (1880). From 1883 to 1901 he was employed in Dunedin in the clothing trade. He devoted much of his life to labour organisation and was one of the founders of the Otago trades and labour council, of which he was the first president (and secretary 1890-1902). During the maritime strike Slater was organiser, secretary and treasurer of the strike defence league. In Jun 1890 he discussed with J. A. Millar the establishment of a labour day demonstration in Dunedin; and after much opposition the first celebration was held there, resulting in a profit of £200 to help the miners at Denniston, who were then on strike. Slater was president and local secretary of the demonstration for some years. He represented the pressers at the conference held in 1908 to consider further organisation of unions and the drafting of rules for the trades council. He represented the workers on the Arbitration Court from 1896 to 1907, when he retired. For many years Slater was president and secretary of the Workers' Political committee. He was on the organising committee of the Dunedin tailoresses' union, which resulted from the revelations of the sweating inquiry. Slater was a strong Methodist and acted as a local preacher in Timaru and Dunedin circuits. He died on 15 Jul 1931.

Paul, *Trades Unionism*, N.Z. *Methodist Times*, Aug 1931; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Jul 1931.

SLIGO, ALEXANDER (1832-1909) who was born in Perth, Scotland, attended the old Guild School and served his apprenticeship to the stationery and book-binding business. Emigrating to Melbourne in 1854, he followed his trade for some time, spent some years on the goldfields, and in 1863 crossed to Dunedin. There he established himself as a bookseller, stationer

## SMITH

and binder (1871). In public life Sligo was for eight years a member of the Dunedin licensing committee (three years chairman), a member of the board of management of the Dunedin Technical School and chairman of the Dunedin school committee. Defeating H. S. Fish, he sat for a term in the House of Representatives as member for South Dunedin (1897-99). He died on 29 Nov 1909.

*NZP.D.*, 20 Dec 1909; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Nov 1909.

SMALES, GIDEON (1817-94) was born at Whitby, Yorkshire. Inclined from his youth for mission work, he was accepted by the Wesleyan Methodist conference and ordained at Liverpool (1839). In Sep he sailed from Bristol in the *Triton*, 120 tons, and after calling at Hobart arrived at Hokianga in Mar 1840. Until 1856 he was engaged in mission work amongst the Maori. In the early forties he was stationed at Nelson and his duties took him to Wairau. There he discussed with Te Rauparaha and his chiefs the claim to the plain, and at Te Rauparaha's request took a message to Captain Wakefield stating definitely that he would resist seizure of the Wairau. After the affray he went to Wairau and later to Porirua, where he recovered from the Ngati-Toa chiefs Wakefield's cutter. On retiring from the mission (1856) Smales went to live on his land at East Tamaki, and in a few years had 300 acres under cultivation. He erected a stone church which was available for all denominations. At the opening of the Thames goldfields he erected at his own expense a home institute, partly as a shelter and partly as a place of worship and meeting of benevolent societies. The institute cost £4,000 and involved Smales in heavy loss. He was a man of superior mental attainments and cultured mind, and a fluent speaker. On one of his visits to England he published *Whitby Authors and their Publications* (1867), containing nine pages devoted to Captain Cook. He also published some pamphlets in New Zealand. Smales died on 5 Oct 1894.

Smales, *op. cit.*, and reminiscences in *NZ Herald*, 11 Mar, 1 Apr, 10, 17 Jun, 9 Dec 1893; *NZ Herald*, 28 Apr, 14 Jul, 11 Aug, 6 Oct 1894.

SMITH, ALFRED LEE (1838-1917), who was born in Yorkshire and educated privately,

## SMITH

arrived in Wellington in 1868. Engaging in commerce in Dunedin, he became chairman of directors of Donaghy's Rope and Twine Co., and a director of the Union Steamship Co. In 1886 he was elected to the City Council, and in 1894 he represented New Zealand at the Ottawa conference on trade relations and telegraphic communications. From 1898 to 1905 Smith was a member of the Legislative Council. He died on 2 May 1917. Smith contested the parliamentary seat for Dunedin City in 1890 and for Bruce in 1892.

*NZ.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 May 1917. Portrait: Parliament House.

SMITH, ANGUS, served in the Crimea war with the 93rd Highlanders. After coming to New Zealand he saw service in the field for about three years between 1863 and 1869. Beginning as a colour-sergeant in the 1st Waikato Regiment, he took part in engagements at Mauku, Te Ranga, and Waireka. On 5 Jun 1869 (when he was a cornet in the Bay of Plenty Cavalry) he was one of the detachment of 14 camped at Opepe under Captain Moorsom. They were surprised by Te Kooti on the 7th and nine were killed. Smith escaped and made for Galatea, but was captured by Te Kooti's band, tied to a tree, and stripped of his clothing. After being in that position for four days without food or water, he escaped and proceeded to Fort Galatea where he arrived on hands and knees, having been 10 days without food or clothing and suffering from a wound in his foot. He was awarded the New Zealand Cross and was afterwards promoted captain. Smith died at Opotiki on 3 Apr 1902.

N.Z. Army Records; Cowan; Gudgeon.

SMITH, BENJAMIN (1815-93) was born at Liverpool, where he was in business as a printer and publisher till 1853, when he sailed for Wellington. He was farming for some time in Rangitikei, and then returned to Wellington and was employed by W. W. Taylor. He sat in the Wellington Provincial Council as member for Rangitikei (1867-69). In 1871 he established himself as a land and estate agent. He died on 24 Dec 1893.

Ward; *Evening Post*, 27 Dec 1893.

## SMITH

SMITH, EDWARD METCALFE (1839-1907) was born at Cradley, Staffordshire, and educated there. At the age of 11 he commenced work in the steel and iron industry, but was later apprenticed to the gun trade in Birmingham. He passed as an armourer in the Royal Small Arms works in Pimlico and Enfield and at the Royal Woolwich Arsenal, gaining a first-class certificate. He then joined the New Zealand field force as a staff garrison armourer. Arriving in the *Atręca* (1861), he was stationed in Auckland until 1864, and returned to England in the *Himalaya*. He came to New Zealand again in the *Ironsides* (1867) as armourer to the Colonial forces and was sent to Taranaki, where his wife and family were already settled. After being there some years he was consulted by the department on a project for establishing a small arms factory in Wellington. In 1872 he resigned his appointment to endeavour to arouse interest in the development of Taranaki ironsand. He gave lectures in Dunedin, Christchurch, Wellington and New Plymouth and assisted in raising £30,000 capital for the Titanic Iron and Steel Co., of which T. K. Macdonald (q.v.), was secretary. Smith was appointed manager of the works at Henui (1873) and held that position for three years. After retiring he carried out some smelting in the furnaces, but the movement had no permanent success. He then turned his attention to coal and limestone and carried out some smelting at Vivian's foundry and at the harbour works at Moturoa. When Henderson, Ferguson and Mackie undertook the contract for constructing watenworks for New Plymouth Smith joined their staff and afterwards became turncock. His interest in ironsand continued, and he advocated also improving the harbour at New Plymouth by building a breakwater eastward from the island' a railway from Waitara and Mokau to connect the Auckland system and a scheme to carry road metal from Mount Egmont.

Smith contested the New Plymouth seat against Samuel (q.v.) in 1884 and 1887, and in 1890 was elected for Taranaki, defeating John Elliot and R. C. Hughes. In 1893 he defeated Trimble, but in 1896, owing to the splitting of the Liberal vote, he suffered defeat by H. Brown (q.v.). Three years later he won the seat against H. Okey (q.v.) and he retained it until his death. Smith's faith in Taranaki iron-

## SMITH

sand was indomitable. In 1879 Macandrew commissioned him to cast disc railway wheels. In 1892 he again demonstrated at Onehunga the feasibility of smelting sand. In 1896 his supporters sent him to England, where he addressed the Iron and Steel Institute and interested many influential people, but without tangible result. In 1901 he again visited England in company with Sir Alfred Cadman (q.v.). The negotiations failed, but were resumed later by others. Meanwhile Smith's failing health suffered a severe shock by injuries received in a railway accident (1904). He died on 19 Apr 1907.

His son, SYDNEY GEORGE SMITH (1879-) was M.P. for Taranaki (1918-25) and for New Plymouth (1928-), and was Minister of Labour and Immigration (1930-31).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald*, 2 Oct 1876, 20 Apr 1907; *N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1907. Portrait: Parliament House.

SMITH, FRANCIS HENRY (1868-1936) was born at Long Bay, Tasmania, and came to New Zealand with his parents, who were interested successively in the Rollesby, Mistake and Wolds stations in the Mackenzie country. Smith was educated at Burkes Pass and Timaru main school, and after spending a few years under his father bought Albury Park, held it for some years and then purchased Waratah, where he farmed for the remainder of his life. He was a competent flockmaster, exhibited sheep with success in many shows and exported stud sheep to South America. As a young man he was a fine athlete (440 yards hurdles and captain of the Mackenzie football club), and he was for a while lieutenant in the Mackenzie Mounted Rifles. He was a member of the Timaru harbour board and the High School board. He contested Timaru against Hall-Jones (1902) and Waitaki against Steward (1909), and was elected for the latter seat in 1911. Standing for Timaru in 1914, he was defeated by Craigie. Smith died on 17 Aug 1936.

*Timaru Herald*, 18 Aug, *The Press*, 19 Aug 1936. Portrait: Parliament House.

SMITH, GEORGE HAROLD (1866-1936) was born at Masterton, the son of J. Valenine Smith (q.v.), and was educated at Nelson (1875-76) and Wellington Colleges. He studied law privately while at Patea and was admitted in 1888, commencing to practise forthwith in

## SMITH

Pahiatua, and becoming a barrister in 1900. He was a prominent footballer, having been a Wellington representative player at 17 and captained the first West Coast touring team and the Wairarapa team. He also played for Taranaki. He was prominent too as a boxer, sprinter and cricketer, and later in tennis and golf. Smith was mayor of Pahiatua 1893-94. In 1916 he defeated R. B. Ross at a parliamentary by-election and sat for Pahiatua until 1919, when he retired. Smith died on 21 Apr 1936. He married first Emmeline, daughter of E. Meredith (Masterton); and secondly (1925) Mrs. A. H. Blake (Wellington).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Pahiatua Herald*, 22 Apr 1936; *The Dominion*, 24 Apr 1936.

SMITH, HUGH GARDEN SETH (1848-1935) was born at Balham, London, and educated at University College, London, and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he took a scholarship (1870) and graduated B.A. in 1871 (as 14th wrangler in the mathematical tripos) and proceeded M.A. Called to the bar of the Inner Temple (1873) he came to New Zealand in 1881, and in the following year was appointed district judge and resident magistrate at Auckland. In 1887 he became chief judge of the native land court. Resigning in 1894 to visit England, he came back to private practice until 1904, when he was again appointed chief Judge. Smith took a deep interest in education, science and church matters; was a member of the council of Auckland University College and the Grammar School board; first president of the Polynesian Society, and chancellor of the Anglican diocese of Auckland (1898-1925).

He married (1884) a daughter (d. 1887) of the Rev Frederick Larkins; and in 1897 Emily Mary, daughter of the Rev A. G. Purchas. He died on 24 Nov 1935.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 May 1904, 25 Nov 1935.

SMITH, JAMES CHAPMAN (1827-1903) was born at Carnoustie, Forfarshire. His father died when he was an infant; his mother remarried and young Smith received the sound education of the parish school. He seems to have served his time to the bakery trade, for when the family sailed for New Zealand in 1842 in the ship *New Zealand* he was entered as a baker. Reaching Nelson in Nov, Smith remained there

## SMITH

for six years earning a living by his hands and getting experience.

In 1848 he decided to throw in his lot with James Allan (q.v.), who had come in the same ship and was settling in Otago. Taking his passage in the schooner *Emily*, 12 tons, Smith had in the hold £120 worth of goods—boots, flour, onions, bricks and lime. Bad weather forced the schooner to shelter for three weeks in Akaroa, and it did not reach Dunedin until the end of May. Allan and Smith entered into partnership, and by Oct had their bakehouse working. Three months later the store was opened on the same site (Bullen's corner). Most of the timber was sawn at Port Chalmers and Anderson's Bay, carried on the shoulders to the beach, and rafted to the town. Later they obtained a whaleboat and they constructed a sawpit on the beach, where they earned a good sum by cutting logs for other settlers. They were rafting logs when the *Blundell* arrived. The farmers by Dec 1849 were doing well, and Smith went to Nelson to buy supplies. While in Port Nicholson, he found the schooner *Perseverance* from Hobart, with 70 tons of Hour and other goods. He purchased the whole of this Hour and 30 tons out of another ship to be landed at Port Chalmers. The settlement was almost out of flour, and the bakery prospered. Smith married (1850) Margaret, sister of Edward Martin (Tokomairiro) and of the Hon John Martin (q.v.). A little later he chartered the schooner *Otago*, 70 tons, to collect supplies of produce at the southern ports. In 1851 the farmers bought from John Jones 500 lambs at 10s per head, and sent them to Hopehill, East Taieri, where Smith took charge, Allan keeping on the store. Smith broke in bullocks, cleared and ploughed and sowed wheat, but before the harvest the partnership was dissolved. Allan took over the farm and Smith moved to the new district of Tokomairiro, where he bought the Springfield property (near the old town of Fairfax). There he harvested the first crop of wheat grown on the plain, threshed it with the flail, and sold it at 13s per bushel delivered at the head of Waiholo lake. There was no road through the plain and Smith co-operated with other settlers to form a track from Tokomairiro to the lake which could be traversed by bullock drays. He was henceforth constantly carting to and from Clutha, and

## SMITH

about 1856 (in company with Allan) he went to Riverton and drove back 30 head of cattle purchased from Captain Howell. There were no settlers between Popotunoa and the Oreti river.

As Fairfax showed signs of being superseded by a town in the middle of the plain, Smith in 1854 bought 50 acres and later another 175 acres near the new site. In 1856 or 1857, in partnership again with Allan, he took up a run between Milton and Evans Flat which included what was afterwards known as Gabriel's Gully. In 1857 they bought 1,500 acres and erected a woolshed, to which they drove their supplies from Waiholo lake. About 1859 Allan sold out to Smith's brother-in-law, John Martin, and Smith and Martin worked in partnership until the outbreak of the diggings in 1861 compelled them to move their stock to an adjoining run, their own property having been declared a hundred. Martin sold his sheep to Smith, who acquired a run of 33,000 acres near Greenfield, much of which he soon made freehold. Meanwhile, the roads being crowded with diggers, Smith returned to Milton and to store-keeping, incidentally acting as banker for the convenience of settlers. It was a profitable interlude.

As a public man he took part in the affairs of the district, and was for a year (1860-61) member of the Provincial Council for Tokomairiro. In 1867 he left Milton and devoted himself to improving the Greenfield estate, which became one of the finest in Otago. In clearing it of wild cattle, he had to go to a great expense felling timber to construct a long lead to round them up. For many years he was a member of the local road board and of the Clutha river trust, and he also served on the Bruce county council. As an employer of labour he was exemplary and considerate. About 1900 Smith retired from the active management of his estate to live in Dunedin. He died on 18 Nov 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Parltry Record*; John Wilson; M'ndoe; J. A. Thomson; Hocken; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Nov 1903 (p); *Evening Star*, 23 Mar 1898.

SMITH, JOHN (1836-97) was born at Grantown, Scotland, emigrated to Victoria in the late fifties, and to Otago at the time of the

## SMITH

Dunstan rush (1862). After participating in the excitement of the diggings, he carried on a business at Waikouaiti as watchmaker and jeweller until the inauguration of the Waikouaiti county council, of which he became clerk. He was four times mayor of Hawkesbury and represented Waikouaiti in the Otago Provincial Council (1871-73). He died on 9 Jul 1897.

*Otago Daily Times*, 3 Aug 1897.

SMITH, JOHN ALEXANDER (1813-89) came to New Zealand about 1850; spent a few years in Auckland and was an early settler in Hawkes Bay. He was in business as a merchant and took a leading part in local government. He represented Napier Town in the Provincial Council (1863-67) and Suburban South (1875); was a member of the first Napier harbour board (1875) and was afterwards on the hospital and charitable aid board. He died on 13 Jun 1889.

*Parltry Record; Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc; Hawkes Bay Herald*, 14 Jun 1889. Portrait: Napier Hospital.

SMITH, JOHN GIBSON (1862-1933) was born at Kilmarnock, Scotland, and educated at King's College, Aberdeen, and the Edinburgh United Presbyterian hall. In 1887 he came to New Zealand, and he was for seven years in charge of St Stephen's, Dunedin, for nine years at First Church, Invercargill, and for 14 years at St Andrew's church, Wellington. Retiring owing to indifferent health, he was appointed to the Eastbourne church, where he laboured for 16 years. Smith was an eloquent preacher, and was the author of *Christ and the Cross* and a theological poem *Eden and After*. He married a sister of the Rev James Gibb, and died on 23 Apr 1933. A son, DAVID STANLEY SMITH (1888-) became a judge of the Supreme Court.

*The Dominion*, 23 Apr 1933.

SMITH, JOHN VALENTINE (1824-95) was born at Malta, his father being engaged under the Admiralty there. Educated at an English public school, he came to New Zealand in the late forties and about 1850 took up the Lansdowne property near Masterton. He represented Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay in Parliament (1855-58) and took a vigorous part in the demand for separation for the new province of Hawkes Bay. He was a justice of the peace and an enthusiastic volunteer officer, being captain

## SMITH

of the Masterton Rifles in 1863. He was also connected with the Mataikona and Annedale runs, near Castlepoint. About 1883 Smith left Wairarapa to live in Patea, where he died on 10 Feb 1895. (See G. H. SMITH).

*NZP.D.*, 1855-58; *N.Z. Times*, 13 Feb 1895.

SMITH, SAMUEL HAGUE (1840-1917) was born at Grantham, Lincolnshire, and came to Auckland in the *Matoaka* in 1859. He was in business with his brother as hardware merchants, but on the outbreak of the Thames goldfields he acquired two steamers, the *Duke of Edinburgh* and the *Prince Alfred*, to maintain a service with Auckland. He represented Newton in the Provincial Council in 1870, and shortly afterwards left for Sydney as the representative of the New Zealand Insurance Co. He was manager of the Colonial Mutual Fire Insurance Co. there when he died in 1917.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*, 1870; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Jul 1917; *Auckland Star*, 3 Jul 1917.

SMITH, STEPHENSON PERCY (1840-1922) was born in Suffolk and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Pekin* at the age of 9. Leaving the ship at Wellington, his father walked and rode to New Plymouth, and in 1850 took the son there. Having completed his education, Smith in 1855 became a government survey cadet under Octavius Carrington. In 1857 he was appointed an assistant surveyor and in 1859 surveyor to the Native Land Purchase department. While still in his teens, he walked with three other young men from New Plymouth to Taupo, Rotomahana and Tarawera, thence down the Rangitikei and back to Taranaki by the coast. In 1857 he climbed Mount Egmont, and in the early troubles in Taranaki he served in the militia (1857) and was a witness of the fighting at Waitara on 10 Mar 1858. In 1860 his family's home was burned by hostile natives. He was then in Auckland province, and he was sent on a hazardous errand by foot and canoe to summon help from friendly tribes at Kaipara (the Ngati-Whatua) for the defence of Auckland. In the early sixties he was cutting the boundaries of native blocks at Coromandel and Tokatea, and he was engaged on military settlement surveys in lower Waikato. In 1863 he married Mary Ann, daughter of W. M. Crompton (q.v.). In 1865 Smith was stationed at New Plymouth,

## SMITH

and in 1866-67 at Patea, where the surveyors were armed and took part in the engagements at Pokaikai and Manutahi.

In 1868-69 he carried out a trigonometrical survey of the Chatham islands, and was there when Te Kooti escaped in the *Rifleman* to Poverty Bay. From his return to New Zealand Smith was engaged on the major triangulation of Auckland, Hawkes Bay and the north of Wellington province (1870-77). In 1871 he first made use of the steel band and chain measurement. In 1877 he was appointed as the first geodesical surveyor and chief surveyor in Auckland. In 1882 he became assistant surveyor-general, and in 1888 assumed also the position of commissioner of crown lands. In 1886, three days after the Tarawera eruption, Smith commenced a topographical survey of the region, in the course of which he descended the crater to a depth of 500 feet. In 1887 he assisted Captain Fairchild in taking possession of the Kermadec islands, on which he made an official report. In 1889 he became Surveyor-general and Secretary for Crown Lands, a position which he held until his retirement in 1900.

Smith was much more than a mere surveyor. He was interested in botany, conchology and geology, and had some scientific knowledge of all. Throughout his career he made explorations and wrote reports of considerable value. He first applied Gale's system of co-ordinating traverses in 1862. In 1864 he used solar observations to check bearings. While at the Chathams in 1868 he observed the local effect of the earthquake at Iquique, in Chile. His *magnum opus* professionally was the triangulation of the greater part of the North Island, of which he supervised the portion from Mangonui to the Manawatu gorge and Ruapehu to Gisborne. After retiring, Smith was sent to Niue (1901) to establish a system of government suitable for the natives and to draft a constitution.

Thereafter he devoted his time to a careful study of Maori and Polynesian history, and founded the Polynesian Society (of which he was president). In 1898 he published the first edition of his *Hawaiki; the Whence of the Maori*, in 1904 *The Wars of the Northern Maori against the Southern Tribes of New Zealand during the Nineteenth Century*, and in 1910 he published in book form his contributions to the

## SMITH

Maori history of the Taranaki coast. He collaborated with Tregear in his grammar and vocabulary of the Niue language (1907). Smith was awarded the Hector medal of the New Zealand Institute in recognition of his research work. He was a governor of the New Plymouth High School, a member of the Mokau river board, the New Plymouth recreation ground board and the Mt Egmont national park board. He died on 19 Apr 1922.

M. Crompton Smith, *A Pioneer Surveyor*, 1924; J. Cowan in *NZ. Railways Magazine*, 1 Oct 1935; Jourdain; Baker; Cowan ii, p. 516; *Polyn. Jollr.*, v 31; *N.Z. Surveyor*, Dec 1900.

SMITH, WILLIAM (1814-99) was born at Glentanner, Aberdeenshire, and was for 14 years employed by the Aberdeen harbour board before coming to New Zealand in the *Larkins* in 1849. He was an elder of First Church. In 1853 he took up a farm at Kuri Bush, and he represented the Western District in the Otago Provincial Council (1853-55). About 1857 he moved to north Clutha, but he afterwards returned and lived for many years in Dunedin. He died on 13 Jan 1899.

*Otago Daily Times*, 16 Jan 1899.

SMITH, WILLIAM COWPER (1843-1911) was born in London, educated at the Royal Grammar School at High Barnet, and came to New Zealand in the *Egmont* (1862). He served through the Waikato war in the 1st Waikato Regiment, and in 1872 started business in Waipawa. A few years later he was a member of the Waipukurau road board (1877-95), and for 14 years chairman. He was a member of the Waipawa county council (1879-95) and chairman (1886-95); a member of the Waipawa hospital board (1880-95) and chairman (1886-94). In 1881 (defeating Ormond) he was elected to the House of Representatives for Waipawa; in 1887 for Woodville, and in 1890 for Waipawa, sitting continuously to 1893, when he retired. He was Government whip under the Ballance ministry (1891-93). In 1895 Smith was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat until his death (on 5 Mar 1911). He was chairman of committees 1902-03, 1905-06, and 1907-08. Smith moved in 1882 to increase the wages of railway servants. He several times carried a proposal to vote £6,000 a year to public lib-

## SMITH

raries, and he moved the lease-in-perpetuity clause in the land act.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jul 1911; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.* vi (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 4 May 1926.

SMITH, WILLIAM MEIN (1798-1869) was born at Capetown, the son of William Proctor Smith, of the Admiralty. He joined the army as a cadet in 1813 and was promoted as follows: Second-lieutenant, Royal Artillery 1822; first lieutenant 1827; second captain 1839. While serving in Canada he married (in 1828) Louisa, daughter of General Basgrave Wallace. He served later at Woolwich and Gibraltar.

Smith was a capable artist and made many sketches while serving in Gibraltar, besides collecting shells for the Geographical Society. In 1833 he was appointed master of plan-drawing at Woolwich, and he was still employed as a professor at the Royal Military Academy when he was appointed surveyor-general to the New Zealand Company (1839). He sailed in the *Cuba* with three surveyors (Carrington, Park and Stokes) and arrived at Port Nicholson on 3 Jan 1840. Having examined Lambton harbour, Smith preferred the Petone site (where he had been instructed to survey for a town), because there was ample room. This decision was reversed in consequence of a flood at Petone. He commenced accordingly to survey a town site at Thorndon, and submitted plans on 20 Jui.

Smith was a member of the provisional committee at Wellington for maintaining order (18 Apr 1840). In Aug 1841 he was gazetted a magistrate of the territory, and in Sep he proceeded to Wanganui to superintend the selection of lands there. He retired on half-pay (1842) and sold his commission (1843). After the termination of his appointment Colonel Wakefield sent him to report on the harbours of the South Island. He afterwards partly surveyed the Wairarapa and laid out the town of Featherston. In the native hostilities of 1845 Smith was captain of the Thorndon militia district, and he had command of a battery of three guns on Clay point. Later, with S. Revans, he took up Huangarua station in south Wairarapa, which they worked together until 1869. Smith was a member of the Legislative Council of New Zealand in 1851, and in 1858 he was elected to represent Wairarapa in the

## SNODGRASS

Wellington Provincial Council, from which he retired in 1865.

He was a scholarly gentleman of simple tastes, quiet and unobtrusive and keenly interested in mathematics, art and natural science. He died on 3 Jan 1869.

W.O., list of R.A. Officers, and 42-42-322; *N.Z.C.*, 1840-43, 1849. 1850; Bidwill; E. J. Wakefield; Ward; Marais; W. Lawrence (information); *Wellington Independent*, 5 Jan 1869.

SNELL, ROBERT (1832-1908) was born in Devonshire and came to New Zealand in the early sixties, settling in Taranaki. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell (1866-69) and took a great interest in radical politics. He died at Hawera on 9 Jun 1908.

*Taranaki Herald*, 10 Jun 1908.

SNELSON, GEORGE MATTHEW (1837-1901) was born at Ashby de la Zouch, Leicestershire, educated there and brought up to the ironmongery trade. He landed in Wellington in 1861, and spent 10 years in the employ of E. W. Mills and Co. Then he settled in Palmerston North as an auctioneer and commission agent. He was the first chairman of the Manawatu road board and first mayor of Palmerston North (1877-80); and was again mayor in 1889-92 and 1901; two years a member of the county council and chairman of the hospital board, and five years on the Wanganui education board. Snelson was a leading freemason and oddfellow, and was the first captain of the Palmerston North Rifles. He twice stood for parliament. He married (1865) a daughter of Henry Buck (Wellington), and died on 31 Oct 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Manawatu Standard*, 1 Nov 1901.

SNODGRASS, WILLIAM WALLACE (1870-1939), who was born in Liverpool, arrived in New Zealand in 1880 with his parents, who settled in Nelson. On leaving school he joined his father's firm, R. Snodgrass and Son, merchants. In public life he was elected a member of the Nelson City Council (serving as mayor for four years, 1917-21), and of the harbour board. During the war of 1914-18 he was closely associated with Nelson patriotic societies. (M.B.E., 1919.) He was also a president of the chamber of commerce and a trustee of St Andrew's orph-

## SOLOMON

anage and of the Methodist Church. From 1921 until his death (on 20 Mar 1939) Snodgrass was a member of the Legislative Council. In 1894 he married Annie, daughter of Walter Frankham.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 21 Mar 1939.

SOLOMON, SAUL (1857-1937), the son of Abraham Solomon (sometime chairman of the Dunedin benevolent trustees), was born in Melbourne and came to Dunedin with his parents in 1861. He was educated at the old Stone School (afterwards Union street) and at Albany street (where Stout was teaching). A bright, studious pupil, he won a scholarship at the Otago Boys' High School, where in 1871 he tied for dux with A. J. Park and E. H. Wilmot. He won a junior University scholarship when too young to hold it and, proceeding to the University in 1872, had a brilliant career. In one year he gained senior scholarships in four subjects out of seven. He graduated B.A. in 1877, the second graduate of Otago University (the first being P. S. Hay 1876).

Solomon then took up the study of medicine, but after about a year decided to read law and was articled to the firm of Sievwright and Stout, in which he became head of the common law branch (Mondy being head of the conveyancing). He was admitted to the bar in 1879, and in 1883 commenced to practise for himself. Great ability and thoroughness, and a remarkable faculty for concentration quickly took him to a foremost place in the profession. He acted as counsel before important royal commissions; defended many criminals, including Carl Matson (charged with murder of his wife in 1896); and acted in celebrated libel actions (notably against *The Globe* 1893 and for W. F. Massey against the *New Zealand Times*). He also acted for the liquidator of the J. G. Ward Farmers Co. He was one of the first King's Counsel appointed in New Zealand (1907). He retired from the bar some years before his death. Solomon had many useful activities in public life. In 1907 he entered the Mornington borough council, and later was mayor (1912-13). He was chairman of the hospital trustees (1907-08). He was a keen horticulturist and was for some years president of the Dunedin society. He was an active member of the Dunedin Dramatic club,

## SOMES

president of the Amateur Boating club and second president of Dunedin Rotary. On the turf Solomon had a successful career. He became a member of the committee of the Dunedin J.C. in 1896 and was vice-president 1899-1904. Amongst the horses that he owned were the St Clair gelding Blazer (who won £4,336 in stakes), Beadonwell and Britomarte. He also drove a crack team in double harness.

Solomon married Clara Mongredien, a well-known amateur singer. He died on 29 Jun 1937.

*Otago Daily Times*, 30 Jun 1937.

SOMES, JOSEPH (1787-1845) was born of a family of Thames watermen and lightermen. His father, Samuel Somes, married the daughter of a coal meter and became himself a coal merchant. His mother was a woman of strong character and through his ancestor, Dr Thomas Dover (the 'quicksilver doctor'), who fitted out several privateers, he seems to have inherited some of the spirit of maritime enterprise. Somes was apprenticed to his father as a lighterman, and was associated with him later when he owned ships. One of these, the *Samuel and Sarah*, which was engaged carrying troops to North America, was captured by the U.S. frigate *Essex*.

Joseph married in 1811 Mary Ann, daughter of Thomas Daplyn, of Stepney. He soon engaged in shipping ventures, his fust success being in the chartering of ships belonging to the East India Company. When the Company's fleet was broken up, he bought some of the best ships, paying £13,950 for the *Lowther Castle*, and £10,700 for the *Earl of Balcarres*. He carried on prosperously in the East India trade for some years, owning amongst others the *Thomas Coutts*, *Java*, *Peeress*, *Merchantman*, *Star of India*, *Tyburnia*, *Europe*, *Eastern Monarch*, *Canning*, *Maria Somes*, *Dartmouth* and *Salisbury*. He was one of the promoters of *Lloyd's Register*, and appears in the first issue as the largest individual shipowner in England. Later he acquired two or three fast tea clippers, including the *Silver Eagle* and the *Leander*; and he even engaged in whaling in the South Seas, the *Perseverance* having been owned by him. He was one of the first directors of the New Zealand Company (1838), and in 1839 he sold to the Company the barque *Tory* and at his own

expense fitted out the *Cuba*. He later became governor on the death of Lord Durham (1840), and carried through much of the delicate correspondence with the British Government.

Somes was elected in 1844 M.P. for Dartmouth, and confirmed in the seat after an attempt to disqualify him as a government contractor. His wife having died (1835), he married secondly Maria, daughter of Charles Saxton. She established the Somes Foundation at Christ's College (1850). Somes died on 25 Jun 1845. *The Times* remarked of him: 'In the city he was very highly esteemed, and naturally enjoyed the great influence which arose from high character and ample capital.' His widow died on 26 Jul 1911.

Family information from Sir Thomas Colyer-Fergusson, D.L.; N.Z.C. papers in N.Z. Archives and printed reports; G.B.O.P., 1842/569, 1843/323, 1844/556; Marais; Harrop, *England and New Zealand*; C. Fox-Smith, *Ship Alley* (1925); *N.Z. Journal*, 5 Jul 1845; *Christ's Coll. Reg.*; *The Times*, 26 Jun 1845. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

SOMMERVILLE, JOE REGINALD (1843-1910) was born in county Armagh, Ireland, and came to New Zealand with his father (a private in the 65th Regiment), who settled at Turakina and aftenvards at No. 2 Line. The son was educated privately and at the Wanganui state school. He eventually farmed at No. 2 line until his death. In 1859 Sommerville joined the Wanganui Cavalry (Cameron's Yeomanry) with which he served through the Maori troubles. He got his first commission in the Prince Alfred Rifles 1868. (Cornet, Alexandra Cavalry 1877; lieutenant 1881; captain 1884; major, commanding Wellington Mounted Rifles 1895; lieutenant-colonel 1899.) He commanded the 4th New Zealand Contingent to South Africa (1900), and later was second-in-command of the 5th, joining the brigade staff (Nov 1900). In 1904 he retired as colonel.

Sommerville was an ardent advocate of rifle shooting and for many years was the mainstay of the New Zealand Rifle association, of which he was president (1885-1903) and chief executive officer during the years when it languished before being taken over by the Government. He commanded the New Zealand teams to Bislely in 1897 and 1902, and was instrumental in the establishment of the Trentham range. Som-

merville also took a prominent part in local government. He was a member of the Wanganui highway board (1874), chairman of the Wanganui county council (1877-84) and the harbour board (1878-84), a member of the Parua road board (1901-07) and of the hospital board, and a justice of the peace (1881). He contested the Rangitikei seat in Parliament in 1905. He was first superintendent of the Veterans' Home in Auckland. Sommerville married (1869), Jane, daughter of T. D. Jones (Wales). He died on 23 Dec 1910.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Wanganui Herald*, 23 Dec 1910.

SOUTHEY, HERBERT (1854-1923) was for many years farming and sawmilling in Taranaki, where he was connected with most local governing bodies. On moving to Tauranga he became a member of the borough council, chairman of the county council and a member of the harbour board and the hospital board (some years chairman). He took an interest in acclimatisation and was secretary of the local society. Southey was a descendant of the poet laureate (Thomas Southey) and himself published some verse. He died on 13 Jul 1923.

*N.Z. Herald*, 14 Jul 1923.

SOUTHWELL, CHARLES (1814-60), edited a freethought organ, *The Oracle Of Reason*, in England and suffered a year's imprisonment for an article which was held to be blasphemous. He then came to New Zealand and was a pioneer of free thought in the Colony (1856). He edited the *Auckland Examiner* from 1856 until three weeks before his death (on 7 Aug 1860). On 4 Oct the paper resumed with a new editor and publisher.

H. H. Pearce (information); Scholefield, *Union Catalogue*; *Auckland Examiner*, 1856-60.

SPAIN, WILLIAM (1803-76) was born at Cowes, Isle of Wight, and trained for a legal career. He practised for a time, and as a supporter of the Liberal party was active during the passing of the Reform Bill, and worked as central secretary for Hampshire. For two years he served on the New Zealand committee; and in 1841 he was appointed by Lord John Russell to investigate land titles and claims in the Colony. He left for New Zealand in the *Prince Rupert* which being wrecked in Brazil he con-

tinued his passage in the *Antilla*. In spite of his best efforts to secure a just settlement, his decisions unavoidably led to dissatisfaction and disputes, and the failure to enforce some of them led ultimately to war. In 1845 he went to Sydney, where he practised until 1861. Spain was appointed by Sir Charles FitzRoy's government first Inspector-general of Police, and was a nominee member of the legislature. Retiring to the suburb of Waverley he died on 5 Apr 1876. His wife was a daughter of Sir Henry White.

G.B.O.P., 1846/203; *Hist. Rec. Aust.*, series I, vol. xxvi; Mennell; Clarke; *Sydney Morning Herald*, 7 Apr 1876; *Evening Post*, 6 Jun 1933.

SPEIGHT, WILLIAM JAMES (1843-1919) was born in Dublin and educated at the Bluecoat school there. After serving his apprenticeship with his father as a mechanical engineer, he came to New Zealand in the *Maori* (1865), and for some years worked as an engineer at Thames. He then conducted the *Thames Advertiser*. He was on the borough council for 18 years and on the ScLOOI committee. In 1879 he stood as a Liberal for Auckland East and was elected, but standing for Thames in 1881 he was defeated by Sheehan, and in 1884 by Colonel Fraser. In 1886 he became district manager in Auckland for the Government Life Insurance department, and held the office until 1911, when he resigned to contest the Eden seat against Bollard. In Auckland he was secretary of the diocesan trust board (1913) and a governor of the Grammar School. Speight was one of the promoters of the Pacific Club. He was a strong advocate of temperance. He married (1872) a daughter of Isaac Speight (Parrell). His death occurred on 24 Apr 1919.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1919; *NZ. Herald*, 25 Apr 1919. Portrait: Parliament House.

SPENCER, WILLIAM ISAAC (1832-97), the third mayor of Napier, was born at Glossop, Derbyshire, the son of a Congregational minister. He attended various schools in his father's circuits: and was apprenticed to a practising physician. He studied medicine at University College, London, qualifying as L.R.C.P. and M.R.C.S. At the age of 25 he entered the army as a staff-surgeon and saw something of the demobilisation after the Crimean war. In May

1858 he was appointed to the 18th (Royal Irish) Regiment, with which he came to New Zealand (1863). He served through the Maori war in Waikato and Wanganui and was mentioned for services at Orakau. As an amateur photographer, he rendered great service to the staff. While stationed at Wanganui he married Anna, daughter of Major Heatly.

In response to suggestions from residents of Hawkes Bay Spencer retired from the army (1879) and practised in Napier, where he had the reputation of a skilful surgeon. He took an active part in public life, and during his term as mayor of Napier (1882-85) steps were taken to construct a harbour. Spencer kept himself abreast of scientific developments and gave many public lectures, especially on microscopical research in the plant and animal life. Several fresh-water algae bear his name. He contributed many papers to the Napier Philosophical Society (of which he was president). In 1887 he was elected F.L.S. He died on 22 Jun 1897.

A daughter, ANNA JEROME SPENCER (C.B.E., 1937), was principal of the Napier Girls' High School, and after her retirement organised the Women's Institutes in New Zealand.

War Office; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; family information. Portrait: *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 22 Nov 1924.

SPINKS, WILLIAM, arrived in Wellington by the *U'sula* (1843). He was a man of some education, and was on the committee of the Mechanics' Institute (1848). He represented Wellington City in the Provincial Council (1861-64). Spinks was the first wharfinger at the Queen's wharf.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z.C.*; Ward.

SPRAGG, WESLEY (1848-1930) was born in Madeley, Shropshire, a son of Charles Spragg (1819-90), an Auckland pioneer, and was educated at the local Wesleyan school. With his parents he arrived in New Zealand in 1863 by the *Ulcoates*. He took part in the Thames gold rush. In 1886, in partnership with J. C. Lovell and Christmas, he established the New Zealand Dairy association, building their first factory at Pukekohe. The business, which was very successful, was sold in 1901 to the dairy farmers as a co-operative concern, Spragg being appointed manager. He was a member of the Congregational church, and a strong believer in temperance and supporter of the New Zea-

land Alliance. Before his death (on 15 Aug 1930), he made several gifts of natural bush land to the citizens of Auckland.

His brother, SILAS SPRAGG (1853-1935) was chief reporter of the *Otago Daily Times* for many years and of the *Hansard* staff from 1900 to 1924.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p) ; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Philpott; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Aug 1930.

STACK, JAMES (1801-83) was born at South-sea, the fourth son of John Stack, and was descended from a Danish family which settled in South Wales and afterwards in Kerry. Sent out to New South Wales by his father, James was unable to make a living on the land and took a position in a merchant's office in Sydney. There he met Marsden, and in 1823 he volunteered for service in the Wesleyan mission in New Zealand under Samuel Leigh. He was the only member of the mission at Wesleydale who understood the Maori language. When the station was raided by hostile Maori (1827) Stack with one man walked to Kerikeri for help and returned at once. He went to Sydney with the other members of the mission, but soon returned to New Zealand and under promise of protection from Patuone he chose Mangungu for the re-establishment of the mission by Mr and Mrs Hobbs (1827).

In 1831 Stack visited England with a view to taking holy orders, but accepted lay service under the Church Missionary Society. He married Mary West (1833) and sailed for the colonies in the *Royal Sovereign*. He was appointed to the station at Mangapouri, at the junction of the Waipa and the Puniu, under the Rev James Hamlin, and Mrs Stack took charge of the girls' school. There the first child (James West Stack, q.v.) was born. The threatening conduct of Awarahi caused them to remove to Bay of Islands, where they remained until Nov 1837, when they went to a new station at Tauranga. While there Stack assisted Bidwill and Dieffenbach (q.v.) in their explorations in the interior, and in 1842 he went to East Cape as locum tenens for William Williams. Persevering in the midst of turbulent tribes, Stack reported at the end of 1844 that 344 of his natives could read the Scriptures. In 1846 he took over also the duties of Kissling's station at Hicks Bay, but his health broke down

under the strain and anxiety and in 1847 he went to England. Mrs Stack died in 1850 and Stack worked in connection with the Wesleyan Church in various capacities. In his later years he ministered to the navvies and dock labourers at his native Portsmouth, where he died on 18 Apr 1883.

Stack was a stern Calvinist, and as a preacher almost fanatical. In later life he lived in considerable poverty, bathed in the sea every morning and held open-air services for sailors.

Carleton; Stack, *More Adventures*.

STACK, JAMES WEST (1835-1919) was born at Puriri, Thames, and received his education first at St John's College, Auckland, and from 1846 at Sydney College. In 1848 he went to England, where he attended a commercial school and was confirmed by the Bishop of London. In 1849 he was appointed a junior clerk in the Church Missionary Society. He was accepted to train as a schoolmaster and spent a year at Highbury Training College under Dr Ryan, afterwards Bishop of Mauritius.

While in London Stack became acquainted (1854) with Archdeacon William Williams and Tamihana te Rauparaha (q.v.), with whom he returned to New Zealand in the *Slains Castle* (Aug 1852). In 1854 he became a catechist, and with Volkner joined the Rev Robert Maunsell at Waikato Heads. He did good service in the removal of that mission to Te Kohanga, nine miles up the river; in draining land and cultivating vegetables, and in the erection of the church. In 1859 Stack received an invitation from Bishop Harper to take charge of the Maori population in Canterbury. Though the salary was larger, he was reluctant to leave the Society's service; but it was eventually arranged. Williams accordingly ordained Volkner (q.v.) instead of him for the post at Opotiki. Stack was ordained by Harper in Dec 1860, and a few months later married Eliza, sister of Humphrey Jones, Commissary-general to the Forces in New Zealand. He visited the Waikato with Gorst to assist in the establishment of a school for native girls, and then settled at Tuahiwi, Canterbury, the headquarters of a district which extended as far as Stewart island. There he remained diligently engaged in his pastoral duties and his studies of Maori lore until 1870, when, his house having been burned down, he removed

to Christchurch. In 1880 he accepted the cure of Duvauchelles Bay. After visiting England (1884), he was appointed vicar of Kaiapoi, and two years later of St Barnabas, Fendalton.

Stack contributed many papers on Maori lore to the Philosophical Society, and published several books, including *The Sacking of Kaiapohia* and *The South Island Maoris; a Sketch of their History and Legendary Lore*. After 1898 he lived in Italy. He died 13 Oct 1919 at Worthing, England, and his wife on 2 Dec 1919.

Stack, *op. cit.*; *Adventw'es* and *More Adventures*.

STAFFORD, SIR EDWARD WILLIAM (1819-1901) was born at Edinburgh, the eldest son of Berkeley Buckingham Stafford, of Maine, county Louth, Ireland, and Anne, daughter of Lieut-colonel Duff Tytler. (Burke gives 1820 as the date of birth.) His mother's cousin was Patrick Fraser Tytler, at whose home in Edinburgh Stafford formed friendships and entered a cultured circle which widened his intellectual horizon and had a lifelong influence upon him.

Educated at Trinity College, Dublin (where he was first in Greek at matriculation), Stafford lived a country gentleman's life in Ireland for some years, riding to hounds regularly and racing his own horses. Cutts, the trainer, is said to have declared Stafford to be the best jockey in New Zealand and unsurpassed as a judge of horses. He won his first steeplechase at the age of 14, and with his two brothers (including Hugh, who died at Nelson in 1880) he was chosen to represent the Louth hunt in a match against the best three of Westmeath. Stafford was adept also at boxing, swimming, long-distance running and long jumping. After hunting with the Louth for one season he visited Australia, where he bought, trained and rode the winner of a steeplechase, judged thoroughbred stallions at the first show in Victoria, and helped to layout the old Flemington race-course. In New Zealand Stafford won many races, Springbok being his most famous jumper and Queen Bee on the flat. He rode his mare Symphony to victory sixteen times, and won the Canterbury and Nelson Derbies with Strop and Opera. At the Canterbury meeting in 1862 (when he was 43) he won the Canterbury Cup on Ultima. On the second day, riding the same mare, he was beaten by Revoke, and on the

third day he won two races in succession on Ultima.

Arriving in New Zealand just after the Wairau affray (1843) and settling in the province of Nelson, Stafford from the first took a prominent part in public affairs. With his relatives, the Tytlers, he took up land in that province and in Marlborough, and in 1844 he went to Tasmania and brought back sheep from Launceston. He made many journeys in Nelson and Canterbury provinces, and in 1847 accompanied Crawford and Clifford on a journey to the Wairarapa. Crawford was much impressed with his bump of locality. In 1846 he married Emily Charlotte (d. 1857), only daughter of Colonel W. H. Wakefield (q.v.). Stafford was active in the demand for self-government put forward by the Constitutional Association, and when the constitution was put into operation he was nominated for the superintendency of Nelson and elected on 1 Aug 1853. (Stafford 251; Saxton 206; Jollie 130). His administration of this office, without any precedent to follow, was unique. Under him Nelson observed forms and ceremonial for which few of the other provinces had any regard. He wore a cocked hat when opening the Council and sat covered to deliver his speech. For more than three years he directed the affairs of the province. In 1855 he resigned the superintendency to free himself from an undertaking not to stand for Parliament. He was re-elected unopposed on 29 Nov. Stafford had no experience at all of sitting in council, but with a revenue of less than £5,000 he accomplished an amazing amount of public works and made provision to educate every child in the province. Saunders pays a tribute to the efficiency and economy of his regime. The most noteworthy measures were the education ordinance (which was used as a model for other provinces and to some extent for the legislation of Parliament in the seventies), and a roads ordinance.

In 1855 Stafford was elected to represent the town of Nelson in Parliament, and he remained its member through various vicissitudes until 1868. His entry into Parliament presaged the close of his provincial career, for he became at once involved in the leadership of the House. When the new Parliament met on 7 May 1856 to put into operation the boon of responsible government, Sewell was invited to form a minis-

try. He asked Stafford to join him, but without success. Domett, Fox and Featherston also declined, and Sewell took office with Bell, Whitaker and Tancred. When he resigned a few weeks later Stafford refused to accept the responsibility of governing with an equally divided house, and Fox took office as a strong provincialist (20 May). The arrival of Travers, a new member who consistently voted against Fox, sealed his doom, and on 2 Jun Stafford became Premier. Carefully avoiding for the present the extremes of centralism and provincialism, using his facility with figures and finance prudently, Stafford soon drew to his side a working majority. Bound to some extent by the demands of territorial representation, he chose as his colleagues Sewell (Colonial Treasurer), Whitaker (Attorney-general), and C. W. Richmond (Colonial Secretary), with J. L. Campbell to represent the province of Auckland without portfolio. Stafford's knowledge of the world and of parliamentary experiments elsewhere was of great service. He was neither ambitious nor imaginative, but practical, solid and always active. The House, tired of party demonstrations, settled down to practical legislation and, led by a bevy of capable lawyers, compiled a very creditable statute book of 36 acts. Fox's series of resolutions; proposed on 14 May, under which the provinces were to retain two-thirds of their customs revenue, was for the time allowed to stand, and the financing of the government and the provinces was further provided for in Stafford's loan proposals, which involved the borrowing of £500,000 in England for a term of 30 years and a further £100,000 for immediate purposes, the provinces agreeing to share the responsibility for the loans. The customs act in general taxed luxuries and left free such imports as were necessary for development of the country or were difficult to assess. This done, the Treasurer (Sewell) left for England to raise the money, Richmond succeeding him at the Treasury, while Stafford became Colonial Secretary. He finally resigned the superintendency of Nelson in Oct 1856. In the session of 1858 Parliament considered 88 bills, most of which passed. The absence of almost half the members, through abstention of the southern provinces, enabled Stafford to carry his business 'with some despatch through an attenuated House which was little more than a committee.

He addressed himself especially to settle the rights of the provinces over their lands. The Home government objected to the provinces having full power to dispose of waste lands, since some of them had already given away large areas for inadequate payment, thus in its opinion reducing the security for the repayment of the loans which were being raised. Fearing the dominance of provincial superintendents in the General Government, and fully sympathising with the more isolated communities which complained of neglect in public expenditure, Stafford passed an act to enable new provinces to be formed by discontented localities which contained a certain quota of population and area of land. While he was still in office three such communities were erected into provinces (Hawkes Bay, 1858; Marlborough, 1859; Southland, 1860). The superintendents in new provinces had to be chosen by the councils (not by the electors) and their ordinances had to be submitted to the General Government for assent.

Meanwhile Stafford tried honestly to do something for the native race. That discontent was rife was evident from the wide support given by many tribes to the King movement, and the growing difficulty of purchasing land from the Maori for white settlement. With Richmond in the cabinet, Stafford was fully apprised of the needs of settlers in the province which was most hindered by native obstruction. Several generous measures were passed for extending civil government amongst the natives; but the King movement spread, land purchase was more strenuously resisted, and settlers working their holdings were continually being interfered with. Native affairs were withheld from the authority of Parliament and remained the responsibility of the Governor (Gore Browne) who had, however, to obtain the acquiescence of a responsible minister for any measures he might take. It was not until late in 1858 that a minister of native affairs was appointed. When Te Teira, a Ngati-Awa chief in Taranaki, offered to sell to the Government a piece of land at Waitara Gore Browne was advised that his title was good and accordingly proceeded with the purchase, despite the warning of Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake (q.v.) that he would oppose it. Stafford was absent in England when the crisis came and fighting broke out.

British troops were brought into the province to assert the crown's right to the land, and a pa at Waitara was captured (18 Mar 1860). The King's supporters sent help to Wi Kingi, and for the better part of a year fighting was intermittent and desultory. Most of the out-settlers in Taranaki were driven from their farms, and had to withdraw their families to New Plymouth, while the men did duty in the militia and volunteers. A truce was eventually agreed to on 21 May 1861.

After the session of 1858 Stafford spent some time prospecting for pastoral country in Nelson, Canterbury and Otago. He then left for England (early in 1859) to discuss plans for a Panama mail service and for the establishment of military settlements in New Zealand. Owing largely to a change of government in England, his mission was rather abortive, but he established a London agency (John Morrison) and made useful contacts with the Colonial Office and was able to neutralise some of the influence that had been exerted against the new provinces bill by Clifford and FitzGerald. Meanwhile Sewell had returned to New Zealand and resigned from the Ministry (26 Apr 1859), which had been strengthened by the addition of Tancred. Stafford was convinced that parliamentary government in New Zealand should follow the traditions of England and he strongly advised Richmond to discuss with Tancred and Whitaker the formation of a strong party, which he conceived the conditions of New Zealand demanded 'An avowed party, kept together by mutually agreeing views,' he wrote 'is as essential to the conduct of our form of government in New Zealand as it is universally admitted to be in England: Since his departure from New Zealand Stafford had felt uneasy about the insistence of the colonists on the acquisition of lands for settlement. He knew that thousands of emigrants were sailing for whom land must be found, and he wrote anxiously to Richmond impressing upon him the urgency of the matter and the inefficiency of the existing land purchase department, but warning him not to commit the Government to any new policy without careful consideration. No policy should be adopted, he said, unless it could be put into effect 'without injury to existing interests, native or European' (17 Aug 1859).

Having married (on 5 Dec 1859) Mary,

daughter of the Hon T. H. Bartley (q.v.), Stafford arrived back in the Colony in Jan 1860 to find to his dismay that the Government had been drawn into the war in Taranaki. It is generally supposed that he would have prevented the war if he had been on the spot, but in the circumstances he considered himself bound to support the policy of his colleagues, and he did in effect follow that policy until the war ended 10 years later. In theory the management of native affairs was in the hands of the Governor; in fact Gore Browne was dependent on the advice of his ministers, and Stafford could see no alternative to carrying out a policy which had gone thus far. Many of the highest-placed friends of the Maori (notably Sir William Martin, Bishop Selwyn, Swainson and Hadfield) believed that the war was unjust, but Stafford was generally held guiltless. Native policy was the subject of innumerable debates in the session of 1860 and Hadfield and Donald McLean (the land purchase officer) were examined at the bar of the House. On the native offenders bill the Government was only saved from defeat by the vote of the Speaker, and Stafford thereupon withdrew it, but he did pass (with some difficulty) a bill to restrain the sale of arms and ammunition to tribes which were arming to the teeth to resist the sale of land. When Stafford went to the country in the spring of 1860 he indicated that he would shortly be retiring from New Zealand public life. He was not a seeker after political honours. Writing from England in 1859 he had told Richmond he was willing for a variety of reasons to go out of office.

At the general election of 1860 he was returned for Nelson (Domett 193; Stafford 185; J. P. Robinson 149). The Government was still faced with the rising in Taranaki, now openly supported by the King natives. General Cameron having arrived to take command from Pratt, the terms offered to the rebels were made harsher. They had not been accepted when Parliament met (3 Jun 1861) and the Governor had threatened not only to compel peace in Taranaki, but to invade the Waikato and punish the King tribes who had sympathised with Wi Kingi. Anxious to have the approval of Parliament before taking such action, Gore Browne sent down a message, on his own responsibility as the representative of the Queen.

asking for full and cordial co-operation in men and money, failing which he was not prepared to instruct the general officer commanding to employ the Imperial forces. Stafford, in supporting the Governor's request, displayed an unusual amount of warmth and demanded to know whether Parliament was prepared to allow Europeans in New Zealand to be 'ruled, enslaved, tolerated or exterminated by a handful of uncivilised men.' Fox joined issue on general native policy, but the debate ended in the acceptance of a compromise suggested by Saunders adopting the forward policy without entirely closing the door to a settlement otherwise. Five days later Fox proposed a no-confidence resolution on the Government's native policy. The debate (3-5 Jul) was remarkable for the high tone of many of the speeches, and particularly that of Richmond, who was in effect the author of the policy which it was sought to condemn and which Stafford defended with all the sincerity he could have brought to the task if he had been himself the author of it. The Government was defeated by 24 votes to 23, and Stafford resigned office within an hour of the division (12 Jul 1861). The bleak prospect of success that confronted Fox, taking office at such a crisis, was providentially brightened by the receipt of a despatch from the Colonial Office intimating that Gore Browne was to be superseded by Sir George Grey. In a flush of sympathy for the retiring Governor, in which members on both sides of the House joined, Stafford proposed a resolution of no-confidence in the Government. The voting remained almost as before, Fox being successful by 26 votes to 25. Grey arrived on 26 Sep, and six days later Gore Browne left New Zealand with the warm regard of a great majority of its people.

Grey's assumption of office was followed by the decision to reopen the question of the Waitara purchase and to make reparation if it should appear that wrong had been done. In this atmosphere and in the confidence inspired by the mana of Grey, the truce in Taranaki continued for two years. Native affairs were again the rock upon which Fox was defeated. While working in general harmony with Grey, the Premier on 25 Jul 1862 proposed a resolution reaffirming previous decisions of the House that the ordinary conduct of native affairs should be placed under the administration of

responsible ministers. The resolution itself involved no conflict with the Governor, merely asserting the right of Parliament to have authority where it inevitably had responsibility. Featherston made one of the finest speeches of his career in support of the Government. The division was equal and the Speaker (Monro) gave his vote, contrary to convention, against the government in office. Fox accordingly resigned, and advised the Governor to send for Stafford. Unambitious for office, Stafford was definitely reluctant to assume the responsibility with a House so evenly divided. He suggested FitzGerald as a member generally well thought of and not involved so deeply in the controversies of the day. FitzGerald declined and suggested Domett, whose opinions ever since Wairau had been rather strongly anti-Maori. Domett took office accordingly on 6 Aug. It was Stafford's misfortune as a statesman that he happened to be absent in England during the year 1859, when momentous decisions had to be taken on native policy. He was now for four years in opposition, or a private member of Parliament (during the ministries of Fox, Domett and Weld, 1861-65). When next he intervened in a debate involving the existence of the government of the day he referred to Wiremu Kingi in a manner that did not suggest his guilt in the matter of the Taranaki war. Since then the Waikato war had been fought and a much more formidable Maori rising had now begun, that of the Hauhau.

When the session of 1865 opened (on 26 Jul) the Weld ministry did not appear to be in danger, but suddenly the Premier, who was in ill-health, wilted under the financial criticism of Vogel and resigned office (16 Oct). Stafford accepted without having chosen his team, and proceeded to select men to represent as far as possible all the large centres of population. He took office with only Haultain (Defence), A. H. Russell (Native Affairs) and Paterson (Postmaster-general) and was nearly a year in office before he enlisted other men of real talent. He knew that he had been sent for not because he was loved, but because he was needed for his commonsense and prudent management of public affairs. From the outset he did the lion's share of the work, being his own Colonial Secretary and Postmaster-general, and managing the accounts even to the arrangement of forms and

small details. Inheriting the legislative programme of Weld, he passed 72 out of 92 bills introduced. He desired peaceful relations with the natives, but believed they could only be arrived at through the vigorous prosecution of the war against both Kingites and Hauhau; and for this end he relied on Haultain and Russell (Native Affairs). After the election in 1866 of an enlarged House, Moorhouse moved a resolution of no-confidence in the ministry as then constituted. It was made clear, in spite of an adverse vote of 47 to 14, that the House was satisfied with Stafford's leadership but desired to see him make use of some of the talent which had been discarded when Weld went out of office. When Moorhouse was sent for to form a ministry he advised the Governor to that effect. Willing enough to fall in with the wishes of the House, Stafford took in Fitzherbert (Treasurer), Hall (Postmaster-general), J. C. Richmond and J. L. C. Richardson in the room of Jollie, Paterson and Russell (24 Aug 1866). Though the changes lightened his own burden considerably, their influence on the policy of the Government was noticeable and not altogether to the good. Stafford and Richmond declared themselves in favour of an elective legislative council (which Hall opposed). The severest critics of the Government were Vogel and FitzGerald (until the latter was appointed in 1867 controller of the public accounts). The provincialists now detected in Stafford the first symptoms of hostility to existing institutions, but they had no reason to complain of parsimony in his financial measures in 1867, whereby the General Government consolidated the loans of the provinces, to the great profit of the bondholders. The bill to grant the Maori race representation in Parliament was a graceful concession to loyal tribes, but did nothing to propitiate the disaffected, who held aloof for 30 years from enjoyment of their political rights.

Meanwhile fighting was almost continuous on the West Coast. After 1866 Stafford did not have a Minister of Native Affairs, but he had (in J. C. Richmond) a minister who threw extraordinary energy into the management of this difficult side of the Government's task. He spent many weeks in the field with the troops, hurrying from point to point and devoting his sympathy to composing native disputes and his ingenuity to outwitting the skilful Maori leaders

in the field. Stafford's term of office was one of the most anxious periods in Maori administration. Coming into power just after the murder of Volkner, with Titokowaru's rising in full spate on the West Coast, Stafford saw the trouble spread to all the provinces, through Te Kooti's escape from the Chatham Islands and the ravaging of Poverty Bay. Yet he proceeded courageously and firmly on the path of self-reliance marked by Weld. He had no desire to remain in office, and when it was known that Fox was about to return to New Zealand he offered to vacate his seat for Nelson to enable Fox to re-enter Parliament. Sir George Bowen arriving to assume the governorship in Feb 1868, Stafford advised him to extend the royal pardon to some of the leading Maori chiefs who had not been guilty of murder. Parliament had just assembled (9 Jul), when Te Kooti landed in Poverty Bay and opened one of the darkest chapters of Maori history. Meanwhile in the political field the provincial dispute began to take shape. Stafford was now recognised as a centralist, and Fox as the ardent champion of the provinces. After the session Stafford resigned the Nelson seat (Nov 1868) and was at once elected unopposed for Timaru. He paid a visit with Bowen to the disturbed districts, and had the satisfaction of hearing the Governor win over some of the wavering chiefs at Wanganui to the Queen's side. The massacre at White Cliffs followed within a few weeks. The dismissal of McLean from the office of Secretary for Native Affairs and government agent on the East Coast weakened the Government's native policy and laid Stafford open to the concerted assaults of Fox and McLean in the forthcoming session of Parliament. In Jun 1869, when the energetic Whitmore had practically brought the war to an end, Fox and McLean moved a resolution of no-confidence in the native policy of the Government. After a debate which lasted for two weeks the motion was carried by 40 votes to 29, and Stafford went gladly out of office. He had been Premier for nearly 10 years out of the 13 years in which New Zealand had enjoyed responsible government.

Stafford had no further ambitions in public life and, having bought the Landsdown property, on the Halswell river, in Canterbury, he was glad to retire there and devote his time to horses and intellectual pursuits, merely doing

his duty as a private member of Parliament each session. Fox offered him a seat in his ministry which he declined, and when Vogel returned to the country he allowed himself to be elected leader of the reorganised opposition party and eventually to initiate the no-confidence debate on the immigration and public works policy which terminated in the carrying of three hostile resolutions (by 40 to 37; 39 to 38; and 40 to 36). When Fox resigned office (on 6 Nov 1872) Stafford very reluctantly agreed to form a ministry. The available material in opposition was not promising, and McLean's determination never again to work with him was fatal to his success. Thus was presented the strange spectacle of a centralist leader coming into office with three provincial superintendents (Fitzherbert, Gillies and Curtis) and one provincial secretary (D. Reid) in his cabinet. It was one of the weakest governments New Zealand had seen. With no native or defence minister, and a majority in the House of only three, Stafford could only adopt Fox's bills and carry on with the legislative work of the session. On 4 Oct Vogel moved a resolution of no-confidence, which was carried by 37 votes to 35, and Stafford asked for a dissolution, which Bowen courteously refused. He accordingly resigned (11 Oct 1872) without making any recommendation as to his successor.

Thus Vogel was entrusted with the task of forming a government. As he intended to visit England he offered the premiership to Stafford. Stafford of course refused, but strongly advised Vogel to remain in New Zealand at such a juncture to meet the blame or reap the reward of his policy. Vogel left nevertheless (with T. Russell) and Stafford retired to his new home in Canterbury. Having been promised the post of Agent-general when it should become vacant, he continued to represent Timaru until retiring from public life (Mar 1878) to live in England. There his family was educated, and he engaged in financial undertakings. He was offered the governorship of Queensland and of Madras, but declined. In 1879 he was created K.C.M.G. In 1886 he was a commissioner for the Indian and Colonial Exhibition, and in the following year he was promoted to G.C.M.G. He died on 14 Feb 1901.

Stafford's constitutional aims were high, his knowledge wide, and he was a consistent advo-

cate of national education and of democratic political devices such as the ballot. He was a prudent, painstaking and industrious administrator, who consistently overworked himself. He was more concerned with compiling a statute book of useful and efficient laws than with adventurous or experimental politics. His political ambitions, Saunders says, were honourable, his practical training of a high order and he showed inflexible honesty of purpose. As a moralist he was below Fox and Hall; as a practical economist he was second only to Hall; but as a political legislator and organiser New Zealand never saw his equal in power. There was, however, according to Saunders, an entire want of social magnetism and abiding faith in great guiding principles. Gisborne considered him lacking in suavity of manner and apt to talk too much, but with a large reserve of genuine public worth. His talents were well proportioned to each other; he had a well-balanced mind, was cautious without timidity, bold without rashness, self-confident without jealousy of others, and not unwilling to take good advice; fond of personal power, but careful to use it legitimately, and discriminating in the choice of colleagues and public servants. His politics were characterised by moderation, and he would have done good service in adjusting the relations of the provinces to the Colony if he had had a clear field. Stafford himself admitted that he had instigated Vogel to bring forward his resolutions on 13 Aug 1874 aiming at the abolition of the provincial system.

*App. H.R.* (notably 1865, L.C., no. 3, 1879 A, p. 9); *Nelson P.C. Pmc. and Gaz.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, pass; Saunders (p); Rusden (p); Reeves; E. Wakefield, *Stafford*; Acland; Lovat; Broad; Mennell; Cox; Arnold; Bowen; Crawford; *Col. Gent*; *D.N.B.*; *The Times*, 15 Feb 1901; *N.Z. Times*, 21 Aug 1875, 1 Mar 1901; *The Press*, 16 Feb 1901; *Lyttelton Times*, 2 Apr 1874, 16 Feb 1901; *N.Z. Herald*, 30 Mar 1901; *The Sportsman*, Feb 1901. Portrait: Parliament House.

**STAINES, GEORGE** (1823-1905), a native of England, arrived in Auckland in 1862 and carried on business as a secondhand dealer. He represented Auckland West in the Provincial Council (1868-69); was a member of the Auckland City board (1868) and of the City Council (1871). Staines was always associated with the advanced side of politics and was called the

•people's champion: and •the poor man's friend.' He died on 24 Apr 1905.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Auckland Star*, 25 Apr 1905.

**STALLWORTHY, JOHN** (1854-1923), a son of the Rev George Stallworthy, was born in Samoa and educated at the Blackheath school in London. He came to New Zealand in the *City of Auckland* (1872), was employed for a while in a sawmill at Whangaroa, and then teaching under the Auckland education board, at Newmarket (1880) and Aratapu (1884). He established the *Amtapu Gazette* (1884) and in 1890 retired from teaching to enter journalism. Besides conducting the *Aratapu Gazette* he acquired the *Te Kōpuru Bell* (afterwards the *Wairoa Bell*). Stallworthy was the first chairman of the northern Wairoa hospital board, was a member of the Auckland education board from 1903; and local president and a member of the executive of the Farmers' union. He was postmaster at Aratapu, formed a branch there of the Knights of Labour, and was president of the timber workers' union. A strong Liberal, he contested the Kaipara seat against A. E. Harding in 1902. He was elected to Parliament in 1905 and again in 1908, and was defeated by J. G. Coates in 1911. Stallworthy was a Methodist local preacher. He died on 10 Nov 1923.

His son, ARTHUR JOHN STALLWORTHY (1877-) was M.P. for Eden (1928-35), and Minister of Health (1928-31).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Jul 1924; *N.Z. Herald*, 12 Nov 1923.

**STANDISH, ARTHUR** (1838-1915) was born at Pontefract, Yorkshire, and came to Taranaki with his parents. Receiving his education in New Plymouth, he studied law with Merriman and Jackson (Auckland) and was admitted to the bar. He served in the Taranaki volunteers during the war, and continued in the militia until peace came, when he retired as a captain. He commenced practice in New Plymouth in 1861, and two years later was appointed crown solicitor. He married (1868) a daughter (d. 1929) of the Rev H. Brown.

In 1873 Standish became a member of the Provincial Council and a few months later he joined the executive, in which he had as colleagues T. Kelly and H. A. Atkinson. He was deputy-superintendent (Jun 1874), acting pro-

vincial treasurer in 1875, and a member of the executive until Jun 1876. In May 1874 he was appointed secretary of the waste lands board. Standish had a unique record in public service. He was last chairman of the town board and first mayor of New Plymouth (1876-78) and president of the Agricultural Society; and a member of the first harbour board, the education board (20 years) and the land board (20 years). He secured 2,000 acres as a borough endowment and interested himself also in the creation of the Egmont national park. Standish was a keen sportsman and horseman, riding many of his own horses to success. He died on 24 Jun 1915.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald* and *Budget*, 18 Dec 1926; *Taranaki Herald*, 24 Jun 1915; *Evening Post*, 28 Aug 1929.

**STANFORD, ROBERT LOFTUS** (1839-1909) was born at Chetwade Priory, Buckinghamshire, and educated at Cheltenham College and Exeter College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. He was ordained priest and in 1864, having married a daughter of the Dean of Leighlin, Ireland, he came to New Zealand in the *Chili*. He was for some years vicar of St John's, Milton, and then of All Saints, Dunedin (1873); and in 1878 opened a school for boys at Waitati. While there he decided to study law and in 1883, having been admitted a barrister and solicitor, he commenced to practise in Dunedin in partnership with Dr W. D. Milne. In 1885 he graduated LL.B. In 1894 Stanford was appointed resident magistrate at Napier, being transferred later to Palmerston North and Napier and eventually to Wanganui (1904), where he retired in 1909. He was a facile writer and engaged in journalism for some time as editor of the *Mining and Finance Journal*. In Wanganui he was a director of the public library and a member of the vestry of Christ Church. He was a member of the Otago University Council (1869-94). Stanford's death occurred on 23 Oct 1909.

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; *Wanganui Herald*, 25 Oct 1909.

**STANLEY, OWEN** (1811-50), a brother of the Dean of Westminster, was born in Cheshire, and in 1825 joined the Navy as a midshipman from the Naval College. For some years he was engaged in marine surveying, first under King in the *Adventure* and afterwards in the *Terror*

## STANNARD

on Arctic exploration (1836-37). He served in the brig *Britomart* in northern Australia and in the fighting in Burma. He was appointed conunander in 1840, and arrived in Bay of Islands in Jul 1840, a few days before the French corvette *Aube* arrived to protect the French settlers at Akaroa. Governor Hobson requested Stanley to convey a magistrate to Akaroa before the *Aube* reached that port. The *Britomart* arrived there on 10 Aug, five days before the French ship. Stanley's execution of this duty and establishment of friendly relations with the French settlers was highly conunended by the Admiralty. He was promoted captain in 1844. His death occurred in Sydney on 13 Mar 1850, from a disease which he contracted on a scientific expedition to New Guinea and Torres Strait in conunand of the *Herald*.

G.B.O.P., 1841/3II, 1842/569; Buick, *Waitangi and French at Akaroa*; Scholefield, *Hobson; Cant. O.N.*; *New Zealander* (Auckland), 13 Mar 1850.

STANNARD, GEORGE (1803-88) was born in Yorkshire. He was one of the party of Irish Methodists who came to New Zealand at the invitation of Dr Day in 1841 to settle in the Kaihu valley. Stannard left the *Sophia Pate* at Bay of Islands to walk overland to Kaipara with another of the parents. They were the only ones to reach their destination, as the *Sophia Pate* was totally lost off Kaipara heads, all but one boy being drowned. In 1844 Stannard was ordained in the Methodist ministry, in which he held missionary charges in Taranaki, Wai-kouaiti (1853-54) and Wellington. He died at Wanganui on 8 Dec 1888.

Buller; Morley; W. J. Williams; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Jul 1883.

STAPP, CHARLES (1825-1900) was born in Ireland, and joined the 58th Regiment at Dublin in 1842. He came with it to New South Wales in the following year, and to Bay of Islands at the time of Heke's war (Mar 1845). Stapp was present at the attack on Okaihau pa (8 May 1845) and the storming of Ohaeawai (1 Jul), when he carried a wounded man off the field under fire. He was also at the night attack on the positions on the Waikare river (16 Jul) and the destruction of Kawiti's pa at Ruapekapeka (11 Jan 1846).

Returning to England just when the Crimean war commenced, he volunteered for service, re-

## STARK

ceived his ensigncy (Mar 1855), and was promoted lieutenant (in 1857). He acted as staff officer under Lord William Paulet and General Storks (commanding on the Bosphorus and Dardanelles), and was superintendent of hospitals there. In Oct 1858 he retired from the service and settled in New Zealand, being appointed lieutenant and adjutant of the New Plymouth militia and of volunteers in 1859 (captain, 2 Apr). He distinguished himself at Waireka (Mar 1860), where the conunand of the local forces devolved upon him, by maintaining the fight throughout the afternoon and withdrawing in good order at nightfall. He was present also at Huirangi, and Kaihihi, and in Jul 1864 at the capture of Kaitake. Promoted brevet-major in 1865, he became second-in-command of the Opotiki expeditionary force and received the thanks of the Government for his services in this campaign, in which he was frequently in action. Later he succeeded to the command. Mter the peace he returned to Taranaki as adjutant to the military settlers. He was in conunand of the permanent staff from 1866 until Mar 1872. In 1869 he organised the force to recover the bodies of those massacred at White Cliffs.

In 1879 he swore in volunteers in view of Parihaka trouble. He was promoted lieutenant-colonel in the militia in 1885, and retired as colonel on 31 Aug 1891. His wife, who was a daughter of James Webster (arrived 1841) died on 27 Apr 1889. He then married a daughter of William Milner (Derbyshire). Stapp died on 6 Aug 1900.

War Office records; Cowan, *Wars*; Wells, *Hist. Taranaki*; Gudgeon (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 23 Mar 1872, 29 Apr 1889, 7 Aug 1900.

STARK, HENRY POWNING (1827-70) was born at Exeter, England, and came in the fifties to Hawkes Bay, where he owned property. In 1861 he was elected to Parliament for Napier (defeating Colenso). Having made remarks about the Wellington debt which his constituents objected to, he resigned without having taken his seat, and moved to Auckland, where he was for 14 years in business as an auctioneer, sharebroker and land agent. He was elected to the Provincial Council for Onehunga in 1867, but again seems to have resigned without taking his seat. He owned the Courthouse hotel,

## STEAD

which was burned in 1868. Stark then moved to Thames, where he was a land agent and auctioneer, and for a time managed the McIsaac Mining Co. He died on 5 Jul 1870.

*Hawkes Bay Herald*, 16 Feb 1861, 12 Jul 1870; *Thames Advertiser*, 6 Jul 1870.

STEAD, GEORGE GATONBY (1841-1908) was born in London, and educated there and at St Andrew's College, Grahamstown, South Africa. He came to New Zealand in 1865 by the *Talbot*. For five years he worked in the Christchurch branch of the Union Bank of Australia and in 1870, with William Royse, he conunenced business as a grain and export merchant. Stead was chairman of directors of *The Press* Newspaper Co.; a director of the Christchurch Gas Co., of the New Zealand Shipping Co., and the Blackball Coal Co. He was three times president of the chamber of conunerce, and played an important part in the establishment of the Tai Tapu and Central Dairy Co. In 1890 he was defeated for the Avon seat in the House of Representatives. He was a member of the Canterbury College board of governors (1891-99). In 1900 he was responsible for equipping and providing 110 mounted men for the South African war, and in 1903 he was elected to the first tramway board.

Stead bought the Coringa station in 1880. He was a prominent and successful racehorse owner, and treasurer of the Canterbury Jockey club for many years. In 1876 he married Lucy, daughter of T. Wilkinson of Hartlepool. He died on 29 Apr 1908.

*Cycl. N.z.*, iii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Acland; Philpott; *Lyttelton Times*, 30 Apr 1908.

STEELE, DAVID PIKE (1827-93) was born in Glasgow and spent most of his boyhood in Rothesay, where he attended the parish school and Scougall's academy. Emigrating to New Zealand in the *Lady Nugent* (1850), he took up land at Wingatui, Taieri, but removed in 1853 to Warepa, where he was a neighbour and close friend of Sir John Richardson. Steele was elected to the provincial Council in 1859 to represent Clutha (with Richardson as a colleague). He resigned in 1864 to go to Victoria, where his mother lived, and died at Heidelberg, in that colony, on 22 Aug 1893.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; John Wilson; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Oct 1893.

## STEINS

STEELE, LOUIS JOHN (1843-1918) was born at Reigate, Surrey, the son of Dr John Sesson Steele, and was educated at Reigate Granular School. He studied art at the Royal Academy and at the Ecole des Beaux Arts (Paris), and in 1867 entered the Royal Academy in Florence. On returning to England he gained some prominence as an etcher, his most notable picture being 'Napoleon on the Bellerophon.' About 1886 he came to New Zealand, and for 30 years he was associated with the art life of Auckland. Steele collaborated with C. F. Goldie in the picture of the Maori migration to New Zealand, which was exhibited at the St Louis Exposition, and designed the postage stamps for the Christchurch Exhibition (1905-06). Two of his best pictures are 'The Story of a Saddle' (which is in France), and 'The Death of Captain Starlight' (which is in Australia). He also painted some pictures of Maori life for Sir J. Logan Campbell. He died on 12 Dec 1918.

John Barr, *Art; Auckland Star*, 14 Dec 1918.

STEELE, WILLIAM (1831-98) was born in Shropshire, and in 1847 left for Australia. He took part in the gold rushes in New South Wales, Victoria and California, and in 1853 came to Auckland, later settling at Lucas creek, Wairoa. He became a lieutenant in the Wairoa volunteers, and on the outbreak of the Maori war was commissioned by the Government to raise men in Sydney for the Waikato campaign. When hostilities ceased, he settled in the district as a land and estate agent, and in 1864 founded the settlement of Hamilton. His first wife died in 1887, and in 1894 he married a daughter of J. Runciman (q.v.). Steele died on 20 Sep 1898.

*Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p).

STEINS, WALTER (181D-81) was born at Amsterdam, Holland, and educated there, at St Acheul, Amiens, and at Fribourg (Switzerland). He entered the Dutch province of the Society of Jesus (1832), pronounced the vows of his profession (1849) and obtained permission to proceed to Borneo. He went instead to Bombay, where he worked with zeal and earnestness to 1861, when he was consecrated bishop. He founded the college of St Francis de Sales. In 1867 he was translated to the archbishopric of Calcutta. There he built another college,

which was affiliated to the university, established the order of the Daughters of the Cross, the St Vincent's home refuge and many schools and orphanages. He began also the Bengali mission and missions to the Sonthals and other eastern tribes.

While visiting a remote Indian village he fell and injured himself so severely that he was advised to go to Europe (1878), and he spent some time recuperating at Conflans, the novitiate of the nuns of the Sacred Heart in Paris. There Steins so far recovered as to wish to return to duty, and in 1879 he was appointed Bishop of Auckland. He arrived on 3 Dec 1879 and was 15 months in the country. He died on 7 Sep 1881 at Sydney. Steins was a distinguished theologian and linguist; broad-minded and tolerant. He was prominent at the Oecumenical Council of 1870.

*Sydney Morning Herald*, 8 Sep 1881; *N.Z. Herald*, 12 Sep 1881; *Auckland Star*, 8 Sep 1881; *Zealandia*, 16 Sep 1937 (p).

STENHOUSE, JOHN (1842-1929), born in Biggar, Lanarkshire, Scotland, was educated at the Stirling parish school, and after pupil teaching at the Calder parish school entered the Glasgow Normal Training College and the University. He taught in several Scottish schools.

Arriving at Port Chalmers in 1864 by the *City of Dunedin*, he went to Lawrence and opened the district high school. For over 40 years, with conspicuous success, he held the position of headmaster. He influenced and assisted a large number of his pupils to enter the public service, many of them rising to high positions. Stenhouse was a vice-president of the Otago Educational institute and president of the Tuapeka branch. He retired in 1905 and died on 12 Jul 1929.

Registrar-general's office (information); *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (P); *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Dec 1891.

STEPHEN, SIDNEY (1797-1858) was born in 1797, the son of John Stephen, of Somerleage, Somerset (afterwards puisne judge and acting-chief justice of New South Wales) and cousin of James Stephen, Under-secretary for the Colonies. His father practised at St Kitt's in the West Indies and in 1800 was appointed solicitor-general of the Leeward Islands. Sidney probably received some of his education at the Honiton Grammar School, Devon, and possibly also at

the Charterhouse. He entered at Lincoln's Inn in Jan 1816, when his father was practising at St Kitt's.

Called to the bar in 1818, he married at St Kitt's Margaret Adlam, and practised there for some years. Then, his father having been appointed a judge in New South Wales, he proceeded there and entered into practice. Legal business in Sydney was then in the hands of a close monopoly, and Stephen first emerged from obscurity by undertaking the unpopular side in a libel case in which a Sydney newspaper was involved and which the monopoly would not take up. He was made commissioner of the court of claims in 1834, the year in which his father died. Five years later he moved to Hobart, where his brother (afterwards Sir Alfred Stephen) was Attorney-general. There he practised with some success until Dec 1842, when an unfortunate collision with Mr Justice Montague led to his being disbarred and inhibited from practising in any of the courts of the colony. The case was referred to the Home Government; but meanwhile Stephen, with a wife and seven children to provide for, had to leave the colony. For a while he was engaged in farming at Twofold Bay. On selling out he was called upon in the courts to fulfil his agreement to sell the farm with all stock and assigned labour; and came under severe censure by Judge Willis for pleading his own illegal act in covenanting to sell human beings. He went into practice in Melbourne in 1844 and was granted a provisional admission in 1845. Courteous and fluent, he attained considerable popularity and had soon a good practice, especially in the lower courts. He was a staunch supporter of the Wesleyan Church and frequently participated in their devotional meetings. Between 1847 and 1849 he addressed many anti-transportation meetings in Melbourne.

Meanwhile, after a lapse of four years, the appeal to the Queen in council was decided by the Privy Council's judgment (29 Mar 1847) reversing the order of the Tasmanian supreme court and declaring that Stephen's private character and professional conduct were unimpeached: An appeal was now made to the Colonial Office to find Stephen suitable public employment by way of compensation for loss sustained in consequence of being disbarred.

Earl Grey recommended that a post be found for him at Port Phillip, but no opening occurred, and it was not until Jan 1850 that he was appointed by royal warrant to be puisne judge in New Zealand. He took the oath in Aug and was assigned the Otago district, but found nothing to do from the time of his arrival until his departure in Mar 1852. He took a keen interest in the affairs of the settlement; was president of the Horticultural association (and of the Otago Agricultural association, into which it developed), and presided at public meetings demanding road communication with Port Chalmers and the disposal of the surplus customs revenue of the port for local works. In Otago also Stephen did not entirely escape the acerbities of party feeling. He opened his court with due ceremony in Jun 1851, fining jurors for failing to attend, and receiving counsel and others at a levee. A few months later he was indiscreet enough to bring an action against several magistrates and others for conspiracy, and in turn became defendant in a charge before the magistrates for assault upon one of them. The bench found the assault not proved, and one of the aggrieved challenged the judge to a duel.

A few weeks later he left the province to relieve Martin in the northern district. From Sep 1853 he was acting as chief justice. He administered the oath to members of the second Parliament (15 Apr 1856). He was still employed as sole judge in the Colony pending the arrival of the new Chief Justice (Arney), when he died at Auckland on 13 Jan 1858.

Stephen had his good qualities. He was accessible, frank and genial; thoroughly independent and abounding in generosity to the poor, whom he freely assisted with legal advice. On the other hand evidence has already been adduced that he was litigious to a degree. Throughout his residence in Australia he was in difficulties over titles to land. In 1829 he acquired at Argyle the full 2,560 acres which a settler could hold under certain ordinances. In the previous year he had purchased at auction 360 acres at Windsor. No title was issued and he made no payments. When the department discovered in 1842 that the land had been awarded in 1804 to another grantee Stephen was offered £100 compensation, but declined it, and pursued his fruitless claim. In 1852 he de-

clared illegal a proclamation of Governor Grey offering land for sale at less than a pound an acre. Grey ignored the judgment as being contrary to law, and the Secretary of State supported him (Mar 1853).

Family information from Mr Justice Milner Stephen and Miss M. E. Carre-Riddell; Lincoln's Inn registry; *Col. Gent.; Hist. Rec. Aust.* (notably ser. i, vol. xxv, p. 530); Public Library of Victoria; Mitchell Library; *Victorian Law List*; Alfred Stephen, *Jottings from Memory* (1891); Garry Owen, *The Chronicles of Early Melbourne*; George Stephen, *Life of Sir James Stephen* (c. 1870); Wakelin; Hocken, *Otago*; James Barr; *Otago Witness*, 6 Jun 1851; *Wellington Independent*, 24 Feb 1858. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

STEPHENS, SAMUEL, was born at Southampton, England, and qualified as a surveyor and civil engineer. He came to Nelson in the *Whitby* as surveyor with the preliminary expedition, and was appointed senior assistant to Tuckett (Apr 1841). After the collision at Wairau he became chief surveyor in succession to Tuckett, and carried out the surveys of Motueka, explorations in the Sounds and the laying-out of Picton. He was one of the earliest runholders in the Wairau. Stephens represented the Town of Nelson in Parliament (1854-55) and Motueka and Massacre Bay in the Provincial Council (1853-55). He died at Riwaka on 26 Jun 1855.

STEPHENSON, JOHN (1830-1900) was born at Everton, Liverpool, and brought up on his father's farm in Yorkshire. Educated at Nearfield Academy, near Bawtry, he developed a taste for hunting and field sports. In 1854 he emigrated to Victoria in the *Falcon*, and tried his luck on the Ballarat fields and at roadmaking contracts. In 1856 he became a stock dealer, making constant expeditions through the Murray, Darling and Lachlan country in search of cattle. When his firm sold out to Shadrach Jones, Stephenson came to Otago with the resident partner (Bird). He became auctioneer to Wright, Robertson and Co. and on the retirement of Robertson took his place in the firm. He was one of the promoters of the meeting called to found the Otago Agricultural and Pastoral society (1876) and was its second president. Stephenson had an exceptional knowledge of stock and land matters. He was a pioneer racing owner in Otago and one of the founders of the Otago Jockey club and the Dunedin

Jockey club (of which he was president in 1875-79 and for many years a steward). In partnership with James Hazlett he bought Taiaroa and Mata in Australia, followed by a long string of horses which they raced with great success. Stephenson died on 9 Aug 1900.

*Otago Daily Times*, 29 Aug 1900.

STERICKER, EDWARD GLAVES (1830-1914), who was born in Yorkshire, was the son of a farmer, and was brought up as a tea-taster. Arriving in Lyttelton in 1853 by the *John Taylor*, he went to south Canterbury, and in 1857, in partnership with George Hall, took up The Pass, in the Mackenzie Country. In 1866-67 he represented Seadown in the Provincial Council. He was a captain in the first Timaru volunteer corps, an active member of the local agricultural society, and a freemason in lodge Globe Star. For many years he kept the local weather records at Sutton farm. Several features in the Mackenzie country, including Mount Edward and Stericker's Mound, are named after him. He died on 20 Mar 1914.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Anderson; *Timaru Herald*, 21 Mar 1914.

STEVENS, EDWARD CEPHAS JOHN (1837-1915) was the youngest son of the Rev W. E. Stevens, rector of Salford, Oxfordshire. Educated at Marlborough College (where he naturally became a cricketer), he proceeded to the Royal Agricultural College at Cirencester, where he obtained a thorough grounding in the staple industry of the country to which he was to come. At the age of 21 he sailed for New Zealand (Jun 1858) in the *Zealandia* (arriving at Lyttelton on 20 Sep).

After spending a short period on the Peninsula, Stevens established himself in Christchurch as a land agent and the agent in New Zealand of a number of absentee landowners. Before long he joined R. J. S. Harman as Harman and Stevens. In Dec 1863 Stevens entered provincial politics (without entering the Council) by accepting office in the Tancred executive. He served almost throughout Bealey's superintendency. In Mar 1866 he was elected to the Council unopposed as member for Rakaia, but when Bealey retired two months later, Stevens severed his connection with provincial politics altogether. In Feb 1866 he had been returned without opposition as member of

Parliament for Selwyn. A supporter of Weld, he came into Parliament when the separation of the two islands was a leading question. With his shrewd financial sense, he took a strong stand against it as tending to weaken the credit of the Colony. He went further and demanded the abolition of the provinces, the consolidation of provincial loans and the erection of true organs of local government in the form of county councils. In Jul 1869 he brought forward a motion with that object, but after debate an amendment proposed by Ormond was carried by 33 votes to 22, declaring that the time was inopportune to consider far-reaching constitutional changes. In 1869 Stevens married the widow of J. H. Whitcombe (q.v.).

Stevens had strong views on the tariff question, and at the general election in 1870 he stood as a free trader, opposing the grain duty. His opponent, Reeves, won the seat by a single vote. At the general election of 1875, Stevens was returned at the head of the poll for Christchurch City. His opinions were distinctly democratic. He supported the triennial parliament; he objected to the separation of the two islands; and after his re-election in 1879 he moved for the setting up of a committee to consider the best means of relieving the manufacturers of the Colony by reducing duties. His motion was carried with some amendment. Stevens took a great interest in hospitals and charitable aid, and supported the Hall Government's bill in 1880. Some years later he introduced a bill with a view to endowing hospitals and charitable aid with reserves of 1,000,000 acres of land. It passed the House of Representatives, but was defeated in the Council by 30 votes to 6. In 1882 Stevens was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat until his death (on 6 Jun 1915). Though a life member himself, he supported the bill in 1885 by which it was proposed to limit the number of members of the Council and the duration of their office. He favoured votes for women, and supported measures for the protection of the property of married women and for the guardianship of infants. As a member of the ministry later, he moved to improve the method of dealing with neglected children. In 1887 he became a member without portfolio of the Atkinson ministry, in which he served until 1891. He took a lively interest in the affairs of the native race, especi-

ally in the South Island, and had an accurate knowledge of their land claims. In 1889 he was chairman of the joint committee on native affairs. In 1891 he proposed a new clause in a bill to allow holders of perpetual leases to acquire the freehold, but the lower house would not accept the amendment. He always opposed the compulsory acquisition of lands for settlement, but withdrew his opposition when the Liberal victory of 1893 indicated the feeling of the country. It was at the instance of Stevens that Vogel established the Public Trust office.

Stevens was a man of culture, and delighted in English and French literature. His interest in art was lifelong. In 1863 he was a member of the committee for the establishment of the Art Society, of which he was president until his death. He was on the board of governors of Canterbury College (1875-93). In 1894 he was re-elected, and he retired in 1899. When Lincoln College was placed under an independent board (1897), Stevens was elected a member and he was chairman for some years. He was a director of the Christchurch Press Co., and succeeded George G. Stead as chairman. A keen horticulturist, Stevens was for many years chairman of the Horticultural Society. He was interested also in acclimatisation and helped to form the society. He also helped to found the Permanent Loan and Investment association, of which he was manager and afterwards a director, and took part in forming the Christchurch Gas Co., of which he was provisional secretary and afterwards secretary, till 1866.

No account of Stevens would be complete without mention of the part which he took in fostering cricket in Canterbury. In 1863, with J. H. Bennett, he arranged for the visit of the All-England team, for which object they raised £500 in one day. Both of them played in the match on 9 Feb 1864, when the English eleven defeated a Canterbury twenty-two by an innings and two runs. Sale and A. F. N. Blakiston also played. Stevens helped to inaugurate the Otago-Canterbury matches, and played in them until the end of the seventies. He again played against England in 1878, making top score for Canterbury. He played in the North Island with the Wanderers, and last wielded the bat for Canterbury against Wellington and Auckland in 1883. He was for many years president

of the Canterbury Cricket association and chairman of the management committee for visiting tours. He was one of the promoters of Lancaster Park and an early director, and was for some years president of the New Zealand Athletic association.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; NZ.P.D.*, 25 Jun 1915; Gisborne; Reeves; Saunders; G. H. Scholefield ill *The Press*, 23 Aug 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

STEVENS, JOHN (1845-1916) was born on Thorndon flat, Wellington, and educated at Buxton's school and later at Bonnefett's and Freeth's. In 1854 he went to Rangitikei. He saw active service under General Cameron in 1864-65, and later organised and was captain of the Rangitikei Cavalry volunteers. In 1873 he was engaged as an interpreter in the native land court, and later went into business with Lieut.-colonel Gorton as an auctioneer in Rangitikei. Defeating Sir William Fox (by two votes) Stevens entered the House of Representatives as Liberal member for Rangitikei in 1881. He was defeated in 1884 but returned again for the same district (1893-96). Thereafter he sat in three Parliaments for Manawatu (1896-1902, 1905-08). For three years (1899-1902) he was senior government whip. In 1885 he was elected a member of the Wanganui education board; he was for 10 years on the Wellington land board and in 1895 was a member of the royal commission set up to consider the revision of the customs tariff. He died on 30 Jul 1916.

*NZ.P.D.*, pass (notably 1 Aug 1916); *Cycl.N.Z.*, i; J. G. Wilson; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Manawatu Times* and *Manawatu Standard*, 31 Jul 1916. Portrait: Parliament House.

STEVENS, WILLIAM (1825-97), who was born at Eastbourne, in Sussex, came to Sydney in the *Alfred* in 1841 with his parents. Two years later he crossed to New Zealand, where he joined his half-brother (Captain John Howell) in the whaling industry, and was one of the founders of Riverton. He assisted Captain Richards in the survey of the coast, and afterwards passed as a master in Australia and a pilot in New Zealand. Abandoning the sea about 1860, Stevens took up the Beaumont sheep station on the Aparima river, and a large farm at Gummie's Bush, near Riverton. For 18 years he was a member of the Bluff harbour

## STEVENSON

board, for 21 years chairman of the Gummie's Bush school committee, and he was a founder and first chairman of directors of the Aparima dairy factory. Stevens was twice married, and had 20 children. He died on 2 Aug 1897.

*Cycl N.Z.*, iv (p); *Riverton Record; Southland Times*, 3 Aug 1907.

STEVENSON, WILLIAM (1864-1935), a son of John Stevenson, of the Henley estate, Taieri, was educated at the Taieri Ferry, the Oamaru Grammar, the Dunedin Normal and the Otago Boys' High schools. Taking up farming, he became manager of the Braemar estate. After experience on a number of share-milking farms, he managed Wairuna, in south Otago, for three years, farmed on his own account for five years, and then joined the Dresden Piano Co. at Invercargill. Eight years later he entered the motion-picture business, starting a circuit in Southland, and became associated with several coal companies in the Nightcaps area. He retired in 1927. Stevenson served for many years as chairman of the Invercargill Liberal committee, of the Southland Liberal-Labour association and of the United party. He was chairman of the Southland High School board of governors and president of the Caledonian society. He was appointed to the Legislative Council in 1930, and died on 5 Oct 1935. In 1890 Stevenson married Lillias A., daughter of John Lamont, of Oamaru.

*N.z.P.D.*, 8, 9 Oct 1935; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1932; *Evening Post*, 5 Oct 1935 (p).

STEWART, JOHN MANWARING (1874-1937), son of the Rev C. E. Stewart, vicar of New Shoreham, Sussex, was born in Southampton and educated at Radley College, at Oxford University (where he graduated M.A.), and at Ely Theological College. Ordained in 1900, he was curate of St John's, Watford, till 1902; missionary at Guadalcanar (1902-06) and at Florida (1911-12), and priest in charge of the Maravovo Theological College (1912-19). In 1919 he was appointed Bishop of Melanesia, and in 1928 he retired. He died in England on 13 Sep 1937.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1932.

STEWART, SIR WILLIAM JUKES (1841-1912) was born at Reading, Berkshire, and educated at King Edward VI Grammar School at Ludlow, Shropshire, and at Dr Benham's commercial

## STEWART

school at Gloucester. In 1862 he came to Canterbury in the *Mersey* (in preference to joining the Albertland expedition) and obtained employment with Peacock and Co. He afterwards entered into partnership with Axup and Bell, but before long became interested in journalism and joined the staff of the *North Otago Times* (Oamaru). In 1871 he became M.H.R. for Waitaki (including Oamaru), which he represented until being defeated in 1875 by Hislop and Shrimski. He represented Oamaru Country in the Otago Provincial Council and was in the executive in 1875, and mayor of Oamaru (1876-78).

In 1879 Stewart moved to Waimate, where he purchased the *Waimate Times*, and in the same year he was elected to Parliament. He represented Waimate (1881-93) and the adjusted district of Waitaki (1893-1911). Stewart was later associated with the *Ashburton Mail* and *Guardian*. He always attended punctually to the business of Parliament and of his constituents, and showed great perseverance in introducing private bills of a social nature which were eventually adopted. The deceased wife's sister marriage bill, which he first introduced in 1872, was carried through the lower house in 1876 but only adopted many years later. Later he introduced a bill to abolish cumulative voting in school committee elections. This measure, which was rejected seven times before being adopted, he regarded as the first step towards one-man-one-vote. Three times also he introduced an amending licensing bill (to make elections triennial instead of annual) before the Legislative Council would accept it. He twice introduced a bill to make the executive elective. By continued perseverance he achieved many reforms in the franchise and land settlements law. Stewart was a member of the South Canterbury education board, the Ashburton and Waimate High Schools boards, and of the royal commissions on federation, friendly societies and tariffs. From 1891-93 he was Speaker of the House. In 1912 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 30 Oct 1912). He was knighted in 1902.

Stewart in 1887 published a pamphlet on parliamentary representation, proposing a modification of the Hare system of voting. He published a volume of verse *Carmina Varia*

## STEWART

(under the nom de plume of 'Justin Aubrey'), in 1867; *The Rhyme of the Mapourika* in 1903 and *The Vision of Aorangi* in 1906. As a volunteer Stewart took part in the formation of the Christchurch city guards (of which he was captain) and the Oamaru, the Hampden and the Otepopo Rifles. For some years as major he commanded the North Otago military district (1873-79). He married (1873) Hannah, daughter of the Rev Caleb Whitefoord (Burford, Shropshire).

*Otago P.C. Proc.; N.z.P.D., pass.; Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Col. Gent.; Otago Daily Times*, 1 Nov 1912. Portrait: Parliament House.

STEWART, FRANCIS EDWARD (1833-1904) was born at Clifton, England, the son of Captain Thomas Stewart, R.N., with whom he came to Van Diemen's Land in his own ship, the *Anna Watson*, in 1839. In 1847 he accompanied the Barney expedition to found the Gladstone colony, and he was in the wreck of the *LOL-d Auckland* on Facing Island. For some time he was in the chambers of Robert Lowe (afterwards Lord Sherbrooke). In 1849 he came to Auckland in the service of the Union Bank, of which he became Auckland manager in 1854. In 1856 he opened the Christchurch branch. Returning to New Zealand in 1863 from a two years' visit to England, he married Agnes, daughter of Robert Park (q.v.). He represented Rakaia in the Provincial Council (1865-66) and Papanui (1866-68), being provincial treasurer and for a while deputy superintendent. In 1869 Stewart sold his Racecourse Hill property and returned to Sydney, where he became chief inspector of the National Bank in 1879. He was for some years till 1891 general manager of Goldsborough, Mort and Co., and later managing director of Younghusband, Row and Co. He died on 10 Jul 1904.

Family information; *Parltry Recol'd; Canterbury P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; Col. Gent.*

STEWART, GEORGE VESEY (1832-1920) was born in Martray, county Tyrone, the son of Captain Mervyn Stewart. His early education, owing to his mother's indifferent health, was obtained mostly on the Continent. His parents intended that he should become a lawyer, but he preferred an open-air life, and entered the College of Civil Engineers at Putney (1848). Weak eyesight interrupted his studies. In 1852

## STEWART

he became an undergraduate at Trinity College, Dublin, where he had a brilliant career, graduating in 1856 with honours in classics and many prizes. He then married and settled down as an estate agent, also farming successively at Altmore, Lisbeg and Gortmore, all in his native county.

Having lost much money in linen mills, Stewart had to face the world in 1870 almost bankrupt. A fluent speaker and a facile writer, widely experienced, resourceful and industrious, he was nevertheless spendthrift and impatient of routine. In the early seventies he turned his thoughts to the colonies and in 1873 made his first tentative proposal to Dr Featherston (then Agent-general for New Zealand in London) for the establishment of a special settlement of Ulstermen in New Zealand. Featherston threw cold water on the proposal, and eventually Stewart made a new approach through Farnall (q.v.), the immigration agent in Belfast for both the Colony and the Auckland Provincial Council. Without waiting for confirmation of Farnall's encouraging discussion, he proceeded to enlist 40 families for the settlement, each to receive a free grant of 40 acres of land, with a maximum of 300 acres per family. Stewart favoured acquiring an area of from 10,000 to 20,000 acres in the vicinity of Tauranga, and in Nov 1873 he came to New Zealand to select the land. He travelled from end to end of the country seeking land of first-class quality close to a town and not far from a good field, which he hoped would provide a good market. Eventually he made application for 10,000 acres in the Katikati block. The agreement was drawn up by O'Rorke and Stewart on 24 Jun 1874, Stewart agreeing to bring out not less than 40 families, and he himself as leader receiving 500 acres and 40 acres for his wife and each child.

The expedition sailed from Belfast on 8 Jun 1875 in the *Carisbrook Castle*, which had on board 238 Katikati settlers and 125 Government immigrants. In 1877 Stewart organised a second expedition, the majority of whom sailed in the *Lady Jocelyn* (May 1878). These were largely people with capital and included Stewart's parents and his brother, Captain Hugh Stewart, R.A. His biographer says that Stewart's profit from the whole scheme was not more than £6,000 and 3,500 acres of land. In 1880 he

bought from the government for £19,700 an area of 16,000 acres at Te Puke, which he sold in Ireland at £3 an acre. These settlers all sailed by the end of 1880. Having organised a company to construct a railway from Tauranga to Rotorua (1883) he went to England to raise £250,000 capital and had practically succeeded when differences amongst the directors destroyed the prospect. Stewart opened an immigration office in connection with the Shaw Savill and Albion Co. and remained till 1888 in London, where he prepared a new edition of the *New Zealand Yearbook*. On his father's death he moved from Mount Stewart to Martray. Stewart was a member of the first school committee at Katikati (1876) and chairman of the highway board (1876), of the succeeding road board (1883) and a member of the Tauranga county council during the whole of his residence at Katikati (chairman for several years) and again after moving to Tauranga. He was also on the harbour board and the hospital board. He contested the Tauranga seat against Morris (1881) and announced himself as a candidate many years later, but withdrew. In 1882 he was elected the first mayor of Tauranga, where he owned the *Bay of Plenty Times* for a considerable period. In 1919 he retired from all public bodies except the road board (of which he was chairman 1893-1920). His death occurred on 3 Mar 1920.

Stewart, pamphlets published at Omagh and London, 1877-84; *App. HR.*, 1874-81; Gray, *pass.* (p); *Bay of Plenty Times*; Adela B. Stewart.

STEWART, HUGH (1884-1934), a son of the Rev John Stewart, was born in Aberdeenshire, and educated at Fettes College, at Edinburgh University (John Walsh classical scholar), and at Trinity College, Cambridge (foundation scholar). He graduated B.A. in 1908 with first-class honours, and M.A. (1912). He was a master at Rugby (1908-09), lecturer at Liverpool University (1909-12), and in 1912 was appointed professor of classics at Canterbury College, Christchurch. From 1914-19 he served in Gallipoli and France with the New Zealand expeditionary force; commanding the 2nd battalion of the Canterbury Regiment (1916-18). (C.M.G., D.S.O., with bar; M.C., Croix de Guerre with palms). In 1919 he resumed his position at Canterbury College. He was elected

local president, and for two years Dominion president of the Returned Soldiers' Association. In 1926 he was made professor of Latin at Leeds University, and in 1929 principal of Nottingham University. He died on 28 Sep 1934. His first wife was Alexandrina Kathleen (d. 1920), daughter of W. Johnson, of Liverpool. He married (1927) Rosamund (d. 1929), daughter of J. A. Poulton, of Christchurch. Stewart's publications include editions of Zielinski's *Our Debt to Antiquity* (1909), Niedermann's *Latin Phonetics* (1910), *Provincial Russia* (1913), and the *Official History of the New Zealand Division* (1921).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; Hugh Stewart, *Memories*, 1930; Hight and Candy (p); *The Dominion*, 2 Dec 1929; *Evening Post*, 29 Sep 1934.

STEWART, JAMES (1832-1914) was born in Perthshire and received his education there. He served his engineering articles and was chief assistant to P. D. Brown, Perth. In 1859 he came to Auckland in the *Joseph Fletchell*, started practice as a civil engineer, and shortly gained a premium offered by the provincial government for a design for the Auckland waternorks. In conjunction with Samuel Harding, he surveyed the line for the Drury railway. In 1862 he was appointed engineer to the Auckland city board, but in the following year he received a militia commission and was sent to Sydney to acquire two towing steamers for the Waikato river service. He carried out special works in Waikato and was appointed with Harding as engineers for the Auckland-Drury railway. The work was stopped for want of money in 1867, and Stewart became inspector of steamers for the Government. He designed the Bean rock lighthouse and the light in the Ponui pass. In 1872 he was appointed resident engineer for the Auckland-Mercer railway, and two years later for the whole of the railway works in Auckland province. Afterwards, in private practice, he built the Thames and Rotorua railways and the Te Aroha county tramways and (with AsWey Hunter) laid the Auckland tramways and designed the pumps for the Calliope dock. He was a strong advocate of development by railways and an active member of the Auckland League. Stewart died on 12 Feb 1914.

*Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Surveyor*, Mar 1914; *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Feb 1914.

STEWART, MERVYN (1794-1886) was a son of Sir John Stewart, of Athenree and Ballygawley, county Tyrone, Ireland. Entering the Navy as a midshipman, he served in the *Dreadnought* and *Temeraire*. Owing to the illness of his brother he retired from the Navy and the war being not yet over, he entered Trinity College, Dublin, to take the necessary course for an army commission. He was appointed captain in the Tyrone militia, from which in 1815 he received his cornetcy in the 21st Light Dragoons. The battle of Waterloo having terminated the Napoleonic wars, Stewart saw service in Cape Colony and India until 1821, when the regiment was disbanded and he retired on half-pay. He married Fanny, daughter of the Rev George Vesey, of Derrabard, Tyrone, and settled down to the life of an Irish gentleman. In 1829 he was high sheriff of the county. He took part in conservative politics and was a grandmaster of the Orange lodges. In 1879 Stewart came to New Zealand with the second expedition organised by his son (G. V. Stewart, q.v.) for the Katikati settlement. He was a justice of the peace here. Stewart died on 13 Sep 1886.

A. B. Stewart; *Bay of Plenty Times*, 16 Sep 1886.

STEWART, WILLIAM (1767-1851) is believed to have served in the Royal Navy (1893-97), being for two years master's mate and two years master. He reached New South Wales from Calcutta in 1801. He was commanding the sloop *George* when she went ashore in Bass strait in 1804 but, obtaining carpenters from New South Wales, he got her off and brought her back to Sydney. While in command of the *Edwin* he helped to capture Duce's gang in Tasmania. He owned the *Fly* in 1803 and in that year commanded the *Pegasus* when she took a gang to Stewart Island (which some authorities claim that he discovered and named). While first officer of the same ship in 1809, he took observations and made a chart of Port Pegasus, which was published in the *Oriental Navigator* in 1816. It was used until 1840 and was considered even then a fine piece of work. Returning to England about 1824, Stewart floated his scheme (a timber and flax company) at Stewart Island, for which T. and D. Asquith bought the *Prince of Denmark* and

the *Lord Rodney*. He made three trips to Stewart Island, but the venture failed and he was in financial difficulties in Sydney. Meanwhile a party of sawyers which he had taken from Bay of Islands built the schooner *Joseph Weller*, the first vessel known to have been built at Stewart Island. Stewart lived there for many years and acted as pilot to H.M.S. *Herald* on her visit to proclaim sovereignty in 1840. He died at Poverty Bay late in 1851.

G.B.O.P., 1840/238; Buick, *Waitangi*; Thomson; Scholefield, *Hobson*; McNab, *Murihiku*; *N.Z. Spectator*, 21 Feb 1852.

STEWART, WILLIAM DOWNIE (1842-98) was born at Blair Drummond, near Stirling, Scotland. He began the study of law in Stirling and sailed for New Zealand in 1862. On arriving in Dunedin he entered the office of Richmond and Gillies. About two years later he was articled to (Sir) James Prendergast (q.v.). On 12 Jun 1867 he was admitted to the bar and began practice on his own account. Among those associated with him in partnership were Joyce (later M.P. for Lyttelton), J. E. Denniston (later a judge), Allan Holmes (who helped to draw the Supreme Court code of procedure) and C. J. Payne. Robert Stout was an articled clerk in Stewart's office and W. C. Macgregor was also trained there.

In 1879 Stewart was elected to the House of Representatives for Dunedin, and on the request of Stout, Grey offered him the attorney-generalship (which he declined). On the defeat of the Grey administration he was returned a second time in the same year. At the election of 1881 he was defeated by eight votes for Dunedin West by Dick, whom he defeated in 1884 and again in 1887. In 1890 he retired, and in 1891 was called to the Legislative Council, this being the last life appointment.

Stewart was keenly interested in law reform, and twice visited the United States and Canada to study legal procedure. His lecture on *English and American Law* was published in the United States. Most of the reforms he advocated have become law. He proposed a code of procedure; that costs of an action should be fixed by scale; that prisoners should be allowed to give evidence on their own behalf; that a poor prisoner should have counsel paid by the State; that confessions to clergymen and communica-

tions to physicians should be privileged; the abolition of primogeniture; the fusion of law and equity and other reforms. In 1879 he brought in a bill to enable a woman to whom unchastity was imputed to sue for slander without proof of special damage. This did not become law till 1897. In 1885 he carried the evidence amendment act, by which the courts could take judicial notice of laws of foreign countries and an action for seduction could be brought without proof of loss of service. In 1879 he carried a law by which deeds could be proved in the magistrate's court without calling the attesting witness and in 1884 a law making the publication in a newspaper of a false notice of birth, death or marriage punishable by fine or imprisonment; in 1885 an amendment by which acknowledgment of deeds by married women was abolished and a bill by which executors and administrators may resign or be removed; and in 1890 he carried to a second reading a bill to settle labour disputes by voluntary arbitration. He was an early supporter of women's franchise, protection and Bible-reading in schools.

Stewart helped to found the Patients and Prisoners' Aid society in 1877. He was a director of the Colonial Bank, the Mosgiel Woollen Co., the Perpetual Trustees and other companies.

He married first (1868) Rachel (d. 1878), daughter of George Hepburn (q.v.), and second (1881) Mary, daughter of John Thomson, provost of Irvine, Ayrshire. He died on 25 Nov 1898.

A son, WILLIAM DOWNIE STEWART (1878-), was educated at the Otago Boys' High School and Otago University, where he graduated LL.B. in 1900. He was Mayor of Dunedin (1913-14), M.P. for Dunedin West (1914-35) and Minister of Internal Affairs (1921-23), of Customs (1921-28), of Finance (1926-28) and Attorney-general (1926); and was acting Prime Minister (1926).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Ross; W. D. Stewart; *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Nov 1898. Portrait: Parliament House.

STOBO, ANDREW (1832-98) was born at Strutherhead, Avondale, Lanarkshire, educated at Sandford and Lesmahagow and Strathaven, and went in 1847 for his theological course to

Glasgow University. He started a Free Church School at Strathaven and then continued his studies at the New College, Edinburgh (1852). After serving as a missionary at Uddingstone, he was licensed by the presbytery of Hamilton, had charge of a territorial mission at Castle street, Montrose, and in 1859 was appointed by the colonial committee to Invercargill. Arriving in the *Storm Cloud* in Apr 1860, he was inducted on 29 Jun, the first ordained minister in Southland after the missionary Wohlers. His health failing in 1880, Stobo undertook mission work in South Invercargill. He died on 24-Dec 1898.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Southland Times*, 27 Dec 1898.

STOCK, ARTHUR (1823-1901) was born in Bow parish, Mile End road, London, and educated at the Merchant Taylors' school and at Pembroke College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. (1845). He became a master at the Bath Grammar School and was ordained deacon (1847) and priest (1848). After ministering at Prescott, Cloudesley square, London, and Clapham road, he offered his services to the Church Missionary Society and came to New Zealand in the *Hamilla Mitchell* (1854). He was appointed to have charge of the Maori school at Otaki, and spent nine months also at Wanganui. In 1856 he was appointed vicar of St Peter's, Wellington, where he remained until his retirement (1888). In 1872 he was appointed archdeacon. Stock was of low church tendencies and was a keen astronomer. It was mainly due to his intervention in the Tricker case that Tricker was finally acquitted of the murder. Stock died on 23 Sep 1901.

J. G. Wilson; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 23 Sep 1901.

STODDART, MARGARET OLROG (1865-1934), a daughter of Mark P. Stoddart (q.v.), was born at Diamond harbour, Canterbury, and received her education at the Edinburgh Girls' College. She studied painting at the Christchurch School of Art; in England under Norman Carstin, Charles Lasar and Louis Grier, and on the Continent. Miss Stoddart was one of the first members of the Canterbury Women's Club and of the Society for Imperial Culture, and was on the council of the Canterbury Society of Arts and the advisory committee of

the Art Gallery society. She painted chiefly in water-colours; the work which gained her a place among New Zealand's leading artists consisted principally of flower studies and landscapes. She exhibited at the Royal Academy, the Royal Institute of Water Colours, the Society of British Artists, the Society of Water-colours (Rome), the Beaux Arts and the Societe des Artistes Francaises (Paris), and at numerous exhibitions in New Zealand. She died at Hanmer on 10 Dec 1934.

*The Press*, 11 Dec 1934; *Art in N.Z.*, Dec 1935.

STODDART, MARK PRINGLE (1819-85) was born in Edinburgh, the son of Admiral Stoddart. He was educated there and entered the Military Academy, but at the age of 18 emigrated to Port Philip, where the town of Melbourne was being laid out. After travelling for some years in the East, he bought a station in the Victorian Pyrenees. In 1850 he sold out and with E. M. Templer (q.v.) chartered the German barque *Australasia* and sailed for New Zealand, arriving in Lyttelton (Jan 1851) to find the first four ships at anchor. Stoddart bought land in a bay he named Diamond harbour. He also established himself on the Terrace station of 20,000 acres on the Rakaia. This he sold to Hall (1853) and he was managing partner for W'aait in Teviotdale. Glenmark was named after him. He afterwards moved to Diamond harbour, where he lived for many years. He was one of the first party to explore Lake Coleridge.

Stoddart was something of a poet, some of his verse being included in *Canterbury Rhymes*. He was keenly interested in angling and acclimatisation, and his home was noted for warm hospitality. Stoddart represented the Bays in the Provincial Council (1863-66). He died on 28 Aug 1885. M. O. Stoddart (d. 1934) was a daughter.

Acland; Alpers, *Cant. Rhymes*; *Lyttelton Times*, 30 Aug 1885.

STOKES, JOHN LORT (1812-85) entered the Navy in 1826 as a midshipman in the *Beagle*, then proceeding to South America on a surveying cruise which lasted (with a short visit to England) for four years. Part of the time he commanded the hired schooner *La Paz*. Captain Robert FitzRoy, who took command after the death of the first commander, had Stokes with him again in the same vessel in 1831-36, when

she visited New Zealand. Promoted lieutenant in 1837, Stokes continued to serve in the *Beagle* under Commander Clements Wickham for the survey of the Australian coasts. On Wickham being invalided (1841) he succeeded to the command, and for two years was engaged in surveying Timor and New Zealand. In 1843 he returned to England after about 18 years spent in this vessel. In 1846 he published his *Discoveries in Australia, with an Account of the Coasts and Rivers Explored and Surveyed during the Voyage of the Beagle, 1837-43*. Advanced to post rank in that year, he was appointed to command the steamer *Acheron*, which was employed on the coast of New Zealand for four years, paying off at Sydney in 1851. After a few years on half-pay he was employed surveying the coasts of the English channel (1860-63). (Rear-admiral, 1864; vice-admiral 1871; admiral 1877.) Stokes in 1851 contributed a report on the survey of southern New Zealand to the proceedings of the British Association and a narrative of the cruise of the *Achemn* to the *Naval Chronicle*. He was elected in 1872 an honorary member of the New Zealand Institute. He died on 11 Jun 1885.

*D.N.B.*; Darwin; Joan Barlow; Stokes, *op. cit.*; A. Mackay; King; *Proc. Royal Geog. Soc.*, new ser., vii; Stokes journals in *Star* (Christchurch), May 1926; Pasco, *A Roving Commission*, 1897 (p); *The Times*, 13 Jun 1885.

STOKES, ROBERT (1810-80) was born in England and trained as a surveyor. He practised as an architect in Cheltenham and London. He appeared before the directors of the New Zealand Company on 10 Apr 1839, asking for employment on the survey staff. A month or two later he sailed in the *Cuba* as one of the survey assistants. They reached Wellington on 3 Jan 1840. Stokes was engaged about Port Nicholson for some time and left his name on Stokes valley. In Aug he was sent by Wakefield to make a survey towards Wanganui to ascertain its capabilities for settlement. He was accompanied by Park, Heaphy, and Jerningham Wakefield, and after an adventurous journey submitted a report, which fully satisfied the Company as to the projected settlement of Petre. Early in 1842 he left the employ of the Company and went into business in Wellington. On his town section in Woolcombe' street he built his residence, St Ruadhan, and he soon had a good clearing

and vegetable garden. He had living with him his brother (Dr John Milbourne Stokes), who came to New Zealand as surgeon of the *Aurora* and gave gratuitous advice to the sick. About 1843 Stokes paid a visit to South America. He gave much encouragement to agriculture and horticulture, and was treasurer of the Horticultural and Botanical society.

In Aug 1844 Revans ended his connection with the *New Zealand Gazette*, which ceased publication at the end of Sep. On 12 Oct a new paper, the *New Zealand Spectator and Cook's Strait Guardian*, appeared. Clifford was chairman of the committee of management and Stokes a member. On 16 Aug 1845 his name appears on the imprint as printer, Lyon being the publisher. Stokes also appears in the roll of 1847 as a printer in Manners street. Some time later he became proprietor. In 1850 the *Spectator* was the only paper which supported Sir George Grey. At the end of Mar 1858, Stokes's name disappears from the imprint, but according to one authority he owned the paper until it ceased publication in 1865, and he sold the type.

In 1848 Stokes was a speaker at a public meeting called after the earthquake. In 1851 he reported the proceedings of the Legislative Council. He entered the Provincial Council in 1857 as one of the representatives of the City, which elected him until 1865. Though a critic of Featherston, Stokes took a cautious part in the imbroglio. In 1858 he carried in the Council a bill to establish a municipal corporation for Wellington, and in the same year he advocated a railway across the Rimutaka to Wairarapa. This was considered Utopian, but Stokes persevered and in 1863 secured the passage through the Council of a series of resolutions in favour of the line and recommending the acceptance of the offer of Robert M. Marchant to construct the first 18 miles for £150,000, on a guarantee of 7 per cent on the outlay or a land grant of 100,000 acres. This fell through, but Stokes was undaunted. In 1867 a public meeting co-operated with the Provincial Council and made headway. In 1870 Vogel took the line up as a government undertaking. Stokes was badly defeated at the general election for the Council in 1865, but a few months later he was elected one of the members for the Wairarapa, which he represented to 1867.

Stokes's brother, after a few years, gave up the practice of medicine and took up a freehold run in the Ruataniwha district before the separation of Hawkes Bay. Robert first appeared as a landowner in the same district in 1861, having bought out Robert Pharazyn. Later they held properties together at Clive and at Te Aute, their main homestead, at Mangonuka, being called Milbourne. Both were justices of the peace. For some years Dr Stokes was a warden of the North Ruataniwha highway district, and in 1877 chairman. Robert Stokes was in 1862 one of the commissioners for the city reserves in Wellington. In the same year he was called to the Legislative Council, and in the ensuing session he moved the address-in-reply. He continued a member of the Council until 1878, when he forfeited his seat by absence. He was a member of the University senate (1871-78). Stokes died on 20 Jan 1880.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z., i; Wakelin; E. J. Wakefield; Ward; Daily Telegraph, Napier, 16 Oct 1925; Evening Post, 4 Nov 1929 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.*

STONE, CAPTAIN JAMES (1816-85) was born at Stepney, brought up in Epping Forest, and educated at Waltham Abbey school and Harlow. He was first in an accountant's office in London; then with a solicitor. In 1834 he arrived in Hobart and obtained employment in the legal office of Gamaliel Butler. While there he learned the building trade and, having married in 1838, he moved to Port Philip, invested in town sections and erected a brick store in which he established himself as an ironmonger. Attracted by the chance of speculating in New Zealand lands, he came to Port Nicholson by the *Earl Stanhope* (Mar 1840), and in Jan 1841 arrived in Auckland and camped on a vacant section. When the town lots were sold (Apr 1841) he purchased sections in Shortland and Queen streets and erected buildings. The timber was sawn for him in the Hutt valley and shipped by the schooner *Patriot* to Auckland. With Langford and Gardiner as partners, the firm took up contracts for supplying spars to the Royal Navy. They made shipments by the brig *Erin* for Melbourne (1847), by the *Rivel' Chief* and *Maukin* for Sydney, and by the *Camilla* for Hobart. They also shipped timber, potatoes

and onions to California, but with disastrous financial results. With several others Stone was interested in the building of the first steamer ever owned in Auckland, the *Governor Wynyard*. She was sent to Melbourne at the opening of the goldfields and ran successfully on the Yarra river until sold. Stone went to Victoria in the brig *Moa* and remained there several years, running two brigs, the *Drover* and *Kirkwood*, in the New Zealand trade. In 1855 he returned and resumed business in Shortland street.

Stone was interested in many companies and financial institutions. He was one of the founders of the New Zealand Insurance Co., the Bank of New Zealand, the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co., the Auckland Gas Co., and the New Zealand Land Mortgage Co., and was a director of the Northern Boot Co., the Shortland Sawmill Co., and the Union Oil, Soap and Candle Co. He was also interested in mining companies on the Thames field, and with his son-in-law (John Bycroft) in a Hour and biscuit manufacturing company. He was a staunch Wesleyan, and introduced the services of that denomination in the Hutt valley. Stone died on 15 Apr 1885.

*Cycl. N.Z., ii; N.Z. Herald, 14 Jan 1882, 16 Apr 1885.*

STONES, WILLIAM, as a young man made a voyage to New Zealand in the *James* (1839) spent a year or two in the country and, after returning to England, published in the journal of the Society of Arts (1858) an interesting article *My First Voyage*. This was awarded the Society's prize and afterwards republished (1859). Stones married a daughter of Sir Sydney Waterlow, lord mayor of London. He was drowned many years later when crossing the Channel.

Hocken; Gideon Smales in *N.Z. Herald, 6 Jan 1894.*

STONEY, HENRY BUTLER (1816-94) was born in county Mayo, Ireland. He was appointed ensign in the 19th Regiment in 1837, and in 1840 went to Malta. For some time he acted as resident for the island of Cirago. Five years later, in the West Indies, he was port adjutant and superintendent of roads for Tobago, where he received special thanks for his exertions in saving life during the hurricane

of 1847. In 1848 he distinguished himself in Canada by holding an outpost against an overwhelming rebel force. He returned to England to a staff appointment, and later became paymaster to the 99th Regiment. He came to Australia with the 40th Regiment, and witnessed the riots at Ballarat, upon which he published a book. Coming to New Zealand in 1860, he saw service in Taranaki and Waikato, and when the regiment was ordered home he sold out and took up land at Wade. He represented Northern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council (1872-73) and was prominent in local affairs. For some years he was at Kawakawa, and held the appointment of inspector of roads. Besides the book mentioned Stoney wrote *A Residence in Tasmania* and *Tamnaki*. He died on 4 Jul 1894.

*Parltry Record; Hocken, Bibliog.; N.Z. Herald, 13 Jul 1894.*

STOUT, SIR ROBERT (1844-1930) was born at Lenvick, Shetland Islands, the son of Thomas Stout, a merchant and landed proprietor. He was educated in the parish school and at Lervick Academy, where at the age of 13 he acquired such a sound grounding in general education, Greek, Latin and French that he was appointed a pupil teacher. At 16 he had passed his qualifying examinations, and two years later he completed his apprenticeship. He then determined to seek wider fields, chose New Zealand, and landed at Dunedin from the ship *Lady Milton* in Apr 1864. His first intention was to become a land surveyor, for which his study of mathematics and aptitude for that science specially fitted him. Finding no opening, however, he accepted a post as second master in the Dunedin Grammar School, with special responsibility for the teaching of mathematics. Soon he transferred to the North Dunedin district school (better known as the Stone school), which was at the corner of Union and King streets. He took part in the organisation of the profession and helped to found the Otago schoolmasters' association, which developed into the Otago Educational institute.

In 1867 Stout decided to study law, and with that object entered the office of W. Downie Stewart (q.v.). In Jul 1871 he was admitted a barrister and solicitor, and shortly afterwards he entered into partnership with Basil Siev-

wright. Later he was head of the firm of Stout, Mondy and Sim, with which the most important part of his legal career was associated (his partners being George Mondy and William Sim, q.v.). Stout at once stepped to the forefront of the profession as a pleader. He was particularly successful in addressing juries, upon whose emotions he was able to work with consummate effect. Otago University having opened its doors in the year he was admitted to the bar, he lectured in law and also continued his studies. Attending the lectures in mental and moral science, he gained first honours for essays in these subjects but was defeated for distinction by R. Wilding. In the second session he was first in the political economy class. For three years (1873-75) he lectured in law.

In 1872 Stout made his first appearance in political life, when he was elected to represent Caversham in the Otago Provincial Council. He remained its member until the abolition of the provinces in 1875. In 1873 he became provincial solicitor (under Donald Reid) and he held that post throughout. He was a staunch supporter of the provincial system and to the end of his life believed that its maintenance would have conduced to the advantage of New Zealand. In 1875 Stout was elected to the House of Representatives for Caversham (defeating Larnach at a by-election following the resignation of Tolmie). At the general election at the end of 1875 he was second amongst eight candidates, his colleagues being Macandrew and Larnach, and the defeated candidates being Reynolds, Macassey, Sise, Grant and Armstrong. Entering politics from the first as an advanced Liberal, Stout made his first speech on 27 Aug 1875, a telling defence of the provincial system. His strong principles and undoubted ability were soon recognised by the Liberal leader (Sir George Grey), and in Mar 1878 he was invited to become Attorney-general in the first Liberal ministry. Macandrew was a member from the beginning, and Ballance had joined a few weeks earlier. In Jul Stout took also the portfolios of Lands and Immigration, and he administered these offices until 24 Jun 1879. It was an open secret that Ballance and Stout had seriously disagreed with the administration of Grey, and wished to escape from their responsibility. The ill-health of his partner at this time prompted him to resign in order to

devote more attention to their practice, and he withdrew from Parliament a few months before the dissolution.

Stout remained out of Parliament for five years. At the general election in Jul 1884 he was again returned (defeating M. W. Green for Dunedin East by 755 votes to 515). Of the 91 members of the new Parliament only 4 desired Grey as leader, 33 wished for Vogel, 32 for Atkinson, and 15 for Montgomery. Seven had not declared their preference. Vogel was sent for, and after a week's consultation he submitted the following cabinet for the Governor's approval: Vogel, Stout, Richardson, Macandrew, Montgomery, Ballance, Morris and Whitmore. Taking office on 16 Aug, they survived only until the 28th, when they were defeated by the resentment of Auckland province, which had only one member in the ministry while Otago had three. There was no question of resigning office for good. Montgomery generously withdrew and Stout, who had been sent for, then took office as Premier, with Vogel as Treasurer and Postmaster-general, E. Richardson (Public Works), Ballance (Native Affairs, Lands and Defence), Tole (Justice), Buckley (Colonial Secretary) and Reynolds (without portfolio). On his return to the colony in Jan 1885 Larnach took over Mines and Marine. This arrangement, which placed the impetuous enthusiasm of Vogel in apparent subordination to the intellectual Premier, satisfied the uneasiness of the country on the point of expenditure. But Stout was not a sufficiently sound economist, or leader enough to curb him, and Vogel proposed in his financial statement to borrow a million and a half each year for the prosecution of public works. He also carried through a loan conversion and released certain accrued sinking funds. Ballance and Stout put through a reasonable instalment of Liberal legislation in the social sphere, notably the married women's property act, the police offences act and the workmen's wages act, together with useful goldmining legislation. Ballance tried some experiments in land settlement in the form of village groups, but these were to have their main utility as experience for the legislators of the next decade. His democratic convictions did not forbid Stout to accept a title, and he was created K.C.M.G. in 1886.

The general election of 1887 found the coun-

try still labouring under the depression, and again it was almost inevitable that the government of the day should suffer defeat. The action taken by the electors was drastic. Stout himself, standing for Dunedin East, was opposed and narrowly defeated by a brilliant, though almost unknown, opponent, James Allen. Several followers of the late ministry offered to resign their seats to enable him to return to Parliament, but he was again willing enough to enjoy a few years of respite, especially as the demands of his legal practice continued to grow. Ballance became the actual leader of the party in opposition. On this occasion Stout was six years out of politics, and in that period developments occurred which completely altered his prospect of future eminence. His Liberalism was directed mainly towards reform in legal, constitutional and political directions. He was an admirer of Bradlaugh as a champion of free thought, but did not share his fear of a new tyranny arising in the name of the state. In a policy speech on 10 Mar 1893 he declared himself a New Liberal, who believed in the state as an agent in the uplifting of humanity. His political attitude was, however, rather academic. If he had become the Liberal leader it would not have been socialism without doctrines, but more likely doctrines without socialism. In 1884 he did not approve of national insurance or giving all workers pensions; that should be left to voluntary societies. In 1892, when the subject had become a matter of practical politics, he proposed a liberal development of annuities through the 'Government Insurance department and companies, making it as simple for the thrifty man or woman to buy an annuity as to buy a pound of sugar or tea. He objected to single tax, and opposed the sale of crown lands.

The Liberal party coming back into power in 1890, Ballance took office as Premier, with adequate talent to take charge of all the portfolios. When he died (Apr 1893) there was a good deal of speculation in some quarters as to the prospect of Stout's returning to the leadership of the party, but his long abstention from Parliament during the formative years of the late eighties made that impracticable. An opportunity of re-entering the House did occur in a month or two, when R. H. J. Reeves resigned the Inangahua seat. Stout was returned.

He represented Inangahua only until the dissolution at the end of the year, when he was elected for Wellington City (with Bell and Duthie). Again in 1896 he was returned (with Fisher and Hutcheson). From the time of his re-entry into politics Stout held aloof from the Liberal party and with a few personal followers gradually drifted into opposition. He had stood for election in opposition, and his group might almost have taken the place of the Conservative party, which was at the time in a moribund condition. But at heart he was a Liberal. He saw much being done by the Government of which he fully approved, and his own interest was being diverted from general politics into the temperance movement, of which he was a leading advocate for many years. His rivalry with Seddon was never a real factor in politics, and any hopes his friends might have had of his return to the premiership faded towards the end of the nineties. It then became apparent that he was likely to transfer from politics to the Supreme Court bench, for which his personal qualities and his distinguished legal career better suited him. On 10 Feb 1898 he resigned his seat in Parliament, thus bringing to a close a political experience in the elective sphere extending over 26 years. A consistent Liberal throughout, he had enacted many measures for the amelioration of social conditions, for the improvement of the system of education and even in land legislation. His handling of the land act of 1877 had so impressed Atkinson that he appointed Stout to the Otago land board in 1882, and thus gave him an opportunity of fighting the system of dummyism that was prevalent in the province at the time.

Education commanded from Stout all the fervour and enthusiasm of the intellectual Scot. In the debate on the education bill in 1877 he made an eloquent plea for a secular system, on the ground that every one of the 90 religious sects in his own province would have their conscience violated if their taxes were used to teach what they believed to be religious error. As early as 1885 he advocated technical education. He was a member of the council of Otago University from 1891 until 1898, when he went to live permanently in Wellington. There he was one of the founders of Victoria University College, a member of its council (1900-15 and

## STOUT

1918-23), and chainnan in 1900, 1901 and 1905. He was a member also of the senate of the University of New Zealand continuously from 1884, and chancellor from 1903 until his retirement in 1923. Though his interest in academic education was profound, Stout was throughout life a free thinker and an agnostic. During the early years of his legal career in Dunedin he was leader of the agnostic school of thought and spoke at many public meetings in the Lyceum hall (aftenvards known as the Alhambra). He was a prominent freemason, but in 1891 became dissociated from the order on account of a manifestation of intellectual freedom. When he was a past assistant grand master of ceremonies and district grand master of Otago and Southland he came into conflict with the grand lodge by obtaining from the Grand Orient of France a warrant to open a lodge in Wellington (of which he was master). Apart from his offence against the constitution in acting without the warrant of the grand lodge of England, Stout was held blameworthy in that he had taken part in an invasion of British territory by a foreign masonic body many of whose members had been declared by the grand lodge of England not to be true and genuine brethren, inasmuch as they had admitted to the craft professors of atheism (1878). Stout admitted his fault, but was deprived of his rank under the English grand lodge. Throughout life he remained a freethinker. His Liberalism in politics persisted, but his active interest after returning to Parliament in 1893, and even after he was appointed Chief Justice, was in the temperance movement. In that he and Lady Stout were staunch and outspoken, demanding complete abolition of the liquor traffic. In an interview with W. T. Stead in 1909, Stout declared himself against the nationalising proposals in England: 'I am absolutely against it. I would have no parley or truce with the sale of poison even if it be labelled alcohol.' In 1893 he favoured direct local control of the traffic by local option, which would remove the question from the sphere of general politics.

Appointed Chief Justice on 22 Jun 1899 (in succession to Sir James Prendergast) Stout administered the office with distinction for 27 years, until his voluntary retirement on 31 Jan 1926. His broad scholarship, his profound know-

## STOUT

ledge of the law, and his humane and practical approach to its administration eminently fitted him for the highest judicial position. The Supreme Court act of 1882, he contended, made court procedure here simpler and more effective than in any other British possession. He had had charge also of the bill adopting Stephen's criminal code. He constantly proposed legal reforms and was insistent that in criminal cases (including murder) a majority verdict should be sufficient. The unanimous verdict required in New Zealand he considered tended to defeat the ends of justice. He was interested also in the reform of the procedure for appeals to the Privy Council. When that tribunal delivered its judgment in the Porirua appeal, Stout denounced in strong terms the dangers of a system of sending appeals from dominion tribunals to be decided by an empire court which was not acquainted with the law of the dominion and was therefore unable properly to interpret it. The outcome of the agitation thus initiated was an arrangement that in hearing cases remitted from dominion courts the Privy Council should, if possible, have sitting with it a judge from the dominion interested. In 1913 Sir Joshua Williams was appointed to represent New Zealand in this capacity on the judicial committee of the Privy Council. In 1921 Stout was similarly appointed, and he took his seat with the judicial committee and as a Privy Councillor after 1924. On four occasions while Chief Justice Stout acted as administrator of the government during the absence of the governor or governor-general (1910, 1912, 1920 and 1924). When he retired from the bench he was still, at 82 years of age, in full possession of his faculties and able to suggest further amendments in the law. Stout was for 15 years chainnan of the prisons board until he was called to the Legislative Council. He was keenly interested in the Maori race, and acted as a royal commission with Sir Apirana Ngata (1907-09) to consider the best methods of dealing with native lands. While in the Government he was much interested in the Polynesian question, and urged repeatedly that the Pacific island peoples should be brought under British rule, and preferably under New Zealand administration. In 1885, when he was Premier, the Samoan chiefs begged for annexation to New Zealand. Stout and his colleagues

## STOWE

were anxious to accede to their request, but were restrained by the earnest warnings of the Colonial Office from taking any action which might antagonise Gennany. Stout was afraid that New Zealand and Samoan interests might be subordinated to distant considerations, and warned the Colonial Office that Samoa was likely to fall into Gennan hands—a prediction that was fulfilled during the Boer war.

Devoted to literature, Stout was himself a graceful and forceful writer. During a visit to Great Britain in 1909 he attended the Darwin centenary at Cambridge and the tercentenary of Geneva University. He was made an honorary LL.D. of Manchester and Edinburgh Universities and an honorary D.C.L. of Oxford.

Stout married (1876) Anna Paterson (1858-1931), daughter of John Logan (1819-95). Born in Dunedin, she was keenly interested in the feminist and temperance movements, and during a stay in England (1909-12) took part in the female suffrage campaign. She was one of the founders of the Society for the Protection of Women and Children and of the Plunket Society. Stout died on 19 Jul 1930, and his widow on 10 May 1931.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; N.Z.P.D., pass.* (notably 27 Aug 1875); *N.Z. Law Reports; Brett's Auckland Almanac, 1879; Review of Reviews; Gisborne (p); Saunders (p); Reeves; Condliffe; Scholefield, Pacific. Who's Who N.Z., 1908; Beaglehole; Rossignol and Stewart; Otago Daily Times, 19 Jun 1879, 8 Jul 1884, 8 Mar 1895, 20 Jul 1930; N.Z. Times, 20 Jun 1879, 18 Aug 1911; N.Z. Herald, 14 Apr 1885, 15 Apr 1891, 24 Sep, 22 Oct 1892, 11 Mar 1893; Evening Post, 11 May 1931.* Portrait: Parliament House; Supreme Court, Wellington.

STOWE, LEONARD (1837-1920) was born at Trolley Hall, Buckinghamshire, the son of a surgeon. He came to Nelson in the *Lady Alice* (1868). In 1864 he was appointed clerk of the Marlborough Provincial Council; in the following year clerk of the Legislative Council; and in 1889 Clerk of Parliaments. Stowe died on 25 Apr 1920.

*N.Z.P.D., 29 Jun 1920; Who's Who N.Z., 1908.*

STRANG; ROBERT RODGER (1795-1874) was born in Scotland and for some years practised law in Glasgow. In 1840 he came to Wellington by the *Bengal Merchant* as solicitor to the New Zealand Company, and in 1841 he was appointed clerk of the peace. He became

## STRAUCHON

deputy registrar of the Supreme Court in 1846, and registrar in 1850, holding that position until he retired in 1870. Strang was a registrar, trustee and lay reader of St Andrew's Church. He died on 22 Sep 1874. His daughter, Susan Douglas, married Sir Donald McLean (q.v.).

Ward; *N.Z. Times, 23 Sep 1874.*

STRATFORD, SAMUEL JOHN (1802-71) was trained for medicine at the Royal College of Surgeons in London. After graduating he served in the army, with the 72nd Highlanders. About 1830 he went to Canada where he spent many years in practice. Stratford arrived in New Zealand about 1854. He contested the superintendency of Auckland in 1861, but otherwise took little part in politics beyond representing Parnell in the Provincial Council in 1871. He was deeply interested in scientific inquiry, and was a active member of the Auckland Institute. He died on 4 Oct 1871.

*Auckland P.C. Proc., 1871; Southern Cross, 7 Oct 1871.*

STRAUCHON, JOHN (1848-1934) was born at Swinton, Benvickshire. His father being factor to the Duke of Portland at Kilmarnock, he was educated at the Academy there and at Pryde's private academy, the Nonnal School and the School of Arts, all in Edinburgh. He came to Otago with his father and brother by the *Pladda* (1862) and was employed for a short time on the *Otago Daily Times*. In 1862 he was appointed to the provincial public works department as timekeeper at Oamaru and later at Hampden. He worked with G. M. Barr and Adam Johnston, and pegged out the telegraph line to the Waitaki. In 1865 he joined the Survey department and, having passed his examinations in 1868, was in the head office in Dunedin until 1870, when he took charge of the Martin's Bay settlement. He was district surveyor in South Otago to 1891, and was then chief surveyor and commissioner of crown lands in Westland (1891), Taranaki (1893), Wellington (1902) and Auckland (1908). In 1909 he became Surveyor-general, in 1910 Under-secretary for Lands and in 1912 also for Immigration retiring from the service in 1914. (I.S.O. 1912.). Strauchon was on the recruiting commission (1915-16), the war relief society (1918-20), the native grievances commission (1920),

## STREET

the timber royalties commission (1923), the North Island representation commission, the National Park board, the Egmont reserves board and the New Zealand Institute of Surveyors (president 1919-20). He died on 24 Dec 1934.

Jourdain; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *The Dominion*, 27 Dec 1934. Portrait: Lands and Survey Department.

STREET, CHARLES HENRY (1824-87) arrived in Otago in 1853 and took up land at Warepa, where he was a neighbour of T. B. Gillies (q.v.). Not succeeding on the land, he moved to Dunedin and accepted a post in the provincial treasury, but in 1859 resigned to join Robert Gillies in the well-known firm of Gillies and Street, land and estate agents. He was a member of the Provincial Council for North Harbour (1864-67) and was in the executive in 1866. He was many years superintendent of Knox Sunday school. Street retired from the business in 1877 to live in Auckland, where he was recognised as a man of high integrity and business capacity, but declined to enter public life. He died on 18 Aug 1887.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*, 1864-67; *Auckland Star*, 18 Aug 1887.

STRODE, ALFRED ROWLAND CHETHAM (1823-90) was the son of Admiral Sir E. Chetham, K.C.B., of South Hill House, near Shepton-Mallet, Somersetshire, who took the additional name of Strode on inheriting property. Strode arrived in Wellington in 1842, apparently accompanied by a brother. A few years later he was clerk to the magistrates in Wellington, and then sub-inspector of police. While he held this position the settlement was threatened by a Maori rising at the Hutt, and all the male inhabitants were enrolled in the militia. Strode, who held the rank of ensign, had extended authority as sub-inspector of police, and under his instructions a stockade was erected at Karori as a refuge for settlers in case of attack. He showed himself a brave and resourceful officer. At one point he garrisoned the residence of H. S. Chapman at Karori. He took part in the fighting in the Hutt valley and in the pursuit of the natives across the hills and up the Horokiwi valley; and he was close to Blackham when he was mortally wounded. Strode received the New Zealand medal for his services.

## STRODE

Two years later (1848) Sir George Grey appointed Strode deputy-inspector of police for the new settlement about to be established at Otago. He arrived there in the schooner *Pe-severance* on 20 Apr with a small detachment of armed police. Three months later he was appointed resident magistrate and sub-treasurer for the province. When the emigrants arrived Strode found himself in the position of sheriff and chief magistrate. There being no local government, he was called upon as chairman of the local magistrates to preside at the meetings at which it was decided what works were necessary to be carried out. A man of pronounced ability and irreproachable character, he was nevertheless not one of the body of settlers, and appeared to them somewhat out of sympathy. As a member of the Church of England he presided at the first meeting, held in 1851, to organise that congregation. He was a churchwarden of the church in Moray place. When he stood for the Provincial Council in 1860 he was defeated for both a town and a country seat. As sheriff, he was the first warden appointed for the Otago goldfields.

A few years later (1865) he was appointed to the Legislative Council by the Weld Government. When the Stafford Government came into office Strode got the impression that they looked to him to assist in passing a taxing bill, and he resigned his seat (Nov 1867). He lived in Otago about 35 years. He was a founder of the Otago benevolent institution, and for many years chairman. He was also for some years to 1878 a member of the Otago land board. In 1869 he became a member of the Otago University council and treasurer, and he remained on the Council until 1884. Strode and W. Fraser (q.v.) owned the Earnsclough run in 1862. In 1873, after holding the position of magistrate for 25 years, he resigned on pension. He went to live for a time at Waikouaiti, and then to England, where he spent the remainder of his life. He died on 13 May 1890.

Strode married (1851) Emily, daughter of William Borton (Banbury, Oxfordshire). She died in 1890.

G.B.O.P., 1846; *N.Z. Gaz.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1865-67; Don; Cowan, i; Ross; Ward; Hocken; McIndoe; *I71dependent*, 9 Jan 1864; *Otago Witness*, 21 Jun 1862; *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Jun 1890, 20 Jun 1930 (p).

## STUART

STUART, DONALD McNAUGHTON (1819-94) was born in a small hamlet on the banks of the Tay. At the parish school at Kenmore he was under a university man named Armstrong, who taught him Gaelic, English, Latin, Greek, and mathematics, a solid grounding for the ambitious village boy. He was a great reader, and did not fail to profit in his education when he was appointed to read for an old couple who took in the *Scotsman* at the expense of a son who had prospered in England. By teaching, and by acting as local correspondent of the *Fife Herald*, Stuart earned money to take him to college. Two summers he spent in England to improve his speed. In 1837 he purchased the goodwill of the 'adventure' school in Leven, Fifeshire. Starting with one scholar at threepence a week, he did so well that in two years he was able to go to St Andrew's University. There by means of a bursary and slight financial help from home he maintained himself for four years as an undergraduate, and clubbed with others to purchase the *Edinburgh Witness*.

As he drew near the end of his University career Stuart encountered a setback. Taking umbrage at the activity of some students in securing the election of Thomas Chalmers as rector in opposition to their own candidate, the senate expelled Stuart from the University (to which he was eventually restored by a royal commission). Stuart went afterwards to New College, Edinburgh, to study theology under Chalmers. In 1844 he took a position as classmaster in a good school near Windsor, where he shortly became principal. While there he carried on his theological studies in London under Drs Lorimer, McCrie, and Hamilton, and completed them at Edinburgh. He was licensed to preach by the Free Church presbytery of Kelso, and shortly after received a call to the parish of Falstone, in North Tyne, near the border of Scotland, where he remained for 10 years.

In 1858 the opportunity arose which brought the young divine to Otago. A second Presbyterian church having been established in Dunedin (known as Knox Church), a commission consisting of Dr Bonar, Dr Guthrie, and Professor Miller (of Edinburgh University) was set up to select a man for the charge - a pious, energetic, and godly man: said the order of reference, 'one who would take a particular

interest in securing the hearts of young men for the public good, and who would visit and allure people to church-going habits.' Guthrie had met Stuart while he was ministering to his parish in Northumberland, and chiefly on his recommendation the commission chose him. In Jan 1860 Stuart, with his wife and children, landed in Dunedin from the ship *Bosworth*. Burns, in a spirit of helpful generosity, went away to Invercargill and left the pulpit at First Church to be occupied for seven weeks by the new minister, in order to permit him to influence as many as he could to join the new congregation. In May Stuart was inducted to his charge, and he entered on his duties with energetic cheerfulness. He remained there for the rest of his life, steadily strengthening his parish and widening his influence in the congregation and the community. In the pulpit and out, his utterances were marked by breadth of view and simplicity and homeliness of expression.

Stuart's activities extended far beyond the narrow limits of the church. He was keenly interested in all phases of education. He was a strong advocate of the establishment of a divinity hall in connection with the Presbyterian synod, and in the first year of its existence he was tutor in church history. The whole of the salary he received for that post he devoted to the foundation of two annual prizes. In 1875 he was a member of the board of advice to recommend reforms in connection with the Boys' High School. Two years later a board of governors was established to control both the Boys' and the Girls' Schools, and he was one of its members. He was chairman until his death. He was an original member of the council of Otago University. In 1871, 1874 and 1877 he was vice-chancellor, and he was chancellor from 1879 until his death. Though he was never reconciled to the surrender by Otago University of its power of conferring degrees, he became a member of the senate of the University of New Zealand in 1873, and remained so until 1881. Stuart always considered it a grave defect in the education act of New Zealand (1877) that it excluded the study of the Bible from the public schools, and both on the platform and in the pulpit he spoke vigorously as a leading member of the Bible in Schools' league. He was a strong supporter of

## STUART

the Patients and Prisoners' Aid society, of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, of the Benevolent institution, and the Industrial school.

In 1872 the University of St Andrews conferred upon him the honorary degree of doctor of divinity, a pleasing recognition of his services by the alma mater which 30 years earlier had expelled him on a point of conscience. In 1888, while on a six months' visit to Great Britain for the benefit of his health, he was elected moderator of the synod. In the following year the Rev A. P. Davidson was appointed co-pastor to assist in the work of the parish, and Stuart commenced to take a less strenuous part in public and church affairs. He died on 12 May 1894. His wife (Jessie Robertson, whom he married at Slough in 1850) died in 1862.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken; Ross; McIndoe; \ferrington; Chisholm; Thompson; *Otago Daily Times*, 13 May 1894, 17 Jan 1930 (p); 12 May 1930.

STUART, EDWARD CRAIG (1827-1911) was born in Edinburgh, the son of A. Stuart, writer to the signet, and received his early education at the Academy there. He was later at Trinity College, Dublin (1847), where he received the vice-chancellor's prize for divinity (1849), and graduated (1850) as junior moderator in ethics ana logic and first-class in divinity. Ordained in 1850, he offered his services to the Church Missionary Society, and was sent to India with the Rev Valpy French to establish a mission college (now St John'S) at Agra. In 1855 he went on to Jabalpur. He was secretary to the C.M.S. Calcutta committee (1860-72), and chaplain to Bishop Cotton. In 1874 health compelled him to seek change, and he visited Australia and New Zealand. Two years later he was proposed for the *see* of Waiapu, to which he was eventually elected on 24 Sep 1877. His consecration took place on 9 Dec. Stuart was Bishop of Waiapu for 16 years, and then resigned to go to Persia as a missionary. There he laboured for 16 years, mainly at Julfa and Ispahan. Stuart married a daughter of the Rev Dr M. de Courcy (Westmeath). He died on 15 Mar 1911.

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; Jacobs; *The Times*, 21 Mar 1911; *N.Z. Graphic*, 19 Dec 1891 (p).

STUART, JAMES MELISS, came from Port au Prince, Haiti, to Napier, where he became a partner in the firm of Stuart, Kinross and Co.

## STUART-WORTLEY

In 1861 he married Mary, a daughter of James Gordon of Glasgow. He was a member for the Town of Napier in the Provincial Council (1865-66).

*Wellington Independent*, 27 Dec 1861.

STUART, ROBERT (1833-83) was born in Scotland. He arrived in New Zealand in 1852, and after gaining some experience settled on a run at Maorirua, on the Edendale plain. In 1857 he brought his first heavy Clydesdale horse from Australia and he bred many fine draught animals. Stuart was a member of the Otago Provincial Council (representing Murihiku) from 1858 to the end of 1859. Southland being then created a separate province, he represented Invercargill (1861-64) in the Southland Provincial Council, and was speaker of the Council all the time. In the late sixties Stuart left Southland and made his home in Hawkes Bay. There again he took a part in local government. He was elected the first mayor of Napier, holding office 1875-78; and was member of the Provincial Council for Suburban North from Jun 1875 until the abolition. In 1876 he contested the parliamentary election against W. R. Russell. Stuart was afterwards appointed resident magistrate at Napier. He was noted for his public spirit and charitable activities. His death occurred on 7 Jul 1883.

Beattie, ii; *Proc. of P. Councils Otago, Southland, Hawkes Bay*; Roberts, *Southland*; *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 9 Jul 1883.

STUART, WILLIAM, settled in Southland about 1861 and sat in the Southland Provincial Council representing Wallacetown (1863-64) and Waikiwi (1864-66). He was an executive member some of the time, and provincial treasurer in 1865. For a number of years before his death (in 1881) he served as a deputy property tax commissioner.

STUART-WORTLEY, JAMES FREDERICK (1833-70) was a son of the second Lord Wharncliffe, and came to Canterbury in the *Charlotte Jane* (1850). He took up land at Ellesmere in 1852 and later became a partner in the Hawkeswood estate at Waiau. From 1853 to 1855 he sat as member for Christchurch Country in the House of Representatives. In 1854 Wortley travelled from Taranaki to Rotorua with Weld, and in 1855 they visited

## STUDHOLME

Hawaii to see the effects of the volcanic eruption. Shortly afterwards he returned to England, where he died on 27 Nov 1870.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Burke, *Peerage*; Lovat; Acland.

STUDHOLME, JOHN (1829-1903) was the second son of John Studholme, of Morton House, near Carlisle. The family, which was of Scandinavian origin, first settled at Hinchcliffe, in Durham, and moved into Cumberland some centuries ago. Studholme was educated at Sedbergh school, in the West Riding. While he was there his father died. Nevertheless he went on to Oxford, entering at Queen's College. He was an exhibitioner of his College and a promising classical scholar. He rowed in his college eight; was in the winning boat in the University competitions, and a winner in rowing competitions at Henley (in company with Gordon Rich, q.v.). Among the fellows of Queen's College then were Henry Jacobs (q.v.) and William Thomson (afterwards Archbishop of York).

At Oxford Studholme became attracted to the colonies and had almost decided to go to Queensland when the Canterbury scheme came under his notice. He stopped short in his university course, purchased land orders, and with his brothers Paul and Michael sailed in Apr 1851 in the *Labuan*. The first land they selected, at Governor's Bay, was too restricted for their purpose, and before long they acquired The Terrace, and The Point, between the Rakaia and Selwyn rivers. In 1852, with George Brayshaw, they went to the Australian diggings, where they were associated for a while with Moorhouse. Having no luck, they returned to Nelson, and John walked alone to Christchurch. Finding the Waiau in flood, he went back to Kaikoura, and persuaded the whalers to row him to the south side of the mouth of the river. Having bought out Brayshaw's interest in The Terrace and taken temporary sub-leases of other blocks, the brothers worked nearly the whole country between the Selwyn and Rakaia, from the sea to the hills. John indulged his passion for exploring, making long journeys on foot and generally alone. Once he walked from Nelson to the Bluff. With the exception of Valpy, the Studholmes were the first white overlayers between Christchurch and Dunedin, and they were the first to cross cattle over the

## STUDHOLME

Waitaki river. -On one occasion (1853) John and Michael walked to Dunedin to purchase cattle. The dealer sought to escape his bargain by declining to accept a cheque on a Christchurch bank. There being no way out of the difficulty, the brothers tossed a coin and the lot fell to John to walk to Christchurch for the money, with which he returned in less than three weeks.

In 1854, with Dr Menzies and Captain E. H. W. Bellairs, Studholme walked through south Otago to inspect the country which had been purchased by the Government from the natives. His two companions stopped at the Oreti, and Studholme continued alone as far as the Waiau. He selected a cattle station near Riverton, some country on the upper Taieri (afterwards Hawk-dun station), and a tract between Makikihi and Waihao in south Canterbury. The last-named, known as the Waimate run, was taken up by Michael, and he drove his effects there in Jul 1854. Three years later the brothers took up an additional 25,000 acres in the forks of the Waihao. John, as the business partner, supervised the distant properties; Paul managed the Hororata run, and Michael at Waimate. Paul sold out in 1858 to live in Ireland, and John made his headquarters on the Rakaia run and built a new homestead on the Hororata river. In 1867 the brothers sold their interest in the Rakaia land and acquired the goodwill of the Coldstream run, then a government leasehold. They paid particular attention to their holdings in south Canterbury, improving the land and constantly importing stud sheep and cattle.

In 1875 John, Michael, Edward Moorhouse and others took up a large block of native leasehold in the Murimutu country, south of Ruapehu. This was at that time cut off by impenetrable bush from Wellington and Taranaki, and all wool and stores had to be carried on pack-horses 120 miles on a Maori track between Murimutu and Napier. The Studholmes afterwards acquired the goodwill of the Maori leasehold of the Owhaoko block, in inland Patea, where a homestead was established 3,000 feet above sea-level. When these proved to be good country there were protracted disputes between different sections of the natives, and the Murimutu wool was held up for two years owing to this obstruction. The expense of litigation caused the partners to withdraw, and Studholme

was left in alone until the end of the Murimutu lease, when the Government cut the land up for settlement. The Owhaoko lease expired some years later. Studholme had a share also in the Te Akau run, north of Raglan, and the Morrinsville run in the Thames valley, and spent much money fencing and draining. By 1878 the Studholmes had sold their Otago properties and Hororata and were concentrating on Coldstream and Waimate. Their total shearing tally on all their properties was about 115,000.

Studholme was not too much engrossed in his properties to play a part in public life. He went into politics several times unostentatiously and modestly, speaking as seldom as he could, and declining the invitation of Fox to join one of his cabinets. He was one of the earliest justices in the province. In 1857 he was elected to the Provincial Council as the first member for Timaru (which extended from tile Ashburton to the Waitaki), but retired at the end of 1858. In 1861 he was elected to represent Rakaia, but retired in 1861. In 1869 he was elected for Ashburton, which he represented to 1874, when he retired to visit England. In Parliament Studholme represented Kaiapoi (1867-74) and Gladstone (1879-81). He was only once opposed, and the only time he ever addressed his constituents was at Waimate in 1879. In politics he supported Fox, Hall, and Atkinson, and he regarded Grey as a harmful politician. In 1864 Studholme was elected to the first Waitangi road board, of which he was chairman. In 1874 he and his brother presented to the town of Waimate an area of 83 acres, which bears the name of Knottingley Park. The Studholmes took a great interest in racing, and were for many years prominent owners. Such names as Knottingley (who won the Canterbury Cup twice), Magenta, Stormbird, Nebula, and Belle of the Isle were associated with the Waimate stables. Studholme was honorary secretary of the Canterbury Jockey club for some years, and for many more a steward and member of committee. In the business world he was a promoter of the New Zealand Shipping Co., of which he was a director for many years and finally on the London board. He also helped to establish the Union Insurance Co. (afterwards absorbed by the Alliance). Broad-minded, large-hearted, and generous, he was modest and retiring in disposition; a good citizen, and a

bold and enterprising venturer.

Studholme died on 7 Mar 1903. He married (1862) Lucy Ellen Sykes, daughter of William Moorhouse, of Knottingley, Yorkshire, and sister of William Sefton Moorhouse. She died in 1926.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Acland; Roberts; Andersen; Woodhouse; *Australian Pastoralists' Review*, 17 Apr 1903; *Lyttelton Times*, 29 Sep 1886; G. H. Scholefield in *The Press*, 10, 21 Mar 1903, 12 Jul 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

STUDHOLME, JOHN (1863-1934), son of the above, was born at Hororata and educated at Farnborough, England, Christ's College (N.Z.) and Christ Church, Oxford (M.A.). He farmed for 40 years in the North Island and at Coldstream, Canterbury. He took an active part in local government, was president of the Farmers' Union (1901) and was prominent in the Bible-in-Schools movement and the Pan-Anglican Congress (1908). Studholme established a chair in home science at Otago University (1909). He served in the war of 1914-18, being assistant adjutant-general. (D.S.O. 1916; C.B.E. 1919.) He published: *Some Records of the New Zealand Expeditionary Force* (1928), *The Work of the Church among the White Settlers of New Zealand* (1908) and *Religious Instruction in the State Primary Schools of Great Britain* (1930). Studholme married first a daughter of Archbishop Thomson, and second Katherine, daughter of Sir Charles Bowen. He died on 26 May 1934.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; Studholme, *op. cit.*; *Christ's Coll. List.*; *The Press*, 27 May 1934 (p).

SUISTED, CHARLES (1810-60), who was born in Carlstadt, Sweden, travelled widely, and having become a naturalised British subject, settled in New Zealand in 1841. He took over what had been Barrett's hotel in Wellington and turned it into a first-class establishment. Successful in this venture, in 1855 he purchased the Goodwood station in Otago from Nairn and Pharyzyn, and imported good stock. In 1858 he sold out, intending to return to business in Wellington, but he died on 19 Sep 1860. His wife, a daughter of Captain Patrick Richmond, died in the same year.

A son, JAMES (born in 1844), was mayor of Westport for many years from 1888, and chair-

man of the harbour board. He married (1864) Laura Jane Eyre, who contributed to many magazines and papers, both in New Zealand and in England, and in 1884 was one of the first women to sit in the parliamentary press gallery. In 1894 she published *From New Zealand to Norway*. Mrs Suisted died in Westport in Sep 1903.

Beattie, ii; Pyke; Roberts, *Southland*; Ward; *Otago Daily Times*, 20 Sep 1860, 8 Sep 1903.

SUMPTER, GEORGE (1836-1900) was born in Middlesex, England, emigrated to South Australia as a young man, and in 1861 came to Oamaru, where he was in business as a grain merchant and land and estate agent for many years. On the incorporation of the borough he became town clerk. He represented Waitaki in the Provincial Council (1871-75) and was for some time a member of the executive (1875). He was one of the first governors of the Waitaki Boys' High School (1879); chairman of the public school committee, 15 years chairman of the harbour board and some time mayor of Oamaru. For 30 years he held a commission in the volunteers, rising from ensign (1871) to lieutenant-colonel (1889) and commanding the district for a while. Sumpter married (1858) a daughter of R. S. Newell (Chichester, England). He died on 11 Nov 1900.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; K. C. McDonald (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Nov 1900.

SUNLEY, ROBERT MAXWELL, was a settler in Bell Block, Taranaki, in the early fifties. He defeated J. C. Richmond for the Grey and Bell seat in the Provincial Council in 1857 and held it till 1861. He afterwards moved to Nelson province.

SUTER, ANDREW BURN (1830-95) was born in London and was educated at St Paul's School and at Trinity College, Cambridge, graduating B.A. (senior optime) 1853, M.A. 1856. He was ordained deacon in 1855 and priest in 1856. For five years (1855-60) he was curate of St Dunstons-in-the-West, and for six years vicar of All Saints, Mile End.

On 24 Aug 1866 Suter was consecrated at Canterbury Cathedral as Bishop of Nelson and created D.D. On 26 Sep 1867 he reached Nelson in the *Cissy* with four clergy. With the discovery of gold in 1866 the diocese had

expanded in the direction of Westland, making extra demands upon his energy and resources, and calling for arduous and dangerous journeys. In his first years in New Zealand Suter created the archdeaconry of Marlborough (1868) and established the theological training college at Bishopdale. In 1873 he took to England for ordination his two first students (T. S. Grace and J. P. Kempthorne, q.v.) and there created a tutorship fund. On his return he founded the board of theological studies and revived the archdeaconry of Waimea (dormant since Archdeacon Paul's resignation in 1860). At the meeting of general synod in Nelson (1877) John R. Selwyn, son of the first Bishop of New Zealand, was consecrated as Bishop of Melanesia. Consolidation of diocesan institutions, the foundation of St Andrew's Orphanage and tile opening of new churches marked the later years of Suter's bishopric. He was a good citizen as well as being a good bishop, with scholarly interests in art and general culture. He was a vigorous supporter of the rights of Nelson under the Midland railway contract. During the labour difficulties of 1890 he organised meetings for the discussion of social problems. In 1889 he was proposed for the primacy. Two years later, stricken with paralysis, Suter resigned his office. He died on 29 Mar 1895.

*The Colonist*, 30 Mar 1895; *Nelson Diocesan Gazette*, Oct 1933. Portrait: *Nelson Evening Mail*, 11 Dec 1926.

SUTER, HENRY (1841-1918) was born in Zurich, Switzerland, educated there and at Munich, and trained as an analytical chemist. Having managed his father's silk works for some time, he decided to try his fortune in a new country and came to New Zealand with his family in 1887. He later took up bush land near Eketahuna, worked in Christchurch and as manager at Mount Cook, and acted as curator of the Auckland Museum during the absence of Cheeseman. An expert conchologist, he was engaged about 1910 to arrange the shells in the Canterbury and other museums. As a palaeontologist he did much work amongst the New Zealand molluscs of the tertiary period, on which he wrote bulletins for the Geological Survey (1915-21). His great *Manual Of New Zealand Mollusca* (1913) described 1079 species, and marked an extraordinary advance in con-

chology. He had also many articles in the transactions and journal of the Malacological Society of London. Suter died on 31 Jul 1918.

*Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vol 51 (p); Suter, *op. cit.*; *The Press*, 2 Aug 1918.

SUTHERLAND, DONALD (? 1840-1919) was born at Wick, Scotland. He went to sea and was still a young man when he landed in New Zealand, taking part in the Maori war (1863-70) in the militia, the water transport and the Armed Constabulary. He served in all the campaigns. He was a sailor before the mast in the Government steamer, and he afterwards sought for gold on the Thames field and followed the same occupation in the back country of Westland. He was settled for a short time at James-town, Martin's Bay. From there he landed about 1877 at the head of Milford Sound, and continued prospecting for gold. Three years later he was joined by a younger man, John Mackay, who assisted him in his explorations and sealing for sustenance. Sutherland occupied for about 12 years a flat of six or seven acres, part of which he cultivated. In 1878 he explored the Arthur river and discovered Lake Ada. By means of a small boat he examined much of the broken coastline and in Nov 1880 discovered the highest falls in New Zealand (1904 feet) which were named after him. In 1890 he found McKinnon's pass (which he named Balloon pass, unaware that McKinnon had already discovered it), and camped on the site now known as Quinton's. About 1890 he married a widow and for many years they kept an accommodation house at Milford. Sutherland made a remarkable collection of natural curiosities and was a close student of the bird life of the Sounds. When he died (24 Oct 1919) his wife declined to leave the accommodation house. He had few relatives in New Zealand.

J. Mylne, *Pictorial New Zealand; Southern Cross*, 15 Feb 1930; J. Cowan in *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Apr 1933 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 6, 12, 29 Oct 1888, 28 Nov, 1 Dec 1919; *Evening Star*, 29 Nov 1919.

SUTTER, JAMES HUTCHINSON (1818-1903) was born at Peterhead, Aberdeenshire, and took to a seafaring life, becoming a master mariner at the age of 21. For 15 years he sailed the world in command of trading ships, including a China clipper. He was part owner and commander of a ship engaged in the Greenland

whale fisheries. When he was able to leave the sea with a small competence he came to New Zealand in the *Alpine* (1859). Sutter was four years in business in Dunedin and on the gold-fields, and in 1863 settled in Timaru, where he opened a general store, timber yard and commission agency. He prospered continuously, and was able to retire in 1880. In the following year he became M.H.R. for Gladstone, which he represented to 1887, when he retired. Sutter was a moderate conservative, but in his second term maintained his independence. He was a member of the Timaru road board, of the harbour board (chairman twice); was 13 years on the borough council, and six times mayor of Timaru. He was also chairman of the Permanent Building society for 14 years, of the cemetery board five years, and of the Timaru Gas Co. Sutter died on 13 Apr 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Andersen; *Timaru Herald*, 14 Apr 1903. Portrait: Parliament House.

SUTTON, FREDERICK (1836-1906) was born in Cambridgeshire and educated at Royston school. Coming to Hawkes Bay in 1857, he entered into business in Napier, and a few years later became interested in land on the Here-taunga plains. In 1867 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Napier Town, which he represented till 1875. For the last few months of the provincial period he was the representative of Napier City East. He was a member of the first Napier harbour board (1875). On the death of McLean he won the Napier seat in Parliament, holding it until 1881, and then defeating Sir William Russell for the Hawkes Bay seat, which he held 1881-84. He was chairman of the Hawkes Bay county council (1877-79) and a member of the education board. Sutton died on 26 Jan 1906.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Daily Telegraph*, 16 Oct 1925; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 27 Jan 1906. Portrait: Parliament House.

SWAINSON, WILLIAM (1789-1855) was born at Newington Butts, London, the eldest son of John Timothy Swainson. His family belonged originally to Wellford, Kirkby Ireleth, Furness, Lancashire. His grandfather held a high position in the customs, and his father, who was lord of the manor of Hoylake, Cheshire, was collector of customs at Liverpool (1807-24).

William conceived a taste for natural history

from his father's collection of British shells and insects, and as a boy neglected his education for that hobby. His progress in languages was hindered by a serious impediment in his speech, and at the age of 14 he was appointed a junior clerk in the Liverpool customs. His passion for natural science developed into a strong desire to go abroad, and in 1806 he was appointed to a junior position on the staff of Commissary-general Wood. In 1807 he proceeded to Malta, and later to Sicily, where he spent eight years with the army of occupation. He had much leisure, which he devoted to the study of zoology and botany both there and in Greece. An outbreak of plague at Malta enforced upon him a new period of leisure, during which he completed his Greek and Sicilian sketches and arranged his collections. Swainson accompanied the army before which the French withdrew from Calabria. He was promoted unusually early to deputy-assistant commissary general (1810), and assistant (1813) and was then appointed chief of the department in Genoa. In 1814 he rejoined headquarters in Palermo. Under the guidance of Baron Bivona and other naturalists, he continued his work for the *Flora Secula* and his study of the ichthyology of western Sicily.

In 1815 Swainson was compelled for health reasons to return to England, and he retired on half-pay to devote himself to scientific pursuits (1816). (F.L.S., 1816.) He now prepared to enter upon scientific exploration in South Africa; but took the opportunity of joining an expedition to Brazil with Koster (which sailed Nov 1816). The revolution of 1817 detained him in the Olinda district, and he accordingly proceeded to Rio de Janeiro, and there made the acquaintance of Dr Langsdorff and other members of the Austrian scientific expedition. With them he made many short journeys, and returned to England with rich collections of plants. (F.R.S., 1820.) He took an active interest in the use of lithography for the production of the *Zoological Illustrations (1820-23)* and in order effectively to superintend this work, in monthly parts, he moved to London, where he spent the next three years. The reception of this publication encouraged him to go on with the early numbers of *Exotic Conchology (1822-25)*, but owing to technical difficulties, he could not finish the work. He was

disappointed in his hope of a post in the British Museum (in place of Dr Leach). In 1823 he married Mary, only daughter of John Parkes, of Warwick, and in Paris he met Cuvier, St Hilaire and others. Thrown back upon authorship by the death of his father (1826), Swainson revised the entomological portion of Loudon's encyclopedias of agriculture and gardening, and afterwards wrote a companion volume on zoology, for which he made the drawings on wood. To be able to do this work, he left Warwick and lived at Tittenhanger Green, in Hampshire. There he spent six years working out his system of zoological classification, which eventually appeared in the *Preliminary Discourse*. After spending six months (1828) sketching in the Jardin des Plantes in Paris, he gave an outline of his views on their natural arrangement. Amongst his publications were the zoological portion of Murray's *Encyclopedia of Geography, Birds of Brazil (1834)*; the birds of the *Northern Zoology; The Birds of Western Africa (1837)*; and a volume on the natural arrangement of the flycatchers (1838).

Swainson in 1835 became a widower. Disappointment and financial losses in Mexican mines caused him to become interested in colonisation as an escape, and in 1839 he purchased land in New Zealand. He became a member of the committee of the New Zealand Company and of the Church of England committee to negotiate for the appointment of a bishop to New Zealand. Here ended his scientific literary work. Before leaving England he married (1840) Anne, daughter of Joseph Grasby, of Bawtry, Yorkshire. Swainson sailed with his family in the *Jane* which, after being laid up for repairs in Bahia for some weeks, reached New Zealand in Jun 1841. He selected three country sections of 100 acres each at the Hutt, and established there his estate of Hawkshead (named after his ancestors' home in Westmoreland). A few months later, when he had his property well in hand, many of his exotic plants established, and two acres sown in wheat, Taringakuri (q.v.) and his followers, who had erected a pa on the bank of the river, claimed the land and commenced to fell trees. For the next few years Swainson was in constant dread of interference. During the trouble at the Wairau he could not move from his farm, though he was a magistrate of the territory. Being on half-pay, he refrained

from taking part in political matters, but he did duty as an officer of the militia and had charge of a body of friendlies in the operations of 1846. Besides his Hutt property he took up a considerable area of pastoral land in the Rangitikei. He made little out of his properties, being dependent for some years on his half-pay.

In the early fifties Swainson spent some time, at the invitation of Australian governments, exploring the flora of New South Wales, Victoria and Tasmania. The Australian trees were a difficult task for the naturalist, even after the work of Robert Brown and Cunningham. Swainson devoted himself entirely to gum trees, and before Jul 1852 claimed to have discovered the principle of their variation. He described altogether 1,520 species and varieties. Late in 1852 he commenced work for the government of Victoria. As a botanical draftsman he showed considerable skill and as an artist in water colours he made many sketches in the Hutt and Wellington districts during the years 1841-49. Swainson died at Lower Hutt, on 6 Dec 1855. He was a member of many learned societies abroad. In addition to the works mentioned, Swainson published *Instructions for collecting and preseming subjects of natural history* (1808; reprinted 1822 as *The Naturalists' Guide*); a description of birds collected on Sir John Franklin's voyage (1831); and papers before the Royal Society (1850, 1854). Mrs Swainson died on 23 Oct 1868. (See J. W. MARSHALL and A. W. F. HALCOMBE.)

Family information from Ian B. M. Hamilton, Lincoln's Inn, and J. W. Marshall; *Leg. Council of Victoria, Proc.*, 1852; Cowan i; Ward (p); Arnold; Wakefield; Lardner's *Cabinet Cyclopaedia*, vol. xi (biog. and p.); *Victorian Naturalists' Society Jour.*, Nov 1908; Royal Society of Tasmania, 1855; Swainson, *op. cit.*; *Taxidenly, with the Biography of Zoologists*, 1840; Mitchell Library, Swainson papers.

SWAINSON, WILLIAM (1809-84) was born at Lancaster, the eldest son of William Swainson, merdlant. Educated at the Grammar School there, he was admitted to the Middle Temple in 1836 and called to the bar in 1838. After practising for some years as a conveyancer, he was nominated by Lord John Russell for the Attorney-generalship of New Zealand (1841). Fellow passengers in the *Tyne* were W. Martin (the Chief Justice) and Outhwaite, a solicitor

who afterwards became registrar of the Supreme Court in Auckland.

On the long voyage, which terminated at Auckland on 25 Sep (after a call at Port Nicholson), Martin and Swainson spent much of their time drawing up rules for the procedure of the courts which they were charged to establish, and drafting some of the acts which would have to be passed by the colonial legislature as early as possible. Swainson displayed a disposition, quite unusual amongst lawyers of his day, to simplify the language of the English statutes so as to make them intelligible to the ordinary man. He was no slave to subtle technicalities, and in drafting conveyancing laws he swept away a mass of cumbrous English precedent. His influence in this respect is very marked in the subsequent legislation of the Legislative Council of New Zealand (1841-51) and of Parliament. Swainson had not merely to draft the legislation, but to steer it through the Council. Rusden remarks that he passed measure after measure which would excite the admiration of law reformers. Finally he had to appear in the courts of the Colony and plead them. He was a very competent advocate. His first appearance as Attorney-general was in the Legislative Council of pre-parliamentary years, and it is possible from the published reports of the session of 1851 to discern his political opinions on a variety of social and constitutional questions. He was an ardent advocate of open voting as against the ballot; he opposed the property qualification for membership of the Legislative Council as tending in a small community to limit the choice of the electors; and he advocated and provided in a bill a statutory qualification to enable natives to enjoy the franchise.

When the constitution of 1852 was brought into operation Swainson was the first member appointed to the Legislative Council (1853). Wynyard (acting-Governor) designated him Speaker of that chamber, and it was thought that he would conduct the business of the Government as well, but the standing orders adopted by the Council precluded his acting in the dual capacity or taking part in the debates of the Council. During the constitutional disputes of 1854-56 Swainson was the principal adviser of Wynyard and the main channel of communication between E. C. Wakefield

and the Government. He became hopelessly embroiled in the struggle over responsible government. Naturally prudent and conservative, he carefully guarded himself against being drawn into too close association with Wakefield. He took the stand that in view of the royal instructions and the constitution itself the Administrator could not introduce responsible government on his own initiative. He felt strongly that continued sittings of the House only exacerbated the feelings of members and prevented cool reflection; and that it was advisable to adjourn while his Excellency communicated with the Colonial Office. The House was prorogued accordingly on 16 Sep 1854, and shortly afterwards Swainson went to England on leave. While he was away the Colonial Office decided, against his opinion, that there was no necessity for special instructions to enable responsible government to be brought in. It was accordingly put into effect, and in the session of 1856 provision was made for the retirement on pension of the three permanent officials (Swainson and one other having been appointed by the crown). He had been superseded as Speaker (8. Aug 1855), and he retired from his official position on 7 May 1856. He remained a member of the Legislative Council until 1867, but his last appearance in the Council was in Dec 1864.

In Parliament Swainson's attitude was strongly legalistic. For instance, when he intervened in 1863 and brought about the downfall of the Domett Government his real object was merely to protest against the absence of a government representative from the Council. Swainson was naturally retiring. He had a prudish horror of publicity and of the profane crowd. Gisborne remarks that he was an able lawyer, but an indifferent politician. His advice was not always sound, as for instance when he advised Shortland that England by the Treaty of Waitangi had acquired sovereignty only over a portion of the islands. He was sharply rebuked by the Colonial Office for suggesting that the royal commission under the great seal could be impugned by a subject, and even by a servant. That opinion he fully recanted in the Legislative Council on 26 Jul 1851, when he declared that the action of the crown was inviolable.

Swainson shared with Martin and Selwyn a passionate zeal for the rights of the Maori, and

lost no opportunity of using his influence on their behalf. He appealed to Parliament to recognise and appreciate their regard for the laws of muru and tapu and their feeling of degradation and loss of prestige if they were imprisoned. He said: 'If but half of the forces which became necessary for the safety of the country had been stationed in New Zealand from the outset; and if the cost of the other half had been employed throughout the same period in maintaining a schoolmaster in every native pa and village charged with the instruction and the moral and intellectual training of the native people, it may be too much to say that the peace of the Colony would never have been disturbed, but it is certainly not too much to say that the foundations would have been laid on which alone the permanent peace and prosperity of the Colony could ultimately be secured: Swainson played an important part in drafting the constitution of the Church of the Province of New Zealand (1857), and in getting it passed through the general synod (1859). He was for many years a member of the Auckland synod and from 1866 until his death chancellor of that diocese.

He had a distinct literary gift, and besides his polished legal opinions he wrote a number of books. Before leaving England he published a pamphlet on the climate of New Zealand (1840). In 1852 he published *anonymously* at Auckland a small book on the city and its neighbourhood, which was afterwards reprinted in England as *Auckland, the Capital of New Zealand, and the Country Adjacent* (1853). Visiting England two years later, he gave many lectures to encourage people to emigrate, and these were published in 1856, followed in 1859 by *New Zealand and Its Colonisation*. Like Martin, he felt impelled to make public his views on the Maori wars. In *New Zealand and the War* (1862) he showed the impolicy of going to war on account of the Waitara block, to which the Government's title was not a good one. Amongst Europeans Swainson had the character of a cultured and amiable gentleman, simple and unostentatious in his mode of life. For 30 years he lived in a small house (which he brought from England) at Tauraroa, judge's Bay, close to the home of Martin. In his early years in New Zealand he made many journeys on foot in the Maori districts, visiting friends

of the native race belonging to many tribes and missions. Swainson died at Auckland on 1 Dec 1884.

*NZ.P.D.*, 1854-64; *App. H.R.*, 1854-56; Thomson; Rusden; Saunders; Hight and Bamford; Reeves; Martin; Morton; Swainson, *op. cit.*; Sinclair papers; Richmond papers; G.B.O.P., 1842-56; *Cycl. NZ.*, ii (p); Purchas; *NZ. Gaz.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Jan, 2 Dec 1884, 13 Jul 1929; *N.Z. Spectator*, 21 Jun, 26 Jul, 2 Aug 1851.

SWAN, GEORGE HENRY (1833-1913) was a native of Sunderland, England, where he was educated; and he trained as a chemist in Newcastle-on-Tyne. He went to Australia (1851) and was in business at Dunolly. Arriving in Wellington in 1857, he started a photographer's establishment in partnership with Wrigglesworth, and in 1864 opened a branch at Napier, which was afterwards sold to S. Carnell (1870). In 1869 he purchased the White Swan brewery, of which he had been a shareholder and managing director since 1866. He was on the borough council from 1876 and was mayor of Napier (1885-1901). During his term he originated the esplanade project as a protective work and also the salt-water swimming baths. He was M.H.R. for Napier (1890-93), chairman of the hospital board and the Hawkes Bay united charitable aid board, and 17 years a member of the harbour board. In 1904 he moved to Wanganui.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *NZ.P.D.*, 30 Jul 1913; *eye!*, *NZ.*, vi (p).

SWAN, WILLIAM TURNBULL (1828-75) was a son of the Rev T. Swan, of Birmingham. In 1868 he defeated W. T. Buckland for the Franklin seat in the House of Representatives, but he was defeated by him in 1870 for the Thames seat. From 1872 to 1875 he sat in the Auckland Provincial Council as member for Thames. Swan died on 15 Mar 1875.

*Thames Advertiser*, 6 Dec 1871, 15 Mar 1875.

SWANSON, WILLIAM (1819-1903) was born at Leith, orphaned when quite young and brought up by his grandfather, who apprenticed him to a shipbuilder. Shortly after attaining his majority, Swanson emigrated to Auckland (1844), where he worked for wages for a while. He then built himself a vessel of 14 tons, and prepared to sail for California. The customs at Auckland refusing him a clearance owing to

the small dimensions of the vessel, he proceeded to Bay of Islands and thence made his departure. Assisted by the knowledge of one of his passengers, Swanson reached Tahiti and afterwards Honolulu, where he sold the schooner and took land in payment. He worked for some time at four dollars a day and then proceeded to California, where he obtained regular employment at from 16 to 25 dollars a day. In 1852 he returned to New Zealand and took up land at a place which was afterwards called Swanson, where he entered energetically into the timber business and prospered for many years.

Swanson was a reserved type of man, reluctant to speak in public, but was held in high esteem and persuaded to offer his services in local government. He was a member for West Ward in the first city board of Auckland (1863). In the Auckland Provincial Council he represented the Northern Division (1863-65) and Auckland West (1865-75). He also represented Newton in Parliament (1871-84). Saunders describes him as 'singularly bold, clear-sighted and courageous, but painfully conscious of his own educational deficiencies.' Holding Liberal views, he was a foundation member of the reform league in 1879. For a few weeks in that year he was a member without portfolio of the Grey ministry, and he took a prominent part in the formation of the Hall cabinet later in the year. Swanson was one of the four Auckland Liberals who supported the Hall Government. He would never solicit votes, and at the general election of 1884 was defeated. A few months later he accepted the Stout-Vogel invitation to the Legislative Council, with the reservation that he must be entirely independent of party ties. He continued a member until his death on 23 Apr 1903. Swanson was a man of deep human sympathies. He supported many charities, strongly championed secular education, and for many years entertained public school pupils. He married Ani Rangitunoa (d. 4 Jan 1897).

*Cycl. NZ.*, ii (P); Saunders, ii; Morton; *N.Z. Herald*, 24 Apr 1903.

SYME, WILLIAM NEILSON (1829-99) was born in Scotland. He came to Otago in 1861 and to Taranaki in 1863. After serving as sergeant-major in the Military Settlers he took

up land at Okato, being the pioneer of that district. He represented Omata in the Provincial Council from 1869 to the abolition, and was a member of the first Taranaki harbour board and New Plymouth education board (1874), the land board and the hospital and charitable aid board. He became a storekeeper in Okato and was chairman of the road board and the school committee. He died on 21 May 1899.

*Taranaki Herald*, 22 May 1899.

SYMES, WALTER (1852-1914) was the son of a Somerset farmer, and came to Canterbury with his parents in the *Ann Wilson* (1857). He was educated at the public school in Nelson, the Wesleyan school in New Plymouth, and finally (his parents having removed to Wanganui in 1864), under Godwin, of the Wanganui collegiate school. Articled to H. B. Roberts (1869), he was unable to complete his term owing to the death of his tutor. He spent four years auctioneering in Wanganui and Palmerston North, and then went farming on D'Urville island. While in Wanganui he was lieutenant in the Alexandra Cavalry (1877; captain 1881), but resigned his commission on leaving the district to take up land at Waverley. There Symes was chairman of the Wairoa road board, and afterwards a member of the Patea county council (1883-95) and chairman (1886-95). He was also a member of the Patea harbour board (1885-95), the hospital board (1880-95), the licensing bench (chairman 1890-96) and honorary secretary of the Waverley and Waitotara racing club (1883-96). In 1890 Symes bought property at Toko, to which he removed in 1896. He was on the Stratford county council (1896-99). In 1896 he was elected M.H.R. for Egmont, which he represented to 1902 (defeating Monkhouse twice). From 1902 he sat for Stratford. He was chairman of the A-L petitions committee (1900-06). Symes formed the Stratford Mounted Rifles (1900), of which he was captain to 1901 (and thereafter life captain). He married (1882) Elizabeth Aune, daughter of John Treweek (Tokomairiro and Kai-iwi), and died on 14 Oct 1914.

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; *Cycl. NZ.*, vi (p); *N.Z.P.D.*, 19 Oct 1914. Portrait: Parliament House.

SYMES, WILLIAM CHARLES (1845-1919) was the son of a Somerset farmer and was born at

Bridgewater. He came to Canterbury with his parents in the *Ann Wilson* (1857), and proceeded to New Plymouth. Owing to the war he was sent to Nelson to school (1861). In 1864 the family went to Wanganui, and about 1873 to Patea. Symes obtained a block of 1,500 acres at Manutahi, where he bred shorthorns and Lincoln sheep and did a good deal of cropping. In public life he was 19 years chairman of the Patea West road board, and 19 years a member and 11 years chairman of the Patea county council, besides being on the Patea harbour board and licensing bench and the hospital and charitable aid board for the combined district. Symes's chairmanship of the county council was marked by the rebuilding of practically all the bridges. He was also chairman of the Patea Jockey club, a steward of the Egmont Racing club and vice-president of the Hawera Hunt club. He married (1886) a daughter of Peter Hume (Wairarapa). He died on 28 Nov 1919.

*Cycl. NZ.*, vi (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 2 Dec 1919.

SYMONDS, JOHN JERMYN (1816-83), the youngest son of Sir William Symonds, surveyor to the Navy, was recommended by Lord Normanby in 1839 for employment in the survey department of New South Wales, and was appointed a draughtsman. He left before the end of 1841 to join his brother (Captain W. C. Symonds, q.v.), in New Zealand. He was appointed acting-protector of aborigines, and was engaged in the survey and purchase of native lands. In 1844 he was sent as police magistrate with F. Tuckett to purchase the Otago Block, and he signed the deed of purchase on 31 Jul 1844. The following year he volunteered for service with the 99th Regiment in Heke's war; received a commission, and was present at Ohaeawai and Ruapekapeka. In 1846 he was appointed private secretary to Governor Grey. He afterwards exchanged into the Ceylon Rifles, and proceeded to England with a staff appointment. He returned to New Zealand in 1849 in the *Berhampore*, in charge of a detachment of the New Zealand Fencibles, and settled with Kenny's company at Onehunga. G. S. Cooper found him a first-class bushman on the trip with Grey to Taupo (1849-50). He was appointed a justice of the peace in 1853. In Mar 1855 Symonds was appointed Native Secretary and a year later resident magistrate at One-

hunga and principal returning officer. He was also magistrate at Kaipara, but resigned in 1858 on being elected to represent the Pensioner Settlements in the House of Representatives (1858-60). In 1861 he was again appointed magistrate and some years later a judge of the native land court, from which he retired in 1882. He died on 3 Jan 1883.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1858-61; G.B.O.P.; *N.Z. Gaz.*; Hocken; Cooper; *N.z. Herald*, 5 Jan 1883.

SYMONDS, WILLIAM CORNWALLIS (1810-41) was a son of Sir William Symonds, surveyor-general of the Navy. He received his commission in the 38th Regiment (1828), rising to a captaincy in 1839 in the 96th Regiment, with which he served for about seven years in the Indies. His father being a prominent member of the New Zealand Association (1837), Symonds was commissioned in that year to bring from France the Maori seamen, Nayti and Jackey, who had arrived at Havre in a French whaler.

Symonds is said to have visited New Zealand first about 1836. Two or three years later he came, by way of Sydney, as agent of a Scots company, the New Zealand Manukau and Waitemata Company, which had acquired a title to land on the Auckland isthmus by purchase from the executors of T. Mitchell. He was living at Kaipara before the settlers of the New Zealand Company arrived. He met Colonel Wakefield there when the *Tory* was wrecked (Dec 1839) and accompanied Dieffenbach in

some of his explorations in the interior, towards Taupo and Tongariro. The land acquired by the Scots company was on the north shore of Manukau harbour, and Symonds laid out the town of Cornwallis near Puponga point. Having been instructed by his directors to afford every facility to Governor Hobson in establishing his government, Symonds assisted in getting signatures to the Treaty of Waitangi (including those of the Waikato chiefs at Mangere). He was appointed police magistrate at Waitemata and was present at the official occupation of the site (18 Sep 1840). As deputy-surveyor-general he co-operated in laying out the town of Auckland, and as police magistrate he witnessed the deed of sale by Apihai te Kawai and his colleagues to the Government (20 Oct). He was appointed member of the Legislative Council of New Zealand on 3 May 1841.

Meanwhile the Scots company published its prospectus; and the first emigrants were despatched in the *Brilliant* (which arrived at Manukau on 28 Oct 1841). Symonds lost his life through drowning (23 Nov) while proceeding in an unseaworthy boat to take medical help to Mrs Hamlin at Manukau. Hobson regretted deeply the loss of one whose energy, zeal, manly bearing and urbane manners were qualities much wanted in a new colony. A powerfully built man, fond of outdoor exercises, Symonds was equally popular with both races.

*Army List*, 1840; Wakefield; Dieffenbach; Brett; Scholefield, *Hobson*; John Barr.

---



---

# T

---

TABART, FRANCIS CHRISTOPHER (1830-1901) was born in London, a son of F. G. Tabart, R.N., with whom he came to Tasmania as a boy. There he finished his education. He was manager of cattle and sheep stations in the Murray and Riverina districts. A fine rider, Tabart in 1855 won the Grand National steeplechase on Triton. In 1858 he married and settled down to farming in Tasmania, but in 1866 he came to New Zealand with John Meredith and took up the Highfield run, Amuri. Having suffered heavy losses through snow (1869), he sold out and went to the West Coast, where he purchased the auctioneering business of Mark Sprot. He was mayor of Hokitika (1874-75) and represented the town in the Provincial Council (1874-75). In 1877 Tabart returned to Christchurch and joined R. Wilkin in an auctioneering business, which he carried on after Wilkin's death as F. C. Tabart and Co. He died on 12 Feb 1901.

*Cycl. N.z.*, iii (p),-v; *Lyttelton Times*, 13 Feb 1901.

TAIAROA, HOR! KERB! (?-1905), a younger son of Te Matenga Taiaroa (q.v.), was disposed to welcome the pakeha, and took full advantage of his opportunities for education, of which he was an enthusiastic advocate. Being possessed of considerable property in Otago and Canterbury, he devoted himself to the improvement of his people, and the model Maori school at Kaiapoi was mainly due to him. Upright, reliable and of high ideals, he stood stubbornly by his convictions. From 1871 to 1878 and from 1881-85 he was member of Parliament for the Southern Maori district. In 1879-80 and again from 1885 till his death (on 4 Aug 1905) he was a member of the Legislative Coun-

cil. In 1888 a joint committee was appointed to inquire into the South Island land claims, and to satisfy the needs of the landless natives of Ngai-Tahu further reserves were set aside. Taiaroa always believed that his father and other chiefs made a mistake in signing Kemp's deed (1848) and the Murihiku deed, and they promoted a petition from the Ngai-Tahu people contesting the land court decision and contending that the sales were carried out under threat of force.

In 1878 he suggested the establishment of a council in which the Maori could manage their own affairs. Such an act was passed in 1900.

*N.z.P.D.*, 15 Aug 1905; Roberts, *Southland*; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Pratt; McNab; Stack; Hocken, *Otago*; Scholefield in *N.z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907; *N.z. Times*, 18 Aug 1905; *Evening Post*, 5 Aug 1905; *Evening Star*, 23 Jan 1874; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Oct 1900, 7 Aug 1905.

TAIAROA, JOHN (1864-1907) was the eldest son of Hori Kerei Taiaroa (q.v.) and a cousin of T. R. Ellison (q.v.). He was the most distinguished of a noted family of Rugby footballers. He played for Otago against Canterbury in 1881, 1882 and 1884, and was one of the most brilliant members of the New Zealand team in Australia in 1884. A fast, tricky runner, very strong on his feet, he played generally at halfback, both for his province (Otago) and for New Zealand. In his later years he played for Hawkes Bay. Taiaroa was drowned on 31 Dec 1907. A younger brother, Dick Taiaroa, was in the native team which visited England in 1888-89.

Information from A. F. Viren, P. H. Tomoana, E. P. Ellison and F. H. Campbell; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Jan 1908.

TAIAROA

TAIAROA, TE MATENGA (? 1783-1863) was a son of Korako and Wharerauaruhe. He belonged to the Ruahikihiki hapu of Ngai-Tahu and to the Ngati-Moki hapu of Ngati-Mamoe, and was subordinate to Tuhawaiki. Taiaroa took a leading part in the defence of Kaiapohia (1831). He had just left on his return to Otakou when the Ngati-Toa appeared. Hurrying back to assist in the defence, he made a bold sortie to destroy the enemy's canoes at the Selwyn river, but was foiled by rain. He then escaped to Otakou with his taua. After the death of Tamaiharanui he exercised a beneficial influence over the tribe and co-operated with Tuhawaiki in two expeditions against Te Rauparaha. In 1835 Taiaroa took command of an expedition of 400 men, in canoes and boats, which followed the invaders as far as Tory Channel and then to Waitohi, at the head of the sound, where a battle was fought which in skirmishes and personal combats lasted for several days. Te Rauparaha, weakened by his long campaign, treated the enemy with some respect and eventually Taiaroa, having separated and killed all the Rangitane he could find in the Wairau, retired southward for lack of provisions. At the massacre of Te Puoho's taua at Tuturau (1836) he wished to spare the Ngati-Mutunga, who had saved him at Kaiapohia, but was overruled. While in Sydney in 1838 he sold a 20-mile square of land to John Jones (q.v.). In the following year he sailed north with Tuhawaiki, with 40 fully armed boats, against Te Rauparaha. It is not certain whether Taiaroa signed the Treaty of Waitangi, though the name appears on the parchments. In 1840 he saw D'Urville, who thought little of him.

From constant intercourse with whalers Taiaroa acquired the habit of drinking and rough manners, and E. J. Wakefield found him habitually speaking in a jargon of whaler slang, broken French and bad English. Tuckett considered him tyrannous and avaricious; of medium height and great strength, with a repulsive Jewish physiognomy. He was generally hostile to the pakeha and several times raided the settlements at Waikouaiti. After the affair at Wairau in 1843 Taiaroa, who was then living at Pigeon Bay (Banks Peninsula), visited Te Rauparaha at Taupo pa, a reconciliation was effected, and he seemed inclined for a while to make common cause against the pakeha. Tai.

TAINUI

aroa in 1848 ceded his claims in Canterbury and Otago for £2000. He was present at the meeting held at Pukawa at the invitation of Te Heuheu to further the King movement, and at a later date was asked to negotiate between the government and Tawhiao. In 1859 he was baptised in the Methodist faith, and on the same day married Karoraina, a daughter of Ngatata (q.v.). She died at Te Aro in 1879. Taiaroa was a prominent figure in the early days of the Otago settlement. He died at Otago on 4 Feb 1863.

Shortland; Selwyn, *Annals*; Pratt; McNab; Whaling; Buick, *Old New Zealander*; Travers; Stack.

TAINUI, WERITA (?-1900), a celebrated Ngai-Tahu chief, was the son of Tuhuru, who led the taua from the East Coast to Westland, defeating the Ngati-Wairangi and sacking Ahaura. Werita was an aristocratic type of Maori of medium height. His tribe came under the influence of Christianity in the late thirties, and C. Heaphy in 1842 noted their devotion. All were baptised and Werita, though never an active Christian, gave the land for a church in Greymouth. In 1860 he signed the deed of sale to the Government of a large part of the tribal lands. In Jul 1864 he and his father brought 50 ounces of gold from Greenstone creek to sell in Greymouth. An elder brother, Tarapuhi (d. 8 Apr 1864) was also a staunch friend of the pakeha. A great athlete and warrior, over 6ft in height, he accompanied A. Dobson in his expedition up the Grey and Arnold rivers (Dec 1863). The whole Tainui family attended the government school. Werita died in 1900.

IHAIA TAINUI, a son of Werita, acted in 1857 as guide to Leonard Harper on his exploration of the Hurunui river and Harper's Pass (when they found gold at the mouth of the Teremakau). He was M.H.R. for the Southern Maori 1879-80, defeating Taihaki and Paratene (Paterson). At the general election he again defeated Paratene by a 6 to 1 majority. In the following year he retired to permit Taiaroa to enter Parliament.

Papers before Greymouth Literary Association, 15 Aug 1868; Harrop, *Westland*; Reid; Hindmarsh; Dobson; *Grey River Argus*, 14 Jan 1928. Portrait; Parliament House.

TAIPARI

TAIPARI, WIROPE HOTERINI (1800-80) was a Thames chief of high rank. Born at Kirikiri, he was a son of Hauauru Taipari and belonged to the Ngati-Rautao hapu of Ngati-Maru, and also to Ngati-Paoa and Ngati-Whanaunga. He was with his father at Totarapa (1821). Not long afterwards he came under missionary influence and at his baptism he assumed the name of 'Willoughby Shortland.' In 1864 he informed A. Mackay of the discovery of gold and tried to persuade his people to allow prospecting, but the influence of the Land League was too strong. Eventually he and Te Moananui persuaded them to employ prospectors on their own land. Gold having been found at Karangahake (1867) Taipari refused to sell the land for a town, but let it on building leases. The streets were well laid out, and liberal reserves were made for churches and public purposes. He himself lived in a good European house, and when visited by Governor Bowen (1868) was receiving an income of £4,000 a year and showing a good example of an enlightened landlord. Taipari signed an agreement with Mackay on 29 Jul 1867 to allow the working of Hauraki. He afterwards became financially involved and sold much of his urban property. Taipari was a firm believer in temperance and supported the cause among his people. He died on 20 Mar 1880. His successor, who bore the same name, was an enlightened leader. Born in 1831, he was an assessor of the court and captain of the Thames native volunteers. He died on 13 Mar 1897.

*App. H.R.*, 1869 A16, 17; Weston (p); Bowen; *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Mar 1880, 13 Jan 1893, 19 Mar 1897; *Thames Advertiser*, 22, 24 Mar 1880.

TAIPORUTU, WETINI (? 1814-60), a well-born chief of Ngati-Haua, inferior only to Tamihana te Waharoa, was a noted warrior. He was brave, genial, kindly and unassuming. Attacked in battle with the Ngati-Maniapoto by three young chiefs, he killed them all. He was with the Waikato taua which took Pukerangiora (1831) and was at the attack on Ngamotu (1832). On 6 Aug 1836 he was one of the special leaders in the feint attack ordered by Waharoa to ambush the Ngati-Whakaue venturing out of a pa on lake Rotorua. Against the advice of his uncle, Tamihana te Waharoa, Wetini led 80 of the Ngati-Haua, with other

TAIWHANGA

Waikato tribes, to take part in the fight for the Maori national cause in Taranaki. He joined Wi Kingi at Waitara and to some extent supplanted Hapurona as leader. He agreed to establish a post at Mahoetahi, where he would meet the assault of the troops while Hapurona and Wi Kingi would fall on the enemy. The three leaders sent a challenge to General Pratt. Wetini was badly defeated, the Waikato losing heavily after withstanding a hot fire from the troops (6 Nov 1860). He fought fiercely with native weapons but was killed early in the retreat. He was buried in St Mary's churchyard, New Plymouth. The taua having lost 51 killed, returned much weakened to Waikato. This disaster was a great blow to the national movement.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Cowan; Gorst.

TAIPUA TE PUNA I RANGIRIRI, HOANI, a leading Ngati-Raukawa chief of Otaki (where he was born in 1839), was closely related through his mother to Ngati-Toa. He was educated by Archdeacon Hadfield in the mission school. During the war Taipua assisted in maintaining the mail service from Wellington to Auckland, passing frequently through hostile country (1861-63). On the death of his relative Te Puke te Ao (1886), he was chosen as candidate for the Western Maori seat in Parliament, and defeated Te Wheoro by 600 votes and three other candidates (including Taiwhanga and Kaihau). Though not a brilliant speaker, Taipua was sound and practical, and sincerely anxious to benefit his people. He was generally opposed to the party in power, and was twice re-elected (1877 and 1890).

*N.Z. Graphic*, 4 Jun 1893 (p); *N.Z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907. Portrait: Parliament House.

TAIWHANGA, HIRINI (? 1840-90), chief of Uriohau hapu of Ngapuhi, Kaikohe, Bay of Islands, was a son of Rawiri Taiwhanga (q.v.), one of Hongi Hika's fighting chiefs, and was born at Bay of Islands about 1840. As a youth he received a fair education at St John's College, Auckland, being particularly well versed in the Scriptures. He also learned the trade of a carpenter and became expert at it, and was one of the crew of Selwyn's mission schooner *Undine* in 1850. Then he engaged in the survey of the Puhipuhi forest. Taiwhanga established a school at Kaikohe (1877) to teachna-

TAIWHANGA

tives in English, and for a while acted as a schoolmaster. He was a man of outstanding ability in public affairs, energetic and indefatigable, but somewhat erratic. He was a member of the delegation which visited England in the eighties to obtain redress of the King grievances. He stood for Parliament seven times for three North Island electorates before being elected in Sep 1887. From that date until his death he was M.H.R. for the Northern Maori. Taiwhanga died at Whakatane on 27 Nov 1890 (just after his re-election). His wife Mere Pohoi died at Kaikohe (24 May 1876), leaving several children. Taiwhanga married (1877) an Irish widow, Mrs Moran, and they had two sons. He was one of the most able Maori politicians.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1887-90; Scholefield in *N.Z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907. Portrait: Parliament House.

TAIWHANGA, RAWIRI, one of the earliest Christian leaders of the north, was a chief of the Urio-hau hapu of Ngapuhi, and lived at Kaikohe. He was a great toa and one of the fighting chiefs of Hongi, whom he accompanied on many expeditions. In 1821 he was learning gardening at Kerikeri under the Rev J. G. Butler, whom he had befriended from the time of his arrival (1819). A man of high intelligence, he made a very successful study of agriculture and showed great competence as Butler's foreman. His knowledge was widened by a visit to Parramatta, from which he returned in the French frigate *Coquille* (Apr 1824). In 1825 he led his men in Hongi's fight at Te Ika-a-Ranga-Nui, where he displayed great gallantry in carrying Moka out of danger when he was wounded. Thereafter he became a devout and well-behaved Christian, and consistently refused all invitations to go on taua. Living at Paihia under the authority of the missionaries, he submitted to their ruling that he could not marry another wife. His children were baptised in Aug 1829 and he himself about six months later, when he took the name of Rawiri. He became a monitor in the mission school at Paihia and an intelligent and forceful preacher. His influence always supported the missions and he believed in rather vigorous forms of Christian propaganda. In 1840 he signed the treaty of Waitangi.

Carleton; Marsden, *L. and J.*; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Ramsden; R. J. Barton; Buick, *Waitangi*.

TAKURUA

TAKAMOANA, KARAITIANA (?-1879) was a prominent chief of Ngati-Kahungunu who lived in his later years at Pakowhai, Hawkes Bay. He was the son of a great chief named Tini-ki-runga and his wife Te Rotohenga, and grandson of Hawea te Marama. He had a full younger brother named Te Meihana and two younger half-brothers: Tomoana (q.v.) and Te Umairangi.

Takamoana and Tomoana in later years were vigorous reformers and tried to save their people from the rapid encroachment of pakeha land-buyers. They did probably more to promote the welfare of their people in pakeha days than any other Ngati-Kahungunu chiefs. At the beginning of the King movement Karaitiana Takamoana was one of the first to be offered the kingship, which he refused, saying that he was not a man that everybody liked. He refused to support the movement at its inception, though later he upheld Tawhiao as King of Waikato. Takamoana and Te Moananui (q.v.) in the fifties claimed the land (Te Pakiaka, Mangatere-tere) which Te Hapuku (q.v.) had purported to sell to the Government. Some fighting took place which resulted in the ejection of Te Hapuku (1858).

When the Hauhau rising occurred in 1865 Karaitiana spoke strongly against the new doctrine and urged firm action, which was successful, to prevent its spread in the East Coast. He received a sword of honour from the Queen. In 1868 he was defeated by Tareha for the Eastern Maori seat in Parliament, but he was elected in 1871 and remained a member till his death (on 25 Feb 1879). In his election speeches in 1871 he strongly urged the need of education in English if the Maori were to prosper and to combat such doctrines as Hauhauism. He continued to oppose land selling.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1871-79; Cowan; Lambert; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Jun 1871; *N.Z. Herald*, Feb 1879.

TAKURUA, a chief of Ngati-Maru, lived in 1825 at the Thames, not far from Waharoa's place at Matamata. His sons, aged about 20, were taken to sea by Captain P. Dillon in the *St Patrick* (1826) and well treated on the voyage to Calcutta. At Barrackpore they were presented to Lord Combermere and the elder (who was called 'Brian Boru') received a captain's uniform and sword. They returned to New

TAMA-I-HENGIA

Zealand in the H.E.I.C.S. *Research*, and could not be landed at Bay of Islands owing to the hostility of the local tribes or at Coromandel owing to adverse weather, but on the return of the *Research* to New Zealand they reached their home with many guns. A few days later Brian Boru was killed in an attack by Hongi. Takurua had agreed to live at peace with Waharoa, but the latter's people attacked and killed him during Waharoa's absence at Tauranga. Takurua's people then abandoned their pa at Matamata.

S. P. Smith; Dillon; Bayly.

TAMA-I-HENGIA, HOHEPA, a chief of Ngati-Toa, was a near relation of Te Rauparaha. H. T. Kemp says he was a nephew. He made the heke Tahutahu-alli to North Taranaki, and afterwards came south with Te Rauparaha (1821). He visited New South Wales and returned in the *Elizabeth* shortly after the death of Te Pehi Kupe. He is said to have conceived the plan of kidnapping Tamaiharanui. Tama-i-Hengia served on whaling ships, and lived for a time with the Moriori at Chatham islands, where he engaged in sealing. He was one who proposed to the Ngati-Awa to occupy that group. He met E. J. Wakefield at the end of 1839 and was present at the battle of Kuitianga.

S. P. Smith, *Taranaki; Polyn. Jour.*, i, 154; Cowan and Pomare; Wakefield.

TAMA-I-KOWHA, ERUETI TE ARIARI, a chief of Ngai-Tama (connected also with Ngati-Awa of Whakatane), was born about 1830. He was at Te Takatakanga (1850) when Ngati-Maru came against Tuhoe, but peace was made. When the later pakeha wars commenced (1863) he was interested in the erection of a mill at Ruatoki. He was an accomplished guerilla fighter and one of the most troublesome leaders of Ngati-Tama in the forests of Urewera (1866-68). From his stronghold in the narrow valley of the Waimana he harassed the settlements near Opotiki. In 1864 he fought against the Government forces at Maketu and in the battle on the beach at Kaokaoroa. Tama-i-Kowha never joined Te Kooti. In Feb 1866 his Hauhau force had a sharp fight at Te Kopane, inland from Opotiki, against Colonel Lyon's force, in which the Patea Rangers killed some of his men. He was overtaken by Captain New-

TANCRED

lands and his position at Kairakau was captured, with the loss of several men and plunder which had been taken from settlers at Opotiki. Tama-i-Kowha kept up his guerilla war, killing the Arawa mailman, Wi Popata, in an ambush at the Waioatahe river and eating portion of his heart. In May 1867 he plundered a farmhouse near the Waioeka gorge and murdered two settlers, whose hearts also he ate. At Puketiki hill, near Taneatua, in 1868, he had a costly brush with a party of friendly Ngati-Pukeko. A strong punitive force under Mair and St John shrank from attacking his stronghold at Tawharemamuka. He made peace with Major Kemp's Whanganui contingent early in 1870, but shortly afterwards was tempted to resume hostilities when friendly natives raided Ohiwa and killed his father as utu for a tribal death. Towards the end of the year he took the field again with a small force of Urewera in pursuit of Te Kooti. Tama-i-Kowha was shrewd, bold and straightforward, a Maori of the old school, savage and ruthless in his methods, but the best leader in his part of New Zealand. He died early in the present century.

*App. H.R.*, 1871 F6a; Cowan (p); Lambert.

TANCRED, HENRY JOHN (1816-84) was born at Boroughbridge, Yorkshire, a younger son of Sir Thomas Tancred, 6th baronet, and brother of Sir Thomas (q.v.). Educated at Rugby under Arnold, he enlisted in the Austrian army as a cadet in a hussar regiment, and saw many years of service in Austria proper, Hungary and Austrian Italy. He served in the suppression of the revolutionary movements of 1848 in Vienna and in Pesth, and took part in subduing the insurrection in Lombardy. While acting as king's messenger he sustained severe injuries by a fall from his horse.

In England on sick leave Tancred became interested in the Canterbury Association, to which another Tancred had lent his support in Parliament, and he resigned his commission in the Austrian army and purchased land in the projected settlement. At the meeting at which the Society of Canterbury Colonists was formed, in Apr 1850, it was stated that Tancred, Godley, and others had already gone to the Colony. In his absence he was elected to the committee of management of the Canterbury Association, and a member of the council of the Society.

## TANCRED

Tancred sailed in advance of the Canterbury pilgrims, met Godley at Wellington, and proceeded to Lyttelton in the *Barbara Gordon* (Dec 1850). Full of experience, and 34 years of age, he took a prominent place in the community. When the Society of Canterbury Colonists commenced to function as the Society of Canterbury Land Purchasers, Tancred was re-elected to the council. Early in 1852 the society dissolved to make room for a body representing all of the settlers. Meetings were called in Lyttelton and Christchurch, and a society formed for each town. Godley was elected chairman at Lyttelton, and Tancred at Christchurch.

Tancred was a candidate for the superintendency in 1853. (It was stated by the FitzGerald party that he had been brought out to split the 'dear land' vote.) The election resulted: FitzGerald 135, Campbell 94, Tancred 89. When the first Provincial Council was elected Tancred was returned as one of the members for Christchurch Country district, which he represented until 1857. He at once stepped to the front in provincial politics. The first executive, of which he was president, held office until Oct 1854. He was again in office from Jul 1855 to 1857. Meanwhile he was called to the Legislative Council early in 1856, and was a member (without portfolio) of the short-lived Bell-Sewell executive, which stormily fought the question of responsible government in a discontented House (1856). He did not return to the Provincial Council for some years, but he was president of the executive (1857-58). In 1855 he was appointed resident magistrate at Lyttelton and Christchurch; keeper of the public records, sheriff, and commissioner of police. As sheriff he headed the petition to the General Government in 1855 for the deportation of Mackenzie (the sheepstealer). When the Stafford Government took office in 1856, Tancred remained out, but two years later Stafford invited his co-operation first as member of the executive, then as Secretary for Lands and finally as Postmaster-general. He administered all these portfolios until the Government was defeated (Jul 1861) over the Taranaki war. Domett called Tancred to office without portfolio, and he was a member of the cabinet (1862-63). In Parliament and in Council, Tancred spoke neither often nor long. 'His mind,

## TANCRED

always firm and manly: says a biographer,' was perhaps of too judicial and philosophical a temperament to be well adapted to the rude, illogical, intemperate **scuffle** of modern politics: While yet burdened with cabinet responsibility, he found time during 1859, to carry out the duties of Hulsean-Chichele professor of modern history at Christ's College, an institution in which he took a fostering interest from the first.

In Dec 1863, Tancred headed another provincial executive, and in 1864 he returned to the Provincial Council as representative of Wainui. His administration lasted until 1866. He gave great assistance to Bealey in his superintendency, and on one occasion acted as his deputy. Returned to the Council for Lincoln (which he represented until 1874) he was elected speaker in Oct 1866 and held that post with great credit for the remainder of the life of the provinces. In 1874 he was returned for the City of Christchurch. Throughout those years Tancred's urbanity and patience were never ruffled. He maintained decorum and allowed no party differences to bring disrepute upon the provincial institutions. In 1871 he was again deputy-superintendent. Having retired from the Legislative Council in 1866 Tancred won the Ashley seat at the election in 1867, and sat for that constituency until 1869. He opposed the Vogel public works policy.

Though Tancred was not a university man, education was with him almost a passion. He was chairman of the first commission on education set up by the Provincial Council (1863). Both before and after this he watched carefully over the various education ordinances. He served as a member of school committees and education boards. He was a fellow of Christ's College for many years, and founded the Tancred scholarship; a governor of Canterbury College (1873-84) and a member of the School of Agriculture committee. When the University of New Zealand came into existence (1871) he became chancellor and held that high office until his death. His interest in cultural matters was lifelong. The Canterbury Society of Arts (founded 1880) owed much to him, and he was its first president. 'A man of the strictest honour, independence of mind, public spirit, and proved capacity, his presence was welcomed in all business, public and private: He held

## TANCRED

many directorates of public companies, and was a member of the Christchurch drainage board and of more than one road board. For some years he was Austrian consul in Christchurch. In the early days he took up a run on the Ashburton in partnership with his brother.

Tancred married (1857) Georgiana, daughter of Lieut-colonel Mathew Richmond (q.v.). She died on 10 Jan 1913. Tancred's death occurred on 27 Apr 1884.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Gisborne; Godley, *Letters; Cant. O.N.*; Beaglehole; Acland; Burke, *Peerage; N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; Cox; Saunders; *Lyttelton Times*, 28 Apr 1884; *The Press*, 10 May 1930 (p).

TANCRED, SIR THOMAS (1808-80), the 7th baronet, belonged to an ancient English family which held its lands at Boroughbridge, Yorkshire, in the time of the Conqueror, and in crusading days gave Sicily some of its counts and kings. Educated at Merton College, Oxford, he graduated B.A. (1830) with **distinction**, and was a fellow (1832-40). He was deeply interested in social reforms, and in a report which he made in 1841 to the children's employment commission on the **conditions** of child labour in collieries and ironworks in the west of Scotland he gave evidence of wide human sympathy. Incidentally he recommended the eight-hour day and better housing, and proposed that educational and religious establishments should be a charge on wealth accruing from the increase of population. In 1839 Tancred married Jane, daughter of Prideaux John Selby, and in 1844 he succeeded to the title. In 1851, with his family, he came to Canterbury, where he remained for a few years, taking up the Malvern hills station in 1852 with his brother H. J. Tancred (q.v.) and Ashburton station in 1853. He returned to England to educate his family and, coming back to New Zealand in 1872, rented a place at Raukapuka, Woodbury. About 1880 he moved to the North Island, making his home at Clareville, Wairarapa. Tancred died on 7 Oct 1880, and his widow on 15 Nov 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Acland; *The Times*, 13 Oct 1880.

TANCRED, SIR THOMAS SELBY (1840-1910), 8th baronet, was the son of Sir Thomas Tancred (q.v.). He was educated at Christ's Col-

## TANNER

lege (1853-54), and at Radley and **Bradfield** colleges in England. He **qualified** as a **civil engineer** and commenced to practise as a mining and railway engineer under Colonel George T. Hemans, whose daughter, Mary Harriett, he married in 1866. Returning to New Zealand about 1870, he acquired an interest in Raukapuka station, south **Canterbury**, and made reports on the bridging of the Ōpīhi, Temuka, Waitaki and Rangitata rivers (1871-72). He represented Geraldine in the Provincial Council (1874-75), and was a member of the first Timaru harbour board (1877). After a few years he returned to England and resumed practice there. He was engaged in the construction of the Tarsus-Adana railway (Asia Minor), and lines in Delagoa Bay, Mexico, Alaska and Kansas and on the Forth bridge. In his later years he devoted his attention to minerals in Ireland. Tancred died on 11 Apr 1910, and his widow on 26 May 1918.

*Christ's Call. List.*; Acland; Andersen; Burke, *Peerage; The Times*, 13 Apr 1910.

TANNER, THOMAS (1830-1918) was born in Wiltshire, the son of a landed proprietor. After studying medicine, he abandoned it and came to New Zealand in the *Larkins* (1849). He spent some time gaining experience with John Cameron (Wanganui), and in 1853 removed to Hawkes Bay. There, as the representative of the 'Twelve Apostles,' he took up a large run on the Ruataniwha plains. He himself owned the land on which Hastings was laid out. He subsequently purchased land in the Ahuriri plain and the Endsleigh and Petane runs. Tanner and William Rich first leased the Here-taunga plains about 1864-65. During the **Maori** war he assisted to raise a cavalry troop at Waipawa in which he held a captain's **commission** (1864) and served with the column relieving Mohaka and Poverty Bay.

Tanner was a member of the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (for Te Aute 1867-71; Hawlock 1871-75). He represented Waipawa in Parliament (1887-90). He was chairman of the education board and the Hawkes Bay county council and a governor of the Napier High School. He was a founder of the A. and P. society, and exhibited sheep with great success from 1863. He helped to found the Hawkes Bay Philosophical society, and was a member of

## TANNER

the synod (1872-80) and chairman of committees. His death occurred on 22 Jul 1918.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.z.*, vi (p); *N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Oct 1918; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 23 Jul 1918, 7 May 1937 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

TANNER, WILLIAM WILCOX (1851-1938) was born at Moulton, Northamptonshire, educated at the Church of England school there, and trained as a cordwainer. In 1877 he married Emily (d. 1927), daughter of John Browett; and two years later they sailed for New Zealand, arriving at Lyttelton by the *Wai-tara* in Dec 1879. Tanner took an active part in trades unionism and friendly society and local body work in Christchurch, and in the general strike of 1890 was a prominent mediator. At the general election at the end of the year he was returned as one of the Labour members (representing Heathcote), and he sat continuously in Parliament until 1908. He was defeated then by G. W. Russell (q.v.), for the Avon seat, which he had represented since 1893: In Parliament he gave a general support to Liberal policy and was chairman of the public accounts and railway committees. In 1895 he was a member of the tariff commission.

Tanner was a member of the Ferry road (now Woolston) school committee, of the Woolston borough council (1893-1900) and the North Canterbury hospital board (1911-14). As a boy he joined the Ancient Order of Foresters in England, becoming chief ranger of court Star Centre of England, and soon after arriving in New Zealand he held the same position in court Star of Canterbury (and later district office). He was a Forester for more than 60 years. Tanner died on 27 Dec 1938.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 30 Jun 1939; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 31 Dec 1938; *Evening Post*, 16 May 1939. Portrait: Parliament House.

TAPLEY, HAROLD LIVINGSTONE (1875-1932), who was born at Semaphore, South Australia, and educated in that colony, came to New Zealand in 1893 as representative of an insurance company, and in 1900 established his own business as shipping, stevedore and insurance agents. He was a member of the Dunedin City Council (1907-11), of the Otago hospital and charitable aid board (1908-11) and of the Otago harbour board (1913-20; chairman, 1919-20). In 1921 he was again elected to the City Council,

## TAPSELL

and was mayor (1923-27). Tapley was a governor of the High Schools and Tedmical College (1923-27), and a member of the Ocean Beach domain board, and president of the Overseas club (1921-27). He was a promoter of the Exhibition in Dunedin (1925-26), a director of the company and vice-patron of the Exhibition. (C.M.G. 1926.) In 1925 he was elected member of Parliament for Dunedin North, but was defeated in 1928. In 1900 he married Jean Brodřie, daughter of Thomas Burt, Dunedin. He died on 21 Dec 1932.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Jan 1933; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Otago Daily Times* and *The Dominion*, 22 Dec 1932 (pp); *Evening Post*, 21 Dec 1932 (p).

TAPSELL, PHILIP (1799-1873) was born in Copenhagen, Denmark, the son of a civil servant. At the age of eight he lost his mother and narrowly escaped death when the cutter in which he was a passenger was burned at sea. At the age of 14 he went to sea in a Danish brig, and in six years had become a competent seaman and navigator. The brig being sold in London, he shipped in a whaler, taking the name of Tapsell and declaring himself a Manxman in order to avoid suspicion. Off Timor (East Indies) he and other members of the crew stole a boat and deserted to escape the harshness of the captain, but were persuaded by the sultan of Boru to return to duty. Returning to Europe, he sailed as boatswain of a Hamburg ship, and then became master of a Danish cutter for service against England. He captured an English prize, which he brought in safely after a chasing frigate had run herself ashore. Tapsell then became commander of a privateer, the *Cortadla* (or *Cort Adeler*) and was severely wounded in repulsing a cutting-out attack by English boats as she lay at anchor close in shore. Being impeded by ice, the *Cortadla* fell into the hands of the Swedes, and Tapsell was in captivity for some months. After serving as mate in a Dutch ship to Riga, he was appointed to a British Government vessel taking stores to Malta. In 1809 he shipped as mate in the whaler *New Zealandel'* (Captain Parker). While on the whaling grounds they heard of the *Boyd* affair at Whangaroa and the *New Zealander* left her whaling to assist in the punishment of Te Pahi (at Bay of Islands) in the belief that

## TAPSELL

he was implicated. Parker claimed to have wounded the unfortunate chief.

Tapsell in 1815 shipped in the *Catherine*, carrying convicts to Australia and again engaged in the New Zealand whale fishery. In 1823 he was in the country as mate in the *Asp* (Captain Brind) when the Ngapuhi were returning from their victorious expedition in the south. He was married by the missionary Kendall to Maria Ringa (a Ngapuhi girl), this being the first Church of England marriage in New Zealand. Tapsell left England again as mate in *The Sisters* (Captain Duke). As they lay in Bay of Islands (Jan 1827) the brig *Wellington* came in in the hands of convicts. The captain being reluctant to take action, Tapsell fought the ship in co-operation with other whalers and recaptured the *Wellington*. On arrival at Sydney Duke dismissed him for his part in the affair, and both Duke and Tapsell years afterwards claimed from the Government for their services. After serving as pilot in H.M.S. *Rainbow* he commanded the schooner *Darling*, taking missionaries to Tonga. Then in the *Samuel* he landed sealers at Codfish island (New Zealand) and returned Maori sealers from the south to Port Nicholson. Maria Ringa having left him immediately after their marriage, Marsden found him a Maori wife, a sister of Waikato. They were duly married and when Tapsell next sailed from Sydney (in the *Minerva*) he took his wife with him to the fisheries. In 1830 he received a quantity of muskets and trade from Jones and Walker (Sydney) and established himself as a trader at Maketu on the invitation of the Arawa chiefs of Rotorua, to whom the place belonged. He was under the personal protection of the Ngai-te-Rangi chief Hori Tupaea (q.v.), from whom he bought land for his store.

For a few years Tapsell did well, purchasing flax and other produce and selling arms and manufactures to natives along the coast and inland as far as Rotorua. He saved the lives of many captives, both pakeha and Maori, by purchasing them for himself. The feud between the Arawa and Ngapuhi and the Ngai-te-Rangi and Ngati-Haua (under Waharoa) caused him much anxiety. On one occasion he rescued his allies from certain destruction by sending out the women to Te Tumu with supplies of ammunition (1833). Having lost his wife, he mar-

## TARA

ried another, Hine-i-Turama, of the Ngati-Whakae tribe of Arawa (the marriage being celebrated in 1841 by Pompallier). Many years later, having taken another husband and joined the King natives, she was bayoneted to death in the pa at Orakau (Apr 1864). In 1835 Maketu was stormed and sacked by Waharoa's taua, and Tapsell had great difficulty in protecting the wounded chief Haupapa until he died. Having lost everything he possessed, Tapsell with his wife and family fled by way of the Rangitaiki river to Rotorua and took refuge on Mokoia island, where their son Retireti (Retreat) was born. The Arawa would not allow him to accompany the avenging taua to Maketu, but he bargained with them not to injure Tupaea. Having decided to leave New Zealand, Tapsell had a canoe built and hauled across overland to Kapanga, on the Rangitaiki river, by which means he and his family made their way to Matata. Reaching Sydney, he made a composition with the merchants to whom he was indebted and, loading the schooner *Harlequin* with trade, he returned to Bay of Plenty and established himself at Whakatane, purchasing native produce and settling agents along the coast and inland for this purpose. He afterwards lived for a while at Whale island, one of three islands which his sons claimed.

Tapsell died on 6 Aug 1873. His sons figured in the Maori wars of the sixties.

Cowan, *Tapsell* (p); Marsden, *L. and J.*, and *Lieutenants; Southern Cross*, 5 Apr-4 Aug 1869.

TARA, or GEORGE (?-1825), a Whangaroa chief of Ngati-Pou, served aboard several whalers and worked his passage to Port Jackson. There he met the Rev Samuel Marsden and spent some time at Parramatta. In these years of travelling he acquired a coarse and familiar manner and a fluent command of English. He was rather under medium height, not prepossessing in appearance and (according to Nicholas) avaricious and at times violent. In 1809, Tara and some other Maoris were shipped under Captain Thompson in the whaler *Boyd*, 500 tons, which left Port Jackson to load in New Zealand. Tara suffered from seasickness, and Thompson, ignoring his remonstrances that he was a chief, had him flogged for failing to take his turn of duty. Hearing that there was good timber on Tara's

land, Thompson decided to put into Whangaroa for spars. As soon as the *Boyd* arrived Tara informed the chief (Te Pahi) of his treatment, and plans were made to sack the ship while the boat's crews were ashore. Tara and Te Pahi took an active part in killing the whole of the crew. Only a woman and two children were saved by the intervention of Te Pahi (q.v.), who happened to be on a visit from Bay of Islands. Tara's father and five others were blown up by an explosion of powder. Marsden in 1815 inquired into the outrage, which he ascribed to the ill-treatment of Tara, and he used every effort to bring about peace between Te Pahi's people and the Ngati-Pou, who had been at war since 1809. Kendall visited Tara in May 1815, when he had just returned from a successful five months' cruise on the East Coast, killing many enemies. In this year his brother Te Pahi went to Sydney with Marsden. Tara was afraid to go lest he should be tried for the *Boyd* outrage. He felt keenly the contempt of the Ngapuhi chiefs, but Marsden treated him with consideration and confidence and assured him of his safety. In 1819-20 Tara and Te Pahi assisted to load the *Dromedary* with spars. In Aug 1823 Marsden purchased from Tara land at Kao for the Wesleyan mission, which the chief pledged himself to protect. While he lived the mission survived repeated assaults by the Ngati-Pou, in which Tara's brother Te Pahi was conspicuous. In 1823 Tara, still afraid to visit Port Jackson lest he should be arrested and punished, sent his brother's daughter with the Leighs instead. Though repentant for his part in the *Boyd* massacre, he again showed a bad example in pillaging the *Mercury*. His death in Dec 1825 was the signal for renewed hostility, culminating in the sacking of the mission in 1827. Te Pahi was killed in the girls' war (1830).

Cruise; Nicholas; Marsden, L. and J.; and *Lieutenants*; Ramsden; Carleton.

TARAIA NGAKUTI TE TUMUHUIA (? 1790-1872), a leading chief of the Ngati-Tama-Tera, occupied as high a position in the Thames district as Potatau did in Waikato. His youth and manhood were full of warlike experiences, and he was one of the leading chiefs of the Marutuahu confederation. In 1824, with other Ngati-Maru chiefs, he led a taua through the Urewera country. Reinforced at Ruatahuna by a strong

party of Urewera, Arawa and Ngati-Awa, he marched to Waikaremoana, crossed the lake, and proceeded to Wairoa to exact utu for the Urewera chiefs Te Toroa and Rangiwaitao. At the same time a Ngapuhi force came by sea round East Cape and, with the advantage of their muskets, assaulted the Ngati-Kahungunu pa at Titirangi. The Urewera and their allies overran the Nuhaka and Wairoa districts, while Taraia captured a number of fortified villages of the Ngati-Kahungunu and took many prisoners. (As a direct result of this campaign blood was again shed after the declaration of British sovereignty, when Kopu came to take back his tribesmen.) In 1826 Taraia commanded the Ngati-Maru and Ngati-Paoa taua which attacked and killed Pomare at Te Ron: in Waikato. Taraia himself shot Pomare a second time. In 1828-29 he accompanied Te Rauparaha on the heke Whirinui (with Abu Karamu and Taratoa). In 1831, with Te Rohu and a party of Ngati-Tama-Tera, he assisted Te Rauparaha in his expedition against the Ngai-Tahu, when Kaikoura and Kaiapohia were captured. After taking two strong pas in Akaroa harbour they returned to Kapiti with many slaves, and Taraia led his taua back to the north.

Dr Logan Campbell in 1840 lived for a while with Taraia's tribe, and attended his son, Te Rite, who had been badly burned. Taraia was constantly at war with the Tauranga tribes. In 1842, when living quietly in his pa, he received insulting letters which precipitated a new quarrel, and he marched against a Ngai-te-Rangi pa at Ongare (Kati Kati) with 40 men. Te Whanake was surprised and killed with a number of his people, some of whom were devoured in a cannibal feast, the last in New Zealand. Returning home, Taraia insulted his Christian neighbours and defiled the church. Shortland (who was acting-Governor) went to his pa at Purua, Thames, to warn him, but Taraia rejoined hotly that the Governor had no right to interfere in purely Maori quarrels. Shortland prudently desisted from taking sterner measures. Becoming reconciled to British rule, Taraia was the trusted friend of Governor Grey, whom he accompanied to Otaki when Te Rauparaha was returned to his people (Jan 1848). In 1850 he marched a taua against the Ngati-Manawa at Whirinaki, but Tuhoe

came to their rescue. He was too old to take part in the Waikato wars, but at a meeting with Governor Bowen at Thames early in 1870 he still showed great agility.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Buller; Campbell; Thomson; Bowen; Cowen, *Sketches* (p); Phillimore and S. L. Voolner, *The New Zealand Question*; Carleton; *Waka Maori*, 1871, p. 5, 67; *Wanganui Weekly Herald*, 30 Mar 1872.

TARANUI TE POKIHA (?-1901) was a well known chief of the Ngati-Pikiao tribe of Arawa, and lived at Rotoiti. He had great influence with his tribe, whom he persuaded in 1864 to prevent the East Coast tribes marching into the Waikato to join the King natives. In Apr he commanded 600 Arawa who, with 200 of the 43rd Regiment, garrisoned a fort on the bank of the Waihi river near Maketu. A body of soldiers being isolated in rifle pits exposed to a withering enemy fire, Pokiha (Fox) led his men across 500 yards of open ground to their relief. When night fell the whole force withdrew safely, Macdonnell and Pokiha being the last to leave the trench. He was recommended for the New Zealand Cross, but did not receive it. He was, however, presented with a repeating rifle as the bravest man of the force, and received a commission as major. He distinguished himself at Te Kaokaoroa and Te Teko.

On the renewal of hostilities he again took the field. In 1865, at the siege of Pa-harakeke, Pokiha, with 20 picked men, volunteered to silence the pa, and they swam across the river with their rifles. Pokiha then called upon the defenders to surrender, and when that failed invited the hapu Te Tawera to come out and be saved. As a result the whole force surrendered. Pokiha was engaged for many months in the chase of Te Kooti in the Urewera, taking a leading part in the capture of fort Te Harema (6 May 1869). He killed five Hauhau and captured the women and children. His was the only Arawa contingent which continued the pursuit, in very difficult country. Later he received a sword of honour.

In the late eighties Pokiha developed amongst the Ngati-Pikiao a form of religious observance somewhat similar to that of Te Kooti. It was known as 'Fox's Karakia.' He died on 11 Jul 1901.

Cowan; Mair.

TARATOA, HENARE WIREMU (? 1830-64) was baptised and taught by Archdeacon Williams, after whom he was named. He afterwards attended St John's College (1845-52), where he showed great promise, and was very devout. He took a part in the foundation of the Melanesian Mission. Being sent in Jun 1852 as native assistant to the Rev W. Nihill, he landed at Māre and helped to prepare for the permanent mission. Taratoa was considered too impetuous in temper for the Christian ministry, and in 1858 he was appointed head teacher to Otaki where he ministered until 1861. He then settled at Tauranga, where he established a school in arithmetic and 'christening.' He did his best to organise local governing bodies amongst the Maori and always took a leading part in civil and religious matters. Though strongly averse to fighting, he felt conscientiously drawn into the war, and took the field with the natives against the troops at Tauranga. He refused to fight on Sundays and risked his life again and again by tending the wounded, British and native, in the field. He was thus engaged all the night after the fight at Gate Pa, and again at Te Ranga, where he met his death in action a month or two later (21 Jun 1864). On his body were found the orders of the day, counselling kindness to the enemy.

Tucker; Cowan (p); J. K. Davis (p); *Wellington Independent*, 19 Aug 1857. Portrait: Alexander Turnbull Library.

TARATOA, NEPIA, or MAUKIRINGUTU (? 1793-1863), chief of the Ngati-Parewahawaha hapu of Ngati-Raukawa who resided at Manawatu in 1842, was a son of Teteke and Te Au. He raised an army against Waikato and displayed great bravery in command of a small force of 60, when Pomare with 800 men was only a few miles away. He also showed great bravery against the Ngati-Kahungunu. Taratoa was a friend of Te Rauparaha, and his daughter married the eldest son of Whatanui. Anxious to acquire European articles, he moved from Maungatautari to Kapiti about 1828. This migration was called the heke Kariritahi, because the warriors enlarged the touch-holes of their guns. By agreement with Whatanui and Te Rauparaha, Taratoa was given mana over the Rangitikei district, where E. J. Wakefield met him in 1842. Like Whatanui he treated

## TAREHA

kindly the dispossessed tribe on his lands (in this case the Ngati-Apa). He died at Matahiwi, Rangitikei, on 14 Jan 1863.

After Taratoa's death his son, Nepia Maukiringutu, opposed the sale of the block, but he was overborne by Kawana Hunia and other Ngati-Apa chiefs, who in concert with Keepa te Rangihwinui revived their claim to the conquered lands and brought armed forces fresh from the war to enforce it.

E. J. Wakefield; Buick, *Old Manawatu*; T. C. Williams, *New Zealand-the Manawatu Purchase Completed*, 1867, *A Letter to the Rt. Hon. W. E. Gladstone . . . on behalf of the Ngati-Raukawa Tribe*, 1873.

TAREHA was a Ngapuhi chief of the Ngati-Rehia, who resided at Kerikeri and Takou and owned Ti point near Waitangi. He is described as one of the largest men in the north. In 1815 he participated in the killing and eating of sailors of the *New Zealander* who robbed his garden. In May 1820, while Hongi was abroad, he led an expedition against Kaipara to obtain utu from Ngati-Whatua for Moremonui. Accompanied by Rewa, Moka and Hare Hongi he passed from Mangakahia down the Wairoa river with about 3,000 men, and returned in Dec followed by Murupaenga. On this expedition he captured Tauhara, at the north head of Kaipara; Tareha spared all his prisoners. In 1821 he was present at Te Totara. He attacked Waharoa at Matamata; was severely repulsed in a sortie of the garrison and retired from the siege, declining Waharoa's invitation to single combat. In 1823 he accompanied Hongi to Rotorua. Tareha met Marsden and provided a site for Butler's mission, but continued to be troublesome to the missionaries and had to be restrained by Hongi. In 1827 he plundered Europeans at Kororareka. In 1830 Tareha married the widow of the chief Hengi, who had been killed at Kororareka, thus initiating further fighting. He accompanied Titore on his Tauranga expedition in 1831. In 1835 he still held out against Christianity.

S. P. Smith; Carleton; Marsden, *L. and J.*, and *Lieutenants*; Ramsden.

TARINGA KURI, or TE KAEAEA, was a chief of the Ngati-Tama division of Ngati-Awa and was connected also with Ngati-Maniapoto. A son of Whanga-taki and Hinewairoro and

## TARINGA KURI

brother of Te Puoho (q.v.), he lived at Pata-ngata, on the south bank of the Tongaporutu, the pa being an island at high water.

Kaeaea was a very distinguished warrior, who at the siege of Kawau pa in north Taranaki crucified in the doorway Taiporutu, the father of Waharoa (q.v.). Having obtained two muskets from Hongi at Hokianga, and three more for his clan, Kaeaea was on taua when the battle of Motunui was fought (1821). Hence the thueat of Te Rauparaha to Te Wherowhero of danger in his rear. On that campaign Kaeaea helped to defeat the Ngati-Vrunumia (of Ngati-Maniapoto) at Otama-Kahi (1822). He moved from Poutama, in northern Taranaki, with his tribe in the heke Vaua (1832) and settled at Waikanae. Thus he was absent from the siege of Ngamotu. With 30 or 40 men he reinforced Otaka during the night but left before daylight. He was called 'Taringa Kuri' from a sarcastic retort of Rangihaeata that 'anyone who could not understand what he said must have dog's ears.' After the massacre of the Ngati-Tama at Te Tarata in 1829, Kaeaea mustered 140 of the Ngati-Tama and Ngati-Toa from Kapiti and Waikanae and a body of Ngati-Mutungua from Port Nicholson (about 340 altogether) and attacked the Ngati-Kahungunu pa at Pehikatia in Wairarapa, killing many of the defenders and saving very few of the prisoners. He settled with a small body at Kaiwara, and declined the invitation of Wharepouru to return to Maungatautari. When the Europeans came to Port Nicholson Taringa Kuri still had his home at Kaiwara and he received for his people about a sixth of the payment made by Colonel Wakefield for the purchase of Port Nicholson. Disputes arose about the Hutt Valley land, and he and his people cut a line as a boundary, contending that the upper valley belonged to Ngati-Tama. In 1842 they built a pa, Makahinuku, about Boulcott's farm and commenced to cultivate land which had been sold to W. Swainson (q.v.). Though he had sold the land for fear of Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Toa, Kaeaea was now supported by the Ngati-Toa chiefs, who were incensed at Ngati-Awa taking possession of the valley. When the attack was made on Boulcott's farm Kaeaea was with Governor Grey in the *Driver* at Auckland.

Commissioner Spain considered him a crafty and troublesome chief and he certainly abetted

## TARLTON

Te Rauparaha in regard to the Hutt disturbances in 1845. In 1855, to prevent him returning to claim his ancestral lands at Taranaki, the Government paid £400 for land at the Hutt on which Taringa Kuri might reside. There Governor Bowen visited him in 1869. He died on 5 Oct 1871.

Cowan, i, 84; *Polyn. jour.*, vol. i, p. 86; E. J. Wakefield; Bowen; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki; Waka Maori*, 1871; H. M. Jervis in *N.Z. Herald*, 23, 30 Apr 1892.

TARLTON, WILLIAM FRANCIS, came to Otago in the *Bosworth* (1857) and settled at Riverton before 1859. A school teacher and a man of scholastic mind, he was known by his confreres in politics as the 'Roman citizen.' Tarlton was M.P.C. for Murihiku in the Otago Provincial Council (1860-61), and was a member of the executive in 1860. On the separation of Southland he represented Invercargill in the Southland Provincial Council (1861-64) and Longwood in 1865. Here again he was on the executive for a year (1864-65).

*Southland P.C. Proc.; Riverton Record; Southern Cross* (Invercargill), 8 Mar 1930.

TARRANT, HENRY ALEXANDER (1832-1907) was born in Middlesex, was educated at a private school, and farmed for a few years before emigrating to Nelson in the *Agra* (1852). For five years he laid out roads under the survey department, and as county engineer for Waima he constructed many roads and bridges. He represented Motueka in the Provincial Council (1869-75). Tarrant was 12 years a member and three years chairman of the Nelson education board, and was a prominent Anglican churchman. He died on 15 Mar 1907.

*Colonist jubilee Souvenir*.

TASMAN, ABEL JANSZON (? 1603-59) was born at Luytegest, in the province of Groningen, in the Dutch Netherlands. In 1633 he shipped to the East Indies before the mast, and in the following year was skipper of a yacht on the general service of the Dutch East India Company. He returned to the Netherlands in 1636, but in 1638 sailed again for the East. In 1639, with Matthew Quast, he was sent by the Governor-general of the Dutch East Indies, Antony van Diemen, to search for reputed islands of gold and silver east of Japan. He

## TASMAN

visited the Philippines and Bonin island, sailed at large in the north Pacific and returned to Batavia.

In 1642 he entered upon his first expedition in search of the 'great south land: Terra-Australis incognita. This was planned by Frans Jacobzoon Visscher, the ablest East Indian pilot of the time and a man of great vision, and strongly backed by van Diemen, who wished also to complete the discovery of New Holland (Australia). Visscher sailed on the expedition as Pilot-major. Leaving Batavia on 14 Aug 1642 with two vessels, the *Heemskelck* and *Zeehaen*, Tasman touched at Mauritius and then, sailing south and east for seven weeks, sighted the coast of what he called Anthonij van Diemens landt (now Tasmania). After sailing round part of the coast he took possession at Frederick Henry's bay and on 5 Dec set a course in an easterly direction, expecting to sail to the longitude of the Solomon islands in his circumnavigation of Australia. On 13 Dec he discovered, 'high mountainous country: to which he gave the name of 'Staten landt' (after the States of Holland) in the belief that it was part of the same continent as Staten land (of South America), which had been discovered by Schouten and Le Maire. It was in reality the west coast of the South Island of New Zealand. Steering northwards, Tasman anchored at midnight of 17 Dec off a sandspit (Farewell Spit) beyond which there was a large open bay. On the 18th the ships stood into the bay and anchored in 15 fathoms, the boats having gone ahead in search of a watering place. The smoke of fires was seen in different directions, and at sunset the boats returned, followed by two others filled with natives. A good watch was set during the night. On the following morning a boat with 13 natives approached but paddled off without boarding the ships. Tasman then held a council of the officers of both ships, which decided, as the savages seemed friendly and the anchorage was good, to go as near inshore as possible. During this council seven more canoes filled with natives came off, and the boat of the *Zeehaen* was accordingly sent, with a quartermaster and six men, to warn the people in that vessel to be on their guard. No sooner had the boat drawn clear of the *Zeehaen*, on its return journey, than a large canoe, paddling furiously,

rammed it and attacked its occupants. The quartermaster and two seamen swam for the *Heemskerck* and were picked up, but three seamen were killed and a fourth mortally wounded. One of the bodies was carried off by the Maori. Believing that there could now be no friendly intercourse with the natives and no hope of obtaining water or provisions, Tasman took his departure, followed by a fleet of hostile canoes, at which the Dutch fired rather ineffectually, but well enough to send them back to shore. Tasman called the bay Moordenaers (or Murderers), afterwards changed to Massacre, and later still to Golden Bay. For some days the ships tacked about at the entrance to Cook Strait, anchoring several times. It was decided that there was no way out to the eastward (i.e., through Cook Strait); accordingly, after riding out a severe gale behind D'Urville Island, Tasman set a new course and sailed up the west coast of the North Island.

On 4 Jan 1643 the vessels were off the islands which Tasman called the Three Kings. They remained two days in the hope of finding a safe watering place, but the heavy surf and the hostile appearance of the natives decided them, after holding a council of officers, to sail east to longitude 220 deg and then north in the hope of sighting the Cocos and Hoorn islands. Various islands in Tonga were discovered, to which Dutch names were given. There they got water and provisions and then proceeded in bad weather through the dangerous shoals of the Fijian group to the north coast of New Guinea, and so back to Batavia (15 Jun 1643). Much of the conduct of this voyage, as well as its plan, was due to the advice of Visscher.

On a second voyage, in 1644, Tasman and Visscher were to gain further information about Staten land, but war with the Portuguese turned their whole attention to the north and north-west coasts of Australia. The Dutch colonial authorities received Tasman's results coldly, but he was promoted commander and made a member of the Council of Justice at Batavia. In 1647 he commanded the trading fleet to Siam, and in 1648 a war fleet against the Spaniards in the Philippines. He retired as a wealthy landowner in Batavia and died on 22 Oct 1659.

*Encycl. Brit.*; Sherrin and Wallace; R. H. Major, *Early Voyages to Australia*, 1859; J. E. Heeres, *Tasman's Journal . . . facsimiles*, 1898; R. P. Meyjes,

*De Reizen van Abel Janszoon Tasman en Franch01's Jacobzoon Visscher*; McNab, *Hist. Records*, ii; G. A. Wood, *The Discovery of Australia*; J. C. Beaglehole, *The Exploration of the Pacific and The Discovery of New Zealand*.

TATE, ROBERT WARD (1864-1933) was born at Wellington, the son of Edward H. Tate. Educated at the Timaru Boys' High School, he studied law and practised at Greytown (1886-1914). Tate was an efficient volunteer officer, and commanded the Wellington infantry brigade from 1911, and the Wellington district (1914-16). He was adjutant-general in 1916, and administrator of Western Samoa (1916-23). (C.B.E. 1918; C.M.G. 1923.) From 1923 he was resident magistrate at New Plymouth.

Studholme; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932.

TATTON, WILLIAM (1805-86) was born in London, served in the Navy before the end of the Napoleonic wars, and after the peace engaged in the timber trade for 30 years before sailing for New Zealand in the *Eden* (1850). He settled first at Omata, but shortly removed to a more favourable position at Frankley road. He was member of the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell (1861-64 and 1867-79). Tatton died on 7 Aug 1886.

IVakelin; *Taranaki P.C. minutes*; *Taranaki Herald*, 7 Aug 1886. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

TAUTARI, a chief of the Ngati-Tonu division of Ngati-Awa at Whakatane (now the Ngati-Pukeko), was a kinsman of the Ngati-Pikiao by marriage. A warrior of great renown, he was one of the chiefs of a taua of 600 who established themselves at Te Whaiti and fought against the Ngati-Manawa. He showed great skill in guerilla warfare, particularly in the bush fighting against Ngapuhi. Though not an Arawa, he lived amongst the Ngati-Whakaue on sufferance. He had a pa at Lake Roto-ehu, which he strongly fortified against attack by Ngai-te-Rangi, whom he defeated in 1828 (killing Rangihau). Considering he had not got complete utu for his losses, he fitted out a fleet at Whakatane to surprise Te Whanau-o-Ngati-Whao on Tuhua (Mayor island). Approaching the island at dusk from the rear he led the attack confidently up the steep glacis to the pa, but the defenders, fully warned and having seen the fleet approaching, were pre-

pared and let loose a torrent of rocks which broke up the assault and turned it into defeat. In the wars of the twenties Tautari received 12 hatchet wounds.

His grandson, Te Whetu, was chief of the tribe during the wars of the sixties.

S. P. Smith; Cowan, *Wars*.

TAUTARI, HEM! (1815-1883), son of Te Koki, of Uriongonga, the patron of the Paihia mission, was a brother of Rangituke. Educated at the C.M.S. school at Paihia, he showed unusual intelligence and grew to enjoy the esteem of both Europeans and natives. Bishop Selwyn befriended him and he was also for some time in the service of Bishop Patteson, and made several voyages in the islands with him. Of Herculean stature, he was a fine specimen of the old Maori, loyal to British rule, and a frequent mediator when violence was threatened. For many years he was a native assessor. Taking naturally to the sea he was during the fifties associated with regattas held in Auckland harbour. He sailed his own vessels in the coasting trade, notably the *Napinap* and the *Sea Breeze*, but afterwards retired and owned stores at Kororareka and Kawakawa. Tautari's wife Fanny (who died on 5 Aug 1860) was for many years principal of the school for Maori girls of the better class. He married again (1861) Mary, daughter of James Perry (Bay of Islands). Tautari died at Reweti on 30 Jul 1883.

Buller; *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Aug 1883.

TAWHAI, HONE M O M (? 1834-94), son of Mohi Tawhai, was M.H.R. for Northern Maori 1879-84. He was an upright and persistent advocate of native rights and was one of the best qualified and most statesmanlike Maori members of Parliament. He defeated Tawhiti in 1879 and Taiwhanga in 1881. Tawhai was offered an appointment as West Coast commissioner in 1879, but refused. He died on 31 Jul 1894.

A son, KEREAMA TAWHAI (1864-85), a promising young man, had an intensely spiritual mind and all the instincts of a gentleman. He studied at Three Kings (under Buddle) and at Auckland Grammar School and was then articulated to a legal firm. Tawhai was a popular and successful athlete and died as a result of injuries at football.

Buller; Carleton; Marsden, *L. and J.*; S. I. Smith, *Wars*; Ramsden; Scholefield in *N.Z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907; Hone Heke, Sir J. Carroll, Sir A. Ngata (information); Hammond; *N.z. Herald*, 29 Mar 1875, 4 Apr 1883, 1 Aug 1894. Portrait: Parliament House.

TAWHAI, M O M (?-1875) was a very influential chief of the Mahurehure hapu of Ngapuhi, residing at Waima. He bore many scars and at the siege of Tapuinikau (1818) had his head split by a rock. He was one of the Ngapuhi leaders in the expedition to Cook Strait (1819-20). On being baptised by Whiteley at Mangu in 1836 he took the name of 'Mohi' and under missionary influence reduced the number of his wives to one. Thereafter he was a preacher, led a good Christian life, and was a constant defender of the peace. He slept several nights in Pomare's pa to prevent fighting. Having signed the Treaty of Waitangi (1840) Tawhai sided with Nene against Heke. He distinguished himself in action at Ohaeawai (Jun 1845) and strongly upbraided Colonel Despard for his decision to retire. At Ruapekapeka he built an advanced stockade 1,200 yards from the pa and, with Nene, occupied open land 800 yards in front. When Despard ordered a premature assault he stood in the road to prevent the soldiers going to their death. In spite of their differences of opinion Despard considered him a very active and gallant soldier. Tawhai was for many years an assessor and was very highly respected as one of the most learned men in the north. He was a friend of Governor Grey. He was killed (14 Mar 1875) by a fall from a horse while returning from church at Waima.

Buller; Carleton; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Marsden, *L. and J.*; *N.z. Herald*, 29 Mar 1875.

TAWHITI, HORI KARAKA, was a son of Maim Paraone Tawhiti, a loyal Ngapuhi chief of Te Ihutai, Hokianga, his hapu being Te Karae. He was a half-caste, but always spoke Maori. He was M.H.R. for Northern Maori (1876-79), and was a member of the Atkinson executive, representing the native race (Nov 1876-Oct 1877). He was defeated by Tawhai and Taiwhanga in 1879.

TAYLER, THOMAS (1804-79) came to Otago in the *Mary* (1849) and took up land on the lower harbour, where he farmed. He then engaged in business in Port Chalmers, where he

was a member of the licensing committee and mayor (1869). He represented Port Chalmers in the Otago Provincial Council (1858-63, 1867-70). Tayler died on 2 Jul 1879.

*Otago Daily Times*, 18 Jul 1879.

TAYLOR, ALLAN KERR (1833-90), the fourth son of Lieut-general W. Taylor (q.v.), was born at Seringapatam, educated at the Edinburgh High School and came to New Zealand in 1849. He bought land at Mount Albert, where he lived until his death (14 Apr 1890). He represented Northern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council (1855-57 and 1870-73), and Waitemata (1873-75). He was also chairman of the Mount Albert highway board and later of the road board and president of the Auckland Racing club. Taylor was interested in the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 15 Apr 1890.

TAYLOR, CHARLES JOHN (1826-97) was the second son of General William Taylor (q.v.), and was born in India. He came to New Zealand in the early forties, and took up land near Auckland. In 1853 he was elected M.H.R. for Southern Division (resigning in 1858) and he represented Raglan 1861-65. He was also for a year (1860-61) M.P.C. for Southern Division. He served in the Waikato war and was captain of the Auckland Scottish volunteers. Taylor was called to the Legislative Council in 1869 and resigned his seat in 1878 on returning to live in England. He died in 1897.

India Office records; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii. Portrait: Parliament House.

TAYLOR, EDMUND HENRY (1855-1927) was born at Lancastr, Cornwall, and educated at Dobwall's academy and Cheltenham (where he studied homiletics and divinity). Ordained at Torquay, he arrived in New Zealand in 1882 and spent 40 years in a continuous pastorate on the Thames goldfields. A firm temperance advocate, he was a foundation member of the New Zealand Temperance Alliance (and many years vice-president), 11 years grand chief templar L.O.G.T., and president and some time secretary of the Prohibition league. He was also for a few years on the Thames licensing bench. Taylor was chairman for a while of the deep-level mining board. He was elected M.H.R. for

Thames on the retirement of McGowan, and sat 1909-11, being defeated by T. W. Rhodes in 1911 and 1914. Some years later he was appointed to the Western Springs Congregational Church in Auckland. There he took a keen interest in the boy scout movement, as a commissioned chaplain in the Ponsonby troop. He died on 30 Sep 1927.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924.

TAYLOR, JAMES (1823-1913) was born at Tunbridge Wells, England, and came to Wellington in 1840 by the *Martha Ridgway*. In 1844 he settled in Johnsonville, and in 1849 moved to Tawa Flat, then dense forest. For eight years Taylor represented Porirua in the Wellington Provincial Council (1865-73). He was a member of the road board; of the Hutt county council (12 years) and of the Tawa Flat school committee. He was a local preacher of the Methodist Church for 60 years, and founder and superintendent of Sunday schools in the district. During the native troubles he served with the volunteers, and he was afterwards captain of the Porirua Rifles.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Ward; *Evening Post*, 7 Nov 1913.

TAYLOR, JOHN PARKIN (1812-75) was born at Treeton, near Rotherham, Yorkshire. He received a good liberal education, and had some years' mercantile experience in Liverpool and Havana and finally in Germany, where he studied languages and acquired a taste for German literature. Returning to England, he married, and was in business at Rotherham.

In 1849 Taylor brought his family to Nelson and became a sheep farmer. The prospects not being sufficiently encouraging, he took up (about 1853) a run in south Canterbury, later known as Elephant Hill. This he disposed of in 1855 in favour of run No. 28 at Otekaieke, north Otago. He spent about a year exploring on horseback and on foot, and in 1856 he selected run 165, Waiau, in the Jacob's river district, which he purchased from C. W. Ligar. Having disposed of his northern interests, he drove his stock overland, at the same time sending the schooner *Star* to Nelson for his family and furniture. He reached his new home in Jul 1856, and erected a fine colonial homestead overlooking the estuary at Taylor's point. Here Taylor dispensed hospitality lavishly and be-

came an important social influence in the district. He had considerable ability, business acumen and judgment, was cultured, urbane and conciliatory.

In 1858 Taylor became a member of the General Assembly for the Dunedin Country district. He soon became identified with the separation movement in Southland, and his support of the new provinces act brought him into conflict with many of his constituents, so that he retired in 1860. In that year he was a member of the Otago waste lands board. In 1864, when the province was deeply involved financially, Taylor was chosen as the most suitable successor to Dr Menzies as Superintendent of the province. To this post he was elected in 1865, and again in 1867. He contrived to guide the troubled affairs of the province and to control public finances until the eve of the reunion with Otago in 1869. This task involved him in a dispute with his executive, which he took the responsibility of dismissing. For the last few months of his superintendency he was also member of the Provincial Council for Campbelltown.

After his retirement Taylor lived again at Riverton, of which town he was mayor (1872-73). He was called to the Legislative Council in 1865, and though for some years he was incapacitated from public duty he remained a member until his death (on 12 Aug 1875).

*Southland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; Roberts, *Southland*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Beattie; *Riverton Record*; *Otago Daily Times*, 29 Sep 1875; *Southland Times*, 13 Aug 1875. Portrait: Parliament House.

TAYLOR, RICHARD (1805-73) was born at Letwell, Yorkshire, his father being of Kentish extraction and his mother, Catherine Spencer, of a Yorkshire family. While at Dr Inchbald's school at Doncaster, he was left an orphan by the death of his father (1818). At the age of 16 he decided to enter the ministry, and for some years he studied under the Rev Mr Snowden, of Horbury, and the Rev Thomas Brown, of Devonport. In 1825 he entered Queen's College, Cambridge, where he graduated (B.A. 1828; M.A., 1835). He was never robust, and on that account spent much of his time abroad in the pursuit of botany and geology. While in Paris he became a freemason in a lodge under the Grand Orient of France. His religious views were broad almost to evangelicalism,

and throughout life he was disposed to cooperate with nonconformist sects to the fullest extent that Bishop Selwyn would permit. In 1828 he was ordained deacon and appointed to the curacy of St Botolph's, Cambridge, which was in the gift of his College. In Jul 1829 he married Mary Caroline Fox, in Nov he was ordained priest, and in 1830 he accepted the post of vicar of Coveney and Manea in the Isle of Ely. Having been accepted by the Church Missionary Society in 1835 for the New Zealand field, Taylor preached his farewell sermon in Nov 1835, and a few months later sailed in the *Prince Regent* for Sydney, where he arrived 13 Jun 1836. Being short of clergy, Samuel Marsden retained Taylor at Parramatta and had him appointed chaplain of Liverpool, where his parishioners were mainly the garrison and convicts. This post he retained until the death of Marsden (12 May 1838) released him to proceed to New Zealand with his two boys in the *Nimrod* (Mar 1839).

At Bay of Islands he was warmly received by the missionary community. He accompanied William Williams (q.v.) on a journey to his prospective charge at Waiapu and then, leaving his sons at Paihia, returned to New South Wales in the *Magnet* and in Sep brought the rest of his family to New Zealand in the *Achilles*. He arrived opportunely to take over the mission school at Waimate, freeing Hadfield for his new duties at Otaki (Oct 1839). Taylor assisted in the conclusion of the Treaty of Waitangi, the text of which he engrossed on parchment the night before it was signed (Feb 1840). When Henry Williams was returning from installing Hadfield at Otaki he found many of the Whanganui people at Putikiwharanui already under the influence of Christian teaching and anxious to receive a missionary. Accordingly he sent the Rev John Mason, with Richard Matthews as catechist. They arrived on 20 Jun 1840. Though unsuited to the work, Mason threw himself with great energy into it. Within two years he opened a fine brick church (19 Jun 1842), and he had baptised more than 300 adults when he met his death by drowning in the Turakina river (Jan 1843). Taylor was appointed to take his place, and he arrived with his family in the *Columbine* (30 Apr 1843). On the assumption that it would be his permanent home, he at once commenced the erection of a

substantial house. He organised the work of his district through a regular rota of visits to the widespread villages of the Maori, amongst whom he soon exercised an influence which was of inestimable value in improving relations between the two races. He did much to persuade the chiefs to permit emigrants to settle while the claims of the New Zealand Company were being contested. The brick church at Putiki being badly damaged by earthquake in 1843, he built in its place a large edifice of wood (opened 1844). In Jan 1844 he opened the first church in Wanganui for the settlers, and later in the year he established a small hospital at Putiki.

Taylor showed extraordinary energy and method in his pastoral journeys from end to end of his district. In 1843 he travelled as far as Roto-a-ira to meet Bishop Selwyn and conduct him to Wanganui. A few months later he visited all the pas en route to New Plymouth, and returned to the Wanganui by the headwaters of the Waitara river. He then walked to Wellington, and a month or two later was summoned (as he thought) to the deathbed of Hadfield at Otaki. On his return, finding a taua of Ngati-Tuwharetoa close to Wanganui, he strained every nerve to dissuade Te Heuheu from seeking vengeance against the Ngati-Ruanui. All the efforts of himself and his Wesleyan colleague being fruitless, he appealed to Major Richmond for troops, and it was only after he had brought a detachment to Wanganui (where Selwyn had also arrived) that Te Heuheu could be prevailed upon to make peace. In spite of repeated alarms of a new taua from Taupo, he continued his ministrations with such success that at this time he was baptising more converts than any other missionary in New Zealand. Governor Grey, visiting Wanganui in 1846, was much impressed by the school which Taylor had opened for the Maori. Later in the year he opened one in the town for the children of the settlers (which was the nucleus of the Wanganui Collegiate School) and also a small hospital. Hearing of the disaster to Te Heuheu at Waihi, Taylor made an arduous winter journey into the interior, read the burial service at the fatal landslide, and persuaded Iwikau (q.v.) to make peace with the Wanganui people. New excitement swept the district when news came of the outbreak in the Hutt Valley and the participation of a taua from the upper

Wanganui. When troops arrived in the *Caliope* (Dec 1846) Taylor dissuaded Captain Laye from promulgating in Maori the proclamation of martial law.

At a prayer meeting at Putiki on Boxing Day several Christian natives offered themselves as emissaries to the heathen and hostile tribes of the interior. Manihera and Kereopa were accepted and started on their pilgrimage in Feb 1847. At Tokaanu they were fired upon and killed as utu for the Ngati-Tuwharetoa men slain in 1840. Without hesitation Taylor went to Taupo against the advice of the natives and read the burial service over the graves of the martyrs. After visiting Auckland for the meeting of the central committee, he returned (Apr 1847) to find the settlement in a state of great alarm owing to the murder of the Gilfillan family. The missionaries tended the survivors, and Matthews had been mainly responsible for pacifying the natives. Grey hastened to Wanganui, all the settlers and missionaries withdrew to the protection of the stockade, Putiki was deserted and the new church at Aramoho was burned. On 13 Jun the hostile taua attacked the stockade without success. Failing again in an assault on 19 Jul, it withdrew up the river and the missionary families and natives were able to reoccupy their homes at Putiki (16 Nov). A month or two later Grey enlisted the services of Taylor in the discussion of land claims. McLean continued the negotiations in Apr, and on 25 May a deed of sale was signed by the chiefs conveying 80,000 acres to the Government. Prosperity and peace returned to the district in 1849, when the long feud with Taupo was finally settled. About 4,000 natives gathered for the Christmas celebrations at Putiki. A few months later Telford arrived as Taylor's assistant (Jul 1850) and was installed at Pipiriki.

Taylor visited England in 1855, taking with him a leading convert chief, Hoani Wiremu Hipango (q.v.), with whom he was presented to the Queen and Prince Albert. While there he published his scholarly book, *Te Ika a Maui*, an authoritative account of the Maori and their customs, with 100 illustrations from his own sketches. He returned to the Colony by the *Lancashire Witch* in 1856. Being relieved in 1860 by the appointment of his son, the Rev Basil Taylor, as missionary in charge of Putiki-

wharanui, he thereafter devoted much of his time to scientific studies, upon which he contributed many papers to the New Zealand Institute. A *Leaf from the Natural History of New Zealand* was published in 1848 and *The Age of New Zealand* in 1867. He was elected a fellow of the Geological Society. When the Hauhau war broke out on the Wanganui river, Taylor's close intimacy with the tribes was of great service to the loyalist troops, with whom he served as chaplain. In 1867 Taylor again visited England, taking with him Hipango's son, Hori Kingi (who died there). While in London Taylor published *The Past and Present of New Zealand*. Returning to New Zealand in 1870 he took up duty at Christ Church, Wanganui, where he was engaged almost to the time of his death, which occurred on 10 Oct 1873. Taylor corresponded with many leading scientists. He played an important part in bringing the first moa bones to the notice of Professor Owen, and furnished specimens of New Zealand flora to Dr Hoeker, including the fungus-like *dactylanthus taylori*, which was named after him. He was a man of deep culture, scholarship and spirituality.

G.B.O.P., 1846/337; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Chapple and Barton (p); Buller; Thomson; Taylor, *op. cit.* and journals in Alexander Turnbull Library; Woon; *N.Z. Herald*, 31 Aug, 7 Sep 1889.

TAYLOR, RICHARD MOLESWORTH (1835-1919), was born in London, and arrived in Auckland by the *Heather Bell* in 1846. Five years later he left for the Victorian goldfields, but returning in 1857 served in the Maori war and undertook several government contracts. From 1869 to 1886 he was engaged as a general contractor in Christchurch, where he was elected a member of the Sydenham borough council (1884), of the Christchurch drainage board and of the Waimakariri river board. Defeating J. Crewes, he became member for Sydenham in the House of Representatives (1886-90) and later member for Christchurch City, but was defeated in 1893 and 1896. He married (1887) a daughter of S. F. Gray, of London, and after some years of retirement from public life died on 26 Aug 1919.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 28 Aug 1919; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 27 Aug 1919.

TAYLOR, THOMAS BALLARDIE (1817-71) was born at Anstruther, Fifeshire, where he was

educated. He then served a four years apprenticeship to the sea, and eventually came to Sydney in the *Planten* (1840) and joined W. H. Watt (q.v.) in the firm of Taylor and Watt, Wanganui. Their first ship was the brig *Katherine Johnstone*, 14 tons, which traded between Wellington and Wanganui. Later they acquired the *Tyme*, *Governor Grey*, *Edward Stanley*, *Seagull*, *Yarra* and *Lady Denison* and the brigantine *William*. In addition to their merchants' business and shipping in Wanganui they purchased several landed estates, including Westmere and Tayforth. Taylor was a member of the town board for some years. He was lost at sea on 16 Jul 1871 from the *Lady Denison*. A memorial to him was unveiled in the grounds of St Paul's Church, Wanganui, by Sir William Fox.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Press Association, 28 Jul 1871.

TAYLOR, THOMAS EDWARD (1862-1911) was born in Kirilin, Lindsey, Lincolnshire; arrived in Lyttelton with his parents in 1874 by the *Cardigan Castle*, and attended West Christchurch and Avonside schools. For nearly 20 years he was employed by J. M. Heywood and Co., forwarding agents, and resigned as manager in 1895 to establish his own business as commission agent and importer. In 1892 he married a daughter of R. B. Ellison, of Christchurch. In the following year he became a member of the Sydenham borough council.

Taylor first entered the House of Representatives in 1896 as member for Christchurch South. A member of the Young New Zealand party and a strong critic of the Boer war, he was defeated in 1899, but again returned at the head of the poll in 1902. In 1905 he was defeated for Christchurch North by C. M. Gray, whom he in turn defeated in 1908. He was a strong advocate of state control of the liquor traffic, and was for a time secretary of the Sydenham prohibition league. For some years Taylor was a member of the Christchurch City Council, and at the time of his death (on 27 Jul 1911) he was mayor. Taylor was one of the most effective speakers and critics in Parliament, and numbered among the most influential leaders of the temperance movement.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jul 1911; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; W. J. Williams (p); *Lyttelton Times* and *The Press*, 28 Jul 1911. Portrait: Parliament House.

## TAYLOR

TAYLOR, THOMAS FIELDEN (1880-1937) was born and educated in England, and after working as a lawyer's clerk in London, came to New Zealand, where he spent some years working in the Nelson diocese. Ordained by Bishop Mules, he became a canon of Nelson Cathedral and during the war of 1914-18, he served overseas as chaplain to the New Zealand forces. In 1919 he was appointed missionary of St Peter's mission, Wellington, where he did outstanding social work among the poor, especially for men and boys. He established a boys' hostel, the Stop-out Club and an employment bureau, and arranged Christmas camps. His wife, Eleanor, was a daughter of Bishop Mules. Taylor died on 29 May 1937.

Studholme; *Evening Post*, 29 May 1937 (p).

TAYLOR, WILLIAM (1790-1868) was the son of the Rev W. Taylor, D.D., a chaplain in Scotland to King George -III, and 20 years minister of St Enoch's, Glasgow. He went to Madras in 1806 as a cadet in the Indian army, became an ensign the following year and had steady promotion. (Captain, 1822; major, 1835; lieutenant colonel, 1840; lieutenant-colonel commandant, 1849; colonel, 1850; major-general, 1854; lieutenant-general, 1865.) He served with the 39th Madras Native infantry, with the Kurwood field force (1839) and in China (1842). After acting as brigadier commanding the Sangor and Narbudda district (1849-55), he visited New Zealand on sick leave, and on retiring he settled in New Zealand (1857) at West TiliDaki, where he died on 27 Jun 1868. Taylor was a staunch Presbyterian and a supporter of the church at West Tamaki. (See A. K., C. J., and W. I. TAYLOR.)

India Office records; Madras Military Department; *Southern Cross*, 29 Jun 1868.

TAYLOR, WILLIAM INNES (1821-90) was born at Hyderabad, India, the second son of Lieutenant-general W. Taylor (q.v.). Educated at Glasgow College, he spent two years learning farming in Perthshire, came to Auckland in the *Mandarin* (1843), and bought land at West Tamaki which he farmed very successfully. He was interested in financial institutions, and was a director of several companies and an original shareholder of the Bank of New Zealand. Taylor represented Southern Division in the Provincial Council (1853-55) and was for a short

## TEICHELMANN

time in 1855 a member of the executive. He died on 7 Mar 1890.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; N.Z. Herald*, 24 Mar 1890.

TAYLOR, WILLIAM WARING (1819-1903) was born in Yorkshire, England, his father being a merchant. He came to Wellington in 1842 and went into business as a merchant in Wellington. His sister, Mary Taylor, who came to New Zealand in 1848 and was also in business in Wellington, was a schoolfellow of Charlotte Bronte. Taylor was the original of Martin Yorke in Charlotte Bronte's *Shirley*, in which she thus describes him: "Though a schoolboy, he was no ordinary schoolboy; he is destined to grow up an original. At a few years' later date, he will take great pains to pare and polish himself down to the pattern of the rest of the world, but he will never succeed. A unique stamp will mark him always:

Taylor was a delicate, ascetic looking man, rather retiring in disposition, but a useful citizen and highly respected. In 1860 he bought Waitt's wharf for his expanding business. In that year he was elected M.H.R. for the City of Wellington (Featherston 313; Taylor 309; W. B. Rhodes 302) and he represented the City until 1870. He was also in 1860 deputy-superintendent for the province (an office which he filled again in 1866, 1869 and 1875). In 1861 Taylor was elected to the Provincial Council for the City and he held his seat until the abolition of the provinces. From 1865-75 he was speaker of the Council. In 1873 he was appointed a member of the waste lands board and he was on the first board of governors of Wellington College (1874-78). Taylor had properties at Waitatapia (in Rangitikei) and Manawa (in the Wairarapa) and was a very capable sheepfarmer. He retired from public life in the eighties, and died on 11 Oct 1903.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1860-70; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; Carter; Leckie (p); Bronte, *op. cit.*; James Park in *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Mar 1925.

TEICHELMANN, EBENEZER (1859-1938) was born in Smith Australia (of German-Scots parentage) and educated at Hahndorf College and Adelaide University. He then proceeded to King's and Queen's College, Dublin, where he graduated as licentiate in 1887. In 1888 he became a member of the Royal College of Surgeons, England, and in 1891 a fellow. He was

## TEMPLER

assistant physician to the general hospital in Birmingham, assistant surgeon at the Jaffray hospital, and resident medical officer at the workhouse, and during this time lectured in physiology at Mason's science college. In 1895 he returned to Australia and became health officer at Port Adelaide; and in 1897 he was appointed surgeon-superintendent of the Westland hospital. During the long period he was in charge of this institution he raised the standard of surgical and medical work considerably.

Teichelmann was a prominent citizen of Hokitika, being for some years a member of the borough council, president of the acclimatisation society, vice-president of the progress league, a member of the High School board, of the Arthur's Pass scenic board and of the racing and trotting clubs. He was also a skilled mountaineer, and made many notable first ascents, including Malcolm Peak, Mt Tyndall, La Perouse, Douglas Peak, Glacier Peak, Mt Green, Mt Walter and Mt Halcombe. His expeditions covered much difficult country in Westland, and his expert photography was a factor in the development of the tourist facilities and mapping of that province. Not the least remarkable of his achievements was his reconnaissance of the Waiototo approach to Mt Aspiring. He did not begin his career in the Southern Alps till early middle age, but his small tough stature and aggressive spirit took him to many valleys where heavy swags and exposed camps were the rewards of enterprise. Teichelmann died on 20 Dec 1938.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; J. D. Pascoe (information); *West Coast Times*, 20 Dec 1938.

TEMPLER, EDWARD MERSON (1820-97) was born in England, where he received a good classical education, including French, German and Italian, before emigrating to Australia (1839), where he owned two stations in partnership with a brother. The drought of 1850 caused him to move to New Zealand, and he brought his own stock to Canterbury. At first he lived with his brother-in-law (Caverhill) at Motunau, and then farmed Longbeach (in partnership with M. Campbell). In 1858 he bought Coringa, where he lived until 1887, when he sold to G. G. Stead. Thereafter he lived in Christchurch. At Coringa he established in 1867 the first public sheep dip in Canterbury. Tem-

## TESCHEMAKER

pler represented Avon in the Provincial Council (1858-66). He strongly approved the abolition of the provinces. He married Mrs M. King (Canterbury). His death occurred on 4 Apr 1897.

Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 5 Apr 1897.

TENDALL, GEORGE FREDERICK (1845-1901) was born in Essex, England. At 13 he was organist at Yattendon Church, Berkshire. He studied under Sir John Stainer and graduated Mus. Bac. at Oxford (1872). He was private organist to the Duke of Buccleuch, and at St Peter's Church, Edinburgh. Owing to ill-health he sailed for New Zealand (1881) and was shortly appointed organist at St Michael's Church, Christchurch. In 1885 he became organist to the Cathedral and in 1891 was appointed the first lecturer in music at Canterbury University College. Tendall died on 25 Oct 1901.

TESCHEMAKER, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1834-78) was a son of John Teschemaker, LL.D., of Demerara and Exmouth, Devon, and was educated at Mount Radford school, Exmouth. Landing in New Zealand in the early fifties, he took up in 1857 with his brother Thomas the Haldon estate in the Mackenzie country, which they grassed and stocked. In 1868 they sold out and took up Otaio. Teschemaker was member of the Canterbury Provincial Council for Waitangi (1874-76). In 1875 he was elected to represent Gladstone in Parliament and he was a member when he died (on 21 Nov 1878). Teschemaker was a fine type of settler, patient and thorough in his management; very well informed, but reticent and retiring in public life.

*Col. Gent.*; Acland; *Timaru Herald*, 22 Nov 1878.

TESCHEMAKER, WILLIAM HENRY (1829-88) was born in Exmouth, the son of John Teschemaker, LL.D., and was educated at Mount Radford school and Exeter College, Oxford, where he graduated in 1851. He married Eliza, daughter of Captain Pitman, R.N., and shortly afterwards came to New Zealand and took up land. He was the owner of the Taipo station in north Otago, which was noted for its fine merinos. Teschemaker represented the Northern district in the Otago Provincial Council.

cil (1858-61). He died on 24 Jul 1888.

*Col. Gent.; North Otago Times*, 25 Jul 1888.

TESCHEMAKER-SHUTE, CHARLES DE VERE (1836-1920) was born at Tiverton, Devonshire, and educated at Mount Radford school, Exmouth. He landed in Otago in 1854 and took up several runs in SoutWand (including Otakaramu), and afterwards managed his brother's Taipo station, near Oamaru. He was member of the Otago Provincial Council for Moeraki (1873-75), and served on several local bodies. In 1876 he took up the Avondale estate in Marlborough, where he was a member of the rabbit board, and the Wairau road board. He helped to promote the Wairau Freezing Co.; was a director of the Farmers' Co-operative association and chairman of the New Zealand wool growers' committee. (Teschemaker assumed the additional name of Shute.) He died on 26 Sep 1920.

*Parltry Record; Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; :Beattie, ii; *Cycl. NZ.*, iv; *Marlborough Express*, 27 Sep 1920; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 May 1930.

TETLEY, JOSEPH DRESSER, who lived at Aiskew House, Beadle, Yorkshire, appears to have arrived in New Zealand about 1857. He took up land at Kekerengu, which he worked as a sheep station. In 1865, he purchased Starborough, and in 1869 was interested in a large block of confiscated land at Taupo. His wife, a daughter of Sir M. Dodsworth, died in the West Indies en route to New Zealand. Tetley was member for Picton in the Provincial Council (1867-69) and of the Legislative Council for the same period, but never attended after being sworn in. He resigned in Jun 1869 and afterwards lived in Uruguay.

*The Colonist* (Nelson), 26, 30 Nov 1869; *Marlborough P.C.* minutes.

THACKER, HENRY THOMAS JOYNT (1870-1939) was born at O'Kain's Bay, Canterbury, and educated at the school there and at the Christchurch Boys' High School. At Canterbury College he graduated B.A. In 1892 he proceeded to Edinburgh University, where he took his medical and surgical degrees, and in 1898 he became a fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons, Ireland.

Thacker practised in Christchurch for some years and took a keen interest in public affairs. He was a member of the Christchurch hospital

board and of the Lyttelton harbour board (1907-22). He contested parliamentary elections in Lyttelton in 1908 and 1911 and in Christchurch East in 1913. Elected in 1914 for the latter seat, he represented it till 1922. From 1919 to 1923 he was mayor of Christchurch and from 1929-31 a member of the City Council. Thacker was an ardent supporter of the Port of Christchurch League, of which he was chairman (1929-32). He was president of the New Zealand Brass Bands association (1904-28) and patron from 1932. As a student he was a successful atWete, playing Rugby football for Canterbury College, Canterbury and Edinburgh University.

Thacker married (1898) Monica Alexandra, daughter of Alexander Morrison, Belfast, Ireland. He died on 3 May 1939.

*N.Z.P.D.*, notably 30 Jun 1939; *Who's Who N.I.*, 1924, 1932; Wigram; *The Dominion and The Press*, 4 May 1939 (p).

THATCHER, CHARLES RICHMOND, was the son of a natural history collector in Brighton, England, and came to New Zealand in 1862 in the interests of his father. A clever elocutionist and improviser, he gave entertainments in Otago and afterwards all over New Zealand, at which he made free use of local quips and doggerel composed by himself on political and personal topics. The inimitable Thatcher: as he was called, is said to have coined the term 'old identity' in a song of eight verses which he composed during a provincial election in Otago in which E. B. Cargill was a candidate. Thatcher returned to England about 1870. He was on the continent just after the Franco-Prussian war buying goods for his own business in the West End of London.

:Buller; Hocken, *Otago*; Weston; Hindmarsh, 106; *Otago Daily Times*, May 1871.

THATCHER, FREDERICK, who was born about 1820, was trained as an architect. He came to Auckland in the forties and became interested in mission work. He entered St John's College in 1848 and was a student there to 1853. He was ordained deacon (1848) and priest (1853), and was the first vicar of St Matthew's, Auckland (1853-59). He was curate of Winwick, Northamptonshire (1859-61), and was incumbent of St Paul's, Wellington (1861-64). Thereafter he acted for some time as private secretary to the

Governor (Sir George Grey). Returning to England about 1867, Thatcher was secretary to Bishop Selwyn at Lichfield (1868-82), and thereafter resided at Tamworth, England, where his son, Ernest Grey Thatcher appears to have been vicar. He died about 1890. Thatcher designed St Matthew's Church (Auckland), St Mary's (New Plymouth), St Paul's (Nelson), the old vicarage at Te Henui, New Plymouth (1845), and the colonial hospital in that town (1848).

Information from Canon Coats and Archdeacon Lush; *Crockford*; G. V. Kendrick, *Parochial District of Upper Hutt*, 1935; J. K. Davis; *Nelson Examiner*, 29 Jun 1850.

THOMAS, SIR ALGERNON PHILLIPS WITHIEL (1857-1937) was born at Birkenhead, Cheshire, England, and educated at Manchester School and Balliol College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. (1877) and M.A. (1880) and was awarded the Burdett-Coutts scholarship in geology. After two years as demonstrator in biology at the University, during which time he carried out research on liver fluke in sheep for the Royal Agricultural society, he was appointed in 1883 first professor of natural science (biology and geology) at Auckland University College. In 1886 Thomas was employed by the Government to make a report on the Tarawera eruption, and he was a member of the royal commission which investigated the rabbit pest. He was on the senate of New Zealand University (1899-1903, 1921-33); an original fellow of the New Zealand Institute and a member of the board of governors, from 1899; a governor of the Auckland Grammar School (chairman 1916-37); for over 50 years a member of the council of the Auckland Institute and Museum and sometime vice-chairman of the Dilworth trust board. He was also for many years on the Auckland University College council, was an original member of the Dominion Board of Science and Art, a fellow of the Institute of Horticulture, of the Linnean society and of the Geological society. He retired from his professorship in 1914. In 1937 he was created K.C.M.G. (a few months before his death on 28 Dec 1937).

*Cycl. N.I.*, ii; *Who's Who NZ.*, 1908, 1924; *N.I. Herald*, 10 Apr 1883, 30 Dec 1937 (p).

THOMAS, SIR GODFREY JOHN (1824-61), 8th baronet of Wenvoe, came to New Zealand

in 1846 and was "appointed private secretary to Sir George Grey, and shortly afterwards clerk of the council. In Jan 1848 he was appointed auditor-general for the province of New Munster; in 1850 manager of the Colonial Bank of Issue at Wellington, and in 1852 clerk of the executive. His half-brother (Sir Edmond Thomas) dying in that year, he succeeded to the title and in 1853 returned to England, where he married Emily, daughter of William Chambers, of Bicknor, Kent. Sir Godfrey died on 13 Jul 1861, and was succeeded by his eldest son, Godfrey Vignoles.

Burke, *Peerage; N.I. Gaz.; The Times*, 13 Jul 1861.

THOMAS, JOSEPH, who was born in 1803, served in the army in India, being at one time aide-de-camp to Sir John Malcolm. He arrived in Port Nicholson in the *Adelaide* (Mar 1840), and in 1841 he joined the Company's survey staff and was engaged in the survey of the Wanganui lands. Previous to this he had built a schooner at Otaki, which ran ashore, but was refloated. Retrenchments in the Company's staff caused his dismissal in 1843. In the following year, with H. S. Harrison, he made an exploration overland to Hawkes Bay and later worked on the Otago survey.

Thomas returned to England in the middle forties and applied to the New Zealand Company for employment. He got into touch with the Canterbury Association and was about to be sent out as its agent when the New Zealand Company took the responsibility and he was engaged for survey work. Thomas was appointed to choose a block of a million acres, and to prepare it for the arrival of settlers. Arriving in Wellington by the *Bernicia* (1848) he inspected lands in both islands on behalf of the Canterbury Association. In Dec he wrote recommending the site at Port Cooper as the best, though Governor Grey at the time favoured Manawatu or Rangitikei. Grey and Selwyn approved the selection in May 1849 and in Jul Thomas began the survey of the Canterbury block. On the advice of William Deans he fixed the site for the capital on the plains instead of Lyttelton, and he laid out Lyttelton and completed the survey of the rural lands. No labour being available, he obtained 120 Maori workmen from the North Island. By Apr 1850, when Godley arrived, he had spent

## THOMAS

some £20,000 in surveys, roading, bridges and buildings for the reception of the emigrants. Godley had to suspend his operations owing to lack of funds. He considered Thomas a rough, vigorous, determined man and was not impressed by his work. J. L. Stokes, on the other hand, spoke very highly of his maps, which were better than any he had seen south of the line. Thomas's route for the Sumner road was approved by the Government engineer in 1852 and his line of road was adopted in 1914 for a motor road. There can be no doubt as to his ability and competence and the land purchasers eulogised very highly his judgment, energy, skill and perseverance. He was succeeded as surveyor in Jan 1851 by Cass and proceeded to England a few months later.

N.Z.C. (Canterbury Association papers); *Cant. O.N.*; E. J. Wakefield; Arnold; Godley, *Letters*; *The Press*, 16 Dec 1909, 12 Dec 1925.

THOMAS, WILLIAM ESDAILE (1826-91) was born in Tooting, London; educated in London, and got his commission in the 26th Regiment (Cameronians). He later held the rank of captain in the 22nd (Cheshire) Regiment. He settled in New Zealand in 1857. In 1866, being in Wellington, he was sent for by the Minister of Defence and appointed resident magistrate at Chatham Islands, with responsibility for the custody of a growing number of Hauhau prisoners. The guard (under Lieutenant Tuke) numbered at first 26 men, and the prisoners in Jun 1866 totalled 273, including Te Rooti (q.v.). In Jul the guard was reduced to a corporal and three privates. By Nov the prisoners numbered 328, and the guard was two officers and 20 men (of whom half were natives). Thomas made representations to New Zealand as to the inadequacy of the guard. Following Rolleston's visit (Jan 1868), the guard was again reduced. Observing the arrival of seed wheat in Apr the prisoners judged that their captivity was to be considerably prolonged. Te Rooti now had great influence over them, and on 4 Jul they rose, overpowered the guard, bound Thomas, seized the schooner *Rifleman* and escaped to Poverty Bay. Thomas remained for some time as magistrate and Government agent. On returning to New Zealand he was transferred to the Customs department, in which he was for some years chief clerk at Auckland. He retired

380

## THOMPSON

in 1887 and entered into business as a shipping and customs agent. He died on 26 Sep 1891. Thomas was two years on the Parnell borough council and was a churchwarden of St Mary's.

*App. H.R.*, 1868; *GUdgeon* (p); Cowan, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Sep 1891.

THOMPSON, HENRY AUGUSTUS (1815-43), an English barrister-at-law, of the Inner Temple, was recommended by Lord John Russell for an appointment in New Zealand, and came in the *Lord Auckland* to Nelson, where he was appointed police magistrate for the town and district (2 Feb 1842). He also looked after the native reserves. Thompson was energetic but hot-tempered and eccentric and created difficulties with the colonists. When the survey of Wairau was opposed by Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata, Thompson issued a warrant for their arrest and accompanied the magistrates and posse to execute it. He met his death in the ensuing affray (17 Jun 1843).

N.Z.C. 31; E. J. Wakefield; Ward; Buick, *Old Marlborough*.

THOMPSON, ROBERT (1840-1922) was the son of a farmer at Newtown Butler, county Fermanagh, Ireland. He was sent as a youth to relatives in St Croix, Danish West Indies, to learn sugar-planting, but after spending five years there he visited Canada, the United States and Ireland, and then emigrated to Australia (1864). He was sheep farming at Yanko, New South Wales, until 1868 when he decided to settle in New Zealand. In 1870 he took up land near Whangarei, and a few years later entered into business as an auctioneer and commission agent, which he carried on for 12 years. He took a great interest in local affairs, being chairman of the harbour board, the town board and the county council (1881-87). In 1887 he was elected to represent Marsden in Parliament (defeating Dargaville). He then retired from business and devoted his whole time to politics, being re-elected repeatedly until 1902, when he was defeated by F. Mander (q.v.). He contested the seat again 'without success in 1905 and 1908. Thompson married Mary, daughter of H. R. Aubrey (q.v.). He died on 21 Apr 1922.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1922.

THOMPSON, THOMAS (1832-1919) was born at Cork in 1832, educated there and trained as

## THOMPSON

a grocer and provision merchant. He was attracted to Victoria in 1853, and commenced carrying stores from Melbourne to the fields; but his health failing, in 1855 he settled in Auckland and carried on a grocery business till 1883. He took an interest in the volunteer movement from 1858 and was one of the first draft raised to serve in the Waikato (1863). In 1867 he gained his commission as lieutenant. Thompson took a part in local government being in turn chairman of the Mount Eden town board, the domain board, school committee and licensing committee and a member of the Auckland harbour board and the Auckland City Council (1878-84). A Liberal in politics, he was elected in 1884 for Auckland North, which he represented in Parliament until 1890, when he was returned for the City of Auckland, which he represented until 1893 and again from 1895 until he retired in 1899. He joined the Seddon ministry in 1896 and was Minister of Justice, Industries and Commerce and Defence. He was called to the Legislative Council in 1903, again in 1910 and retired in 1917. He died on 21 Jan 1919.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1919; *Parltry Record*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 22 Jan 1919.

THOMPSON, THOMAS JOHN, arrived in Nelson in the early forties. He was a partner with J. W. Barnicoat in contracts for the surveys in Nelson and Wairau. He represented Waimea East in the Provincial Council (1863-69).

THOMSON, ARTHUR SAUNDERS (1816-60) was educated in Scotland and studied medicine at Edinburgh University. He graduated M.D. in 1837, receiving the gold medal for his thesis on the influence of climate on health and mortality. In Oct 1838 he was appointed assistant-surgeon on the army staff. He served with the 17th Foot in Bombay and at Aden until 1842, when he was appointed to the 14th Light Dragoons.

While in India Thomson contributed valuable papers to service journals. Returning to England on leave, he was appointed surgeon to the 58th Regiment (Aug 1847), which he joined in New Zealand. During 11 years in the Colony he wrote many valuable papers on climate, statistics and natural history, and collected material for *The Story of New Zealand* (1859). His report on the causes of the decline of the

381

## THOMSON

Maori, published in 1852, is a valuable and thoughtful document. Thomson returned to England at the end of 1858 with the rank of surgeon-major, exchanged to the staff and joined the expeditionary force to China, whither he proceeded in charge of the steam hospital ship *Mauritius*. When the army took the field he was put in charge of the 2nd division (Sir Robert Napier's). Upon him devolved the duty of providing for the wounded in the field at the attack on the Taku forts, when he gained the approbation of the general commanding and of his department. After the capture of Peking he was selected to remain as senior medical officer with the force wintering in China. He died of sickness on 4 Nov 1860, and was buried in the Russian cemetery.

Thomson was not only a zealous, intelligent and valuable officer, but an upright and kind-hearted gentleman. His New Zealand book occupies a high place in the literature of the country.

War Office records; Cowan; A. S. Thomson, *op. cit.*; E. M. Dunlop in *N.Z. Herald*, 28 May 1904; *Wellington Independent*, 26 May 1852; *Army and Navy Gaz.*, 26 Jan 1861; *New Zealander*, 10 Apr 1861.

THOMSON, FRANK DAVID (1877-1934) was a son of A. B. Thomson (1849-1921, headmaster of the Greymouth main school, 1876, and of Napier District High School 1878-91). He was educated at the Napier Boys' High School, whence he proceeded to Canterbury College and afterwards to Victoria University College, where he graduated B.A. in 1901.

In 1895 Thomson entered as a cadet in the Education department and in 1901 he was appointed to the secretarial staff of the Prime Minister (Seddon), with whom he attended the Imperial conference and King Edward's coronation (1902). On the death of Seddon (1906) Thomson became private secretary to J. A. Millar (q.v.), Minister of Labour in the Ward Government, and he served in a similar capacity to A. M. Myers (1912) for the short existence of the Mackenzie ministry. He became chief private secretary to Massey, whom he served with marked distinction throughout. On the death of Massey (1925) he took office under Coates, and on the reorganisation of the Prime Minister's department (1926) he became its first permanent head, a post which he held, to-

gether with that of clerk to the executive and secretary to cabinet, until his death (14 Dec 1934). He was secretary of the New Zealand delegation at the Imperial conferences of 1917, 1918, 1919, 1921, 1923, 1926 and 1930; was a member of the British Empire delegation at the Peace conference (1919) and of the secretariat at all Imperial conferences since 1917. (C.M.G., 1920.)

*Grey Star*, 25 Feb 1928; *Souvenir of Greymouth State School*, 1926; *Evening Post and The Dominion* (pp) 14 Dec 1934. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

THOMSON, GEORGE MALCOLM (1848-1933), a son of William Thomson, was born in Calcutta, educated at Edinburgh High School and University, and after some business experience in London arrived in New Zealand in 1868, and began farming at Mabel Bush, Southland. In 1871 he joined the staff of Otago Boys' High School as science master, and in 1876 represented Otago in Rugby football. He was a founder of the Otago Technical school in 1889, and for several years superintendent (and later chairman); a promoter of the Dunedin City Mission (1896); and president of the Y.M.C.A. for 20 years, and was connected with the kindergarten movement. For six years (1908-14) he was Reform member for Dunedin North in the House of Representatives, and he sat in the Legislative Council (1918-32).

Retiring from teaching in 1903, Thomson was engaged as analyst and scientific specialist, and both before and after that time made many important contributions to science. In 1872 he was elected a member of the New Zealand Institute, which published many of his papers, and he was secretary and later president of the Otago branch, and a senior member of the board of governors, three times president and a senior fellow of the Institute. He was elected a fellow of the Linnæan Society (1879), of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, and the Royal Society of Tasmania, and was for many years New Zealand secretary of the Australasian Association for the Advancement of Science. He was a founder and chairman of the marine hatchery board, a member of the acclimatisation society, and a founder of the Dunedin Naturalist Field club. His published works include *Ferns and Fern allies of New Zealand* (1882), *Introductory Class Book of Botany* (1891), *New Zealand*

*Naturalists' Calendar* (1909), *Wild Lite in New Zealand: Mammalia* (1921), *History of Portobello Fish Hatchery* (1921), *Naturalisation of Animals and Plants in New Zealand* (1922). In 1928 he was awarded the Hector medal by the New Zealand Institute.

Thomson married first (1873) Emma, daughter of James Allan, Hopehill, Otago; and second (1910) Alice, daughter of William Craig, of Melbourne. He died on 25 Aug 1933. (See JAMES ALLAN THOMSON.)

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Sep 1933; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Trs. N.Z. Inst.*, vol. 64, Aug 1935; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1905, 1924, 1932; *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Aug 1933 (p).

THOMSON, HENRY (1828-1903), born in Dumfriesshire, Scotland, was educated at Wigton, Galloway, and in 1846 was employed on the Liverpool-Manchester railway. Arriving in New Zealand in 1856 after four years in Victoria (where he was also connected with railways), he joined the gold rushes in Nelson and Otago and in 1865 settled in Christchurch. For a time he was manager of the Canterbury section of New Zealand railways. Later he joined the firm of Coates and Co., jewellers. He married a daughter of Giles Coates and managed the firm until he retired in 1891. Thomson was a member of the first Christchurch City Council and mayor in 1878. For three years (1881-84) he represented Christchurch North in the House of Representatives (as a supporter of Atkinson). For eight years he was chairman of the hospital and charitable aid board. A freemason of lodge St Augustine, he was the first grandmaster under the New Zealand constitution (1890-91). He died on 13 Sep 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Lyttelton Times*, 14 Sep 1903. Portrait: Parliament House.

THOMSON, JAMES ALLAN (1881-1928) was born in Dunedin, the son of G. M. Thomson (q.v.). Educated at Kaikorai district school and the Otago Boys' High School, he gained a senior scholarship and was a prizeman in science (1899). At Otago University he took a high place in the School of Mines, was president of the students' union; graduated B.Sc. (1903) and took first-class honours in geology (1904). He was elected as the first Rhodes scholar from New Zealand and awarded the 1851 Exhibition Scholarship. Entering St John's College, Oxford, he graduated M.A. and became a demon-

strator in petrology. He married (1909) Gertrude Alice, daughter of Peter Keam. After carrying out scientific surveys in Western Australia, he was chosen as geologist to Scott's Antarctic expedition, but owing to incipient phthisis could not proceed. Instead he accepted a post in the geological survey of New Zealand (1911), and in 1914 became director of the Dominion Museum. Thomson died on 6 May 1928. He contributed many papers to the New Zealand Institute, of which he was president (1928) and which awarded him the Hutton medal (1923).

Thomson, *op. cit.* and *The Taieri Allans and Related Families*, 1929 (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 May; *The Dominion*, 7 May 1928 (p).

THOMSON, JAMES WILLIAM (1828-1907) was born at Auchterarder, Perthshire. Educated in Edinburgh, he graduated M.A. at Edinburgh University and proceeded to Leipzig. He came to Otago in 1859 in the *Equator* and took up land in the Clutha district, where he resided most of his life.

In 1864 Thomson was elected to the Provincial Council for Clutha, which he represented until 1873. For a very short period (in 1868) he was a member of the executive, and he was chairman of the public petitions committees and chairman of committees. In 1871 he was elected to Parliament for Clutha. Thomson stubbornly defended provincial institutions, and was one of the most prominent members of what was called the 'Prove' party. When the cause was lost he was entertained in Dunedin. As the president of the conference of Otago leaders to consider future policy, he protested to Lord Carnarvon against the abolition (1876). In 1879 he joined the Grey ministry as Minister of Lands a few weeks before its defeat. In 1884 Thomson proposed the no-confidence motion which resulted in the defeat of the first Stout-Vogel administration, but he declined the Governor's invitation to form a ministry. He once made a speech of 24 hours' duration in a stonewalling debate. Defeated by T. Mackenzie (q.v.) in 1887, he returned to Parliament in 1890 for the Bruce electorate, in which he was now residing. He resigned in 1892, but in 1896 was again elected for Clutha, which he represented until his retirement in 1905. In his

political career he was consistent, conscientious, and without personal ambitions. He died on 4 Aug 1907.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably 6 Aug 1907); *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Oct 1875, 21 Nov 1877, 5 Aug 1907; *Taranaki News*, 10 Dec 1890. Portrait: Parliament House.

THOMSON, JOHN CHARLES (1866-1934) was born in Invercargill and attended Macdonald's and Henry's private schools, Invercargill Grammar School and the district high school. After serving his indentures to a ponter, he took up journalism and later established a school of shorthand. In 1891 he joined the *TVestern Star* at Riverton, which he conducted until he sold his interest in 1904. He was a member of the Wallace and Fiord hospital trust (1893-1902), of the Wallace licensing committee (1893-96), of the Wallace hospital board, and of the Riverton borough Council (mayor 1901-04). A fluent speaker, Thomson was a founder of the Invercargill debating society, and for 20 years was Liberal member for Wallace in the House of Representatives (1902-19, 1922-25), being defeated in 1919 by A. Hamilton. He was for 33 years a member of the Southland education board (1900-34; chairman six times), was a delegate to the Imperial conference of education in 1907, a governor of the Southland High Schools and the Technical College, and a member of the Otago University council (1920-32). Thomson was a member of the Southern court of foresters from 1879, and of the Aparima lodge. He married (1893) Miss Keyling, of Greymouth. At the time of his death (on 9 Apr 1934) he was writing a history of Riverton for the centenary celebrations of 1937.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1934; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1920, 1932; *Riverton Record* (p).

THOMSON, JOHN TURNBULL (1821-84), was born at G10rorum, near Bamborough, Northumberland, the son of James Thomson, of Earnslaw, Benvickshire, his mother being a daughter of James Thomson, of Abbey St Bathans, Berwickshire. He was educated at Duns Academy, at Wooler, and at Marischal College, Aberdeen; studied engineering under eminent masters, and was in the same office with Sir William Armstrong. He then spent 18 years in the Straits Settlements as chief surveyor and civil engineer. During this time he con-

## THOMSON

structed the Horsburgh light on Pedra Branca Rock, a work of exceptional difficulty in recognition of which the merchants of Singapore made him a presentation (1851). The climate disagreeing with his health, Thomson came on a visit to New Zealand (1856). He was appointed chief surveyor in Otago, and before the year was out he had made a considerable reconnaissance survey, had fixed on the site of the town of Invercargill, and erected the survey office. As chief surveyor and provincial engineer, he supervised the cutting down of Bell hill in Dunedin and other works which later the municipality took over from the province. The simple and accurate system of surveys which he established in Otago became a model for the Colony, and withstood Major Palmer's report on the provincial systems. In 1873, owing to certain provisions of the Otago waste lands act 1872, the offices of chief commissioner and chief surveyor had to be separated, and Thomson chose the former. In 1876 he observed a transit of Venus. After the abolition of the provinces, Thomson was appointed Surveyor-general for the Colony. In his opinion triangulation was an absolute necessity, and he entirely discarded compass bearings in favour of true bearings. In 1877 he lectured before the Royal Society of Arts at Edinburgh. In 1879 he resigned the surveyor-generalship and went to live in Invercargill. There he became a member of the borough council, and was for a while mayor of Gladstone. In 1881 he contested the Mataura seat in Parliament and in 1884 Awarua. It was he who persuaded the local authority to adopt Sir John Coode's plan to deepen the New River by means of a training wall.

Thomson's chief intellectual pursuits were ethnology and astronomy. The Southland Institute, of which he was president from the first, owed its existence to him, and he read many papers before it. He was a founder also of the Otago Institute, and a member of the New Zealand Institute. Abroad he was a member of the Royal Scottish Society of Arts, a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, and a member of the Natural History Society of Newcastle-on-Tyne.

While in the east Thomson studied native languages and lore, and mastered Malay sufficiently to make a competent translation from

384

## THORNTON

that language of *Hakayit Abdulla*. Later he published *Glimpses of Life in the Far East, Rambles with a Philosopher* (1867) and *Social Problems* (1878).

Thomson had a distant manner which helped him little in his service on public bodies or in his parliamentary ambitions. He died on 16 Oct 1884.

*Southland and Otago p.e. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Baker; Ross; Beattie, ii; Jourdain; Roberts, *Southland*; Hocken, *Otago*; *Otago Daily Times*, 22 Mar 1875, 17 Oct 1884, 24 Apr 1930 (p).

THOMSON, LESLIE COLLIER (1834-67), came to New Zealand from Australia with his aunt (Miss Jean Collier) and his two brothers, and settled on land at Otaio, south Canterbury, which they stocked as a cattle station. Thomson represented Timaru in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1866-67). He died of yellow fever at Panama.

Acland; Woodhouse.

THOMSON, WILLIAM (1818-66), the son of a printer, was born in Edinburgh, and after attending the Edinburgh Southern Academy, was employed as an accountant in Glasgow. Arriving in Lyttelton in 1853 by the *Hampshire*, he bought land at Governors Bay, but later moved to Christchurch, where he began business as an auctioneer and accountant. For three years (1862-65) he sat in the House of Representatives as member for Avon, and he was auditor to the Provincial Council. Thomson was associated with the *Cantel'bu-y Standard* and for a while he owned the Lochinvar station in north Canterbury. He was a foundation member of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral association, and one of the earliest captains in the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry. He died on 20 Apr 1866.

*eye! N.Z.*, iii; *L'uteltoll Times*, 23 Apr 1866

THORNTON, JOHN (1844-1913) was born in Surrey and educated privately and at Highbury College, where he gained the first-class certificate of the committee of education. In 1864 he proceeded to India under the C.M.S. to engage in education in Telugu. After passing the necessary examinations, he took charge of a vernacular school at Masulipatam, training Christian students to go out as teachers to country schools. He spent two years reorganising

## THYNNE

the high school at Ellore, which had deteriorated owing to the admission of non-caste Christian students. In 1875 Thornton came to New Zealand and was for two years rector of the Oamaru Grammar school. From 1878 to 1910 he was appointed principal of Te Aute College, Hawkes Bay. He was honorary secretary of the college students' association and a lay member of the Napier Cathedral chapter and the Waiapu synod. Thornton died on 4 Jul 1913.

*eye! N.Z.*, vi (p); Stock; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 5 Jul 1913.

THYNNE, EARNEST STEPHEN (1845-1904) was born and educated in London and trained as a civil engineer. He settled at Foxton in 1868 and, in company with James Linton, carried on an auctioneering business for many years. Then he purchased the *Manawatu Herald* from J. R. Russell and also took up a farm near Foxton. He married Ellen (d. 1937), daughter of Captain Francis Robinson. Thynne represented Manawatu in the Provincial Council (1869-73), and was the first chairman of the Manawatu county council (1877-78, and 1883-87). He stood for Parliament without success. His death occurred on 22 Feb 1904.

*Paritry Record; Wellington p.e. Proc.; N.Z. Times*, 25 Feb 1904.

TIAKITAI (?-1833), a chief of Ngati-Kahungunu, in Hawkes Bay, was leader of the delegation which went to Waikato to make peace with Te Wherowhero after the disaster of Pakake (1824). After this engagement many of the important chiefs of Heretaunga (Hawkes Bay) were taken as prisoners to Waikato by the invaders. Following the peace made by Tiakitai, they were released. On account of the success gained at Te Pakake by Waikato, Ngati-Raukawa and their allies, another invasion of Hawkes Bay was made by Ngati-Raukawa in 1826-27, under Te Momo. Tiakitai sent word to Te Wera, the Ngapuhi chief, and Pare-ihe, who were at Nukutaurua on the Mahia peninsula, to come to his assistance and attack Ngati-Raukawa, who had taken charge of the two pas at Te Roto-a-tara. A strong force came under the two chiefs and defeated the invaders. Pare-ihe and Te Wera then returned to Mahia. Te Momo having been killed in the engagement, the Hawkes Bay chiefs knew that his death would not pass unavenged, so they col-

385

## TIFFEN

lected the people from southern Hawkes Bay and concentrated them for protection at Nukutaurua. The avenging taua came in 1828. Ngati-Kahungunu were closely besieged by their enemies, Waikato, Ngati-Raukawa, Ngati-Tuwharetoa, Ngati-Maru, Te Arawa and others, and reduced to the degradation of having to eat mud in their pa on account of being besieged. The battle and pa hence became known as Kai-uku (to eat mud). Tiakitai was drowned at sea near Nuhaka about 1833.

Lambert; S. P. Smith; J. H. Grace (information).

TIBBS, JAMES WILLIAM (1856-1924) was born at Hobart, Tasmania. In 1874 he proceeded as Tasmanian scholar to Keble College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. (1879) and M.A. (1883). He was mathematics master at St Edward's School at Oxford (1879-81) and then returned to Hobart as second master of the High School (1881-85). Coming to the Auckland Grammar School as second and mathematics master (1886), he became principal in 1893 and held that position with conspicuous success till his retirement in 1922 (C.M.G., 1923). Tibbs died on 18 Feb 1924. He was a member of the University Senate (1910-23).

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 19 Feb 1924.

TIFPEN, HENRY STOKES (1819-96) was born in England and trained as a surveyor and civil engineer. He was practising at Hythe when he received an appointment under the New Zealand Company, and he came to Wellington with the survey staff in the *Brougham* (arriving early in 1842). In 1844 he made a report on the Wairarapa, and shortly afterwards he became a settler there, establishing a cattle run. A few years later he drove a mob of sheep northward into Hawkes Bay, where he leased a large area from the natives. On this run being resumed he selected (with Northwood) the Pourerere and Homewood country, he himself taking Homewood when the partnership was dissolved, and acquiring Greenmeadows. On the separation of Hawkes Bay he was commissioner of crown lands there for some years. He was elected M.P.C. and sat continuously (for Napier Country'1859-61 and 1867-71; Te Aute 1861-67; Napier Town 1871-75). He was a member of the executive in 1861, and speaker for a short time in 1869. On the abolition of the provinces

TINLINE

Tiflen became a member of the first Hawkes Bay county council. He was on the high school and hospital boards (being chairman of the latter) and took a great interest in the children's home (of which he was chairman). He was a skilled agriculturist, and demonstrated the possibility of fruit and vinegrowing on the Ahuriri plain. Though a staunch Anglican and a generous contributor to the cathedral fund, he gave liberally to other denominations. Tiffen was twice married. He died on 21 Feb 1896.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.; NZ. Gaz.*, 24 Jan 1844; *Cycl. NZ.*, vi (p); Ward; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 21 Feb 1896, 16 Oct 1925; *NZ. Spectator*, 11 Jun 1856.

TINLINE, JOHN (1821-1907) was born in Jedburgh, Scotland, educated at the Grammar school there, and spent three years with a firm of solicitors. In 1839 he sailed in the *Bengal Merchant* for Australia, and joined his brother George at Adelaide. After spending a few months there on the survey staff, he came to New Zealand (Sep 1840), his cousin Robert Waitt being in business in Wellington. He joined Major Durie in a store on Lambton Quay, and in 1842 opened a branch at Nelson (as Waitt and Co.). Sustaining heavy loss by a fire in Wellington he remained at Nelson to wind up the business, and was appointed by Governor FitzRoy clerk of the court, sheriff and native interpreter (1844). He was surveying with Rochfort (1847), laid off reserves at Massacre Bay and witnessed the Waitohi purchase deed (1850). With a Maori he found his way from Nelson to Wairau by the Whangamoa Saddle and the Tinline river. At early race meetings he rode his own horse. In 1852 he left the Government service and shortly afterwards became interested in Marlborough stations, including Fernyhurst (1856), Weld's Hills, Green Hills and Lyndon. Lyndon comprised 80,000 acres (of which 50,000 was freehold), and was eventually sold to D. and A. Macfarlane.

Tinline represented Wairau in the Nelson Provincial Council (1857-58) and Amuri (1859-60). He was chairman of the bench of magistrates, the road board and the school committee, and exerted himself to get the railway extended to Culverden and the telegraph to Waiau. He endowed three scholarships at Nelson College and the University of New Zea-

TISDALL

land), and in 1878 presented a park to Jedburgh. Tinline in 1850 brought willow cuttings from St Helena, which he planted in north Canterbury. He died on 26 Feb 1907.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.; Cycl. v* (p); *NZ. Univ. Calendar; Nelson Coll. Reg.*; Acland; Roberts; Buick, *Marlborough The Colonist*, 27 Feb 1907; *NZ. Herald*, 13 Jan 1908.

TIORIORI, (?-1867) was the principal chief of the Ngati-Koroki branch of Ngati-Haua, a man of high birth and excellent qualities. Though sympathising with the King movement, he supported law and order and protected Gorst's school for young Maori men, many of whom were of his tribe. When news of Tairaimaka reached the King country he and Tamihana moved to Rangiaowhia to protect the magistrate. Even after the attack on the printing press he discountenanced violence and wished to garrison Te Awamutu with King soldiers. It was only when the troops crossed the Maungatawhiri river (1863) that Tioriori threw in his lot with the King. He inspired the defence at Rangiriri, and afterwards surrendered to overwhelming force and was taken prisoner. He was soon liberated on parole in consideration of his services to Europeans in the King country. Having lost a great deal in the confiscation of the land of the King tribes, he nevertheless leased a considerable area to European farmers. He lived after the war in the King country, but held aloof from the King party. For some years he acted as assessor, displaying scrupulous fairness in his judgments. Tioriori died on 28 Aug 1867.

Cowan; Gorst; *Southern Cross*, 2 Sep 1867.

TISDALL, WILLIAM ST CLAIR TOWERS (1859-1928), was the son of William St Clair Tisdall (1831-92), of county Meath, Ireland, who served in the 47th and 15th Regiments and the 2nd Waikato. The son graduated at the University of New Zealand (B.A., 1878; M.A., 1879) and was appointed incumbent of Wakefield, Nelson (1882) and lecturer at Bishopdale College. In 1885 he was appointed principal of St John's College, Lahore, India, and later of the C.M.S. college at Amritsar. Two years later he was head of the Mohammedan mission at Bombay, and in 1892 secretary of the Persia and Bagdad mission. In this service he was stationed at Ispahan for a few years and, hav-

TITOKOWARU

ing suffered in health, he had to go to England. He was James Long lecturer in oriental religions (1900-05) and from 1910 lecturer in Hebrew at the C.M.S. College at Islington. He was vicar of St George the Martyr at Deal (1910-26), and during the great war did duty as chaplain to the forces encamped in the vicinity. As an accomplished linguist and philologist Tisdall received the honorary degree of Edinburgh University in 1903. Amongst his publications were *The Triglott Gospel of St John, Religio Critici, Mythic Christs and the True*, and many gospel translations into Kurd, Urdu, Persian, Punjabi and Gujerati. He married Marian, daughter of the Rev W. Gray, secretary of the C.M.S. Tisdall died on 1 Dec 1928.

Their son ARTHUR WALDERNE ST CLAIR TISDALL (1890-1915) was a scholar of Trinity College, Cambridge, and won the chancellor's gold medal. He was awarded the Victoria Cross and was killed in action at Gallipoli on 6 May 1915.

*Verses, Letters and Remembrances of Arthur Walderne St Clair Tisdall*, 1916; *The Times*, 4, 5 Dec 1928; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Jan 1929.

TITOKOWARU (?-1888) was a chief of the Ngati-Manuhiakai hapu, Nga-Ruahine sub-tribe of Ngati-Ruanni, and belonged by descent also to the Tangahoe tribe. Though a minor chief, his name was a family one, and he enjoyed the greatest mana amongst all the chiefs of Ngati-Ruanni. He is said to have been one of the chiefs with Matakatea (q.v.) inside Ngateko (Waimate) in 1833-34, and assisted at the peacemaking after the defeat of the Waikato. Early in life Titokowaru accompanied the Rev J. Skevington to Auckland, where he was baptised as 'Hohepa.' When still a young man he was engaged in the first important Hauhau battle, the attack on Sentry Hill (30 Apr 1864), where he received a glancing blow from a bullet which destroyed the sight of his right eye. This injury emphasised the sternness of his countenance.

In 1866, living in his village of Rimatoto, he already had some reputation as a Hauhau prophet and tohunga. Gathering about him the young warriors of the Nga-Ruahine, Ngati-Ruanui, Ngati-Tupaea, Pakakohe and Nga-Rauru tribes, he moved from kainga to kainga discussing a new plan of campaign through ambushes, surprises and enticing soldiers away from

TITOKOWARU

their units. He adopted some of the Hauhau rites, the worship of Uenuku and Tu (the gods of battles) and their propitiation by sacrifice of flesh from the bodies of the enemy. About five feet nine inches in height, dark, spare and muscular, he had a loud, raucous voice and was fierce and rude in manner. He carried only the sacred tokotoko or staff. Though he does not appear to have indulged in cannibalism himself, his warriors certainly did. He held aloof from the King movement and exulted in its reverses in the field. In May 1868 some horses belonging to settlers were stolen. When the magistrate (Booth) arrived at Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu with a force of 100 men under Colonel McDonnell to arrest two of his chiefs, Titokowaru defied them. Next month three military settlers at Te Rauna were murdered, and a private of the Armed Constabulary was killed within sight of the redoubt at Waihi, half the body being taken away and eaten. Titokowaru strengthened his position at Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu, and select raiding parties, the Tekau-ma-Rua, were chosen by him (by divination) for offensive service. On 16 Jul a taua of 60 thus chosen and led by a near relative (Haowhenua) attacked the redoubt at Turuturumokai, killing Captain Ross and half the garrison of 20. On 7 Sep Colonel McDonnell attacked Te Ngutu with a strong force, but finding it, as he supposed, too strongly held, he did not press the attack, and retired with heavy losses (including Major von Tempsky, Captain Buck and Lieutenant Hunter killed). Most of the dead were burned, but some were eaten. Titokowaru's mana was now very high. The Colonial forces, much depressed, withdrew to Patea, and McDonnell resigned.

Colonel Whitmore, who succeeded him, made his headquarters at Wairoa to protect the settlements south of the Waitotara river and Titokowaru, abandoning Te Ngutu, established himself at Moturoa, four miles distant. This place was not fully fortified when Whitmore attacked on 7 Nov. Owing to poor reconnaissance the attack failed with considerable loss to the Colonials and very little to Titokowaru. Whitmore again withdrew, this time behind the Waitotara river, while Titokowaru, emboldened by his success, established himself in a strong position at Tauranga-hika, on Whitmore's front, with an extensive outlook over the coast lands. Whitmore was at this juncture ordered to with-

## TITOKOWARU

draw his force behind the Kai-iwi river and to proceed himself to the East Coast. Returning to the West Coast command in Jan 1869, he immediately paid attention to the hostile position at Tauranga-hika, which was strongly fortified. He had almost completed his investment (2 Feb 1869) when the enemy evacuated without interference. This retreat was mainly due to Titokowaru's loss of mana, through a liaison with Puarauranga (the wife of one of his chiefs), which in the eyes of his followers impaired his tapu. As he retreated towards Taranaki, his rearguard was constantly engaged in protecting the women and children. They reached Patea in the middle of Feb short of food and ammunition, and turned into the bush towards Otautu, where a fierce rearguard action was fought on 12 Mar. At Whakamara, a well-provided site of former Hauhau resistance, Titokowaru endeavoured to rest, but the pursuit was too hot, and his scattered forces retreated to the protection of the Ngaere swamp, eventually finding sanctuary in the forest of Ngatimaru, where he occupied the Kawau pa, on the upper Waitara river. A reward of £1,000 was offered for his apprehension, but no further steps were taken against him. When visiting Te Whiti in 1870 he stated that he would remain quiet if he was not interfered with.

In 1875, when the Government purchased the district, Titokowaru returned to the plains and reoccupied without hindrance the old tribal lands. He became a follower of Te Whiti and every month went with his people to Parihaka. On their cultivations on the Waimate plains they earned about £3,000 a year from the sale of cocksfoot seed. Much of this was contributed to Te Whiti's cause, and much also of the takoha received from the Government in respect of tribal lands. As the active agent of Te Whiti and Tohu, Titokowaru and his people many times interfered with the survey parties in Taranaki. At the raid on Parihaka (1881) he was arrested but released on a *nolle prosequi*. On 25 Nov 1881, at New Plymouth, he was bound over for 12 months. On the last occasion on which he was arrested, for malicious trespass on a pakeha farm, he was imprisoned for one month (Nov 1886). Later in the eighties Titokowaru organised and led many of Te Whiti's hekes, or feasting pilgrimages, from kainga to kainga.

## TITORE

Cowan (p); Kimble Bent (p); M. S. Grace (p); Whitmore; Gorton; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Aug 1888.

TITORE PAKI (? 1775-1837) belonged to Ngapuhi and lived at Kororareka. Over six feet in height and very handsome, he was mild and friendly in manner to the early visitors and very industrious in his habits. By his marriage with a sister of Hongi he acquired great influence. In 1815 he crossed to Port Jackson and spent two years in Marsden's care at Parramatta, learning European arts and customs. Then at the request of Marsden he and Tuhi (q.v.) were taken to England in H.M.S. *Kangaroo* (1817). After varied experiences there they returned to Australia (Jan 1819) in the convict ship *Baring* under the care of the Rev J. G. Butler. On 29 Jul 1819 they sailed for New Zealand with Marsden in the *Geneml Gates*. Marsden's high hopes from the experience gained in these years by Titore and his companion were doomed to be disappointed. When he visited New Zealand again in the *Dromedary* (1820) he found that Titore had been on a war expedition with Te Wera to East Coast or the Thames; and in his subsequent life he showed little disposition to resist the temptations to tribal strife. It was through his instrumentality that Tapsell (q.v.) was settled amongst the Arawa at Maketu in 1828. He generally supported the missions, and in 1830 assisted Marsden to bring about a settlement of the girls' war at Bay of Islands. He was one of the signatories to the petition to King William IV for protection (1831). Busby considered him the most influential and intelligent chief in the north. He was certainly a valued protector of the British residency and energetic in the punishment of all outrages against British authority. In 1834 he procured spars for the *Buffalo* and undertook to reserve for the Royal Navy the spars in his forests at Whangaroa. In consideration of his services William IV in 1835 sent him a suit of armour of the time of Charles I.

When the Ngapuhi returned from seeking revenge for the destruction of Haramiti's expedition at Tauranga they prevailed upon Titore to assist in carrying on the war, and several expeditions were made under Titore, Rewa, Te Morenga, Moka and Tareha. Returning to Bay of Islands (Nov 1832) they prepared a new taua of 600 men, including a strong detachment

## TODD

of Pana-kareao's Rarawa. The Rev Henry Williams overtook them and reached Maketu first, but his efforts to prevent fighting failed. The Maketu people, believing that Titore was attacking on the other side, assaulted the Ngati-Awapa of Te Tumu. The old jealousy of Pomare and Titore came to a head in Mar 1837 when these chiefs, with allies from all sections of Ngapuhi and even from Rarawa, became engaged in a destructive war. Titore sent a force of 800 men in 40 canoes against Pomare's position at Otuihu. Low-class whites and halfcastes and many Christian chiefs were enrolled on each side, and much bloodshed occurred. Titore was already in a serious decline, becoming so weak during the fighting that he could not speak. He received a wound from which he died on 1 Jun 1837, adjuring his people to protect the pakeha. Though not a strong Christian he had a neat, clean place of worship and a school in which his son Marsden taught. Hobson considered him an excellent chief and the *Rattlesnake* fired a salute of seven guns at his death. Titore's other son died while with the Rev Samuel Marsden at Parramatta (1820).

Ramsden (p); Buller; Carleton; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Cruise; Marsden, *L. and J.*

TODD, ALEXANDER BRUCE (1821-1903) was born at St Andrews, Scotland, educated there and went into business. In 1839 he began to study for the church at St Andrew's University. He was in charge of Falmouth Academy, Jamaica, for three years, and finished his arts course at Edinburgh. After attending the Free Church Theological College, he was licensed in 1855 and worked among the miners of Cowdenbeath, Fifeshire, and at Kirkoswald, Ayrshire. Ordained at Maybole, Todd came to New Zealand in the *Mariner* (1858) and was appointed to the charge of Tokomairiro, where he laboured for 10 years (1859-69). He was the first minister to preach at Gabriel's Gully. In 1860 he assisted Bannerman at the induction of the Rev A. Stobo at Invercargill. In 1869 he was settled in St Paul's, Oamaru, paying periodical visits to the surrounding stations. He retired after serving there 25 years, and died on 18 Aug 1903.

Chisholm; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Aug 1903.

TODD, ANDREW (1796-1879) was born in Fifeshire, Scotland, where he followed agricul-

## TOHU

ture, and later he spent 10 years in Ireland on a farm under the Duke of Leinster. Coming to New Zealand in the *Simlah* in 1851, he joined his eldest son in East Taieri, Otago, on a property which became known as the Johnstown farm. Todd was member for Central Otago in the Provincial Council (1860-63). He died on 18 Jul 1879.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 20 Jul 1879.

TODD, WILLIAM (1842-1912) was born at Bishop Briggs, near Glasgow. In 1842 he accompanied his parents to Australia in the *Sophia BUI-bidge*. He was employed for some time on the Bendigo goldfields as a storekeeper. In 1863 he came to Invercargill and established himself as an auctioneer. About 1868 he moved to the West Coast to carry on the same business in Hokitika. He was a member of the Westland land board; was for two years mayor of Hokitika (1872-74), and represented the town in the Provincial Council (1874-75), being provincial treasurer and a member of the executive. About 1878 he returned to Invercargill and established the auctioneering firm of William Todd and Co. Todd died on 28 Dec 1912.

*Cycl. N.Z.* iv, v; Harrop, *Westland; Southland Times*, 30 Dec 1912.

TOETOE, WIREMU, who died in 1881, was a Waikato chief of Rangiaowhia. With Hemara te Rerehau (Ngati-Maniapoto) he was taken by Hochstetter in the frigate *Novam* (1859) on the continuation of his world cruise, and spent some time in Austria. On leaving Vienna to return to New Zealand (in the *Caduceus*) the party were presented with a printing press and type. The New Zealand Government gave Toetoe a grant of land at the confluence of the Maungatawhiri and the Waikato, in the hope that he would exercise a quieting influence on his neighbours. He, however, did little to dissuade his people from throwing in their lot on the King side in the Waikato war. The press was used for printing the *Hokioi*. He died on 21 Feb 1881.

Cowan; Gorst; Hochstetter; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Feb 1881; *Auckland Star*, 15 Apr 1922.

TOHU KAKAHI, a Taranaki prophet and for many years the colleague of Te Whiti, was

## TOHU

born a few years before the Treaty of Waitangi (1840). He belonged to several hapus of Taranaki and (like Te Whiti) was closely related to Te Wharepouri (q.v.) and to the tribes Ngati-Mahanga and Ngati-Ruanui. He was educated at the mission school at Warea under Riemenschneider, from whom he obtained a thorough grounding in the Scriptures. Tohu is believed as 'a young man to have taken the field in 'the wars against the pakeha and to have been present at a number of engagements, including the ambush at Waitara, and the attack on Mace's force. at Warea (Oct 1865). It is said he was present at Sentry Hill (Apr 1864) but carried only a tokotoko. Tohu and Te Whiti became imbued with the gospel of peace derived from their Bible study and emerged from the war to spread the slogan 'No more bloodshed.' Taking up their residence at Parihaka, they gradually induced their tribes to attend monthly meetings and to subscribe to the Day of Reckoning Fund, which was to be devoted to necessary purchases on the day when all the white people should leave the country. Tohu and Te Whiti collaborated cordially in the isolation policy. On their arrest at Parihaka in 1881 they gave themselves up quietly and remained prisoners at the Governor's pleasure for two years. They were not brought to trial. When they returned Tohu's mana was increased, while Te Whiti's was impaired. Their close friendship; was broken by a dispute about 1890 regarding the disposal of the Fund, and thereafter, though they often addressed meetings together, they were never on speaking terms. Rivalry arose between Tohu's followers (who were mainly Ngati-Ruanui, and were called Pore - 'the unhorned') and those of Te Whiti (who were mainly Ngati-Awa). The factions vied with each other in improving their portions of the village and their houses.

While undergoing detention after Parihaka Tohu maintained a stoical indifference to all that he saw in the southern parts of New Zealand. He was a heavily built man, about 6 ft 1 in. in height, with aquiline features and a square firm chin, slight beard and luxuriant hair slightly grey; a countenance dogged and sensual. He died on 4 Feb 1907, and was buried at Parihaka. His only son, Kakapi, survived him. His wife, Mohia, a sister of Te Whiti's wife Hukurangi, died before him.

## TOLLEMACHE

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; J. P. Ward, *Wanderings with the Maori Prophets* (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 5, 9 Feb 1907.

TOLE, JOSEPH AUGUSTUS (1847-1920) was born in Yorkshire, the son of an Irishman, John Tole (1807-79). He came to Auckland with his parents as a boy and was educated in the Catholic school (under R. J. O'Sullivan) and at St John'S College, Sydney University, where he graduated B.A. 1868 and LL.B. 1869. He read law in the chambers of Edward Butler, Q.C., and was admitted to the bar in 1871. In 1872 he was admitted in Auckland and commenced to practise. He was a member of the Ponsonby road board (and for some years chairman) and a member of the Auckland harbom' board. In 1876, standing as a supporter of Grey, he won the Eden seat in Parliament, which he held till 1887, defeating Whitaker in 1879 and Reader Wood in 1881. Tole held the portfolio of Minister of Justice in the Stout-Vogel Government of 1884-87 and was defeated at the general election of 1887. While in Parliament he took a keen interest in law amendment, especially in social directions. The adoption of children and the first offenders probation acts were introduced by him. In 1888 Tole resumed his practice at the bar, and in 1892 was appointed crown solicitor in Auckland. He was on the University Senate and was for some years a member of the Auckland University council and the Grammar School governors, a trustee of the council of technical education, a trustee of the Jubilee Institute for the Blind; speaker (for three sessions) of the Auckland parliamentary union; president of the Auckland branch of the Irish National federation and a patron of the Catholic literary society. A tenor soloist, he was a member of the Choral society and the Liedertafel, sang in many oratorios and took a leading part in the French play produced before the Duke of Edinburgh in Sydney (1868). Tole married (1882) a daughter of Edward Lewis (of Wanganui). He died on 13 Dec 1920.

*N'z.P.D.*, II Mar 1921; *Cycl. N'z.*, ii (p); *Auckland Star*, 13 Dec and *N'z. Herald*, 14 Dec 1920. Portrait: Parliament House.

TOLLEMACHE, ALGERNON GRAY (1805-92) was a brother, of the Earl of Dysart. When he was a member of Parliament for Grantham

## TOLMIE

(1832-37) he became interested in the New Zealand Company and purchased 34 sections in the town of Wellington and other sections in Nelson settlement. He came to New Zealand in one of the earliest ships and became a large landed proprietor in several provinces. He financed many small farmers. He returned to England and in 1857 married Frances Louise, daughter of the Hon Charles Tollemache. He died on 16 Jan 1892.

Ward (p); Godley, *Letters*; *Daily Telegraph*, Napier, 16 Oct 1925; *The Times*, 18 Jan 1892.

TOLMIE, WILLIAM ALEXANDER (1833-75) was born in England. He arrived in Victoria towards the end of 1852, travelled for a few months and at the age of 20 entered the service of the Union Bank of Australia at Melbourne. In 1859 he was appointed manager of the Colonial Bank of Australasia at Geelong, a position he held until the end of 1864, when he came to Dunedin to become a partner in the firm of Dalgety, Rattray and Co. On the expiration of the partnership he relinquished business life and took up stockbreeding on his property at Waiwera. Paying attention first to merinos, he introduced the best strains of sheep from Australia and Tasmania, and soon established a reputation, his sheep being unbeaten at the shows of Otago and Canterbury. With long-woolled sheep he had equal success, establishing stud *Hocks* of Leicesters, Lincolns and Romney Marsh sheep at Clinton and Waipahi. In 1871 Tolmie was deputy-superintendent of the province and next year he entered Otago politics as member of the Provincial Council for Peninsula. A few months later he was provincial secretary for lands and leader of the executive which replaced Reid's administration. His colleagues were Turnbull, McDermid and McArthur. Early in 1873 he retired from the executive, his place being taken by Dr Webster. Meanwhile, in Aug 1872, he was elected to represent Caversham in Parliament and he held the seat until his death (on 8 Aug 1875). Tolmie shrank from public life. He had no disposition for party politics and had a definite distaste for the acerbities of political debate.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Ross; *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Aug 1875. Portrait: Parliament House.

TE TOMO, TAITE (1883-1939) belonged to the Ngati-Tuwharetoa tribe and was of good

## TOMOANA

birth. He was a farmer at Halcombe. He served on several Maori land boards and was regarded as an authority on **whakapapas**. He also served on commissions of inquiry into native affairs. Te Tomo was M.H.R. for Western Maori from 1930-35, and supported the National government. He had a gift of oratory and a profound knowledge of folk lore, legends and Maori history. He died on 22 May 1939.

*N'z.P.D.*, 1930-35 (notably 30 Jun 1939); *The Dominion*, 24 May 1939.

TOMOANA, HENARE (?-1904) was a chief of Ngati-Hori, a sub-tribe of Ngati-Kahungunu. He was called Tomoana, meaning 'to drag the sea' on account of the dragging of the sea-coast in the search for the body of Tiakitai (q.v.) Tomoana's father was Te Hira, and his mother Te Rotohenga, both of whom were taken prisoners at Te Pakake and carried off to Waikato. While there they were mamed and had two children, Tomoana and Te Uamairangi. By a previous marriage, with Tini-kirunga, Te Rotohenga had two sons; Takamoana (q.v.) and Te Meihana.

Henare Tomoana was consistently friendly to the pakeha. When the Hauhau rising first threatened to invade Hawkes Bay he offered his services to the Government and received the rank of captain *in* the forces. In the later stages of the Te Kooti rising he pushed on with 120 Ngati-Kahungunu and occupied the old Tauranga pa on the edge of Lake Taupo (6 Sep 1869). There he was attacked by Te Kooti and sustained an anxious siege for two days, when Te Kooti withdrew to Tokaanu, driving off the horses of the friendlies and seizing most of their stores. The besieged lived on horse flesh part of the time. Tomoana afterwards took part in the fight at Porere, where Te Kooti was finally defeated in the field. He received a sword of honour from the Queen for his services. He was a progressive-minded man and a leading member of the Kotahitanga movement, attending most of the Maori conferences in the hope of consolidating the feeling in favour of self-government, under the Treaty of Waitangi and against land-selling. Two meetings of the Maori Parliament were held at Waitapu, Hasungs (1892-93);

Tomoana was member for the Eastern Maori in 1879-84 (defeating Henare Matua and Hans

## TONKS

Tapsell at both elections). He was Native member **without** portfolio of Sir John Hall's executive in 1879. In 1884 he was defeated by **Wi Pere** (q.v.). In 1898 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was still a member at the time of his death (20 Feb 1904). Tomoana was given a public funeral at which the mourners **included** the Prime Minister (Seddon), Sir William Russell and Sir James Carroll.

*NZ.P.D.*, 1879-84, 1898-1904 (notably 28 Jun 1904); J. H. Grace and P. T. Tomoana (information); Lambert (p); Cowan. Portrait: Parliament House.

TONKS, BENJAMIN (1832-84) was born in **Birmingham**. At the age of 19 he emigrated to **Australia** and had some experience on the Victorian goldfields, afterwards entering into business as a merchant in Melbourne. His health suffering, he came to New Zealand (1855) in the schooner *Pioneer* and started farming at Wairoa. Shortly afterwards he entered the office of Connell and Ridings, auctioneers, Auckland. He next joined the provincial public works department, from which he transferred to the Crown Lands department, remaining there until the Government was transferred to Wellington. Tonks then started the firm of B. Tonks and Co., **auctioneers** and estate agents. During the Maori troubles he held a commission in the defence forces (ensign, 1862; lieutenant, 1863; captain of volunteers, 1866). In 1871 he was elected to the Auckland city board, on which he served until the inauguration of the borough council, of which he was also a member, and he was on the harbour board (1871).

Tonks was elected to the Provincial Council in 1871 for Parnell, re-elected in 1873 and sat till 1875, when he visited England. He was a member of the executive 1874-75. On his return to the Colony he was elected mayor of Auckland, in which capacity he served also on the domain board, the improvement commissioners and the board of health. In Jul 1876 he was elected to represent Auckland City West in Parliament, but he resigned his seat in 1877. Tonks was a member of the Remuera road board until his death; was for many years on the Auckland land board; was twice elected auditor of the Bank of New Zealand, and was a director of the New Zealand Accident Assurance Co. He took an interest in sport and was

## TORRANCE

president of the Auckland Racing club. He died on 27 Jul 1884.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *NZ. Herald*, 28 Jul 1884. Portrait: Parliament House.

TOOMATH, EDWARD (1817-1885) was educated at the Battersea training institute, and after a few years soldiering taught in London and Northamptonshire schools. He came to New Zealand in the *Cressy* (one of the first four ships to Canterbury) as agent of the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge, and taught in Lyttelton before settling in Wellington. In 1853 he was appointed to the Thorndon school, and in 1857 he founded private schools in Wellington and Greytown. He represented Wellington City in the Provincial Council (1856-61). Toomath was from 1871 to 1881 a member of the Wellington education **board**. He was an inspector of schools and both in and out of the Council he was one of the earliest advocates of free education. He later had a property at Kairanga, where he bred long-woolled sheep. He married (1850) Eliza Jane Battersby, of Cornwall, and died on 29 Apr 1885.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Leckie; Ward.

TOPEORA, RANGI, the daughter of Waitohi (sister of Rauparaha) and Te Rakaherea, was of good **Ngati-Toa** blood. She was a poetess of high standing. At the assault on Tapuiniakall, during the heke from Taranaki (1818), she was struck by the heroism of an enemy warrior, Te **Ratotonu**, of Nga-Mahanga hapu of Taranaki, and ill-served on having him called: She threw her mat over him and became his wife. He was killed at Ihupuku during the Tataramoia heke, when the Nga-Rauru attacked the Ngati-Toa (1822). Topeora was the mother of Matene te Whiwhi (q.v.). She was one of the three women who signed the Treaty of Waitangi.

S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Pomare and Cowan.

TORRANCE, JOHN AINSLIE (1832-1908) was born in Edinburgh and was brought up by his **widowed** mother. After serving his apprenticeship to the printing trade, he arrived in Dunedin in the *Ben Lomond* and became manager of the printing department of the *Evening Star*. Philanthropic by nature, he was appointed chaplain of the gaol, hospital and lunatic asylum. When the Provincial Council

## TOSHACK

was abolished, he was appointed agent of the Patients' and Prisoners' Aid society (1877), holding the position for over 30 years. He was an elder of Knox church until his death (on 10 Aug 1908).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; J. Chisholm, *Memorials of J. A. Torrance* (p), 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 11 Aug 1908.

TOSHACK, ANDREW (1829-96), who was born in Perthshire, Scotland, came to Auckland by the *Caduceus* in 1858. In 1860 he bought land at West plains, Southland, where he lived until his death. He was member for Waikiwi in the Southland Provincial Council (1866-67, 1869-70), and later represented Southland after the reunion in the Otago Provincial Council (1870). He was a member of the Southland county council and for 15 years a member of the waste lands board. In 1873 he married Margaret, daughter of John McNaughton (who came to New Zealand in 1861 by the *Lady Egidia*).

*Southland Otago P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv.

TOSSWILL, WILLIAM BROWNING (1829-99) bought land in Canterbury in 1854, and was a member of the Provincial Council three times (for Heathcote 1861-62, for Lincoln 1862-65, and for Riccarton 1870-75). He was an executive member for a year (1870-71). He died on 18 Dec 1899.

Acland, p. 26.

TOWNLEY, JOHN (1837-1920) was born at Warrington, Lancashire, and educated at Preston and at the Church of England Sunday School in Manchester. He served an apprenticeship to cabinet-making in Manchester, and afterwards worked in Shrewsbury. For some time he was employed on railway construction in the north of England. He married (1863) Elizabeth Peers. In the same year they arrived in Auckland by the *Telegraph* and proceeded to Napier. Townley served in the war in Hawkes Bay and was present at the battle of Omarunui. He was for some years in business in Napier in the firm of Large and Townley. In 1873 he settled in Gisborne, entering into business at Townley's corner. In 1877 he was elected to the first Gisborne borough council, of which he was a member until 1899. He was mayor from that year until 1907. During his mayoralty

## TRAILL

the Gisborne water supply was inaugurated. Townley was chairman of the harbour board for 27 years; superintendent of the fire brigade for 30 years, and chairman of the Gisborne permanent building society. He took a keen interest in the railway league. Townley died on 27 Apr 1920.

Family information; Gisborne Jubilee Souvenir. *Gisborne Times*, 10 May 1927; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 28 Apr 1920.

TOXWARD, CHRISTIAN JULIUS (1831-91) was born at Copenhagen, trained as an architect and emigrated to Australia. For some years he was goldmining on the Ballarat and other fields with varying fortune. Arriving in New Zealand about 1861, he was for some time clerk of works with the provincial government of Southland. He then removed to Wellington, where he designed some important buildings, including that of the Government Life Insurance department, which was built just after his death and not demolished until 1932. He was an artist of considerable talent. Toxward was a freemason, a justice of the peace and director of several companies, including the Wellington Trust and Loan Co. He was for some years Danish consul in New Zealand, and was a close friend of Bishop Monrad (q.v.). He died in Wellington on 30 Sep 1891.

*N.Z. Times*, 1 Oct 1891.

TRAILL, CHARLES (1825-91) was born in Orkney, Scotland; educated partly at Edinburgh University and articled to a lawyer. He came to Australia in 1849 and commenced sheep-farming, but was attracted to the diggings in California (1850). In 1853 he returned to Great Britain, and in 1856 came to Otago. He was in business for some years in Oamaru as Traill, Roxby and Co. On a holiday visit to Stewart Island, he discovered oyster beds and decided to settle there and establish a fish-curing industry (1871). This did not succeed, but he became attached to the locality and bought land on a small island which he named Ulva. There he opened a store and kept a post office. He married Miss Bucholz (d. 1875). Traill had a passion for botany, native bush, and observation in natural history; and he was devoted to the welfare of the Maori people. He died on 26 Nov 1891.

*Southland Times*, 4 Dec 1891.

## TRASK

TRASK, FRANCIS (1842-1910) was born at Merriott, Somersetshire, and came to Canterbury in the *MinOl'ca* (1860). In the following year he proceeded to the Otago goldfields, where he was engaged for some time at Wetherstone's gully as a butcher. He then moved to Nelson, where he carried on his trade for many years. In 1878 he was elected to the borough council, of which he was a member till 1890, after which he was mayor for 10 years. He carried out many important works for the borough, including the Rocks road to the Waimea and the West Coast. He was also a member of the harbour board and of the town schools committee and a director of the permanent building society from 1880. He was a prominent Oddfellow and Forester and a member of the Nelson Jockey and Trotting clubs. Trask was called to the Legislative Council in 1903 and was a member till his death (on 5 Apr 1910).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 28 Jun 1910; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *The Colonist*, 6 Apr 1910. Portrait: Parliament House.

TRAVERS, WILLIAM THOMAS LOCKE (1819-1903) was born at Castle View, Newcastle, county Limerick, and was educated in France, chiefly at the College of St Servan. He then entered the British Foreign Legion for the Carlist war in Spain. As a lieutenant in the 2nd Regiment of Lancers he served three years (1835-38) and earned a decoration for gallantry.

Returning to England, Travers studied for law; was admitted a solicitor in London in 1844; and practised at Chipping Campden and Evesham. He embarked for New Zealand in the *Kelso*, which landed him at Nelson in 1849. He was at once admitted to the bar and commenced to practise. He was elected (1853) to represent the town of Nelson in the first Parliament, and was a member of Forsaith's executive for a few days in the constitutional crisis of 1854. At an early stage he demanded that the General Government should undertake responsibility for education throughout the Colony instead of leaving it to the provinces. In the second Parliament he represented Waimea (1854-59). He contested the superintendency of Nelson against Stafford (1855) and was then appointed a district judge, but this did not detain him long from private practice.

Having made some explorations of the routes between Nelson and Canterbury, Travers

## TRAVERS

decided to settle in the latter province, where he practised as a barrister. He stood unsuccessfully for the superintendency against Moorhouse (1866), but Christchurch City accepted him as representative in Parliament (1867-69). He was elected to the Provincial Council for Heathcote (1867), but resigned almost immediately to reside in Wellington. Here in 1877 he was elected to represent Wellington City in Parliament, having thus had the distinction of being elected by each of the three cities in which he had resided. He resigned early in 1878.

Travers co-operated with Ludlam, Mantell and Hector in getting the Wellington botanical gardens set aside as a public reserve. He was passionately interested in botany and ornithology, and read many papers before the Wellington Philosophical society, on those subjects, on geology and Maori customs. He was one of the founders of the New Zealand Institute; and drafted the measures under which it was established. On its incorporation he became a governor for life, besides being honorary treasurer. His addresses as president and vice-president were always thoughtful and interesting.

When Wellington College was disaffiliated from the University of New Zealand, Travers resigned from the board of governors because he believed that the endowments should no longer be enjoyed by the College. He published a book embodying impressions of travel through America to England, and in 1872 *The Sth-ring Times of Te Rauparaha*. He also wrote the letterpress for Barraud's album of New Zealand views (1877). He contributed papers to the *Natural History Review* and the transactions of the Ethnological Society. (F.L.S.) Before his death Travers advocated the use of the power in the Hutt river. He was a shareholder of the "Wellington Gas Co., a director of the Wellington Tramways Co., and one of the promoters of the Manawatu railway. He was a keen volunteer in Nelson and Canterbury, and for 40 years held a commission in the militia (captain 1863). For services to the government of France he received the Grand Cross of the Order of Cambodia.

Travers died on 26 Apr 1903. His first wife died in 1888. He married second (1891) Theodosia, daughter of W. de R. Barclay.

*Canterbury Gaz.*, vol. iii; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*;

## TRAVIS

*Tr. N.Z. Institute*; Ward (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p), iii, vi; *N.Z. Times*, 28 Apr 1903; *Evening Post*, 31 Oct 1929 (p).

TRAVIS, RICHARD CHARLES (1886-1918), son of James Savage, a constable, was born in Opotiki and christened •Dickson Cornelius Savage: From an early age he was employed as horsebreaker, drover, shepherd and general farm labourer. When war broke out in 1914, Savage, who was working in Southland, joined the Otago Mounted Rifles under the assumed name by which he is generally known, and recorded his birth place as Seattle, America. He served with distinction in Egypt and Gallipoli, and with the Otago Infantry regiment in France, where he achieved a remarkable reputation as a scout. He was awarded the M.M. (1916), the Belgian Croix de Guerre; the D.C.M., and (on 24 Jul 1918) the V.C. for conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in destroying an impassable wire block in broad daylight near an enemy post. He was killed in action the following day (25 Jul 1918) at Rossignol wood.

Byrne, *Official Hist[ory] of the Otago Regiment in the Great War* (p); *London Gaz.*, 27 Sep 1918; *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, 1 Dec 1933 (p); *New Zealander* (London), 11 Oct 1918.

TREGEAR, EDWARD (1846-1931), the only son of Captain W. J. Tregear, was born in Southampton, educated at private schools in England, and arrived in New Zealand in 1863. He saw active service during the Maori war, and was afterwards a first-class sub-inspector in the Armed Constabulary in charge of the native contingent (1873). He was later captain of the Patea Rifles (1879), and of the Wellington Civil Service Rifles (1899).

Tregear entered the civil service in the Survey department, and on the creation of the Labour department was appointed successively Secretary of the Bureau of Industries (1891), chief inspector of factories (1891) and Secretary of the Labour department (1898). When he retired (*in* 1911) he was made a member of the Imperial Service Order. In 1907 he was president of the civil servants' association. He was chairman of three royal commissions on private benefit societies (1897), on the kauri gum industry (1898), and on the cost of living (1912).

## TRIBE

A profound student of Maori and Polynesian races and tongues, Tregear published many papers in the proceedings of learned societies. He was a fellow of the Royal Geographical society (1887), of the Royal Historical society (1888), of the Royal Anthropological society of Great Britain (1888), and of the Royal Society of Italy (1893), and an officier de l'Academie française (1896). In 1899 he became a fellow of the Imperial Institute and a governor of the New Zealand Institute. He was secretary (with S. Percy Smith) of the Polynesian society for 11 years, and president for two years, and also belonged to the Hawaiian Historical society and to the Société d'Etudes Oceaniennes (Tahiti).

Tregear's publications include *Southern Parables* (1884), *The Aryan Maori* (1885), *Fairy Tales and Folk Lore of New Zealand and the South Seas* (1891), *Maori-Polynesian Comparative Dictionary* (1891), *Paumotuan Dictionary* (1895), *Hedged with Divinities* (1895), *A Vocabulary and Grammar of the Niue Dialect* (1897), *Dictionary of Mangarewa* (1899), *Notes from Oceania, The Maori Race* (1904), and *Shadows and Other Verses* (1919).

In 1880 he married Bessy, daughter of Hamar H. Arden of New Plymouth. He died on 28 Oct 1931.

*App. H.R.*, 1873 GB; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Polyn. Jour.*, vol. 40; *Evening Post*, 28 Oct 1931; *The Dominion*, 29 Oct 1931 (p).

TREVETHICK, JONATHAN (1864-1939) was born at Lostwithiel, Cornwall, and came to New Zealand after his marriage in 1888, joining his brother in business at Lower Hutt. In 1894 he established a brush manufacturing business in Auckland, which he carried on till 1927. He was a member of the Auckland City Council (1910-21) and of the Auckland and Suburban drainage board; a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank, and president of the Auckland sailors' home. Trevethick was many years chairman of the Liberal Federation in Auckland, and was a foundation member of the United Political party, of which he was president for Auckland province. He was a member of the Legislative Council from 1930 till his death (17 Oct 1939).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Oct 1939.

TRIFFIE, GEORGE HENRY (1828-77) was born at Oxford, England. He came to New Zealand,

## TRIGGS

and while living on the West Coast sat as member for Totara in the House of Representatives (1871-76). For a short time he edited the *Wanganui Chronicle*, and then started in business as an accountant in Wellington. He was secretary of the Lands Investment society and of the Wellington and Hutt Building society, and auditor of the Wellington branch of the Mutual Provident society. He died on 19 Mar 1877.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Evening Post*, 19 Mar 1877.

TRIGGS, WILLIAM HENRY (1855-1934) was born in Chichester, England, educated at private schools, and gained his first experience in journalism on the *Sunoe Comet*. Coming to New Zealand in 1878, he joined the Wellington *Evening Post*, in 1885 succeeded Edward Wakefield as editor of the *Timaru Herald*, and the following year joined the staff of the Christchurch *Press*. He represented New Zealand at the first international congress of the press at Antwerp in 1894. In 1895 he was appointed editor of *The Press*, which during his editorship maintained a high literary standard. He was elected a member of the English Journalists' institute in 1894, a fellow in 1901, and in 1910 a vice-president and chairman of the overseas committee. He was president of the New Zealand Institute of Journalists in 1900. Triggs was a director of *The Press* for 10 years until retiring from the paper in 1919.

In 1918 he was appointed to the Legislative Council, from which he retired in 1932. In 1908 he was a member of the board of public health, and in 1925 chairman of the mental defectives committee. He married (1882) Marion, daughter of the Rev J. Dumbell. Triggs died on 17 Jun 1934.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Jun 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Evening Post*, 18 Jun 1934.

TRIMBLE, ROBERT (1824-99) was born in the neighbourhood of Belfast and educated at the Grammar school there. He went to the United States in the forties, back to Manchester in the fifties, and settled in Liverpool representing the New York firm of William Watson and Co. He became a partner in the firm just before the Civil War, in which he worked strenuously for the northern cause. At the close of the war he received a silver medal in recognition of his services to liberated negroes. While in England

## TRIMNELL

Trimble imbibed the principles of Manchester liberalism, advocating freetrade, secular education and the abolition of the state church. He participated in the early volunteer movement, being a member of the first battery raised at Garston, Lancashire, and assisting to raise a second and third battery. Appointed a lieutenant-colonel, he completed the raising of a brigade (then known as the 15th, and later as the 6th Lancashire), which he commanded until 1875, when he was promoted colonel.

In 1875 Trimble sailed with his family for New Zealand and became one of the first settlers on the Moa block subdivision near Inglewood. He took an active part in local affairs, being a member of the Inglewood town board and first chairman of the Taranaki county council. In 1879 he was elected to Parliament for Grey and Bell, which he represented until 1881. From 1881-87 he represented Taranaki. At the time of the Parihaka scare he drilled the Inglewood volunteers. In later years he was for some time a judge of the native land court.

Trimble married (1856) a daughter of Alderman Heywood, of Manchester. He died on 5 Sep 1899.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *N.Z. Times*, II Sep 1879; *Taranaki Herald*, 6 Sep 1899. Portrait: Parliament House.

TRIMNELL, THOMAS TALLIS (1827-97) was born at Bristol, his father being vicar-choral of Bristol Cathedral. He also was educated at the cathedral school and was a chorister, being boy soloist on the occasion of a visit by Spohr. He received his first appointment as private organist to a county magnate, and he understudied Corle, then organist at Bristol Cathedral. Trimnell was organist at Chesterfield parish church for 24 years. During this time he was a member of the Bristol Madrigal society, and he organised a brass band at Chesterfield which won first prize at a national competition at the Crystal Palace. He left Chesterfield for Clifton and became organist at Sheffield, where he conducted the Derby Choral union. Before coming to New Zealand (1886) Trimnell acted with Daniel Godfrey as judge in band competitions. He was four years organist at St Mary's Cathedral, Parnell, and in 1890 was appointed to St Peter's, Wellington. He conducted for the Amateur Operatic society and the Wellington Orchestral society.

## TRIPE

Trimnell's own compositions included *Evening Service in C* (which he composed for the festival of the London Church Choir union) and the anthem *Thou'it keep him in perfect peace*. He died on 5 Sep 1897.

*Evening Post*, 6 Sep 1897.

TRIPE, MARY ELIZABETH (nee Richardson) (1867-1939) was the daughter of the Hon Edward Richardson (q.v.). Educated privately and at the Christchurch Girls' High School, she studied painting under James Nairn, van der Velden and Nerli. While in England in 1913-14 she studied under Frederick Whiting, R.P. In 1900 she married Joseph Albert, son of Dr W. B. Tripe. Mrs Tripe painted a good deal in both oils and water colours, and was for years one of the foremost landscape and portrait painters in New Zealand. Her figure work was outstanding and she was one of the first New Zealanders to paint the nude. She exhibited with success at the New Zealand Academy of Arts over a long period of years, and abroad at the Royal Academy, the Paris Salon, the Royal Society of Women Artists and the Royal Society of Portrait Painters (where her works were hung on the line). Many of her pictures were acquired for public galleries in New Zealand, including several for the National Portrait Gallery. Mrs Tripe died on 21 Sep 1939.

*The Dominion*, 22 Sept 1939.

TRIPP, CHARLES GEORGE (1826-97), son of the Rev Charles Tripp, D.D., of Silverton rectory, was born in Kentisbere in Devonshire, England, and educated at the Merchant Taylors' school, London. In 1853 he was admitted to the bar and two years later came to New Zealand. In partnership with J. B. A. Acland (q.v.), he stocked several runs in the back country of mid-Canterbury, and settled at Orari gorge. Tripp was for many years chairman of the Geraldine county council, and a prominent member of the Geraldine and Mount Peel road boards and of the Timaru Agricultural and Pastoral association. In 1858 he married Ellen Shepherd, daughter of Bishop Harper, and author of *My Eal'ly Days*. He died on 6 Jul 1897.

*Col. Gent.*; Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 8 Jul 1897.

TROUNSON, JAMES (1839-1929), who was born in Camborne, Cornwall, came to New Zea-

## TUCKER

land in 1862 by the *Hanover*, with the Albertland settlers. He took up land at Paparoa and later bought property at Kaihu, which was covered in kauri bush. He engaged successfully in cattle dealing in northern Wairoa, and in sawmilling, and in 1899 established a butchery business at Dargaville and at Te Kopuru. Trounson was an original member of the Paparoa road board, the Hobson county council, and the Kaipara licensing committee, and an executive member of the New Zealand Alliance. In 1907 he was appointed to the Auckland land board. He was well-known as a lay' preacher, and organised the local band of hope and the first Sunday school in the district, of which he was superintendent. Trounson presented to the nation 15 acres of his best kauri bush, which with an adjoining block purchased by the Government forms the Trounson Kauri Park. He died in Auckland on 23 May 1929.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Brett, *Albertlanders*; *N.Z. Herald*, 24 May 1929 (p).

TUCKER, JOHN (1826-89), see John A'Deane.

TUCKER, WILLIAM HENRY (1843-1919) was born in Auckland, a son of Captain Henry Tucker, who was wrecked in H.M.S. *Buffalo*, and returned to Auckland in 1843. The son was educated at Wesley College, and spent a year with a survey party in the Kaeo and Whangaroa districts. In 1859 he went on Woodlands station, Hawkes Bay. Having been in the volunteer artillery and the Victoria Rifles at Auckland, he joined the Waipawa Cavalry, in which he later became a lieutenant. Tucker settled on the Pouawa river, Poverty Bay, shortly before the massacre. He was with the settlers in the redoubt at Gisborne after the catastrophe awaiting the arrival of Colonel Whitmore, and then, in No. I company of the Poverty Bay militia, he went through the campaign against Te Kooti to the fall of Ngatapa (1869). Thereafter he settled down as a licensed interpreter, practising with success in the native land and appellate courts. He was a J.P. and a member of the first Gisborne borough council, and afterwards mayor for two years; a member of the harbour board, and president of the Poverty Bay prohibition league. He was a member of the Legislative Council (1907-14) and died on 19 Feb 1919. Tucker married Miss Elizabeth Randall, of Taranaki.

## TUCKETT

*N.z.P.D.*, 29 Aug, 2 Sep 1919; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *N.z. Herald*, 21 Feb 1919; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924. Portrait: Parliament House.

**TUCKETT, FREDERICK** (1807-76) was born at Frenchay, near Bristol, educated in that town and then apprenticed to the tanning trade. For three years he travelled in the United States, and on his return in 1831 he studied civil engineering. He then entered the service of Brunel, the engineer, and under him supervised the construction of a section of the Great Western railway. It was while thus employed that he received the offer of the post of principal surveyor and engineer to the New Zealand Company's expedition for the founding of Nelson (22 Apr 1841). He sailed in the *Will Watch*.

Tuckett disagreed with Captain Wakefield over the site for the town of Nelson, but carried out the surveys for both town and country allotments. A man of stalwart build and great endurance, he filled satisfactorily the post to which he was appointed, though his sturdy determination and stubborn adherence to his opinions did not always commend themselves to his superiors. As a member of the Society of Friends he found himself at variance with the policy of force which it was proposed to adopt towards the natives over the Wairau dispute, and he was an unwilling spectator of the fatal affray on 17 Jun 1843. Summoned to the Wairau by the report that the surveyors' huts had been burned by the natives, Tuckett went to interview Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata. He was firm and dignified in his attitude towards them and refused to remove the tent, but he was under no misapprehension as to the propriety of the Company's action. When he met Wakefield with the sheriff and special constables coming from Nelson he earnestly begged them not to proceed, but to have the dispute dealt with in a proper manner. After the affray he insisted on the brig returning straight to Wellington with the news.

Colonel Wakefield appointed Tuckett acting-resident at Nelson in the vacancy caused by the death of Arthur Wakefield. As surveyor for the Company Tuckett made valuable explorations. He discovered the route from Nelson to Wairau via the Top House, and declared the Wairau plain the only suitable site for a settlement be-

## TUHAERE

tween Cape Campbell and Cape Farewell. In 1844 Tuckett was appointed (under conditions upon which he insisted) to explore the South Island for a site for the proposed New Edinburgh settlement. Sailing from Nelson in the brigantine *Deborah*, 121 tons, he first inspected closely Banks Peninsula and the country on the Canterbury plains adjacent to the Peninsula. In Apr he proceeded to Otago. His journal, recording the very complete examination which he made of the whole of Otago and Southland and the signing on 20 Jun 1844 of the deed of sale, is published in Hocken's *Early History of New Zealand*. He remained at Otago in charge of the surveys until the end of the year.

In 1847 Tuckett returned to England, and thereafter took a keen interest in the Aborigines Protection Society, in emigration and in the temperance movement. He died in Apr 1876.

Tuckett was a man of firm principles and rigid honour, a stalwart in every sense, but not an easy man to work with.

G.B.O.P., 1845/131; *N.z.C.*; Hocken, *Otago*; A. Mackay; Broad; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Buick, *Marlborough*; Wohlers; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 11 Dec 1926.

**TUHAERE, PAORA** (1825-92), chief of the Te Taou hapu of Ngati-Whatua and one of the best known chiefs of Ngati-Whatua in the later nineteenth century, was the son of a noted warrior Whanararai, brother of Apihai te Kawau (q.v.). He was descended from Ngaoho, and closely related to the tribes north of Waikato. About 1836 his hapu moved to the Waitemata and began to make cultivations at Horotiu (where the lower end of Queen street, Auckland, now is). Tuhaere in his youth lived at Okahu, a fortified pa at Orakei. He came early under missionary influence and took no part in hostilities subsequent to 1840. Though not a warrior, and belonging essentially to the period of the pioneers, he was a fine type of Maori chief, honourable, generous and wise. He was present at the welcome to the settlers (1841) and henceforward was the true friend of the pakeha whenever they were in difficulties. In 1844 he went with other chiefs of his tribe to Whangarei to make peace with their inveterate enemies, and in May of that year he was present at the great native gathering at Remuera. He took a leading part in the Kohimarama conference in 1860 and at its close led the pro-

## TUHAWAIKI

cession which welcomed the Governor on his landing from H.M.S. *Nigel*. Tuhaere's great influence was exerted to induce the Kingites not to break the peace, and at the meeting at Rangiriri he bound the King and Queen flags together. Throughout the Waikato war his people remained loyal.

In 1863 Tuhaere purchased the schooner *Victoria*, 56 tons, and with 20 followers sailed for Rarotonga on a tribal visit. There he was proclaimed an ariki and stayed some time organising his possessions. He brought back a cargo of produce and an ariki (Kainuku Tamako) to promote closer relations. In 1867 Ttihaere was appointed a member of the Auckland provincial executive, as adviser to the Superintendent on native affairs. The death of Apihai te Kawau left him the leading chief of Ngati-Whatua and after the hearing of the Orakei claim (1868) he lived quietly on the reserve of 700 acres awarded to his people. At the King conference at Whatiwhatiho in 1882 Tuhaere used every endeavour to induce Tawhiao to abandon his isolation. 'Whatever is said to-day' (he said) 'should be in plain language such as men can understand, and not in that of gods or kings.' He died on 12 Mar 1892. Tawhiao came at once on hearing of his death and he was buried with every mark of honour at Orakei, where a monument was erected to his memory. Tuhaere married first Tupanapana, a granddaughter of Te Wharerahi (q.v.). His wife Harata survived him.

C. O. Davis; *N.z. Herald*, 25 Mar 1892 (p); H. T. Kemp in *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Mar, 6 Apr, 1901; Orakei native land case, *Southern Cross*, 30, 31 Dec 1868. Portrait: Cowan, *Sketches*.

**TUHAWAIKI, HONE**, a Ngai-Tahu chief, was born at Tauhinu (Inch Clutha). He was the son of Kaihaere and a nephew of Te Whakataupuka, who for 60 muskets sold to Peter Williams in 1832 the land from Dusky Bay to Preservation Inlet. Te Whakataupuka was a man of great courage and warlike cunning. He died of measles in 1835, leaving Tuhawaiki to succeed him as the paramount chief of southern New Zealand.

Tuhawaiki resided at Ruapuke. Of more than middle height, handsome and intelligent, he was a very progressive warrior, and showed great enterprise and courage in his expeditions against Te Rauparaha after the assaults on

## TUHAWAIKI

Kaiapohia. Hearing of the capture of that stronghold, he organised an expedition to obtain vengeance, and by forced marches came up with the victorious Ngati-Toa taua at Kaparatahau, Awatere. There he ambushed the invaders as they returned from duck-catching on Lake Grasmere. Many of Te Rauparaha's men were killed, and the remnant made good their escape to Cloudy Bay. Te Rauparaha turned the tables somewhat by hurrying back with reinforcements and attacking Tuhawaiki at Waiarikiriki (Cape Campbell) where the southern chief got rather the worse of the encounter and retired. A year or two later Tuhawaiki was again on the warpath and came into contact with Te Rauparaha at Oroua-moa-nui (Port Undenvood), inflicting severe losses and almost capturing the chief himself. By these operations Tuhawaiki and Taiaroa induced Te Rauparaha to release his Ngai-Tahu prisoners and asserted the right of Ngai-Tahu to most of the South Island. He claimed much of the Murihiku for himself, a claim strengthened by his successful expedition in 1837 against the invading Ngati-Tama under Te Puoho (q.v.), a nephew of Te Rauparaha, who was killed with many of his followers. In Jan 1838 Tuhawaiki made a sudden march to Queen Charlotte Sound but failed to find Te Rauparaha and returned at once. In Dec 1839 he led another taua in 16 sealing and four whaleboats, but Te Rauparaha now concluded a treaty of peace.

This enabled Tuhawaiki to undertake his long contemplated visit to New South Wales. With Karetai and minor chiefs he sailed in his own schooner. On 31 Jan 1840 they waited on Governor Gipps. On his return in, the *Magnet* he met D'Urville's ships at Waikouaiti. On 9 Jun he signed the Treaty of Waitangi at Ruapuke. He was disposed to be friendly towards the pakeha, and frequently protected the missions against the rough conduct of Taiaroa. In 1842 he begged the Rev J. Watkin to send a European to Ruapuke, and a few months before his death he welcomed Wohlers to his island.

He had a good knowledge of the geography of New Zealand and told the early whalers of the existence of gold on the beaches of the Matau river. From long intercourse with whalers he had learned to speak English, and he had a good reputation for honesty and straightforwardness. On his visit to Port Jack-

## TE TUHI

son Gipps gave him some military uniforms. He took great delight in drilling a bodyguard of his own soldiers and had considerable success. Major Bunbury visited him at Ruapuke on 9 Jun and obtained his signature to the Treaty. Bunbury found him a good type of Maori, and Shortland also speaks of his pleasing address, his high intelligence, and his character for integrity. He was an expert sailor and navigated with great skill the various schooners which he owned. In the *Perseverance* Bishop Selwyn made one of his early missionary voyages.

Tuhawaiki was anxious to discard the name 'Bloody Jack' which the whalers gave him when he acquired the first rudiments of English under their tuition. In Jun 1844 he signed the deed of sale of the Otago block, receiving £900 for himself and £300 for his relatives. He was drowned in the capsizing of his boat at Moeraki on 31 Jul of the same year.

Grimstone; Pratt; Selwyn, *Annals*; Shortland; McNab, *Whaling*.

TE TUHI (?1797-1824), younger brother of Korokoro (q.v.), was born about 1797. He was called also George Tui and Tupaea. When Te Tuhi was in Port Jackson with Samuel Marsden early in 1814 he attached himself to Kendall and taught him the language. He sailed to Bay of Islands in the *Active* in Mar and Nov 1814. He lived for two years at Parramatta and at Marsden's desire went to England (1818) with Titore, and returned to New South Wales in the brig *Baring* with J. G. Butler. Several times he was seriously ill while abroad. He returned to Bay of Islands with Marsden in the *General Gates* (1819). He spoke English well and wore a blue uniform and cocked hat which he had obtained in England. Tuhi succumbed to the temptation to use his guns on old tribal enemies. He joined Korokoro against Hongi, and boasted of great barbarities (including cannibalism) which his men had practised during the fighting at the Thames. He was, nevertheless, very serviceable to Marsden in his dealings with the Southern tribes, especially on board the *Dromedary*, when she was negotiating for spars at Coromandel. Mter the death of Korokoro Tuhi became leader, but he survived only a few months, dying on board the whaler *Mary* on 17 Oct 1824.

400

## TUKE

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Marsden, L. and J. and Lieutenants; Ramsden.

TE TUHI, WIREMU PATARA (1823-1910) was a son of Paratere Maioha, of Ngati-Mahuta, a cousin of Tawhiao and nephew of Te Whero-where. Educated at the mission schools, he became a clever writer. He was one of the founders of the King movement and edited the King paper *Te Hokioi*, which was established as a counterblast to the Queen's paper *Te Pihoihoi* (run by Gorst). The *Hokioi* was printed on a press presented by Archduke Maximilian of Austria to Maori chiefs who had visited Austria in the *Novara*. Exasperated by the arguments of the *Pihoihoi*, Patara suggested ejecting Gorst from the district. When this was done he gave him accommodation at Te Awamutu pending his departure. It was Patara who first proposed sending back the timber from the barracks at Kohekohe to Te Ia. He was averse to war and wished the Waikato tribes to be entirely isolated from the pakeha after the outbreak in Taranaki (1861), in the hope that they would welcome peace and intercourse. His letter to Ngapora (q.v.), quoted by Gorst, throws much light on the intentions of the King leaders. He was always a temperate counsellor, but took some part in the fighting in the Waikato war (on the King side). Patara was a prominent figure at the King gathering at Whatitohoe in 1882, and in 1884 accompanied Tawhiao to England. He died on 2 Jul 1910.

Cowan, *Wars* (p); Gorst, *N.Z. Revisited*; *Auckland Star* and *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Jul 1910. Portraits by C. F. Goldie in Auckland and Canterbury Art Galleries.

TOKE, ARTHUR (1831-94) was born at Dulwich, London, the son of a clergyman, and was educated at Tonbridge. During the years 1850-57 he was engaged in London banks. He emigrated to Australia at the age of 19, and obtained employment on the gold escorts, but came to New Zealand before 1860. Tuke first joined the volunteer cavalry corps formed by Captain Gordon in Hawkes Bay early in 1863. He was elected a comet and for some time had charge of the training and drilling. On the outbreak of hostilities on the East Coast in 1865 he volunteered for service. Under Lieutenant Biggs he was present at the storming of Kairo-

## TUKE

miromi (3 Aug) and the reconnaissance and capture of Pukemaire (13 Oct). Following Biggs in the forced march inland, he gallantly led his men up the cliff in the rear of Hungahungatoroa. For this he was mentioned in despatches. He was present also at Waerenga-a-hika, and in many skirmishes in the Wairoa district.

Tuke then received a Commission in the Hawkes Bay militia and in Mar 1866 was sent in charge of Maori prisoners to Chatham Islands. Being relieved by his brother after a few months, he returned to take part in the campaign in the Wairoa, and when his term of service had expired he accepted a Commission as sub-inspector in No. 1 company Armed Constabulary (Oct 1867), with which he took part in the operations at Opotiki, Whakatane and the back country. Tuke was again in the field with Whitmore when Te Kooti escaped to Poverty Bay, and he was severely wounded at Ruakitire (8 Aug 1868). He led the native contingent which recovered the bodies of the slain Maori emissaries at Whataroa (Oct). Mter the Poverty Bay massacre Tuke served as second in command to Westrup. Following the White Cliffs murders he was sent with No. 7 company to Pukearuhe to guard the frontier and command the Taranaki district (to which was also added that of Patea). He was promoted inspector (Jun 1869) and was still in that command when the expedition to Parihaka was decided upon (1881). He had charge of the concentration at Oakura and as second in command to Roberts he led the troops in to arrest Te Whiti and Tohu.

In Sep 1883 Tuke was sent to Kawhia with a company of the Armed Constabulary and he remained there with the post of resident magistrate. He died at Opunake on 11 Dec 1894. He married a daughter of Lieut-colonel C. Stapp (q.v.).

Family information; Gudgeon (p); Lambert, p. 494-8.

TUKE, EDMUND (1826-1901) was born in London, the son of the Rev F. Tuke. He arrived in New Zealand in the *Cornwall* in 1851, and shortly afterwards took up land in Hawkes Bay as a sheep station. When the war broke out he was commissioned as lieutenant in the Napier militia (Jul 1863) and sent by

## TU-KOREHU

McLean to Otago to enrol military settlers. He returned with a fine body of 150, served for a while under Biggs in Poverty Bay, and was then sent back to Hawkes Bay with a force of 40 men to construct a redoubt on the Ngaruroro to prevent doubtful tribes joining the Hauhau. Under Major Fraser he was present at the fight at Petane where the Hauhau were annihilated. Tuke then proceeded to the Chathams with 60 of the prisoners from Omarunui and a guard, relieving his brother (Major A. Tuke, q.v.) in that duty (Oct 1866). During many months he spent there he saw much of Te Kooti and his fellow prisoners. Promoted captain (Oct 1867), he was recalled in Feb 1868 with part of the guard and retired from the service. When a few months later Te Kooti made his escape Tuke again volunteered, and in the remaining months of the war he served with McDonnell in the Taupo country, chiefly with Renata's force. With a half caste companion he rode from Tokaanu to Napier in a day and a half with news of the defeat of Te Kooti at Porere.

Mter the war Tuke lived in Napier. He represented Te Aute in the Provincial Council (1863-67); was a member of the Meanee road board (1873), a justice of the peace (chairman of petty sessions), and one of the founders of the Masonic Lodge Scinde. He died on 19 Mar 1901.

Gascoyne; Cowan; Gudgeon (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 20 Mar 1901.

TU.KOREHU, or PEHI-KOREHU (?-1836), one of the most famous chiefs of Ngati-Maniapoto in the early nineteenth century, was a man of giant stature and great courage. He is said to have possessed a pou-whenua which taxed the strength of two men. In 1820, with 140 warriors, he attacked the Ngati-Awa on the Waitara river. He retreated to Mahoetahi; but the Ngati-Awa were afraid to pursue him. Already a veteran, he joined the Amio-whenua in 1821. In that year, in fighting against the Rongo-whakaata at Turanganui, he killed some of the relatives of Te Kani-a-Takirau. His son Tu-Korehu was killed while attempting to capture a historic mere. The Waikato contingent, numbering 140, crossed to Hawkes Bay and captured Roto-a-tara, where Tu-Korehu lost another son, Te Arawai, killed by a stone thrown from a tower. Fighting their way

401

## TUNBRIDGE

through Hawkes Bay and Wairarapa, the ope visited Port Nicholson and then passed up the west coast. High up the Whanganui river they fought several battles against Te Anaua (killing two of his brothers), but Tu-Korehu barely managed to escape to Waitara with a small following. Te Manu-Tohera (Ngati-Awa) received them kindly and allowed them to gain the shelter of Pukerangiora, where they were besieged by Ngati-Awa. A message was sent to Te Whero-where, who had been fighting against Te Rau-paraha and was beaten at Okoki (Nov 1821). He escaped with the remnant of his force and joined Tu-Korehu at Pukerangiora. After recruiting their strength, the combined force withdrew and regained Waikato. Tu-Korehu had travelled 800 miles since leaving his pa, Mangatoatoa, on the Waipa.

In 1822 he assisted Ngati-Tuwharetoa to square accounts with the Tuhoë. In 1824, on a campaign of vengeance against the Ngati-Kahungunu, he sacked Pakake pa. In 1826 he was invited by Ngatata to join in attacking the Ngati-Ruanui for the death of Te Karawa. When the great Waikato taua in 1831 besieged Pukerangiora, Tu-Korehu was accused of betraying his Ngati-Awa friends of 1822. He insisted on following up the vanquished, and led three assaults on Ngamotu (1832) with the whole of the Ngati-Apakura hapu. In the following year he participated in the assault on Sugar Loaf and took back to Waikato many prisoners, whom he would not allow to be killed. He then made peace with Matakatea and began his final campaign against the Ngati-Ruanui (1834) to obtain utu for the death of Te Kohuwai. He was drowned on 21 May 1836 while crossing Kawhia harbour.

Tu-Korehu was closely associated with the missions in his later years, but scoffed at the new religion.

S. P. Smith, *Wars; Polyn. Jour.*, vol. 18.

TUNBRIDGE, JOHN BENNETT (1850-1928) was born in England. He served for 26 years in the London metropolitan police, filling all ranks in foot and mounted divisions from that of constable to chief inspector. As an inspector of the criminal investigation department from 1881, he went on duty to many parts of the world, including South Africa and Australia. He arrested the prisoner Neil Cream, and was

## TUPAEA

detailed to bring Jabez Balfour from South America, but was recalled owing to malaria. He retired in 1895 and two years later was appointed commissioner of police in New Zealand. This position he filled for six years, during which time he introduced the pension system. Before the police commission of 1898 he gave valuable evidence. In 1903 Tunbridge retired and returned to England. He was for 25 years a member of the town council of Hythe, and some time an alderman. He died on 10 Oct 1928.

*App. H.R.*, 1898 H 2; Police department records.

TUPAEA, HORI (? 1800-81), a chief of Ngai-te-Rangi, was the son of Te Warn (q.v.). He was of the highest Maori lineage, his ancestors having arrived in the canoe *Matatua*. Tupaea's immediate people were the Whanau-a-Ngai-Tai-whao. His relationships with Waikato on the one hand and Ngati-Awa on the other were very influential. Henry Williams records having visited him at Otumoetai pa, Tauranga, in 1826. In 1832, following the Ngapuhi raid of Te Haramiti on the islands in Bay of Plenty, Tupaea and Waharoa led a strong fleet of canoes from Tauranga and surprised him at Motiti, annihilating him and taking utu for the Ngapuhi invasions. On 6 May 1836, when in garrison at Te Tumu, Tupaea was besieged by 1,600 of the Ngati-Whakaue. Several assaults were delivered in the early morning and many Ngai-te-Rangi (including seven chiefs) were killed and many taken prisoners. Tupaea, who was wounded, was the only surviving chief; he escaped to the coast. Though having a reputation as an inveterate cannibal, Tupaea was consistently friendly to the pakeha until the Hauhau war. Hoping then to join hands with the Hauhau, he marched south with a small force (Feb 1865), but was intercepted and captured by Ngati-Pikiao at Lake Rotoiti, and brought back to Tauranga a prisoner. While he was in captivity the murder of Volkner occurred. Patara, the Hauhau leader, offered the Rev. T. S. Grace (q.v.) in exchange for Tupaea, who was being kept prisoner in Auckland. He escaped from Kawau later. Though as late as 1870 Tupaea was still a Hauhau and very reserved he was friendly to the whites and undertook to protect the civil population against the later incursions of Te

## TURNBULL

Kooti. In 1878 he visited Wellington to consult with John Bryce regarding the Mercury Bay difficulty. In later years he lived quietly with his hapu at Rangiwhaea, where he died on 26 Jan 1881. His wife was a chieftainess of the Tapuika hapu of Arawa.

His son, AKUHATA TUPAEA (1839-94), owing to his high lineage and fine character, was educated under the guidance of Sir George Grey in the native school at Tauranga. He then travelled widely throughout New Zealand. In 1872 he dug at the Kingite border the first sod of the telegraph line from Auckland to the south. In 1878 he was appointed assessor. He succeeded his father as paramount chief of Ngai-te-Rangi, and presided over the native meeting to consider matters affecting the Maori race. He died on 5 Mar 1894.

S. P. Smith, *Wars; Grace; J. A. Wilson, Te Waharoa; Cowan, Wars, ii; Tapsell (p); Bay of Plenty Times*, 27 Jan, 1 Feb 1881; *N.Z. Herald*, 17 Mar 1894 (p).

TURNBULL, ALEXANDER HORSBURGH (1868-1918) was born at Wellington, the son of Walter Turnbull (q.v.). Educated locally and at Dulwich College, London (1882-84), he remained in England till 1893, receiving experience in the London office of W. and G. Turnbull and Co. (founded by his father in 1856). After his father's death in 1897 he managed the affairs of the firm till 1917, when its principal interests were bought out by Wright Stephenson and Co. Having inherited ample means from his father's estate and a further bequest from his uncle (Robert Turnbull) in 1901, he was able to indulge in his hobbies, which were those of a historian and bibliophile.

By 1887 he was collecting books, and in 1889 he had a collection which students already consulted. This taste continued unabated through his life, mounting greatly with his increased means. He collected works of art, coins and Maori artifacts. Over 1,300 of the last group were presented to the Dominion Museum in 1913. Ultimately his library was wide in scope, and well selected in content. The main section was devoted to New Zealand and the Pacific countries, but English literature was almost an equal interest. He delighted in rare, choice and early editions, and acquired numerous SUCll volumes, excellently bound by masters of the craft.

## TURNBULL

His collection of books relating to John Milton is especially notable, and the Brownings, William Morris, Defoe and Swinburne are also important. Bibliographical works are strong, including fine sections on printing and printing history. Early voyages and travel are a valuable adjunct to the Pacific collection, which is further supplemented by a splendid group of manuscripts, logs, historical letters, pictures (many originals), photographs and documents. On Turnbull's death (on 28 Jun 1918) the entire collection, comprising about 55,000 volumes, was bequeathed to the state as a reference library to be located in Wellington, and under government control. It has grown to be an important centre of cultural research known as the 'Alexander Turnbull Library':

Turnbull was a fellow of the Linnean Society and of the Royal Geographical Society, a member of the New Zealand Institute and of the Polynesian Society. From 1900 to 1913 he was honorary vice-consular representative for Spau in Wellington. He was well known for many years as a yachtsman, and his only literary work is a privately-printed account of a yachting cruise on the *Iorangi* to Queen Charlotte Sound in 1902. It includes a few notes on Captain Cook. He also contributed notes to the publication of a manuscript in his possession regarding Vancouver's discovery of Puget Sound. This was edited by E. S. Meany and published at Seattle, U.S.A., in 1915. C.R.H.T.

J. C. Andersen in *Trans. N.z. Inst.*, vol. 51, (p). *Col. Gent.*; *Evening Post*, 28 Jun 1918; *The Dominion*, 29 Jun; C. R. H. Taylor in *American Book Collector*, Jan 1935; many letters and papers in Alexander Turnbull Library.

TURNBULL, GEORGE (1831-94) was born at Innerleithen, Peeblesshire. Coming to New Zealand in 1857 with a friend (Walter Turnbull), they settled in Wellington and founded the firm of W. and G. Turnbull, general merchants. They opened a branch at Dunedin in 1861, and Turnbull lived there from 1863, the Dunedin business being owned and controlled by him until 1890. He was a member of the Wellington Provincial Council (for Wellington City) from 1861 till moving to Otago. There in 1867 he became a member of the Otago Provincial Council (for City of Dunedin) and represented that electorate almost till the abolition. He supported Macandrew throughout, and was sev-

## TURNBULL

eral times in the executive, being provincial treasurer in 1871. under E. B. Cargill and provincial secretary in 1874. He died on 28 Aug 1894.

*Wellington and Otago P.C. Proc.; Otago Daily Times, Evening Post, 29 Aug 1894.*

**TURNBULL, JAMES SOMERVILLE** (1828-90), a native of Jedburgh, Scotland, was educated in his own town and apprenticed to a doctor, after which he went to Heriot's Hospital and Edinburgh University, where he graduated M.D., and to Guy's Hospital, London, for surgery. After qualifying (1850) he made several voyages to the East as ship's surgeon. In 1856 he reached India in the *Maid of Londonderry* (on a visit to relatives), leaving just before the Mutiny. In 1858 he came to New Zealand as surgeon of the *Indiana* and settled in Canterbury. He practised in partnership with Dr Hiltson, and they ran a druggists' shop in Christchurch which was sold in 1862 to Cook and Ross. Turnbull took some interest in journalism and local politics, and represented the City of Christchurch in the Provincial Council (1862-65, 1874-75). He was for many years a member of the Selwyn county council, was on the College board of governors and was a supporter of the Presbyterian church in Christchurch. He died on 10 Nov 1890.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Hight and Candy; Lyttelton Times, 11 Nov 1890.*

**TURNBULL, RICHARD** (1826-90) was born at Oxford, England, came to New Zealand in the *Fatima* (1851) and took up land near Riccarton, where he farmed for 11 years. In 1864 he moved to Timaru, where he joined D. Clarkson in a general store, which was destroyed in the fire of 1868. The partnership being dissolved, Turnbull carried on in his own name a very prosperous business. Later he became a grain merchant and auctioneer. He was always prominent in public life and worked hard for the establishment of the first school and mechanics' institute. He was a member of the first borough council (1870). From 1872 until the abolition he represented Seadown in the Provincial Council, in which he materially assisted to obtain a grant of £100,000 for the construction of a harbour at Timaru. He first contested a parliamentary seat at Waimate in 1877 and shortly afterwards, on the resignation of Stafford, he

## TURNER

was elected for Timaru, which he continued to represent until his death (on 17 Jul 1890). He was a Liberal in politics and advocated closer settlement. His sympathies with the working class were marked and he devoted much time to holding religious services at the hospital and the gaol. He was for some years a member of the harbour board. Turnbull died on 17 Jul 1890.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Timaru Herald, Lyttelton Times and The Press, 18 Jul 1890. Portrait: Parliament House.*

**TURNBULL, WALTER** (1823-97) was born at Selkirk, Scotland. Brought up to business, he came to New Zealand in the *John McVicar* (1857) with merchandise for business which he established with George Turnbull (q.v.) in Wellington. In 1863 George Turnbull took over the Dunedin branch of W. and G. Turnbull and Co., and in 1886 Walter retired in favour of his sons. Turnbull was M.P.C. for Wellington City (1865-69). He returned to England in 1874 and lived there until 1892. He died on 4 Oct 1897. (See A. H. TURNBULL.)

*Wellington P.C. Proc.; Col. Gent., 665; Ward; Evening Post, 29 Aug 1894, 4 Oct 1897.*

**TURNER, BENJAMIN EVANS** (1796-1876) was born in Worcester, England; learned the trade of a carpenter, and at the age of 24 went to sea. He first reached New Zealand in a whaler in 1822 and, being wrecked at Chalky island, settled for some years on Stewart Island, where he engaged in sealing and whaling. He claimed to have been the first white man to engage in the trade in dried human heads. In 1826 Turner engaged with Captain Stewart at Bay of Islands to work at his establishment at Stewart Island. He went there in the *Prince of Denmark* and assisted to build the schooner *Joseph Weller*. About 1828 he came to the North Island, making his headquarters at Kapiti and engaging in the timber trade. He travelled widely amongst the tribes and eventually crossed overland from Wanganui to the East Coast. He arrived at Bay of Islands again in the brig *Bee* (1833) and settled there, establishing sawmills and a tavern. He became chairman of the vigilance committee which maintained order on the beach, and later he assisted to arrest the murderer Maketu. In 1840 Turner signed the address of congratulation from the white resi-

## TURNER

dents at the Bay to Captain Hobson on his assuming office as Governor. In 1842 he was wounded in the arm in a duel with J. S. Polack. In 1844 he sailed his own schooner to Sydney with despatches and during Heke's rising he had lucrative contracts for supplying the troops.

Turner represented Bay of Islands in the Auckland Provincial Council (1861-62). He afterwards removed to Auckland, where he died on 4 Oct 1876.

*N.Z. Archives, B.R., 1 p. 108; Auckland P.C. Proc.; McNab, Murihiku; Southern Cross, 24 May 1871; NZ. Herald, 3 May 1873, 6 Oct 1876, 16 Apr 1883, 1 Jun 1895.*

**TURNER, EDWARD PHILLIPS** (1864-1937) was born in England, the son of Dr Charles Turner, with whom he came to New Zealand in 1870. The family moved almost at once to Tasmania where he was educated at Horton College and at the Hutchins school, Hobart, and at the age of 16 went to sea for a year. In 1882 he studied in England and in 1883 returned to Tasmania, farmed for a short time and came to New Zealand (1884). He passed as a surveyor in 1887, and spent some years at his profession in New Zealand and New South Wales. In 1891 he carried out mining surveys for the Tasmanian government on its west coast silver fields. In 1894 Turner joined the Survey department in Auckland province. After eight years in the field between Hokianga and Taupo he joined the office staff (1902). Appointed inspector of scenic reserves (1908), he travelled widely and became an ardent student of the forests and flora of the country. In 1913 he was secretary of the forestry commission and in 1914 of the commission on the preservation of scenery on the Wanganui river. During the war he was in charge of all forestry activities and in 1918 he became chief officer of this branch. He was secretary of forestry when the department was organised under L. McIntosh Ellis, and director (1928-31). Turner was a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society. An able botanist, he published reports on the botany of the upper Waimarino district and the reforestation of Mount Tarawera. Turner married (1892) Irene, daughter of Colonel Pirie. He died on 20 May 1937.

*Turner, op. cit. and departmental reports; Who's Who N.Z., 1932; Evening Post and The Dominion, 21 May 1937 (pp).*

## TURNER

**TURNER, NATHANIEL** (1793-1864) was born at Wybunbury, Cheshire, the son of a small farmer. He became an orphan at the age of nine, and went to live with an uncle who was a staunch Wesleyan. At the age of 16 he was converted by a sermon preached by Joseph Lowe, and in 1820 he was nominated for the Wesleyan mission service. He did much mission work at Audlem, Black Brook and elsewhere, and on 23 Jan 1822 was ordained in London (Jabez Bunting taking part in the service). On 15 Jan he married Anne Sargent (of Stafford), and on 15 Feb they sailed in the brig *Deveron*, with William White.

On arrival in Van Diemen's Land, Turner spent some months preaching to convict gangs. When Hobbs arrived early in 1823 the Turners accompanied him to Sydney, and in Aug they left for New Zealand with Marsden in the *Bimmpton*. Leaving their families at Rangihoua, Turner and Hobbs walked overland to the station at Kaeo (Whangaroa) where they found Samuel Leigh (q.v.) so ill that Marsden advised his return to New South Wales. Marsden having negotiated with the natives for the purchase of the land on which the station was established, Turner became colleague to William White, who was in charge of the mission. Hobbs and J. Stack were also on the staff. Turner had first to learn the language and combat the hostility of the natives. On 13 Jun 1824 were opened the first two Wesleyan churches in New Zealand.

White now visited England and Turner was left in charge. Being assaulted by the natives on several occasions, he sent his wife to Paihia for refuge. On 15 Jan 1827 Hongi's people attacked the mission and burned the buildings. Protected by Patuone, Turner and his colleagues withdrew with their families to Bay of Islands and he sailed in the whaler *Sisters* for Port Jackson to consult Marsden and the committee. The mission was reopened by Stack in Aug, and Hobbs returned in Nov. Turner undertook work at Parramatta and later was requested to proceed to Tonga in the hope of saving the mission there. Making his station at Nukualofa (Dec 1827), he managed by his wisdom and experience to revive the languishing cause, and had considerable success in making converts. In Oct 1828 he held his first Methodist class meeting in Tonga, and in Jun following the

## TURNER

king attended. By 1829 he had opened five schools. In Jan 1830 Aleamotua, the newly elected Tui Kanokubolu was baptised; and in Aug 1831 Taufahau (as George Tubou) and his wife (Salote). The whole of Vavau and Haapai were nominally Christian in 1835. After a successful ministry there, Turner returned to New South Wales. He was sent by the Parramatta conference to Hobart where he worked for four years amongst convicts, settlers and soldiers and extended the activities of his church by several visits to Launceston.

The conference of 1834, noting the languishing condition of the mission in New Zealand, decided, with the concurrence of the London committee, to send Turner there as chairman. Reluctant on account of his family to move from the educational facilities of Australia to a country which possessed none, he was fortunate enough to meet a young Cornish local preacher (James Buller, q.v.), who had recently arrived from England and was willing to accept engagement for two years as tutor to his children. They accordingly sailed for New Zealand in the *Pat, 'iot* (Apr 1836). Turner took charge of the station at Mangungu, where the mission had been re-opened under the protection of Patuone and Waka Nene after the sack of Kaeo (1827). In a few months he was again able to preach in the Maori tongue, and by 1837 the Wesleyan mission claimed a roll of over 600 natives admitted to membership or probation. In Feb of that year Turner met Marsden on his visit to Hokianga and entertained him for some days before he left on a litter for Waimate. On 18 Aug 1838 the mission was accidentally burned down, Turner losing a large accumulation of journals and manuscripts of great historical value. He co-operated cordially with Busby in asserting his authority (notably in connection with the trial of a Maori murderer in Apr 1838, and in the difficulties arising from the scheme of De Thierry and the establishment of the Roman Catholic mission in New Zealand).

In Mar 1839 Bumby, Ironside and Creed arrived to reinforce the mission, and in Aug Turner left for New South Wales in the *Francis Spaight*. He was sent by conference to Hobart, and at the end of 1840 to Launceston. He served at New Norfolk, Tasmania (1844-46) and then returned to Parramatta. During the early period of the diggings in Australia Turner

406

## TURNER

visited the Victorian goldfields. At the conference of 1853 he retired, and after visiting New Zealand, Tonga and Fiji took up his residence in Brisbane (1855), where he died on 5 Dec 1864. Turner's knowledge of the Maori language, idiom and lore was outstanding, in view of the short period that he lived amongst the Maori people. He took much interest in public affairs and in his retirement wrote a good deal in the Australian press. His life, *The Pioneer Missionary*, was written by his son, the Rev Josiah Turner (1872). Mrs Turner died on 10 Oct 1893.

Turner, *op cit.* (p); Buller; Morley; W. J. Williams; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Nov 1893.

TURNER, SAMUEL (1869-1929) was born at Manchester and educated at the Technical school there. After a varied career he came to New Zealand in 1911, and established himself as an importer and exporter. His travels as a merchant and mountaineer took him to many countries, including Siberia, where he was awarded the gold medal for exploration, and South America, where in 1909 he climbed to a height of 20,500 feet on Mount Aconcagua. In New Zealand he devoted much of his time to climbing. His rather eccentric manner lost him collaboration, but he achieved many successes, including the first traverse of Mount Cook (1906) and the first solo ascent (1919), and the difficult ascent of Mount Tasman. His most noteworthy work was perhaps the first conquest of Mount Tutoko, which he achieved (in company with guide Peter Graham) at his sixth attempt, after much pioneering work had been done with guides Milne and Murrell. Turner's books, including *The Conquest of the New Zealand Alps* (1922), *My Climbing Adventures in Four Continents* (1911), and *Siberia; A Record of Travel, Climbing and Exploration* (1905) give interesting accounts of his climbing. He died 8 Aug 1929. J.D.P.

TURNER, WILLIAM (1815-84) is believed to have arrived in Bay of Islands in 1834 and was present at the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi. He moved to Auckland when the capital was fixed there and for some years from 1844 he was postmaster there. At one time he owned a considerable amount of property. In 1855-56 he represented the Suburbs in the Provincial Council. He was defeated in the parliamentary

## TUROA

election in 1855. Turner died on 5 Aug 1884.

Sherrin and Wallace; *Parltry Record*; *N.Z. Herald*, 8 Aug 1884.

TUROA, TE PEEHI (? 1770-1845) was one of the most prominent chiefs of the upper Whanganui, tracing his descent from four of the canoe commanders, Turi, Tama te Kapua, Tamatea and Hoturoa. He was a grandson of Tu-Kaiora and the son of Hitaua; and his own tribe was Ngati-Hau. One of his earliest fights was against the invading Tuhua people at Au-tapu (above Pipiriki). Peehi came down the river and took them in the rear and a stubborn fight took place in the riverbed at Tamahaki's rock, Tamahaki being killed there.

Peehi led 300 of his men in the war party of Te Heuheu and Whatanui to seek vengeance against Ngati-Kahungunu and then to help Ngati-Porou. After a great battle near where Gisborne now is, Peehi returned with many prisoners and much spoil. He was soon after raided by Waikato, who were driven off to Rangitikei. In 1820 Tuwhare's Ngapuhi expedition, returning from the south, pushed far up the river to Te Ana o Tararo, where it found its progress blocked. As the invaders began to retreat Peehi defeated them at Kaiwhakauka. Tuwhare died of wounds and his son, Tokiwhati, was taken prisoner, but ransomed for a suit of armour. In 1821 Peehi attacked Puke, a Ngati-Raukawa chief, at One-poto, high up the Whanganui river, defeated him and then besieged the taua in Makakote pa, where they were reduced by starvation. Meanwhile, Te Anaua having returned down the river, Peehi raised the siege and allowed the survivors to escape. In the following year he was attacked by Whatanui, but peace was made when he released his prisoners. When Te Rauparaha took up his residence south of the Manawatu river Te Peehi plotted with Te Anaua and Paetahi to kill him at Papaitonga, but Te Rauparaha took alarm and escaped. Te Peehi was no more fortunate in the attack at Kapiti; but he escaped destruction by remaining in his canoes. In revenge for these plots Whatanui led two expeditions against Whanganui. At the fall of Putikiwharanui (in 1829) Peehi was allowed to escape by Whatanui on account of his kind treatment of the Ngati-Raukawa prisoners. Peehi Turoa antagonised the Ngati-Apa by cultivating Te Hakeke's lands at Whangaehu, and

407

## TUROA

his cultivations' and houses were destroyed by Ngati-Apa and Ngati-Raukawa. In 1832, during the Tama-te-uaua migration, he fought with Te Heuheu against the Ngati-Awa migrants at Pukenuamu. He was a guest at Ohariu in 1835, but seems not to have been present at the massacre of Muaupoko.

On the arrival of the whites in New Zealand Peehi was "consistently hostile to them. He resented the occupation of the lower Whanganui river and the attempts of the missionaries to Christianise the up-river tribes. On this account he joined Te Heuheu's expedition against the Christian tribes in the early forties. When E. J. Wakefield was in Whanganui (in 1840) he met Te Peehi, who was living at Puma, and received from him the offer of a sale of land. The chief signed the Treaty of Waitangi, but he never relented in his hostility to the pakeha. He died at Waipakura, below Upokongaru, on 8 Sep 1845. Te Peehi Turoa's principal wife was a sister of Te Anaua.

TUROA, TE PEEHI HETAU (? 1802-74) was the son of Peehi Turoa (q.v.). Though older than Tahana, his half-brother, he had not the same strength of character, and Tahana succeeded his father as chief. As a young man Peehi saw service with his father in tribal wars. He led the contingent of the Ngati-Patu-tokotoko which assisted the Ngati-Tuwharetoa at Patoka in the early forties. Like his father, he resented the settlement of New Zealand by whites, and he took an active part in the fighting when Te Mamaku led his taua against the settlers at the Hutt valley in 1846.

Te Peehi was a leader of the King movement in the upper Whanganui in the fifties and was one of the chiefs to whom the offer of the leadership was made in 1857. In 1860 Governor Gore Browne sent him, through Te Anaua, a staff of honour. J. C. Crawford, who saw him in 1861, described Peehi as an old and crafty savage. He was influenced very early by the Hauhau cult, but having come under missionary influence did not become fully involved. He did, however, take part in the attack on Pipiriki (Feb 1865), but was defeated by Brassey and retired to his pa at Te Ao Marama, where he sheltered the retreating Hauhau after their defeats at Moutoa and Ohoutahi. For this he was excluded from the proclamation of peace (2 Sep 1865). He was pardoned on 12 Apr

## TUROA

1867, but his loyalty was never above suspicion and in 1871 he joined his relatives in seeking peace. He called a meeting of friendly tribes at Mangaio in 1866 to debate the King movement.

Kerry Nicholls, who visited the King Country in 1882, found Te Peehi Hetau Turoa living at Ngatokorua. He appeared to be about 60 years old and was a fine, athletic Maori of dignified soldierly bearing. He was 6 ft 3 in in height, and had a close-cropped white beard. In social life he was courteous, witty and amusing. His principal wife was Ngaruma. Peehi Hetau Turoa died in Nov 1874.

TUROA, TAHANA (? 1804-74) was a younger half-brother of Te Peehi Hetau Turoa, but owing to his greater force of character he succeeded their father as chief of the tribe (1845). Though one of the old school, he became a Christian and attracted the attention of Sir George Grey (who was troubled by the disaffection of the Whanganui people) and was appointed an assessor. In this capacity he was sent up the river during the hostilities of Jun 1847 to intercede with his people. His efforts were unavailing, and he returned under some suspicion of spying for the enemy. Tahana attended Governor Gore Browne's meeting at New Plymouth on 8 Mar 1859. By his conduct at this time he seemed to be favourable to the establishment of British law; but on the outbreak of fighting at Waitara he joined the insurgents. He was also involved in the Hauhau rising, but in 1871 joined his relatives in offering submission to the Queen. He was again appointed an assessor, and drew a salary of £50 until his death at Waipakura on 16 Aug 1874, a few weeks before that of his brother Te Peehi Hetau.

TUROA, TOPIA (? 1818-93), another son of Te Peehi Turoa, was a chief of very high birth and strong character and had great influence throughout his life in the upper Whanganui district, Taupo and southern Waikato. He was baptised by a Roman Catholic missionary and took the name of Topia (Tobias). Physically he was a fine specimen of the Maori race, with a peculiarly large head (measuring 23 inches). Topia held the rank of major in the Colonial forces in 1861.

A few years later he came under the influence of the Hauhau movement, and as a professor of

## TUROA

the Pai-marire faith he accepted responsibility for the murder of Volkner (q.v.) at Opotiki (1865). Turoa's village lay between Pipiriki and Huraroto. Incensed by the occupation of Pipiriki by the Colonial forces, he took the field against the Government. Mter the batde of Ohoutahi he visited Wanganui, but as he refused to take the oath, Sir George Grey sent him away. He remained associated with the Hauhau until 1869, when, owing to the killing of a relative by Te Kooti at Taupo, he offered his allegiance and threw his influence wholeheartedly on the side of the Government. This action of his and the defection of his contingent (which he took to join the Colonial forces in the Opotiki district) inflicted a severe blow on the Hauhau cause. Turoa served with distinction and success in this campaign. In the fighting in 1870 he refused to hand over to Ropata for execution the Hauhau prisoners taken by his contingent.

On 30 Mar 1873 Turoa held an important meeting at Tokaanu to discuss Maori claims. Though enjoying a pension of £200 from the Government, he remained dissatisfied. In 1879 he begged Te Whiti to seek redress in the courts, and he was one of the chiefs who accompanied Tawhiao on his visit to England (1884). In the belief that the Imperial Government would grant redress, he continued to oppose the Government and he resisted the construction of roads and railways in the King Country even after his people as a whole had been converted. At a meeting which he convened at Roto-a-ira in Aug 1885 he formulated a series of resolutions demanding complete autonomy for the Maori of the North Island, with independence of Parliament.

Topia attended the welcome at Rotorua in 1901 to the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall. He died on 26 Oct 1903.

*App. H.R.* (notably 1865 E4, p. 36); Rev W. G. Williams (information); Downes, *Old Whanganui*; S. P. Smith, *Wars and Taranaki*; Crawford (p); Nicholls; Power; Cowan, *Wars* (p); Taylor; Gudgeon; Wakefield; Rusden; *Polyn. Jour.*, vol. iv, 29; iv, 29; v, 70; vii, 195; ix, 73, 74, 84; x, 163; 252, 253; xiv, 59, 133; xvii, 28, 31; xviii, 38, 166; xxvii, 218; White, *Ancient Hist.* i, 8; iv, 9, 21, 57; vi, 26, 36, 50, 90, 98, 101; Taylor, *Te Ika a Maui*, 326, 358, 528; *Trans. N.z. Inst.*, v, 61, 84; xxvi, 574; xxxviii, 126; *Waka Maori*, 6 Oct 1874; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 17 Jun 1865, 4 Nov 1874.

## TURTON

TURTON, HENRY HANSON (1818-87) was born at Bradford, Yorkshire, the son of the Rev Isaac Turton, a Wesleyan minister. In 1839 he also was ordained to the Wesleyan ministry and, having married Susannah Lindsay, daughter of J. Kirk, he sailed for New Zealand in the missionary ship *Triton*, with a number of other missionaries, including J. Skevington, G. Smales and C. Creed. They arrived in Hokianga on 7 May 1840, and Turton remained during that year at Mangungu. In 1841 he opened the station at Aotea, where he remained for four years. He arrived in Taranaki in 1845 to succeed the Rev C. Creed as missionary at Ngamotu and was there until 1856. An accomplished Maori scholar, Turton was employed by Governor FitzRoy in negotiations with the Maori. He was a keen controversialist also, and defended the Wesleyan cause in the discussion of missionary spheres with Bishop Selwyn. In 1848 Governor Grey established, on a crown grant at Ngamotu, an industrial school for Maori students on the lines of the Three Kings Institution. Turton took charge of it, and superintended the education of natives of both sexes until the outbreak of hostilities necessitated the closing of the school. His wife, who was highly cultured and musical, taught the girls until her death (1849). In 1857 he was transferred to Kawhia, and in 1858 to Manakau. In that year he retired from the Methodist ministry and commenced business in New Plymouth as a house and general agent. He then became an interpreter in the government service. In 1862 he was appointed warden at Coromandel. He represented New Plymouth in Parliament from the end of 1863 to late in 1864, and resigned in order to act as commissioner to investigate native tides under the New Zealand settlements act. From 1874 till his retirement (1883) he was employed in the Native department in Wellington. He died on 18 Sep 1887.

A son, GIBSON KIRKE TURTON (1841-91), was born in Auckland and practised law at Dunedin with J. Hyde Harris. He represented Dunedin City in the Otago Provincial Council (1873-75).

Family information; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Turner; G.B.O.P. 1845; *Wesleyan Meth Mag.*, 1845; Pratt; W. I. Williams; Buller; W. Brown, *New Zealand and Its Aborigines* (1845); Wells; Morley; R. Young; *Taranaki Herald and Budget*, 18 Dec 1926 (p); *Evening Post*, 19 Sep 1887, 3 Jul 1891.

## TUWHARE

TUWHARE (? 1781-1820), a principal chief of the Roroa hapu of Ngati-Whatua of Kaipara, was a son of Te Waiata and a younger brother of Taoho. He was thus closely related to the Ngapuhi of Hokianga, with whom he made several campaigns. Tuwhare showed great ability as a young man, and as early as 1807 assisted Murupaenga to defeat Ngapuhi at Moremonui. He was the first northern chief to introduce muskets at Kawhia, when he accompanied Murupaenga with a taua of 200 against Taranaki.

During their stay at Kawhia he acceded to the invitation of his kinsman, Te Rauparaha, to assist him against Ngati-Rahiri. Proceeding southward, the Ngati-Whatua taua besieged Ngati-Awa in Te Taniwha without success and having made peace, went on to Tataraimaka, which they reduced with the help of Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Tama. Tuwhare then returned to the north to prepare for a great southern expedition in alliance with Ngapuhi and various branches of Ngati-Awa. This was his third campaign in Taranaki. The northern portion of what is sometimes called the Amio-whenua left Hokianga in Nov 1819 under Patuone, Nene and other Ngapuhi leaders. Tuwhare joined up on the way, and Te Rauparaha at Kawhia; and the ope passed on with little opposition until they reached the Whanganui river. At Purua their passage was contested by the Ngati-Hau (under Te Anaua) and the position had to be carried by assault. The ope proceeded as far as Whanganui-a-Tara (Port Nicholson), rested there awhile; made an incursion into the Wairarapa and captured some of the positions on Cook Strait. (Tuwhare himself seized the pa of Waimapihi.) Seeing the wreck of a pakeha ship at Cook Strait, Tuwhare urged Te Rauparaha to settle there for the sake of commerce with the pakeha. On the return there was more fighting at Whanganui, and thereafter Tuwhare decided to force his way up the river. Closely followed by hostile tribes, he reached Makokoti, at the confluence of the Retaruke. Finding the enemy too strong, he decided to retreat, and lost some of his canoes by rocks thrown from the cliffs above. At Kaiwhakauka pa he was confronted by strong enemy forces under Pehi Turoa (q.v.), and was compelled to fight. Mter a fierce assault he forced his way into a cliff pa, but the defenders put up a

TWOMEY

strong resistance inside. Tuwhare, emerging from behind a whare, fired at the chief Hamarama. The shot missed and in an instant Hamarama had split the invader's skull with his mere. The invaders carried their leader to his canoe and retreated down the river. Tuwhare parleyed with Whanganui for the life of his nephew Toki-whati, and peace was made by a gift to the Whanganui of a coat of mail. The taua then retraced its steps towards the north. Tuwhare died at Ketemarae (Taranaki) and was buried amongst friendly Ngati-Awa at Waitara.

S. P. Smith, *Wars and Taranaki*.

TWOMEY, JEREMIAH MATTHEW (1847-1921), born in Inchee, Kilgarvan, Ireland, and educated at the national school at Cork, entered the Cork post office in 1865. In 1874 he left for New Zealand, where he joined the Wellington *Tribune* in 1875. After working on the staffs of the Wellington *Argus*, *Evening Post*, *Wanganui Herald*, *Timaru Herald*, and *Christchurch Press*, he bought the *Temuka Leader* in 1880 and in the following year started the *Geraldine Guardian*. In 1882 he married Mary Theresa, daughter of Christopher Hughes of Melbourne. At the general elections of 1884 and 1887 Twomey unsuccessfully contested seats in the House

TWOPENY

of Representatives as a supporter of the Liberal party and an advocate of a state-controlled bank. In 1898 he was appointed to the Legislative Council (retiring by effluxion of his term in 1905). He died on 1 Nov 1921.

*encycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

TWOPENY, RICHARD ERNEST NOWELL (1857-1915) was a son of Archdeacon Twopeny and was born at Little Casterton, Rutlandshire. Educated in France and at Marlborough College and Heidelberg University, he came to Australia in 1876 and engaged in journalism. He was secretary to the editor of the *South Australian Register* and then to the South Australian commissioners for the Paris, Sydney and Melbourne exhibitions. From 1881, in association with Jules Joubert (q.v.), he planned the Adelaide, Perth and Christchurch exhibitions as private ventures: Twopeny was managing director of the Christchurch *Telegraph*, and editor of the *Otago Daily Times* (1883-90). He was executive commissioner for the Dunedin and South Seas Exhibition in 1889-90. With A. W. Pearse he founded the *Australian Pastoralists' Review* (1891), which he edited. Twopeny died on 1 Sep 1915.

Paul; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Dec 1888, 26 Nov 1889.

U

TE UA HAUMENE, or HOROPAPER, the founder of the Pai-marire religion, belonged to the Taranaki tribe. Born at Waiaua, the son of Tutawake and Paihaka, he was called 'Te Ua Tuwhakararo: He was an infant when his father died, and at the age of three he was captured with his mother at the fall of the pa of Rimupiko and carried off to Kawhia, where he was brought up as a slave. He did not attend the mission schools, but from his Maori protectors he learned to read and write and could understand the New Testament. On the declaration of British sovereignty the released slaves returned to Taranaki, where Te Ua found that his brother and sister were dead and that the Wesleyan missionaries Creed and Skevington had commenced work. He became an assistant monitor under them, was baptised by Whiteley with the name of 'Tamati Horopapera' (Zerubbabel), and studied the Bible diligently. He acted for some time as a kai karakia, occasionally conducting service when the missionaries were absent.

Through the early land feuds in Taranaki Te Ua lived quietly, taking no part in the hostilities though he was later an adherent of the King movement. When Te Rangitake (q.v.) was attacked he and his fellow teachers went into the field, and continued their preaching with the warriors. He took up arms only when Wi Kingi was finally engaged with the soldiers.

When the *Lord Worsley* was wrecked Te Ua tried to persuade the natives not to plunder. Depressed by his lack of success, he became ill and saw visions. Parris, who met him a few months later, considered he was definitely insane. Having violently assaulted a woman of his own tribe, he was beaten and tied up by the husband. While in this position the angel

Gabriel appeared again to him and ordered him to break his bonds, which unaccountably he managed to do. He now studied deeply the Revelations, and developed therefrom the Pai-marire cult, which swept the tribes in the King confederation and even spread to friendly districts. He himself was the high priest, with Hepanaia and Rangitauria as assistants. His ritual and observances, half-heathen and half-Christian, and the sign of the raised hand (Ringatu) were symbolic of the religion, which survived the disastrous war in Waikato and has continued to the present day to influence certain sections of the Maori people. The Atua Pai-marire was a peaceful god who eschewed violence; but the apostles who carried the creed to distant tribes counselled and practised violence and revolting brutality, which revived some of the worst features of pristine barbarism. After the wreck of the *Lord Worsley* one of her masts was used as a niu pole, as enjoined by Gabriel. Thenceforward these symbols of the Hauhau cult spread from pa to pa. The new religion made great headway during 1862 and 1863 amongst the despondent adherents of the King movement in the Waikato, so that when the war broke out the purely political King movement vied with the religious upheaval of Pai-marire. Until the battle of Ahuahu (Apr 1864), in which the Hauhau first met the pakeha, Te Ua's influence had been mainly pacific. From that field the heads of the slain soldiers were borne by Hauhau prophets from tribe to tribe, with messages from Te Ua embodying promises believed to have been made to the Maori people by the angel Gabriel. By thus inflaming the warlike spirits of his followers, Te Ua destroyed his gospel of peace, and from that time he lapsed into comparative

obscurity. Other leaders, like Titokowaru and Te Kooti, adopted his mystical extravagances for the furtherance of their political policy. Shortly after Ahuahau, Hauhau soldiers were led into **action** by one of Te Ua's own prophets, **Hepanaia** Kapewhiti, who was shot dead. The leader himself moved from point to point in **the** next few years, generally avoiding the neighbourhood of the fighting. He was at headquarters at Weraroa when Hewett was murdered. Though Te Ua sent his emissaries of peace to outlying tribes, they were men of no standing, and their advent invariably inflamed the fighting spirit of the tribes with a **dangerous** fanaticism and encouraged the belief that the pakeha would be driven into the sea.

Early in 1865 Kereopa-te-Rau (or Tuwhahe) and Patara Raukatauri made their advent **amongst** the Tauranga people in circumstances which led inevitably to the murder of Volkner and the dangerous excitation of the whole of the **Urewera** and the East Coast. In Sep 1865 Parris, by permission of the Governor, removed Te Ua from the rebels and settled him with Arama Karaka at his own place Matakaha near Opunake. There he lived quietly, and Parris **suggested** that he should be sent back to help pacify the district. He welcomed the arrival of troops at **Opunake** and took the oath, living on good **terms** with the soldiers and being frequently in the redoubt until deterred by his fear of Heremaia. At this juncture he was captured by General Chute and taken to Wellington (1866). His early release and return to his people created the impression that peace would soon be offered on the Hauhau terms.

Te Ua was a man of middle height, **stout**, with heavy features untattooed and a **slight** squint. The Rev R. Taylor says that he had had lessons in mesmerism while in Sydney, and this enabled him to mystify his followers and exaggerate his powers. On the ritual of **Paimarire** he **stood** at the foot of the niu reciting his **incantations** in a quaint jargon of English and Maori, with many Biblical allusions, while his followers ran round the pole giving the responses. These were generously interspersed **with** the **exclamation** 'hau: from which they derived their name. Mutilation of the dead and sacrifices to propitiate the gods of war harked back to the pre-pakeha days.

*App. H.R.*, 1864 E8. E8a. 1865 E5, 1866 A8 p. 9, 1868 A4, p. 26; Buller; Cowan, *Sketches* (p); W. J. Williams; *Southern Cross*, 16 Mar 1866; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 21 Mar 1866.

**ULRICH**, GEORGE HENRY FREDERICK (1830-1900) was born at Clausthal-Zillerfeld in Prussia, and educated at the high school **there**, **graduating** later at the royal school of mines in Clausthal. After spending several years in the Prussian department of mines he accepted an appointment with a silver **mining** company in Bolivia, but finding the country in a state of revolution he proceeded to Victoria, where he spent three years **goldmining** at Forest Creek, Daisy Hill and Bendigo. In 1857 he was **assistant** secretary and draughtsman to the royal commission on mining and thereafter for 12 years assistant geologist in the geological department. In 1867 he visited the Paris Exhibition in charge of a mineral collection from the Melbourne Technical Museum. On his return he wrote a description of the method of gold extraction at Schamnitz, Hungary. In 1869 he became curator of the mineralogical section of **the University** of Melbourne, with the right of private practice. He made a report to the government of South Australia on its copper and gold mines. In 1875 he paid a visit to New Zealand and made a report on the Otago gold-fields which was printed with Hutton's report on the geology of the province. In 1877 he was appointed as the first head of the Otago School of Mines and professor of **mining** and metallurgy, a position which he occupied until his death (on 26 May 1900). He gradually brought together a fine collection of models and appliances, and was largely responsible for the great success of the school, which has sent qualified **mining** engineers to all parts of the world. Ulrich married (1871) a daughter of Thomas Spencer (Belfast, Ireland).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 28 May, 5 Jun 1900; Thompson.

UPJOHN, JAMES THOMAS, was employed by a **London** firm of jewellers before coming to Taranaki by the *Egmont* in 1854. He farmed at Mangorei and was provincial councillor for Grey and Bell (1861-69 and 1873-75). He was defeated in 1869, but again returned a few weeks later and sat until the abolition. Upjohn was often in conflict with the forms of the

Council and was once given into the charge of the Sergeant-at-arms. He asserted the privileges of a member of the Council by wearing his hat in the magistrate's court.

UPTON, JOHN HENRY (1863-1929), second son of Henry Upton, surveyor and farmer, was born in Lincolnshire, and educated at the Rev Percy Strutt's academy in Spalding. Arriving in Auckland in 1866 by the *Chilli*, he joined his brother as booksellers and stationers in the business later known as Upton and Co. He was a member of the education board (1884-89) and chairman for a year, a member of the City Council in 1884, mayor of Auckland (1889-91) and chairman of the Auckland sinking fund commissioner from 1884. He was also a director of the South British Insurance Co. (1895-1929), of the Auckland Gas Co. (1897-1920), the Northern Steam Ship Co., the Hikurangi Coal Co., New Zealand Newspapers and for some years of the Bank of New Zealand. He took part in founding the Riverhead paper mills, and was a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank (1883-1929), of the Melanesian mission trust from 1874, and of St John's College. For many years he was a member of the Auckland Museum and Institute and in 1902 he was president of the Auckland Chamber of Commerce. Upton married in 1870 a daughter of William Gorrie. He died on 28 May 1929.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *N.Z. Herald*, 29 Jan 1890, 29 May 1929 (p).

URITI, or KING GEORGE (? 1760-1828) was a chief of considerable influence at Kororareka. He was a cousin of Pomare. Intelligent and humane, he protected the missions. In 1827 he constituted himself the protector and guide of Earle and Shand. He adopted European customs, lived in a pakeha house and abstained from drink. He was, however, implicated in the murder of Marion's people and witnessed the **burning** of the *Boyd*, for which he held the pakeha responsible. He took part in the expedition against the Ngati-Paoa (1827). He visited Port Jackson (1827-28), favoured the

establishment of British authority in New Zealand and encouraged trade. He was killed in Mar 1828 in avenging the death of Pomare's son.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Earle; Carleton.

URU, HENARE WHAKATAU (1872-1928), son of Hoani Uru, of the Ngati-tu-Ahuriri tribe, was born at Tuahiwi, Kaiapoi, and educated at Tuahiwi and at the Rangiora High School. In his youth he was well known as a cyclist, wrestler, and footballer, and a member of the Rangiora infantry and the North Canterbury Mounted Rifles. He visited Australia as an official delegate to the opening of the Federal Parliament (1900) and to the Commonwealth celebrations (1901). For 25 years he practised as an agent, and in 1922 was elected M.P. for the Southern Maori District. Re-elected in 1925, he was defeated by T. Makitanara in 1928. Uru was a member of the board of Maori ethnological research, and of the Maahunui Maori council. He married Gladys, daughter of T. R. Rogers, of Albury, New South Wales. Uru died in Wellington on 7 Mar 1929.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 2 Jul 1929; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924.

URU, JOHN HOPERE WHAREWITI (1868-1921) was born at Tuahiwi, Kaiapoi, and educated at Tuahiwi school and Te Aute College. Uru represented Canterbury at football and cricket, and was a captain in the North Canterbury Mounted Rifles, and a member of the Maori contingent at Queen Victoria's diamond jubilee in 1897. In 1901 he was an official delegate to the Australian Commonwealth celebrations. For some years Uru engaged in farming near Kaiapoi, and he was chairman of the Tuahiwi school committee. In 1910 he went into business in Wellington as a native land agent. On the death of Parata (q.v.) in 1918, Uru was elected member of the House of Representatives for the Southern Maori, and he sat till his death on 29 Nov 1921.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 7 Dec 1921; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Times*, 30 Nov 1921. Portrait: Parliament House.

---

---

# V

---

---

VALENTINE, HUGH SUTHERLAND (1848-1932) was born in Aberdeenshire, educated there and received his business training. He then went to the London office of McCulloch, Sellar and Co. and from that to the New Zealand Land Co., of which he became accountant. 'Having been appointed secretary of the New Zealand Agricultural Co., he rose to be manager and managing director, and eventually came to New Zealand in the capacity of inspector. On Driver resigning he was appointed general manager in New Zealand, a position he occupied for 15 years. Valentine had an interest in properties in south Otago, and for some years had a stock and station agency in Gore. He helped to promote the Gore dairy factory, and assisted in obtaining relief for the district from the Waimea plains railway rate. In 1887 he was elected M.H.R. for Waikaia and in 1890 for Tuapeka. Retiring in 1893, he contested Wallace in 1896 unsuccessfully. In 1896 he moved to Dunedin, where he spent some years auctioneering.

Valentine married (1888) Wilhelmina Margaret, daughter of Captain Linck, of the German navy. He was captain of the Gore Rifles and a staff officer, and was a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society and the Royal Colonial Institute; a life member of the London Chamber of Commerce and a member of the Royal Agricultural Society. He died on 10 Sep 1932.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *N.z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1932; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Sep 1932. Portrait: Parliament House.

VALPY, WILLIAM HENRY (1793-1852) was born at Forbury, Reading, Berkshire, the son of the Rev Richard Valpy, D.D., an eminent schoolmaster who edited a well-known Latin

grammar and assisted in the publication of the *Variorum Classics*. Valpy was educated at Forbury school, Reading, and went into the Royal Navy at the age of 14. He did not like the sea, and an exchance was effected with his brother (afterwards Captain Anthony Valpy) whereby he went to Haileybury to prepare for the East India Company. Entering the Company's service as a writer (1812), he held office in the board of commissioners and the mint, and in 1820 became collector at Cawnpore. In 1832 he was collector and magistrate at Shallabad, and in 1833 magistrate at Sarnn and agent to the Governor-general at Benares. He retired in 1837 as commissioner of revenue and circuit there, and settled down at Bath. Later he lived at Cheltenham, where he interested himself in the establishment of a Church of England training school.

Valpy's health had suffered from his stay in India, and he was advised to leave England. By upbringing and the possession of capital he was eminently suited to be one of the gentry, (whom Wakefield insisted upon as a necessary element in a British colony, and he took with him a strong staff of house and farm servants and the mechanical equipment for a sawmill and a flourmill. Valpy arrived in Otago by the *Ajax* (7 Jan 1849) and selected his farm of 120 acres south of Dunedin, giving it the name of 'Forbury.' He also acquired land on the flat upon which he conferred the name of 'Caversham: after the birthplace of his mother. Early in 1851, with due ceremony, the foundation stone was laid of a fine stone house at Forbury. There Valpy farmed in English style, through the medium of a bailiff, and each year entertained his friends and servants at harvest homes. On these occasions all the children of the

## VALPY

neighbourhood were feted, toasts were drunk, and finally the health of the bailiff, 'whose stackyard testified to the excellence of his farming.' Besides the farm, Valpy had runs at Horse-shoe Bush and Waihola (the latter under the charge of his son, W. H. Valpy, who in 1852 shipped the first fat stock by sea from Otago to Canterbury, and made a long overland journey between the two provinces). The sawmill and flourmill which were erected in the Leith Valley started on 11 May 1850, Peter McGill being the miller and J. Fulton foreman of the sawmill.

Valpy was a good employer, and a man of the highest public spirit. Though an Episcopalian, he was a warm supporter of Burns. Highly cultured, and having long administrative experience, he was a valuable asset to the community, but he was too refined and sensitive for the conditions of a young colony. In 1850 Sir George Grey, on a visit to Dunedin, discovered that Valpy's views on self-government were somewhat similar to his own; he too was not fully convinced that the people of the young colonies were ripe for self-government, and he offered Valpy a seat in the nominated Legislative Council (under the ordinance of 1850). A largely-attended public meeting (in May 1851) passed resolutions, worded in terms of affectionate respect, urging Valpynot to accept the nomination, 'it being inconsistent with the feeling and principles of the Otago settlers to have anything to do with an exclusively nominated council, or that they should have the remotest appearance of being represented without their actually being so.' Cargill, who was in the chair, said there was no man in New Zealand who would not delight to honour Valpy; he would probably be elected as soon as there was an elective body to receive representatives. Valpy, who was not present, received a deputation with dignity and consideration, but was not moved from his position. 'It has given me much pain: he wrote afterwards, 'so widely to differ from some of my fellow settlers, and far more would it do so were I to be considered as betraying their interests, towards which I hope I have never shown myself indifferent.' As it happened, he did not take his seat in the Council, nor indeed was he gazetted a member of it. He died at Forbury on 25 Sep 1852.

One of Valpy's early interests in Otago was

## VAN DER VELDEN

to help to provide a newspaper for the settlement. When the *Otago News* closed down, he advanced £150 to purchase the plant. It was thus made available for the *Otago Witness*, which appeared a few weeks later.

India Office records; James Barr; Roberts, *Southland*; Don; Hocken, *Otago*; *Otago News*, 1850; *Otago Witness*, 1851-52; *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Feb 1930 (p).

VAN ASCH, GERRIT (1836-1908) was born in the Netherlands, educated there and at an early age devoted himself to the study of methods of teaching and training deaf mutes. In 1859 he introduced into England the methods of lip-reading and articulation taught in Germany. In his institution near Manchester all signs and finger language were banned in favour of the spoken language and lip-reading. He moved the school later to Barnet, Hertfordshire, and then to London. Coming to New Zealand in the *Scottish Prince* in 1879, he settled at Sumner where under engagement to the Government he established a school for deaf mutes which he controlled for 25 years with conspicuous success. Van Asch died on 4 Mar 1908.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *The Press*, 7 Mar 1908.

VAN DER VELDEN, PETRUS (1834-1913) was born at Rotterdam, Holland, and apprenticed to a firm of lithographers. He disliked stone work, and on being discharged at the age of about 30 years he entered on the study of painting, spending some years in Berlin and Paris. His earliest work was done amongst fishermen of Marken, and he quickly gained recognition. In 1872 his picture *Double Blank* was purchased by the National Museum in Amsterdam. In 1890, sponsored by Gerrit Van Asch (q.v.) he came to New Zealand, and spent many years in Christchurch, where he married. He taught many of the art students of the time, and painted a large number of pictures, among the most famous of which is the *Dutch Funeral*. His work is characterised by thoroughness, painted in low tone, and each one true to the man himself. On leaving Christchurch, Van der Velden paid a visit of a few years to Sydney, Wellington and Auckland (where he died on 11 Nov 1913). Examples of his art are in most of the public galleries of New Zealand.

John Barr, *Art*; *Art in N.Z.*, Sep 1930 (p); *Lytelton Times*, 13 Nov 1913; *The Press*, 6 Feb 1914.

VAN STAVEREN, HERMAN (1849-1930) was born at Bolsward, Friesland, Gennany, and educated in Antwerp and London (where he was ordained at the age of 19). In 1877 he was engaged by Joseph Nathan to minister to the Jewish community at Wellington, whither he proceeded in the *Waikato*. He took a keen interest in all social and philanthropic movements, being a founder of the home for the aged and needy, chainnan for 21 years from 1878 of the Benevolent home; first chainnan of the Wellington hospital board (1879), and of the Wellington and Wairarapa charitable aid board; and a member of the licensing bench and the Terrace school committee. Van Staveren died on 24 Jan 1930.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Jewish Rev.* (p).

VARNHAM, JOHN (1818-68) was born in Bembridge, Isle of Wight. He was in the East India Company's service before coming in 1844 to Wellington, where he was in business as a merchant, shipping agent and shipowner. He married in 1850 E. Marshall (Sydney). In 1857 Varnham was gazetted a lieutenant in the militia, in which he served in the war. He represented Wellington City in the Provincial Council (1857-61). About the latter date he went to live in Wairarapa, first at Taueru and later at Papawai, where he died on 18 May 1868. Varnham wrote a pamphlet on the *History and Troubles of the Early Mail Service*.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; F. S. Varnham (information); *Wairarapa Mercury*, 23 May 1868.

VAUTIER, JOHN HELIER (1834-1907) was the son of a Jersey farmer, was educated in his native island and brought up to the building trade. In 1854 he went to Liverpool, and from there to Melbourne in the *Lightning*. After spending a few months there he came to New Zealand in the *Onkapal'inga*, arriving at Wellington a few hours before the earthquake (1855). In 1857 he visited the goldfields at Collingwood, but soon moved to Hawkes Bay, to find a great demand for building at Napier. Afterwards he went into business as a merchant and eventually as a wood and coal merchant, from which he gradually invested in several ships. This business he ran profitably until 1885, when he sold out and devoted his attention to his landed properties and public service. He was a member

of the first Napier harbour board (1875) and continued to serve throughout, being eventually made a life member. He was elected to the borough council in 1875, was first chainnan of the works committee till 1878, and mayor 1878-82. Vautier was a trustee of the Napier Savings Bank throughout the 36 years of its existence. He died on 19 Dec 1907.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 20 Dec 1907.

VAVASOUR, HENRY DUNSTAN (1850-1927) was born at Hazlewood Castle, Tadcaster, Yorkshire. His father, William Vavasour, came to New Zealand in the *George Fyfe* with his relatives the Welds and Cliffords, in 1842. His mother was a daughter of the 7th Baron Clifford of Chudley. Educated at Oscott College, near Birmingham, he studied farming for a while and came to New Zealand in 1871. He went to Flaxbourne station to gain experience, and in 1873 took temporary charge. In 1874 he took up land in Taranaki, where he bred pedigree shorthorn cattle. There he first played a part in public life. He was chainnan of the Tataraimaka road board (1874-77), and a member of the Taranaki county council (1877-78) and of the New Plymouth harbour board (1878-81). Vavasour then went to Southland for about a year, and in 1882 returned to Flaxbourne as pennant manager, a position which he held for 15 years. In that time he completely cleared the station of scab, reduced rabbits to a minimum and increased the clip from 450 to 1,150 bales. In 1897 he purchased part of the Vernon run and Ugbrooke station, retaining the latter until his death. He was a member of the Awatere road board (1883-97) and chainnan for the last 10 years; a member of the Marlborough rabbit board (1887-88, 1891-95), the Marlborough county council (1894-96), and the Wairau hospital board (1892-96); president of the Marlborough sheepowners' association for 17 years; of the Farmers' Union and the A. and P. association, and a director of the Wairau Freezing Co. Vavasour was a prominent figure on the turf. He was 18 years president of the Marlborough Racing club, and for many years represented the north Canterbury clubs on the racing conference.

Vavasour married (1887) Bertha Eleanor Mary, daughter of Thomas Redwood (Blen-

heim). He died on 22 Jan 1927.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Press Association, 22 Jan 1927.

VEALE, JOHN (1814-1907) was born at Clawton, Devon, educated in that parish and brought up as a carpenter and builder. He married (1840) a daughter of Philip Cola, and in 1854 came to New Zealand with his family in the *Hamilla Mitchell*. His father (John Veale) had preceded him in the *Amelia Thompson* (1841). Veale served in the militia during the Maori troubles; represented New Plymouth in the Provincial Council (1866-69) and was an early member of the old town board. After many years as a builder he opened a store in New Plymouth and retired from business in 1878.

Taranaki P.C. *Minutes*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald*, II Sep 1911.

VEEL, JOSEPH VEEL COLBORNE (1831-95) was the son of an Anglican clergyman and was born in Gloucester. Educated at Kidderminster and at Magdalen College, Oxford, he graduated M.A. in 1856 and won the light-weight sculls. He came to Canterbury in 1860 with an introduction to J. E. FitzGerald, and spent some time farming 10 acres in linwood and examining at Christ's College. In 1861 he began to contribute to *The Press*, of which he became associate editor on the resignation of G. S. Sale. Veel had fine literary taste and judgment and a good style, and he had a marked influence upon *The Press* during the 17 years in which he was associated with it. In 1868 he went to Westland, but soon returned to the editorship of *The Press*, which had been in the hands meanwhile of C. W. Purnell (q.v.). Veel was editor to 1878, when he retired and became secretary to the education board. In 1893 he was appointed principal of the nonnal school in Christchurch. He was a governor of Canterbury College (1875). He died on 29 Jul 1895.

A daughter, MARY COLBORNE-VEEL (d. 1923) wrote a good deal of verse of good quality. She published one volume, *The Fairest Of the Angels* (London, 1894). A *Little Anthology of Mary Colborne-Veel*, edited by Jessie Mackay, was published in 1924.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; Alexander and Currie; Colborne-Veel, *op. cit.*; *The Press*, 23 Feb 1923; *Lyttelton Times*, 30 Jul 1895.

VERDON, MICHAEL (1838-1918) was born at Liverpool of an Irish family long settled in Leinster and Munster. Educated at a Catholic school in his native town, he proceeded to Castleknock College, Dublin, and then to Rome, where he entered the Irish College. After being ordained deacon, he was sent home to Dublin in ill-health, and was ordained priest there (1861). Appointed a professor at the Holy Cross College, Clonliffe, he became dean and later succeeded Dr Power as president;

In 1879 Verdon was made a canon of the metropolitan chapter of Dublin, but he resigned later in the year to become vice-rector of the Irish College in Rome. While at Clonliffe he promoted the building of the church of the Holy Cross and the library, and in Rome he practically rebuilt the Collegio Irlandese, one of the most comfortable and up-to-date institutions in Rome. His family was long closely associated with it, his uncle (Cardinal Cullen) having been rector and his cousin (Bishop Moran, q.v.) vice-rector. Verdon himself was vice-rector (1879-88). In 1888 he was appointed president of Manly College, Sydney. Eight years later he was proceeding to Rome as resident representative of the Australian hierarchy when he received news of his appointment as Bishop of Dunedin. Verdon took up the burden laid down by Moran and vigorously promoted the many works in; which his predecessor had been interested. The home at Anderson's Bay, the orphanage at South Dunedin, the boys' and girls' schools in Dunedin, various convents and schools, and Mosgiel College are a monument to his energy. He was chainnan of directors of *The Tablet*, and to him was largely due the success of the appeal made by that paper for relief for sufferers by the fighting in Dublin in 1916. Verdon died on 23 Nov 1918.

*N.Z. Tablet*, 28 Nov 1918 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Nov 1918.

VERRALL, JOHN MILES (1849-1921) was born at Lewes, Sussex, the son of a farmer, and spent his early manhood as a tenant farmer. In 1880 he left England for Australia and took up a cattle station in Queensland. A few years later, leaving his partner in charge, he came to New Zealand and bought land at Ohoka, Canterbury. Shortly afterwards he sold out and bought a place at Swannanoa, where he fanned for 28

## VIARD

years and took his part in local government. In 1887 he contested the Ashley seat in Parliament, and in 1888 he was elected as an Independent. The electorate was abolished at the succeeding election. Verrall gave close study to the bank of issue question and for many years from 1886, on the platform and in the press, advocated a state bank. He published in 1885 a pamphlet, *The Condition of New Zealand*, challenging the Vogel policy, and at a later date a pamphlet entitled *The Stockwhip*. Verrall married a daughter of John Aylwin, of Plumpton, Sussex. He died on 16 Sep 1921.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1921; *Lyttelton Times*, 25 Jul 1888, 19 Sep 1921; *The Press*, 28 Jul 1888. Portrait: Parliament House.

VIARD, JOSEPH PHILIPPE (1809-72) was born in Lyons, and educated at the first ecclesiastical college in the diocese of L'Argentiere and afterwards at the theological seminary of St Trenaues, Lyons. Ordained a priest in 1834, he served in several parishes, and then joined the new Society of Mary in order to devote himself to foreign missionary work. Viard was one of the priests who came to Bay of Islands to reinforce Bishop Pompallier in Dec 1839. After spending a few weeks learning Maori at Hokianga, he accompanied Pompallier on his visit to Tauranga (Feb 1840). Although still unable to speak the language, he was left to instruct Tupaea's people while his chief visited the interior, and a few weeks later he took up his station amongst them. Early in 1841 he was created grand vicar of the mission, and started on a wide tour with the Bishop, visiting Rotorua and as far south as Akaroa, where they heard of the death of Father Chanel at Futuna. Viard went with the corvette *Allier* to Futuna and received the remains of the martyr. He established a native catechist on the island with great success. In Apr 1842 Viard relieved Pompallier at Wallis, and remained there in charge of all the tropical missions. In 1843, at the request of Bishop Douarre, who had just been appointed to New Caledonia, Viard was sent there to assist the new missionaries, who were quite ignorant of the language. During eighteen months there he incurred the seeds of a disease of which eventually he died. His sufferings from eating only native food were intense.

In Sydney he met Pompallier, who had re-

## VILE

ceived instructions to have a coadjutor bishop, and Viard was accordingly consecrated by Archbishop Polding (6 Jan 1846). Returning to New Zealand, he had charge of the whole diocese during the Bishop's first visit to Rome (1846). At Bay of Islands he consecrated Father Colon as coadjutor to Bishop Epalle (afterwards massacred at the Solomon islands). Viard in 1848 ceased to be coadjutor, and was appointed administrator of the vicariate of Wellington. In 1850 he arrived in Wellington with a band of clergy and religious sisters to organise the new diocese. In 1860 a Catholic hierarchy was established in New Zealand, and he was appointed bishop of Wellington. Viard was a man of singularly gentle and tolerant disposition. He won the high respect and affection of the people of Wellington and the Government acknowledged his great public service in allaying unrest amongst the natives on the West Coast during the wars of the sixties. In 1868 he visited Rome and attended the Oecumenical Council on which occasion the inroads of the tropical climate upon his health became evident. He died in Wellington on 2 Jun 1872.

Pompallier; *Marist Messenger*, 1 Mar 1938 (p); *Wellington Independent*, 6, 9 Jun 1868, 3 Jun 1872; portrait: Ward.

VICKERS, SAMUEL (1799-1895) was employed in connection with Lloyd's undervriting in London for many years before coming to Taranaki in 1850. For some years he was in business as a merchant in New Plymouth and agent for the ships of H. H. Willis and Co., of London. He represented the town in the Provincial Council (1853-56), and resigned when he left the province to settle in Auckland. Vickers bought land at Mauku, which he had to leave when the war broke out (1863). He served as a clerk in the militia office and was afterwards a sharebroker in Auckland till 1893. He died on 20 Jul 1895.

VILE, JOB (1845-1905) was born in Somersetshire, England, educated at board schools in London, and came to New Zealand by the *Ani! Wilson* in 1856. After farming at various places in Wellington province, the family settled at Purupuru and in 1872 he started a coach service, which increased to include several important routes. He was first chairman of the Pahiatua county council, mayor of Pahiatua

## VOGEL

(1892) and chief ruler of the Pahiatua Recha-bite lodge. In 1902 Vile was elected member of the House of Representatives for Manawatu. He was re-elected in 1905, but died suddenly on election day (6 Dec 1905).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 28 Jun 1906; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z. Times*, 7 Dec 1905. Portrait: Parliament House.

VOGEL, SIR JULIUS (1835-99) was born in London on 24 Feb 1835, the son of Albert Leopold Vogel and Phoebe, eldest daughter of Alexander Isaac, of Hatcham Grove, Surrey, and Wolsingham Park, Durham. As a child he was delicate and until the age of 13 he received his education at home. Then he spent three years (1846-49) at the University College school until the death of his parents (1849). Amongst his contemporaries were Sir Arthur Charles, August Prevost, Sir Edwin Durning Lawrence, Lord Romilly and Thomas Hood. He was put under the care of his grandfather, a West Indian and South American merchant, and in his office gained much experience. He is believed to have made one voyage to South America, and to have been for some time in a sharebroker's office in London.

The gold discoveries in Victoria caught Vogel's imagination, and to fit himself for a new life there he entered upon a course of study in chemistry and metallurgy at the Royal School of Mines in Jermyn Street (1851-52). Under Dr Percy he achieved noteworthy success, gaining proficiency in smelting and assaying. Thus equipped, he formed a partnership with A. S. Grant and they sailed for Melbourne, arriving towards the end of 1852. For about two years they were in business together in Flinders Lane, their principal client being the Bank of Australasia. Vogel was at one time tempted by the high price of Hour to make a speculation in this commodity at £80 per ton, but an opportune clearance in the weather and improvement in the state of the roads depressed the price on the diggings, and he lost heavily. He decided to go himself to the goldfields and with Dr Gagen he opened a drug store in the new town of Maryborough. Finding time on his hands, he accepted an invitation to write for the *Maryborough Advertiser*, with considerable success and profit. When the Inglewood rush occurred he opened another store there, under the man-

## VOGEL

agement of Mr. White, and to indulge his journalistic bent he established the *Inglewood Advertiser*, which soon had a good circulation. He also became editor (with a financial interest) of the *Talbot Leader*. Speculative, shrewd and sanguine, Vogel was at this time making a good deal of money both from the papers and from his association with various mines on the Back Creek, Tarnagulla and Inglewood fields. Being popillar and liberal, he was unable to retain his wealth.

Encouraged to enter politics, in which his views were moderate, he contested the Avoca seat (Aug 1861) but was severely defeated (Hon J. M. Grant, 2,305; B. G. Davies, 2,050; Vogel, 819). In that campaign he advocated constructing railways by means of grants of land. This disappointment prompted him to seek fresh fields, and he turned his attention to the new goldfields of Otago, where he arrived about Oct 1861. Vogel was at once engaged by W. Lambert (q.v.) to write for *The Colonist*, a weekly paper which then shared the business of the province with the *Otago Witness*. Before he had been many months in the province he had acquired a share in the *Witness* and had persuaded his partner (W. H. Cutten) to publish the *Otago Daily Times* (15 Nov 1861), the first daily newspaper in New Zealand. This child of Vogel's lively imagination and sanguine temperament was the joint property of Vogel and Cutten, Vogel being editor of both weekly and daily and Farjeon (q.v.) manager. In spite of being burned out a month or two after its birth, the *Otago Daily Times* was a rapid success. Following a verdict for £500 damages given against the paper for libel in 1864, Cutten retired from the proprietary, making way for Farjeon. Early in 1866 a company took over the papers, retaining both Vogel and Farjeon.

Politics ran high at this time and Vogel did the financial interests of the papers an injury by his determined advocacy of the separation of the North and Middle Islands so as to relieve the latter of any responsibility for the costly Maori wars. Early in 1868 he was given notice of dismissal, which he countered with an offer to lease the paper at £1,000 a year. The shareholders rejected the proposal, and Vogel withdrew. In retaliation he started *The Sun*, a daily morning paper which for some weeks put up a brilliant opposition to the *Otago*

*Daily Times*; but the call of national politics was now insistent; *The Sun* closed down in the middle of 1869, and Vogel left for Auckland, where early in 1870 he bought the *Southern Cross*. He was a brilliant journalist, a forceful and fluent writer, and during his stay of eight years in Otago his journals gave him a commanding position in provincial politics and a firm entry into the national sphere. He had been less than 18 months in control of the *Otago Witness* when he first offered himself for popular election. In an election in Apr 1863 for the representation of Dunedin City in the House of Representatives he was defeated by a staunch 'Old Identity' (Reynolds, 77; Vogel, 31; Cutten, II). Two months later he contested another city vacancy and again suffered defeat at the hands of an old identity (Paterson, 105; Vogel, 72). But he was consoled by being elected to the Provincial Council for Waikouaiti (Vogel, 21; J. McGlashan, 16). On that occasion he was an avowed advocate of separation, but only after the existing crisis was over. Thus early also he advocated oversea mail services and an agency-general (which he was to further later in Colonial politics).

Vogel's star was now in the ascendant. In Sep he was elected to the General Assembly without opposition, for Dunedin and Suburbs North. Allying himself with John Hardy and others, he soon had a leading position in the Provincial Council; but his far-reaching and imaginative schemes were looked at askance by the staid Scots leaders of the province. Early in 1866 he carried a resolution advocating the reunion of Otago and Southland, which was to be almost achieved before he left the province. His main argument was that the landed estate of both provinces was in danger of being squandered in the ruinous competition for settlers. He was an advocate of communications of all sorts, and promoted steamship services, railways and telegraphs in the province. At the end of 1866 he was tempted to withdraw from provincial politics, but a party incident lured him on. He had in debate challenged A. J. Burns to resign and contest a seat with him. Shortly afterwards Vogel was defeated by Murison in a General Assembly election for Waikouaiti (Murison, 37; Vogel, 35; Thompson, I), and he resigned his seat in the Provincial Council. About the same time Burns resigned his seat (Taieri) owing to

lack of support at a public meeting. Vogel accepted an invitation to Taieri, and defeated Burns by 82 to 56. Burns meanwhile was elected to the House of Representatives for Caversham, while Vogel was returned for the Goldfields. He was also elected for a Dunedin Provincial seat in Feb 1867, and at the end of that year became head of the government, a position which he held until he left the province. In the early weeks of 1867, when Macandrew was elected Superintendent of the province, the General Government refused to delegate to him the powers of administration of the Otago goldfields. Vogel threw his whole weight into this fight as a question of the provinces against the General Government, and when it failed he maintained the demand for some degree of separation and a dissolution of the partnership between the provinces and the Colony which would leave the provinces in full control of their own resources. The vehemence of this claim by Vogel was often recalled when a few years later he was equally determined, if less open, in attacking the provinces themselves.

Vogel's advance in general politics was smooth and rapid but was distinguished by frequent changes of constituency. Elected unopposed for Dunedin Suburbs in 1863, he was returned unopposed again for Goldfields in the next parliament, after having been defeated for Waikouaiti. At first his attitude in Parliament was strongly coloured by his provincial associations; but his schemes and dreams were much wider than the borders of the province. The adventurous vein in his character was strongly in evidence in the scheme which he proposed to the Stafford ministry in 1865 for disposing of the magnificent native lands confiscated in the war. He suggested a gigantic lottery in which 2,000,000 tickets should be sold at one pound each. Free passages from Great Britain were to be provided for the lucky ticket-holders (175 cabin and 18,870 steerage), and single immigrants were to show themselves possessed of merely £1 on landing in the colony. They were to be well provided for; model settlements would be established; and the Government would guarantee protection against any ill-disposed natives. Vogel anticipated a great increase of population and that vast sums of money would be available for public works. Stafford submitted the proposal without enthusiasm to the provinces

Auckland and Wellington said laconically that they had no lands available; Taranaki did not care for the speculative element. The embarrassed Weld Government by its financial proposals in 1865 changed Vogel's attitude from lukewarmness to violent hostility; but he was inhibited by his fight on behalf of provincial rights from throwing in his lot with Stafford.

During the four years of Fox's absence from New Zealand (to 1869) Vogel became the virtual leader of the opposition, scoring heavily against Stafford in debates on native affairs and provincial rights. It was no surprise, therefore, when Fox returned to the Colony, that he should want Vogel as his Treasurer and that Vogel should accept the opportunity to retire gracefully from provincial politics. Fox's views on the native question were strongly philo-Maori and Vogel, with the practical impatience of the South Islander, considered that the best way to end the war and subjugate or pacify the natives was not by endless military operations involving vast debt, but by the vigorous promotion of roads, railways, telegraphs and immigration as a means of settling the country. He accordingly accepted office with Fox and, by choice, took the portfolios of Colonial Treasurer, Postmaster-general and Commissioner of Customs. In the ensuing session (28 Jun 1870) Vogel expounded his historic scheme of public works and immigration. It was no new vision with him. What he proposed was to borrow £10,000,000 for expenditure over a period of 10 years in the construction of roads, railways and telegraphs and in bringing in immigrants, who would obtain sections as the lands were opened up. He proposed finding the money partly by loans, partly by guarantee, and partly by land grants. It was hoped that in 10 years there would be a trunk line of railway from end to end of each island. The whole scheme was not adopted. Provincial agitations insisted on branch lines being built before the trunk system was completed, and the special difficulties of construction in the North Island held up the work there. Immediately after the session Featherston and Bell were sent to England to enlist the help of the Imperial Government in raising the necessary money. They obtained a guarantee for the first million, to be spent over a period of five years. Encouraged by this report, the Government initiated the

minor scheme, costing £4,000,000, of which half was to be expended on railways.

At the end of the year (1870) Vogel himself left New Zealand on an extended tour. In the United States he negotiated for the establishment of the San Francisco mail service, but was unable to persuade the American Government to subsidise it. Pursuing the same subject in Great Britain, he failed to carry his project of penny postage or to induce the British Government to annex Samoa as a port of call, a step which was taken by America a few years later in the lease of Pago Pago. In London Vogel succeeded in raising loans amounting to £1,200,000, and in promoting the idea of inscribing the stock of the colonies in preference to the existing method of raising money by debentures. In this connection he warned the New Zealand Government that there was no hope of obtaining this concession for the colonies 'so long as there exists-as there does at present-grave doubt as to the permanence of the connection between the colonies and the Mother Country.' In fact, there was no prospect, until it is finally understood that the colonies are to be regarded as indissolubly parts of the Empire.' Vogel also asked the assent of the Imperial Government to the act passed in New Zealand in 1870 with a view to the conclusion of reciprocity agreements between the various Australian colonies. The Australian colonies were all forbidden by their constitutions to make differential tariffs; but Vogel's arguments were not unavailing. A year or two later (in 1873) the Imperial Parliament passed an act to make possible this measure of empire consolidation. Vogel could arouse no enthusiasm over the proposed submarine cable between Australia and New Zealand. He pushed the interests of New Zealand coal and flax, and suggested thus early that the Colony should appoint official graders of hemp at each of the ports. But the most important part of his mission in Britain was an agreement with the engineering firm of John Brogden and Sons, who had already been negotiating with the province of Nelson, to send a preliminary party to New Zealand to study the proposed railway contracts. He definitely engaged to grant them contracts amounting to £1,000,000, in consideration of which they were to introduce not less than 10,000 immigrant labourers. Vogel was satis-

fied from his discussions in England that it would not be possible to finance the railway construction entirely through land grants. A minor achievement was his arrangement with the Hon W. Feilding to select immigrants' with means to settle a block of land in the Rangitikei district.

Vogel returned to New Zealand in Aug 1871. (C.M.G.) In the meantime there had been a general election, and he was now member for Auckland City East. He was made plainly aware at a public meeting in Dunedin before his departure how little the people of Otago liked his politics. Accordingly, having acquired an interest in the *Southern Cross* and the *Weekly News* in Auckland, he turned his attention in that direction, and was elected in his absence. He was soon to learn that the parliament which he met on his return was not willing to accept without demur all his commitments. Fox himself shared the general uneasiness, and in the ensuing session the Government suffered a series of reverses, generally initiated by Stafford, on its immigration and public works policy. The Government's resignation (10 Sep 1872) gave Fox the opportunity he was seeking to retire and enjoy more personal freedom than he had known for 30 years. Stafford being unable to carry on, Vogel was called to form a new Government. Selecting the best talent that was available, he took office in Oct with Hall, McLean, Ormond, O'Rorke, Bathgate and E. Richardson. For reasons of his own he chose as the titular leader of the Government the Hon. G. M. Waterhouse (q.v.), who was scarcely known in New Zealand politics, and who was, moreover, in the Legislative Council. It was soon only too dear to the country, and to Waterhouse himself, that he was a leader without real authority. He and Vogel were men of such widely different temperaments that they could not possibly agree and their policies could not harmonise. When matters came to a head Vogel was again out of New Zealand negotiating with the Australian colonies on the cable question. Waterhouse insisted on resigning the premiership, and once more the unselfish Fox came from his retirement to hold office as Premier until Vogel returned. Vogel at once resumed the leadership, but was unable owing to illness to be in his place when Parliament met; and Donald McLean acted for him. With-

out a division the House adopted the agreement with Queensland and New South Wales to subsidise the English mail service by guaranteeing a loan of £1,000,000 for 35 years; and the joint cable agreement was also approved.

The Vogel policy was now in full swing. Railways were creeping forward in all parts of the country. In 1873 31,774 immigrants reached New Zealand; in 1874 18,324. Fully appreciating the power of the press, Vogel transferred the *Southern Cross* to a company, which lost £8,000 in four years before selling out to the *New Zealand Herald* (1876). He had meanwhile acquired an interest in the *New Zealand Times*, which on 1 Jan 1874 incorporated the old-established *Wellington Independent*. The session of 1874 was noteworthy for the rejection, mainly through provincial prejudice, of the far-seeing forests bill, the adoption of which would have saved the country, in the next generation or two, millions of money. Vogel was already suspected of the design of abolishing the provincial system; and not without reason, for on 13 Aug, at the instigation of Stafford, he brought forward resolutions to that end, favouring abolition of the North Island provinces and instructing the Government to consider the matter during the recess. The debate was marked by the dramatic rebuke and resignation of O'Rorke (13 Aug 1874) and terminated in the rejection of all amendments by a two-to-one majority. The session over, Vogel wished again to visit London and proposed resigning in favour of Stafford, the arch-abolitionist; but Stafford insisted that it was no time to leave the Colony. Accordingly Atkinson was appointed to the ministry (10 Sep 1874) nominally as Secretary for Lands; and Vogel sailed (with T. Russell) on a new financial expedition to London. Calling first at Australia to settle various matters with New South Wales and Queensland and to get an understanding regarding the joint guarantee of the cable, he had then to arrange in Great Britain for its construction and to make a thorough investigation of the Agent-general's office, then under the control of Featherston. The period of more than a year that Vogel spent in England on this occasion sealed his fate as a political leader in New Zealand. Atkinson was mainly responsible for the leadership of the party, not merely from the great ability with which he mastered the intricacies

of finance, but also from the fact that Pollen was in the upper chamber and removed from the vital hurly-burly of politics. With the session of 1875 approaching Vogel informed the Government that he would not be able to return until it was over, and the ministry accepted his suggestion that they should appoint another leader. Pollen accordingly became Premier (6 Jul 1875). Vogel, though he was at the other end of the world, continued nominally to hold his two portfolios. Atkinson as Colonial Treasurer was the virtual leader of the Government, and thus served a useful apprenticeship for his own hard years of office. Early in the year (Mar 1875) Sir George Grey had entered politics for the City of Auckland with the express purpose of defending the last ditch for provincialism. That cause could not be saved. Atkinson brought forward a series of resolutions which summarily abolished the provincial system. Grey could not resist them. By majorities of 55 to 20 in the lower house and 23 to 4 in the upper, the decision went against him. But from a party point of view the struggle was not altogether unavailing, for he gathered round him a strong body of Liberals who formed the foundation of the victories of the nineties.

Vogel, having been promoted K.C.M.G., returned to New Zealand in Feb 1876. While he was on the water a general election was held. He had taken the hint from an unfriendly meeting at Auckland late in 1874 to seek another home in the next parliament. The fascination he exercised over the constituencies was again in evidence. In his absence supporters nominated him in three different electorates. On 7 Jan he was elected for Wanganui (Bryce, 380; Vogel, 361; Watt, 191; Pharazyn, 36). At Thames, a few days later, he was defeated by his most dangerous antagonist (Grey, 984; William Rowe, 862; Vogel, 685). He was nominated also for Clutha but, having already gained a seat, did not go to the poll. Pollen retired when he landed, and five days later Vogel resumed the Premiership, and nominally the Treasury, though in reality Atkinson remained in charge of finance. It was soon evident that Vogel's days were numbered. At an early stage he had to face an attack on the transactions of his travelling companion, Russell. A grant of lands in the Piako district to Whitaker and Russell was impugned, and the Government

suffered defeat by 5 votes. Vogel insisted on the deal being completed, and his persuasive arguments got a favourable decision by 51 votes to 19. Then his own extravagant travelling allowances came under criticism. His mind was on the wider life in London and Europe and the allurements of the financial world, and he was not sorry to resign (Sep 1876) in order to accept the post in London which had been rendered vacant by Featherston's death. Atkinson took office as Premier and appointed Vogel Agent-general, in the first instance for one year. Vogel had not been long in London when he intimated to the Government that it would suit him to hold the office permanently, and he asked permission to accept directorates of public companies. In 1877 he was offered the choice of the Agency-general or the agency for the inscription of New Zealand stock. He wished to accept the latter if the terms were sufficiently attractive, but the matter was not finalised. During the rest of his term in London Vogel was more or less involved in squabbles with the Government. His acceptance of a seat on the board of the New Zealand Agricultural Co. was objected to by both Grey and Hall, and finally he was called upon to choose between that and the Agency-general. He chose to give up the official post (Oct 1880), and four months later Bell arrived and assumed office. Vogel's political associations in England had also been distasteful to the Government, especially to Grey; and he was warmly censured in 1880 when he persisted in his candidature for Penryn and Falmouth in the Conservative interest as a supporter of Beaconsfield. The attempt was unsuccessful (D. J. Jenkins, Liberal, 1,176; R. B. Brett, Liberal, 1,071; Vogel, Conservative, 882; Mayne, Conservative, 765)-and is said to have cost Vogel £5,000.

Vogel's next visit to New Zealand, in Dec 1882, was as the representative of the Electric Lighting Co. In a journey northward from the Bluff he was able to estimate the political position and his own chance of re-entering the arena. Again in 1883 he was in New Zealand on behalf of the Australian Electric Light, Power and Storage Co. From his point of view, the political situation was now more hopeful. New Zealand was in a depression from which all the devices of successive governments seemed unable to extricate it. He declared that he had no intention

of staying more than a few months and would only agree to re-enter politics in the belief which many New Zealanders shared—that he could propose remedies for troubles that had baffled others. He accepted a most flattering invitation to stand for the East Coast (Gisborne) seat, but withdrew when several local candidates refused to stand down. Declining an invitation from Stanmore, he accepted Ashburton, and had actually addressed the electors when the dissolution opened a new field of opportunities. Putting aside New Plymouth and Te Aroha, Vogel stood for Christchurch North, where he defeated John Crewes by 930 to 223 (26 Jul 1884). In the new Parliament Vogel was actually the leader of the largest individual party. Out of 91 members 33 were pledged to support him; Atkinson had 32 followers; 15 were pledged to the leadership of Montgomery and 4 to Grey; while 7 were independents definitely opposed to Atkinson. Montgomery, the leader of the strongest Liberal group, offered his support to Vogel, and on 16 Aug the Stout-Vogel Government took office. Stout was Premier and Vogel Treasurer and the real leader of the Government, which included also Macandrew, Ballance and Montgomery. The territorial composition of the ministry (in which Canterbury had three members and Auckland only one), was a challenge to the old provincial spirit; and on purely provincial grounds the ministry was defeated on the address-in-reply. With Atkinson again in office for a week, Vogel re-shuffled his material, and Montgomery once more sacrificed his own interest to enable Stout to resume office (on 3 Sep). Once more Stout was the titular Premier, but the hopeful country looked to his Treasurer to produce the miracle of finance which alone could solve its problems. Progressive ill-health, evidenced in deafness and drowsiness, influenced Vogel in surrendering the leadership to the brilliant young barrister, but his own brain he believed was still imaginative and venturesome enough to produce schemes which would relieve the country's distress. The stern facts of an empty treasury did not, however, yield so readily, and Vogel found himself compelled to ask for higher taxation. The Government steadily lost ground during the next three years. At the general election in 1887 Stout lost his seat. Vogel, for the first time in his political career, was returned again

for the same constituency, defeating Roberts by 748 votes to 256 (26 Sep 1887).

The Government had no alternative but to resign, and Atkinson took office again (8 Oct). Vogel had a fairly strong following, but his prospect was bleak in the extreme. Suffering from progressive disorders, he attended one more session and then yielded to his old craving and returned to London. He took a house at Hillersdon, East Molesey, where he devoted himself to literature and, when opportunity offered, to business. Early in 1889 he resigned his seat in the New Zealand Parliament, and in that year he published his only novel, *Anno Domini 2000; or Woman's Destiny*, in which he adumbrated the use of aviation for purposes of travel. He contributed much to magazines and reviews at different times, and published several pamphlets during his earlier visits to London, notably two on Empire relations and the South Sea Islands. He also edited in 1875 the well-known *Official Handbook of New Zealand*. As a journalist he was trenchant and effective; the best of his speeches, as preserved in Hansard and the press, were written beforehand. In 1863 the *Otago Daily Times* published serially Mrs Braddon's *Lady Audley's Secret*. Vogel produced a dramatised version which was played for some weeks by amateurs at the Princess Theatre in Dunedin, the last performance being a benefit for the (as yet anonymous) playwright.

Vogel was in straitened circumstances for many years. In 1885 and 1892 he petitioned Parliament for compensation in respect of his services as financial agent, and in 1890 he filed a petition of right, but without success. During the last three years of his life he was in receipt of a salary of £300 a year as financial adviser to the Government. When he died (12 Mar 1899) his widow received a grant of £1,500. Lady Vogel, whom he married in Mar 1867, was Mary, eldest daughter of W. H. Clayton (q.v.), Colonial Architect. Of their family the eldest son, HARRY BENJAMIN (born 1868) practised for some years as a solicitor in Wellington, where he contested a parliamentary election in 1893 and served on the City Council (1891-94). Returning to London he became a prominent journalist and novelist.

As a statesman Vogel had a dazzling record of achievement. In Fox's administration in 1869

he got his state life insurance proposal approved. This and the Torrens land transfer system were adopted in 1870, and in 1872, on the suggestion (it is believed) of E. C. J. Stevens, he passed an act creating the Public Trust office. He favoured woman franchise in 1887, but it was not enacted until 1893. Vogel's public works policy had economic and social consequences far beyond his own sanguine dreams, though possibly of a less desirable sort. The intensity of the subsequent depression was undoubtedly increased by the reckless pace at which Vogel had moved in the seventies and the careless selection of immigrants. It is generally admitted that the average type of men and women introduced in the seventies was not comparable with those of the forties and fifties, when tests of character, and means were rigidly applied. In the realm of finance Vogel was audacious, speculative and sanguine. Not only did he persuade the London money market to grant New Zealand huge loans, but he prevailed upon the Imperial Government to pass legislation to authorise the inscribing of certain colonial stocks. When the bill was first presented to the House of Commons the Irish question was acute and the party obstructed everything. Learning what the obstacle was, Vogel personally interviewed Parnell and Biggar and convinced them that the interests of Ireland would not suffer if they extended this consideration to the colonies. The colonial stock bill accordingly came into law in the following session (Aug 1877). Communications of all kinds always interested Vogel. Even in the small field of Otago province he arranged oversea mails and ports of call and fostered railway and telegraph construction. The New Zealand Shipping Co. (1873) and the Union Steam Ship Co. (1875) came into existence while he was in office. Practically all through he had control of the customs, post office and telegraphs, and he lost no opportunity of furthering Empire lines of communication. The San Francisco mail service and the submarine telegraph line between Australia and New Zealand were two of his achievements, involving intricate negotiations with several Australian Colonies, the United States and Great Britain. In the earliest discussions of the Pacific cable in 1887 Vogel proposed joint ownership by the Mother Country and the Colonies. Colonial reciprocity

he proposed in his earliest provincial speeches, and on his first visit to England (1871) he tried to induce the Government to legislate enabling this to be achieved. New Zealand had already passed an act, but the Australian colonies were prohibited by their constitutions from making differential tariffs and it was not until 1873 that the Imperial Parliament amended this (36-37 Vic. c. 22). Empire defence Vogel took cognisance of in his first visit to England, and as a result the valuable suggestions of Sir William Jen'ois were forthcoming.

Vogel's views on annexation in the Pacific were far in advance of his time. Taking up the mantle of Grey, he endeavoured to open the eyes of Downing street to the troubles that might follow if foreign powers were permitted to annex the groups in the western Pacific. In particular he urged that Samoa should be taken possession of as a port of call for the San Francisco mail service. The co-operation of certain Australian colonies in this demand being ineffective, Vogel endeavoured to gain his ends by floating a trading company similar to the German companies already active in the Pacific. New Zealand actually offered to administer Fiji if it were annexed, but when in 1874 the Colonial Office demanded that all of the colonies that wanted annexation should contribute towards the £4,000 a year that it would cost, Vogel refused point blank to contribute unless New Zealand had a say in the administration. In his celebrated memorandum of 5 Apr 1876 he protested that the British policy in the Pacific appeared to be one of disintegrating the Empire; and he freely committed New Zealand to portion of the cost of annexations. The outcome of this agitation was the extension of the powers of the High Commissioner for the Western Pacific. In 1880 Vogel again warned the British government of German activities in the Pacific to which the colonies could not remain indifferent. In Nov 1884 the New Zealand Parliament agreed to pay a share of the cost of governing New Guinea, and demanded that both Tonga and Samoa be secured to New Zealand. These activities of the British colonies moved Germany to immediate steps culminating in the annexations in New Guinea. Vogel then demanded angrily to be allowed to annex Samoa, and Derby had the greatest difficulty in restraining him. The annexation of the Ker-

madec islands in 1887 seems to have been the main outcome in the way of extending New Zealand's boundaries. Gisborne describes Vogel as being 'bold, sanguine and hasty, determined, self-willed and often rash; overfond of personal power and popular adulation, and apt to become a dictator.' He was undoubtedly impatient of restraint, but was willing at all times to surrender the shadow of power for the substance. Though he was considerate towards friends, and often conciliated enemies by kindness, he had not the disposition for perfect team work. It was significant of his temperament that he never represented one constituency twice until the end of his career. He saw his goal afar off but he scented trouble afar also and, with the instinct of his race, he evaded it gracefully. He loved spending freely both his own and the country's money, and was generally considered to be something of a gambler in the public funds, as he was in his own pastimes. But he had many of the qualities of the statesman, Gisborne remarks, especially his restless energy, great self-confidence, quick perception, persistent tenacity, dialectical power, unbounded fertility of resource, constructiveness, close practical observation of men and things, and instinctive knowledge of figures. In fact he was 'the best all-round leader on both sides of the House.' His personal courage bore him up under grave suffering and even poverty and against political intrigue and combinations.

Personal information from J. L. F. Vogel; *N.Z. Times*, 19 Oct 1876 (p); *Otago P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, pass.; Gisborne (p); Saunders (p); Hocken, *Otago*; Reeves; Condliffe; Rusden; E. Wakefield, *Stafjol'd*; Sylvia Masterman, *Origins of International Rivalry in Samoa*; *British Empire Review*, Apr 1935; Scholefield, *N.Z. Evol. and Pacific*.

VOLKNER, CARL SYLVIUS (1819-65) was born in Hesse Cassel, Germany, and served in the Prussian army. Becoming deeply interested in religion, he trained in the missionary college at Hamburg, and came to New Zealand in 1847 under the North German Mission Society. He first laboured in Taranaki, assisting Riemen-schneider. Early in 1852 he offered his services to the Church Missionary Society, and shortly afterwards was sent to Maraetai (Waikato) to teach the men's school. In 1853, when that station was removed to Kohanga, he went ahead to prepare the ground. He married (1854)

Emma, daughter of William Lanfear, of Christian Malford, Wiltshire. In 1857 he was naturalised. Having attracted the attention of Bishop Selwyn, he was ordained deacon in 1859 and priest in 1863. He was appointed in 1858 to assist at vVaerengahika, but owing to the ill-health of his wife he was transferred to Opotiki (Aug 1861).

Volkner was a man of remarkable simplicity of mind and devoted piety, and acquired considerable influence amongst the wilder tribes of Bay of Plenty, notably the Whakatohea. A handsome church and commodious schoolroom were erected for him by the natives at Opotiki, he contributing largely. On the outbreak of the Waikato war he remained at his post, but when early in 1864 the Whakatohea threw in their lot with the King, Volkner took his wife for safety to Auckland. While he was away a Hauhau party arrived, ransacked the church and plundered the station. He was warned that it would be dangerous for him to return to his post, as missionaries would not be permitted by the Hauhau to remain amongst the Maori people. Volkner and the Rev T. S. Grace nevertheless returned by the schooner *Eclipse*, which reached Opotiki on 1 Mar 1865. She was seized by the Hauhau and looted. Grace and Volkner were taken prisoner but the captain (Morris Levy, q.v.) and his brother, being Jews, were regarded as akin to the Hauhau and spared. On the following day (2 Mar) Volkner was taken into the church and the leader of the Hauhau party, Kereopa te Rau, took tile best of his garments. Volkner knelt down and prayed with some of the natives before being hanged from a tall willow tree. An hour later the head was cut off, and some of the rebels crowded round to drink the blood. Gouging out the eyes, Kereopa returned into the church, where he placed the bleeding head on the communion table, devoured the eyes and shared with his congregation a chalice full of blood. The head was then smoke-cured and carried to Poverty Bay. Kereopa was captured, tried and hanged on 5 Jan 1872.

W. Williams; W. L. Williams, *East Coast*; Grace; Stock; Stack, *More Adventures*; Cowan ii, 444-5; Buller; Wohlers; Cox; *Southern Cross*, 9 Mar 1865.

VON DADELSZEN, EDWARD JOHN (1845-1922), who was born in Liverpool, was educated

in Oxford and in 1859 came to New Zealand in the *Red Jackel*, in which Sir John Gorst (q.v.) was also a passenger. He was first employed by Bishop Selwyn in printing for the Melanesian mission, and in 1862 became printer and publisher of Gorst's paper *Pihoihoi* in the King Country. When Maori trouble broke out, von Dadelnszen returned to Auckland as a clerk in the post office and in 1864 he joined the Registrar-general's department. He was appointed chief clerk in 1880, deputy registrar-general in 1884, and Registrar-general and statistical officer in 1892. He represented New Zealand at several statistical conferences in Australia. He retired in 1909, and died on 28 May 1922. Von Dadelnszen married (1876) Alice Sarah Louise, daughter of William Lotze, of Sydney.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Gorst, *N.Z. Revisited*; *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 31 Mar 1909; *N.Z. Times*, 14 Apr 1892.

VON DER HEYDE, GUSTAV LUDWIG THEODOR (1836-91) was born at Bremen. He emigrated to South Australia as a young man, and in 1866 came to New Zealand, settling in Auckland, and entering the firm of Henderson and Macfarlane. After having lost his seat through not being naturalised, he represented Waitemata in the House of Representatives 1874-75. For some years he was German consul in Auckland. After visiting Germany he settled in Sydney, where he was general manager of a German-Australian steamship line. He died on 29 Jun 1891. Von der Heyde married (1864) Mary, daughter of Thomas Henderson (q.v.).

*Pm'ltry Recol'd*.

VON HAAST, SIR JOHN FRANCIS JULIUS (1822-87) was born near Bonn, in Germany, where his father, a merchant, was for many years burgomaster. He was educated at the grammar schools of Bonn and Cologne and the University of Bonn, where he devoted much time to geology and mineralogy and made a scientific collection of considerable value. He carried on business as a merchant for eight years, travelling extensively in Russia, Austria and Italy, and finding time for scientific research and the study of art. He ascended Mt Etna just after the eruption of 1852.

For a London firm of shipowners Haast came to New Zealand to report on its suitability for

German emigration. He reached Auckland by the *Evening Star* on 21 Dec 1858, the day before the arrival of the Austrian frigate *Novara* with a scientific expedition. Haast made the acquaintance of the *Novara's* geologist, Dr Hochstetter (q.v.), and when Hochstetter accepted an invitation to spend six months in scientific exploration in New Zealand he went as his companion and thus initiated a long career of discovery in science. After spending some months in the southern part of Auckland province and in Nelson (of which he wrote long reports for German periodicals), Haast was commissioned by the Nelson provincial government to explore the south and west of the province. Accompanied by Burnett and three others (of whom one was a Maori), he spent nine months in the field, suffering considerable privations. On this expedition he first made known the extent and value of the coal-fields of the Grey river (which Brunner had discovered), and discovered and named the Coalbrookdale coal seam on the Buller river and several gold bearing districts. His reports added much to the topographical, zoological and botanical knowledge of the province of Canterbury. In Dec 1860 he rendered service to that province which led to his appointment as geologist in connection with the Lyttelton tunnel. The first contractors (Smith and Knight) abandoned their undertaking on encountering hard rock. Haast's report indicated that the tunnel was likely to meet with less hard rock as it progressed, and, thus assured, Moorhouse went to Melbourne and made a contract with Holmes and Richardson, who completed the work.

Early in 1861 Haast was appointed provincial geologist. Each year he spent six or eight months in the field systematically examining the resources of the province. In his first year, besides work on the upper Rangitata, he surveyed the mineral resources of the Malvern hills and the Mount Torlesse range. In 1862 he devoted himself to Mount Cook, discovering a number of glaciers and mapping many new features to which he gave names commemorating contemporary scientists. On an investigation of the Otago-Canterbury boundary line (1863) he endured considerable hardship and discovered the Haast pass.

In 1863 Haast married Mary (d. 1913), daughter of Edward Dobson (q.v.). In 1864

he surveyed the basins of the Rangitata and the Ashburton for coal; and in the following year, while working west of the Alps following the discovery of gold, he found and named the Franz Josef glacier. For some years he had been diligently collecting specimens with a view to the foundation of a museum. The discovery in 1866 at Glenmark station of important deposits of moa bones formed the basis of the unrivalled collection assembled in the Canterbury Museum, and enabled him to effect exchanges with museums abroad. Haast contributed to the New Zealand Institute and other learned societies many papers on the moa, and two of his papers were read before the Zoological Society (1885), the Royal Geographical and Geological Societies. These gave him a recognised standing in the scientific world. The University of Tiibingen conferred on him its doctorate of philosophy (1862); he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society (1865); and many learned societies elected him fellow, honorary or corresponding member.

In 1863 Haast discovered the existence of copious artesian water beneath Christchurch. In 1868 he was appointed director of the Canterbury Museum, which was opened in 1870 and was one of the finest in the southern hemisphere. To this object he gave ungrudging care and thought and by the time of his death there were in the Museum 150,000 labelled specimens (many of great rarity) and exhibits representative of ethnology, technology and art. The Museum, of which he was director until his death, was his masterpiece. He was also deeply interested in another of his foundations, the Philosophical Institute of Canterbury, which dated from 1862. Many of his papers were read before this body and afterwards printed in the transactions of the New Zealand Institute. He took also a keen interest in higher education. Following a course of lectures in geology which he gave in 1867, he and Bishop Harper in 1872 founded the Canterbury Collegiate association, out of which evolved Canterbury University College. He was the first professor of geology and palæontology, and was a member of the senate of the University of New Zealand (1880-87). Haast was a member of the general committee of the Art Exhibition in Christchurch in 1870, the year in which the first building was opened in the

domain for museum purposes. In 1875 the Emperor of Austria conferred on him a patent of hereditary nobility, whereby he was created 'von Haast.' For the Paris Exhibition he collaborated with Edward Dobson in preparing a fine exhibit of rocks and minerals discovered in the boring of the tunnel. In 1881 he was appointed German consul for Canterbury and Westland. In 1883 he was created C.M.G. He went to London in 1886 to represent New Zealand at the Indian and Colonial Exhibition and there received the K.C.M.G.

The Imperial Institute, of which he was mentioned as the first head, came into existence as the outcome of a memorandum written by him on the suggestion of the Prince of Wales (1886). Von Haast was the first person in New Zealand to receive the gold medal of the Royal Geographical Society, which was awarded in 1884 'for encouraging scientific activity in a colony that had distinguished itself by its enlightened policy towards education and science.' He was regarded as an authority on glaciation. In 1886 the University of Cambridge conferred upon him the honorary degree of doctor of science, and shortly afterwards he was appointed an Officer de l'Institut Publique des Beaux Arts et des Cultes, Professor Quatrefages handing him the diploma. He returned to New Zealand early in 1887, and died on 16 Aug 1887. Von Haast was a lover of music and a cultivated singer and violinist. In a performance of 'St Paul' by a Christchurch musical society he sang the part of the Apostle at one stage and in another led the orchestra as first violin.

H. F. von Haast (information); *Nelson and Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Canterbury Gaz.*, vols. ix, x; Hochstetter; Cox; Mennell; *Tr. N.Z. Inst.* and other societies cited; Andersen; Elder, *Gold Seekers, Pioneer Explorers*; Vigram; von Haast, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Jour. of Science*, vol. ii (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 7 Sep 1887.

VON STURMER, FREDERICK JOHN (1829-97) was born at Oxford, the son of the Rev F. W. von Sturmer, rector of Heapham, Lincolnshire. Educated for holy orders, he sailed in 1851 for Victoria and spent some years on the goldfields. In 1858 he came to New Zealand and settled at Wade, where he lost his money farming and fruit growing. In 1863 he became sub-editor and in 1864 editor of the *New Zealand Herald*, resigning in 1872 to edit

the *Coromandel Mail*. He started the *Coromandel News*, but sold it to the *Mail* and rejoined that paper. In Dec 1872 he was appointed to the editorship of the *Waikato Times*, which shortly afterwards helrelinquished to engage in fruit growing at Hamilton. Von Sturmer served in the militia during the Waikato war. In early life he published a small volume of verse. He died on 5 Aug 1897.

*N.Z. Herald*, 6 Aug 1897.

VON TEMPSKY, GUSTAVUS FERDINAND (1828-68) was born in the Silesian town of Liegnitz, the son of a lieutenant-colonel in the Prussian army who was once aide-de-camp to Prince Lichtenstein. Educated at the Military College in Berlin, he received his commission in 1844 in the 3rd Regiment of Fusiliers. As soon as he had completed his military service he went abroad. In 1848, with an introduction from Lord Westmoreland to Patrick Walker, the British consul for the Mosquito kingdom, in Central America, he went there with some companions intending to settle. Owing to the climate the colony failed, and von Tempsky accepted a captain's commission to organise an irregular force of Mosquito Indians for service against the neighbouring state of Nicaragua. He acted as guide to a force from H.M.S. *Vixen, Alarm and Daring* which penetrated up the river to attack the forts of Castello Viejo, Sarapequi and San Carlos (Feb 1848). There Walker met his death by drowning.

Von Tempsky shortly afterwards left the country and found his way to California, where he spent three years, having many rough experiences on the gold diggings and with desperadoes at San Francisco, but making little money. In Jul 1853, in company with a doctor, he sailed for the Mexican port of Mazatlan, from which point they commenced a long journey of 3,000 miles on horseback and on foot. The roads were infested by robbers and Comanche Indians, from whom they were often in danger when travelling on foot. Their pilgrimage through Mexico, Guatemala and San Salvador terminated in Jan 1855. While in Bluefields again von Tempsky married Emilia (daughter of the British resident, James Stanislaus Bell), and he returned with her parents to Scotland, where he spent some months preparing for publication his fascinating book *Mitla*, gaining a facile

command of English and sketching. (See C. NAPIER BELL.)

His father-in-law having died, von Tempsky sailed with his wife and child for Victoria, where he began farming. He applied for the command of the expedition into the interior which the government was organising, but one of British nationality was preferred and he declined to be second in command (1859). Instead he crossed to New Zealand and commenced goldmining in Coromandel. When the Waikato war broke out the Government decided to raise a special corps for bush fighting, similar to the Forest Rangers of Taranaki. For such duty von Tempsky had unrivalled qualifications, and he received his commission as ensign on 26 Aug 1863. He contributed a good deal from his own pocket to the cost of equipping his company, which was soon engaged in bushfighting in the Hunua forest. His first brush was with a force of King natives which had laid an ambush at Mauku. Shortly afterwards, with Thomas McDonnell (q.v.), von Tempsky distinguished himself in reconnoitring the enemy position at Papatara. Approaching the position in the middle of the night, they spent 48 hours in a swamp observing the movements of the enemy, and returned with information of high importance. On the recommendation of General Cameron both officers were promoted captain (10 Nov 1863). Von Tempsky played an independent part in the fight which developed on 11 Feb 1864, when a bathing party was ambushed by the enemy at the Mangapiko river. Under heavy fire he led his men through the river with revolver and bowie knife, and cleared the enemy from the fern with some loss, gaining the thanks of Sir Henry Havelock and other British officers. On 22 Feb his force was engaged for two days in sharp fighting at Rangiaowhia, from which it returned laden with booty. At the investment of Orakau (2 Apr) von Tempsky was sent with his company to occupy a position commanding an angle of the enemy works. Approaching across the open under heavy fire, they gained their post and soon subdued the enemy fire. When the evacuation began, von Tempsky gallantly led his men into action to cut off the retreat of the enemy. For his conduct on this occasion he earned his majority (4 Apr 1864).

A few weeks later he was in the field on the

West Coast. On 13 May, with 64 of his Rangers, he moved out from Kakaramea against a strong native position on the bank of the Patea river. After several days fighting, in which the natives were severely punished, he regained the redoubt with his dead and wounded. In Jun he saw fighting at Nukumaru, and two days later was with a force of 500 men which advanced to within a mile of Weraroa. Commanding the advance guard, he approached within 400 yards. A week later Weraroa was evacuated. Von Tempsky was unable to be present owing to an attack of rheumatism, and had to be taken to Wanganui in a cart. He took part in the operations against Pipiriki in Jul 1865, and then went as a volunteer to Opotiki, expecting to rejoin his Rangers at Hicks Bay. Landing on 9 Sep with Stapp and Captain Newland, they seized a commanding position to cover the debarkation. Von Tempsky commanded the rear of the position when it was attacked on the 11th, and on the following afternoon brought up reinforcements for the native contingent. Then he took part in the attack which carried the village and the town. He hoisted a red shirt as a signal to prevent H.M.S. *Brisik* shelling.

Owing to a misunderstanding as to the terms of their enlistment the Rangers did not embark for the East Coast, and von Tempsky accordingly went to Wellington (which he reached on 15 Sep). Acting on his suggestion that the men would have volunteered if he had been present the authorities ordered the corps to be sent from Wanganui to Wellington. When they arrived von Tempsky resumed command and was instructed to take the corps to the field of war and place himself under the orders of Major Fraser. That officer had shown great courage and resource in suppressing the Hauhau outbreak in his district but was nevertheless junior in rank to von Tempsky, who felt that he had been unjustly superseded. He declined to obey the orders and tendered his resignation. When summoned to discuss the matter with the Defence Minister (Atkinson) he left the room abruptly. Having three times refused to obey orders which had been repeated with full cabinet authority, he was placed under arrest, and Westrupp sailed from Wellington (24 Sep) in command of 40 men of the corps who had volunteered. A court of inquiry (30 Sep and 2 Oct) elicited that the Rangers had originally

enlisted for service in Auckland province, and had agreed to serve in the Wanganui district on being granted the special pay of 5s a day (including 1s 6d for rations). The terms for the East Coast campaign were equal to 4s 2d a day. Von Tempsky contended that the orders to the corps to proceed there were illegal, but said little about his own seniority, and the court expressed no opinion on the evidence. On 16 Oct the Weld Government resigned, and Haultain succeeded Atkinson as Minister of Defence. On 20 Oct von Tempsky was released from his technical arrest and the Governor gave him an opportunity of recalling his resignation. This he did on the assurance that the promotion of Fraser did not constitute supersession of himself. He at once rejoined the Colonial Defence Force, and on 24 Oct proceeded to Wanganui with 30 men and instructions to organise a new native contingent. Gudgeon indicates that what he desired was an independent command in the field, a position for which Atkinson declared him to be unfitted.

At the end of the year, with 54 Rangers, he joined General Chute's force, and rendered valuable service in scouting and cutting bush tracks during the march to New Plymouth east of the Mountain. At Whenuakura he led his men across the open into the pa, and at Otapawa (13 Jan 1866) he cleared the bush and reached the rear of the pa at the moment when the 57th Regiment appeared on its front. His services on this march were warmly praised by General Chute (*N.Z. Gazette* 26 Jan 1866). The Rangers were disbanded in the following month, and von Tempsky retired to Auckland for a few weeks' rest. This he spent with his wife at Coromandel, where he made some of his sketches of incidents of the war.

He was again in service in 1868. When the Armed Constabulary was formed he accepted a commission as inspector, and in Aug was engaged in the stiff fighting against Titokowaru. At the first attack on Turuturumokai (21 Aug) he arrived with his detachment of 60 too late to avert defeat, but managed to bring off his killed and wounded. In the second attack (7 Sep) he was in command of No.1 detachment {which consisted of 142 men of the Armed Constabulary, Rangers and Volunteers). The objective was to surprise the village of Ruaruru, which was in rear of the enemy position; but when the force came into touch with the enemy

it was found that they were actually before the main position of Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu. Von Tempsky asked permission to attack, but Mc'Donnell hesitated fatally and eventually ordered a retreat. Meanwhile von Tempsky, who had been waiting in an exposed position, was shot by a concealed Hauhau. His body, with those of other pakeha killed, was burned on a funeral pyre with Hauhau rites.

Von Tempsky's reputation at the time of his death was at its zenith. At a public dinner after the action at Kakaramea the Premier declared that he was the great bulwark of the self-reliant policy and had done more than any other officer to raise the morale of the colonial soldier.

*App. H.R.*, 1863-68; Wells; Cowan (p); Von Tempsky, *op. cit.*; *Gudgeon* (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 16 Oct 1900; *Taranaki Herald*, 3 Mar 1866, 24 Jun 1865; *Wellington Independent*, 10, 12 Sep 1868; *Southern Cross*, 11 Oct 1865.

VON TUNZELMANN, PAUL NICHOLAS BALTHAZAR (1828-1900) was the son of Major Tunzelmann von Adlerflug, an officer in the Russian army, and was born in Oesel, Livonia. Educated on the continent and in England (including University College, London), he had some training in veterinary science and was naturalised in England at the age of 21. He came to New Zealand in 1858, and shortly afterwards joined Hankinson, Rees and

three others on an exploration from Oamaru towards western Otago. Rees and von Tunzelmann alone, travelling up the Cardrona valley, reached the Crown range, from which they saw Lake Wakatipu and the open country they were in search of. Rees decided to settle on the eastern shore, near where Queenstown is, and the von Tunzelmanns established themselves at Fern Hill, on the western shore. Rees and von Tunzelmann explored a good deal in the vicinity of Wakatipu, giving names to the Von river, Mount Nicholas and other features. After the gold rushes they carried on until they were ruined by the ravages of rabbits. Nicholas spent some time in New South Wales and then returned to Otago, dying at Walter Peak on 31 Jul 1900.

EMANUEL JOHN F. VON TUNZELMANN (1839-98) was an accomplished linguist, and when the station failed he found employment in different schools as a teacher of languages. He was thus employed at Nelson College (1875-76), at Wellington College, at Canterbury College and Christ's College (1878-80). He then returned to Southland and was for 10 years in charge of the primary school at Woodlands. Eventually he was at The Neck, Stewart island, as missionary for the Presbyterian Church and native school teacher. There he died on 26 May 1898.

Beattie; *Nelson Call. O.B. Reg.*; Roberts, *Southland*; Hight and Candy; Gilkison; *Southland Times*, 28 May 1898, 3 Aug 1900.

---

---

# W

---

---

WADDELL, WILLIAM RICHARD (1831-88) was born in Glasgow and arrived in Auckland with his parents in 1847. After working as a baker, he commenced business for himself in Hobson Street in 1854. In 1859 he joined the volunteers, and he was senior lieutenant of the Victoria Rifles in the Waikato war. He resigned in 1866, but was later captain of the Auckland City Guards. Waddell was a member of the City Council (1876-83), and of the harbour board (chairman 1866-68). He was elected mayor in 1883, and during the three years he held office he laid the foundation stone of the public library. He was also chairman of the hospital and charitable aid board. Waddell died on 8 Jun 1888.

*N.Z. Herald*, 22 Dec 1886, 9 Jun 1888. Portrait: Town Hall, Auckland.

WADDELL, RUTHERFORD (1850-1932), the son of the Rev Hugh Waddell, was born at Glenarm, county Antrim, Ireland, and was educated at a National school in county Down, and the Royal Academical Institution, Belfast. After four years as a drapery apprentice in Banbridge, with long hours and little remuneration, he entered Queen's College, Belfast, where he gained his M.A. degree (1875). He spent three years in the Presbyterian Theological College in Belfast, came to New Zealand in 1877, was for 18 months minister of Lincoln and Prebbleton, and in 1879 was inducted into St Andrew's Church, Dunedin, where he remained for 40 years.

In a sermon in 1888 Waddell first drew attention to the sweating of labour, which was then rife in Dunedin. He suggested establishing an independent tribunal to keep the balance between masters and men. The matter was gradually taken up by the newspapers and public

bodies and a voluntary commission in 1888-89 investigated conditions. These disclosures led a few years later to the passing of the arbitration acts. Waddell was a member of the committee set up in 1888 to establish kindergartens, and a founder of the Prison Reform Association. In 1897 he received the degree of doctor of divinity from the General Assembly Theological College of Belfast. He was the founder and first editor of the *Outlook*, the official weekly paper of the Presbyterian Church in New Zealand. He had a graceful literary style, and for many years contributed to the press of New Zealand. He also published eight volumes of essays between 1907 and 1926. He died on 16 Apr 1932.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; J. Collie, *Rutherford Waddell* (1932); *Otago Daily Times*, 20 Oct, 8, 9 Nov 1888, 18 Apr 1932; *Otago Witness*, 19 Apr 1932 (p).

WADE, WILLIAM RICHARD (1802-91) came to New Zealand with Colenso in 1834 as superintendent of the mission press, but spent most of his time at missionary work until his views on baptism led to his retirement. He left for Hobart in 1842 and published in Melbourne *A Journey in the Northern Island of New Zealand*. He became a minister of the Independent church, and died in Melbourne on 25 Oct 1891.

Hocken, *Bibliog.*; Wade MS., journal in Hocken Library.

WAECKERLE, CHRISTIAN JACOB (1816-1901) was born in the German-speaking part of France. He came to New Zealand in the *Comte de Paris* in 1840 as one of the French settlers at Akaroa. He farmed for a year or two at German Bay, and then for many years kept a hotel at Akaroa. He also owned a flourmill

## WAHANUI

and sawpit. Waeckerle represented Akaroa in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1866-69), and was a member of the first Akaroa and Wahanui road board and a mayor of Akaroa. He drove the first wheeled buggy from Akaroa to Pigeon Bay. He died on 12 Apr 1901.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Jacobson; Buick, *French at Akaroa*, J. Hay, 182; *Lyttelton Times*, 15 Apr 1901.

WAHANUI, or REIHANA TE HUATARE (1827-97), one of the most celebrated of the King leaders, was a Ngati-Maniapoto chief of very high lineage, tracing his descent to Raka and Hotunui. His lands were on the upper Waipa river, in the mission territory of the Wesleyans, and he was sent as a boy to be educated at Three Kings College in Auckland. He assisted the Rev W. Gittos in building the College, and was an apt pupil of great natural ability. He was, in fact, intended for the ministry, but returned to live amongst his people at Te Kopua. At that time he was known as 'Te Reihana Whakahoehoe.' Already a distinguished orator, with a fine command of poetry and grace of language, he took a leading part in the debates of the fifties connected with the rise of the King movement. He was then actively interested in promoting the mail route from Waikato to the Mokau. Later he gradually turned against pakeha institutions, and conceived a growing bitterness and resentment on account of the social grievances of his people. When Hochstetter met him at Maungawhitikau in 1859 he was inclined to stoutness, highly intelligent and kindhearted. He was over 6 feet in height, slightly tattooed and his impression of high intelligence was combined with an air of command which was unquestionable. His father, Huatare, had recently died at Mania.

On the outbreak of the Waikato war Wahanui accompanied his people in the field, and was present at most of the engagements up to and including Orakau. At the battle of Hairini (Feb 1864) he is said to have shot two soldiers, and he was wounded in the leg. After the war his influence in the councils of the Maori King grew. He encouraged Tawhiao to resist the advance of civilisation into his country and firmly opposed land selling. As nine-tenths of the land in the King Country was owned by the Ngati-Maniapoto, the Government felt it advis-

## WAHANUI

able to propitiate such an influential opponent. In the late sixties Wahanui relented somewhat, and once, more opened the mail route between Rangiaowhia and Mokau. In 1870 he proposed inviting the Ngati-Tama, who had been ejected from Poutama for the murder of his ancestor Rangi-hapainga, to return to their lands. It was Wallanui who in the post-war days of isolation invented the device 'Tarahou' (cock-crow) for the Kingites, signifying the dawn of the day. In the early eighties the Native Minister (John Bryce) made overtures to him. At a meeting at Kihikihi in 1881 he persuaded Wahanui that it would benefit his people to have a railway constructed through their lands. Wahanui was the principal speaker at the meeting at Alexandra on 11 Jul 1881, when Tawhiao tendered his submission, and thereafter he threw the weight of his influence in favour of the Government. He led a party of his people to liberate Hursthouse, who had been seized and maltreated by Te Mahuki (1883). The route of the railway having been decided upon, Wahanui assisted the surveys, but he still firmly resisted landselling. In 1883 he paid a visit to Wellington to discuss land questions, and demanded that the four tribes of the King Country (Ngati-Maniapoto, Ngati-Raukawa, Ngati-Tuwharetoa and Whanganui) should have power to fix their own boundaries and suppress drink and immorality within them. On 1 Nov 1884 he appeared at the bar of the House of Representatives to plead the right of the King Maori to manage their own affairs and to keep liquor out of the King Country. In the following year he was present at the turning of the first sod of the main trunk railway by Sir Robert Stout. He intended contesting the Western Maori election in 1886, but withdrew.

When the Government erected him a house in Pirongia and gave him a free pass on the railways, Wahanui to some extent lost the confidence of his own people. In his latter days he lived at Whetaroa, near Otorohanga, in the enjoyment of a pension of £100 a year. He died there on 5 Dec 1897, leaving no issue. An elder brother, Te Wiwini Huatare, was a famous tohunga with a gift of matakite.

Wahanui was described by Niclolls as a nobleman of very pronounced Tory principles, courteous and dignified. Tall and massive, he was an imposing figure in any gathering and his

wise counsel and powerful oratory swayed many audiences both on the marae and in Parliament.

*App. H.R.*, 1883, J.I, IA; *N.Z.P.D.*, I Nov 1884 vol. 50, p. 427, 555; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, xxii, 525; *Polyn. Jour.*, i, 226, ix, 51, 60, xiii, 241, xiv, 59, 210, xv, 31, 46, xvi, 86, xvii, 197, xxi, 97-100, xxvi, 97, xxviii, 215; *Ancient Hist. Maori*, iv, 104; Cowan, *Wars* (p); *Sketches* (p); *The Old Frontier*; Gorst; *Auckland Weekly News*, 4 Mar 1882; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Aug 1881, 23 Dec 1897; *Auckland Star*, 6 Dec 1897.

TE WAHAROA (1776-1838) was the son of Taiporutu, a chief of Ngati-Haua who was killed (c. 1780) fighting against the Ngati-Tama at Poutama, and whose body was suspended head downwards in the 'waharoa' (or main gate) of the hostile pa Kawau. (See KAĒĀĒĀ.) From this incident the son took his name. As an infant Waharoa lived at Maungakawa, but when he was two years of age he and his mother were carried off by invading Ngati-Whakaue to Rotorua. About 1795 he was allowed to return to his father's people, a small tribe of about 400 toas residing in the Maungakawa range. The many Ngapuhi incursions from which they suffered at that time gave the young chief much experience of war. He was a man of courage, subtlety and enterprise, very daring in single combat and with some reputation for recklessness and cruelty. Allying himself with the Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto, he took some part in driving Te Rauparaha from Maungatautari towards Cook strait. After the disastrous defeat of Waikato at Motunui (1822) he tried to persuade Te Wherowhero to resume the fight. He himself engaged the enemy (probably the Ngati-Tama, who had killed his father) and was defeated. In the course of a campaign against Waikato he ate a woman related to Potatau; but he astutely made peace with Te Wherowhero and, having planted the friendly Ngati-Koroki at Maungatautari, he turned his eyes towards the seaboard of the Bay of Plenty.

Before entering upon his long struggle with the Ngati-Maru for possession of the coast Waharoa made friends with the Ngai-te-Rangi at Tauranga. In 1825 he agreed with Takurua that they should live together at Matamata, but two years later, while he was on a short visit to Tauranga, his people rose treacherously and slew the whole of the Ngati-Maru, devouring

their bodies and appropriating their wives. Fugitives from Mau-ina-ina and Mokoia having settled at Haowhenua and thus strengthened the Ngati-Maru to interrupt communications between the Ngati-Haua and Waikato, Te Waharoa summoned Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto to his help, and in 1831 a taua of 900 men set out from Maungatautari. Deciding to meet him in the field, the Ngati-Maru, Ngati-tama-Tera and Ngati-Paoa attacked on the plain at Taumatawiwi. They were repulsed and driven back with great slaughter across the hill Te Tihi-o-te-Ihimarangi. Waharoa, who was wounded with a tomahawk in the leg and shot through the hand, announced that all who cared to leave the pa within four days might do so; after that the position would be ruthlessly sacked. This invitation was accepted, and Waharoa was now able to push his frontier forward to Te Aroha. His position at Matamata, however, was endangered by the repeated incursions of Ngapuhi, who used their guns to avenge the help given by Waharoa to Ngai-te-Rangi. Besieged on one occasion by Tareha, Te Waharoa kept close within his defences until the boldness of the enemy enabled him to achieve a successful sortie and to capture a few prisoners, whom he crucified on the high posts of his palisade. Discouraged by the sight, Tareha retired, declining Waharoa's challenge to single combat with the long-handled tomahawk. He was often fighting in Taranaki; at Sugar Loaf in 1833, and Te Ruaki in 1834, finally making peace after the failure at Te Namu in that year. Late in 1833 he discussed the location of the Thames mission with Henry Williams and showed a desire for peace with Ngapuhi and Ngati-Maru, suggesting that their chiefs should come to him at Matamata. He was a venerable grey-haired old man, abounding in common sense and showing an intelligent interest in the missions. In 1834 he regretted being unable to have a missionary as Thames and Waikato had.

Unfortunately in Dec 1835 Waharoa's cousin Hunga was treacherously murdered at Rotorua by Huka, a secondary chief of Ngati-Whakaue, with whom he had been on good terms up to that time. Feeling himself obliged to take revenge, Waharoa early in 1836 mustered a taua of over 1,000 men, consisting of Ngati-Haua, Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto (the latter two

contingents under Te Kanawa and Mokorou). On 29 Mar he stormed the pa' at Maketu, in which were the aged Nainai and a body of Ngati-Pukenga, and Te Haupapa with his Ngati-Whakaue. Te Haupapa was killed and a European (Tapsell, q.v.) was saved by the intercession of the missionaries. In spite of the protests of the missionaries, who were now settled in his neighbourhood, Waharoa participated in eating the bodies of 14 Arawa. Many slaves were carried off. Within four weeks Ngati-Whakaue at Ohinemutu had mustered 1,600 men to avenge Maketu. On 5 May they took Te Tumu, on the left bank of the Kaituna, two miles from Maketu. It was a Ngai-te-Rangi pa garrisoned by only 100 men under Kiharoa, Hikareia, Tupaea and Te Koke, all of whom were involved in Waharoa's quarrel with Ngati-Whakaue. Seeking vengeance for the fall of this position, Waharoa on 1 Aug was encamped within two or three miles of the strongly fortified pa at Ohinemutu, where the Ngati-Whakaue had hauled up their canoes for safety. A feint attack on 6 Aug, led by Wetini Taiporutu, drew out a strong pursuing party, upon whom Waharoa fell with his usual ruse. One ambush had been laid on each side of the track (commanded respectively by Pohipohi and Waharoa), but owing to fear of each other's bullets they could not act freely, and the scheme failed. By the time Waharoa reached the gate of the pa it was closed against him by Korokai, who refused to flee in the canoes to Mokoia. Ngati-Haua and Waikato contented themselves with a great cannibal feast and with plundering the mission stations. A pakeha who had protested against being despoiled was saved from death by the interposition of Tamihana Tarapipipi (Waharoa's son, q.v.). Annoyed at the miscarriage of his plan of action, Waharoa challenged Pohipohi to single combat. Lame and ageing, he fought fiercely until his followers separated them. Thus terminated Waharoa's campaign against the Arawa. Pango bewailed the fact that he had not killed Waharoa instead of carrying the two-year-old captive in a basket to Rotorua.

Waharoa now retired to his own country. A few years later he became ill with erysipelas and was carried home to Matamata, where he died before 20 Sep 1838. He had remained a cannibal practically to the end. He was of

middle stature, had small features, grey beard and very neat hair (says W. Williams in 1834). He was a man of great courage and enterprise and crafty in the extreme. In the changing times of the early pakeha immigration he warmly patronised the newcomers.

His successor was TE ARAHI, who married Penenga, daughter of Hakairo. He was a man of fine presence, but without mental qualities and was deposed by the tribe in favour of his younger brother Tamihana Tarapipipi. (q.v.).

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Wilson; Buller; Carleton; Gisborne; Gudgeon, *Hist.*; Taylor; A. N. Brown, *Polyn. Jour.*, iv, 30, viii, 144; ix, 30; xi, 219, 222; xii, 42; xiii, 39-41; xv, 37, 38, 164, 165; xvi, 19, 24, 25, 33; xvii, 196, 198, 224, 226; xviii, 115, 120, 127; xix, 60, 67, 74; xxx, 256; xxxii, 122, 128; *Ancient Hist. Maori*, iv, 105; v, 184-197, 214, 215, 221, 225-252, 259-270; vi, 1, 58, 90; Shortland, *Traditions and Superstitions*, 16, 84, 92, 93; Shortland, *Religion and Mythology*, 43; *Te Ika a Maui*, 326, 527; Dominion Museum Bulletin, vi, 120; x, 178; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vols. v, xiii, xxi, xl, xlii.

TE WAHAROA, TUPU TAINGAKAWA TAMIHANA, or TANA TAMIHANA (1835-1929) was the youngest son of Tarapipipi, and was a small child at the time of the Treaty of Waitangi. He was educated at Mr Gorst's school at Te Awamutu. Though a grown man at the time of the Waikato war he did not, like Iris father and his elder brother (Hote), carry arms. He was, however, a strong champion of Maori rights and often petitioned Parliament for the redress of grievances. After the death of Hote he was chief adviser to the tribes of Waikato, and private secretary to Mahuta (1898). He refused a call to the Legislative Council for himself, but was adviser to Mahuta (q.v.), and after his death to Te Rata. Early in the present century he obtained 20,000 signatures to the articles of association of the Young Maori movement. He was the moving spirit in the King convention at Waahi in 1907, and emissary to other tribes. Taingakawa accompanied Te Rata to England in 1914 to represent the Maori case to the King. The outbreak of war shortened his stay there, but his grievances were considered by a royal commission in New Zealand in 1927, when compensation for confiscated lands was recommended. Taingakawa again visited England in 1925 (in company with Ratana), and on that occasion was presented to

the Prince of Wales. He resided at Morrinsville, and his death occurred at Auckland on 24 Jun 1929. Taingakawa left one son, Tarapipi Taingakawa, who crowned the 5th King (Koroki) in 1933.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *N.z. Herald*, 25 Jun 1929.

TE WAHAROA, WIREMU TAMIHANA TARAPIPIPI (?-1866) succeeded his father as head chief of the Ngati-Haua, who had their headquarters at Tamahere and Matamata and owned much land in the Thames and Waikato valleys. He accompanied his father on several campaigns against the Rotorua and Bay of Plenty tribes, and was present at the battle of Motunui (1822). Tarapipi had all his father's courage and determination, but having adopted Christianity as soon as the mission was established at Matamata, he refused thereafter to take part in tribal wars. Shortly after the death of his father (Sep 1838) he was baptised, taking the name 'Wiremu Tamihana' (William Thompson). The Ngati-Haua, with their wrongs unavenged and tribal wars dragging on until 1840, urged Tarapipi to carry on the feud. When part of the tribe was obdurate he built a separate pa for the protection of the Christian section, for whose guidance he drew up a simple code of laws. As neither his father nor himself had signed the Treaty of Waitangi he claimed some measure of independence.

For a quarter of a century Tamihana led his people on the path of progress, encouraging them to adopt pakeha customs and manners of life. He was not indifferent, however, to the grave injustices inflicted upon the Maori people by thoughtless Europeans, and he became interested early in the proposal submitted by Matene te Whiwhi to elect a king for the purely Maori portion of New Zealand. After the second meeting (at Pukawa), Tarapipi convened a third, which was held in the Waikato and culminated in the election of Te Wherowhero Potatau as the first Maori King. Tamihana had no ambition for himself; he remained loyal to the British Crown, but threw his whole weight into the King movement from the time when (in 1857) he visited Auckland to lay before the Governor the grievances of his people and was rebuffed with official indifference and rudeness.

On the death of Potatau (1860) Awaitaia was proposed as his successor. Tamihana preferred

Matutaera owing to his greater influence, and he was duly elected as Potatau II. Tamihana thus acquired the title of •King-maker: often applied to him. While he was at Ngaruawahia on this occasion he received letters from Governor Gore Browne, the Chief Justice (Martin) and Bishop Selwyn, begging him to intervene to bring about peace in the Taranaki war. He reached Waitara on II Mar 1861 and: obtained a truce to enable him to enter Pukerangiora to consult Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake and other leaders. They having agreed that he should adjudicate on the dispute, he proposed that the Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto contingents should return to their homes; Te Rangitake to Mataitawa, and the Ngati-Ruanui to their own homes; and that the Waitara dispute should be decided by law. While the terms were being sent to Auckland fighting was resumed. Wiremu Tamihana therefore returned to Waikato with the remnant of the Ngati-Haua contingent, and Rewi withdrew, taking Te Rangitake to Kihikihi.

Tamihana was restrained by the fierce opposition of his chiefs from going to Auckland again to meet Governor Grey (who had arrived there on 26 Sep 1861). He was at this time settled down at Peria with his son (then aged 15). ploughing and sowing wheat for the support of the children in his own school. He held a meeting at Arikirua to consider Grey's scheme for the government of the Maori people, which was generally approved on condition that the laws of the runanga were approved by the Maori King and then by the Governor. At the meeting at the other Ngati-Haua settlement, Tamahere, all the chiefs were against the scheme. At Ngaruawahia they agreed to adopt it if the King and the King flag were permitted to remain. Tamihana could not attend the meeting at Taupari (12 Dec 1861). He was suspicious of the Governor's decision to construct a road into the Waikato, as being in fact an act of war. Having no sympathy with the warlike ceremonial of mounting guard for the King at Ngaruawahia, he sent there 12 ploughs which turned up 70 acres of ground for the planting of potatoes. He warned the Waikato that if they interfered with the road which Wiremu Naera te Awaitaia was constructing from Raglan to the Waikato he would oppose them, but at the same time he wrote to Awai-

taia begging him not to proceed with the work since it must place the Waikato at the mercy of England. At a meeting of the tribe at Perla in Oct, at which Bishop Selwyn was present, Tamihana tried to persuade Wiremu Kingi and Rewi to accept an investigation of the Waitara title. Early in 1863 Grey appeared unexpectedly at Ngaruawahia, and Tamihana was sent for to welcome him at a public meeting. He sent letters to Taranaki counselling peace. Rewi was firmly in favour of resistance, but the King sided with Tamihana in his desire for peace. He now became associated with John Gorst, who had been stationed in the Waikato and was endeavouring to establish a technical school for the Maori. It was at his suggestion that the paper *Hokioi* was established. Tamihana did not approve of the ejection of Gorst from his station (1863); he was determined not to countenance hostilities until there was some hostile movement by the British troops. He contended that the Maori had no wish to be a separate nation, but it was in their interest to remain distinct from the pakeha and to retain their rights under a king of their own. •Let the Queen be a fence to protect them: As neither he nor his father had signed the Treaty he felt some freedom in these proceedings. Tamihana visited the tribes on the East Coast and the Bay of Plenty. At meetings to consider Sir George Grey's plan of government he consistently advocated governing through the runangas, the laws being approved first by the King and then by the Governor. Owing to his influence the administration of justice amongst his own people, the Ngati-Haua, was always creditable and smoothly conducted. To his great grief a proclamation of war followed soon after Gorst's eviction. When at length the troops crossed the Maungatawhiri river he considered that the King tribes were on the defensive and that he could no longer remain neutral. He took the field with them. After the battle of Rangiriri he perceived that the struggle was in vain and wished to surrender, but was dissuaded by his people. He did, however, send a mere to General Carey as a sign of peace.

The violence of the Hauhau, and particularly the murder of Volmer early in 1865 finally decided him to surrender; he gave his allegiance to Colonel Greer (27 May 1865) and

Matutaera signed the overtures of peace. Tamihana refused the Governor's invitation to proceed to Auckland, but at length he did agree to go to Wellington to plead for the return of the confiscated lands. There he was treated with great deference, and entertained as the guest of the Government. At a dinner given to him by the Superintendents of Auckland, Wellington and Hawkes Bay he offered to play draughts with them with the freedom of the Waikato as the stake. His offer being declined, he played the three Superintendents and won all the games. In broken health Tamihana was conducted back to his home with great ceremony. He continued to petition the Government and Parliament until his death on 28 Dec 1866. As his strength declined Tamihana was carried by easy stages from Maungatautari to his home, through the Maungakawa mountains. Believing himself about to die, he stopped for two days at the spot in the mountains where his father died, and then proceeded to Peria, where J. C. Firth (q.v.) awaited him, anxious to hear his dying statement to his people and to witness his loyalty to Christianity. Always a total abstainer, Tamihana yielded to Firth's exhortation to take wine to sustain him. He enjoined his people to stand by the Government and the law. (Nevertheless they afterwards associated themselves more closely with the King movement.) No Pai Marire prayers were permitted. Tamihana was a man of unimpeachable principles, a clear logical mind, and straightforward in all his dealings. Gorst was impressed by his high intellectual attainments and statesmanlike mind; and Buller remarked that •those who knew him best admired him most:

Gorst (p); Cowan (p); *App. H.R.*, 1857-66, *pass.*; Buller; Taylor, *Past and Present*; Cooper; Firth; Gudgeon (p), and *Hist.*; *Southern Cross*, 15 Jun 1868; *Taranaki Herald*, 28 Dec 1861; White, v, vi; Shortland, *Traditions*, 84-99, 247; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, xxxii, 348; *Polyn. Jour.*, xvii, 196; xviii, 115, 177.

WAIKATO (? 1790-1877), a Ngapuhi chief of Rangihoua, Bay of Islands, was a fine intelligent savage. Inspired by the example of his kinsman Ruatara to see the world, he sailed in Feb 1819 with Kendall and his brother-in-law Hongi in the whaler *New Zealander*. During the four months he spent in England he collaborated with Professor Lee in the compilation of his Maori grammar. He had an

audience of King George IV, from whom he received a helmet. Returning to New Zealand by the *Westmoreland* (Jul 1821), Waikato was reluctant to engage in warfare. The only expedition on which he afterwards went was that of Hongi against Hinaki. The sight of his comrades devouring human bodies so affected him that he could not eat for several days. He regretted the impossibility of living at peace, and was willing to acknowledge the sovereignty of Hongi if he would cease fighting. He even considered taking his family to live in New South Wales. Waikato lived later at Te Puna, where he died 17 Sep 1877. Though he never professed Christianity, he adopted while in England the Christian names of the secretary of the Church Missionary Society (Josiah Pratt), from whom he received much kindness. Waikato was consistently friendly to the missions and pakeha settlers, and enjoyed a pension. In 1841 he pacified the natives during the trial of Maketu.

Marsden, *L. and J.*; S. P. Smith; Sherrin and Wallace; *Church Missionary Register*, 1820, pp. 326-7, 429.

TEWAINOHU, HONE, belonged to a line of fighting chiefs of Ngati-Kahungunu (Ngati-Pa hauwera hapu). After the massacre of the peace emissaries by Te Waru at Whataroa Wainohu declared unequivocally for war against Te Kooti (Oct 1868). One of his sons, Henare Wepiha (1883-1921), was an ordained clergyman of the Church of England. He served throughout the war of 1914-18 as chaplain to the Maori battalion and received the Serbian Order of the White Eagle. He died Oct 1 1921.

Lambert (p); Studholme.

WAITE, REUBEN. came to New Zealand from Victoria, and opened a store in Nelson. In 1860, while he was working on the Collingwood goldfields, some Maoris gave him a parcel of gold which they claimed came from the Buller district. In spite of the local scepticism about the mad Victorian: Reuben managed to collect a crew for the *Jane*, which he chartered to take him from Nelson to Buller. In Jul 1864 he landed a quantity of merchandise from the steamer *Nelson* at the river beach and forthwith founded the settlement of Greymouth by opening a store. In 1866 he bought from the Nelson Provincial Council a run at Inanga-

hua, where he continued his digging.

Harrop, *Westland*; Preshaw; Reid, 70, 83.

WAITT, ROBERT (1816-66) was born near Jedburgh, Scotland. After finishing his education he went to London, where he had a thorough business training in the office of the Lord Mayor of the time. He came to *Ne-N* Zealand in the first year of the settlement of Wellington, where he established himself as a merchant and auctioneer as early as Sep 1840. He lived at Te Aro, and his wharf and store were on the old beach near Manners street.

Waitt was one of the earliest stockowners in the South Island, having sheep in charge of a man at Kaikoura in 1849. In 1850, by the advice of his friend John Scott Caverhill, he took up a government lease of all the country which afterwards became the Teviotdale and Glenmark stations, on the north bank of the Waipara river. On the arrival of the first Canterbury settlers, Waitt opened a branch of his merchant's business in Lyttelton, in partnership with D. M. Laurie. In 1854, G. H. Moore arrived from Tasmania and bought the freehold of 58,000 acres on the Glenmark run, selecting his land in such a way as to make the rest of the Glenmark leasehold unworkable without it, so that Waitt had to surrender the leasehold to him. Waitt went on with Teviotdale, and in 1854 wound up his Wellington business and settled permanently in Canterbury. He lived partly at Teviotdale and partly at Casterton, his house in the Heathcote valley, and divided his time between the station and the business in Lyttelton. He married Catherine, daughter of Donald Macdonald, a very early settler, who chartered his own ship to bring out his family. In 1856 Waitt published *The Progress of Canterbury*, a pleasantly written pamphlet in the form of a letter to Captain Joseph Thomas (q.v.). His health broke down about 1862 and he retired from active work, leasing Teviotdale with the sheep, dissolving his partnership with Laurie, and selling off the merchandise by auction. He died at Opawa on 14 Sep 1866.

Waitt does not seem to have taken politics very seriously. He sat for Wellington Country district in the Wellington Provincial Council (1853-54). He was also an alderman in the first Wellington municipal council (1842) and one of the original stewards of the Wellington

Racing club. In Canterbury he represented Lyttelton in the Provincial Council (1857-58). He was a very well-set-up, athletic looking man, rather dark, and wore a full beard. He had a friendly manner with all kinds of people, and a good sense of humour, and enjoyed speaking the broadest Scots dialect.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.; Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, v, 119; *Parltry Record*; Ward; Waitt, *op. cit.*; Acland, personal information from contemporary settlers; Jane Deans, *Letters to My Grandchildren*.

WAKEFIELD, ARTHUR (1799-1843) was born at Burnham Wick, Essex, the third son of Edward Wakefield and Susanna Crash. Brought up by his grandmother, Priscilla Wakefield, a devout Quaker, at her home in Tottenham, he felt her religious influence throughout life. In 1807 he entered at Haigh's school at Tottenham, and in 1808 proceeded to the Grammar School at Bury St Edmunds. His father decided that he should enter the Navy, and in May 1810 he joined on board the frigate *Nisus*, Captain Philip Beaver, in which he spent six years. During that time he was present at the capture of the Isle de France and at the shore fighting at Java. In 1814 he was transferred to the frigate *Hebrus*, in which he saw service in North America, being present as aide-de-camp with the expedition which captured Washington, U.S.A. At Bladensburg he showed great intrepidity and captured one of the enemy's flags, for which he was mentioned in despatches. At the age of 16 he was in charge of a prize of 280 tons which he carried from Chesapeake Bay to Bermuda. He was in the *Hebrus* at the bombardment of Algiers (1816), and in that year passed for lieutenant (two years before he could be promoted). He was posted to the *Queen Charlotte* in 1818, and from her he moved into the *Superb* (1819) as flag-midshipman to Sir Thomas Hardy, whom he accompanied on a diplomatic tour in South America which lasted two years. This appointment was in recognition of his services at Bladensburg and Washington, but he was not promoted lieutenant until 1821. His command of Spanish was of great service to this mission. In 1822 Wakefield spent six months as aide-de-camp to Lord St Vincent. In 1823 he joined the *Brazen*, in which he saw much service against smugglers in the Channel and slavers on the West African

station. Prizes worth £40,000 were taken; and out of 900 slaves captured Wakefield himself, after a long chase in three ship's boats, captured 420 in a Spanish slave schooner. He commanded the brig *Conflict* (1826-28), and was then promoted senior lieutenant in the *Rose*. He had temporary command of this ship in the protection of fisheries in the Gulf of St Lawrence and Labrador, and was then transferred as senior lieutenant to the flagship of Sir Edward Golpoys. Thereafter he was in the *Winchester* until she paid off in 1833, when he joined the *Thunderer*, still hoping for long overdue promotion.

On three occasions Wakefield jumped overboard to save life. He was a good disciplinarian and invented an appliance for fishing anchors with a double hook, and apparatus for imitation shot practice. On returning home he found there had been a general promotion of lieutenants, from which he was excluded, though he had 27 years of service. He memorialised the first lord in protest (28 Feb 1837). Meanwhile his brother Edward Gibbon (q.v.) had made some progress with the New Zealand colonisation scheme and proposed that Arthur should command the first expedition. This proposal he accepted eagerly. Being a strong churchman, he went with Captain Wellesley and Dr G. S. Evans as a deputation to seek the co-operation of the Church Missionary Society (Jun 1837). The secretary (Dandeson Coates) replied flatly that he would thwart the scheme by all means in his power.

Wakefield would have proceeded to New Zealand in the *Tory* in 1839 had he not been appointed to command the frigate *Rhadamanthus* on the Mediterranean station, where he remained until 1841. He then retired from the Navy and threw himself whole-heartedly into the Nelson colony, of which he was to be the leader. Land was to be provided both for the settlers going with him and for those who had been disappointed in not receiving sections in the Wellington colony; and due provision was made for one-tenth of the whole area to be set aside for native reserves. The total area required was 221,000 acres.

Within two and a half months of the date of the prospectus the ships *Whitby* (350 tons), and *Will Watch* (300 tons) were ready to sail. Wakefield, who had been responsible for equip-

ping the expedition, had charge of the passengers in the former ship and Tuckett (q.v.) of those in the latter. On the voyage out Wakefield maintained a regular programme of occupation and observances, establishing the Nelson Literary and Scientific Institution, a school for young gentlemen and one for labourers who could not read or write. A weekly newspaper, the *Whitby Times*, was established, while the labourers had one entitled *Hand in Hand*. On 18 Sep 1841 the *Whitby* anchored in Port Nicholson, where the *Will Watch* and the store-ship *Arrow* were already lying. Governor Hobson had suggested tentatively that the colony should be located either at Mahurangi, in north Auckland, or in the valley of the Thames or the Waipa. Colonel William Wakefield (q.v.), the principal agent at Wellington, and Arthur were agreed in preferring Port Cooper, but Hobson objected that the land in that vicinity was subject to claims, including those of the Nanto-Bordelaise Company, and he could not appropriate them as proposed until these had been decided. They therefore had to fall back upon the lands purchased by Colonel Wakefield in 1839. The expedition left Wellington and proceeded to Queen Charlotte Sound, while Captain Wakefield visited Te Rauparaha and Te Hikō at Kapiti and obtained their sanction to settling at Blind Bay. The ships reached that destination on 8 Oct.

After a careful and somewhat disappointing exploration of the neighbourhood, Wakefield decided upon Wakatu harbour as the site of the settlement, though subsequent surveys showed that the requisite area of land for farming was not available in the neighbourhood. The local chiefs having approved, no time was lost in laying out the town, surveying neighbouring lands and preparing for the arrival of the immigrants. In Feb 1842 four ships (the *Fifeshire*, *Mary Ann*, *Lloyds* and *Lord Auckland*) arrived, with nearly 700 settlers; and within seven months there were 67 arrivals. Wakefield showed extraordinary energy, combined with tact and organising ability, in setting on foot the machinery of government, education and public works.

It was soon apparent to him, however, that more land would have to be secured for farming immigrants. The settlement suffered from absenteeism and unsold lands; uncertain titles;

and the excessive labour supply in proportion to capital. At the end of 1842 Wakefield received instructions not to guarantee employment except to men who had emigrated under contract. Meanwhile Cotterill, one of the surveyors, had been exploring Cloudy Bay, where he reported that an area of 240,000 acres of land was available (Dec 1841). Wakefield believed that the Wairau was included in the purchase (to the parallel of 43 degrees) which his brother had made of Te Rauparaha at Kapiti; and he seems to have been unaware that that chief disputed this sale before Spain's court (Apr 1842). When he advertised the Wairau for survey (Mar 1843) he was at once visited by Rauparaha and Rangihaeata, the former denying the sale and the latter threatening violent opposition to any steps taken to assume possession of the land. In Apr Barnicoat, Parkinson and Cotterill, who had been entrusted with the surveys, landed in the Wairau and met Te Puaha, a mild-mannered Christian chief, who made no protest. Other natives, however, pulled up the ranging rods of the surveyors. This having been reported to Wakefield, he sent back word that the police magistrate would take action in the event of any hostile behaviour to the surveyors. On 28 May Joseph Toms, a whaler living at Porirua with his Ngati-Toa wife, landed at Cloudy Bay from his schooner *Three Brothers* Te Rauparaha and an armed party of about 25 men. On 1 Jun a force of 100 natives landed at Port Undenvood, and set off in eight canoes and a whaleboat up the Wairau river. Methodically and deliberately they visited each of the three survey parties, burned their huts and timber, and helped them back to the coast with their own property and instruments. Cotterill proceeded hastily to Nelson and laid an information against the chiefs for destruction of property. Henry A. Thompson (who in Mar 1842 had been appointed police magistrate and agent of the Government at Nelson) issued warrants for their arrest, and declared his intention of being present when they were executed. Wakefield felt convinced of the righteousness of the proceedings and did not anticipate any resistance. The party, which left in the Government brig *Victoria*, included Thompson (who was virtually in command to see to the execution of his warrants), Wakefield, Captain England, Richardson

(crown prosecutor) and a number of labourers. They numbered eventually 49, of whom 33 were armed indifferently with muskets and sabres. Disregarding the urgent advice of Tuckett (whom they met at sea), and a warning letter from the Rev S. Ironside (q.v.), they landed on 15 Jun at the Wairau, where they were joined by J. W. Barnicoat (q.v.). Next day they proceeded up the river, and on the 17th, in two boats, they continued to ascend the Wairau and its tributaries. Four miles up the Tuamarina they found Rangihaeata in a piece of bush on the right bank of the river, accompanied by 90 men and about 30 women and children. A canoe having been placed across the stream, Thompson, Wakefield, Tuckett, Cotterill, Brooks and the chief constable (Maling) crossed and began to explain to Rauparaha that he and Rangihaeata were to be arrested and taken in the Government brig to stand their trial for destroying Cotterill's property. When Rauparaha said that Spain would inquire into that, Thompson explained that Spain was inquiring into land claims, not into the destruction of property. Rauparaha then offered to pay on the spot for any of the pakeha's property that had been destroyed; but Thompson insisted that he must stand his trial. Rauparaha replied that he did not wish to fight, but if the whites fought he would also. Rangihaeata now coming forward, the altercation became heated and Wakefield called to his men to come closer together. Thompson having caught Rauparaha by the arm to arrest him, was roughly repulsed and, some of his men coming to his assistance, a struggle began. As the whites were crossing the river at Wakefield's command a gun went off, the natives replied and firing became general. Wakefield ordered his people to retreat up the hill. They declined to make a stand and he and Howard, who had been an officer with him in the *Rhadamanthus*, advanced with a white handkerchief towards the natives and offered to surrender. Cotterill was retreating from the field with his men and Wakefield ordered his people to throw down their arms and lie down. The natives then coming up, Wakefield and his followers handed over their arms. They were sitting talking with the natives when Rangihaeata rushed up excitedly saying that his wife; Te Rongo, had been killed and they must have utu.

A general attack then commenced on the unarmed whites and 22 were killed, including Wakefield, Thompson, Captain England, Richardson, Howard, Cotterill and Brooks (the interpreter). The bodies of Wakefield and 16 others were buried a few days later by the Rev S. Ironside (q.v.).

Wakefield was one of the best type of naval officer, courteous, considerate and with a singular command of temper. A man of deep religious conviction, he treated the natives with uniform frankness and courtesy, and his winning character earned him the general respect of the colonists. The train of events which led to the tragedy at Wairau was not laid by him. He does not seem to have realised that the claim to have bought the Wairau was contested; he had not sufficient knowledge of Maori customs and character to appreciate the gravity of the position; he never questioned the justice of his conduct; and did not realise that the threat of resistance was serious. (See FITZROY.)

G.B.O.P. 1844/556; 1845/131; N.Z.C. 31; N.Z.C. reports, 1840-45; unpublished thesis by L. R. Palmer; E. J. Wakefield; Harrop, *Wakefield*; Irma O'Connor; Saunders; G. Clarke; Gisborne; Thomson; Broad; Buick, *Marlborough and Old New Zealander*; Rusden; Ward (p); McDonald, *Pages from the Past*; N.Z. *Gazette and Spectator*, 5 Jul 1843; *Evening Mail*, 11 Dec 1926 (P).

WAKEFIELD, DANIEL (1798-1858) was born in Essex, the son of Edward Wakefield and brother of Edward Gibbon, William, Arthur and Felix. Educated first at Haigh's school at Tottenham, he afterwards entered at Lincoln's Inn (1827) on the recommendation of his uncle, Daniel Wakefield, K.C., and was called to the bar. He practised for a while in London, and became interested with his uncle (Edward Gibbon) in the colonisation of South Australia. He was on the committee of the South, Australian Association (1834) and assisted to draft the charter on the lines suggested by his uncle. Having married in 1835 Angela, daughter of Thomas Attwood, M.P. for Birmingham, he was an applicant for the judgeship in South Australia, but this failing he was dissuaded from joining the expedition and continued to practise in London. Emigrating to New Zealand in the forties, he practised at Wellington and Nelson. In 1847 he was appointed crown solicitor and crown prosecutor for the Southern province,

and in the following year Attorney-general for New Munster and a member of the executive council and the Legislative Council for the province. He was acting-judge during the absence of Martin. Wakefield resigned his post as Attorney-general as the outcome of a disagreement with Governor Grey on the land regulations. He was a judge from 1855 to 1857, when he retired. He died on 8 Jan 1858.

*Parltry Record*; 'Vard; O'Connor; Harrop, Wakefield.

WAKEFIELD, EDWARD (1845-1924) was born in Tasmania, the son of Felix Wakefield (q.v.), and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1851, spent a year in Canterbury and then went to England. He was educated in France and at King's College, London, and in 1863 returned to New Zealand and joined the staff of the *Nelson Examiner* (then edited by J. C. Richmond). He entered the civil service (1865), became private secretary to Stafford (1866) and was for four years secretary to the cabinet. After this extended period of secretarial duty, he joined the Customs department at Dunedin (1869) and served there and in Auckland.

In 1874, at the suggestion of Stafford, he resigned to become editor of the *Timaru Herald*. During 10 years in that position he successfully advocated the creation of a modern port for South Canterbury by the construction of a breakwater. He was at the same time leader writer for the *Otago Daily Times*, the *New Zealand Times* and *The Press*. Wakefield was M.H.R. for Geraldine (1875-81). Being defeated there, he contested Inangahua against E. Shaw (q.v.) in 1883. In 1884 he was elected unopposed for Selwyn and was for one week Colonial Secretary in the Atkinson Government (1884). Retiring from politics in 1887, he became editor of the *Evening Press* (Wellington). In 1890 he went to London and was afterwards appointed agent in New York of the British and United States Agency, but had to close it up in view of the financial stringency (1890). Thereafter he worked for the New Zealand press in London.

Wakefield published in 1889 *New Zealand after Fifty Years*. In his later years, when he suffered from blindness, he was admitted to the Carthusian foundation and lived in the Charterhouse, in recognition of his interest in Empire

affairs. Just before his death (which occurred on 10 Aug 1924) he contributed to the *Nineteenth Century* an article on his friendship with Dickens and he published privately in 1923 a brochure on Sir Edward Stafford.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Jun 1925; E. Wakefield, *op. cit.*; *United Empire*, 1924, p. 630 (p); *Timaru Herald*, 15 Aug 1924.

WAKEFIELD, EDWARD GIBBON (1796-1862) was the son of Edward Wakefield, who at the time of his birth was a farmer in Essex, but afterwards became a land agent in London; achieved fame as an educationalist and philanthropist and was the author of *An Account of Ireland, Statistical and Political (1812)*. Through his mother, Priscilla Bell, he was descended from the Quaker family of Robert Barclay, the apologist, and he was thus related to F. D. Bell (q.v.). Owing to the straitened circumstances of his father, Edward and several of his brothers lived for part of their childhood with their grandmother at Tottenham. She was a noted philanthropist. The boys went first to Haigh's school. At that early age Edward showed a perverseness and intractability which increased in his youth and was the cause of his leaving each of the schools to which he was sent. He left Haigh's in Dec 1807 for Westminster, where he had many fights and difficulties, and eventually refused to go back. Thence to the High School at Edinburgh, which he left in 1811, stubbornly refusing to go back.

In 1813 he was admitted at Gray's Inn, but in the following year he became private secretary to the Hon William Noel Hill, son of Lord Berwick, and then envoy to the court of Turin. He travelled a good deal as a king's messenger and saw much of fashionable life in Italy and Paris. Having made the acquaintance of Eliza Susan Pattle, the heiress of a Canton merchant, Thomas Charles Pattle (deceased), they eloped and were married at Edinburgh (1816). The mother and uncles of the girl were won over, and through the influence of Hill the Lord Chancellor not only sanctioned the marriage, but made the most liberal settlement on Wakefield. He was to receive from £1,500 to £2,000 a year, independent of any private property of his own and subject to no control, the allowance to be increased by £2,000 a year at the death of his mother-in-law. The couple went to Genoa

on a diplomatic mission, and then back to Turin. Wakefield became secretary to the legation, where his brother William was also employed. There Wakefield's first child, Susan Priscilla, was born (1817). The mother died on 5 Jul 1820, after the birth of the second child, Edward Jerningham.

Meanwhile Wakefield had been employed as attache and secretary-general at the embassy in Paris, where they saw much of fashionable life. In 1824 his father married Frances, the daughter of the Rev Dr Davies, headmaster of the Macclesfield Grammar School. Wakefield and his brother visited this family at Macclesfield, and through them became aware of the existence of a wealthy heiress, Ellen, the daughter of William Turner, a manufacturer, of Shrigley, Cheshire, and sheriff of the county of Yorkshire. In Mar 1826 Edward and William Wakefield, by means of a ruse, persuaded the girl to leave the school and took her to Gretna Green, where Edward went through a form of marriage with her. He then took his wife to London, Dover and Calais, where they were overtaken by the girl's uncles and police agents. William had already been arrested in England, and Wakefield offered to return to face the charge of abduction. They were tried at the Lancaster assizes, their stepmother, Frances Wakefield, and the servant, Thevenot, being also indicted; and were found guilty. On 14 May 1827 Edward and William were each sentenced to three years' imprisonment, the former at Newgate and the latter at Lancaster. Frances was not sentenced. A bill was passed by Parliament to annul the marriage, which had not been consummated.

After his transfer to Newgate prison Wakefield was permitted to see his children and to take an active part in their education. In his prison surroundings he saw much of the seamy side of life, and became interested in trying to reform aspects which seemed unnecessarily harsh. In 1830 he wrote an essay, *The Condemned Sermon* (which was published in *Popular Politics* in 1837), and in 1831 he wrote *Facts Relating to the Punishment of Death in the Metropolis*. The public were shocked by some of his disclosures, and certain reforms which he suggested were carried into effect. It was here, too, that Wakefield entered upon that close study of the subject of colonisation which

was to issue in a masterly thesis a few years later. He investigated the Swan river failure, which he was convinced was due to the dispersal of the settlers over too wide an area by the granting of vast estates to wealthy emigrants in the neighbourhood of the settlement. From this he developed his theory that land should be sold at too high a price to enable the labourers too readily to become landowners, thus depriving the land of its due supply of labour. He elaborated his system in the sketch of a proposed colony which appeared in a series of articles in the *Morning Chronicle* (Aug-oct 1829). In the same year was published his book, *A Lettel' from Sydney, together with an Outline of a System of Colonisation*. In this book (edited by Robert Gouger) he insisted that all land in the colony should be sold, and that there should be a tax on rents of lands already sold and on future sales to form an emigration fund, which should be applied to the introduction of a due proportion of labourers for the needs of the settlement. He now abandoned his fixed price of £2 per acre for land, and suggested that the 'sufficient price' must be fixed according to the conditions of each settlement. In Apr 1830 he published (in the *Spectator*) 'The Cure and Prevention of Pauperism by means of Systematic Colonisation.' Shortly after his release (which took place in May) he formed the National Colonisation Society, which consisted of a small select band of thinkers, and absorbed Gouger's Emigration Society. The first pamphlet, *A Statement of the Principles and Objects of the Proposed National Society for the Cure and Prevention of Pauperism by Means of Systematic Colonisation*, appeared in 1830. In 1831 Lord Goderich became Secretary of State for the Colonies (with Lord Howick as Under-secretary), and in regulations published shortly afterwards it was provided that henceforth all land in New South Wales should be sold at not less than 5s per acre. In 1831 Gouger and Wakefield brought forward the South Australia project and obtained the approval of Howick, with the proviso that the governor of the settlement should be appointed by the government and not by the chartered company. Goderich, however, did not approve the scheme (30 May 1832). In 1833, when Wakefield published his *England and America; a Comparison of the*

*Social and Political State of both Nations*, the Society had 42 members, including Charles Buller, John Stuart Mill, John Hutt, Colonel R. Torrens, Sir F. Burdett, and Sir J. C. Hobhouse. It was revitalised by this publication. At the end of the year the South Australian Association was formed, with Buller, Torrens and Roebuck on the committee. Wakefield, restrained by the consciousness of his too recent misdemeanour and its punishment, remained discreetly in the background; but his brother Daniel (q.v.) assisted in drafting the articles of association. The Duke of Wellington approved the scheme, and Wakefield urged, in recognition of his interest, that the chief town of the settlement should be named after him.

The serious illness of his daughter Nina (Priscilla) now took Wakefield to Lisbon, where to his intense grief she died on 12 Feb 1835. His personal life was wrapped up in the two children, and Nina had become his confidant in schemes and economic speculations which were beyond the comprehension of most young women. Wakefield brought back to England with him a Portuguese girl, Leocadia de Oliveira, who had helped to soothe the last days of his daughter. He educated her and brought her to New Zealand, where she married. On his return to England Wakefield found that changes had been made in the South Australian scheme which he considered fatal. He fell out with Gouger, and Torrens was unable to effect a reconciliation. The price fixed for the sale of land, 12s an acre, he considered too low. When he himself was unable to sell the land at that price, George Fife Angas came forward with a joint stock company which took the necessary area at 12s. Wakefield now withdrew from the South Australian scheme and turned his attention to New Zealand, Torrens continuing as chairman of the commissioners. In Jun 1836 Wakefield gave valuable evidence before the select committee on methods of disposing of land in the colonies. This evidence was published in 1841 for the government of Texas. The select committee recommended that the upset price should be a permanent principle of future colonial regulations. As a result of the evidence given by Wakefield at this inquiry the New Zealand Association was constituted at a meeting at his house on 22 May 1837. It soon announced its

intention of settling New Zealand, and thus came into immediate conflict with the Church Missionary Society, which strongly opposed the foundation of a British colony in New Zealand. In a book published under the auspices of the Association in 1837, entitled *The British Colonisation of New Zealand*, Wakefield proposed making treaties with the native tribes for the cession of territory and all other necessary activities. Urged by the missionary societies, the Colonial Office, now under the strong control of Stephen as permanent under-secretary, dismissed the proposal (Jun 1837) because it involved the acquisition of sovereignty in New Zealand, which would inevitably issue in the conquest and extermination of the native race. The Secretary of State (Lord Glenelg) was, however, so impressed by accounts of lawlessness amongst whites in New Zealand that he informed Lord Durham that he would be willing to consent to the incorporation of a company by royal charter so long as the government had the right of veto over the personnel of the directorate and officials. Wakefield having assured him that the Association assumed no pecuniary risk and did not expect pecuniary gain, he said he would not oppose the bill (5 Feb 1838). Both the Church Missionary Society and the Wesleyan Missionary Society petitioned against the bill, and the missionary influence in Parliament and the country was so strong that the select committee of the House of Lords (at which Wakefield produced a Maori witness, Nayti) reported against it. The best way to further the civilisation of New Zealand, it recommended, was to support the existing missions there. Wakefield was in Canada at the time when the bill was being discussed in Parliament, and it was defeated by 92 votes to 32. Thus ended the Association's scheme of appointing commissioners in New Zealand and making treaties with the natives or exercising criminal jurisdiction. In 1836 Wakefield's friends made an effort to find him a seat in the House of Commons, and he actually issued an address to the electors of Birmingham strongly approving the reform bill, and hoping to see Universal suffrage, the ballot, annual elections and three-year parliaments.

Having withdrawn from his parliamentary ambitions, he took part in forming the New Zealand Association, and in the same year

brought about the select committee on transportation, which warmly endorsed his principles. In Jan 1838 he accepted a position on Durham's staff for Canada. Buller was chief secretary, and Wakefield was invited to accompany the mission really to investigate the management of crown lands. But for the veto of the Colonial Office he would have been appointed commissioner of crown lands. In fact, Buller was commissioner, but Wakefield took charge of the land commission, the registry of titles and the commutation of feudal tenures. When he arrived in Canada in the middle of 1838 (some time after Durham), the rebellion of 1837 was still a recent memory and he had unique opportunities of discussing the grievances of the colonists. He failed to see the rebel Papineau, though he made a journey to Saratoga for that purpose, but he soon formed the opinions that the trouble in Canada was a racial war; that the French Canadians were a poor class and the country must be made English by every means. Durham had humanely dispensed with the trial of rebels in prison in favour of exiling to Bermuda eight of the leaders. His enemies in England seized on the fact that Bermuda was outside his jurisdiction and the government weakly disallowed the ordinance. Disgusted at this desertion of him after a promise of full support, he resigned (25 Sep). Wakefield defended Durham with the greatest energy. Fearing that his report would be mutilated by the government to cover its own faults, he disregarded official propriety and communicated the greater part of it to *The Times* before Parliament received it. The substance of the *Report on the Affairs of British North America* (which was addressed to Glenelg on 31 Jan 1839) appeared in *The Times* on 8 Feb. It proposed the reunion of the provinces of Upper and Lower Canada as a prelude to the inauguration of responsible government. Durham's enemies refused him credit for the report ('Wakefield thought it, Buller wrote it, and Durham signed it'), but the refusal was malevolent. Durham, an extremely able man, both thought and wrote. Wakefield was responsible for the appendix on land-reform, where Durham was his pupil; but Wakefield at that time had no comprehension of the principle of responsible government, such as both Durham and Buller displayed; and the statement of

this principle was in fact the essence of the report. Wakefield later appropriated it as part of his system: His land-policy was divorced from Canadian reality.

On his return to England late in 1838 Wakefield found a new impetus to the New Zealand project in the scheme of de Thierry (q.v.). Though the proposal, as communicated by George F. Angas, envisaged a sovereignty in de Thierry's own person, there was already a widespread fear of French designs in New Zealand. When Lord Glenelg went out of office (Feb 1839) he left a minute recommending that action be taken. His successor (Lord Normanby) refusing to move, the New Zealand Company hastened its plans, selected Colonel W. H. Wakefield as leader of the proposed settlement in New Zealand (28 Mar 1839), and arranged for the despatch of the expeditionary ship, the *Tory*. She left the river on 25 Apr rather hurriedly, lest the government should intervene. When Normanby refused letters of introduction to the governors of New South Wales and Tasmania Wakefield feared some more definite sign of disapproval. There is a legend, lacking proof, that he hastened to Plymouth to despatch the ship. That done, he established himself in the Company's headquarters in Broad street buildings, and throughout the year was the directing spirit in all the negotiations with the Colonial Office. In Feb 1840 Captain Hobson concluded the Treaty of Waitangi and took office as Lieutenant-governor of New Zealand.

Wakefield became a director of the Company on 9 Apr 1840, and a few weeks later he persuaded the board to adopt the name 'Wellington' for the first town in recognition of the Duke's assistance. He arranged a great meeting of shipowners, bankers and merchants of the city of London to urge the Government to take measures to preserve the long established sovereignty of the British crown in New Zealand. Before the select committee of the House of Lords Wakefield gave evidence, the value of which was acknowledged by the chairman (Lord Eliot) at a public dinner at Plymouth on 5 Nov. In Sep the directors, on his advice, applied to Lord John Russell for a charter. Stephen agreed, and Wakefield and Lord Petre were appointed to negotiate with Russell as to the terms. On 26 Oct Russell agreed to issue

a charter for 40 years, with increased capital and more powers, and the Company was to receive four acres of land in the Colony for every pound of expenditure incurred in colonising. The charter was dated 12 Feb 1841. In Dec 1841 Wakefield again visited Canada to look after an interest which he had acquired in a land company. While there he was elected (Nov 1842) to represent in the House of Assembly of Lower Canada the French-speaking county of Beauharnois, the electors of which appreciated what he had done to secure for them a share in their administration. The governor, Sir Charles Bagot, regarded him as 'a vindictive, as well as subtle serpent: and was careful to have nothing to do with him; but his confidential advice to Bagot's successor, Sir Charles Metcalfe, in Metcalfe's conflict with ministers on the subject of responsible government, earned for him the hatred of the Canadian Radicals and the title of 'arch-traitor.' His perception in Canadian politics was nevertheless sometimes shrewd, though in the responsible government controversy he was dearly fighting against the future. Metcalfe had declined to consult his ministers in the making of appointments. Wakefield supported the governor, for reasons which he set forth in his pamphlet, *A View of Sir Charles Metcalfe's Government of Canada, by a Member of the Provincial Parliament*. He came back to England (1844) to find the Company once more at war with the Colonial Office over the interpretation of the agreement as regards the allocation of grants of land. A select committee appointed by the House of Commons upheld the Company on every point except its 'highly irregular and improper conduct' in sending out settlers in defiance of the authority of the crown. Lord Stanley (the Secretary of State) would not, however, accept the Company's contention that the Maori possessed only a qualified dominion in New Zealand. In Mar and Jun 1845 there were stormy debates in Parliament. Earl Grey became Secretary of State in Jun 1846. Wakefield had a discouraging interview with him at Buller's house in Jul, and a week or two later suffered an apoplectic stroke as the result of overwork and excitement (15 Aug 1846). This placed him hors de combat for some years, though he continued to attend meetings. In May 1847 Buller made an agreement with Grey under which the Company

should receive a new loan and come under government control. Wakefield protested against government control, but was in no state of health to fight, and retired to undergo the water cure at Great Malvern. His enthusiasm in colonisation was revived by the Church of England proposal to settle a colony in New Zealand, and by a meeting with John Robert Godley (q.v.), whom he importuned to lend his influence to the scheme. Godley acceded (30 Nov 1847), and Wakefield transferred to him sufficient stock (£500) to qualify him as a director. The site proposed for the settlement was vVairarapa.

Wakefield was now writing topics regularly for the *Spectator*. Late in 1848 he retired to France (with A. J. Allom, q.v.) to finish his book on the *Art of Colonisation*, in which he hoped to establish his claim as the author of the school of thought now almost triumphant. The book was published in Feb 1849. He resigned from the directorate of the Company. Earl Grey about this time submitted to Durham a scheme for a colony in Canada, which Wakefield criticised and showed to be impracticable. Early in 1849 he drew up the heads of the articles of association for the Canterbury settlement, which being done, he wrote to F. D. Bell (his kinsman) in New Zealand to say that he was now determined to proceed thither, since his work in England was finished. He arranged for the publication of the *Canterbury Papers* and, the land sales being insufficient to justify proceeding, he arranged a personal guarantee of £15,000 by Lord Lyttelton, Sir John Simeon, Lord Richard Cavendish and himself. Having worked with his accustomed zeal until the first four ships of the Canterbury settlement had passed down the Channel, he then turned to the New Zealand constitution. On 8 Feb 1850 Lord John Russell proposed in parliament that provision be made for the better government of her Majesty's Australian colonies. The bill was passed on 13 May, a similar one being promised for New Zealand in the following year. In the drafting of the New Zealand constitution some share was taken by Wakefield, Fox, Weld, Sewell, Adderley (afterwards Lord Norton) and Lyttelton. In 1851 it was impossible to bring in the bill, but it came in 1852. In Jun Wakefield, fearing its destruction by the opposition of

Molesworth, petitioned both houses in favour of it.

The act received the royal assent on 30 Jun. Wakefield sailed for New Zealand in the *Minerva* in Oct 1852, arriving in Lyttelton on 2 Feb 1853. He became involved almost immediately in a controversy with Governor Grey over his land regulations of 4 Mar 1853, in which the price was fixed at 10s per acre, reducible to 5s in cases where the land was not easily accessible. Wakefield wrote home characteristically that 'he worked the newspapers and went to law with the Governor.' Thereafter he was at odds with Grey over alterations in the constitution and his delay in having Parliament constituted, and later in summoning the General Assembly to meet. Wakefield was elected a member of Parliament for Hutt (19 Aug 1853) and of the Wellington Provincial Council, also for Hutt (5 Sep), defeating by a very large majority candidates who supported the policy of Grey. Grey left the Colony on 31 Dec 1853. The Provincial Council met on 28 Oct 1853 and, having elected Clifford to be Speaker, had good reason to approve its choice. So that when Parliament assembled seven months later Wakefield had already been in consultation with other members and persuaded them to elect Charles Clifford (q.v.), though a Catholic, to the chair of the House of Representatives.

Colonel Wynyard, the administrator, was inexperienced and lacking in initiative, and Wakefield soon appeared as the Machiavelli of Parliament. The House had no sooner shaken down to its task when he moved (2 Jun 1854) to establish full responsible government. Swainson (the Attorney-general) ruled that the Governor had no power to introduce the responsible system, but 'Wakefield had won his point and was prepared to await developments. He wrote Home that he was happy in having the full realisation of all he had hoped and longed for. Friction occurred between the responsible ministers and the permanent officials who sat with them in the executive and whom, according to Wakefield's ruling, the Governor had no power to dismiss since they were appointed by the crown. Wynyard therefore accepted the resignation of ministers and consulted Wakefield, who once more appeared as the enemy of the system he had always

advocated. Provoked by his rather tactless conduct, the House passed a resolution (proposed by one of the executive, FitzGerald) protesting against the acceptance of advice from a private member of Parliament. On the intimation that Wynyard intended to prorogue Parliament (also on the advice of Wakefield), the House passed a resolution demanding the full grant of responsible government and the removal of Wakefield from his position as unofficial adviser. Wakefield's supporters walked out of the chamber in the hope of preventing the motion being carried. He withdrew then from his unique position, and a fortnight later Parliament met and passed supply for a ministry led by T. S. Forsaith (q.v.), with Travers, Macandrew and E. J. Wakefield as colleagues.

On 8 Dec the Secretary of State approved the grant of responsible government. Wakefield retired at the general election (1855). He was re-elected to the Provincial Council, but attended less frequently owing to failing health. His most noteworthy intervention in this period was at the election of 1857, when his son (E. J. Wakefield) made a determined attempt to capture the provincial government. Thereafter he lived in enforced retirement at his home in Wellington, his principal companion in the evening of his life being Alice, daughter of his brother Daniel, and later the wife of Harold Freeman. He died on 16 May 1862, and was buried in the Sydney street cemetery.

E. Irving Carlyle, in the *Dictionary of National Biography*, says: 'The importance of Wakefield's achievements in colonial matters can hardly be overestimated. The tangible fruits of his labours are the least part of their result, for all subsequent colonial development has followed the direction of his thought. He brought to the subject for the first time the mind of a philosopher and statesman, equally fitted for framing a comprehensive theory and for directing its working in practical detail. The great flaw in his character was lack of scruple in selecting the means for attaining his ends. This imperfection of character brought about serious disaster in his private affairs, and in his public life it prevented even his most devoted supporters from giving him their implicit confidence.'

Wakefield's publications include: *Swing Unmasked, or the Causes of Rural Incendiarism*

(1831), *The Hangman and the Judge* (1833), *Popular Politics* (1837).

G.B.O.P. 1836-45; *N.Z.P.D.* 1854-62; N.Z. Company reports; Wakefield Letters in Canterbury Museum; *N.Z.C., pass.* (including many manuscript and draft letters in Wakefield's hand); E. J. Wakefield, *Adventure*; Harrop, *Wakefield*; E. Wakefield, *New Zealand* (p); Wakelin; O'Connor (p); Gisborne; Saunders; Rusden; E. G. Wakefield, *op. cit.*; Egerton; Sherrin and Wallace; Garnett (p); Godley, *Letters*; Lovat; J. Collier (introd. *The Art of Colonisation*, 1914); R. C. Mills, *The Colonisation of Australia* (1915); John Morley, *Life of William Ewart Gladstone* (1904); Hight and Bamford; Keith; Scholefield, *Hobson*; Ward (p); A. J. Harrop in *The Press*, Oct-Nov 1928; Stuart J. Reid; Lucas; Chester W. New, *Lord Durham*; Chester Martin, *Empire and Commonwealth*; W. P. Morrell, *Colonial Policy of Peel and Russell*; *Fisher's Colonial Magazine*, Jul 1844; *Wellington Independent*, 20 May 1862; *Wellington Spectator*, 5 Jan, 23 Jul 1853; *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Dec 1931; *The Press*, 1 May 1909, 12 Dec 1925. Portrait: Bust by Joseph Durham, R.A., in Colonial Office (replica in Parliament House, Wellington); portrait by E. J. Collins and Richard Ansdell in Provincial Hall, Christchurch.

WAKEFIELD, EDWARD JERNINGHAM (1820-79) was the only son of Edward Gibbon Wakefield (q.v.). Educated at Bruce Castle school, and later at King's College, London, he had considerable experience abroad and acquired a good command of French. His father's fears that an intractable temperament and lack of stability might destroy the prospects that opened out before him were unfortunately fulfilled. At the age of 18 he accompanied his father on Durham's mission to Canada (1838), where he gained experience in a secretarial capacity. Next year the family became interested in the practical colonisation of New Zealand. Jerningham sailed with the small expeditionary party in the *Tory* as secretary to his uncle, William Wakefield (q.v.) and remained in New Zealand until 1844. His diary was published in London in 1844 under the title *Adventw'e in New Zealand*, and is the leading source on the events of that period of New Zealand history. Though interesting it is not fully reliable, revealing an over-bearing temperament which militated against his success in life. In politics and public life his dominating partisanship brought him into conflict with Hobson and FitzRoy, Featherston and the Colonial Office.

Wakefield undertook many important duties on behalf of his uncle (the principal agent of the Company), including the Wanganui purchase and the defence of the Company's claims before Spain's court. In 1845 his father sent him, on behalf of the directors of the New Zealand Company, to enlist the co-operation of Dr S. Hinds (first chaplain to the Archbishop of Dublin) and to the committee of the Otago Association in Edinburgh.

Returning to New Zealand with Godley in the *Lady Nugent* (1850), Wakefield settled in Canterbury. On the promulgation of the new constitution he was elected to represent Christchurch Country district in Parliament (1853-55). He was prominent in the political controversies of the first Parliament and was a member of Forsaith's executive, without portfolio, for three days (Aug-Sep 1854), his other colleagues being Macandrew and Travers. He was defeated in 1855 and again in 1860. In 1857 he was elected to the Wellington Provincial Council (for Wellington City) and became hotly implicated in a contest with Dr Feathers-ton. Neither side would compromise, and a constitutional struggle ensued which caused a deadlock in the affairs of the province. He was a member of the Council till 1861. With Godley, Wakefield edited the letters of his father regarding the Canterbury settlement, published as *The Founders of Canterbury*, 1868. A few years later he represented Christchurch City East in Parliament (1871-75). He proposed himself as candidate in 1875, but was defeated by Moorhouse. He died on 3 Mar 1879. He married (1863) Ellen Roe.

G.B.O.P., 1844/556; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.* (1868); *Wellington P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*, 1857-61; *D.N.B.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1853-55, 1871-75; E. J. Wakefield, *op. cit.*; Sherrin and Wallace; Reeves; Saunders; Gisborne; Godley, *Letters*; Harrop, *Wakefield*; Garnett; Wakelin; Deans; *The Press*, 16 Dec 1909, 12 Dec 1925; *Lyttelton Times*, 21, 24, 28 Dec 1875, 4 Mar 1879. Portrait: Town Hall, Wellington.

WAKEFIELD, FELIX (1807-75) was a son of Edward Wakefield, and brother of Edward Gibbon Wakefield. He was trained as a surveyor and engineer. About 1830 he joined his father in a silk business at Blois, in France, and while there married Marie Felice Eliza Bailley. A year or two later he settled in Tasmania, where he farmed without much success for about 16

years. Returning to England in financial straits, he was assisted by his brother Edward Gibbon, who undertook the education of his family of seven. Careless in money matters, he was appointed in 1849 emigration agent for the Canterbury Association, but his brother, fearing embarrassment as the result of his irresponsible nature, persuaded him to go to New Zealand and bought him a farm on the road from Lyttelton to Christchurch. His notes on surveying and the disposal of waste lands in colonies were edited by his brother and published in London (1849). The first draft was communicated in the form of instructions to Captain Joseph Thomas.

Wakefield sailed for New Zealand in the *Sir George Pollock* (1851). In 1852 he returned to England. Coming again to Canterbury in 1854, he tried to promote a scheme to improve the mouth of the Avon and open up navigation with the plains for vessels of 50 tons. He was a keen horticulturist, and in later years imported red deer and pheasants to Nelson. In 1854 he returned to England with several of his family, volunteered for the war in the Crimea and was employed as a superintendent of army works (with the rank of lieutenant-colonel) making the railway from Balaclava to Sebastopol. After the declaration of peace he visited Syria, Turkey, Russia and Egypt, and returned to New Zealand in 1863. He was secretary to Bradshaw as government agent on the Otago goldfields (1867-70). In 1870 he published *The Gardeners' Chronicle for New Zealand*. Wakefield died on 23 Dec 1875.

EDWARD WAKEFIELD (q.v.) was a son. Another son, OLIVER, became Under-secretary for Mines. He died in Mar 1884.

*D.N.B.*; E. Wakefield, *Stafford*; Harrop, *Wakefield*; O'Connor; Deans; *Lyttelton Times*, 8, 22 Jul, 29 Aug 1854, 24, 27 Dec 1875.

WAKEFIELD, WILLIAM HAYWARD (1803-48) was the fourth son of Edward Wakefield, and brother of Edward Gibbon (q.v.). Born at Burnham Wick, Essex, he was brought up for the most part by his grandmother, Priscilla Wakefield, and educated at Haigh's school at Tottenham. When little more than a youth he was attached to the British embassy at Turin (where Edward Gibbon was also employed). He married (1826) Emily Eliza (d. 1827),

daughter of Sir Philip Charles Sidney, of Penhurst. Wakefield was implicated in the abduction of Miss Turner, and was sentenced to three years' imprisonment, which he served in Lancaster Castle. On being liberated he travelled in Austria, Russia and Lapland, and in 1832 entered the service of Portugal, where he was decorated with the order of the Tower and Sword. He then took service in the British Legion in Spain, gained some distinction and rose to the rank of colonel commanding the 1st Regiment of Lancers under Sir de Lacy Evans. After returning to England he rejoined, and commanded the 3rd Spanish Legion (after the disbandment of the 2nd in 1837). In this corps *d'élite* of cavalry and artillery he again distinguished himself in the operations which resulted in the defeat of the Carlist forces in the Biscay provinces. He received from Queen Isabella the order of San Fernando. Wakefield now found himself out of employment, and returned to England with his future quite obscure. At this juncture the affairs of the New Zealand Company were making rapid progress. The directors had made up their minds to colonise the Port Nicholson district and, failing to obtain the sanction or even the goodwill of the Colonial Office, had decided to hasten their expedition as the surest means of forestalling French activities in New Zealand. Edward Gibbon Wakefield had intended that his younger brother Arthur should command the first ship and settlement, but Arthur had unexpectedly been given a new sea command in the Mediterranean and was not available. The post was therefore offered to William, who accepted. He sailed in the *Tory* from Plymouth on 12 May 1839 to prepare the way for the Company's settlers by making purchases of land from the natives on both sides of Cook Strait and laying out the town of Port Nicholson and the country sections in the neighbourhood. The instructions given to Wakefield were carefully drawn to carry out the colonising principles of Edward Gibbon, and to ensure that the natives should be treated with every consideration and forbearance and their interests fully preserved. The ship's company and others who sailed in the *Tory* numbered 35 all told, and included Edward Jerningham Wakefield, Charles Heaphy (artist), Ernst Dieffenbach (naturalist), Edward Main Chaffers (the master, who had been with

Darwin in the *Beagle*), Dr John Dorset and Nayti, the New Zealander. On 16 Aug the *Tory* entered Queen Charlotte Sound, and four days later, having taken on board Dicky Barrett (q.v.) from Te Awaite, she entered Port Nicholson and anchored off Petone beach, not far from the pa of the Ngati-Awa chief Te Puni. He and Wharepouri spent the night on board.

Having saluted the New Zealand Hag, Wakefield proceeded to negotiate for the purchase of 1,100 acres of town land and 110,000 acres of country land that was required for the settlement. E. J. Wakefield drew up the deed of purchase, which was translated to the Maori sentence by sentence by Barrett. It transferred to the Company a triangle of land enclosed by lines between Sinclair head, Cape Turakirae and the summit of the Tararuas. While this was being transacted, the surveyors examined the harbour and surrounding land. On 30 Sep the sale was celebrated by the hoisting of the New Zealand Hag, which was saluted with 21 guns. Wakefield then sailed in the *Tory* (4 Nov) for Cloudy Bay. At Kapiti island he purchased from Te Rauparaha and other chiefs tracts of land on both sides of the strait. These he named North and South Durham. After visiting Taranaki, he proceeded to Hokianga (where he arrived on 2 Dec) to inspect the property of the New Zealand Company of 1825, which was situated at Herd's point. There he met the Wesleyan missionaries Bumby and Hobbs (q.v.). He took formal possession of the land, and purchased from the supposed widow of Captain Blenkinsopp what purported to be the original conveyance to him by Rauparaha, Rangihaeata and others of the plains of Wairau. The *Tory* struck on a bank in Kaipara harbour, sustaining such damage that she could not be seaworthy again for several weeks. Wakefield therefore walked overland to Bay of Islands and, chartering the brig *Guide*, reached the rendezvous at Port Hardy on 11 Jan 1840, to find that none of the emigrant ships had arrived. He proceeded to Port Nicholson, where the *Cuba* surveying ship was anchored.

On 20 Jan the emigrant ship *Aurora* arrived, followed by the *Oriental* on 31 Jan and the *Duke of Roxburgh* on 7 Feb. Wakefield found that Captain W. M. Smith (q.v.) had laid out the town and settlement along the Petone shore, at the southern end of the Hutt Valley. He

favoured the site at Thorndon, but he conceived that in this matter Smith's opinion should prevail, and work continued at the town of 'Britannia' (as it was called) until events occurred which led to a revision of this decision. On 2 Mar the first meeting took place of the council of colonists, which had been formed before sailing from London, to provide for their self-government pending the establishment of British authority. Wakefield was its first president, Samuel Revans the secretary, and G. S. Evans the umpire or judge. When Evans arrived in the *Adelaide* (7 Mar) the committee was able to function, and steps were at once taken for the inauguration of public works, finance and public institutions. On 30 May, in pursuance of a resolution of the council, Wakefield issued an order calling upon all settlers between the ages of 18 and 60 to present themselves for military training in view of the hostile attitude of some natives in the Hutt valley. While these measures were in train Lieutenant Shortland, the Colonial Secretary, arrived in Port Nicholson with a detachment of soldiers and constables. His first act was to cause the New Zealand Hag on the beach at Petone to be lowered and replaced by the Union Jack. On 4 Jun he hoisted the flag with ceremony at Thorndon, and read the proclamations of British sovereignty. The council automatically went out of existence, and Wakefield and his colleagues formally welcomed the appearance of British authority. Acting on instructions from the Company, Wakefield was anxious to persuade the Governor to establish his capital at Port Nicholson. When this was obviously impossible, he proceeded to Bay of Islands to present his respects to Captain Hobson and deliver up the house which had come out in parts from England in one of the Company's ships. Wakefield resided at Government House, and on his return reported to a public meeting on 19 Aug having been received with cordiality and assurances of co-operation.

While he was away news arrived of the passing by the Legislative Council of New South Wales of an ordinance declaring titles to land in New Zealand null and void until adjudicated upon by land commissioners to be appointed for the purpose, and limiting to 2,560 acres the extent of land that might be granted to any applicant. A deputation sent to Sydney

to interview Governor Gipps obtained from him an undertaking not to disturb the settlers at Port Nicholson, but to endeavour to procure for them confirmation of titles up to 110,000 acres, with the usual reservations for native purposes. The area available about Port Nicholson being inadequate, Wakefield in Jan 1841 sent Carrington to explore Blind Bay and Taranaki. He reported on the latter as the better site for the second settlement. A flood in the Hutt River in 1840 inundated much of the land upon which the town of Britannia stood, and convinced the settlers that they should remove to Thorndon. It is not entirely certain which site Wakefield preferred. By the end of 1840 the town of 'Wellington' was beginning to take shape, the name having been adopted by the directors, at the instance of Edward Gibbon Wakefield, in recognition of the help given by the Duke to the South Australian Association. On 8 Feb the *Brougham* sailed for Taranaki with pioneer settlers for that colony (accompanied by Dicky Barrett). In 1841 Wakefield was gazetted a justice of the peace. With his fellow justices he joined in an address to the Governor congratulating him on the establishment of New Zealand as a separate colony. This document was used as a vehicle for importuning Hobson once more to establish his capital in Wellington, a point upon which he had already made up his mind.

Wakefield was engaged for several years in endeavouring to prove the claims of the Company to the land which he believed he had purchased from the natives. To find room for expansion, he had explorations made in the Manawatu, in the Wairarapa and the South Island, and on the suggestion of Hanson he despatched him to endeavour to purchase land in the Chatham Islands. He took prompt steps on hearing of the affray at the Wairau to protect the settlement at Nelson, and he accompanied the magistrates to the spot where the fatal collision had occurred. The Wellington volunteers having been summoned for duty by the magistrates, the Superintendent of the Southern Division (Major M. Richmond) forbade their assembling. Early in 1844 Wakefield received Governor FitzRoy on his visit to Wellington. Later in the year he sailed in the *Deborah* to investigate the suitability of South Island ports and neighbouring

regions for settlement, in view of the projected New Edinburgh colony. Wakefield occupied for eight years the responsible position of principal agent for the Company in New Zealand, having control over the resident agents at the other settlements as they were established. Surrounded by a growing body of settlers, many of whom were discontented owing to delay in receiving their land, suffering from the counter attractions of the other settlements in turn and constantly harassed by the agitation of his fellow settlers against the government at Auckland, Wakefield steered a sensible middle course, and so avoided being drawn into conflict on occasions when a majority of the settlers was against him. He did, nevertheless, allow himself occasionally to write too freely in his despatches against Government officials and the missionary body, and thus came into conflict with a powerful interest in Great Britain.

Accounts differ as to Wakefield's character. The baffling reserve which is remarked by almost all who encountered him was no doubt a serviceable trait in the awkward situation in which he was placed, having to conciliate settlers, directors, local and home government. Gisborne says: 'No one knew what he really thought and what he really meant to do. His manner was attractive and, in outward appearance, sympathetic, but the inner man was out of sight and hearing.' Wakefield died on 19 Sep 1848, and was buried in the Sydney street cemetery, Wellington.

G.B.O.P., 1840 *et seq.*, 1849/1120; Godley, *Letters*; O'Connor; Garnett; Gisborne; Saunders; N.Z.C. reports and despatches (principal agent to secretary and to resident agents); E. J. Wakefield; Harrop, *Wakefield*; Thomson; 'Vard (p); *Evening Post*, 24 Aug 1929 (p).

WAKELIN, RICHARD (1816-81) was born at Barnical Hall, Warwickshire, and educated in the county. As a young man he tried several occupations, and with an elder brother bought land in Canada. Finding the life unsatisfactory, they sold out and travelled widely in the United States. Wakelin was now a pronounced democrat, and he also at an early age became a devout advocate of temperance. On his return he settled down to journalism in his native county, and after another visit to the United States (1839) opened a bookseller's shop in Coventry. For some time also he edited the

WALES

*Temperance Gazette* at Birmingham. He threw himself with vigor into the Chartist movement and started a paper on radical lines, *The Cause of the People*. To evade press restrictions it was produced in Isle of Man, but the law was hastily amended, and as he could not find the surety of £500 required under the act the publication had to cease.

Wakelin came to New Zealand with his family in the *Eden* (1850) and spent some months visiting New Plymouth and Nelson, eventually reaching Wellington in the schooner *Mary* (Dec). He opened a school at Te Aro, but finding a rival school next door, he wrote letters on education to the *Independent* in the hope of diverting attention to his school. One result was to attract the attention of T. W. McKenzie and the Governor (Grey), who took steps which led to the opening of the Church of England school at Thorndon. In Jun 1851 Wakelin was engaged to report the Legislative Council proceedings for the *Independent*. After the session he became a member of the staff, and on the retirement of Featherston he became editor (May 1852). He was a strong supporter of Grey against the activities of the Constitutional Association, and afterwards of Featherston, with whom he was on terms of close confidence during the political controversies with E. J. Wakefield. About 1859 he became editor of the *New Zealand Advertiser*, and about 1866 he went to Greytown and started the *Waimarapa Journal*. After running this for a short time he became associated with the *Mercury*. In 1870 he established the *New Zealand Mail* for T. W. McKenzie, editing it for some time from his home at Moroa. On the death of A. K. Arnot, Wakelin purchased the *Mercury*, the name of which he changed in 1872 to the *Wairarapa Standard*. This paper he edited until his death, having Joseph Payton as partner for a few years. Wakelin in 1877 published at Wellington his *History of Politics, containing the Political Recollections and Leaves from the Writings of a New Zealand Journalist*, a modest booklet which contains authoritative narratives of certain interesting phases of early Wellington history. He died on 2 Dec 1881.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Wakelin, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Times*, 12 Dec 1881.

WALES, NATHAN M L YOUNG ARMSTRONG (1832-1903), who was born in Northumberland,

WALKER

England, and educated at Jedburgh, Scotland, came to Dunedin from Victoria in 1861. There he became a partner in the architects firm of Mason and Wales. As a public man Wales was member for Dunedin in the House of Representatives (1874-75), had a seat on the Otago harbour board (being for a time chairman), was a member of the Dunedin City Council, and was mayor of the city (1895-96). He was chairman of the Roslyn Tramway Co. Soon after arriving in Dunedin, Wales joined the volunteers, and rose from the ranks to be lieutenant-colonel of militia and honorary colonel of volunteers. In 1895 he was elected an honorary associate in the grand priory of the Order of the Hospital of St John of Jerusalem. He died on 3 Nov 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Nov 1903.

WALKER, ANDREW (1855-1934) was born in Benvick, Scotland, and arrived in Port Chalmers at the age of five. He was educated at the old stone school, Dunedin, under Robert Stout and Alexander Stewart, and at the age of 14 was apprenticed to printing in the *Evening Star* office. He was secretary of the Otago typographical union (1887-88), which he represented at the trades and labour congress in Dunedin (1885). He was president (1889-93), after which he again became secretary. He was president of the Otago trades and labour council (1910-11). Walker was a member of the workers' political committee (1903-05); of the first licensing committee elected in Dunedin on the popular vote, and of the George street school committee. Standing for Labour, he defeated G. M. Thomson for Dunedin North in 1914, but was defeated by E. Kellett in 1919. He was for some years thereafter employed in the Government Printing office. Walker died on 10 Jul 1934.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 11 Jul 1934; Paul, *Trades Unionism; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *The Dominion*, 11 Jul 1934.

WALKER, FREDERICK, who came to Otago in the *Bosworth* (1857), entered into business as a sawmillier. He was afterwards auctioneering in Dunedin. He represented Eastern in the Provincial Council (1860-63) and was on the executive in 1860-62. He died in the late sixties.

WALKER

WALKER, FREDERICK THOMAS, was born in Tasmania in 1827, a son of Thomas Walker, who came to New South Wales before 1821 as deputy assistant commissary-general. He was brought up at Rhodes, Tasmania, and in the early sixties came to Otago and took up land at Omarama. He represented Lindis in the Provincial Council (1863-66), and was a member of the executive. In 1865 he was a member of the civil service commission in Otago. He was a justice of the peace and a fellow of the Royal Society. Walker married (1891) Adela, daughter of Major-general Cumberland (96th Regiment).

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Col. Gent.*, p. 242, ii (xxii).

WALKER, LANCELOT (1829-1907) was a son of Thomas Walker (of the Scots Greys, and Ravensfield Park, Yorkshire), his mother being a daughter of John Claudius Beresford (Lord Mayor of Dublin). He held a commission in the East India Company's army, but resigned as a subaltern several years before the Mutiny. Walker came to New Zealand and was in partnership with Mallock in Heathstock station, Canterbury (1855). He sold his share in 1863 on taking up Four Peaks, Geraldine. He was M.P.C. for Geraldine (1870-71) and represented Akaroa in Parliament (1863-66) and Ashley (1866). In 1885 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was one of the last surviving life members. He was a prominent racing owner and, in partnership with G. G. Stead (racing as 'Mr Frazer'), owned Trump Card and Le Loup. He had a part in importing Traducer. Walker died on 19 May 1907.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1907; *Col. Gent.*; Acland; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.; The Press*, 20 May 1907. Portrait: Parliament House.

WALKER, SAMUEL (1842-80) was born and educated in Dublin. After studying medicine he came to New Zealand. When the Waikato war broke out, he joined the Armed Constabulary as a surgeon, and was present at many actions on both East and West Coast. He served for eight years, and distinguished himself repeatedly by his coolness in attending to the wounded under fire, notably at Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu, Moturoa, Okutu and Otautu (13 Mar 1869). For the last named he received the New Zealand Cross. Walker died at Taupo on 24 Dec 1880.

WALLACE

N.Z. Army records; Gudgeon (p); Cowan.

WALKER, WILLIAM CAMPBELL (1837-1904) was born at Bowlandstow, Midlothian, Scotland, the son of Sir William Stuart Walker (1813-96), chairman of the board of supervision in Edinburgh. He was educated at Glenalmond, Perthshire, at Rugby School and finally at Trinity College, Oxford, where he graduated in 1861, subsequently proceeding M.A. Arriving in Canterbury with his brother (A. J. Walker) by the *Evening Star* (1862), they took up the Mount Possession run in the Ashburton district. He represented Ashburton in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1866-67, 1874-75). He was a member of the first Ashburton county council (1877), and was chairman from that date to 1893. He was 25 years chairman of the Mt Somers road board. In 1884 he won the Ashburton seat in Parliament as a supporter of Vogel, and represented it till 1890, when he was defeated by E. G. Wright. He was called to the Legislative Council in 1892 and was a member until his death (on 5 Jan 1904).

Early in 1896 Walker joined Seddon's executive, and he presently assumed the portfolios of Immigration and Education, which he administered until 1903. He relinquished them to become Speaker of the Legislative Council, a position he held until his death. He was keenly interested in education and was a governor of Canterbury College (1886-97). In 1897 he obtained the passage of a bill separating Canterbury College from the Agricultural College. He was a member of the Ashburton school committee, the A. and P. association, the High board, and the land board (1891-96). In 1901 he was created a C.M.G.

Walker married (1871) Margaret, daughter of Archdeacon Wilson. While living in Wellington he promoted the Canterbury Society of Wellington.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (P), iii; *No 2 P.D.*, 28 Jun 1904; Acland; *No 2. Times*, 17 Oct 1892; *L-ttelson Times and The Press*, 6 Jan 1904.

WALLACE, JAMES, was a property owner in Thorndon (Wellington) in the forties. He represented Wellington Country district in the Provincial Council (1857-60). When the Government declined to construct the Manawatu railway John Plimmer and Wallace canvassed for capital and called public meetings. He was

## WALLACE

secretary and general manager for many years, retiring in 1894.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward (p).

WALLACE, JOHN (1788-1880) was born and educated in Scotland, but moved to England as a young man and lived in Liverpool and Birmingham. In 1841 he brought his family to Taranaki in the *Amelia Thompson*, and spent some months in New Plymouth and Nelson before settling down in Wellington. He was on the burgesses roll in 1843. He had been a fellow of the Society of Arts in Birmingham, was devoted to art and literature, and not without talent of his own in both. He wrote art notices for the Birmingham papers, and painted a good deal, some of his pictures of old New Zealand being well-known. A personal friend of E. G. Wakefield and Dr Featherston on the Settlers' Constitutional Association, Wallace allowed himself to be led into provincial politics, and for the first two years (1853-55) represented one of the city seats. He took a particular interest in education, and was on the education committee. His wife died in 1855, aged 75, and he retired from politics. Some time later he accepted a post in the provincial treasury, of which he had charge when he retired on pension. Wallace died on 16 Mar 1880.

Ward; *Evening Post*, 16 Mar 1880, 14 Nov 1929.

WALLACE, JOHN (1820-85) was born at Kintyre, Scotland, and came to Auckland in 1856 starting farming with his brothers at Mangere. He served on the highway board and the school committee, and was an elder of the Presbyterian church at Otara until joining the Wesleyan denomination. He represented Franklin in the Auckland Provincial Council (1861-65). Wallace died on 25 Nov 1885.

*Parltry ReCOL'd; Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Mar 1886.

WALLACE, JOHN HOWARD (1816-91), the son of John Wallace (q.v.), was born in Liverpool. Shortly afterwards the family removed to Birmingham, where he received his education and his bias towards emigration. He was apprenticed to James Drake, bookseller and law stationer, amongst whose clients were many advocates of political reform. While with Drake, Wallace travelled widely throughout England compiling guide-books of the railways, which

## WALLACE

were then spreading over the face of the country. He made the acquaintance of S. White, representing a Birmingham and Bristol firm, and they decided to emigrate together to New Zealand.

In Jul 1839, Wallace left Drakes, and three months later the two sailed in the *Aurora* for Port Nicholson, where they arrived on 22 Jan 1840. They entered into business on Lambton quay as general merchants. Before long they opened a branch at Nelson, of which White, who had married Wallace's sister, became manager (1842). On the death of White, James Smith married his widow and he in turn joined Wallace as a partner. When Smith retired to return to England, Wallace took his son into partnership. They added auctioneering and a commission agency to the business, which was carried on in Hunter street until Wallace retired in 1885. Although only 23 years of age when he landed in New Zealand, Wallace was a burgess on the roll of 1843, and was at the head of the list of reserve councillors at the town board election (1842). In 1844 he was treasurer of the Mechanics' Institute. Two years later he seconded the motion of thanks to the 58th Regiment for their services at the Hutt, and proposed to ask that the settlers be supplied with arms. In 1848 he married Sarah Ann, daughter of Robert Stanton (London) and widow of A. Benham. A member of the Settlers' Constitutional Association, Wallace helped to draw up the petition asking for representative government. He was active in the demand for education through the Church of England Educational Association and he represented the laity when Bishop Selwyn consecrated St Peter's Church (1858). He was a member of the town board of Wellington (1863-70) and of the City Council later. In 1861 he entered the Provincial Council as a member for the City. He was for eight years chairman of committees, for some time chairman of the library committee, and a strong advocate of the proposed railway to Waikarara. When a railway committee was set up at a public meeting (1867) Wallace was appointed secretary, and he kept the movement alive until the line was provided for. In 1864 he was elected first chairman of the Mungaroa board of highway wardens.

Wallace's most noteworthy interest was New Zealand history. He collaborated with R. A. A.

## WALLACE

Sherrin in the compilation of *Bl'ett's History of New Zealand* (1890) and he published a small manual on the subject. At the jubilee of the settlement in 1890 he received an illuminated address for his work. Wallace died on 9 Jun 1891.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. NZ.*, i (p); Ward (p); Wakelin; *NZ. Times*, 10 Jun 1891; *Evening Post*, 9 Jun 1891, 14 Nov 1929 (p).

WALLACE, WILLIAM VINCENT (1812-65) was born at Waterford, Ireland, the son of William Wallace, bandmaster to the 29th Regiment. At the age of eight he showed aptitude for music and, with the encouragement of his colonel, his father taught him the clarinet and the piano. At the age of 15 Wallace became second violinist at the Theatre Royal, Dublin, under Barton (the teacher of Balfe), and in 1830 he was appointed organist at Thurles cathedral. There he composed a mass *Salutaris* which he used later in his opera *Maritana*. He married Isabella Kelly, of Blackrock, became a Catholic and assumed the name of Vincent. He was now composing freely. In 1835 he visited Australia, but having quarreled with his wife he went into the back country and was employed on sheep stations. He gave very successful concerts in Sydney, travelled widely in New Zealand and on the whaling grounds (1837-41) and in South America and the United States. His musical triumphs continued and when he got to London he planned an opera for which Edward Fitzball gave him the libretto. *Maritana* was first produced at Drury Lane on 15 Nov 1845 and was an immediate success. Thereafter Wallace composed much music of high standard, including fantasias, romances and songs and several operas, notably *Matilda Of Hungary* and *LUI"line* (which, after many vicissitudes, was produced at Covent Garden in 1860). He died on 12 Oct 1865. There seems to be no warrant for the statement frequently made that Wallace composed portion of *Maritana* while in New Zealand.

W. H. Grattan Flood, *William Vincent Wallace, a Memoir* (1912); Arthur Pougin, *W. Vincent Wallace, étude biographique et critique* (1866); J. F. Hogan, *The Irish in Australia* (1888); Cox; Ward; *Otago Witness*, 6 Jan 1866; Mennell; *A Century of Journalism*, p. 576; *NZ. Herald*, 13 Feb 1875.

WALLIS, FREDERICK (1853-1928) was the son of the Rev J. Wallis, vicar of St Andrew's,

## WALLIS

Stockwell, London. He was educated at St Paul's School, London (1864-72) and at Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1876 in the first-class classical tripos and the first-class theological tripos. He won the Evans and Scholefield prizes. Elected a fellow of his College in 1878, he was ordained priest the following year. (M.A. 1879; D.D. 1894). He was curate of St Luke's, Chesterton, Cambridge (1878); dean of Gonville and Caius (1878-91), lecturer in divinity (1878-94), and deputy to the professor of divinity (1891). He was examining chaplain to the Bishop of Salisbury (1886) and senior proctor of the University (1892-93).

Wallis was chosen as Bishop of Wellington in 1895, and consecrated in the pro-Cathedral in Wellington. He was a member of the council of Victoria University College (1898-1905) and a chaplain to the "Wellington Naval volunteers and the 1st battalion the Wellington Rifle Regiment. He did much work in this capacity during the South African war, together with heavy episcopal duty in a rapidly expanding diocese. In 1911 he resigned the see owing to ill-health, and later was archdeacon of Wiltshire (1911-12) and of Sherborne (1916-19). Wallis married (1894) Margaret, daughter of Colonel Williams, M.P. He died on 24 Jun 1928.

*Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; *Crockford*.

WALLIS, JAMES (1809-95) was born at Blackwall, near Poplar, London. As a young man he became a local preacher, and he was received into the Wesleyan ministry in 1833. After spending a year in the Ely circuit, he left for New Zealand in the *Brazil Packet*, arriving at Hokianga on 1 Dec 1834. He assisted to build the mission house at Mangungu, and was attached for some time to the Hokianga station. Whiteley and Woon were sent to establish missions on Kawhia harbour, and Wallis to establish one at Te Horea, Whangaroa. He walked to his station from Kawhia, and lived in a rush hut until he built a dwelling to which his wife could come. At Te Horea he erected the first church in Raglan district. Work had scarcely been commenced when instructions were received from the London committee to leave the field to the Anglicans, and Wallis was removed to Tangiteroria, where he did pioneer work in the Kaipara district. The chiefs insisted on

## WALLIS

the return of their spiritual fathers, and in 1838 Wallis recommenced his work at Whaingaroa, where he remained until 1862. He was very successful with the natives. Absolutely fearless, he once stood between a company of infuriated local natives and some warriors from Waipa, and ultimately established peace. Amongst his converts were Hamiora Ngaropi (of Whatawhata), Wiremu Patene (of Karakiriki), and the great Tainui warrior, Te Awaitaia (q.v.), who later was baptised as Wiremu Naera (William Naylor).

Largely through Te Awaitaia's influence Wallis and Whiteley were able to act as mediators between hostile tribes, to curb the Waikato, to establish peace between them and the Taranaki tribes, and to secure the liberation of slaves. When the 10 chiefs in the Kawhia region signed the Treaty of Waitangi in 1840 their signatures were witnessed by Wallis and Whiteley. Wallis had a constitution that could endure hardships. In Mar 1841 he walked from Raglan to Port Nicholson accompanied by naUves. At Ngamotu he found the first company of New Plymouth settlers and held service with them. Finding Te Heubeu, the chief of Taupo, engaged in warfare near Wanganui, he exerted his influence to restore harmony.

In 1863 Wallis was transferred to European work. He spent three years at Onehunga and two years at Pitt Street Church, Auckland. In 1868 he was superannuated. His wife died on 8 Feb 1893, and his own death occurred on 5 Jul 1895. M.A.R.P.

Buller; Morley (p); W. J. Williams; *N.z. Herald*, 6, 20 Jul 1895.

WALLIS, JAMES (1825-1912) was born in Aberdeenshire and educated at Aberdeen University, where he graduated M.A. (1844). He was a profound Greek scholar. As a clergyman, and later a missionary of the Presbyterian Church, he ministered in Dundee and Aberdeen and at Essequibo and Demerara, in British Guiana. With the object of becoming a medical missionary he passed as a surgeon at Edinburgh (1863), and two years later he began to visit New Zealand as a surgeon in the *Rangitoto* and other vessels. He was for a few years in charge of St David's Church and then, outside of the Presbyterian Church of New Zealand, he built Newton Kirk, where he preached

## WALSH

as an independent for some years. Dissensions arising, he sold his property in 1881 and farmed at Riverhead until 1896, when he moved to Richmond. Standing as an independent, Wallis was M.H.R. for Auckland City West (1877-81). He afterwards supported Grey. He was a strong advocate of woman's suffrage and introduced a bill in 1878. He contested a city seat in 1896.

Wallis married (1862) Elizabeth (d. 1904) daughter of Dr Richard Poole (Edinburgh). He died on 25 May 1912.

*N.z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1912; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); *N.z. Herald*, 27 May 1912. Portrait: Parliament House.

WALPOLE, GEORGE HENRY SOMERSET (1854-1929) was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, and was a tutor until he was ordained. He was successively incumbent of St John's church, Auckland (1882); professor in the general theological seminary in New York (1889), principal of Bede College, Durham (1896); rector of Lambeth (1903); and Bishop of Edinburgh from 1910 till his death on 4 Mar 1929. His son, SIR HUGH SEYMOUR WALPOLE (1884-), the English novelist, was born in Auckland.

*Who's Who; Otago Daily Times*, 20 Apr 1929.

WALSH, ALFRED WILSON (1859-1916) was born at Kyneton, Victoria; came to New Zealand with his parents as a child, and was educated privately in Dunedin, where he acquired a great taste for the countryside and nature. While employed as a draughtsman in the Public Works department, he took lessons in drawing and painting from David Hutton. By sketching assiduously he had achieved a reputation by the age of 27. He was for 20 years from 1886 on the teaching staff of the Christchurch School of Art, and 10 years on the council of the Canterbury Society of Arts. He was an enthusiastic gardener. After his mother's death he retired from the School of Art and, having married a daughter of Mr Justice Conolly, he continued landscape painting, showing a vigorous spontaneity in the handling of his medium. He did most of his work in north Canterbury and Westland. Walsh died on 10 Sep 1916. An exhibition of his work was held at the New Zealand Academy of Fine Arts in Wellington in 1926.

## WALTER

w.s.W. in programme of exhibition *cit.* (p); J. C. Duncan in *Art in New Zealand*, Mar 1929; *The Press*, 13 Sep 1916.

WALTER, EDWARD (1866-1932), who was born in Cornwall, came to New Zealand in 1885. For some years he worked on farms in the Waikato and Hawkes Bay districts, and in 1894 took up land at Douglas, Taranaki. He was a member of the Stratford county council for 16 years and chairman for seven (1925-32); chairman of the Douglas school committee (12 years), and a member of the Stratford hospital board. In 1923 he served on the district revision committee, and in 1925 he defeated R. Masters for the parliamentary seat for Stratford. Defeated in 1928 (by W. J. Polson), Walter died on 30 Jan 1932.

*N.z.P.D.*, 25 Feb 1932; *Who's Who N.Z.* 1924; *Taranaki Herald*, 30 Jan 1932 (p).

WALTON, HENRY, the son of a cotton manufacturer, was born in England, and with his brother came to New Zealand in the early forties. They took up land at Maungatapere, near Whangarei, and supplied trees for the Kaipara timber mills, and established a lime kiln on Limestone island in Whangarei harbour. After much heavy expenditure they succeeded in mining coal at Whangarei. Walton represented Marsden in the Auckland Provincial Council (1865-67), and sat in the Legislative Council (1863-66). In 1867 he returned to England to manage his father's business and he died there in 1896.

*Auckland P.C.*, 1865-67; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1863-66; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii.

WARBRICK, JOSEPH ASTBURY (1862-1903) was born in the Rotorua district, being a son of Abraham Warbrick, native interpreter. Educated at St Stephen's College in Auckland, he learned there to play Rugby football, and at the age of 15 represented Auckland province against Otago, playing as full-back. In 1878 he played for Wellington against Canterbury, Otago and Nelson. In 1880, playing for the same side, he was mainly responsible for the defeat of his native province by potting a goal from near the halfway flag. In 1882 Warbrick returned to Auckland, which he represented in two matches against New South Wales. He played for Auckland for some years, and was chosen in the New Zealand team to tour New South Wales.

## WARBURTON

In 1885 he captained Hawkes Bay against Poverty Bay, and then for a year or two captained Auckland, including the match against New South Wales. In 1888 Warbrick played for Wellington against the English team, and he was one of the organisers of the Native team which toured the United Kingdom, Australia and New Zealand in 1888-89. He then settled down as a farmer in the Bay of Plenty, but continued to play football, representing his province for the last time in 1894.

Warbrick was a member of the Whakatane county council and first chairman of the Rangitaike drainage board, in which he took a great interest. He was an ardent horticulturist. He was killed in an eruption of Waimangu geyser on 30 Aug 1903.

*N.Z. Rugby Annual*, 1920; *N.z. Herald*, 1 Sep 1903.

WARBURTON, JAMES KEMMIS (1842-1923) was born at Nelson, the son of Thomas Kemmis Warburton, who represented Wellington City in the Wellington Provincial Council (1857-61). He received some of his primary education in Wellington and then went to England, returning to the Colony in 1862. As a young man he was a successful athlete and a notable swimmer. Having a brother at Gabriel's Gully, he also went to the goldfields, joined the post office at Wetherstones and eventually became chief counter clerk in Dunedin. He was afterwards Panama mail clerk at Wellington, secretary to George Gray, the head of the department, and officer in charge of the post office savings bank and money order department, in which he initiated a new system of accounts. In 1891 he was commissioned by Ballance to reorganise the Public Trust office, then under criticism, and in later years he was called in to advise the British Government in the initiation of its public trust office. Perhaps the most important achievement of his career was the administration of the West Coast native reserves and the legislation connected with it, which materially assisted to unravel the difficulties in native titles resulting from the Te Whiti movement. Warburton submitted to Ballance (shortly before his death) a scheme of advances to settlers. This was later adopted by the Liberal Government, which entrusted to him the management of the new department (in con-

junction with the superintendence of the Public Trust). In 1896 he succeeded J. E. FitzGerald as Controller and Auditor-general, a position which he held to 1910. Warburton died unmarried on 30 Jun 1923.

*N.z. Times*, 2 Jul 1923; *App. H.R.*, *pass.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p).

WARD, CHARLES DUDLEY ROBERT (1827-1913) was born at Gilston Park, Hertfordshire, the eldest son of Sir Henry George Ward, who became governor of Madras. He was educated at Rugby and at Wadham College, Oxford, called to the bar at the Inner Temple in 1853, and in 1854 emigrated to New Zealand. In the following year he was elected member for the Wellington County district in the House of Representatives (retired 1858), and in 1857 was appointed chairman of the courts of sessions of the peace for Wellington, and presiding judge of the magistrate's courts for Hawkes Bay, Wairarapa and Wanganui. Subsequently he was appointed resident magistrate for Wellington (1864); district judge for Wellington, Wanganui, Marlborough and Hawkes Bay (1866); acting Supreme Court judge at Dunedin (1868); district judge for Westland, Southland and Otago (1869), and acting Supreme Court judge at Auckland (1886), Christchurch (1887), and Dunedin (1894). Ward declined a permanent appointment on the Supreme Court bench in 1896. He retired in 1906, and served for a time as chairman of the railway board of appeal. His death occurred on 30 Aug 1913.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Sep 1913, 2 May 1914.

WARD, CROSBIE (1832-67) was the third son of the Hon and Rev Henry Ward, rector of Killinchy, county Down, Ireland. He was educated at the College School at Castletown, Isle of Man, and then at Trinity College, Dublin. When he was 18 years of age three of his brothers—Edward Robert, Henry, and John Hamilton—joined the Canterbury Association in London (1850). The first-named was secretary of the Society of Canterbury Colonists. They sailed with FitzGerald in the *Charlotte Jane*, and arrived in Lyttelton in Dec. Edward Robert was plainly designated for leadership, and Grey appointed him to the commission of the peace within two months of his landing.

The Ward brothers selected their land on

Quail Island, in Lyttelton harbour. There they built their house and a yawl, the *Lass of Erin*, with which to keep in communication with Lyttelton. In Jun 1851, while returning from Governor's Bay with a load of wood, Edward Robert and Henry were drowned. On receipt of the news in Ireland it was decided that Crosbie should come out to wind up the affairs of his brothers, and he arrived in the *Stag* on 17 May 1852. Crosbie spent three years farming on Quail Island with his brother (John Hamilton), and became so interested in the affairs of the settlement that he could not refrain from taking part in them. When a vacancy occurred in the Provincial Council for Akaroa (1855) he was duly elected (with Moorhouse as colleague). Later in the year he stood for Parliament in the Country Districts, but was defeated. In Jul 1856 Ward joined the staff of the *Lyttelton Times*, where he showed great energy in the management. He lost his seat in the Provincial Council at the general elections of 1857 by being too late for nomination for Lyttelton. In 1858, when the controversy of the land regulations came to a head, Ward wrote for his paper the verses now celebrated as *The Song of the Squatters*, narrating the descent of the squatting interest upon the Provincial Council to influence its legislation. In May 1858 he was elected, without opposition, to represent Lyttelton in Parliament, and a few months later the same constituency returned him to the Provincial Council, thereby endorsing Moorhouse's tunnel project. He was re-elected in 1860.

Ward's progress to the front rank in provincial and colonial politics was immediate. Gisborne says: 'He was a young man of great public promise. Had his life and health been spared he would assuredly have attained the highest political position in the colony; his qualities were admirably fitted for the purpose. He was intelligent, well educated, energetic, and persevering. He had a rare combination of perceptive and reflective faculties, and a remarkable power of attracting support and of conciliating opposition. He took at once in the House of Representatives a leading position.' Alfred Cox says: 'In his grasp of finance there were few men in our colonial Parliament who came near him. He spoke on all questions, political as well as financial, with a

fluency and force that has seldom been surpassed in the Parliament of New Zealand.' Ward's rich Irish endowment marked him out for rapid distinction; and no young man could more rapidly have moved to the van. At 26 he entered Parliament. At 29 he joined the Fox government as Postmaster-general and Secretary for Lands (really to represent the interests of the South Island). He tried on his own responsibility to get the stamp duties restricted to the North Island, but only rallied 15 members to his support. Fox in 1862 requested him to visit Hawkes Bay to compose a dispute between the settlers and the natives; and the tact by which he achieved success fully justified the experiment. He was one of the strongest advocates of a fast mail service between Australia, New Zealand and Great Britain, and as Postmaster-general promoted the scheme. Domett as Premier kept Ward on as Postmaster-general, and early in 1863 sent him to England to endeavour to make the necessary arrangements. Ward took a bold line and succeeded in making contracts for a service by way of Panama. While in England also he entered into important negotiations with the British Government regarding the cost of the Imperial troops in the Colony. His letter to Lord Lyttelton attracted much attention. Returning to New Zealand early in 1864, Ward found his government out of office and a Fox-Whitaker combination in its place. For some time there was a danger that the contracts would not be approved, but eventually Parliament endorsed them.

When Weld offered him a seat in his ministry (1864), Ward felt that his views had diverged too far from those of Weld as regards the relations of the two Islands, and he remained a private member. In 1866 he was elected for Avon. He was at that time involved in the superintendency contest between Moorhouse and Lance. The fight almost resolved itself into a duel between Ward and FitzGerald, fought in the columns of the two Christchurch papers. FitzGerald was a brilliant writer and a political dogmatist. Ward delighted to dazzle and annoy his opponents by occasional contributions and political squibs. He is also said to have been responsible for most of the witty sketches which graced the pages of *Canterbury Puff*.

Early in 1867 Ward accepted the post of agent in London for the province of Canterbury. Before leaving, he accompanied Hall to attend the postal conference in Melbourne. In London he was immediately immersed in work, and succeeded in selling £150,000 of debentures on behalf of the province. He set no limits to his efforts, and his energy hastened his death, which occurred on 25 Dec 1867. His widow (who was a daughter of James Townsend, Rangiora) afterwards married George J. Cooke, (London).

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *N.z.P.D.*, 26 Jul 1866; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Cox; Godley, *Lettel's*; Gisborne; Saunders; Edward R. Ward, diary in *The Press*, 24 Jan-28 Feb 1925; *Canterbury Times*, 15 Jan, 28 Dec 1868; *Lyttelton Times*, 29 Apr 1867, 16 Sep 1881; G. H. Scholefield in *The Press*, 14 Jun 1930 (p).

WARD, JOSEPH (1817-92) was born in Staffordshire. A surveyor by profession, he came to Nelson in the *George Fyfe* (1842), and with his brother-in-law (Cyrus Goulter) was employed by the New Zealand Company, and later by the Nelson provincial government, laying off a part of the Wairau block for agricultural purposes. He also surveyed pastoral runs in Marlborough and the town and district of Kaikoura. Ward took up a large block of country on the Clarence river, which he named the Warden run and afterwards increased by the addition of the Tytler run. At one time he was running more than 50,000 sheep, but the ravages of scab and rabbits compelled him to surrender a portion and in his later years he devoted his attention to the Blythfield and Brookby estates. He saw much adventure and hardship in the early days of Marlborough. To gain access to his property he developed the track by Ward's pass (which he discovered).

His interest in the welfare of the whole district never flagged; and no member of the Provincial Council did better service in the stormy days of Marlborough politics. From 1853-57 he represented Wairau in the Nelson Council. Marlborough being established as a separate province, he was a member of that Council throughout (representing Flaxbourne and Clarence 1860-62, Clarence 1862-69, and Wairau valley 1869-75). He was a member of the executive in 1860, 1862 and 1867-69 and was deputy-superintendent in 1867. In 1875

(when Seymour left on a VISIt to England) Ward agreed to stand for the Wairau seat in Parliament and defeated Moorhouse. What he saw of general politics in the session of 1875, when the battle of the provinces was being fought out, sufficed to disillusion him. He stood for re-election, but was defeated by Henry Dodson, and resisted all future overtures to re-enter the colonial sphere. He was a justice of the peace and did duty as such for many years and on many local boards. A Roman Catholic by religion, he was a faithful supporter of the church in his province. "Ward died on 12 Nov 1892.

*Nelson and Marlborough P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; Redwood; Cycl. N.Z., v (p); Buick, Marlborough (p); Marlborough Express, 13 Nov 1892.*

WARD, SIR JOSEPH GEORGE (1856-1930) was born at Emerald Hill, Melbourne, on 26 Apr 1856, the son of William Thomas Ward, a merchant. His parents coming to New Zealand when he was three, he attended the Bluff school to the age of 13, when he joined the post and telegraph service as a messenger. He left this for a merchant's office, and at the age of 20 joined the railway service. Next year, with very small capital, he started in business on his own account as a grain merchant. Being successful in his earliest operations, he soon had a flourishing connection in the export of grain to Australia, where he established agencies.

Though closely engaged in what was one of the largest businesses of its kind in the Colony, Ward found time to enter public life. He was elected in 1878 to the Campbelltown borough council, of which he was a member till 1897, including five years as mayor (1881-85) and another term as mayor in his final year (1896-97). He was a member of the Bluff harbour board from 1881-97. He resigned for political reasons, but was at once re-elected and remained on the board for many years. He was chairman (1883-88 and 1893-94). As a member of the Invercargill chamber of commerce, Ward did valuable service for his district by insisting that large steamers could load and discharge at the Bluff and that Southland cargo need not go to and from Port Chalmers as hitherto. This was clearly demonstrated by the first visit of the steamer *Triumph*, which went through the whole operation of discharging and loading at

Bluff and clearing thence for London.

In 1890 Ward made his first effort to enter national politics, and succeeded in winning the Awarua seat against J. W. Bain and G. Froggatt. In the two succeeding elections he was unopposed and he retained the seat continuously, though often against opposition, until 1919. His administrative ability was at once recognised by John Ballance, who in Feb 1891, despite his lack of parliamentary experience, invited him to accept office as Postmaster-general. His flair for business was soon evident in the management of this important department, which he continued under the leadership of Ballance and Seddon until the middle of 1896. He attended the postal conferences in Sydney (1892), Brisbane (1893), Wellington (1894) and Hobart (1895). Inspired by the advanced proposals of Henniker Heaton, he consistently advocated the cheapening of postal and telegraphic communications, and during his many years in control of the department in New Zealand he lost no opportunity of furthering this object. In Seddon's cabinet he assumed at the outset the office of Colonial Treasurer and Commissioner of Customs, and in the second year he took also the department of Marine and the new department of Industries and Commerce. While in Australia in 1894, Ward had an opportunity of observing the effects of the banking crisis, and he came to the conclusion that if the Government had assisted the banks which were in difficulty the collapse would possibly have been avoided and would certainly have been less severe. When signs of a similar crisis appeared in New Zealand he warmly advocated state intervention and threw his whole influence into the legislation which in one day saved the Bank of New Zealand from failure and made it a semi-state institution for the future. His second budget speech (in 1894) was a noteworthy, and at that time somewhat alarming, outline of his financial policy. He proposed to raise loans amounting to £5,000,000 for public works and the purchase of native lands, and to assist farmers by making capital available to them for improvements at low rates of interest. He proposed the creation of consols in New Zealand, and amazed his critics by proceeding to England and raising the necessary money at the unprecedentedly low rate of 3 per cent. The State Advances office, estab-

lished by Ward in 1894, was destined to be one of the most beneficent departments of state, and was never seriously challenged. In 1895 he carried through a customs bill, not without some difficulty, and he was also responsible for the passing of measures providing for grants to farmers and to fruitgrowers.

The political life so happily entered upon by the brilliant young administrator was destined to be interrupted in circumstances which might have been fatal to the future of less able or less optimistic men. The business of the J. G. Ward Farmers' Association, of which he was managing director, had grown beyond the stage at which a minister of the crown administering several important departments could hope to exercise adequate control of it. In 1897 the company failed, and Ward himself was seriously embarrassed, thereby vacating his seat in Parliament and having to withdraw from the ministry. Within a month of his seat becoming vacant, he was re-elected (13 Aug 1897), and the court held that he was now legally entitled to sit in Parliament. Ward's affairs recovered in a surprisingly short time, and he rejoined the ministry as Colonial Secretary and Minister of Trade and Customs (Dec 1899) and in Jan 1900 took charge of Railways. He threw himself with his accustomed ardour and efficiency into the administration of his departments, and revived his schemes for cheapening and improving empire communications. On 1 Jan 1901 universal penny postage was inaugurated in New Zealand, and Ward received the honour of K.C.M.G. in recognition of his work. He consistently urged the establishment of penny postage throughout the Empire, the inauguration of an all-red cable service across the Pacific (which was opened in 1902) and an all-red mail service. At the postal conference in Rome in 1906 he again put forward these views, and within a few years most of them materialised. In 1901 Ward passed the bill establishing the first department of Public Health in the world, and he became minister. Amongst other measures which he got through Parliament during these years were an act to establish a State Fire Insurance department, in order to keep down charges, and a public service superannuation scheme (which was applied first in 1902 to his own department of Railways). Though Seddon retained control of the Treasury till his death the rehabilitation of his

talented lieutenant was complete, and he was regarded as the inevitable successor to the leadership of the Liberal party. As early as 1902, when the Prime Minister attended the coronation of King Edward VII, Ward assumed the position of acting-Prime Minister. He was actually out of the country, attending the postal conference at Rome, when Seddon's death occurred (10 Jun 1906), and it was not till 6 Aug 1906 that he assumed office as Prime Minister, Minister of Finance, Postmaster-general and Minister of Defence.

Ward's cabinet a few weeks after he took office consisted of Hall-Jones (who had been Prime Minister temporarily, as Minister of Public Works and Railways); James Carroll (Native Minister), James McGowan (Justice, Mines, Immigration and Industries and Commerce), Albert Pitt (Attorney-general, Colonial Secretary and Minister of Defence), J. A. Millar (Labour, Customs and Marine), R. McNab (Lands and Agriculture) and G. Fowlds (Education and Public Health). On the death of Pitt shortly afterwards Ward assumed the portfolio of Defence, and John G. Findlay came into the cabinet as Attorney-general and Minister of Internal Affairs, with a seat in the Legislative Council. With such a team, and enjoying the unprecedented majority which Seddon had won at the general election a few months earlier, Ward was able, if he desired, to carry out his policy with little likelihood of being opposed. The first years of his premiership were marked by a succession of useful measures in furtherance of the Liberal programme of the nineties. Nevertheless, though the opposition at the moment was so weak, he shrank from a test of strength on the question of the freehold tenure. McNab did indeed bring in a bill to extend the leasehold, and it was well received on its second reading, but was then dropped. In 1907 Ward once more went to London, to attend the Imperial Conference (which opened on 15 Apr 1907). He was made a Privy Councillor, and on his return six months later he announced that the style and designation of New Zealand had been changed from 'Colony' to 'Dominion.' This was effected by royal proclamation of 10 Sep 1907 and involved certain consequential changes, such as the designation of 'M.H.R.' being changed to 'M.P.', 'Colonial Treasurer' to 'Minister of Finance' and 'Col-

onial Secretary' to 'Minister of Internal Affairs.'

An act was passed in 1907 increasing the graduated land tax, and another abolishing the lease-in-perpetuity in favour of the renewable lease with revaluation. In 1910 Ward established the national provident fund, to encourage the making of provision for sickness and old age and inalienable life annuities, and passed a workers' dwelling act; and in 1911 he passed a widows' pensions act. In the realm of finance he created a public debt extinction fund (1910), which envisaged the amortisation of the national debt in 75 years, and in the same year he passed the first act to combat commercial trusts and monopolies in trade and commerce. Ward was a firm Imperialist and an advocate of a strong navy. He had been a volunteer and captain of the Bluff Naval Artillery, and was always interested in defence. In 1908 he increased to £100,000 the yearly contribution of New Zealand to the cost of the Imperial Navy, and early in 1909, without consulting Parliament, he offered on behalf of New Zealand to pay for one-and if necessary two-battleships to strengthen the British Navy, as a reply to German expansion. Moreover, as the culmination of a long popular agitation, he passed the defence act, which provided for the compulsory military training of young men. In 1910 Lord Kitchener visited the Dominion to report on its part in Imperial defence and Ward's Government wholeheartedly co-operated in this direction, taking the first steps towards the system which enabled New Zealand to send an efficient expeditionary force abroad a few years later.

The Prime Minister again left the Dominion in 1911 to attend an Imperial Conference and the coronation of King George V. Accompanied on this occasion by his Attorney-general (Findlay), who conceived and prepared many of his proposals, Ward on this occasion sponsored 17 out of 36 important motions proposed at the conference. His proposal to establish an Imperial council of state comprising representatives of all the dominions and self-governing colonies was not favourably received. It was expounded somewhat precipitately, and apparently without adequate study on Ward's own part, and the Conference found no difficulty in indicating that the scheme went too far. It was accordingly withdrawn. Many of Ward's pro-

posals were, however, destined to come to fruition in his own lifetime. The reorganisation of the colonial secretariat, the interchange of civil servants, the Imperial court of appeal, the state-owned all-red cable service and mail route, and the abolition of double income tax, all made some progress towards acceptance. The Declaration of London was adopted on his motion. During this visit to Great Britain H.M.S. *New Zealand* was launched by Lady Ward, and the Prime Minister received a baronetcy, the freedom of the cities of Edinburgh, London, Bristol, Manchester and Glasgow, and the honorary doctorate of the universities of Edinburgh, Glasgow, Birmingham, Cambridge and Trinity College, Dublin.

Ward returned to the Dominion to face a general election in which it was evident that the long supremacy of the Liberal party in the country was waning, and that the agrarian interest, which had been steadily organising the country through the New Zealand Farmers' Union and in politics under the leadership of W. F. Massey, was now in a position to challenge the long-lived Liberal administration. The elections resulted in the two parties being equal. When Parliament met (on 15 Feb 1912) it was obvious that Ward could not hope to carry on. A no-confidence motion moved by Massey resulted in a tie, 39 votes on each side, and the Government remained in power by the vote of the Speaker (Guinness), cast conventionally in its favour. Ward's motion to adjourn was defeated by 40 to 38. Believing that the discontent expressed at the elections was directed against the personnel of the Ministry rather than against its policy, Ward advised the Governor (Lord Islington) to send for Sir Thomas Mackenzie, who formed a cabinet of ten untried ministers from the Liberal side of the House and took office on 28 Mar. When Parliament met at the normal time Mackenzie was immediately defeated, and Massey formed a conservative ministry (10 Jul 1912).

During the rest of that Parliament Ward led the Liberal opposition. On the outbreak of war in 1914 there was no difference of opinion as to New Zealand's duty in the crisis. The defence policy of Ward had in a large measure made possible the war co-operation which New Zealand voluntarily undertook. The general election (on 20 Nov 1914) resulted in a posi-

tion almost of stalemate so far as party politics were concerned. Massey returned from the country with 40 followers; the Liberal party numbered 34; and the Labour party, which had consolidated itself in the bitter industrial strikes of 1913, appeared on the floor of the House with a following of six members, who were not unwilling to vote with the Liberals against the Government. As the difficulties of the war deepened Massey proposed the formation of a National government. Labour held aloof, but on 12 Aug 1915 Massey took office with his National ministry, in which Ward was deputy Prime Minister, Minister of Finance and Postmaster-general. In that capacity he gave wholehearted service in financing the war operations of New Zealand. He raised war loans amounting to £80,000,000 (of which £55,000,000 was raised within New Zealand) and went out of office eventually leaving accumulated surpluses of £15,000,000. He accompanied the Prime Minister to several war cabinets and conferences in London, and on a visit to the western front. When the victory of the allies was complete, Ward and Massey differed as to the methods to be adopted in settling returned soldiers on the land. The breach grew wider during Massey's absence at the Peace Conference, and on 21 Aug 1919 the National ministry came to an end. The elections at the end of the year resulted in a decisive victory for Massey, who for the first time in his political career found himself in command of a majority independent of all combinations. The state of the House was: Reform, 44; Liberal, 18; Labour, 8; Independent Labour, 3; other Independents, 7. Ward suffered his first personal defeat at an election, J. R. Hamilton winning the Awarua seat by 3,164 votes to 2,407.

Four years later, on the death of Herries, he attempted to win the Tauranga seat, but was defeated by C. E. Macmillan (by 4,360 votes to 3,235). At the following general election (1925) he won the Invercargill seat, defeating Hargest and P. W. Hickey. In that Parliament the Liberals assumed the title of 'Nationalists' and Ward remained aloof, sitting as the solitary Liberal in the House. He was absent from the Dominion when the Liberal party assumed its new name of 'United' (1928). On his return he was offered the leadership and accepted. The elections resulted again in a stalemate as far

as the two main parties were concerned, but the rise of the third party was now the deciding factor. The state of the House was: Reform, 28; United, 28; Labour, 19; Independent, 5.

When Parliament met Labour voted with the United party to put Reform out of office, and on 10 Dec Ward again took office as Prime Minister. In his ministry of 13 members only one besides himself had any ministerial experience, and four were even without parliamentary experience. He himself was Prime Minister and Minister of Finance, with G. W. Forbes as deputy-leader and Minister of Lands and Agriculture. The other members of the cabinet were: T. M. Wilford (Justice and Defence), A. T. Ngata (Native Affairs), H. Atmore (Education), W. A. Veitch (Labour and Mines), E. A. Ransom (Public Works), W. B. Taverner (Railways and Customs), J. B. Donald (Postmaster-general), P. A. de la Perrelle (Internal Affairs), J. G. Cobbe (Marine, Industries and Commerce and Immigration), A. J. Stallworthy (Health), and T. K. Sidey (Attorney-general). Though obviously in ill-health, Ward entered boldly upon his policy and had a triumphal reception in the country, which was then suffering in the deepening depression. He at once made money available to the Advances to Settlers office to overtake arrears of applications. He stopped the railway construction work at Palmerston North and on the Taupo-Rotorua line and resumed that on the South Island main trunk and the Napier-Gisborne lines; he wrote down the capital of the railways by £8,000,000; converted maturing loans amounting to £19,000,000 at 4 per cent, and raised a new loan of £7,000,000, of which he devoted £5,000,000 to the settlement of idle lands; established a department of transport, and increased the tax on land. These measures did not suffice, however, to alleviate the distress caused by unemployment, and before many months had elapsed the Labour party, by whose co-operation Ward was able to keep in office, became restive. Ward's health had deteriorated so much that he was compelled (on 15 May 1930) to resign the premiership, and on 28 May Forbes took office as Prime Minister, with practically the same colleagues, and with Ward as member of the executive without portfolio. On 1 Jan 1930 Ward was created a G.C.M.G. His death occurred on 8 Jul 1930. Ward mar-

## WARD

ried in 1883 Theresa Dorothea (C.B.E. 1918), daughter of Henry Joseph de Smidt. She died on 7 Feb 1927.

Ward was a fine departmental administrator, and left the impress of his efficient methods on every department he controlled. Pleasing, genial and courteous in his personal relations, he was a good parliamentarian, but lacked the personal qualities required for continued political popularity. He was eminently progressive, with a flair for figures, great vision and inveterate buoyancy. His enterprise in matters of finance frequently laid him open to criticism, which was often belied by the success of his legislation. No statesman since Vogel had such justification in the outcome of his visions.

A son, VINCENT AUBREY WARD (1888-) succeeded his father as member for Invercargill (1930-31). He was called to the Legislative Council in 1934.

*N.Z.P.D., pass.; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Aust. Rev. of Rev.*, Mar 1907; *Kelly's Peerage*; *Gisborne*; *Stewart and Rossignol*; *Reeves*; *Condiffe*; *Scholefield, N.Z. Evol.*; R. A. Loughnan, *Biography of Sir Joseph Ward* (1929); *Otago Daily Times*, 9 Jul 1930.

WARD, JOSEPH THOMAS (1862-1927) was born in London, his father being a wine and spirit merchant. Belonging to an old Catholic family in Staffordshire and Yorkshire, he was in early youth an altar boy to Cardinal Newman, and was preparing for the priesthood when scientific curiosity diverted him. He went to sea, where he first acquired a taste for astronomy. In 1879 he came to New Zealand, and was employed on sheep stations in Marlborough. He settled in Wanganui in 1896, opening a bookshop in Victoria avenue which became a rendezvous of intellectual and scientific students. He had a profound knowledge of astronomy and contributed to the journal of the British Astronomical Society his discoveries and theories concerning Mars. He was also interested in double stars, a list of which he forwarded to the Lick Observatory, California. Ward founded the Wanganui astronomical observatory in 1906, and was its honorary director until his death. He made many instruments for this and other observatories. The French Astronomical Society accepted and published his observations on a transit of Venus.

A warm champion of intellectual freedom,

## WARD

Ward was one of the 25 honorary associates of the Rationalist Press association. A great thinker, a man of *wide* tolerance and a practical humanitarian, he had also a distinct literary gift, and wrote verse of good quality. He delivered the Cawthron lecture in 1926. He died on 4 Jan 1927.

L. J. B. Chapple (information); *Wanganui Herald and Chronicle*, 5 Jan 1927.

WARD, ROBERT (1816-76) was born at Sporle, Norfolk. He was a very studious boy, and at the age of 15 was converted. He joined the Primitive Methodist Church, took part in prayer meetings and became a local preacher. Ordained in Mar 1835, he spent nine years in circuit duty in Norfolk. He married (1839) Emily Brndell. In 1844 he was designated by the connection for mission work and appointed to Australia, his destination being changed later to New Zealand. He sailed by the *Raymond* (3 May 1844) and arrived at New Plymouth on 29 Aug. Ward was a very able preacher, a passionate evangelist, a careful student and a keen observer. In 1844 he opened a small church at Henui and established a day school for native children. He visited several neighbouring pas. but owing to the settlers having asked for his services he could not minister to the Maori. In 1847 he visited Wellington to open a church for the Rev H. Green. Three years later, on being summoned to Auckland to open a cause there, he sailed as far as Kawhia in a schooner and, after worshipping with Whiteley, completed the journey overland on foot. In Auckland he opened the first Primitive Methodist Church (16 Mar 1851). He spent nine years there and returned to New Plymouth (1859) to find native affairs very troubled. He saw a good deal of the fighting, in which two of his sons served as volunteers. In 1868 Ward moved to Wellington where he opened churches in Webb street and Sydney street. In 1871 he revisited England, returning with a reinforcement of seven clergymen. He established a'cause at Christchurch (1871), the church being opened in 1873.

Ward was the pioneer of Primitive Methodism in New Zealand, having opened causes in New Plymouth (1844), Auckland (1858), and Wellington (1847). He died at Wellington on 13 Oct 1876. Three of his seven sons became

## WARDELL

Methodist ministers (DR FREDERICK WARD, afterwards editor of the *Sydney Morning Herald*; REV C. E. WARD and REV JOSIAH WARD). Another, ROBERT, was a judge of the native land court, and his son, ROBERT PERCY WARD (1868-1936) was Under-secretary for Justice. Ward's publications included *Lectures from New Zealand Addressed to Young Men* (1862) and *Life among the Maoris of New Zealand* (1872).

'Vells; Selfern; Morley; information from Rev M. A. R. Pratt. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

WARDELL, HERBERT SAMUEL (1830-1912), born in London, was educated privately. Mter working in the office of a civil engineer and surveyor, he took up the study of art, and gained a Somerset House scholarship. He exhibited sculpture at the Exhibition of 1851 and for a number of years at the Royal Academy. Arriving at Auckland in 1855 by the *Merchantman*, he was appointed resident magistrate for the East Coast of the North Island (1855). He was subsequently appointed to the Wellington district (1860); to Wairarapa (1863), and again to Wellington (1884-88). In 1861 he was appointed a commissioner of native reserves and district judge. Retiring on pension in 1888, Wardell served on the Stoke industrial school COID.IIISSION (1890), the police commission (1898), the native schools trust land commission (1905), and the North Island representation commission (1908). He was a founder and first president of the Wellington home for the aged needy, and president of the New Zealand Academy of Fine Arts, and of the Wairarapa Racing club. He married (1853) Harriet (d. 1887), daughter of Samuel Thome, of Staines, England, and in 1890 Lucy Caroline, widow of John Sheehan (q.v.). He died on 6 May 1912.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 7 May 1912.

WARREN, JOHN (1814-83) was born in Norfolk, England. For a few years he followed farming pursuits. Converted in early life, he joined the Wesleyan church at the age of 17, and later became a local preacher. In 1836 he was accepted on probation for the ministry and was appointed to Ipswich circuit. He was designated by the missionary committee for work in New Zealand, and sailed in the ship *James* with Bumby, Ironside, Creed and others on 20

## TEWARU

Sep 1838. They "reached Hobart on 31. Jan 1839. Warren was left in Tasmania for temporary service, bUt reached New Zealand in Jan 1840. A fortnight after his arrival he accompanied Ironside and the Hokianga chiefs to Waitangi to confer with Captain Hobson and he was present at the signing of the Treaty there, and later at Mangungu. After studying the Maori language for some months at Mangungu, hé was appointed to open a mission at Waima, at the request of the chief Mohi Tawhai. There Mrs Warren planted an acorn she had brought from England. It is now known as the 'Waima Oak,' and is probably the oldest and the largest in New Zealand, its spreading branches having a circumference of 300 feet. Warren worked zealously for 16 years among the native population. His influence did much to secure the manumission of Maori slaves.

For health reasons and the education of his children he was then transferred to the European work. In 1855 he was appointed to Nelson; and in 1860 he became superintendent of the Wellington circuit. In 1865 he became a colleague of the Rev T. BuddIe in Auckland, and assisted materially in carrying through the scheme for the building of Pitt Street church. In 1866 he was appointed to Manukau and mainly by his efforts the church was built at Onehunga. He was superannuated in 1869. He died on 24.Nov 1883 greatly esteemed as an able preacher, a capable administrator and a sincere philanthropist. M.A.R.P.

Morley; *NZ. Herald*, 26 Nov 1883; G. Smales in *NZ. Herald*, 6 Jan 1894.

TE WARD, a chief of Ngai-te-Rangi, lived at Mercury Bay. He killed the niece of Te Morenga, who had been carried off by the *Venus* (1806). When in 1820 Te Morenga went to Matakana in search of utu, Te Warn hurled defiance at him. They fought next day. Te Warn having delivered the first volley with spears, Te Morenga's muskets killed many of his people and the others fled. Te Warn hid in the bush and as he still showed defiance, the Ngapuhi chiefs insisted on chastening him when he renewed the attack. The Ngai-te-Rangi were defeated with great slaughter; their canoes and 200 prisoners being taken back to Bay of Islands (where they arrived on 2 Mar 1820). Before they left Te Warn submitted, and Te

## TEWARU

Morenga gave him a musket as a peace offering. Another account of the peace with Ngapuhi says that about 1818, when Ngapuhi were assaulting Matuaaewe pa at Tauranga, Te Waru ventured out during the midday siesta and reconnoitred the enemy position and captured Te Morenga, whom he took into the pa and then liberated. This incident led to a peace being concluded. Te Waru in 1821-22 refused to join Te Rauparaha's expeditions to the south. He was killed at the second siege of Te Pakake, Hawkes Bay, whither he went to avenge the death of his brother Te Umu Kohukohu at the siege of 1824.

S. P. Smith, *Maori Wars.*, J. A. Wilson, *Life of Te Waharoa.*

TE WARU TAMATEA, or KURU, one of Te Kooti's lieutenants, was a sub-chief of Ngati-Maru, his hapu being Ngati-Whaoa, of Paeroa. At the fall of Te Pakake (1824) his uncle Te Umu-Kohukohu, a principal chief of Ngai-te-Rangi (Tauranga) was killed. In avenging him Te Waru found his way to Wairoa and remained there. He was a man of fine qualities, an outstanding type of the old Maori warrior. When war broke out in Waikato Te Waru sided with the King natives and with his Ngati-Kahungunu contingent he played an important part in the defence of Orakau (Mar-Apr 1864). With his brother Reihana, or Horotiu, and his cousin Tipene, Te Waru made his escape to Puniu, but the whole taua was lost, and he returned to Wairoa with diminished mana. Nevertheless the glamour of having fought against the soldiers served him well. When the Hauhau rising broke out in 1865, Te Waru, under the mischievous influence of his brother Reihana, entertained the deputation of Te Ua in his pa and sympathised strongly with the movement. He was one of the first Bay of Plenty chiefs to take the field against the pakeha, being present at Te Reinga. On 25 Dec he attacked a colonial force at Te Pou. He was wounded in the arm in Jan 1866. In Mar Reihana was surprised and captured, and in May Te Waru surrendered with 20 of his men. Unfortunately he was not sent to the Chathams with the other prisoners but was allowed to return to his home. A few months later Kopu died and suspicion of practising makutu surrounded Te Waru. This again threw him into

## WASTNEY

the camp of the Hauhau. Towards the end of 1868 four peace emissaries sent to persuade Te Waru to live close in to Wairoa were massacred at Whataroa by Reihana, who cut out Karaitiana Roto-a-Tara's heart. Te Waru left the previous night to join Te Kooti in the field. An expedition was sent against him (Mar 1869) in the belief that he was at the Whanganui-a-Puma arm of Waikaremoana with the whole of the Maungapohatu people and the Hauhau hapus from Wairoa, and that Te Kooti was likely to join him. In Apr he made a sudden raid on the Wairoa valley while Te Kooti launched his attack on Mohaka. Te Waru was repulsed by Rowley Hill (q.v.) at Hiruharama and early in 1870 he surrendered unconditionally to Gascoyne and Preece at Horomanga. He was taken to the Bay of Plenty and placed in charge of friendly tribes and afterwards moved to Wai-o-tahe, but was afraid to return to Wairoa owing to the massacre of the scouts.

Cowan, i, ii, 396; S. P. Smith, *Wars.*

WASON, JOHN CATHCART (1848-1921), born at Corwar, south Ayrshire, the son of Rigby Wason, M.P. He was educated at Laleham and Rugby, and admitted to the Middle Temple. Coming to New Zealand in 1870, he bought the Lendon estate in Canterbury, which he renamed Corwar, and in 1878 the Craig estate. He sat in the House of Representatives as member for Coleridge (1876-79); for Wakanui (1881-82) and for Selwyn (1896-99). About 1900 he sold his property and returned to England. In the following year Wason was returned as Unionist M.P. for the Orkney and Shetland islands, and from 1902 until his death (in Apr 1921) he sat as Liberal member.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1921; *H.C. Debates*, 1900-21; Jane Deans, *Letters to My Grandchildren*; Acland; *Who's Who.*

WASTNEY, WILLIAM (1831-1911) was born at Sheffield and came to New Zealand in the *Lloyds* (1842) with his mother, his father having come earlier with Captain Wakefield. He did his share of pioneer work as a boy and assisted his father as a builder. Eventually they took up a farm at Wakapuaka. Wastney's father was a member of the Provincial Council for Nelson Suburban district (1855-57) and his uncle (Edmund Wastney 1807-71), who came

## WATERHOUSE

with Wakefield, also represented that electorate (1867-69). William himself was then member from 1869 till the abolition of the provinces: He was also a member of the road board and the education board, chairman of the suburban North school committee and chairman of the Waimea county council. He twice contested a seat in Parliament, once against A. J. Richmond and later against J. Shephard. He died on 15 Nov 1911.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *The Colonist*, 15 Nov 1911; *Nelson Examiner*, 20 Sep 1871.

WATERHOUSE, GEORGE MARSDEN (1824-1906) was born at Penzance, Cornwall, the sixth son of the Rev John Waterhouse (d. 30 Mar 1842), afterwards general superintendent of Wesleyan missions in Australia and Polynesia. He was educated at the Wesleyan College at Kingswood, near Bristol, England, and came to Tasmania with his father in 1839. Obtaining his first post in a merchant's office in Hobart, he paid a visit to north Auckland in Mar 1842 and took note of the promise of New Zealand. In 1843 he went into business on his own account in Adelaide, and by 1851 was in a position to retire.

South Australia was faced at the moment with the duty of electing members to the first partially-representative Legislative - Council. Within a few days of the poll, one of the candidates for East Torrens was suddenly called away from the colony. He introduced Waterhouse as his substitute. With a 'singularly ready delivery, without note or comment' Waterhouse expounded his political views, including abolition of state aid to religion, extended suffrage, vote by ballot, curtailment of the governor's financial prerogative, triennial elections, popular education and Bible-reading in schools—a very complete platform for a New Zealand Liberal 30 years later. He promised that when the first session was over he would call his constituents together and would not return to the Council without their approval. He was elected (Jul 1851) and sat until Jun 1854, when he resigned with the intention of going abroad. In 1852 he was for a short time a member of the central board of education, but he retired when he found his views at variance with those of the majority. Waterhouse in 1855 visited the United States, where he

## WATERHOUSE

broached in public his views on reciprocal trade between that country and the British colonies. He also visited Great Britain. He was one of the three members of the board charged with supplying drainage and water to the city of Adelaide (1856). This post he resigned when he was returned, at the first elections under responsible government, to represent East Torrens in the House of Assembly. His health, which suffered much in the heat of South Australia, caused him to resign once more (Sep 1857); but next year he was again in public service as chairman of the commission of waterworks. Unable to refrain from politics, he was again elected to the Legislative Council (Apr 1860) at the head of the poll. His main planks on this occasion were free-trade, law reform, non-payment of members and the disfranchisement of office-holders from Parliament. Waterhouse took a leading position in the Council, and in May joined the Reynolds ministry as Chief Secretary. Once more ill-health called upon him to resign. The *Advertiser* at this time found him 'lacking those qualities that ordinarily arouse public enthusiasm,' but distinguished by firmness, urbanity, high principle, clear-sightedness and persevering devotedness to the business of the country. He was chairman of the committee to recommend improvements in the real property acts, a matter in which he was afterwards active in New Zealand. When the Reynolds ministry was disrupted Waterhouse formed a government to carry on while a question of maladministration was being investigated. Nine days later, again as Chief Secretary, he formed his second ministry, which held office from Oct 1861 to Jul 1863. When the opposition pressed the government so hard that the Speaker's casting vote was necessary to save it from defeat, Waterhouse resigned. He seems to have left the colony soon after. In order to save expense, the resignation of his seat (dated Dec 1863) was not made known until a year later. He was still for a year or two a director of the South Australian Banking Co. In Jun 1865 he presided at a meeting of pastoralists asking for a reclassification of their runs. He again visited England during this period.

Waterhouse first appears in New Zealand in Jan 1869, when he purchased for £21,000 cash the whole of the Huangarua station of 20,000 acres in south Wairarapa, with 18,000 sheep.

It was originally settled by Clifford and Weld, and was worked for 20 years by Smith and Revans. After paying a deposit for a further 2,462 acres of government land (in the Wharekaka block), he sailed for England to purchase grass-seed, material for fencing, and other implements. While there he wrote much to the press on the marketing of New Zealand produce and the treatment and shipping of Hax, tallow and skins. He also intervened in politics by writing to Lord Granville a dignified and carefully-worded protest against the withdrawal of British troops from New Zealand. He declared that he was thoroughly satisfied that, arduous as was the task before them, the Colonial forces would succeed in bringing the present conflict to a successful issue, but the withdrawal of the troops might cause the natives to think that Britain was no longer behind the Colonial government. 'It is my duty to add,' he said, 'that if these troops be withdrawn the blood of thousands of your fellow countrymen may lie at your door, and England may witness the destruction of a thriving colony.' Granville replied that the decision, which had been anticipated by the New Zealand government for years, was not taken without due consideration. On his return to New Zealand Waterhouse brought a number of Australian birds which he hoped to acclimatise. It was an anxious time for pastoralists. No sooner had he landed than he found that the scab had invaded his flock of 25,000 sheep. In 1869 he erected works for dealing with surplus stock and tallow.

Though he was engrossed in his own affairs, the politics of the day sadly needed men of his stamp, and Waterhouse could not long refrain from participating. While he was still in England Revans (q.v.) suggested him as a suitable representative for the Wairarapa district, but he was called to the more agreeable atmosphere of the Legislative Council (May 1870) by Fox, who had met him in Australia and fully appreciated his qualities. Waterhouse took his advent to New Zealand politics with accustomed seriousness. A sagacious adviser, a clear thinker of moderate views, a champion of democratic rights and a stickler for the purity of Parliament, he very soon made a place for himself in New Zealand politics. The standard of Parliament was not high when he made his appearance. The Legislative Council was distinctly weak;

and throughout his association with it he fought for its privileges and dignity. Gisborne says that he had a great reverence for forms and precedents and for the ancient ways and constitutional principles. He took a leading part in fixing the forms and privileges of the Council and defending it against encroachment, but he had no desire to usurp any of the rights of the other House. On principle he objected to the payment of members, yet when he had been a few years in New Zealand he confessed to a change of faith on finding that the Council was nominated exclusively from the propertied class. It was wrong that it should represent only one class, and if members representing other classes could not maintain themselves in proper condition they were entitled to an honorarium. Himself a man of means, he never accepted salary even when holding a portfolio; and he incurred criticism for devoting his honorarium to the establishment of a library at Greytown.

As member of Parliament and of the Lower Valley board of wardens (to which he was elected in Jul 1870), he was invited to associate himself with the request for a railway into the Wairarapa. Though it could not run within 10 miles of his property, he declined to take any part in the movement, since it would be indecorous that it should even be said that he was influenced by local or personal considerations.' His fine punctilio disapproved of the public nomination of candidates at the hustings, and favoured the ballot election. When Waterhouse entered Parliament the country was excited and intrigued by Vogel's policy of immigration and public works. The aggressiveness of that rising politician, his overbearing methods, his disregard for the ordinary rules of administration, and his looseness in the expenditure of public moneys were alarming and distasteful to Waterhouse. He watched jealously each new assault on the rights of Parliament and fought against it with all the conviction of his experience and his political principles. Though he disliked the idea of office for himself, he moved aptly to a position of leadership in the Council. In spite of the presence of Sewell as government representative, Waterhouse took charge of measures dealing with real property, intestate estates, diseased cattle and land transfer, with all of which he was familiar in South Australia. He was chair-

man of the waste lands committee in 1871. Late in the session, as the position of Sewell became more strained, Fox pressed Waterhouse to join the cabinet. He had misgivings as to being able to work smoothly with Vogel, and resisted as long as he could. Eventually he agreed (30 Oct 1871) to conduct the government business in the Council as a member of the executive. That merely regularised the position which he had exercised for some time owing (as Sewell said) to his wide experience, his acumen and his lawyer-like mind. Waterhouse accepted with a protest. 'The happiest day in my short connection with ministerial affairs,' he said, 'will be when I lay down the office I have assumed, and when I see the conduct of the country in the hands of gentlemen devoting all their time and energies to public business, and following a plan of conduct calculated to ensure the administration of affairs on a satisfactory basis.' The Council had never before been led in the same sense as Waterhouse led it. He not only strengthened its place in the constitution, but tightened up its standing orders, especially with regard to attendance of members. He was too wise a parliamentarian to make any undue claims for the upper house. Not only did he surrender the claim for financial authority, but when the public trust bill—one of the first socialistic measures passed in New Zealand—had been before the people and approved by them, he was not prepared to stand in the way of the public giving effect to their wishes, though he believed that this sort of legislation would destroy their self-reliance and have a bad influence on the legal profession.

The deciding factor in the political career of Waterhouse was his relationship with Vogel. To a certain extent they could work together cordially enough. Waterhouse approved the immigration and public works policy, and skilfully piloted the bill through the Council (Nov 1871). They also agreed on the abolition of the provinces. 'I detest the idea of being an inhabitant of a parish,' said Waterhouse in 1870, 'with all the narrow views of those who never look beyond the borders of a parish. I wish to be a member of the Colony, to get rid of the feeling that I am simply the inhabitant of a province. We are all parts of one great whole. Let us look at matters, therefore, from a colonial and not from a narrow provincial point of view.'

As soon as the session was over Waterhouse retired from the executive to give his full attention to his own affairs. His extensive property demanded constant oversight. He had miles of fencing to carry out in subdividing the estate, and he purchased another property of over 2,000 acres on the East Coast. As a director of the Wairarapa Meat Preserving Co., he persuaded the board to adopt a system of salting meat for export, and he was personally interested in boiling-down works for the disposal of aged and cull sheep. He was constantly on guard against scab and wild dogs, both at Huan-garua and Tiraumea. He imported regular consignments of stud sheep (mainly Lincolns), and in 1871 exhibited at the first show at Masterton.

His association with the Government in 1871 had not allayed Waterhouse's distrust of its methods. The next session opened (Jul 1872) without provision having been made for the leadership of the Council, and he conceived that the Government, fearing that the Council might try to tone down its policy, was determined to ignore it. When he was invited to resume his position of the previous session, he replied demanding that the position and status of ministers should be defined by statute, and he appealed personally to Hall, who was then appointed to the Council to carry through government business, to assist in remedying the loose system. He objected to the making and annulling of ministerial office at the will of the Government, and to the closing of great financial contracts without consulting Parliament. Nor was Waterhouse the only one who objected to the new way of administering the affairs of the country. Criticism culminated on 5 Sep 1872 when the Government was defeated on a want-of-confidence motion. Discussing the position a month earlier, Waterhouse had remarked to Stafford that he had an almost insuperable objection to taking office, and would only be persuaded to do so if he saw a chance of increasing the efficiency of the government and of the civil service. Now that the question arose Stafford, believing that he had agreed to join him, was astounded when Waterhouse, with great pain and not without some degree of self-reproach, declined to join the ministry. He questioned his ability to yield his views to that of his colleagues. In fact, he was no party man,

and he had a rooted objection to joining any party. 'No consideration whatever will induce me,' he remarked three days later, 'to identify myself with any party or any administration. The only necessity I will ever recognise for taking an active part in the administration of the country is one which fortunately is not likely to arise as regards a member of this branch of the Legislature: He sternly rebuked Sewell for his haste in taking office, and added: 'The character of our public men is the property of the Colony. Upon the respect in which they are held proportionately is the influence public men will possess.' Jealous always of the integrity of Parliament, and fearing a deadlock between the two houses, he introduced a motion to make the Legislative Council also elective. Within a fortnight the Government was defeated on a motion proposed by Vogel, who was naturally called upon to form a Government. Vogel appreciated the necessity for colleagues who would lend weight and stability to his administration, and accordingly invited Waterhouse to be Premier. To the amazement of the country Waterhouse accepted. He met Parliament on 11 Oct in the unique position of a Premier without portfolio, without salary and without a seat in the popular chamber. He proposed, he said, to give his whole time to the work, assisting his colleagues with their departments so as to save them loss by the neglect of their business. Having left South Australia for the express purpose of escaping from an active political life, he said, no person could be more astonished than himself to find that here in his new home he was placed in a position where responsibility could scarcely be avoided; but he felt that he would permanently injure his usefulness as a public man if he continued to decline office. 'I have not accepted the position without deliberation, and I will not resign it with rashness.' At that very moment Vogel was telling the other chamber that he, not Waterhouse, had formed the Government, thus sowing in the public mind the seeds of the insidious belief that it was only a pseudo-premiership.

Sewell criticised the inconvenience of having the Premier in the Legislative Council and the invidiousness of his not receiving a salary; but the Council, fearing that Waterhouse would resign, rejected the motion. Even before the end of the session the inconvenience and the sham

of his position were abundantly evident. He held the shadow of power; Vogel the substance. His position in the ministry was anomalous. 'Their political temperaments were irreconcilable with one another,' remarks a chronicler, 'They did not probably agree in many political views, and certainly they did not agree in the measures to be taken to give practical effect to their general views: Though his objections were natural enough, Waterhouse incurred criticism for the manner in which he severed the knot while Vogel was away from New Zealand. Governor Bowen was farewelled officially on 20 Feb 1873, some days before he was to sail for England. Hall resigned his portfolio on the same day, and Waterhouse, feeling that this materially affected his position as a member of the Legislative Council and as a minister, offered his own resignation to Bowen. In the hope that the crisis would not delay his departure from the Colony, the Governor withheld the news, and summoned Fox to town to try to heal the breach. Waterhouse denied that the resignation of the whole ministry was involved; since Vogel had formed it he could quite well appoint another colonial secretary. The Governor refused to give way until Waterhouse forbade the captain of the Government steamer to sail with Bowen without his (Waterhouse's) express authority. Bowen was defeated, and had to call upon Fox to form a ministry. Fox agreed out of deference to the Governor, but on the strict understanding that he would resign as soon as Vogel returned to New Zealand. Writing to Vogel on the subject (4 Feb 1873), Waterhouse said: 'I have felt throughout that you have regarded yourself as the actual and me as the nominal Premier; and the strength of your will and the advantage arising from your having formed the ministry have given you an influence in the ministry which is fatal to my exerting the influence attached to my office as Premier. We have been cast in different moulds, and cannot with mutual satisfaction run in harness together:

Waterhouse did not at once recover from the loss of prestige due to this surprising incursion into office. He remained a private member of Parliament until 1890, attending regularly to his duties until his departure from the Colony. In the political uncertainties of 1879 it was freely suggested that he would return to office

as leader of a 'rescue party'; but he had no such ideas. Except for the session of 1887 (Apr-Sep), when he was Speaker of the Legislative Council in the absence of Fitzherbert, he remained a private member. He had ample other employment for his talents. In 1872-73 he was a member of the Wellington education board. In 1873 he was elected to the committee of the Wellington benevolent institution. In 1876 he was appointed, with Travers and Hector, a governor of the New Zealand Institute. He spent more and more of his time in Wellington, and in 1878, having extended his property at Tiraumea and Whareama, he sold his Huangarua estate to the Hon. J. Martin (q.v.). He visited England again on several occasions, and in 1888 left the Colony for good to reside in Devon, where he died on 6 Aug 1906.

The significance of Waterhouse in the political history of New Zealand has not yet been appreciated. Coming to the Colony with ripe knowledge and judgment and a wide experience of the world, he soon acquired a masterly grip of its affairs. He was not the type of man to succeed at the hustings or to win honours in a democracy. He clung fondly to the older traditions of parliamentary life, and added dignity to its councils by his lofty and logical speeches. Gisborne says that he was not likely to take any course without previous careful consideration. He searched into the depths of everything, sparing no pains to become master of it. His speeches were philosophical and persuasive, 'appealing to the reason, but incapable of creating enthusiasm. Waterhouse was one of the first premiers in New Zealand to express definite views on Imperial or foreign affairs. At the moment of his arrival in the Colony he was stirred to indignation by what he characterised as the 'cold-blooded and unnatural conduct' of the Mother country towards this Colony, and he advocated fostering closer relations with the United States since England had abrogated her position. Again he reverted to this matter in supporting the reciprocal trade bill of that session. While in South Australia he brought forward the question of reciprocal relations amongst the colonies, and it was permitted to the conference at Melbourne in 1863. Waterhouse regarded the great remoteness of New Zealand from the 'pulse and heart of civilisation' as a calamity that dwarfed ideas

and tended to injure the prospects of prosperity. At the same time he saw the danger to young colonies of dissipating their energy in oversea adventures. Though he voted in favour of a resolution in 1871 regarding British sovereignty in Samoa, he warned the New Zealanders against using their skill and energy in foreign and extraneous matters.

*App. H.R.*, "1873 A. 1a; *N.Z.P.D.*, 17 Jun, 15 Jul, 11 Aug, 9 Sep 1870, 17 Aug, 30 Oct, 7 Nov 1871, 22 Jul, 7 Aug 1872, 10, 17, 29 Sep 1872, 18 Oct 1872, 5 Oct 1875; Archives of South Australia; *South Aust. Leg. Assembly Proc.*; Buller; Gisborne (p); Rusden; Saunders ii (p); Reeves; Loyau; Men-nell; Cox; *Independent*, 16 Jan, 12 Oct 1869; Scholefield in *Evening Post*, 4 Aug 1934 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Jul 1884. Portrait: Parliament House.

WATHEN, WILLIAM ANDERSON WADDLE (1850-1919) was a compositor by trade and was an early member and sometime president of the Otago typographical association. He was also in 1876 secretary-treasurer of the Dunedin Press club. At the general election of 1884 he withdrew from the contest for the Dunedin East seat in favour of Sir Robert Stout, and stood for Taieri. He was president of the Otago trades and labour council (1900-01) and in 1902 was chairman of the workers' political committee. Wathen was a member of the Shakespeare Society and of various musical societies. He died in Tasmania on 18 Mar 1919.

Paul, *Trades Unionism*; *Evening Star*, 12 Apr 1919.

WATKIN, JAMES (1805-86) was born at Manchester in a good Methodist home. At an early age he felt the call to the ministry, and commenced preaching in the Oldham street circuit, where he profited by the ministry of Jabez Bunting and Richardson Watson. He declined an offer to defray the cost of his study at Oxford for the ministry of the Church of England, and was accepted as a candidate for the Wesleyan ministry (1830).

Owing to one of the party designated for Tonga being unable to go, he joined Turner and William Woon and, having been ordained in the Sloane Terrace Chapel, Chelsea, and married (1830) to Hannah Entwistle (niece of the Rev Joseph Entwistle), he sailed from Gravesend on 7 Aug 1830 in the whaler *Lloyds* (owned by a Quaker). Touching at Bay of Islands,

Watkin proceeded to Tonga. On his arrival there (Mar 1831) he found the people on the crest of a religious revival, due to the labours of Walter Lawry, Nathaniel Turner (q.v.) and others. Tauf-a-hau became the Christian king of all the Tongan groups and Watkin was his close friend and confidant. The king being attacked by non-Christian chiefs, the missionaries removed for safety to Vavau, but Watkin returned alone to face the fury of the savage warfare. In 1838 he published the pamphlet *Pity Poor Fiji*.

At the conclusion of seven years' successful work in Tonga, Watkin proceeded with his family to Sydney (Sep 1837) and for the next few years worked with great success in New South Wales. Having read a German translation of Watkin's appeal for Fiji, Wohlers volunteered for missionary work. He and his colleagues were sent to New Zealand by a German mission society. Watkin was designated for Kapiti by the Wesleyan conference in England (1839), but before his arrival Hadfield (q.v.) was sent there by the Church Missionary Society. Bumby, while on a visit to Sydney to confer with the missionary committee (1840), received John Jones's offer of a passage for a missionary to be appointed to Waikouaiti, where he had a whaling station. Watkin was selected for the post, and sailed with his family in the *Regina*, reaching his destination on 16 May, six weeks after the visit of D'Urville. Watkin found the settlement a hotbed of drunkenness, immorality and violence, from which the natives mainly suffered. He took a determined stand alike against the vices of the whites and the savage customs of the Maori, persuaded the Maori to refrain from fighting and set a new standard of life for the whites. Though the southern Maori dialect differed widely from Tongan, he preached in Maori four months after his arrival. He collected 2,000 words and phrases in Maori and sent an elementary reading book to be printed in Ngai-Tahu at Mangungu, but it was not available until Dec 1841. Schools were established at Waikouaiti and Matainaka and partly-instructed native teachers were stationed at Stewart Island and Moeraki. In Feb 1843 he held the first administration of the sacrament to native communicants. In Oct Watkin visited Wellington for a district meeting and in Mar 1844 he went to Jacobs River. Visits were paid

to Otago in Nov 1840 by Bishop Pompallier; in Dec 1842 by representatives of the Anglican church; and in Jan 1843 by Matene te Whiwhi and Tamihana te Rauparaha. When Bishop Selwyn visited him early in 1844 Watkin thought of withdrawing his 26 native teachers to leave the field clear. Tuhawaiki had pleaded for a missionary, and Watkin encouraged Wohlers to establish himself at Ruapuke. The *Deborah*, with the preliminary expedition for the Otago settlement, brought the Rev Charles Creed to succeed Watkin (Apr 1844). When he sailed for Wellington in Jun he left 227 church members in Otago.

Watkin's last years were spent in Australia. He settled in New South Wales in 1855, and was president of the national Methodist conference of Australia at Adelaide in 1862. He retired in 1869, and died near Sydney on 14 May 1886. Watkin was a short, sturdy figure of great energy; widely read, thoughtful and witty.

Pratt (p); Morley; W. J. Williams; *The Press*, Jun-Jul 1931; Hoani Matiu in *Otago Witness*, 4 Nov 1930.

WATKINS, KENNEIH (1847-1933), was born at Ootacamund, India, the son of Major John Watkins, and educated at Wellington College, England, where he won the first prize for drawing three years in succession. He studied art in France, Italy and Switzerland (under Chevalier Terry and van der Velde for landscape, and P. F. Connolly for figure). When visiting Singapore he was appointed aide-de-camp to the Rajah of Johore, and three years later came to New Zealand (1873). After spending some months sketching and photographing, he was appointed instructor at the School of Art in Auckland, and was later drawing master at the Grammar and other schools. Retiring in 1915, he lived thereafter at Dannevirke and East Cape.

*Art in N.Z.*, Sep 1933.

WATSON, CLEMENT (1852-1936), a son of the Rev Thomas Watson, chaplain to the East India Company, was born in India and educated at the High Wycombe School, Buckinghamshire. In 1867 he came to New Zealand from Tasmania, and, after teaching at the Thorndon, Gladstone, upper Tutaenui, and Marton schools, was appointed assistant master at the Terrace school, Wellington. In 1880 he became

headmaster of the Te Aro school, which during his 30 years' administration became the largest in the Dominion. In 1886 he gained his B.A. degree, and in 1898 became one of the original members of Victoria College council, on which he served for over 30 years. Watson was one of the founders of the New Zealand Educational institute (president 1893), and from the time of its foundation until his death (on 23 Nov 1936) he was a member of the executive of the Wellington War Relief association.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *The Dominion*, 24 Nov 1936 (p).

WATSON, JOHN, was born at Ballydarton, county Carlow, Ireland. Coming to New Zealand at the invitation of Governor FitzRoy in 1843, he was appointed in 1845 assistant police magistrate at Russell, Bay of Islands, and a justice of the peace. Early in 1846 he was sent to Akaroa as police magistrate (relieving C. B. Robinson); in 1847 he became resident magistrate, and in 1849 collector of customs. He resigned about 1870 to return to Ireland.

*Cant. ON.*; Godley, *Letters*; Anson; J. Hay.

WATSON, WILLIAM (1846-1938) was born at Achany, Sutherlandshire, educated at the Tain school and the City of London College, and in 1864 entered the service of the Caledonian Bank at Bonarbridge, Sutherlandshire. Four years later he transferred to the Oriental Bank in London. In 1873 he was sent to Ceylon, and in 1883 was appointed manager of the Bank of Shanghai. In 1886 he came to New Zealand as chief inspector of the Colonial Bank of New Zealand, with his headquarters at Dunedin. Watson in 1894 became president of the Bank of New Zealand, a position which he held until 1898 under the government reconstruction. From that date he represented the shareholders on the board of directors until his death on 12 Jul 1938. He was chairman 1931-32. He was one of the first directors of Sharland and Co. (and chairman for many years) and was a director of the Wellington Harbour Ferries Co. and the Patent Slip Co. Watson married (1879) Isabella, daughter of Robert Mackenzie.

*Who's Who N.Z.*; Beauchamp; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z. Times*, 4 Aug 1896; *The Dominion*, 13 Jul 1938 (p).

WATT, ISAAC NEWTON (1821-86) was born in England. He studied medicine at St Bartho-

lomew's Hospital; but did not complete his course. In Dec 1843 he arrived in Taranaki by the *Himalaya*, and went into business as a merchant. He also in 1844 took over the Devon hotel. In 1853 he was elected to the Provincial Council for New Plymouth, and he was speaker of the Council until 1856. He remained a member until 1861. In the following year he was elected to Parliament for New Plymouth Town, which he represented for only two sessions, retiring in Oct 1863. Watt was elected captain in the first volunteers founded in 1859, and served with them in the hostilities of 1860-61. In 1862 he was appointed resident magistrate at the Bluff, being transferred in 1868 to Dunedin, where he served as magistrate and coroner until 1880. Watt was of a scientific turn of mind and always took a professional interest in post-mortem examinations. He died on 10 Sep 1886.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Parltry Record*; *Evening Star*, II Sep 1886. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

WATT, WILLIAM HOGG (1818-93) was born in Dundee, and after leaving school was apprenticed to the sea with the White Star line. While serving in one of their ships he made the acquaintance of another apprentice, T. B. Taylor (q.v.), with whom he afterwards came to Australia and sailed in intercolonial ships. Together they bought the schooner *Katherine Johnstone*, 14 tons, with which they inaugurated a direct service between Sydney and Wanganui. Watt in 1841 settled in Wanganui, where he established the firm as merchants and ship-owners in Taupo Quay, while Taylor continued to command the *Katherine Johnstone*. Their first cargo of merchandise they brought down from Sydney in 1842. Later they acquired the *Edward Stanley*, *Governor Grey*, *Rosebud*, *Venture*, *Seagull* and *Tyne*, with which they maintained a regular service from Sydney, always keeping one vessel in the service with Wellington.

Taylor and Watt exercised a great influence on the prosperity of Wanganui, providing it with vital communications at a time when the settlement was struggling against depression. Their largest vessel, the brig *Lady Denison*, was purchased as a wreck for purposes of salvage (1867). On the death of Taylor (1871)

Watt continued the business. He took a prominent part in the public affairs of the town and district. He represented Wanganui and Rangitikei in the Provincial Council (1853-65), and Wanganui for the remainder of the provincial period (1865-75), being throughout a supporter of Featherston. He represented Wanganui also in Parliament (from 1866-68). In 1872 he was elected first mayor of Wanganui and he held that office on five occasions (1872-73, 1875-78, and 1880-81). He was mainly responsible for the erection of the bridge over the Wanganui river and for the abolition of the toll gates. In 1881 Watt was again returned to Parliament (defeating Ballance), but he was defeated by Ballance at the following election (1884). He was a member of the Wanganui education board and a member and first chairman of the harbour board. He gave the water of Lake Westmere for the town supply. His death occurred on 7 Mar 1893.

*Partry Record; Wellington P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; Woan; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 8 Mar 1893. Portrait: Parliament House.

WATIERS, FELIX JOSEPH (1851-1916) was born at Dundalk, Ireland, and educated at St Mary's College there and at the Catholic University at Dublin. He joined the Society of Mary in 1870, and graduated doctor of theology and received the diploma of S.T.D. from the College of Propaganda in Rome. Ordained in 1874, he was professor of English and classics at the Catholic University for 10 years. From this position he was invited by Bishop Redwood (q.v.), who had been a professor while he was at Dundalk, to organise St Patrick's College in Wellington (1884). Dr Watters was conspicuously successful in this task, from which he retired in 1898. After resting for a while he was appointed headmaster of the Catholic University School in Dublin. He was killed while ministering to the wounded during the rising in Dublin in 1916. He was a priest of outstanding courage, energy, honesty and independence.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *St. Patrick's College 1885-1935* (p).

WATTS-RUSSELL, JOHN CHARLES (1825-75) was the fourth son of Jesse Watts-Russell, of Ham Hall, Staffordshire, and Biggin House, Northamptonshire, who took the additional name of Watts on his marriage. After receiving

the usual education in preparation for the army, he got his commission in the 17th Lancers, and was quartered chiefly in Ireland. In 1850 he married Miss Bradshaw, sold his commission and purchased orders for 500 acres of land in Canterbury. He was elected a member of the committee of settlers, and sailed with his wife in the *Si,*" *George Seymour*. He became a close friend of J. R. Godley, purchased a flock of sheep from the Deans brothers, and secured a block of 22,000 acres near Homebush. He was the first of the Canterbury settlers to go in for sheep-farming as distinct from agricultural farming.

Watts-Russell was elected to the council of the Society of Land Purchasers, but otherwise took little part in the politics of the province. He erected his house, Ilam, on land just beyond Riccarton, but lived in Lyttelton for the first year or two. Possessed of considerable means, he soon had extensive station properties, in the management of which he was associated with A. R. Creyke (q.v.). When the run system came into force he had 16,000 acres at Homebush allotted to him (1851). In 1854 he and Creyke had 2,524 sheep, and three years later the number was 6,630. Generally speaking, Watts-Russell left the management of the properties to Creyke. He only occasionally lived on them to alleviate his asthma. He was appointed a justice of the peace, and in 1854 was called to the Legislative Council in the first General Assembly. This position he resigned when he went abroad. Returning to the Colony by the *Westminster* from a visit to England (1858), he brought 20,000 bricks for his home at Ilam, a fine two-storeyed house on a brick foundation which is described by Lady Barker as 'the most charming place I have yet seen: Here Watts-Russell dispensed hospitality on a lavish scale, with little desire for the hurly-burly of politics. The unvarying integrity of his private life was a fine example in the early days of the settlement. In all his relations he was inspired by a deep Christian spirit. In 1858 Watts-Russell was again called to the Legislative Council by the Stafford Government, and he continued a member for 10 years. In 1866 he sold most of his property, and left once more for England, his membership of the Council thus lapsing. When he returned in 1871, he still refrained from public life. He died on 2 Apr 1875.

Watts-Russell was a great lover of horseflesh, and was one of the committee that founded the Canterbury Jockey club, of which he was chairman. He went to great pains to improve both land and stock. One unfortunate experience was his part in the introduction of rabbits into the province. He liberated some at Dalethorpe and sowed five acres in buckwheat for their benefit. In 1859 with H. Hirst he made an exploration of the West Coast sounds in a Maori boat. An ardent freemason, he helped to form the first lodge in Christchurch, and later he spent both energy and money in the establishment of the provincial grand lodge. He was himself the first provincial grandmaster.

Godley, *Letters*; Deans; *Cant. O.N.*; Acland; Chadwick; Jane Deans, *Letters to My Grandchildren*; *The Press*, 18 Oct 1930 (p).

WAYMOUTH, JOHN (1820-92) was born in Wales, and took an active part in temperance and social movements before coming to Auckland in the *William Watson* (1859). He was employed by Whitaker and Russell (solicitors), and in 1863 became Under-secretary for Defence (Russell being minister). At the close of the Waikato war he entered into business with his son as accountants. He was a member of the Auckland City Council; secretary of the regatta club and commodore of the Auckland yacht club. Waymouth designed many Auckland yachts. He died on 9 Dec 1892.

*N.Z. Herald*, 10 Dec 1892.

WAYNE, FREDERICK (1834-1901) was the son of the Rev W. H. Wayne, vicar of Much Wenlock, Shropshire. Educated at Bridgenorth school and Trinity College, Cambridge, he intended to study medicine, but became a partner with Colonel Kitchener (father of Lord Kitchener) in the Kerry estate, near Tralee, county Kerry, which they improved by drainage and transformed into good wheat-growing country. Having studied at the School of Mines in London the investigation of mineral lands, he came to Sydney in 1859 and to New Zealand in the following year.

In partnership, with Captain James Hamilton and John Cotton Rowley, he took up the Taieri Lake station, Otago, and later the Shag Valley estate, on both of which he erected a homestead and yards. His station lay on the road from Waikouaiti inland, which was after-

wards one of the main routes to the goldfields. He erected a substantial store on the Shag river in 1865. Colonel Kitchener became a partner in the station and eventually took it over, and Wayne bought Akatore, near Tokomairiro. This he held from 1871 to 1885, when he retired and became a land and estate agent. In 1865 he married Agatha Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev George Barber (Cambridge, England). He was a justice of the peace from 1862.

Wayne represented Hampden in the House of Representatives (1863-66). He afterwards lived for many years in Milton, where he was a member of the Bruce county council. He died on 10 Apr 1901.

Family information; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Don; *Otago Daily Times*, 7 May 1901.

WEAVER, WILLIAM (1830-68) was born and educated in England, and was a pupil in civil engineering of Brassey and Peto, of Bristol. In 1854 he came to Australia, where he was chief engineer in New South Wales and gained first prize for a design for the Melbourne post office. He married Miss Broughton, but separated shortly afterwards and came to New Zealand. He was chief engineer for Auckland province and in 1867 made the first surveys for a dry dock at Auckland. At the end of that year he was elected to the Auckland Provincial Council for Auckland East (defeating James George), but being disqualified by holding a government appointment, he retired without taking his seat in the Council (Jan 1868). In Mar he was appointed telegraph engineer for New Zealand. He died in Geelong on 18 Dec 1868.

*Southern Cross*, 13, 20 Dec 1867; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Jan 1869.

WEBB, HENRY RICHARD (1829-1901) was born in New South Wales, where his parents arrived in the previous year. Educated at Sydney College, he entered mercantile life and became a member of the firm of Fergusson, Webb and Co. In 1851 he visited Auckland and in 1868 settled in Canterbury, having the management of Peacock's wharf until the creation of the harbour board. For 13 years he was manager of the Permanent Investment and Loan association of Canterbury. He was M.P.C. for Lyttelton (1869-75), and a member of the executive as provincial secretary in the winding-up period; and M.H.R. for Lyttelton (1873-75)

Webb interested himself actively in education, was chairman of the Lyttelton school committee, for 18 years a school commissioner of Canterbury, a member and chairman of the North Canterbury education board, a governor of Canterbury College from its inception (and chairman 1893-1901). He was president of the photographic section of the Philosophical Institute and a fellow of the Royal Microscopical society of London (1880). In church matters he was a member of the diocesan synod and chairman of committees and a member of the general synod. He married (1857) a daughter of J. J. Peacock (Sydney). He was a keen horticulturist in New South Wales and chairman of the Christchurch society. Webb died on 12 Feb 1901. (See J. T. PEACOCK.)

Family information; *Cycl. NZ.*, iii (p); Hight and Candy (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 13 Oct 1901.

WEBER, KARL HERMANN (183Q-87) was born in Bavaria, Germany, of good family, educated there and trained as a surveyor and engineer. Like many other German students, he was involved in the popular rising in 1848 and had to flee the country. He worked for some time in the United States and on harbour works in South America, and then came to Australia. In 1864-77 he was appointed chief surveyor and provincial engineer in Hawkes Bay. Appointed in 1877, engineer to the Napier harbour board, he carried out important works-drainage and swamp reclamation. He was then for some time engaged in private practice and in 1886, while on an exploration survey between Eketahuna and Pahiatua, he disappeared. Weber laid out many of the principal roads of Hawkes Bay and gave his name to a town and country. Remains were found in 1889, which were supposed to be his.

*NZ. Surveyor*, 1897, p. 215; Jourdain.

WEBSTER, FREDERICK LEWIS (1839-1903) arrived in New Zealand by the *Amelia Thompson* (1841) with his father, afterwards collector of customs at New Plymouth. He was educated in New Plymouth, and after gaining experience in a merchant's office commenced business with his brother as commission and shipping agents. He served in the Taranaki war with the volunteers and distinguished himself at Waireka (1860), rising to captain in 1861 and receiving the medal. He married (1863) Mary Elizabeth,

daughter of Dr Dugald McKellar. Some time later he established the Egmont flour mill, of which he was part owner until his death. Webster represented New Plymouth in the Provincial Council (1869-73). He was a prominent mason and churchman and a member of the Egmont reserve board. He died on 15 Apr 1903.

*Cycl. NZ.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald*, 16 Apr 1903.

WEBSTER, GEORGE (1821-71) was born at Montrose, Scotland. He came to New Zealand in the *Jane Gifford* (1842), and engaged with his brothers in sawmilling at Horeke, Hokianga. He lived for some years in Auckland and was dclairman of the board of city commissioners (1868). Shortly after he left for Hokianga, where he had an extensive business. He was M.P.C. for Bay of Islands (1863-67). Webster died on 11 Apr 1871. (See JOHN WEBSTER.)

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; Webster; *NZ. Herald*, 21 Apr 1871.

WEBSTER, GEORGE, was a trustee of the Bank of Melbourne. He came to New Zealand from Victoria about 1863, and invested in sheep country in Southland, taking up the Benmore station and later the Dome. Webster was a member of the Southland Provincial Council for Invercargill (1869-70), and was member of Parliament for Wallace from 1869 to 1875. He died on 15 Jul 1875.

*Parltry Record*; *Southland Times*, 16 Jul 1875.

WEBSTER, GEORGE MURRAY (1818-78) was a medical practitioner, but did not practice after his arrival in New Zealand in the late sixties. He took up land in north Otago, imported some of the best Romney marsh sheep into New Zealand; did much to promote agricultural and pastoral interests, and was also interested in racing. He was a member of the Oamaru dock trust (1871) and represented Oamaru Country district in the Provincial Council (1871-75) and was a member of the executive in the last year. Webster was a deputy-inspector-general of hospitals. He died on 11 Nov 1878. (See J. LITTLE.)

Fulton, 215-6; *N01<sup>th</sup> Otago Times*, 12 Nov 1878.

WEBSTER, JOHN (1818-1912), the son of a merchant, Andrew Webster, was born in Montrose and educated at the Montrose Academy. At the age of 15 he entered a chemical manu-

facturing company in Glasgow and took lectures in chemistry and drawing. His personal wish was to go to the West Indies, but his mother advised Australia, and he sailed in the *Portland* on 23 Aug 1838. Arriving at Sydney in Dec, he took employment with Howe brothers, of Glenlee station, 250 miles from Sydney. In Oct 1839 he started with 800 of the firm's cattle overland for Adelaide to escape the drought and reached his destination with the loss of 9 per cent. At their camp at the Gawler river the Governor of South Australia visited the drovers. Webster made another overland journey, and returned by paddle steamer to Melbourne and thence overland to a new station formed by Howe at Broken river, 200 miles up country. From here he helped Howe to drive his cattle down to Melbourne.

In Apr 1841 Webster crossed to New Zealand in the *Jupitel*, and joined his brother William in a sawmill at Hokianga. William (1816-95) came in the *Bengal Merchant* to Wellington (1839), bringing sawmill machinery. Finding no suitable forests there, he went north and settled early in 1840 at Wairere creek. He chose this site, a few miles higher than Te Horeke, to be free of sand, which injured the saws. A third brother, George (q.v.), who arrived in the *Jane Gifford*, was engaged in the venture. All three frequently visited the family of the missionary Hobbs on Sundays.

In company with Frederick Maning (q.v.), John saw a considerable amount of the fighting in Heke's war. For a few years he acted as agent for Brown and Campbell, trading with the native tribes, and in 1849, on the discovery of gold in California, he sailed as their supercargo in the barque *Noble* to San Francisco. There he joined company with Benjamin Boyd, the owner of the armed yacht *Wandel<sup>r</sup>er*, 240 tons, 12 guns, in which he cruised amongst the Pacific islands, trading and making water colour sketches. Boyd was murdered at Guadalcanar, in the Solomons, on 15 Oct 1851; the *Wanderer* was wrecked at Port Macquarie; and Webster found his way back to Sydney. From there he went to the Turon goldfields, and then to the Victorian diggings. At Mount Alexander he discovered a reef which could not be worked without machinery. While visiting London to raise capital for the venture he showed his pictures, attended meetings of the Royal Society

and met Sir George Grey (who had been recalled from the Cape). Returning to New Zealand in 1855, Webster married a daughter of G. F. Russell (Kohukohu). He was engaged for many years in the timber trade in partnership with his brother, A. S. Webster. They had an office in Sydney and during the years 1855-74 had ships trading in many parts of the world carrying timber and tea. When they sold out, Webster retired to a property of 700 acres which he had acquired at Opononi, near Hokianga heads. Planted with trees as protection against the bleak winds, it became a model farm and homestead which was seen by many prominent visitors.

Webster took a keen interest in cultural studies, and was an active member of such societies as the New Zealand Institute, the Polynesian Society, and the Australasian Association for the Advancement of Science. His knowledge of Maori and sympathy for the race were recognised by his election as a member of the district runanga (3 Mar 1863). He died on 30 May 1912. Amongst his writings were the story of the *Wanderer* (published in 1858) and *Reminiscences of an Old Settler*.

Morton; Webster, *op. cit.* (p); *Cycl. NZ.*, ii (p); *NZ. Herald*, 30 Apr, 7 May 1892, 31 May 1912.

WELCH, ROBERT PORTER, was born in England and studied medicine in London. (M.R.C.S.) He was surgeon in the Somerset county hospital before he came to New Zealand and settled in Wellington. In 1857 he stood for the superintendency against Featherston, but was defeated by 830 votes to 404. In 1858 he became clerk of the Provincial Council, resigning in 1859. He represented Wairarapa in the Council (1865-66), thereafter retiring from public life. Welch published several popular books on medicine.

Carter; \Yakelin; \Yard; *Wellington Independent*, 6, 9 Sep 1859.

WELD, sm FREDERICK ALOYSIUS (1823-91) was the third son of Humphrey Weld, of Chideock, and his wife, Maria Christina, daughter of Charles, Lord Clifford of Chudleigh, both being of old English Catholic families. The Welds held land in Dorset, Lancashire and Hampshire. The grandfather, Thomas Weld, high-minded, patriotic and generous, gave hospitality to many monks driven from France after the Revolu-

tion; founded convents and missions, established at his own cost Stonyhurst College; and received into his home (Lulworth Castle) the fugitive Charles X, whom young Frederick had seen as a boy in Versailles. Frederick was delicate from infancy, and his residence in Paris with his parents was mainly for health and education. He then went to Stonyhurst; enjoyed his poetry and English; became fond of games and of fishing. Then to Friburg University (Switzerland) with many relatives—Vavasours, Cliffords and Welds, mainly for languages. He became proficient in French, Italian and German; but the principal influence of Friburg upon him was the personal friendship of Father Freudenfeldt. This teacher of the philosophy of history had once been tutor in the royal household of Prussia and professor at Göttingen, and had fought at Ligny and Waterloo as aide-de-camp to General Liethen.

Weld left Friburg in 1843, still anxious to enter the army, but unable to afford it. A nomination to the Austrian army he rejected; he was determined to remain under the British flag. His relatives Petre, Clifford and Vavasour had already gone to New Zealand; and Jerningham was recruiting emigrants in the west of England. In the end Weld bought an order from the New Zealand Company for 100 acres of country land and a town lot; and sailed by the *Theresa* in Nov 1843. Calling at Nelson, which was still despondent after the "Wairau conflict, he landed in Wellington in Apr 1844. His cousins had entered into negotiations with Wairarapa chiefs for the use of pastoral areas, and he helped them get their Australian sheep round to Wharekaka, on the shores of Palliser Bay. There he remained for months shepherding the flock and growing the first crops of English vegetables. When hostilities broke out in the Hutt valley (1846) Weld volunteered as guide and interpreter to the force crossing the hills from the Hutt to Porirua. In this service he showed great courage and resource. Later he made a hazardous journey round the rocks to Wellington on behalf of the Wairarapa settlers to ascertain what steps the government proposed to take for their defence.

The unsuitable climate of the lower valley, the constant exposure and the impossibility of expansion prompted Weld to look for new pastures. Early in 1847 he began his explorations

in the South Island. He found suitable country near Cape Campbell, and established his Flaxbourne station. There were no neighbours, white or native, within 40 miles, but Weld, an expert yachtsman, was now closer to Wellington than at Wharekaka. In Aug he and Clifford took down 2,000 sheep in partnership and another 500 on a share arrangement. Weld delighted in every stage of breaking in the country and building his home, planting English trees and even erecting a Roman Catholic chapel. He also became prominent in the politics of the colony, and complained of Grey's obstruction of the demand for self-government. The Governor offered Weld a seat in his Legislative Council at this date. This he declined in the belief that the Council, as then constituted, was a mere sop to prevent the full realisation of self-government, and Weld joined the newly formed Settlers' Constitutional Association.

In 1850-51 Weld spent some weeks (at the time of the arrival of the first four ships in Lyttelton) exploring on foot the approaches to Canterbury from the north, and examining the sites of Lyttelton and Christchurch. He had already discovered the fine country which he and Clifford took up late in 1850 as Stonyhurst. The shepherds whom Weld sent off to Stonyhurst with the first mob of sheep abandoned their charges owing to shortage of tucker. Early in 1852 Alfonso Clifford safely drove there 1,500 sheep, losing only one. Another of Weld's expeditions disclosed a pass through the Kaikoura mountains, giving access between Canterbury and the Wairau plain. Then he paid a visit to England. He divided his time between his old pastime of yachting, visiting relatives and collaborating with Sewell, Fox and Wakefield in the debates at Hams Hall which led up to the New Zealand constitution. He also published an interesting pamphlet *Hints to Intending Sheepfarmers in New Zealand*. It was during this visit to England that his father died (Jan 1852). Weld offered later to return to live with his mother, but she refused the filial sacrifice and spent her closing years as an oblate in a convent.

Weld reached New Zealand again in 1852. He was in time to see the new constitution proclaimed by Grey (17 Jan 1853) just before his departure from the Colony. In the first House of Representatives Weld himself was elected

member for Wairau. When Parliament met (May 1854) Clifford was elected Speaker. Immediately an acute controversy arose over the opening prayer. Roman Catholic members were not alone in resisting any measure that might suggest the predominance of one religion, and since then prayers have always been said by the Speaker. Weld was a member of the first administration (with FitzGerald, Sewell and Bell), which resigned when it became apparent that the Administrator, Wynyard (q.v.) would not accept full responsible government. Parliament was prorogued, and in the recess instructions from the Colonial Office made it clear that the wishes of the colonists must be acceded to. Weld took the opportunity of this release to make extensive explorations. With the Hon James Stuart Wortley he travelled widely in the North Island. In Aug 1854, on hearing of the eruption in Hawaii, they chartered a sailing vessel, and made an adventurous examination of the volcano of Mauna Loa. The description which he wrote, for Sir Charles Lyell, was published in the journal of the Geological Society in London. Having resigned his seat in Parliament, Weld proceeded to England. He returned to New Zealand in 1857, and in Jun 1858 was again elected member for Wairau. Later that year he left for England, where in Mar 1859 he was married to Filumena, daughter of de Lisle Phillips, of Leicestershire (who was also connected with the Cliffords).

A serious illness prolonged his absence, and Weld did not reach New Zealand again until Jan 1860. The dark cloud of war now hung over the Colony. Weld's counsel was wanted. His opinions on the Maori war were clear cut. His principle of treating natives was always the same: "At all risks be just; at all risks be firm." Almost at the moment of his return to the Colony the tragic Waitara war broke out. A few months later Stafford invited his help as a member of the executive. With his experience of active service with the militia, Weld was mainly instrumental in the passing of the new militia act. Late in 1860 the portfolio of Native Affairs was entrusted to him, and Stafford relied upon his advice in the attempt to bring about peace at Waitara. The ministry went out of office in Jul 1861. For the next few years Weld was merely a private member (for the electorate of Cheviot), and he was free to live the life of a

country gentleman and to look after the improvement of his estate. But his views on the war policy of the Government were always a factor in the political situation. He believed that the Colony would never see an end of its troubles until it accepted full responsibility for Maori as for pakeha affairs. The difficulties of the Waikato campaign strengthened this belief, and when (late in 1864) Sir George Grey sent for him to form a ministry he laid down firmly the conditions upon which alone he could assume the task. They were, in short, real responsibility for native and European affairs; an amnesty to natives who had resisted the government; the confiscation of the lands of rebel tribes; and the immediate removal of the seat of government to Wellington.

Grey accepted the terms cordially, and Weld took office (Nov 1864) with Sewell, Fitzherbert, Richardson and Atkinson as his colleagues. Mantell, FitzGerald and J. C. Richmond joined him later. Though in power for less than a year, the Weld ministry changed materially the face of New Zealand affairs and inspired the country with fresh confidence. Military posts were established between Wanganui and New Plymouth; the Waikato lands were confiscated; steps were taken towards the parliamentary representation of the Maori people; resolutions were passed terminating with the utmost goodwill the employment of British troops in the Colony, and thus putting an end to the unseemly friction that had existed between the Governor and the general officer commanding. The self-reliant policy was auspiciously inaugurated with a series of brilliant successes by the volunteers and militia on the West Coast. The opposition that gathered against the Government had to do with such subjects as Otago reserves and stamp duties. Weld suffered in health under the burden of office, and when the Government was defeated (Oct 1865) he gladly advised that Stafford be sent for. When he withdrew from Parliament (Jan 1866) Bell said of him: "He held, perhaps alone among the public of New Zealand, the place of a man whose word was never doubted, whose honour was never questioned, whose advice was always sought and whose counsel was never refused in cases of public difficulty."

In May 1867 Weld left for England with health only slightly improved, and spent many

months there resting. When Granville showed the confidence of the Colonial Office in his character by offering him (Mar 1869) the governorship of the colony of West Australia, he dared not accept the pressing invitations that were extended to him to return to New Zealand politics. With his family he sailed for Australia, reached his new jurisdiction at King George's Sound in Sep 1869, and rode or drove the 260 miles to the capital, Perth. Weld found West Australia in a very backward state. The development of communications had his first care. Week after week he spent in the saddle visiting the farthest settlements. He appointed a geologist, who assured him that there was some gold in the territory. He exercised a jealous watch over the treatment of the natives, and at one time was out of favour with the public for his persistence in prosecuting a prominent settler for the murder of a black. He strongly advocated complete equality for all denominations in educational matters. Finally he promoted the movement for representative and responsible government, feeling confident that when he had persuaded his council (by a single vote) to accept one instalment (1870) they must go forward and not backward. Again he incurred unpopularity for financing from public funds the expedition of John Forrest (afterwards Sir John) to explore the means of land communication with South Australia.

Early in 1874 Weld visited New Zealand to arrange partnership matters with Clifford. He then accepted the governorship of Tasmania, which he entered upon in very stormy political times (1875). War clouds in Europe were ominous, and Weld devoted his whole energy to fostering the volunteer movement in the colony. He formed the rifle association, and had the satisfaction of seeing the volunteers increase threefold. Imperial federation also he put forward more than tentatively as a political project, but it was not very warmly taken up. On leaving West Australia Weld received the honour of C.M.G., and the end of his term in Tasmania was marked by a full knighthood in the same order (1880). The Colonial Office now offered him a post of quite a new type, the governorship of the Straits Settlements. Here again his sympathy with native races was a factor of great weight in his administration. He devoted himself mainly to improving re-

lations with the various native states, and before his term expired he carried through a treaty with the Sultan of Pahang which led up naturally to a protectorate. In 1887 he went to Borneo as a commissioner to report on the claims of certain native chiefs against the British North Borneo Company.

While in England in 1885 he was again advanced in his order, being invested with the G.C.M.G. by Her Majesty. In 1887, his term being up, he went on pension and lived at Chideock. He became a member of the county council, a magistrate and president of the Bridport Conservative Club. In 1890, with two sons, he made a pilgrimage to the Holy Land. As a director of the Pahang Exploration and Development Co., he visited the Straits Settlements once more. There he contracted a severe illness, from which he died (20 Jul 1891) shortly after reacclling England. Like his mother, his widow became an oblate of the Order of St Benedict in the convent at Fort Augusta, of which her daughter was prioress. She died on 9 Apr 1903.

Weld stands out in the public life of New Zealand as a *chevalier sans peur et sans reproche*. In his *Passages in a Wandering Life* Thomas Arnold, who saw him in 1848, says: 'Frederick Weld, with his clear blue eyes, curly light brown hair, lithe well-knit figure, and honest, resolute expression of face, was a fine sample of the best type of Catholic aristocrat.' Gisborne found him a man of ability, culture and fine feeling, whose straightforwardness inspired confidence; thoroughly genuine, with an attractive manner which was frank and outspoken almost to a fault. 'He was the soul of honour and he had a chivalrous sense of duty.' His political opinions were moderate and his administrative ability was considerable. All that could ever be said against him was that he was wanting in tact. He was inclined to go too straight for political goals which he considered desirable. Weld was a devout Catholic, his services to his church were numerous and consistent, and the Pope made him a knight of the Order of St Pius.

*Canterbury Gaz.*, ii, p. 53; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1854-66; Lovat; Buick, *Marlborough*; Bidwill; Cox; Rusden; Gisborne; Saunders; Reeves; Arnold; Godley, *Letters*; *The Times*, 21 Jul 1891; *Evening Post*, 11 Aug 1934.

WELLER, EDWARD, was in Bay of Islands and Hauraki gulf about 1832. He and his brothers (Joseph and George), all of Sydney; founded the first whaling station in Otago in 1831. In that year they bought the *Lucy Ann*. They had some trouble with unfriendly Maoris and difficulties in sending their products to England, as New Zealand was not a British possession. In 1835 they established a shore station at Timaru. By 1839 they had purchased a large area of land from Otago chiefs, and Weller drew up a scheme to settle about 50 families on it. In 1840 they investigated the prospect for a station at Port Levy. When the competition of whalers in the southern part of New Zealand increased, the Wellers reduced their establishments and Edward returned to Sydney, where he died.

McNab, *Murihiku and Whaling Days*; Woodhouse; Hocken, *Otago*.

WELLS, ADA (1863-1933) was born in England, and came to New Zealand in the *Merope* at the age of 10. She was educated at Avon-side school for girls, Christchurch, where she profited much by the influence of Mrs Alfred Hill and Miss Gresson. Proceeding to the West Christchurch school, she gained a junior universityscholarship, and entered Canterbury College to train for the teaching profession. From there she passed to a position on the staff of the Girls' High School. Influenced in life by the teachers mentioned, by Mrs T. S. Foster and Professor Macmillan Brown, she resisted the extreme materialism of modern education, and sought to inculcate a love of language and literature. She was associated with Kate Shepard in the women's movement, being for some years first secretary of the National Council, and assisted in the formation of the Children's Aid Society which developed into the Society for the Protection of Women and Children. She took a leading part in the foundation by Professor Bickerton of the Canterbury Institute, of which she was president for many years. Miss Wells was the first woman member of the Christchurch City Council (1917), being a colleague of H. G. Ell. During 1914-18 she was actively associated with the peace council, resisting the conscription of young boys for military service. Miss Wells died on 22 Mar 1933.

*Woman To-day*, Jun 1937.

WELLS, BENJAMIN (1824-81) was born at Plumstead, Kent, his father being employed in the Ordnance Department at Woolwich. As a youth he was much interested in natural history, and had a good knowledge of botany, besides being a competent classical scholar with a facility in languages. Before leaving England he contributed to the natural history of Woolwich. He came to New Zealand in the *Cornwall* in 1849 and took up land in Taranaki (appearing on the roll as a cordwainer). On the outbreak of the Maori war the family withdrew to New Plymouth, and eventually to Nelson, while he served in the militia. Belonging to a strong dissenting family, Wells conformed in early life to the doctrines of the Church of Scotland; but in 1854 he was accepted as a lay preacher by the Primitive Methodist Society. He continued acting until his death, having by this time become almost undenominational, and he conducted services in the backblocks whenever they were required. For a short while he acted as schoolmaster in Nelson, and he was always thereafter closely identified with education. He was chairman of the first Taranaki education board (under a provincial ordinance) and afterwards under the national system (1877-81); and until his death was chairman of the school commissioners. In 1874, after revisiting England, he became editor of the *Taranaki News*. He was a member and afterwards treasurer of the harbour board.

Wells in 1878 published a *History of Taranaki*. He died on 7 Jun 1881.

*Cycl. N.z.*, vi; *Taranaki News*, 8 Jun 1881; Wells. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

WELLS, WILLIAM, who was born in 1810, arrived by the *Eden* in 1850 and farmed at Wapauka. He was M.P.C. for Suburbs of Nelson 1855-57 and for Suburban North 1857-61; and sat in Parliament for 12 years (for Wairall 1855-58; for Suburbs North 1861-70).

*Cycl. N.z.*, vi; Wakelin.

WEMYSS, JAMES BALFOUR, was a son of Major James Wemyss (1799-1871), of Wemyss Hall, Fifeshire. He came to Canterbury in the *Agra* (1852), held a portion of the Broadlands run (1851-54), and in 1853 took up the Rokeby run. About 1854 he moved to Nelson, and took up land at the Wairau. He represented Wairau in the Nelson provincial Council

## TE WERA

(1857-59) and was a member of the executive (1859-62). He was elected to Parliament for Nelson Suburbs (1861), but resigned before the session. Mter the separation of Marlborough he represented Wairau Valley in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1865-69). In 1865 he was appointed commissioner of crown lands, and he held this post till 1871, and was in office as provincial secretary almost continuously from 1868 to 1871. He lived in Nelson until 1871, when he inherited Wemyss Castle, and returned to Scotland.

*Nelson and Marlborough P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Buick, *Marlborough*; Acland; *Marlborough Exj.ress*, 13 Dec 1871.

TE WERA HAURAKI KAITEKE (?-1839), a celebrated Ngapuhi chief, was the son of Kai-teke, or Te Wera, and lived at Te Ahuahu, near Waimate. He was one of Hongi's trusted leaders and his chief priest, but frequently quarrelled with Hongi's father, Te Hotete. Kendall visited him at Kerikeri (Jun 1815) and Marsden in 1819. In 1817 Te Wera visited the East Coast with a taua of 500 Ngapuhi under Titore. They attacked the Wainui pa, and other parts of Mallia peninsula, and swept away the Ngati-Kahungunu defenders, who were helpless before their muskets. Amongst the 40 prisoners they took back to Bay of Islands was an Arawa chiefs daughter, Te Ao Kapu-rangi, whom Te Wera married. (He took the name 'Te Wera' when tleir child died of burns.) On a later visit he captured the Ngati-Kahungunu chief Whareumu, whom he took to the north. By this time (1821) he was somewhat under missionary influence at Okura, Kerikeri, and inclined to be less destructive of human life. After assisting Hongi in the attack on Mokoia (1823), where Te Ao Kapu-rangi by a ruse saved many of her own Ngati-Rangiwewehi people, Te Wera and Pomare proceeded to vHakatane and captured the Ngati-Awa pa at Puketapu. Then they broke up to scour the country, Te Morenga following up one party and Moka another, while Pomare and Te Wera, with the main body, caught the fugitive Ngati-Awa at Tunanui. Eventually a peace was made with Mautaranui at Manawaru. Mter calling at Opotiki, Te Wera's nephew Marino undertook an independent expedition against Te Whanau-a-Apanui at Te Kaha and was killed.

Parting company with Pomare at Waiapu, Te

## WEST

Wera proceeded to deliver Whareumu to his people at Mallia. On their invitation he agreed to stay with them and make Mallia a rallying point for the whole of the Ngati-Kahungunu, who were suffering from the land-hungry raids of the central tribes, particularly Ngati-Raukawa, assisted by Ngati-Tuwharetoa. It was agreed that if there was any fighting in future it should take place outside of the district. Te Wera offered to protect the Ngati-Kahungunu and advised them to come to reside in Mallia until they should be able to clear the marauders out of the Heretaunga plains. Eventually Pareihe (q.v.) came to discuss an alliance of the Hawkes Bay tribes, which was agreed to. Meanwhile Pakake fell to an attack by a strong taua. Te Wera had great success in battle. He defended himself successfully against Ngati-Maru, Ngati-Tuwharetoa, and Ngati-Paoa, who besieged him for two months in Pukenui pa. Twice he surprised and routed the invaders (at Mangatoetoe and Waipohue, near Porangahau), so that the Ngati-Kahungunu, who had consolidated themselves in Mallia, were able to return to their occupation of the Heretaunga plains. They and the Ngapuhi lived together until 1836, when Te Wera set out to the north to avenge the death of his nephew 13 years earlier. He defeated the Bay of Plenty people at Toka-a-kuku, but would not allow his followers to eat the dead. Mter the peace with Waikato in 1824 Tiakitai was again attacked by Te Whatanui, who wished to establish himself in Heretaunga, but Te Wera defeated him at Roto-a-tara and ejected him from the district. He was a beneficent ruler of great sense and magnanimity, loyal to his engagements and unwavering in his protection of the weak. Te Wera was the first Maori in the Mahia district to ride a horse.

S. P. Smith, *Wars; Polyn. Jour.*, viii, 242; Lambert.

WEST, LUDOLPH GEORG (1846-1919) was born in Denmark, and educated at a college on the island of Falster and at the Agricultural College in Copenhagen. He came to New Zealand in the *Matoaka* (1868), and shortly afterwards settled in Manawatu. In 1878 he married a daughter of E. Bannister (Johnsonville). Mter her death (1891) he married a daughter of C. W. Greenwood (Akaroa). As an architect he designed many of the private dwellings and

## WEST

public buildings in early Palmerston North. During the Hauhau war he served in the cavalry volunteers, returning to his home in 1869: He was mayor of the borough (1886-87) and a member of the Wanganui hospital board. He contested the Manawatu seat in parliament (1885).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p).

WEST, WILLIAM HENRY (1841-89) was born at Enniskillen, county Fermanagh, Ireland, and came to Melbourne with his parents as a child. He studied at Melbourne University and gained his B.A.; and was ordained at the Congregational Church in Collins street (1870). In the following year he was appointed to Wellington, where he was largely responsible for the erection of the Congregational Church. In 1883 he graduated LL.B. and in 1888 LL.D. He took a great interest in education, and was himself a fine scholar with broad catholic interests. He died on 9 Jul 1889.

*N.Z. Times*, 9 Jul 1889; *Evening Post*, 10 Jul.

WESTENRA, RICHARD (1794-1880) was a grandson of Lord Rossmore. He entered the army as an ensign in the 7th Regiment (Royal Fusiliers), and saw a good deal of service in the later stage of the Peninsular war. The active battalions of his regiment then went in turn to North America, the Ionian islands, the West Indies, and Ireland. In the early thirties Westenra was stationed in the south of Ireland, where he married (1831) Isabella M., daughter of Parker Rock, of Kilpumam, Carberry, county Cork.

In the early forties he retired from the army and went to live with his family in southern Germany, where the elder children were educated for the most part at Mannheim. While there Captain Wilkinson, R.N., persuaded Westenra to come to New Zealand, and they sailed in the *Midlothian*, arriving in Lyttelton in Oct 1851. Surrounded by sons approaching manhood, Westenra took up a run on the Selwyn river, to which he gave the name of one of Lord Rossmore's seats, Camla. At first he had a place farther south, but he disliked the dangerous river crossings and exchanged it for Camla. The original homestead was on the riverbed, but the flood of 1868 washed most of the flat away and drowned 3,000 sheep. A new house was built on the site of the present

## WESTON

homestead at Dtinsandel. Westenra was disposed to live quietly, but in 1855 was persuaded to stand for the City of Christchurch, which he represented in the Provincial Council 1855-57 and again 1860-66. For part of this time he was chairman of committees. He was a justice of the peace and often sat on the bench. A soldier and a gentleman of the old school, his unimpeachable integrity shone in all his doings. His wife died in 1865 and himself on 2 Feb 1880.

War Office records; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Godley, *Letters; The Press*, 20 Sep 1930 (P).

WESWNRA, RICHARD (1832-1903) was born in south Ireland, and received most of his education in Germany. On arriving in New Zealand he took part in the management of his father's property. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Akaroa from 1870 till the abolition of the provinces and a member of the executive under Kennaway (1871-74). He was for some years a member of the Rakaia road board, and when the Selwyn county council was formed (1881) he was elected a member and continued to serve until his death. From 1896 he was chairman. He was an original member of the charitable aid board (1885) and chairman (1886-98). He was also on the hospital board (1885-92, and 1895-98); a member of the domain board, and of the Lyttelton harbour board. From 1885-1903 he was a governor of Canterbury College (being re-elected in 1897 and 1898), and he was also on the education board, of which he was for some years chairman. He was long a local trustee of the Trust and Agency Co.

Westenra married Selina (1833-1902), daughter of the Rev W. J. Aylmer.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; The Press*, 7 Apr 1903.

WESTON, THOMAS SHAILER (1836-1912) was the son of John James Weston (1806-57), a printer, who came to Taranaki in the *Mariner* in 1850 intending to start a newspaper. Educated privately in London, the youth completed his studies in New Zealand and became a barrister and solicitor (1861), practising in New Plymouth till 1863, then at Invercargill and at Auckland from 1864 till 1873, when he was appointed district judge at Napier. He held the same post on the West Coast from 1874 till

## WESTON

his retirement in 1880, when he practised again in Christchurch.

He married (1867) Maria Cracroft, daughter of Henry Hill (Auckland). Weston represented Grey Valley in Parliament (1881) and Inangahua (1881-83), when he resigned. He was twice chairman of the North Canterbury education board, and was a governor of Canterbury College (1894-1902) and sometime chairman. In 1875 he acted, with Richmond Beetham, as a commission to inquire into the West Coast colliery reserves, and he was a member of the commission on the salaries of primary school teachers. Weston was retained by the Government in 1863 to defend the Maori murderers of Lieut Tragett and Dr Hope, and in 1865 to defend the murderer of Hamlin. He died on 15 Oct 1912.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

WESTON, THOMAS SHAILER (1868-1931) was born in Auckland, the son of T. S. Weston (q.v.), and was educated at Christ's College, Christchurch (1881-85), where he was head prefect, provincial government scholar (1881-83), and senior Somes scholar (1884). He graduated at Canterbury College (B.A., 1888; M.A., 1st cl. hons political science, 1889; LL.B., 1892). He practised law for many years in Wellington. Weston took a keen interest in political and international matters. He was at different times president of the New Zealand Employers' federation, and of the Taranaki chamber of commerce. During the war of 1914-18 he was a member of the repatriation board and he acted on the taxation commissions of 1922 and 1924. In 1926 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 20 Jan 1931). He was an employers' representative at the International Labour conference (1930). Weston was interested in art, and was president of the New Zealand Academy of Fine Arts. He was a member of the New Zealand law council, and some time a governor of the New Plymouth High School.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1926-31; *Christ's Coll. School List; The Dominion*, 21 Jan 1931 (p).

WESTON, WARWICK (1838-95) was born in England, the son of John James Weston, who came to Taranaki in the *Mariner* in 1850. Warwick was educated at Christ's Hospital. On

## WHAANGA

coming to New Zealand he entered-into commercial life, and represented New Plymouth in the Provincial Council (1864-66). He went to Thames on the outbreak of the goldfields there, and a few years later was appointed an inspector of the New Zealand Insurance Co., of which he became general manager on the death of G. P. Pierce (1891). He died in Dec 1895.

*N.Z. Herald*, 21 Jan 1896; *Taranaki Herald*, 9 Jun 1891.

WESTRUP, CHARLES, who was born in England, joined the Forest Rangers in 1863, and as ensign (and lieutenant from 1864) served in the Waikato war under Jackson and von Tempsky. In 1865, as captain, he took a company of Forest Rangers to the East Coast, where he took part under Fraser and Biggs in the fighting at Pukemaire, Hungahungatoroa, Waerangahika and Wairoa (1866-67). On the murder of Biggs he took command of Poverty Bay, and ordered the Hawkes Bay contingent to pursue Te Kooti, which led to the battle of Mangakaretu. He was a cool intrepid officer. Shortly after he was promoted to major he retired and took up sheep farming in Poverty Bay.

GUdgeon; Cowan; Lambert; Gascoyne (p); Whitmore.

WEYERGANG, OTTO PHILIP AUGUST (1828-1905) came to New Zealand from Germany in the early forties and settled in Nelson. He was a teacher at the Waimea East School till 1851, when he was naturalised and appointed a master at Nelson College. In 1860 he was made an ensign in the Nelson militia, and in the following year he resigned from teaching, and went to New Plymouth, where for many years he was engaged as a wine and spirits merchant. He sat in the Provincial Council for New Plymouth (1872-73), and was a member of the New Plymouth borough council (1878-79). He later engaged in farming at Eltham, where he died on 1 Jan 1905.

*Taranaki Herald*, 3 Jan 1905. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

WHAANGA, IHAKA (? 1795-1875), a leading chief of the Ngati-Rakaipaka hapu of Ngati-Kahungunu, resided at Mahia. He was the son of Ratau, who was prominent in the later wars against the invading Ngapuhi, and about 1819 was killed with seven of his sons by the Whakatohea. Whaanga was a firm friend of the

## WHALL

pakeha from the earliest days of their intercourse, and protected the first whaling stations in his district. He was early converted to Christianity and the missions owed much to his benevolence. A mild, amiable man, he deprecated violence in his tribal relations and advised friendly arbitration. In Jun 1863 he strongly opposed receiving King emissaries. In 1864 he helped McLean to purchase the Wairoa and Mahia blocks. On the outbreak of the Hauhau rebellion Ihaka showed great energy on the side of the government, and though not a young man led his tribe against the enemy. He showed signal gallantry at the battle of Te Kopane, on the road from Wairoa to Waikaremoana (18 Jan 1866), where he called upon his men to charge the enemy concealed in the fern. Though shot through the body he continued firing and encouraging his men from a prostrate position. Wounded again in the leg, he was carried off the field, and Ropata, by burning the fern, put the enemy to flight. On recovering, Whaanga insisted on rejoining the friendlies. In the action at Te Koneke (Jul 1868) he scouted successfully, but did not reach the scene of the engagement in time to participate. He was present at the engagement at Makaretu (10 Nov), and tried to relieve Hiruharama in Apr 1869, arriving about noon with 100 men and taking up a position on a ridge overlooking Mohaka. Te Kooti sent a party which took him in the rear. Some of his men fled; others who took cover were captured and shot, and Whaanga was left behind in the bush for some days and narrowly escaped capture. Feeble from wounds and age and no longer fit for active service, Whaanga busied himself in the construction of roads in the Mahia and Poverty Bay districts. In Aug 1872 he received a sword of honour for his services. He died at Mahia on 14 Dec 1875. The Government erected a monument over his grave.

Lambert (p); Cowan (p); G. C. Ormond (information).

WHALL, JOHN ARTHUR, represented Grey-mouth in the Canterbury Provincial Council from 1866-67, and in 1869 was appointed the first town clerk of Greymouth.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Harrop, *Westland*.

TE WHANAUNGA, HOR! NGAKAPA, a distinguished chief of Ngati-Whanaunga and

## TE WHAREPOURI

Ngati-Paoa, lived as a boy at Waiau and Tiki (Coromandel district). When he was 25 years of age he led his tribes in the demonstration in war canoes to Auckland to seek redress for an insult to a chief at the hands of a native policeman. Mter dancing hakas on the beach at l'Vechanics Bay a deputation waited on the Governor to demand the native policeman. Grey ordered them to retire on a threat of using force, and they did so, leaving a mere in token of submission. Ngakapa in 1863 led a small party of his tribe in the Kingite cause. They laid an ambush for an escort of the 18th Regiment at Bombay Hill. Hori had a narrow escape in the fighting, his life being saved by the interposition of his wife. He was present at the defence of Rangiriri, but escaped with 100 of his people by swimming across the lake. He joined the garrison at Paterangi, but withdrew after the fight at Rangiaowhia and when the war ended he retired to his home on the Hauraki gulf. Thereafter he was loyal to the Government and assisted in opening up the goldfields to prospectors.

Cowan, *Wars and Sketches* (pp).

TE WHAREPOURI was one of the grandchildren of Te Whiti Katua and Rongo-ua-roa, his first wife. His father was Te Whiti the second, the fourth child of Aniwaniwa and Tawhirikura, and his mother was Hine-te-uru. His uncle was Rawakitua, the youngest child of Aniwaniwa and Tawhirikura. He was older than Honiana te Puni, his cousin, who was the child of Rerewha (the eldest child of Aniwaniwa and Tawhirikura). Ngatata-i-te-Rangi was a great grandson of Te Whiti Katua by his second wife, Tarawahakauka. Thus, in Maori custom, Wharepouri, Honiana te Puni, and Ngatata-i-te-Rangi were first cousins. These three chiefs all originated from Pukeariki pa, which was situated where the New Plymouth railway station now stands. From this pa sprang the two sub-tribes of Ngati-Awa known as Ngati-Tawhirikura (the elder branch) and Ngati-Te Whiti (the younger). Te Wharepouri was senior to both Honiana te Puni and Ngatata-i-te-Rangi. When Ngatata-i-te-Rangi and Wharepouri (then known as Te Kakapi-o-te-Rangi) went to visit their Ngapuhi friends, the latter, when they saw Ngatata-i-te-Rangi watching every move of the Ngapuhi, said: •Hemara rna he

## TE WHAREPOURI

Wharepouri kei roto i tenei tangata' (Friends, this man is like a house in darkness). When the ope returned to Pukeariki Ngatata said to Te Kakapi-o-te-Rangi: 'As this is the honour which we have received from our visit to Ngapuhi your name shall be changed to Te Wharepouri, since their taiba has been given to our leader Rawakitua.'

The first migration of any of the Taranaki tribes to Whanganui-a-Tara was known as Whirinui; the Ngati-Mutunga, Ngati-Rahiri and Ngati-Tama tribes coming with Te Rauparaba. During this migration the Muaupoko were destroyed. In the second migration, known as Tama-te-Uaua, the Ngati-Tama, Ngati-Ruanui, Taranaki and Ngati-Awa came from Taranaki. It was with this migration that Rawakitua (the leader), Wharepouri, Honiana te Puni and Ngatata-i-te-Rangi and their followers came to Whanganui-a-Tara. Later the Ngati-Mutunga, having been defeated by Ngati-Kabungunu, were living on Somes island. Shortly afterwards they left in Captain Baker's schooner for the Chatham Islands. Rawakitua stayed at Whanganui-a-Tara only a short time. "When he returned to Taranaki the leadership of the tribe devolved on Te Wharepouri. During a visit of Te Matoha, Wi Hapi Pakau, and Wiremu Otaki to Okorewa they were attacked by the Ngati-Kabungunu and Matoha were killed. Thus commenced the war with Ngati-Kabungunu for possession of the Wairarapa. Ripeka Wharawhara, a Ngati-Awa woman, who had been captured by the Ngati-Kabungunu, was returned to Te Wharepouri and peace was made, the Ngati-Kabungunu staying on the north-eastern side of the ranges, commencing from Turakirae to Rimutaka, and the Ngati-Awa on the Wellington side. Thereafter most of the Ngati-Awa and other Taranaki tribes lived at peace in Whanganui-a-Tara, but a large number went to live in Waikanae and Tory Channel owing to the better fishing and to be near the whaling industry at Kapiti and Te Awaiti.

In 1838 Te Wharepouri went to Te Awaiti to induce them to come back to Wellington, but they refused. Their leaders (Ropoama and Toheroa) said: 'Mawai e noho to awa piro, ka pa ko Arapawa, kia inuake i te wai o te Pakirikiri e tia ko aku hina.' ('Who would live in your poor harbour, when we can drink the

## TE WHAREPOURI

water of the fat blue cod which resembles the grey in my hair.') Te Wharepouri, feeling insulted, replied: 'Ka hoki nei au, ka whakapai au iau ki titi taku raukura apopo au ka awhiana au he wahine tauhou' ('I shall return home and adorn myself to take unto myself a strange wife'). In 1839 the *Tory* arrived in Wellington and Te Wharepouri metaphorically took unto himself a strange wife-the pakeha. He felt that his own people did not deserve to hold their lands as they would not return to them, and he was afraid that should Whanganui-a-Tara be invaded he would not have sufficient men to defend it. Before coming south he had visited Sydney in John Love's schooner, *The Whaler*, and had bought muskets and seen the effect of Love's three cannons on the Waikato tribes at the battle of Otaka. He felt that he would be safer with more pakeha near. Accordingly, on the arrival of the *Tory*, Wharepouri pointed out the boundaries of Wellington-'Te Rimurapa to Te Pokaimangumangu, to Rimutaka to Turakirae.'

Twelve months after the first settlers arrived in Wellington Wharepouri died at his home at Ngabauranga. He was buried at Pito-one pa, where later some of his European friends were buried. A portion of his canoe was erected as a memorial. As the trade in preserved heads of noted chiefs was not yet dead his burial place was kept a close secret until recently. On his death bed Wharepouri said to Honiana te Puni: 'Muri nei ki aku taonga Maori ki aku taonga pakeha' ('Care for my Maori and European people when I am gone'). Te Puni acted accordingly, welcoming the early settlers to Pito-one. On his own death bed he in turn passed on the injunction: 'Waiho to koutou taina hei tuakana mo koutou' ('let your younger cousin be your leader. Call Wi Tako Ngatata'). Addressing Wi Tako, he said: 'As I was charged by our late leader, Te Wharepouri, so charge I you. Care for our Maori and pakeha people when I am gone, and let your voice in these matters thunder to me in Te Reinga:

In his younger days Wharepouri was a prominent warrior. He was at Motunui in 1822 and Pukerangiora in the same year. In 1826 he was with Whatanui fighting against the Ngati-Kabungunu and spying out the land. He fought against Ngati-Ruanui to avenge the

## TE WHARERAHI

death and mutilation of Te Karawa and invoked the help of Waikato to carry on the vendetta. About 1828 he is said to have swum off to Love's schooner and urged Love and Barrett to settle at Ngamotu. He helped to defend Ngamotu in 1832 and took part in the heke Tama te Vaua. He visited Sydney, probably twice. When his wife and elder daughter were captured in the surprise at Tauwharerata, near Featherston, Nukupewapewa released his wife and married the daughter of Ihaia, sending them back to Port Nicholson to make peace. -Wharepouri was closely related to Te Whiti and Tohu.

Family information from Wi Hapi Love; Thomson; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Wakefield; Ward (P); N.Z.C.; H. M. Jervis in *N.z. Herald*, 23, 30 Apr 1892; *Polyn. Jour.*, i, 88, vi, 102, 106, x, 45, 157, 158 xvii 188, xviii, 81, 106, III, 115, 123, 175, 178, xix: 1-3: 12-14, 25-28, xxiii, 75, xxv, 81-87, xxvii, 107-109, xxix, 159, 160; White, *Ancient Hist.*, iv, 170, vi, 4, 5, 90, 104, 126, 127; Dominion Museum Bulletins, iv, 120, 165, vii, 80, 182; *Trans. N.z. Inst.*, v, 84, 400, xxxvi, 20, xxxviii, 196, xlv, 369-375.

TE WHARERAHI was one of the most influential of the Ngapuhi chiefs at Bay of Islands in the early nineteenth century. He married Tari, a daughter of Tapua and a sister of Patuone and Nene. For many years Te Wharerahi enjoyed the position of hereditary messenger and peacemaker amongst the northern tribes. After the sack of the Wesleyan mission station at Kao (1827) he volunteered to escort the fugitives to Bay of Islands, where they were welcomed by the C.M.S. missionaries. In 1828 when he was an old man he made peace with Hokiangia after the death of Whareumu. The Rev Henry Williams placed considerable faith in him. (See PAORA TUHAERE.)

H. T. Kemp in *N.z. Herald*, 9, 23 Mar 1901; Ramsden; Carleton; *Polyn. Jour.*, ix, 30, 109, x, 34, xii, 22, xiii, 45, 46, xviii, 86.

TE WHATANUI, or TOHE A PARE, a chief of Ngati-Raukawa, was a man of great strength and prowess, fair haired and with Roman features. His lands were in the Maungatautan district. When living at Opepe in the early twenties he was invited by Te Rauparaba to join in a heke to the south. In 1821 a nephew, Te Wheturoa, was killed at Mau-ina-ina, and Whatanui and Te Rauparaba urged the Arawa to take revenge, thus initiating the wars be-

## TE WHATANUI

tween Ngapuhi and Arawa. Before this Te Whatanui's son, Te Momo, was killed at Roto-a-Tara (Hawkes Bay). Te Waewae of Ngati-Kabungunu, who married a sister of Te Whatanui, offended Te Kabu-o-te-Rangt by giving a present of birds to Te Kapua Matataru, and was killed. Seeking vengeance for these wrongs, Whatanui, with Te Heuheu and a taua 1,000 strong, invaded Ahuriri and fell on Ngati-Kabungunu at Te Iho-o-te-Rei, defeating them and occupying Roto-a-Tara (where his son Te Momo had been killed) with the intention of keeping possession of the Heretaunga plains. A counter attack was made by Pare-ihe and Te Wera who were armed with muskets and drove the invaders out of Ahuriri. Te Whatanui returned in 1824 with some of the Tuhoe and captured Te Rakiroa pa (near Te Reinga). At the battle of Pohatu-roa he slew Tu-Akiaki (? 1826). In consequence of their failure to gain footholds in Taranaki and Heretaunga, Whatanui at length accepted the invitation of Te Rauparaba to migrate to the south. They were obstructed by Pehi Turoa and Anaua on the Whanganui river, but made peace on the release of the Ngati-Raukawa prisoners at Makokoti. Eventually Te Whatanui joined Te Abu Karamu (q.v.) about 1825. A few years later he was again repulsed on an invasion of Ahuriri. Proceeding south after inflicting losses upon the Ngati-Kabungunu, he met at the Manawatu gorge the vanquished Muaupoko, and offered them sanctuary at his pa (Raumatangt). Against his advice they accepted a Ngati-Toa invitation to Waikanae, where some hundreds of them were killed. This incident led to their siding with the Government against the Hauhau 30 years later.

In 1828-29 Whatanui settled at Horowhenua on the shore of the lake, about five miles from Ohau. The Whanganui people having killed 40 of his followers on a heke, he induced Te Rauparaba to assist him in obtaining vengeance. They captured Putikiwaranui in 1829, the life of Te Anaua being spared on account of previous clemencies to the Ngati-Raukawa. Te Rauparaba's taua this time numbered 1,500: In the later wars on this coast Te Whatanui befriended the Muaupoko, and saved them from extermination at the hands of Te Rauparaba. Horowhenua was his favourite place of abode, but after the incursions of the Ngati-Kabungunu

## TE WHEORO

he spent some of his time at Otaki. He welcomed the Rev Henry Williams when he arrived at Otaki to establish the mission and to make peace between Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Awa after Kuititanga. He early adopted Christianity (under the influence of the Rev O. Hadfield) and offered to his people a fine example of civilised life and manners. Daily prayers were read by himself in his household. In spite of a disagreement over the Manawatu land purchase, Spain found him one of the best disposed and most straightforward chiefs he had met in New Zealand. In his dealings he was always mild and just. When Te Rauparaha formally ceded him land between Rangitikei and Kikutauaki, he suggested that he should wipe out the remnants of the Muaupoko, but Te Whatanui refused to do so and took them under his protection as slaves. He was regarded as chief of the Muaupoko. E. J. Wakefield found him in 1840 settled on the banks of the creek flowing out of Lake Horowhenua. He sold some of his land to obtain guns. In 1849 he lived at Otauru, near Poroutawhao, and at this time he commanded 1,200 toas of Ngati-Raukawa and other tribes. He died early in 1850.

Whatanui's descendants were dispossessed of much of their land 20 years after his death by the litigation of Major Keepa.

*App. H.R.*, 1865, E2, 2A, 2B, G4, 10; 1866, A4, 15; 1867, A19, G14; 1868, A19, 25, G4; 1871, H, L.C.16; 1872, F8, G40, L.C.24; 1874, H18; 1896, L.C. p. 33, 5, 5A; *New Munster Gaz.*, 21 Aug 1850; E. J. Wakefield; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Cowan; Lambert; H. McDonald; *Polyn. Jour.*, vi, 181, A, 95; viii, 180-186, 241, 248; ix, 34-37, 71-83, 105, 106, 140, 152-158; x, 43-47; xi, 60, 147, 148; xii, 162; xvii, 37; xxiii, 45; xxiv, 129; xxv, 40-42, 79; xxvi, 186; White, *Ancient Hist.*, ii, 176; vi, 23, 24, 34, 51, 59-75, 91-94, 99, 102, 193; Shortland, *Religion and Mythology*, 15; Downes, *Old Whanganui*; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, v, 42, 57-71, 85-91; xxxviii, 5, 7, 501; xlii, 90-94; xlv, 372, 373.

TE WHEORO, or WIREMU TE WHEORO TE MOREHU MAIPAPA (1826-95), a chief of the Ngati-Naho, belonged also to the Ngati-Hourua, Ngati-Mahuta and Ngati-Hinetu tribes of Waikato. He was a near relative of Tawhiao through Wiremu te Awaitaia (of Raglan) and through Tapaue (the son of Te Kaingamata and grandson of Te Whakahaete), a powerful Waikato chief who was slain by the Ngati-Pukenga when fighting with Ngati-Maru against

## TE WHEORO

Te Waharoa. His mother was Ngapaoa of the Ngati-Hinetu (Rangiaowhia) who was killed at Maungatautari by the Ngati-Pukenga. His high birth, intelligence and independent character soon gave Te Wheoro a standing amongst the Waikato tribes. At the great King meeting in 1859 he earnestly exhorted the leaders to stick to the ways of the first governor, friendship, love and kindness. He spoke strongly and hopefully at Kohimarama in 1860, supported Fenton in his magistracy in Waikato and did all he could to introduce pakeha institutions. Gorst found him a most intelligent young man, not merely attached to the loyal side by pecuniary interest, but fully believing that his loyalty implied an obligation to obey. In 1861 he was the head magistrate of the runanga of Ngati-Mahuta at Te Kohekolie, and he conceived the idea of building a wooden courthouse and drilling the native youth to keep order. He resisted the King natives who came in force to float the timber away from the site. When war seemed inevitable Te Wheoro moved with his young men to Te Ia, where he established a pa in a strong position; but he could not restrain his followers from joining their tribesmen in the field. He was appointed a captain in the militia in 1863, and his services were enlisted by General Cameron to act as guide in the Waikato war. In trying to avert hostilities Te Wheoro personally met Grey and accompanied him to Taupiri, and after the battle of Rangiriri he went as ambassador to the King leaders at Ngaruawahia. His people suffered severely by confiscations, and remained aloof for many years. In 1866 he was appointed assessor of the native land court. In 1869 he attended the meeting called by the King at Hangatiki, and in the following year he visited the various King settlements and obtained from the leaders terms of agreement with the Government. In order to assist him in keeping the peace in Waikato he was appointed a major in the colonial forces in 1873, and two years later a commissioner for the natives. In various capacities he acted as a go-between and representative of the Government with the King natives until 1879. Enjoying the confidence of the natives on both sides, Te Wheoro had the overwhelming support of the Waikato tribes when they began to take an interest in politics. He represented the Western

## TE WHEROWHERO

Maori in Parliament from 1879-84. In 1882 he attended the meeting at Whatiwhatihoe when the King natives made a fresh demand for the cessation of surveys until they had had time to place their grievances before Parliament. In 1884 Te Wheoro accompanied Tawhiao on a visit to England, in which he was the moving spirit. As the virtual leader of the delegation, he facilitated the negotiations with the Colonial Office. During his absence the Western Maori seat was won by Te Puke te Ao. Te Wheoro tried at four elections to regain the seat but without success. He consistently advocated greater representation for the Maori in Parliament and a separate government. In Jan 1890 he accompanied other Waikato chiefs to interview the governor at Auckland, when the occasion was taken (1 Feb) for a noteworthy loyal utterance of the Waikato leaders. Te Wheoro died on 30 Oct 1895, at his settlement near Churchill. He was a short, thickset man with heavy features, a strong, shrewd expression and a genial personality.

*Polyn. Jour.*, xvi, 25; xviii, 50-56, 60-70, 86; Dominion Museum Bulletins, iii, 56, 57; Gorst; Gisborne (p); *Korimako*, 15 Jun 1882; *NZ. Times*, 17 Sep 1879; *N.Z. Herald*, 10 Sep 1884, 30 Oct, 2 Nov 1895 (p); *Southem Cross*, 24 Apr 1868.

TE WHEROWHERO POTATAU (? 1800-60), a chief of the Ngati-Mahuta tribe of Waikato, was a son of Te Rau-angaanga (son of Tuata, son of Tawhia, son of Te Putu); and was descended through Tapaue from Hoturoa, of the Tainui canoe. His mother was Te Parenga-ope of Ngati-Koura, whose father was of the Ngati-Mahuta. Te Rau-angaanga had the chief command of 1,600 Waikato at the capture of the Ngati-Toa pa, Hikuparea, and was also at the siege of Te Totara, where he accepted the peace overtures made by Te Rauparaha. Te Wherowhero was born at Motuiri, and his own pa (Kaitote) was at the foot of Mount Taupiri and was famous for its kumara grounds. He also had cultivations at Whatawhata. He led the Waikato taua in 1819 which, in co-operation with Ngati-Maniapoto, attacked the Ngati-Toa for the death of Te Vira. He also commanded the allies in the attack on the entrenchment at Te Motunui (1822), where his father engaged in incantations to the stars for the success of the battle. The first attack was successful, but in the counter-attack the Ngati-Toa

## TE WHEROWHERO

pressed the Waikato forces hard and Te Wherowhero fought desperately against overwhelming numbers. Te Rauparaha allowed the defeated Waikato to join Tu-Korehu in Pukerangiora and to withdraw with him to the north. In 1822 Te Wherowhero made peace with the Ngapuhi after the battle of Matakotaki, the peace being sealed by the marriage of his younger brother, Kati (afterwards christened as Jabez Bunting) to Matire-toha (the daughter of Rewa), who was the pupil of Mrs Kemp at Kerikeri.

About this time Te Wherowhero first had intercourse with white people, particularly Captain Kent, who was settled at Kawhia, and the missionaries Stack, Hamlin, Henry Williams and Morgan. In 1824 he summoned Tiaikitai of the Ngati-Kahungunu to Waikato to conclude a peace after the fall of Pakake. His daughter Tiria was married about 1826 to a pakeha living at Kawhia Heads. At the battle of Pukerangiora in 1831 Te Wherowhero is said to have slain 200 of the enemy with his own hand. In 1833 he returned to Taranaki, and captured many prisoners at the siege of the Sugar Loaf. In the following year, with Waharoa, he led an expedition against the Ngauruanui with the object of killing Te Rei Hana-ataua (q.v.). They failed to take his pa (Te Ruaki) by assault but starved the defenders and captured the chief who, however, escaped after the attack on Ngateko. Te Wherowhero then asked for peace. Peace was accordingly concluded, and he returned to Waikato. When the treaty of Waitangi was brought to Te Wherowhero by the Rev R. Maunsell and Tipene Tahatika for his signature he refused to sign, complaining that he had been slighted in not being summoned to Waitangi. At a later date his signature was affixed by Te Kahawai, and his brother Kati also signed, these being the only two Waikato signatures. In 1841 Te Wherowhero accompanied Governor Hobson to Wellington, and visited Te Rauparaha at Kapiti. He then claimed all of Taranaki by right of conquest, but in 1842 sold his rights to the New Zealand Company. When Angas visited Kaitote pa in 1844 he found an orderly open quadrangle and a chapel in which Te Wherowhero, though not a Christian, attended service. He offered land to the Government to induce pakeha to settle in the Waikato. In that year

also Te Wherowhero attended the great review of Waikato warriors at Remuera, which impressed Governor FitzRoy with the conviction that the safety of Auckland was due to the forbearance of the Waikato people. Te Wherowhero warned Heke that he would defend the town against any attack from the north. He was now much under the influence of the missionaries and declined to undertake tribal wars. The chief next in rank to him (Te Paki), who was a great tohunga and an eloquent speaker, was baptised before 1844 and was a steadfast Christian. After the arrival of Governor Grey land was allotted to the Waikato tribes at Mangere, and Te Wherowhero took up his residence there, becoming a close personal friend of the Governor, who erected for him a cottage at Pukekawa (near the Auckland domain) as a town house. At the end of 1847 he made an impassioned speech at the trial of Ngamuka for the murder of the Snow family. He was in the Governor's suite on his visit to Whanganui in 1847, and he and Nene acted as sureties for the good behaviour of Te Rau-paraha during his detention in the north from 1846. In Jan 1848 he accompanied Grey in the warship to return the fallen chief to his people at Otaki. As the Waikato tribes could put 5,000 men in the field in 1856 this friendship was invaluable.

It was therefore not without reluctance that Te Wherowhero in 1857 accepted election as the first Maori King: He was at one with the leaders of the movement in the desire to protect the Maori against the loss of their lands unless they desired to sell, but never sought for himself the honour of kingship, which he knew was liable to bring him under the displeasure of the Queen's representative. He protested that 'he was only a snail: At the end of 1857 he consented to live at Ngaruawahia so that he could curb tribal fighting, and he was installed there in Apr 1858. As events developed he became inevitably estranged from the confidence of the Governor, and complained to Donald McLean that he was no longer consulted when measures of great importance were being considered. Nevertheless Governor Browne's confidence in Te Wherowhero was still proof against the importunities of anti-Maori influences that he should be imprisoned. His honour remained untarnished. Te Whero-

hero was not only a warrior of great prowess, he was an eloquent orator and versed in the literature of the race. He was six feet in height and had a square, massive head covered with iron grey curly hair.

Te Wherowhero died on 25 Jun 1860 and was succeeded by his son Matutaera as Potatau II (q.v.). His brother Kati predeceased him in 1856.

*Proceedings of Maori Parliament*, 1857; Marshall; Gisborne; Lambert; S. P. Smith; H. T. Kemp in *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Mar 1901; *Polyn. Jour.*, ix, 34, 90-95, 109, 162; x, 82; xiii, 64-68; xviii, 56-69, 113-120, 176; xix, 21, 60-75, 134; xxiv, 71; xxviii, 28; xxix, 157, 158; xxx, 49; White, *Anc. Hist.*, iii, 69; iv, 64; v, 45, 174, 177, 187; vi, 3, 16-22, 58, 90, 91; Shortland, 4; Dom. Museum Bulletins, iv, 164, 301; vi, 284, 285; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vols. v, xxiv, xxx, xxix, xi, xlii.

TE WHEROWHERO, TAWHIAO MATUTAE-RA POTATAU or Matutaera te Pukepuke te Paue tu Karato Te-a-Potatau te Wherowhero Tawhiao, or Potatau II (1825-94) was the son of the first Maori King, whom he succeeded in 1860. His mother was Whakaawi, a highborn Ngati-Mahuta woman. Born at Orogokoekoea, on the Mokau river, when the tribe had sought refuge from Pomare and the muskets of the northern tribes, Tawhiao returned with his people to the north, his childhood being spent at Honipaka, on the Waipa. He did not attend the mission schools, but was baptised at Mangere by the Rev R. Burrows, taking the name of 'Matutaera' (Methusaleh), which he renounced in 1867. He remembered the Treaty of Waitangi being brought to Te Wherowhero for signature (which was refused).

On the death of Te Wherowhero, Tawhiao was declared king at Ngaruawahia in 1860. Shortly afterwards the Waikato war broke out. When the British troops, under General Cameron, crossed the Maungatawhiri river, Tawhiao warned the Waikatos not to come into conflict with them and not to defend the line of the Waikato but to retire inland to Paparata and Kirikiri. He learned with annoyance that Tawhiano had fought at Koheroa. Tawhiao was at the battle of Rangiriri with Wiremu Tamihana te Waharoa. Afterwards they tried to persuade his people to retire into the bush, but they refused to do so and exhorted him to make good his escape. Accordingly he left in

a canoe belonging to the Ngati-Tamaoho and retired behind the aukati. After the peace he lived in seclusion at Hangatiki and Hikurangi, even after the general amnesty of 1871. He was rarely consulted on political matters and took no part in the various native disturbances of the next two decades, only giving them countenance as expressions of Maori nationality, of which he was the supreme representative. In 1869 he declined the invitation of Sir Donald McLean to forego his kingly title in return for the allocation of lands on the western side of the Waikato. Grey and Sheehan made proposals later which were more successful only in producing a less hostile feeling.

Tawhiao about 1870 hardened himself against the pretensions of Te Whiti, but in 1871, against the advice of the Ngati-Maruapoto chiefs Rewi and Wahanui, he agreed to hold a joint meeting at Parihaka. Sir George Grey, (as Premier) met the King leaders in 1878 at Hikurangi (Waikato) when he offered to give back land on the west bank of the Waipa-Waikato and to give Tawhiao honours. The same offer was made in Apr 1879, but, being declined, was then withdrawn. In 1881 Tawhiao made formal submission at Pirongia by laying down his arms and soon afterwards, with 600 followers, he made a progress throughout the Waikato. In the following year he ordered the removal of the beacons in Kawhia harbour, and a garrison of Armed Constabulary was placed there to protect them. In 1882 the Native Minister (Bryce) made liberal offers of land and honours on behalf of the Whitaker government, but Tawhiao was unwilling to accept a seat in the Legislative Council a pension which might involve his abdication as King. J. H. Kerry Nicholls, who was present at the meeting, says that he still reigned as absolute monarch over one of the most extensive and fertile portions of New Zealand. In 1884, with Te Wheoro, Patara te Tuhi and others he visited England. Still clinging to his old claims, he later took up his residence at the settlement he had established (in 1880) at Whatiwhatihoe. In 1889 he formed another village at Pukekawa, near Mercer, and a year or two before his death he settled at Parawera, not far from Orakau. In 1892 Tawhiao accepted a Government pension of £210 a year, which it was hoped would end the King movement, but a year later he repu-

diated this suggestion in his gazette, 'Paki o Matariki: He even refunded the pension he had received and refused to accept further payments. Speaking at Maungakawa in 1893 he declared that the Governor, the Government and all government officials must leave the country. The island is mine. But the bakers, carpenters and storekeepers may remain. I will look after them: His patriotism was beyond question; he willingly surrendered his personal pension and privileges to serve the Maori kingdom. He died at Parawera on 26 Aug 1894. His son, Tutawhio (1856-86) had died in early manhood and with Tawhiao's death the King movement lost its strength, surviving only in the sullen aloofness of the Waikato people for many years afterwards. Tawhiao was not considered an able man. He had marked weaknesses but was unquestionably sincere and unselfish. He was a good unambitious man with little strength of mind. He once declined a life appointment as native superintendent at £1,000 a year. His illustrious descent and exalted titles gave him a certain veneration. Tawhiao's sister, Te Paea, died on 21 Jan 1875 at Te Kuiti.

*App. H.R.*, 1860-94; Nicholls (p); Cowan, *Wars* (p) and *Sketches* (p); *Auckland Star*, 27 Aug 1894 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Feb 1878, 30 Jan 1882 (p), 4 Feb 1882; 26, 28 Jul, 13, 20, 25, 28 (p) Aug, 10 Sep 1884; *The Times*, 23 Jul 1884; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, iv, 6; vii, 499; xvii, 445; xxii, 523, 625; xxix, 593; xxvii, 598, 601; xlii, 44, 46; *Polyn. Jour.*, i, 212; ii, 231, 248; v, 2, 4; vi, 186; ix, 95; x, 82; xv, 42; xxiv, 59; xxvii, 81; xxix, 155-158; xxx, 244; White, *Ancient Hist.*, iv, 79; Dom. Museum Bulletins, iii, 38, 57. Portraits: General Assembly Library and Alexander Turnbull Library.

TE WHEROWHERO, MAHUTA TAWHIAO POTATAU (1855-1912), the son of Tawhiao and his first wife Hera, was born at Whatiwhatihoe about 1855, was called to the Legislative Council on 22 May 1903 and made a member of the executive in the hope of breaking down the last vestiges of passive resistance: His influence was expected to make the Maori councils act operate smoothly in the King Country. His appointment was not renewed by the Ward Government and expired in 1910. Thereafter Mahuta lived in aristocratic obscurity, quiet, reserved and taciturn. Kaihau, with whom he was brought up, was for a long time his chief adviser. He died on 8 Nov 1912. He

## TE WHEROWHERO

was survived by his wife, Te Marae, daughter of Amukete, a chief of the same line who was killed at Rangiriri.

*Polyn. Jour.*, v, 4; xiii, 253, 265; xvii, 117; xxvi, 98; xxxix, 155-161; Dominion Museum Bulletins iii, 37, 38; vii, 176; White, *Ancient Hist.*, ii, 180; iv, 62, 171, 180, 218; vi, 248, 260; *Trans. Ni Inst.*, xix, 534, 539, 543, 548, xxxvii, 158.

TE WHEROWHERO, RATA MAHUTA POTATAU (1878-1933), son of the above, was well educated and very progressive. He succeeded to a personal estate of £20,000 and other native interests vested in his father and valued at about £100,000. When Kaihau dropped out of politics he and Rata went into business together in Auckland as land agents. Rata died on 1 Oct 1933 and was buried at Waahi. He was succeeded by his only son, KOROKI TE WHEROWHERO, who was born in 1909 and crowned by Tarapipi Taingakawa te Waharoa.

*NZ. Herald*, 4 Oct 1933 (p).

TE WHETU, a Ngati-Raukawa chief, was born probably about 1780. On the southward march in 1824 to join Te Rauparaha he captured (with Te Whatu) the Ngati-Apa pa at Rangire and sacked Pikitane and Awahuri (when Te Aonui was captured). They then captured Whakatipua and the Rangitane pa of Tiakitahuna (in which was the chief Tamati Panau, father of Ken te Panau). Te Whetu settled in lower Manawatu. He married Hinetiti, a Rangitane woman whom he had taken prisoner, and afterwards at her wish settled down with the Ngati-Whiwehi hapu at Te Iwi te Karl (near Foxton). When Te Whetu visited Colonel Wakefield in the *Tory* at D'Urville Island in 1839, he appeared to be about 60 years of age, but was still strong and fond of conversation. He accepted Christianity a few weeks later. When Wakefield next visited him in 1840 he was in falling health.

S. P. Smith, *Wars and Taranaki*; E. J. Wakefield; *Polyn. Jour.*, viii, 215; ix 113; xi 62, 228; xiii, 80.

WHITAKER, 8m FREDERICK (1812-91) was born at the Manor House, Bampton, Oxfordshire, on 23 Apr 1812, of an old county family. His father was deputy-lieutenant. Whitaker had a legal education, and in 1839 was admitted to practice as a solicitor and attorney. At the end of that year he sailed for Australia in the *Earl*

## WHITAKER

*Grey* (arriving in Sydney on 25 Feb 1840). Sailing for New Zealand on 3 May, he landed at Kaipara from the schooner *Hannah Watson*, Edwin Mitchelson being a fellow passenger. He returned to Sydney by the *City Of Delhi* in Jun and was admitted an attorney, solicitor and proctor on 15 Jui. After visiting Hobart he returned to Bay of Islands, and again visited Sydney in Oct.

Whitaker commenced to practise law at Kororareka, but followed the government when it moved to Auckland in 1841. Next year he was appointed a Judge of the county court. When this court was abolished (in 1844) he returned to practice, and soon became leading counsel in the little community. He was one of the three first non-official members appointed to the Legislative Council by FitzRoy (Mar 1845), and he resigned with Donnelly and Heale to make way for reforms of the Council (Feb 1846). During the fighting in the north (1845-46) Whitaker strongly urged the arming of the people of Auckland. He served in the militia with the rank of major, and was on garrison duty in Auckland when the natives came as far as the Whau portage and threatened the city. About this time he was interested, in partnership with Heale (q.v.), in an attempt to develop copper-mining at Kawau and the Great Barrier, but without financial success. He paid a visit to England in 1846, and returned to the Colony in 1848.

Throughout these years the question of a constitution for the Colony was under discussion, and Whitaker took his part in the controversy. When the elections for the Legislative Council of New Ulster were held (in Sep 1852) he was returned as one of the three members for Auckland City. The Council was not convened owing to the promulgation within a few months of the new constitution. When the various chambers were constituted under this act, Whitaker played a very prominent part. In May 1853 he was nominated a member of the Legislative Council. In Mar 1854 he was appointed by the Superintendent of Auckland (Wynyard) as provincial law officer and member of the executive of the province, and he served in that capacity until Jan 1855. He was not actually a member of the Provincial Council until Oct 1854, when he was elected for Suburbs of Auckland. Within a few months

## WHITAKER

several political opportunities presented themselves to Whitaker's acceptance. In Mar 1855 the superintendency of the province fell vacant owing to the resignation of Wynyard, and Whitaker contested it against William Brown. Brown was elected, but retired before the end of the year. Again Whitaker was in the lists (against Logan Campbell), and again without success. Thus for the time he severed his connection with provincial politics.

Meanwhile he attended the first session of the General Assembly (May-Aug 1854). In the session of 1855 Swainson relinquished the Attorney-generalship and the speakership of the Legislative Council and Whitaker was nominated in his place. He took a strong attitude on the question of responsible government, and when it was brought into force (in May 1856) Whitaker was Attorney-general in Sewell's short-lived first ministry. This, of course, involved his resignation of the speakership. Within a fortnight he was back on the treasury benches as Attorney-general and leader of the Council in Stafford's ministry, which held office for the next five years. Whitaker's legal reputation advanced apace. For 30 years he was the only alternative Attorney-general. When the Government was defeated on its native policy in 1861 he resigned from the Council and entered into partnership with Thomas Russell; and they quickly acquired a flourishing legal practice. In 1863 he was again called in by Domett as Attorney-general, but not in a ministerial capacity. In Oct, however, Domett was defeated, and Whitaker was called upon to form a cabinet in coalition with Fox. Whitaker was Premier and Attorney-general, Fox Treasurer, and Russell Minister of Defence. This was a stormy period in New Zealand history. The Colony was in financial difficulties owing to the extravagance of the provinces, and faced with a Maori war of which none could foresee the limits. Whitaker's measures for dealing with the native question were far-reaching, and the association of Russell with the government was a grave embarrassment. The ministry fell in Nov 1864 owing to differences of opinion with Governor Grey as to the conduct of the war and the confiscation of native lands. Whitaker resigned from the Legislative Council, and was out of office for the next 12 years. He was in Parliament for just over one year, as member for Parnell (1866-

## WHITAKER

67), but his hands were full in his own province.

In Oct 1865 he was elected unopposed as Superintendent of Auckland. Williamson's views on the war made his election impossible, and Whitaker stated that he would come forward only if accepted by all parties, to fight the common enemy and extricate the country from the confusion in which the Weld Government had landed it. The war was going on in six different places. The fight between the provinces and the central government was steadily becoming more intense and Auckland was angry, too, at losing the seat of government. Whitaker demanded a separate civil government for the province, with a lieutenant-governor appointed by the Queen. He seized the opportunity (in Feb 1866) of entering the House of Representatives as member for Parnell (again unopposed), and at once set himself to get the 1856 compact with the provinces rescinded. His private interests suffered by his devotion to public affairs. He had invested heavily in Waikato land and Thames mining enterprises, which were embarrassed. He was also at different times a director of the New Zealand Sugar Co., of the Bank of New Zealand, of the New Zealand and River Plate Mortgage Co., and of the Equitable Life Assurance Co. of New York, and chairman from the beginning of the Auckland Gas Co. Early in 1867 he retired from the superintendency of Auckland and from the House to give his whole attention to his own affairs. This partial withdrawal lasted for about nine years.

When at last (in 1876) he was able to think of re-entering politics he was returned unopposed for the Waikato seat. Towards the end of that year Atkinson came into office and appointed Whitaker his Attorney-general. On the reconstruction of the ministry a week or two later, Whitaker was designated as the minister with precedence, and allowed to remain in Auckland. His land bill was strongly opposed, and eventually withdrawn. The ministry went out of office in Oct 1877. At the general election (1879) Whitaker abandoned Waikato and offered himself at Eden, but was defeated by Tole. When Hall took office in succession to Grey (1879) he wanted Whitaker as Attorney-general, and accordingly had him called again to the Legislative Council, where he acted as

WHITAKER

leader for the remainder of Hall's term. Once more a native measure (the West Coast settlement bill) brought him into conflict, this time with the Southern Maori member, Tairaroa. When Hall resigned, Whitaker reconstructed the ministry and he held office as Premier until Sep 1883, when he resigned to devote himself once more to his private affairs. This withdrawal from the leadership, which appeared to be final, was marked by the honour of K.C.M.G. being conferred upon the veteran politician (30 Jan 1884). Three years later, however, Atkinson again demanded his assistance, and once more he became Attorney-general and leader of the upper house. The end of that Parliament found him in failing health, and he resigned the leadership of the Council (Dec 1890). He had leave of absence next year, and died on 4 Dec 1891.

Gisborne says that Whitaker was not a man of high culture, but he was shrewd, cautious, far-sighted, watchful, and very industrious. He always did the lion's share of the work of a ministry. He was an expert at drawing bills, was a sound and practical speaker, without any particular grace of style. Gisborne considers he was probably the most remarkable man in New Zealand, not because he was most in the foreground but because in the background he exercised great influence on the political affairs of the country. 'He has been the rudder more than the figurehead of the state vessel.' For 40 years he was an appreciable factor in the history of New Zealand; yet he was never prominent in the popular sense, even when he was premier. He has no taste for public performance. He sits in seclusion and invisibly weaves the warp and the woof for public use: In the Whitaker-Fox combination his superior mind dominated that of Fox and led him to adopt measures of wide scope which were alien to his political sentiments, especially in regard to the native question.

Whitaker was at one time president of the Auckland law society and a member of the council of Auckland University College. He was the first provincial grandmaster of free-masons under the English Constitution. He married in 1843 Jane Augusta, step-daughter of Alexander Shepherd (q.v.). She died on 3 Sep 1884.

*Parlry Record; Auckland P.C. Proc.; N.Z.P.D.*

WHITCOMBE

*pass.; Col. Gent.; Cycl. N.z., ii (p); Gisborne (p); Rusden; Monon; Reeves; Saunders (p); Cox; Southern Cross, 25 Oct 1865; N.z. Herald, 30 Apr 1881, 9 Jan, 4 Feb 1884, 5 Dec 1891 (p), 8 Dec 1891; N.z. Graphic, 19 Dec 1891 (p); Evening Post, 28 Jul 1934.*

WHITAKER, FREDERICK ALEXANDER (1847-87), the eldest son of Sir Frederick Whitaker (q.v.) was born at Pernambuco (Brazil). He was educated at Marlborough College and Westminster School, read for the bar at the Inner Temple, and was called in 1868. He practised at Thames, Coromandel and Waikato. In Hamilton he owned the *Waikato Times*, became interested in politics and sat for Waipa (1879-84). An able and fluent speaker, witty, genial and popular, he was one of the best Whips Parliament ever knew. Whitaker married a daughter of Alfred Cox. He died on 9 Jun 1887.

*Waikato Times, Jun 1878; Nov-Dec 1879; N.z. Herald, 10, 23 Jun 1887. Portrait: Parliament House.*

WHITCOMBE, CHARLES DOUGLAS (1836-1904) was born at Rochester, the son of Captain D. T. Whitcombe, and grandson of Sir Samuel Whitcombe, K.C.B. Educated at Plymouth and St Brieuc, Brittany, he joined the audit department at Somerset House (1853). In 1861 he resigned to enter the service of Garibaldi, in which he rose to the rank of sergeant, but had to retire owing to ill-health. In 1864 he emigrated to New Zealand and took up land as a military settler at Lepperton. He was one of the volunteers who brought in the body of Whiteley (q.v.). For some years he was secretary to the Taranaki Provincial Council and in 1869 he became a member (for Grey and Bell). That constituency he represented until 1873, and thereafter New Plymouth until his retirement (Apr 1874): He was a member of the executive the whole of the time and for a month or two in 1870 was deputy-superintendent.

Whitcombe had a caustic pen and his later days in the Council were marked by heated political controversies, as a result of which he was found guilty of libelling Atkinson. In Apr 1874 he was appointed commissioner of crown lands, with several positions of minor importance, sheriff and manager of the cemetery. Retiring in 1885, he went to Auckland, where he was for some time private secretary to Sir

WHITCOMBE

George Grey and secretary of the Auckland Society of Arts. He visited the Pacific islands on behalf of an Auckland newspaper and made a special report on Tonga. Aftenwards he became sub-editor of the *Auckland Bell*. In 1890 he went to live in Tonga as foreign secretary to the King, a position in which his caustic pen again made difficulties. In 1897 he returned to Taranaki, but three years later went back to Tonga and thence to Rotuma. In May 1901, on the death of his son-in-law (Mr Leafé), he became assistant editor of the *Polynesian Gazette* in Fiji. He was an accomplished linguist.

Whitcombe married (1871) a daughter of B. Wells (q.v.). He died on 4 Jan 1904.

*Cycl. N.z., vi (p); N.z. Herald, 6-8 Aug 1885; Taranaki Herald, 5 Jan 1904.*

WHITCOMBE, JOHN HENRY (d. 1863) came from Devonshire. He was trained as a civil engineer in the Great Western railway under Isambard K. Brunel, and in 1854 went to India to take up an appointment. In 1857 he came to New Zealand in the *Blue Jacket*, and was appointed provincial surveyor for Canterbury. In May 1863, with Jacob Lauper (q.v.), he crossed what was named Whitcombe's pass, from the head of the Rakaia to the west coast. Encountering bad weather, and weakened by cold and hunger, he was drowned in crossing the flooding Teremakau river.

*Cant. Gaz., vol x, No. 10; Cycl. N.Z., i, 1023; Dobson; Harrop, Westland; Lyttelton Times, 11 Jul 1863.*

WHITE, DAVID RENFREW (1847-1937), born in Edinburgh, was educated at Chalmers Academy, Hobart, and in 1862 came to New Zealand. For some years he taught at the St Leonard's, Union street and High street schools in Dunedin. He graduated at Otago University (B.A. 1883; M.A. 1884). In 1885 he was appointed headmaster of the Normal school, and lecturer at the Training College, of which he was later principal till his retirement in 1893. For 35 years White was a member of the Otago education board; he was an original member of the Dunedin technical classes association and a member of the New Zealand Educational Institute, the Otago University council (1892-1904), and the Dunedin Kindergarten association. From 1904-12 he was professor of educa-

WHITE

tion at Otago University. White died on 28 Oct 1937.

*Cycl. N.z., iv; Who's Who N.z., 1908, 1924, 1932; Otago Daily Times, 29 Oct 1937.*

WHITE, FRANCIS (1800-77), a brother of the Rev William White (q.v.), arrived in New Zealand in 1835 and settled at Hokianga, where he engaged in the spar trade. From 1860-61 he represented the Bay of Islands in the Auckland Provincial Council. He then moved to Auckland, where for 13 years he followed his calling as a blacksmith. He died on 26 Jan 1877.

*Cycl. N.z., ii; Webster; Ramsden; N.Z. Herald, 12 Feb 1877.*

WHITE, JOHN (1826-91) was born at Cockfield, Durham, the third son of Francis White (1800-77) and nephew of William White (q.v.). He sailed from England with his parents in the *Fortune* (1834), and after being wrecked in the schooner *Friendship* at Norfolk Island, came to Bay of Islands in 1835. He spent the next 15 years at Hokianga, and as a young man he was present at the operations at Ruapekapeka. Going then to Auckland, he joined the Government service first under Ligar (Surveyor-general) and afterwards in the Native Land Purchase department. He had a competent knowledge of the Maori language and by his friendship with tohungas and others acquired a great store of Maori lore and traditions. In 1850 he was appointed interpreter to the native land office, and in this capacity acted as interpreter to Grey and Browne, as well as to Wynyard when he visited the new goldfields at Coromandel (1852). White did much work in the extinguishment of native titles in Auckland province, assisting to purchase the Waitakerei block and the land for the railway line to Helensville. When the Taranaki war broke out he was field interpreter to General Pratt, and was present at the battle of Puketakauere. He was afterwards resident magistrate on the upper Whanganui river, where he exercised great influence in restraining the Hauhau emissaries and wamed the Hanhau up the river against approaching Whanganui (1865). In 1867 he returned to Auckland to deal with native land claims. He was transferred to Napier (1874) and for some time was in charge of the Maori newspaper *Te Wangananga*.

WHITE

Two years later White was engaged by the Government at a salary of £450 a year to translate Maori manuscripts which should become the property of the Government. Seven volumes of his *Ancient History of the Maori* were published between 1887 and 1891. His earlier works included *Maori Superstitions* (1856 and 1861); *Te Rou, Ol' the Maori at Home* (1874); *Plan of the Maori Mythology* (1878) and *Legendary History of the Maoris* (1880). Several of his papers on native superstitions and customs were laid before Parliament and printed.

White was transferred to Wellington (1885) and died on 13 Jan 1891. He married (1854) Mary E. Bagnall (Parnell). He had an untarnished reputation as a public man and was highly respected in his private life. (See W. B. WHITE).

White, *op. cit.*, and MS. in Alexander Turnbull Library; Hocken; Gudgeon (p); Webster; *N.Z. Herald*, 14 Jan 1891.

WHITE, JOHN (1830-76) was born in England. He came to New Zealand as purser in the Panama Steamship Co., and acted as its agent at Hokitika to 1867. After its failure he was agent for the Anchor line. He was a good writer and public speaker and first held public office as a member of the Hokitika borough council. In 1869 he was elected to the county council, and from 1870-75 he represented Hokitika in Parliament. He also from 1874-75 represented that constituency in the Westland Provincial Council, of which he was speaker and a member of the executive (as provincial secretary). He died on 4 Sep 1876.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Harrop, *Westland, West Coast Times*, 6 Sep 1876. Portrait: Parliament House.

WHITE, JOHN WILLIAM (1838-1927) was born near Limerick, Ireland, educated privately in Hobart, and spent three years in a solicitor's office in Sydney. After three more years in an office in Auckland, he was admitted to the bar (1868) and began to practise in Timaru. In 1870 he was appointed crown prosecutor and crown solicitor, and from 1874 to the abolition he represented Timaru in the Canterbury Provincial Council. White died in Timaru on 8 Nov 1927.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Andersen (p).

WHITE

WHITE, THEOPHILUS (1817-1901) was born and educated in England and served the East India Company on a sugar plantation. Disliking this life, he returned to England and was for several years in the Bank of England in London, from which he had retired on a pension. He lived for a short time at Newcastle-on-Tyne (1849) and in 1853 sailed for New Zealand in the *Sir Edward Paget*. White took up land at Ornata, and during the war served in the commissariat department. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Ornata (1861-63) and was provincial treasurer in 1863 and afterwards provincial auditor. For many years he managed the New Plymouth Savings Bank. He died on 30 Dec 1901.

*Taranaki P.C. minutes and Gaz., Taranaki Herald*, 30 Dec 1901. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

WHITE, THOMAS WOOLASTON (1829-87), son of the Rev Taylor White, vicar of Norton Cuckney, Nottinghamshire, received his commission as ensign in the 48th Bengal Native Infantry (1846). Retiring in 1850, he visited the Australian diggings, and later came to New Zealand. Settling in Canterbury, he took up the Warren station on the Eyre river (1855), which he held to 1866, when he bought a share in Sherwood (Otaio). White commanded the Canterbury militia (1861-67). He represented the Oxford electorate in the Provincial Council (1862-67).

After losing his money he went to Fiji and became a planter. In the political troubles of 1873 he organised the British Subjects' Mutual Protection Society to oust the existing government. White and other leaders were deported to Sydney in H.M.S. *Dido*. He returned to New Zealand, was for a while a stock inspector in the North Island, and eventually settled in Hawkes Bay. White was a keen sportsman and rode his own horses at race meetings in Canterbury. He was in later life clerk of the course for the Hawkes Bay Jockey club. He married (1858) Charlotte Letitia, daughter of the Rev F. A. Jackson. (See F. R. JACKSON.) He died at Napier on 8 Apr 1887.

India Office records; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; F. J. Moss, *Atolls*; *Col. Gent.*; *Acland*; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 11, 12 Apr 1887; *Otago Daily Times*, 29 Jul 1914, p 8.

WHITE

WHITE, WILLIAM, was ordained in London with N. Turner (q.v.) on 23 Jan 1822, and sailed with him in the *Deveron* for Australia a few weeks later. In May 1823 he came from Sydney to New Zealand to join the Rev S. Leigh in the new mission at Kao. Leigh was found to be in such a poor state of health that Marsden insisted he should return to Sydney, and White became chairman and superintendent in New Zealand. He showed great courage and resource on several occasions in disputes with the natives. In 1824 he quelled those who had seized the *Endeavour*, and in Mar 1825 he regained possession of the brig *Mercury*, which had been captured and pillaged. When the Kao station was sacked (1827) he was visiting England, and while there (1829) married Eliza, daughter of Thomas Leigh (Huntingdonshire). They returned to New Zealand together in *The Sisters* (arriving Jan 1830) and White took up his duty as superintendent of the mission at Mangungu, being senior missionary for five years.

Before long his commercial dealings in timber and his personal conduct caused uneasiness in Sydney. Whiteley, who joined him in 1833, complained of his chief, and the Rev Joseph Orton (visiting the district in the same year) reported adversely to the committee in London. A committee of Europeans and Maori's (presided over by McDonnell) found White guilty on charges of immorality with native women, and Busby reported the finding to the Governor of New South Wales (1836). No action was taken as the matter was being dealt with by the missionary committee in London. In 1834 he visited Waikato. In 1836 White was dismissed from the mission and forbidden to return to New Zealand. Turner was sent to succeed him. White's commercial undertakings had been profitable, and he claimed vast areas of land by right of purchase. His influence with the natives was still considerable, and the missionaries feared his hostility. In 1840, when the New Zealand Company's expedition was endeavouring to purchase land for settlements on the West Coast, White appeared in the cutter *Acquilla* and placed difficulties in their way. He claimed to have bought the whole coast from Mokau to Whanganui, and threatened to summon the Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto tribes to oppose the Company.

WHITE

Mrs White retired to Auckland for refuge during Heke's war and remained there. She was prominent in religious and charitable movements in the city, and was for some time president of the Auckland Young Women's Christian association. She died on 27 Feb 1883.

Marsden, L. and J. and Lieutenants., Turner; Ramsden; Webster; E. J. Wakefield; Markham.

WHITE, WILLIAM (1831-1917) was born in England and came to Nelson in the *Olympus* (1842). After working at his trade as a miller for a few years, he visited the Australian goldfields. On returning he bought a flourmill at Brightwater which he operated for 40 years, together with a brewery for the last few years. He was M.P.C. for Waimea South (1867-69) and chairman of the Waimea road board and some time clerk to the court there. He died in Dec 1917.

*Parltry Record, The Colonist*, 19 Dec 1917.

WHITE, WILLIAM (1848-1900) was born in Macclesfield, England, and emigrated to New Zealand with his parents in 1851 by the *William Hyde*. Residing in Christchurch, he was educated at public schools, after which he entered the office of the Christchurch Gas Co. He later undertook contracts to build the Southbridge and Pleasant Point railways, and after 1885 managed his father's coal and timber business. From 1878-92 White was a member of the Sydenham borough council, and he was mayor from 1883-85. He was M.H.R. for Sydenham (1881-86) and was also a member of the hospital and charitable aid board (1886-89), the drainage board (chairman 1890), the board of health, and the Waimakariri river board, and a lieutenant in the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry. He died at New Brighton in 1900.

*eye! N-Z.*, iii (p).

WHITE, WILUAM BAGNALL (1855-1930) was born in Auckland, the son of John White (q.v.), and was educated at Wesley College. He was first employed in a seed merchant's business in Auckland and then in a mining company. In 1877, with his father-in-law, he acquired a half share in the Shortland Sawmill Co., which they afterwards sold to the Kauni Timber Co. After spending two years in Waikato, he returned to Auckland (to Bycroft and Co.). In 1896 he commenced sawmilling.

WHITEFOORD

**White** was a member of the Auckland City Council (1895-1900), and the hospital board (1895-97). As a volunteer he served in the engineer cadets from 1871. (Sub-lieut, 1872; lieutenant, 1874; captain, 1875). In 1882 he became a sergeant in the Auckland City Guards; three years later captain in the Gordon Rifles, in 1895 lieutenant in the Victoria Rifles. (Captain, 1895; major, 1st battalion Auckland infantry, 1899; lieutenant-colonel, 1900.) In 1901 for a few months he commanded the Auckland district. He was rifle champion in 1886. White married Amy, daughter of C. J. Stone. He died on 22 Feb 1930.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *N.z. Herald*, 24 Feb 1930.

**WHITEFOORD, CALEB** (1839-91) was born in Tasmania, the son of John Whitefoord, formerly recorder and commissioner in bankruptcy, and grandson of the celebrated wit and litterateur Caleb Whitefoord (secretary to the British embassy in Paris 1782-92). Having received a liberal and practical education, Whitefoord accepted a cadetship in the Victorian police, was transferred to the mounted police, and became an inspector. On retrenchment being applied to the force, he came to the West Coast and was appointed warden in 1867 and magistrate for the Grey valley two years later. He married (1869) a daughter of R. H. Willis (of Launceston, Tasmania, and Canterbury). In 1875 he was transferred to Kaiapoi and Rangiora, where he purchased a property upon which to reside. Besides his magisterial duties, Whitefoord acted as royal commissioner on occasions (notably inquiring into the Jackson's Bay settlement and the Dunedin gaol). He was a prominent churchman, a churchwarden of St Bartholomew's, Kaiapoi, a lay reader and member of the diocesan synod from 1879 and of the standing committee. He was an active freemason. On the formation of the Kaiapoi Rifles (1885) he was appointed captain, and he promoted cadet corps in the town. Whitefoord died on 13 Feb 1891.

*Westport Times and Star*, 28 Dec 1926 (p); *Lytelton Times and The Press*, 14 Feb 1891.

**WHITELEY, JOHN** (1806-69) was born at Eddingley, Kneesall, Nottinghamshire, on 20 Jul 1806. He early evinced a religious disposition, and at the age of 20 was an accepted

WHITELEY

Christian. He was in the first instance a member of an independent church, but on removal to Newark he threw in his lot with the Wesleyans and became a local preacher. In 1831 he was accepted as a candidate for missionary work, and he was ordained to the Wesleyan Ministry in Lambeth Chapel on 27 Sep 1832. He married, and took his wife to the old mission house in Hatton Garden, London. - Two months later (5 Nov) they sailed in the *Caroline* to join the Wesleyan Mission Society's establishment at Hokianga. They reached Sydney in Mar 1833. Sailing again in the schooner *New Zealand* with the Rev Joseph Orton, they landed at Bay of Islands on 21 May and proceeded overland to Mangungu.

There Whiteley made a conscientious study of the Maori language, which he was soon able to speak fluently, thereby gaining considerable influence with the natives. In pursuance of a decision to open stations to the southward he left in Feb 1834, with White, and established a mission at Kawhia, where the natives had already erected a chapel and obtained books. Assisted by the influence of the convert Te Awaitaia (q.v.), this mission promised great results until, in accordance with an agreement entered into by the Wesleyan and Church Missionary Societies in London, it was decided in 1835 to close the stations in the south. With deep regret Whiteley retraced his steps to the Hokianga (Jun 1836), to open a new station (which he called Newark) at Pakanae, near the mouth of the river. During the next two years he made journeys with Turner and other missionaries amongst the northern tribes. He was strong and active, a fine walker, a good preacher and an exemplary Christian, who gained the confidence of the northern Maori as he had done of those of the Waikato. In Dec 1838 with his wife and four children, he reopened the station at Kawhia, where for the next 16 years he worked with conspicuous success. On various dates between 28 Apr and 3 Sep 1840 Whiteley and Wallis witnessed the signatures of the 10 Kawhia chiefs to the Treaty of Waitangi. In 1844, at the request of FitzRoy, Whiteley exercised his influence to soothe the hostility between the settlers of Taranaki and the Ngati-Awa slaves who had been manumitted by their Waikato conquerors through his influence and that of Wallis.

TEWHITI

In 1855 he was chairman of the Auckland district. In the following year he was removed to Taranaki, where he laboured successfully for both races. He did much to smooth tribal feelings in connection with the Puketapu feud, and took a great interest in native education, especially in connection with the Grey Institution at Ngamotu. It was he who baptised Te Ua (q.v.) with the name of 'Horopapera.' Whiteley established the native chapel at Kawau pa (New Plymouth), and when that was taken over for war purposes he had another built at the Henui. For some time he was an unsalaried commissioner for native lands (with Parris and Cutfield), and in the early stages of the war he did conspicuous service to the government by reason of his great influence with the natives. He covered a very wide district on horseback to hold services for the natives; and it was while thus engaged, at the height of the Hauhau rising, that he met his death. On 13 Feb 1869 he rode out from New Plymouth to White Cliffs, where he intended to hold a service for military settlers on the following day. Disregarding the warning of friendly natives, who knew that some settlers had already been murdered and that the redoubt was in the hands of the enemy, he insisted on proceeding, and fell a victim to an ambush. His death practically ended the war in this district. Whiteley left a widow and several daughters.

*G.B.O.P.*, 1847/837; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); W. Brown, p. 264-74; Buller; Wells; Turner; Pratt, Minutes Conf. 1938; *Wesleyan Record* (Sydney), 9 Mar 1869.

**TE WHITI ORONGOMAI** (1831-1907), son of Honi Kakahi, a Ngati-Awa chief, and Rangikawau, a daughter of Te Whetu, of Taranaki, was born at Ngamotu after the battle of Pukerangiora (1831). He was descended from Takarangi and Raumahora, through whose marriage peace was made at the siege of Whakarewa. His grandfather, Te Whiti, was the brother of Rewha-i-te-Rangi, the father of Te Puni (q.v.). Te Whiti married Whakairi, and their son, Tohu Kakahi, and his wife Rangikawau, were the parents of Te Whiti Orongomai. Rewha was killed at Rewarewa pa (about 1805-10).

Te Whiti's hapu was Patukai, of Taranaki. Not a chief of high rank, he was brought up at Warea and there at the mission school learned

TE WHITI

his Scriptures very thoroughly under Riemschneider (q.v.). On being baptised he took the name of 'Eruti.' In early manhood Te Whiti operated a flourmill at Warea, and it is said that he lost a finger at his work. At the wreck of the *Lord Worsley* at Te Namu in 1862 he assisted Arama Karaka and Wi Kingi Matakatea to protect the passengers from hostile natives in the neighbourhood. It is questionable whether Te Whiti ever fought against the British. Cowan states that he was at Sentry Hill and at Nukumaru (Jan 1865). He denied in later life that he had done so, but Tohu and others (including Bryce) declared that he took part in the fighting in the early sixties, bearing a tokotoko instead of a gun. Rusden declared (*Bryce v. Rusden*) that Te Whiti lived on the coast a few miles from Parihaka before 1865 and that the troops several times burned his home; that he then went inland and lived from 1866 at Parihaka, and that neither he nor Tohu (nor any of their people) took any part in the rising. In 1865 he refused to take arms against the Government and in 1868, though he appeared to sympathise with the King movement, he used his influence to prevent his people from fighting. Even some of Ngati-Ruanui remained peacefully with him at Parihaka during Titokowaru's campaign. Parris (19 Jul 1869) said that if Te Whiti had only given the word his people would have taken the field at once, but for a long time he had given substantial proofs of a very different line of action. He was strongly Kingite and his influence was quite equal to that of Tawhiao, who frequently sought his advice. At Parihaka, as in Waikato, there was the same deep-rooted desire for self-government, which was impracticable in the ordinary course of law. For several years Tawhiao was guided by the advice of Te Whiti, but eventually he felt resentful at the pretensions of the prophet, who was apt to identify himself with Jehovah. Wi Kingi te Rangitake frequented Parihaka a good deal, and also Titokowaru after emerging from hiding. Te Whiti was already formulating a doctrine of his own, a vague mystical religion based upon the Scriptures and counselling passive resistance to the pakeha. He gave hospitality to fugitives from Titokowaru's force and invited the disaffected tribes to attend his meetings at Parihaka and to give up fighting, since there would come

## TEWHITI

a Day of Reckoning when the whites would all depart from New Zealand and leave it to the natives. For this occasion a fund was subscribed for many years. Te Whiti at this time was full of superstition and believed in the supernatural. On the 18th of every month the natives visited Parihaka (18 Jun being the red-letter day of the year). Te Whiti at this time adopted the title 'Te Whiti Orongomai.' His brother-in-law Tohu (q.v.) was his junior coadjutor and under their influence the natives were encouraged in sobriety, industry and orderly habits. Parihaka became almost a republic within the state.

The sincerity and patriotism of Te Whiti are generally admitted, though the passive methods adopted for retarding settlement caused much ill-feeling amongst a pakeha population which was clamouring to settle the agricultural lands of south Taranaki. Te Whiti encouraged the belief amongst his followers that the confiscations of the sixties had been reversed, or at any rate abandoned, and that the intrusion of the pakeha on the Waimate Plains ought to be resisted. Like other Maori leaders of his time, he was convinced that the salvation of the race could only come from isolation and that all intercourse with the pakeha should be discouraged. When the surveys were proceeded with in the period 1879-81 Te Whiti countenanced more active objection. Parties of young men ploughed up land in the occupation of Europeans, and later interfered with the surveyors and the roadmakers by erecting fences across the roads and removing survey pegs. His object in directing these activities was to draw the attention of the Government to the question of confiscations, which had left certain tribes quite landless. He claimed all the land between Waingongoro and Stoney Creek. As the tension increased between settlers and Maori the Armed Constabulary were strengthened and redoubts were erected near every settlement in Taranaki-precautions which in themselves were liable to become offensive. Party after party of passive resisters was arrested and imprisoned. Titokowaru (q.v.) and Te Whetu were two of the most aggressive. In May 1881 156 of Te Whiti's followers were in gaol, 161 having been released in the previous month. The Native Minister (John Bryce) who was a frontier-settler with experience in the

## TEWHITI

earlier wars, left the Hall Ministry as a protest against its supine treatment of the native question. He rejoined the ministry in Oct 1881 when it agreed to have a settlement, and in the following month, after giving Te Whiti due warning, a force of 1,600 Armed Constabulary and volunteers (under Lieut-colonel Roberts) accompanied by two ministers (Bryce and Atkinson) advanced upon Parihaka. On the morning of 5 Nov the pa was entered and Te Whiti, Tohu and a number of their followers were arrested without the slightest resistance. Hiroki (a murderer who had sought sanctuary at Parihaka and to try whom Te Whiti had invited the Supreme Court to go to Parihaka) also gave himself up. The two leaders were committed for trial at New Plymouth, but instead of being tried were held as ordinary prisoners at the Governor's pleasure and conducted all over the South Island as honoured guests. They were eventually released in 1883 and returned to their home.

Te Whiti, a man of keen intellectual powers, was deeply interested in everything that he saw during this journey. While he was absent his wife, Hukurangi (who was of distinguished Taranaki blood and a sister of Tohu's wife) died. It seemed at first that Te Whiti's mana had suffered by his imprisonment, but within a year or two it was as great and as far-reaching as ever. Followers all over New Zealand (and even in the Chatham Islands) contributed regularly to his funds and held aloof from all traffic in land or rents. The Te Kau-ma-Rua of Titokowaru's campaign was adopted for the more peaceful purposes of Te Whiti-ism, and the obstructive doctrine of passive resistance occasionally (as in the arrest of Hursthouse, q.v.) and other incidents took a definitely active turn. Titokowaru himself, on emerging from his sanctuary on the Waitara river, assisted Te Whetu in the field work of Te Whiti-ism. In 1886 Te Whiti was again under detention in Wellington, with Titokowaru. He was imprisoned for three months and fined £100 for forcible entry on lands that he claimed as his own by ancestral right. In the early nineties a disagreement between him and Tohu regarding the disposal of the Day of Reckoning Fund caused an estrangement which lasted for the remainder of their lives. Henceforward they were leaders of rival factions in the village

## WHITMORE

(each endeavouring to outdo the other in the construction of roads and the erection of modern houses) and of rival followings throughout the western part of the North Island. Both had adherents in every village on the Whanganui river, all over Taranaki and down the coast to Wellington. There was no further resistance to pakeha settlement.

Te Whiti died at Parihaka on 18 Nov 1907, a few months after the death of Tohu. He was unquestionably a man of high principle, plain living, humble and gentle in dealing with his own people, by whom he was held in deep respect. J. P. Ward in *Wanderings with the Maori Prophets* says that he was about 5ft 10in in height, broad and strongly built, with an active, nervous temperament. His general appearance was prepossessing. He had a high narrow forehead, small piercing eyes, a square, firm handsome face. He spoke logically, and showed a keen and intelligent interest in everything he saw. Eloquent, subtle, unquestionably patriotic, he exercised a sway which was for the most part beneficial. Peace, industry and sobriety he enjoined upon his people. It was to the economic claims of the advancing pakeha settler that his teaching was obnoxious.

*App. H.R.*; Gisborne; *Polyn. Jour.*, vol. 17, 188; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; J. P. Ward, *op. cit.* (p); Stout in *Melbourne Review*, viii, 164-85; *NZ Herald*, 18 Jun 1879; *NZ Times*, 19, 20, 23 Nov 1907; *Taranaki Herald*, 19, 28 Nov 1907, 17, 20 Mar 1926.

WHITMORE, SIR GEORGE STODDART (1830-1903) was born at Malta, the son of Major George St Vincent Whitmore, R.E., and grandson of General Sir George Whitmore, K.C.H. (colonel-commandant R.E.). His mother was a daughter of Sir J. Stoddart, chief justice of Malta. Educated at the Edinburgh Academy and the Staff College, he received his first commission (23 Jan 1847) as ensign in the Cape Mounted Rifles, with which regiment he first saw active service in the Kaffir wars of 1847 and 1851-53, and in the Boer rising of 1848. In the latter he was present at every engagement and commanded the escort of Sir Harry Smith (Mar-Nov 1851). Promoted lieutenant (21 May 1850), he was appointed brigade-major to the division (1852) and continued to serve under Sir G. Cathcart until the end of the operations. In 1853 he was major

## WHITMORE

of brigade to cavalry: He had two horses shot under him and was repeatedly thanked for his Intrepidity, resource and courage.

Promoted captain (7 Jul 1854), he was appointed to the 62nd Foot. In 1855 he proceeded to the Crimea as aide-de-camp to Sir Henry Storks. In the early part of the campaign he was detached on special service in connection with remounts in Hungary, Austria and the principalities, and then with the cavalry of the Turkish contingent in Crimea and Kertch. He was with his own regiment, the 62nd, before Sebastopol. On the termination of the campaign Whitmore was chosen to remain in the Crimea to help wind up the affairs of the army. The methodical and businesslike manner in which his accounts were returned evoked a flattering testimonial from the auditor-general. For his services in the war he received the brevet of major (6 Jun 1856), the Turkish medal, the Medjidieh (4th class) and three British medals. On his return to England he took command of the regimental depot in Ireland, but was shortly appointed aide-de-camp to Sir W. Eyre, commander-in-chief in Canada. In 1860 he was admitted to the staff college, and at the end of the following year he passed out first.

In Jan 1861 Whitmore sailed for New Zealand as military secretary to Sir Duncan Cameron. When as a result of interference by the political authority Cameron resigned, Whitmore also proffered his resignation. Cameron's offer was declined by the War Office, but that of Whitmore was accepted as a matter of course. He accordingly retired by selling his commission (7 Nov 1862) and became a landowner in Hawkes Bay. In Dec 1862 he was appointed to the commission of the peace, and in Mar 1863 he became civil commissioner for the Ahuriri district in succession to Lieut-colonel A. H. Russell. A few months later he was appointed major commanding the military district of Napier, and then chief inspector of the Colonial Defence Force. Almost immediately fighting broke out again in Taranaki in consequence of the murder of Lieut Tragett and Dr Hope. Whitmore volunteered to serve under Cameron, and took part in all the operations up to the action at Katikara (4 Jun 1863). He accompanied Cameron to Waikato, and was present at the battle of Orakau. He then returned to Hawkes Bay. He was appointed commandant

WHITMORE

of the Colonial Defence Force in Jul 1863, and two months later was called to the Legislative Council.

During most of the year 1865 Whitmore was on a visit to England, and so missed the operations of that period. Not long after his return to Hawkes Bay the province was threatened by a Hauhau invasion from the Taupo country, and Whitmore was called upon to command the local defence force. Hurriedly raising a force, he marched out of Napier on the night of 11 Oct 1866 with 200 volunteers and a strong body of friendly natives under Locke, Tareha and Renata Kawepo, and took up a position on the Tutaekuri river. Early next morning the Hauhau position at Omarunui was surrounded and attacked, and after a sharp fight practically the whole of the enemy were killed or captured, including amongst the former the Hauhau preacher Panapa. Colonel Fraser had meanwhile surprised the small mounted force under Te Rangihiroa which threatened Napier from the direction of Petane. Thus the invasion ended.

Whitmore now entered into local politics, being elected in Apr 1867 to represent Wairoa in the Provincial Council. Towards the end of the year he was appointed commandant of the newly organised Armed Constabulary force. In the middle of 1868 alarm was caused by the escape of Te Kooti and his followers from the Chatham islands and the invasion of Poverty Bay. With the permission of the Government, Whitmore raised in Napier a small force of 30 paid volunteers. They arrived in H.M.S. *Rosario* too late to assist the settlers in their fight at Paparata, and the raiders made good their escape with a large number of captured horses and camp equipage. Having suffered considerable hardship and reached the limits of the district in which they could be called upon to fight, the local settlers refused to continue the pursuit, and Whitmore was compelled to await reinforcements. An overbearing manner and inconsiderate demands on this and other occasions were responsible for much resentment on the part of the militia and volunteers, to whom the rigid discipline of the regular army was distasteful. The pause in the pursuit allowed Te Kooti to inflict another reverse upon the Wairoa contingent and to make his escape to the bush some days ahead of Whit-

WHITMORE

more. Though weakened by the departure of the Poverty Bay settlers, Whitmore followed with great intrepidity and came up with the rearguard in the rugged bed of the Ruakitire river in the afternoon of 8 Aug. With his force of only 118 (of whom 76 were Europeans) he maintained the pursuit until dusk, crossing the river no less than eight times. The retreating enemy fought fiercely, and inflicted such losses that Whitmore prudently broke off the engagement at dusk and with great difficulty brought off his wounded. Te Kooti himself was borne into the bush wounded. Lack of provisions compelled a retirement of the exhausted column, leaving its dead behind.

Whitmore hastened to Poverty Bay and thence by sea to Wellington to consult the Government. Meanwhile a severe reverse had been sustained by the Colonial forces at Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu, on the West Coast. Whitmore offered, in view of the shortage of officers, to serve under McDonnell; but the Defence Minister (Haultain) found the force so disorganised by the reverse that he ordered its retirement to Patea and entrusted to Whitmore the command of the whole of the troops between the Wanganui and Hangatahua rivers. The Wellington and Nelson men took their discharge, and von Tempsky's Forest Rangers were disbanded, openly disaffected after the loss of their leader. The only unit fit for service was the No. 1 (Hawkes Bay) division of the Armed Constabulary. Whitmore took it with him to the West Coast, and set to work reorganising and drilling, while the Government with great energy recruited in distant provinces and in Australia for regular enlistment in the Constabulary. Whitmore's experience in irregular warfare in South Africa was of great value to the Colony, enabling him to create a new force which was eminently suitable for the work ahead of it. Meanwhile Titokowaru was actively harassing the countryside, and Whitmore considered it advisable to withdraw his headquarters to Wairoa (Waverley), whence with the help of native kupapas, he obstructed the advance of the enemy towards the settlements at Wanganui. Titokowaru had fixed his headquarters at Moturoa, four miles to the northward, and Whitmore decided to attack him without delay. The assault was launched on the morning of 7 Nov 1868. The fighting was

WHITMORE

very hot. As it developed Whitmore conceived that the position was too strong for the force at his disposal, and decided to draw off. Though he did so in good order and effected his retreat to Wairoa, he had made one of his worst military blunders. Had he continued the attack he must have succeeded. The reverse at Moturoa, one of the most desperate actions in the war, dealt another blow at the confidence of the Colonial forces. Whitmore fell back to the Waitotara river and then to Nukumarū in the hope of covering Wanganui. The garrisons at Wairoa and Patea were now the only posts held by the colonists between the Wanganui front and the Waingongoro river in Taranaki.

The position was obviously critical, and Whitmore offered to resign. Fortunately he still enjoyed the confidence of the Defence Minister. Titokowaru advanced further, and constructed elaborate works at Taurangaika, only 18 miles from Wanganui. At this juncture news was received of the massacre in Poverty Bay on 10 Nov. Reinforcements in the circumstances could not be spared for the West Coast, so after consultation with Haultain Whitmore destroyed what stores he could not carry off and withdrew his troops to the Kai-iwi river. This front would have to maintain itself as well as possible, with the help of the incomparable cavalry troops of Bryce and Finimore, while Whitmore hastened with his most reliable troops to succour Poverty Bay. On 12 Dec he sailed with 212 of the Armed Constabulary. A few days later he met at Patutahi, Poverty Bay, a force under Preece and Ropata returning from an unsuccessful assault on Te Kooti's stronghold at Ngatapa. Ropata was too prudent to accede to Whitmore's exhortation to renew the attack at once, and the troops camped at Makaraka to await reinforcements. On 24 Dec Whitmore advanced with four divisions of Armed Constabulary (400 strong) and 350 of the Ngati-Porou commanded by Ropata. By the 31st he was entrenched on a hill half a mile from the enemy position, which had been greatly strengthened. On the following day he completed the investment. The Coehorn mortar was brought into action, and a three-days' siege commenced. The outer and second lines of defence were carried, but on the night of 4 Jan 1869 the main body of the enemy made their escape by an unguarded

WHITMORE

preaplace. Many were captured in the hot pursuit. Every male prisoner was shot, 120 out of 136 killed being thus executed after capture; and 150 were wounded in the fighting. The Government losses were 11 killed and 112 wounded. Te Kooti with a few followers fled into the Urewera country.

No sooner was the defeat of the enemy accomplished, than Whitmore embarked with the Armed Constabulary and a new division of Arawa, landing at Wanganui on 18 Jan. He now advanced rapidly with his whole force of 800 Armed Constabulary, the Wanganui and Kai-iwi Cavalry troops and about 200 Whaliganuis under Major Keepa. On 1 Feb they were at Nukumarū, and on the following day they advanced to Taurangaika and dug in without enveloping the position. The men, in good heart, sang in the trenches at night. The defenders replied, but during the night evacuated their position. A clever rearguard protected the retreat. At the crossing of the Waitotara river Keepa was ambushed with heavy loss. Whitmore rested a day or two at Patea. Not far off, at Otautu, on the east bank of the river, Titokowaru had established himself fairly strongly. He was surprised on a foggy morning, but made good his escape up the river into the depths of the forest, and thence to Whakamara. In the forest fighting all the prisoners captured by Keepa's men were decapitated in revenge for the mutilation of a kinsman of the Whanganui chief. The enemy having scattered, the troops now made for the open country and emerged from the bush at Taiporohenui. Whitmore heard that Titokowaru was hiding in the security of Te Ngaere swamp. Hurriedly preparing hurdles and fascines, he crossed the swamp during the night of 24 Mar, only to find that Whanganui friendlies were in the place, temporising with the defenders, and that Titokowaru had escaped towards the upper Waitara. Thus ended a rising which had begun so disastrously for the troops. Having embarked most of the Armed Constabulary, Whitmore visited Waitara to ascertain whether operations were advisable in revenge for the massacre at White Cliffs. The murderers having returned to their own country (Waikato), Whitmore re-embarked and proceeded to Bay of Plenty.

Te Kooti and his sympathisers being still active, it was decided to organise more ex-

peditions into the heart of the Urewera to destroy their food and strongholds. Whitmore accompanied the first column, which advanced up the Rangitaiki river with little opposition and junctioned with the Whakatane column at Ruatahuna on 14 May. Discarding the idea of a further advance to join up at Waikaremoana with Herrick's column from Wairoa, Whitmore withdrew with his wounded to Galatea, and left the district to Colonel St John, with instructions to throw an advance post forward towards Taupo to cut off Te Kooti's retreat to the interior. Crippled with rheumatism, he visited Wellington and Auckland to consult the Government, and was returning to resume his command when a new Government came into office and instructed him to go on sick leave. Thus to his great chagrin the operations were never brought to a final issue. Te Kooti remained in the field for many months longer and was finally pardoned. Whitmore received the C.M.G. (15 Jan 1870) for services which had been of immense value to the Colony, especially in demonstrating the fitness of the New Zealand settlers for guerilla warfare and their ability to end the war under the self-reliant policy. Whitmore was brave, tenacious and intrepid to the point of rashness. Inured to hardships himself, he took his full share of the rigours of the campaign and was apt to push his men beyond their endurance. In his relations with the militia and volunteers he was not happy. Indeed he could scarcely have carried the war to a successful conclusion if he had not adopted the principle of recruiting the Constabulary on a regular basis. His position was not improved by the animosities which naturally arose from his dual position as a commander in the field and a politician.

In 1869 Whitmore withdrew from the Provincial Council, but he remained a member of the Legislative Council until his death. In his earlier years he generally supported Stafford. In 1877 he was sworn in as a member of the Grey ministry, and held the portfolio of Colonial Secretary until its defeat in 1879. He accompanied Sir George Grey on a visit to Te Whiti, in the vain hope of breaking down his policy of isolation. On 24 May 1882 Whitmore was created K.C.M.G. In 1884 he held office as a member of executive in the short-lived Stout-Vogel Government. At the time of the

Russian war scare (Apr 1885) he was appointed commandant of the Colonial Defence Force and commissioner of the Armed Constabulary; and in 1886 he was advanced to the rank of major-general (then for the first time conferred on an officer of the Colonial forces). He resigned the command in 1888.

Whitmore had considerable literary attainments. His despatches, even when written in different conditions in the field, showed great facility and literary charm, and his book, *The Last Maori War in New Zealand under the Self-Reliant Policy* (1902), is refreshingly impartial and pleasantly written. He established a herd book for shorthorn cattle, which he published 1867-70. Whitmore first took up land at Rissington with Major Neale, and afterwards owned the Clive Grange estate. He also, with Beck, held a run at Tokomaru. He married in 1865 Isabel, daughter of William Smith (Rugby, England). He died on 16 Mar 1903.

*Hawke's Bay P.C. Proc.; N.Z.P.D., pass.* (notably 30 Jun 1903; *Brett's Almanac*, 1879; *D.N.B.*; Philpott; Gorton; Gudgeon (p); Gisborne (p); Saunders; Reeves; Rusden; *Bryce v. Rusden* (report of trial); Cowan; Whitmore, *op. cit.* (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 22 May 1885; *Evening Post*, 1 Sep 1934 (p). Portraits: Gudgeon; Cowan; Whitmore; Parliament House.

TE WHIWHI 0 TE RANGI, MATENE (1805-81) was a son of Rangikapiki and Topeora (q.v.), and therefore a grandson of Waitohi, sister of Te Rauparaha. His father was of Ngati-Raukawa, and his own hapu was Ngati-Huia, a branch of Ngati-Raukawa, but he had also Ngati-Toa blood. Coming south with the Tahutahuahi heke (1821), he and his cousin Katu (Tamihana te Rauparaha, q.v.) early adopted a friendly attitude towards Christianity. In 1839, against the wishes of the older chiefs, they made a voyage to Bay of Islands to obtain a missionary for Cook Strait. On being baptised, Te Whiwhi took the names Henare Matene (Henry Martyn). He married a daughter of Te Rangihaeata (q.v.).

Te Whiwhi signed the Treaty of Waitangi (1840). He soon adopted European dress and dwelling, and set an example of civilised life to his tribesmen at Otaki. With Tamihana he made a long and daring voyage in a small vessel round the South Island to introduce Christianity to the Ngai-Tahu and other tribes (1843). He

exerted himself to keep the tribes calm during the hostilities of the forties, and for many years after peace was restored he was a friendly influence in the district. At the same time he was a strong advocate of the rights of the Maori people, and opposed earnestly measures which he believed would tend to destroy their nationality.

Te Whiwhi appreciated the moral deterioration that must follow on the loss of Maori nationality, and has sometimes been regarded as the originator of the King movement. The initial steps which he took in that episode were dictated by motives that were fully patriotic and, in the opinion of Maori sympathisers, fully justified. Imbued by Tamihana te Rauparaha with ideas of a unified state which he had acquired in England, he made his first journey in 1853 to Taupo and put forward his proposal for the election of a Maori king for the part of the North Island which was entirely native. Te Heuheu refused to consider any proposals which might result in a chief other than himself being elected to the supreme position. The Rotorua and Maketu chiefs followed his example and the meeting failed, only to be resumed more successfully in later years. In 1854 a meeting held in the Ngati-Ruanui pa of Manawapou resulted in the creation of the Land League, to stop the alienation of native lands. Then Te Heuheu (q.v.) called his meeting at Pukawa in 1854, at which it was decided to set apart the King Country, to elect a King and council and not to sell land to the government. In 1857 King meetings were held at Paetai (Waikato) and Ihumatao (Manukau), at which Te Wherowhero agreed to be King, and in 1858 the flag was hoisted at Ngaruawahia. In 1860 at Otaki the runanga refused to take part in the Taranaki war.

Early in 1870 Te Whiwhi tried to compose the differences of the Hauhau. In 1871, with D. McLean, he visited the Bay of Plenty, and after the wars he visited all the tribes in New Zealand to assure himself that they were settled. The last visited was the Urewera in 1876. In his own tribe Te Whiwhi showed a fine example, and was head of the teetotal society at Otaki. His wife Pipi (Phoebe) died at Otaki on 14 Jan 1857, and Te Whiwhi on 29 Sep 1881. (See OCTAVIUS HADFIELD.)

A 11). *H.R.*, 1853-74, *pass.*; Buller; Tucker;

Carleton; Jacobs; \V. \Williams; Selwyn, *Annals*; Cowan, i; Power.

WHYTE, JOHN BLAIR (1840-1914) was for many years from 1868 farming in the Waikato. For two years he was mayor of Hamilton. From 1879-90 he was member for Waikato in the House of Representatives, and in 1891 he was called to the Legislative Council, retiring in 1897. Whyte was appointed by the Bank of New Zealand as referee to determine land values. After a trip to England on banking business, returned to Auckland as representative of an English syndicate to report on gold-mining in the province. After a visit to New South Wales in the same capacity, he returned to England, where he died in Jul 1914.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Aug 1914; *Cycl. N.Z.* ii; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Jul 1914.

WICKES, EDMUND (1836-1913) was born in London, educated there and brought up to the timber trade. He worked on the building of the great Exhibition in 1851, and two years later came to Australia in the *Strathfieldsaye*. He was mining at Ballarat and Queensland and was present at the Eureka stockade. In 1863 he came to Auckland and worked as a builder. Two years later he moved to the West Coast, and in 1865 established himself at Greymouth as an ironmonger, auctioneer and commission agent. He married (1866) Eliza Hinchey. Wickes was a promoter of the Wealth of Nations mines and was associated with the Hotation of the Wallsend mine. He established a sawmill at Coal Creek, and began in 1878 to ship red and white pine to Canterbury. He was chairman of the first town improvement committee in Greymouth; a member of the first borough council, and mayor of Greymouth (1871-72). He represented the town in the Westland Provincial Council (1874-75). He died on 20 Aug 1913.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Harrop (p); *Grey Star*, 25 Feb 1928 (p).

WICKSTEED, JOHN TYLSTON (1806-60) was at one time associated with the literary staff of the London *Spectator* under Rintoul, and was a friend of E. G. Wakefield and Molesworth. In Dec 1840 he came to New Zealand (in the *London*) as agent for the Church of England Society, to select 4,000 acres of land in anticipation of Selwyn's arrival. In May 1842 he was

## WIGLEY

sent to New Plymouth to take Liardet's place as resident agent. He found the settlement in considerable confusion and experienced great difficulty in finding land for the settlers, owing to the obstruction of the natives. He persuaded the Maori to allow a track to be cut towards Wellington east of Mount Egmont, but nearer New Plymouth had repeatedly to remove fencing erected by the natives on land which was supposed to have been acquired for settlement. His reports to the directors of the New Zealand Company showed a dear appreciation of the needs of the settlers, but he was constantly harassed by the encroachments of the natives. He was superseded by Bell as resident agent in 1847, and then took up land at Omata and became editor of the *Taranaki Herald*.

In 1852 Wicksteed was elected as an independent member to the Legislative Council of New Ulster (Wicksteed, 108; J. C. Richmond, 30; Scotland, 6). When a year later he contested the superintendency his popularity had noticeably waned. The result was: Brown, 173; W. Halse, 138; Wicksteed, 12. About 1853 he moved to Wanganui and took up land at Kaiwi. He was for some time editor of the *Wanganui Chronicle*, and died on 15 Jan 1860.

N.Z.C.; *Col. Gellt.*; *Vells*; *Seffern*; *Voon*; *Taranaki Herald*, 20 Jul 1853; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 19 Jan 1860.

WIGLEY, THOMAS HENRY (1825-95) was born in England, the son of Henry Rudolph Wigley (1794-1876), afterwards a magistrate in South Australia. Educated at Christ's Hospital, he accompanied his parents to South Australia (1838), completed his primary education, gained experience on sheep stations and took up land on the Murray. In 1860 he came to Nelson and took up Balmoral station (Amuri). He was a member of the Nelson Provincial Council for Amuri (1867-69). For 20 years he was associated with Studholme and Banks in Kakahu and Opuha Gorge stations. When the partnership was dissolved (1892) he took the latter property. In 1870 Wigley was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until 1891. He married first (1862), a sister of W. S. Moorhouse, and second (1879) a daughter of James Lysaght (Hawera). He died on 17 Jun 1895.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *Loyau*; *Acland*; *The Press* and *Lyttelton Times*, 19 Jun 1895.

## WIGRAM

WIGRAM, SIR HENRY FRANCIS (1857-1934) was the son of a London barrister, William Knox Wigram, and the Hon Mary Ann Pomeroy, daughter of Viscount Harberton. He was educated at Harrow, and had spent a few years in the service of the Bank of England and one year with a shipping firm when his health failed and he emigrated to New Zealand. After spending some years in various places he settled in Christchurch in 1883, and two years later established the business of Wigram Brothers, maltsters and brick makers, with kilns at Heathcote and Woolston. He also founded in 1887 the Canterbury Seed Co. (of which he was 30 years chairman). He was a director also of the New Zealand Refrigerating Co., the Christchurch Brick Co., Ward and Co., and the *Lyttelton Times* Co. (of which he was for 30 years chairman).

Devoting himself closely to his business and taking for the time no part in public life or local government, he acquired a leading position in the city and in 1900 was elected chairman of the committee to arrange the celebration of the jubilee of the province. In 1901 he was a commissioner for the visit of the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall and York, and during the Boer war he was prominently associated with various patriotic movements in Canterbury. In May 1902 he was invited to stand for the mayoralty of Christchurch and elected unopposed. There were at that time three privately-owned tramway systems in the city, most of the tramcars being horse-drawn. Wigram was a member and deputy chairman of the first tramway board elected under the act of 1902, which defined a wide area for the operation of the projected electrical system. As mayor he took an active part in unifying the administrative boroughs included in: the tramway area. Sydenham and St Albans were the first to amalgamate (Apr 1903), and Wigram became the first mayor of greater Christchurch (1903-04). In 1903 he was called to the Legislative Council, and in order to devote himself freely to his heavy public duties he retired from active business.

Wigram was one of the earliest public men in New Zealand to appreciate the possibilities of aviation, and before 1914 he urged in the Legislative Council the advisability of an adequate air defence for the Dominion. Having

## WILDING

obtained official sanction, he promoted the Canterbury Aviation Co., with a capital of £30,000. The company during the war of 1914-18 sent to England for service 180 pilots. After the war it continued to receive a government subsidy. In 1923 Wigram promoted a fund for the purchase of the aerodrome, to which he himself contributed £10,000, besides giving an area of 81 acres of land adjoining the field. He assisted in the formation of the Canterbury Aero club (to which he presented the Wigram cup); fostered the establishment of other private clubs throughout the country, and was patron of the Aero Club of New Zealand. For his services to aviation he was knighted (1926). He was also one of the first motorists in Canterbury and was first president of the Canterbury Automobile association. For many years he was president of the Canterbury head centre of the Royal Life Saving society. His benefactions included gifts to the coal and blanket fund, and the coping wall surrounding Christchurch cathedral. In 1916 he published *The Story of Christchurch*.

Wigram in 1920 retired from the Legislative Council and from many public positions for reasons of health, but continued to take a keen interest in aviation until his death on 6 May 1934. He married in 1885 Agnes Vernon (daughter of Harry Eden Sullivan), who survived him.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1934; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Wigram*, 01. cit.; *Lyttelton Times* and *The Press*, 7 May 1934.

WILDING, ANTHONY FREDERICK (1883-1915) was born in Christchurch, the eldest son of Frederick Wilding, K.C., who had been a well-known athlete in the west of England. His mother, Julia Wilding, was a daughter of Alderman Charles Anthony, mayor of Hereford, and was an outstanding personality in the social life of Christchurch. Anthony attended Wilson's school in Christchurch, and at the age of 17 won the Canterbury lawn tennis championship. After some months at Canterbury College, he entered Trinity College, Cambridge, to study law. An all-round athlete, he concentrated on lawn tennis, and in 1910 won the world's championship at Wimbledon, which he retained until 1913. In 1911 he entered the firm of Henderson, Craig and Co., wood pulp merchants. When the war broke out in 1914, he went to

## WILFORD

France as a driver of an armoured car, and was killed on 9 May 1915.

A. W. Myers, *Captain Antholl's Wilding* (p).

WILFORD, SIR THOMAS MASON (1870-1939) was born at Lower Hutt of Quaker parentage. His mother was a daughter of Thomas Mason (q.v.) and his father was Dr J. G. F. Wilford (also a *Yorkshireman*). Educated at Wellington College and Christ's College (1886-87), he joined the legal firm of Brandon and Son, Wellington, passed his solicitor's examination at 18, and on attaining the age of 21 was admitted to practise. After three years with W. T. L. Travers he practised alone, being joined later by Phineas Levi and P. W. Jackson.

Wilford contested the Wellington Suburbs seat against Newman in 1893. Three years later he was elected to Parliament for Hutt, but unseated on petition. In 1903 he won the Hutt seat, which he held until his retirement in 1929. In the National Government Wilford was Minister of Justice and Marine (1917-19). When Sir Joseph Ward lost his seat in Parliament (1919) he was elected leader of the Liberal Opposition and he was responsible for changing the name of the Liberal Party a few years later to 'United'. Ill-health compelled him to withdraw for a time, and he was re-elected to Parliament in 1925 during his absence from the Dominion. When the United Party was returned to office in 1929, Wilford assumed the portfolios of Defence and Justice. In the following year he was made King's Counsel, and later resigned to become High Commissioner for New Zealand in London. In that position he attended assemblies and other meetings of the League of Nations and the Mandates commission; was chairman of the Fédération of Chambers of Commerce of the Empire, a delegate at the Disarmament conference and the Egyptian conference, and represented New Zealand on the Imperial Defence committee, the London Naval conference and the Imperial Economic conference. (K.C.M.G. 1930.) In 1931 he was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn. Relinquishing the post of High Commissioner in 1934, he became a director in London of the National Bank of New Zealand and of the Vacuum Packed Produce Co.

Wilford was a member of the Wellington harbour board (1900-11) and chairman (1908-09).

## WILKIE

In 1909 he was elected mayor of Wellington, and on his retirement (1911) he was appointed a sinking fund commissioner. He was a permanent trustee of the St John Ambulance association. As a young man he played Rugby football for his province in 1888, and was champion tennis player for the Hutt. He was associated with most forms of sport and was a keen supporter of the turf, racing his own horses for 40 years, first as 'Mr Lancewood' and later in his own name. He was also a prominent acting member of the Wellington Amateur Operatic Society, and took leading roles in many of its productions.

Wilford married (1892) Georgina Constance, daughter of Sir George McLean (q.v.). He returned to New Zealand in 1938 and died on 22 Jun 1939.

N.Z.P.D., 1903-30 and 30 Jun 1939; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post*, 22 Jun, *The Dominion*, 23 Jun 1939. Portrait: Parliament House.

WILKIE, JAMES (1844-99) was born at Nelson. His father, William Wilkie (1814-91) was born in Scotland. He arrived in Nelson from New South Wales (1842) and was a storekeeper and the principal founder of *The Colonist*. James Wilkie imbibed radical notions from his father and A. Saunders (q.v.), and had a distinguished career at Nelson College (where he was one of the first pupils enrolled). Intending to follow a business career, he gained a knowledge of book-keeping and accountancy. In 1865 he went to the West Coast goldfields and opened a store at Cobden, but returned to take charge of his father's business. As mineowner on the West Coast he was one of the first to employ steam power. He leased the Brunner mine, and conveyed coal in barges to Greymouth. At this time he had several stores and engaged in gold buying.

Wilkie was elected M.P.C. for Motueka in the sixties, but did not take his seat. When quartz was discovered he conveyed machinery to Reefton; he engaged in the timber business, and finally was an overseer on railway contracts. He represented Grey in the Nelson Provincial Council (1870-72). Moving to Canterbury, he was surveyor to the Oxford road board and then to the Ashburton county council. He carried out the drainage on Longbeach station and advocated the construction of water races. For

## WILKIN

a while he edited the *Ashburton Guardian*. Later Wilkie was engaged constructing bridges on the Masterton-Opaki railway and the Gear Co.'s wharf at Petone. While again on the West Coast store-keeping and mining he was invited to run an independent newspaper at Reefton to oppose the activities of the sharebrokers. Several law cases followed.

Wilkie afterwards joined the *Evening Press* (Wellington), of which he was editor when it ceased publication (1894). He then became a political correspondent at Wellington. He was a vigorous writer, with a fine grasp of colonial politics. For some time he was a member of the conciliation board in Wellington. He died on 8 Feb 1899.

*Nelson Coll. Reg.; Parlt'y Record; The Press*, 9 May 1896; *Evening Post*, 9 Feb 1899.

WILKIN, ROBERT (1820-86) was born at Tinwald Downs, Dumfriesshire, his father being a farmer and his mother, Rachel Douglas Laurie, a daughter of the parish minister. Wilkin received the usual education of a Scots boy. Then he went for seven years to Dumfries Academy, a well-managed school under the town council; and finally proceeded to Edinburgh University, where he attended lectures which he considered would be of service to him as a farmer.

At the age of 19 he sailed for Melbourne in the *Midlothian*. Passing on to Sydney, he went as far as the Namoi river, and inspected the Liverpool plains. There he spent some years managing grazing stations for George Hobler. With two partners he took up several stations in the Richmond river district. He then went farther north and settled as a runholder in the Burnett district of Queensland. Apparently he moved south again before coming to New Zealand, for he was a magistrate for the Port Phillip district of Victoria. In 1858 Wilkin came to New Zealand, and purchased the Avon Park estate in Canterbury. He was uniformly successful in his choice and management of land. At different times he was interested in various important properties, sometimes alone, sometimes with Robert Heaton Rhodes and sometimes with his wife's uncle, Archibald Thomson, with whom he took up Maronan. He was interested also in Racecourse Hill, Carleton, and St Leonard's (Amuri). About 1871 he commenced business in Hereford street as a general merchant and stock and station agent. Wilkin

## WILKIN

took a great interest in importing and breeding purebred stock, especially horses. He was one of the founders of the Middle Park Stud Co., and shortly before his death he imported on his own account the American trotting sire Berlin, who made his mark upon the trotting history of the Colony. He took a keen interest in agricultural shows. The first of these, held the year after his arrival in the Colony at Benjamin Moorhouse's Shepherd's Bush property, Rangitata, was practically confined to merino sheep. Next year it was held where Ashburton now is. In 1862 a general show was held in Judge Gresson's paddock in Latimer square. Wilkin was president, and he took steps to organise an association, of which he became the first president. He was, in fact, its founder, and just before his death was elected a patron. At his suggestion the *New Zealand Country Journal* was founded in 1877, and its pages show constant evidence of his interest. He promoted the publication of the Canterbury herd books and the New Zealand draft horse stud book. He presented to the Association some of its first paintings and a complete set of the transactions of the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland (1812-81).

Wilkin had not been long in New Zealand before he was led into public life. In Aug 1860 he was elected member for Timaru in the Provincial Council. Though he did not reside in the district, and his views on the new provinces bill were at variance with those of the electors, they re-elected him in 1861. He was a strong champion of the out-districts, and got many things done for the Timaru locality. It was due to him that the district was divided into four electorates. He was then elected for Waitangi (1864). Wilkin strongly supported Moorhouse, and was a member of his executive for three years (first under Blakiston, and then as president of the executive for two years). In 1862 he was for a while deputy-superintendent, and when Moorhouse resigned (1863) he was invited to stand for the superintendency. He had no such ambitions, and was glad to see the election of Bealey, under whom he continued to serve as president of the executive, with Moorhouse as an occasional colleague. He retired from the Council in 1866, but served in several executives later. He was also for three years (1863-66) member of Parliament for Kaiapoi.

## WILKINSON

Wilkin was neither a good speaker nor a brilliant parliamentarian. The *Lyttelton Times* pictures him as 'a wealthy stockowner and a portly-built Scot getting into the sere leaf: who was chiefly to be found seconding the motions of his colleagues with so much diffidence as scarcely to be audible. He had a high sense of probity in business and in the relations of men. Hall once remarked, 'We might ask what public institution there is to which Mr Wilkin was not willing to lend a helping hand; what movement did not receive his cheerful aid: He was a governor of Canterbury College (1875-76), and first president of the Timaru Mechanics' Institute and public library (1862), for which he obtained a handsome grant from the Provincial Council. In 1874 he was a provisional director of the Timaru Woollen Co. He took a great interest in acclimatisation. Late in the sixties he presented to the Canterbury Society some black swans, and in 1881 he introduced hedgehogs into south Canterbury. Wilkin died on 20 Jun 1886.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Andersen; Cox, Men of Mark; Adand; Woodhouse; The Press*, 31 May 1930 (p). Portrait: A. and P. Association, Christchurch; Parliament House.

WILKINSON, GEORGE THOMAS (1844-1906) was born in England, and arrived in New Zealand in 1864. While employed under Heaphy surveying the confiscated lands in the Waikato, he was fired on by natives who were erecting the fortified position at Orakau. He penetrated as far as Kopua and withdrew to Tauranga. Wilkinson took up land at Waioeka, but was driven off by Hauhau and joined the survey company of engineers under Skeet and Gundry, taking part in the actions at Te Meake, Taumata, Irihanga and Whakamarama. While interpreter to the magistrate on the Hauraki goldfields, he was sent to Te Kuiti to ascertain the feeling of the King natives. In 1878 he was appointed assistant land purchase officer (for Coromandel and Thames), and later principal native officer in Waikato. He had great influence with the disaffected natives, twice prevented Te Kooti from visiting Poverty Bay and assisted materially to pacify the King country, through which he made a tour with Bryce, the Native Minister. Wilkinson was native agent at Alexandra and president of the Maori council at Otorohanga. He died on 4 Feb 1906.

## WILL

*App. H.R.*, reports on native affairs; Gudgeon; Featon; *NZ. Herald* and *NZ. Times*, 6 Feb 1906.

WILL, WILLIAM (1825-1912) was born at Col-lace, Perthshire, and educated in the parish school, the grammar school at Dundee, Edinburgh University and the Free Church College. Meanwhile he taught in the mission school of the Free Church at Edinburgh. He was licensed and ordained by the presbytery of Irvine, and offered his services to the colonial committee of the Free Church. When two new ministers were required for Otago Will was appointed, and he arrived at Port Chalmers in the *Stately* in Feb 1854. He was appointed to look after East Taieri, and had a wide district for some years until new charges were formed. He was many years convener of the sustentation fund committee and was moderator of the synod in the year of the provincial jubilee (1898). He resigned the East Taieri charge in the following year. Will died on 26 Oct 1912.

His son DR WILLIAM JOHNSTON WILL (1858-1930) was assistant director of medical services in the war of 1914-18, and a Knight of the Order of St John of Jerusalem.

Hocken; Chisholm; *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Nov 1911.

WILLIAMS, EDWARD MARSH (1818-1909), the eldest son of Archdeacon Henry Williams (q.v.), was born at Hampstead, London, and in 1823 with his parents arrived at Bay of Islands by the *Brampton*. Ill-health later interrupted his medical studies in England. Becoming a proficient Maori linguist, he helped to translate the Treaty of Waitangi into Maori, and later acted as native interpreter to Major Bunbury (q.v.), who was commissioned to obtain signatures to the Treaty in the south. Williams was made government interpreter in 1840, and clerk of the court and postmaster at Auckland. Retiring in 1842, he took up farming at Pakaraka. In 1861 he was appointed resident magistrate for Bay of Islands and northern districts, and in 1880 judge of the native land court, from which he retired in 1891. He married (1843) Jane Davis, and died on 11 Oct 1909.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Buick, *Waitangi*.

WILLIAMS, GEORGE PHIPPS (1847-1909) was born in London, and graduated B.A. at Cambridge University. He joined the London

## WILLIAMS

metropolitan board of works and later became a member of the Institute of Civil Engineers. Coming to New Zealand in 1869, he was appointed resident engineer to the Rakaia railway in 1870, and to the General Government in 1871. He was engaged on the construction of the Midland Railway to the west coast until it was completed, and subsequently became engineer and secretary to the Waimakariri and Ashley water supply board. Williams published a number of poems, including *Colonial Couplets* (1889) and (with W. P. Reeves) *In Double Harness* (1891), and *New Chum's Letters Home and Other Poems* (1904). Examples of his verse appear in Alpers's *Jubilee Book of Canterbury Rhymes*. In 1875 Williams married Edith Jane, daughter of Sir Thomas Tancred. He died on 18 May 1909.

*Annals N.Z. Lit.*; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 19 May 1909.

WILLIAMS, HAROLD WHITMORE (1876-1928) was born in Auckland, a son of the Rev W. J. Williams (q.v.). He attended schools in different parts of the country, including the Christchurch and Timaru Boys' High Schools. At the age of 14 he showed an extraordinary gift for languages by constructing a Dobu vocabulary from the New Testament translated into that language. He spent three years in the Wesleyan ministry but, realising that he was unsuited for it, left for Europe, where he gained his degree of Ph.D. at Munich University. By studying the Slav languages he became interested in Russian affairs, and in 1903 he was appointed special correspondent in Russia of *The Times*, and later of the *Manchester Guardian*, the *Morning Post* and the *Daily Chronicle*. His sympathies were with the constitutional Democrat party (the Cadets), and he married one of its prominent members, Ariadna Tyrkova. In 1921 Williams became a leader writer on *The Times*, and in 1922 director of the foreign department, which position he held until his death on 18 Nov 1928. As a linguist he had command of more than 26 languages. In 1914 he published *Russia of the Russians*. He was interested in the London University school of Slavonic studies and was for a time editor of the *Slavonic Review*.

Tyrkova-Williams, *Cheerful Giver* (p); *The Times*, 19 Nov 1928 (p); *The Press*, 20 Nov 1928.

## WILLIAMS

WILLIAMS, HENRY (1782-1867) was born at Nottingham, the son of Thomas Williams (1754-1804) of Plumpton Hall. In 1806 he entered the Navy as midshipman. He served in the *Barfleur*, *Christian VII*, *Maida*, *Galatea*, *Racehorse*, *Saturn*, *Endymion* and *Thames*. At Copenhagen (1807) he served at the land batteries, and was told off for a forlorn hope on the eve of the capitulation. In 1810 he took part in the attack by boats on nine French gunboats in the Basque Roads. While in the *Galatea* he was present at the engagement off Tamatave (20 May 18H), between three English frigates under Sir Charles Schomberg and three French vessels of superior force, and received a wound from which he never completely recovered. He was in the action between the *Endymion* and the United States frigate *President* (which took place actually after the conclusion of peace). Placed on board the *President* with a prize crew, he nearly perished in a gale while carrying her to Bermuda. This peril changed the course of his life when he retired on half pay (with the rank of lieutenant) on 30 Aug 1815.

In 1818 Williams married Marianne, daughter of Wright Coldham. He decided to become a missionary and was especially attracted to New Zealand. Ordained in 1822, he sailed in the *LO'd Sidmouth* with his wife and children, reaching Hobart on 10 Feb 1823. With Samuel Marsden (q.v.) Williams reached the Bay of Islands on 3 Aug. Finding that his intended station (Whangaroa) was occupied by the Wesleyans, he established the Church Mission station at Paihia, where he laboured for over 40 years. The work of the Society in New Zealand, which commenced in 1814, had failed through the faithlessness of some of the missionaries, who were all laymen and were primarily concerned with the teaching of civilised arts. After the advent of Williams religious teaching was regarded as preliminary to other instruction. During the first part of his sojourn Williams was protected by Hongi. After Hongi's death (Mar 1828) the missionaries underwent a period of great anxiety, expecting every day that the stations would be sacked. An intrepid act of Williams improved their position. Hearing of the death of Whareumu at Hokianga, he hastened to the scene of hostilities, and on 24 Mar succeeded in making peace. This greatly enhanced his mana and thereafter the mission

## WILLIAMS

made good progress'. Quick conversions were not sought, but troublesome Maori customs were gradually abolished and the barbarity of tribal wars was much softened. The mission was reinforced by fresh missionaries, and extended to Tauranga, Waikato, Rotorua and Poverty Bay. Williams made many voyages in mission vessels, which were sometimes unseaworthy and in the *Herald*, a schooner built by himself at Paihia, and long foot journeys to make peace, between tribes. In 1839 he visited Port Nicholson, and a few weeks later established Hadfield (q.v.) at Otaki. In 1835 Darwin visited the station during his voyage in the *Beagle* and expressed in his *Journal* high admiration for the missionaries and their work. In 1841 Selwyn (q.v.) was appointed first Bishop of New Zealand, a step strongly urged by the brothers Williams, and in 1844 he appointed Henry Williams Archdeacon of Waimate.

The Treaty of Waitangi, concluded on 6 Feb 1840, was only signed by the Maori chiefs at the earnest instance of Williams, who viewed with apprehension the establishment of a protectorate, but yet realised clearly the possible danger of annexation by France. Williams was mainly responsible for translating the Treaty and for explaining it to the Maori chiefs, and he afterwards, at the request of Captain Hobson, helped to obtain the signatures of distant chiefs. He negotiated the matter in the region of Cook Strait and, against the opposition of the New Zealand Company, obtained the signatures of the chiefs there. After the inauguration of British rule the missionaries were confronted with a new class of difficulties arising from the rapid influx of colonists, and from the unscrupulous dealings of some of the immigrants with the natives. On the outbreak of Heke's war (1845) Williams found his position very difficult. Refusing to abandon his native converts, he incurred much ill-will and obliquity. His loyalty was unquestioned, and the Governor (FitzRoy) spoke of him as 'the tried, the proved, the loyal, and the indefatigable: His influence was constantly used to restore tranquillity and to restrain chiefs who at one time had the white settlements almost at their mercy. It was largely due to his persuasion that other northern tribes were prevented from engaging in the war. When the natives stormed Kororareka (Mar 1845) Williams brought off the wounded, including the

captain of H.M.S. *Hazard*, at considerable risk. These services received no immediate recognition. FitzRoy was superseded as Governor by Grey, who soon showed himself hostile to the missionaries. In Jun 1846, in a secret despatch to Gladstone, then Colonial Secretary, he accused them, and especially Williams, of being the real cause of the conflict. This was the prelude to a more serious controversy in connection with the acquisition of land. New Zealand being a country with a climate suited for Europeans, many of the missionaries' descendants became farmers, and acquired land before the annexation of the colony. In 1843 their claims were determined and sanctioned by a court of land claims. Grey in his secret despatch unwarrantably stated that these acquisitions had been unjustly made, and would require to be enforced by troops. In reality a relatively high price had been paid, the native method of transfer had been carefully followed, and the settlers were in peaceable possession. Williams indignantly demanded an inquiry into Grey's charges, which was refused, and Selwyn, who was opposed to the acquisition of property, directed that the title-deeds should be surrendered unconditionally. Fearing that compliance would be regarded as an acknowledgment of previous misconduct, Williams refused to obey unless Grey's charges were examined. The Church Missionary Society in consequence reluctantly severed their connection with him (20 Nov 1849). His brother William visited England in 1851, and convinced the committee that they had been misled, and they passed a resolution entirely exonerating the missionaries from Grey's charges. Considering, however, that Williams had done wrong in refusing obedience, they declined to rescind their resolution in regard to him. They were beset from all sides with appeals on his behalf, and on 18 Jul 1854 he was reinstated at the personal request of Selwyn and of Sir George Grey, who by that time had largely modified his previous opinions. On 27 Sep 1939, in view of the centennial of the Dominion, the committee of the Church Missionary Society passed a resolution recording its appreciation of the mission fulfilled by Williams both as a founder of the Maori Church and of the colony of New Zealand. It admitted that the Society was mistaken in its judgment owing to misrepresenta-

tion of the facts, and that the charges made against Williams were without foundation. They affirm their complete confidence in his integrity and sterling character . . . and wish to place on record their conviction that New Zealand owes more to him than to any other individual missionary, and that his life and service call for the gratitude of the whole Church, as well as of the Church Missionary Society, in whose annals his name will always have an honoured place.'

The closing years of Williams's life were somewhat saddened by the declension of the Maori church from its first fervour, and by bitter warfare between the settlers and the natives. During the war of 1860 he lived quietly at Pakaraka with some of his descendants, using his influence to preserve the loyalty of the neighbouring tribes. As the infirmities of age grew upon him he performed his journeys by sea in a small vessel named the *Rainbow*. He died at Pakaraka on 16 Jul 1867, leaving a high reputation for Christian zeal. His influence with the Maoris was very great, and was due to his upright character and to his perfect comprehension of native ceremonies and customs. In 1876 the Maori community erected a stone cross to his memory in the churchyard at Paihia, the scene of his longest labours. (See E. M., HENRY, J. W., and T. C. WILLIAMS, and BISHOP W. WILLIAMS.)

G.B.O.P., 1838-53, *pass.*; *D.N.B.*; Stock; Marsden, *l.* and *l.*; Buller; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Cowan, *Wars*; Buick, *First N.z. War* (p); Carleton (p); A. S. Thomson; Morton; E. J. Wakefield; E. Wilson.

WILLIAMS, HENRY (1823-1907) was born at Paihia, Bay of Islands, the third son of Archdeacon Henry Williams (q.v.). He was educated at the mission school under Bishop W. Williams (q.v.) and in 1842 joined his brothers farming at Pakaraka. There they remained undisturbed through Heke's war. Williams was a justice of the peace from 1858. He was chairman of the Bay of Islands county council continuously from 1877 to 1899, when he voluntarily retired. He was called to the Legislative Council by Whitaker in 1882, and remained a member until resigning in 1905. He died on 6 Dec 1907. Williams married in 1849 Jane Elizabeth, daughter of Bishop W. Williams.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.z. Herald*, 7 Dec 1907.

860  
WILLIAMS, HERBERT WILLIAM (1860-1937), a son of W. L. Williams (q.v.); and grandson of William Williams (q.v.), Bishop of Waiapu, was born at Waerenga-a-hika, poverty Bay. He was educated at Christ's College, Christchurch, and at Canterbury College: where he was a University scholar. (B.A. 1876; M.A. 1880.) At Jesus College, Cambridge he was a Rustat scholar. (B.A. 1884; M.A. 1887.) After teaching for two years at Haileybury College, he was ordained and returned to New Zealand in 1889 as vice-principal of Te Rau Native Theological College, Gisborne, of which he became principal in 1894. He retired in 1902 to superintend the Maori missions on the East Coast, and was appointed Archdeacon of Waiapu in 1907. In 1929 he was elected Bishop of Waiapu (in succession to Dr W. Sedgwick). A Maori scholar Williams edited the fifth edition of *Williams's Maori Dictionary* (1917) for which he was awarded a doctorate of literature by the University of New Zealand (1924) and by Cambridge University (1925). He published also *First Lessons in Maori* (1924, 1930) and a bibliography of printed Maori. Williams was a fellow of the Royal Meteorological Society (1904), and of the New Zealand Institute (1923); president of the Polynesian Society (1929), and of the Royal Society of New Zealand (1935). He was also a member of the National Historical Committee for the New Zealand Centennial. In 1888 he married Bertha Louisa Gertrude, daughter of S. L. Mason, of Edinburgh. He died on 6 Dec 1937.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Polyn. Jour.*, *pass.*; *Trans. N.Z. Institute* and *N.Z. Royal Society*; Hight and Candy; *The Dominion*, 11 Oct 1929 (p), 7 Dec 1937; *Evening Post*, 6 Dec 1937.

WILLIAMS, JAMES NELSON (1837-1915), a son of Bishop William Williams (q.v.), was born at Waimate north, and in the fifties went to Hawkes Bay to take up sheep-farming. He opened up much of the land around his station, Frimley, and was a pioneer of the fruit-growing and canning industry. Williams was prominently associated with the development of Napier, and was a member of the first harbour board (1875), the land board, the education board, the county council and the Agricultural and Pastoral association. He presented a park to the

people of Hastings and a ward to the Napier hospital. He died on 11 Jun 1915.

*Col. Gent.*; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 11 Jun 1915.  
WILLIAMS, JOHN WILLIAM (1827-1904) was a son of Archdeacon Henry Williams (q.v.). From 1863 to 1865 he represented Bay of Islands in the Provincial Council and he sat as member for Mongiui and Bay of Islands in the House of Representatives (1873-79). Williams died on 27 Apr 1904.

RANGE (1837-1915) was born in London, the son of Joshua Williams, Q.C., author of a book on real and personal property. He was educated at Harrow under Dr Vaughan, and at Dur-B F. Westmacott (afterwards Bishop of Colham). Williams then went on to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was second in the first class of the law tripos (1858), and in the following year was Junior Wrangler and Chancellor of the law tripos, and was awarded the Chancellor's gold medal for legal studies. After his B.A., he left Cambridge, entered at Lincoln's Inn in 1857, and read law in the chambers of his father and of Hobhouse. He was then called to the bar in Nov 1859. He afterwards graduated M.A. and M.L. His health being poor, Williams was advised to go on a sea voyage, and in Jul 1861 sailed from London in the emigrant ship *Derwentwater*. The vessel arrived off Otago Heads to learn that the gold had been discovered, and the captain, fearing he would lose his crew, declined to enter the port and his emigrants in the P-boats.

Williams was admitted by Gresson without delay, and in Mar 1862 entered into partnership with T. S. Duncan, who was provincial solicitor and crown prosecutor. In Oct he was elected to the provincial Council for Heathcote, a few months later Moorhouse resigned the superintendency, and Duncan relinquishing the provincial solicitorship, Williams was appointed. He remained in the executive under Wilkin and Cass, and in Dec witnessed the opening of the first railway in the province. In 1864, with intention of visiting England, he resigned from the provincial government, and dissolved his partnership with Duncan. This vacancy gave W. Rolleston the opportunity of entering public life. After his return to the Colony, Wil-

Williams practised on his own account, until accepting office under the General Government (1876). In 1865 he married Caroline Helen daughter of Thomas Sanctuary, of Horsham: Sussex.

In 1866 Moorhouse was re-elected Superintendent, and Williams re-entered the Provincial Council for Heathcote. He became provincial solicitor in the Jollie executive, which lasted for only a few weeks. When Stewart came into office (Mar 1867), he called Williams in as a colleague. This association lasted until Mar 1868. Williams retired from the Council at the dissolution of 1870. He was a sagacious adviser, well versed in the forms of the Council. He spoke seldom and briefly, but exercised a great influence on the deliberations of the Council. In 1870 he was appointed district land registrar for Canterbury, and in 1872 Registrar-general of Lands. While thus employed, Williams wrote his handbook on the land transfer act. In 1873, on the foundation of Canterbury College, he was elected chairman of the board of governors.

In Mar 1875 Williams was appointed to the Supreme Court bench, and posted to Otago to replace H. S. Chapman (q.v.). There he worked for the next 39 years with great distinction, lending lustre to the bench, and gathering much credit for his sound law. He presided at many famous criminal trials and at the investigation of the Colonial Bank's affairs (1897). Never an orator or a fluent speaker, he said what he intended in simple English, easily understood. He had a fund of wit and humour, was well versed in French and Italian literature, and made some good translations from Dante. When the Arbitration Court was established, Williams was chosen as its first president (1895), in the belief that he would establish its proceedings and found its traditions on a basis of sound law. He vacated the post in 1898 to return to the Supreme Court. In 1911 he was created a knight bachelor, and two years later was appointed to represent New Zealand on the judicial committee of the Privy Council. He left for London in Feb 1914, and in the short time that still remained to him his sound judgment gained recognition in the highest court of the Empire.

While in Dunedin Williams was appointed a member of the council of Otago University (1877). Two years later he became vice-chancellor, and in 1894 he succeeded Dr Stuart as

chancellor. He resigned in 1909. In social and philanthropic societies he took an active interest. He was president for many years of the Shipwreck Relief society, the Patients' and Prisoners' Aid society and the society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. In the Dunedin Philharmonic society he held the highest position. Williams's first wife having died while he lived in Christchurch, he married (1877) Amelia Durant (d. 1936), daughter of John Wesley Jago (Dunedin). He died on 22 Dec 1915.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Cyel. N.z.*, iv (p); *Col. Gent.*; Cox; *The Press*, 23 Dec 1915, 13 Sep 1930 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 29 Dec 1915, p. 2.

WILLIAMS, KENNETH STUART (1870-1935), a son of J. W. Williams (q.v.), was born in the Bay of Islands and educated at Heretaunga school, Hastings, and at Christ's College, Christchurch, where he was captain of the first XV. In 1894 he took up sheep-farming at Matahiia, on the East Coast, and became chairman of the Waiapu county council, and a member of the Tokomaru Bay harbour board and the Waiapu hospital board, and promoted the freezing industry in the district. In 1920 he was elected M.P. for the Bay of Plenty in succession to W. D. S. Macdonald (q.v.). He held the seat until his death (on 25 Nov 1935), and was Minister of Public Works in the Coates Government (1926-28). A successful racehorse owner, he represented Hawkes Bay district clubs on the New Zealand Racing conference, and was founder and president of the Waiapu Racing club. In 1919 he was elected president of the Christ's College old boys' association. With other members of the Williams family, he helped to buy and establish the Waiapu soldiers' settlement. Williams married in 1898 Lilian Mary Ludbrooke.

*N.z.P.D.*, 1920-35 (notably 31 Mar 1936); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Christ's Coll. School List*; *Evening Post*, 11 Jun 1926 (p); *The Dominion*, 26 Nov 1935.

WILLIAMS, SAMUEL (1822-1907) was born in England, the son of Archdeacon Henry Williams (q.v.), and came to New Zealand in 1823. Educated at St John's College, Waimate, he was later a teacher on the staff of the Maori College, with which he moved to Auckland (1845). In 1847 Bishop Selwyn appointed him to the charge of the Otaki district, which had been

founded by Hadfield (q.v.). Making Otaki his headquarters, he assisted in pacifying the natives and had charge of eight village schools and a central school.

In 1852 Governor Grey, fearing the effect on the Maori of a rapid influx of whites into Hawkes Bay, appointed Williams to that district and promised a land endowment for Maori education. Arriving there in 1853 to meet Selwyn and Grey, he chose Te Aute as the school site, the natives giving an additional 4,000 acres for the purpose. In 1854 the Church Missionary Society agreed to his transfer to Hawkes Bay, where for six years he lived in a native hut. Governor Gore Browne being less interested in native education, Williams had to suspend the school and lease the land, which was for some years unoccupied, and on which he spent much of his own money. The school was reopened in 1872 and made steady progress, educating many of the later leaders of the Maori race. Williams had great influence with the natives, and on several occasions composed their differences with the whites and saved the district from the inroads of the Hauhau invaders. He had a hair for farming, and encouraged the natives to clear land and utilise it to the best advantage. Many settlers also learned the management of fern and scrub from him. He was a noted breeder of cattle and at many shows from 1863 onward took prizes.

In addition to large gifts to the Te Aute and Hukarere schools, Williams maintained district nurses in some native settlements and contributed largely to missions all over the world. He was ordained priest in 1853; was rural dean of Hawkes Bay (1854-88); archdeacon in 1888, and canon of the Napier Cathedral (1889). He married (1846) Mary, daughter of Bishop William Williams (q.v.). His death occurred on 14 Mar 1907.

William Temple Williams, *Pioneering in New Zealand* (1929) (p); *Williams papers*; Stock; Jacobs; Selwyn; Morton; *Cyel. N.z.* vi (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 15 Mar 1907.

WILLIAMS, THOMAS COIDHAM (1825-1912), the fourth son of Archdeacon Henry Williams (q.v.), was born at Paihia and educated at the mission schools at Paihia and Waimate. He was brought up in Bay of Islands; farmed there, and lived in Auckland for some years. In 1864 he was elected to represent Bay

of Islands in the Auckland Provincial Council, but did not take his seat. In 1865 he removed to Wellington and acquired large pastoral properties in Wairarapa, including Brancepeth station (49,000 acres), Annedale (15,000 acres) and the Lansdowne estate, near Masterton (2,000 acres). He devoted himself entirely to his properties, taking no part at all in public life. Williams married in 1858 Annie, daughter of William Beetham, Wairarapa. He died on 19 May 1912, leaving a large family.

*N.Z. Herald*, 20 May 1912; *Cyel. N.Z.* i (p).

WILLIAMS, TOM BOSWELL (1851-1931), born in Newport, Monmouthshire, came to Victoria in 1852 with his parents and to New Zealand in 1862. He tried his luck at goldmining on the West Coast, and in 1878 established a brewery in Wanganui. He later took up fanning near Wanganui and in 1898 went into business as an auctioneer. Williams was elected to the Wanganui borough council in 1885 and was some years mayor (1913-15 and 1920-24). He was a member of the hospital board, the river trust, and the hydro-electric league, chairman of the patriotic association and repatriation committee, president of the chamber of commerce and a director of the *Wanganui Herald*. He was a past master of freemasons. His death occurred on 16 Jun 1931.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Wanganui Herald*, 16 Jun 1931; *Who's Who in Wanganui*, 1915 (p).

WILLIAMS, WILLIAM (1800-78) was born in Nottingham, the youngest son of Thomas Williams and brother of Henry Williams (q.v.). He was educated for the medical profession, but changed his mind and went to Magdalen College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. (1825). Having decided later to follow his brother Henry to the mission field in New Zealand, he read for holy orders and resumed his studies in medicine, walking the hospitals in London. He was ordained by the Bishop of London in 1825, and appointed to New Zealand by the Church Missionary Society. He arrived in Bay of Islands on 25 Mar 1826.

The next eight years Williams spent at Paihia. His first duty was as a philologist to study the Maori language and reduce it to grammatical forms, as a prelude to the translation of the Scripture. He compiled *A Dictionary of the New Zealand Language and a Concise Gram-*

*mar* which was published at Paihia in 1844, and afterwards revised by Maunsell and W. L. Williams (q.v.). When it was decided to expand the mission in New Zealand, he volunteered to open the new station on the Thames; and after establishing the station at Mangapouri he returned to take charge of the school at Waimate, where he taught classics to many of the children of the elder missionaries. He also took his part in the practical work of building and construction which was so important a feature of native education. In 1833 Williams went in the *Active* to return some Ngati-Porou people to East Cape. They were foiled by contrary winds. In Dec he went again in the *Fortitude*, and after calling at the Thames landed his charges at Hicks Bay (8 Jan 1834). He held a service at Rangitukia and Whakawhitira, and noted the desire of the people for a mission to be opened. In Jan 1838 he visited the district with Colenso, Stack and Matthews, landing at Hicks Bay and travelling overland to Poverty Bay. In Nov Henry Williams stationed native teachers at Waiapu and Poverty Bay. The arrival of Richard Taylor (q.v.) freed W. Williams to form a new station at Poverty Bay, and he paid another visit in Apr 1839, fixing the site for the mission. Eventually he brought his family from Waimate and landed at Poverty Bay in Jan 1840, taking charge of the East Coast from Hicks Bay to Cape Palliser. He found the natives well prepared by native teachers placed amongst them since 1834, and the mission made immediate and rapid progress. In Jun 1842 Williams met Bishop Selwyn at Bay of Islands, and he returned to his station reinforced by the Rev W. C. Dudley. Shortly afterwards Williams was appointed an archdeacon (1843). In the *Historical Records* is a graphic account of the progress of Williams's mission in these years. Following the charges made against his brother Henry and the decision of the C.M.S. dismissing him from the service, Williams went to England in the Wesleyan schooner *John Wesley* to vindicate the mission. He was in England from Apr 1851 to Oct 1852, and was successful in causing the Society to pass an exculpatory resolution. He also published his Maori translation of the New Testament and Prayer Book, and had conferred upon him by Oxford University, in recognition of his services and attainments, the degree of D.C.L. (1851).

Returning to New Zealand, he devoted his attention rather more to literary work and produced in 1867 his *Christianity among the New Zealanders*. Williams was soon faced with the necessity of removing the mission from Tauranga to Waerenga-a-hika (1856-57). When the diocese of New Zealand was divided, Selwyn invited him to assume the bishopric of Waiapu, and he was consecrated to it in Apr 1859. Keeping his headquarters at Poverty Bay, he gathered about him a large establishment consisting of divinity students' and boys' and girls' schools (the personnel numbering about 130). Here he pursued his labours with success until Hauhau agents entered the district (1865). The arrival of troops to suppress the rising was the signal for an outbreak which necessitated the closing of the schools; the premises were sacked by the Hauhau and the library destroyed (1865). Williams retired to Paihia with many of his students and remained there two years. In 1867, with the permission of Bishop Abrallam, he took up his quarters in Napier, which was about to be severed from the Wellington diocese and made the Cathedral city. On the fiftieth anniversary of his arrival in New Zealand, he suffered a stroke from which he did not recover (1876). He accordingly resigned the see and lived in retirement in Napier until 9 Feb 1878.

Williams married in 1825 Jane Nelson. Their family of nine included Bishop W. L. Williams (q.v.).

Carleton; Jacobs, *Colonial Church Histories; New Zealand; NZ Herald*, II Feb 1878; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 12 Feb 1878.

WILLIAMS, WILLIAM HENRY WYNN (1828-1913) was a son of the Rev P. L. Williams, vicar of Llansannan, Denbighshire. Educated for the Indian army, and subsequently for the law, he was admitted a solicitor in 1853. In 1857 he came to New Zealand, and after working on sheep stations in different parts of the colony settled in Christchurch in 1860 to practise his profession. Williams represented Heathcote in the Provincial Council (1865-66), City of Christchurch (1866-70) and Papanui (1871-75). He was several times in the executive (under Jollie, 1868-69, 1869-70; under Knight, 1869, and under Wilson, 1875-76). He also represented Heathcote in Parliament (1881-84). He died on 27 Oct 1913.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Cox; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Press*, 28 Oct 1913.

WILLIAMS, WILLIAM JAMES (1847-1936) was born at Redruth, Cornwall, and began to preach at the age of 17. Trained at Richmond College, he was associated with Dr Stephenson, the founder of the national children's homes and orphanages controlled by the Methodist Church of Great Britain. He arrived in New Zealand in 1870 (being a fellow passenger with W. F. Massey, q.v., and the Rev F. W. Isitt). He did pioneering work amongst the gold miners at Thames.

Williams was a fearless and effective speaker and writer on social reform. He was for many years editor of the Methodist church paper and of the prohibition journal *The Vanguard*. He held some of the most important pastoral charges. He had a broad sympathy with progressive movements within the Church, and helped to secure an improved status for laymen in the principal courts of the Church. He led the movement to secure Methodist union in New Zealand and separation from Australia for the New Zealand Methodist Church, and to set up a self-governing conference for the Dominion. His interest in the history of the Church is evidenced by his book *Centenary Sketches of New Zealand Methodism* (1922). He attended the first New Zealand Methodist conference at Christchurch (1874). His competence in church affairs led to his appointment as secretary for home missions (1895-98), secretary of the board of examiners (1882-84), and secretary of synod and conference. He was chairman of several synods, principal of Wesley College (1893-94), and in 1888 was elected president of the New Zealand conference.

Williams married first (1875) Alice Hosking (d. 1905), and second (1908) Alice Jeffry. He was superannuated in 1914, and died at Auckland on 11 May 1936. One of his sons was Dr Harold Williams (q.v.). M.A.R.P.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; Morley; Williams, *op. cit.*

WILLIAMS, WILLIAM LEONARD (1820-1916), the eldest son of Bishop W. Williams (q.v.), was born at Paihia and educated at the mission school, at St John's College, Auckland, and afterwards at Magdalen Hall, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. (3rd class lit. hum) in

1852. He was admitted a deacon by the Bishop of London and in the following year he returned to New Zealand and commenced his missionary life under his father in Poverty Bay. In 1862 he became archdeacon.

Three years later his labours amongst the Maori were interrupted by the Hauhau nsmg. Having removed his family to Auckland, he returned to Poverty Bay and remained throughout the trouble, being within a few miles of the massacre by Te Kooti on 10 Nov 1868. In 1877 he made Gisborne his headquarters. On the resignation of his father in that year, Williams declined an invitation to be nominated as bishop on the ground that work amongst the native population had the first claim upon him. In 1883 he assumed control of the Te Rau Maori Theological College, of which he was principal until 1894. He was appointed canon of Napier Cathedral in 1889. In 1894 he was elected to succeed Bishop Stuart, and he was consecrated in the following year to the see of which his father was the first bishop.

Williams's scholastic work in Maori is of a high order. In 1862 his *First Lessons in the Maori Language* appeared; and in 1871 he published a revised edition of his father's dictionary. His *East Coast Historical Records* was published some years after his death. He contributed many papers to the proceedings of the New Zealand Institute. In 1897 Oxford University conferred on him the degree of D.D.

Williams married in 1853 Sarah, daughter of John Bradshaw Wanklyn, of Halecat, Westmoreland. He died on 24 Aug 1916.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *D.N.B.*; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 25 Aug 1916; Jacobs.

WILLIAMS, WILLIAM ROBERT (1832-90) was born at Gravesend, educated there and went to sea at the age of 12. In 1856 he went to Australia, and for five years was trading between Melbourne and South Australia. He was chief officer when the rush occurred to Otago and, purchasing an interest in the barque *Anne Melhuish*, he traded between Newcastle and Auckland, carrying coal one way and timber, kauri gum and other produce the other. At the conclusion of the Waikato war he carried troops back to Australia, and continued to trade with New Zealand. The first ship he bought for himself was the *Heversham*, followed by the *Cyrus*,

## WILUAMSON

*Edwin Bassett, Carlotta, Neptune, Robin Hood* and *G. M. Tucker*. With these he formed the nucleus of the Black Diamond line. In 1876 he purchased in Sydney the steamer *Grafton*, which he used in the coal trade to the West Coast. In 1881 he bought the new steamer *Westport* in Great Britain, and brought her out direct to Westport. Next year his son (J. H. Williams) superintended in England the building of two steamers (the *Koranui* and *Mawhera*), and the *Moa*, *Manawatu* and *Maitai* were also acquired. Williams in 1885 leased some coal measures near Westport, and formed a company which acquired this and later the Coal Pit Heath mine at Greymouth. In 1886 he sold his interests to the Westport Coal Co. and his ships to the Union Steamship Co. For many years Williams had a ship-repairing yard at Te Aro. He was a government nominee on the Wellington harbour board (1880-88), a justice of the peace, and a member of committee of the old men's home. To this and the Congregational Church he made liberal gifts; and the Sailors' Friend Society in Wellington benefited from his estate. He died on 17 Mar 1890.

*Evening Post*, 17 Mar 1890. Portraits: Ward; Missions to Seamen Institute, Wellington.

WILLIAMSON, JAMES (1814-88), a native of Belfast, Ireland, was the son of a shipowner and first went to sea in his father's vessels on the coast of Scotland. Coming to Australia as chief officer, he arrived at Bay of Islands in the *Achilles* in 1839, and went into business with Thomas Crommer as merchants. After the sack of Kororareka they moved to Auckland and established themselves in Fort Street, where they also started a public-house. In 1842 they built on the edge of the beach the Victoria hotel, which stood until 1863, and for many years was managed by Hardington (q.v.). In the early fifties Crommer went to San Francisco, making speculations by which the firm lost rather heavily, but it soon recovered and the partnership lasted until Crummer's death (1861).

Williamson now came more into public life, and during the Waikato war carried out profitable contracts for the commissariat department. Williamson was a founder of the New Zealand Insurance Co. and a lifelong director; was first president of the Bank of New Zealand

## WILUAMSON

and for some years chairman. In 1862, on the retirement of Firth, he became M.H.R. for City West (John Williamson being the other member). He spoke very seldom in Parliament and retired in 1866. In 1870 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (22 Mar 1888). He owned the Surrey Hills estate, which he cut up and sold.

*Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); *Auckland Star* and *N.Z. Herald*, 23, 26 Mar 1888.

WILLIAMSON, JOHN (1815-75) was born at Newry, county Down, Ireland, educated there and apprenticed to a printer. In 1840 he arrived at Sydney, and in 1841 came to Auckland under engagement to the Auckland Printing Co., and worked at his profession till 1845. He then purchased a printing plant from the Rev H. H. Lawry, and on 7 Jun established the *New Zealander*, in which he was joined in Jan 1848 by W. C. Wilson (q.v.).

Williamson held strong views on politics, being a consistent Liberal, and on the inauguration of the constitution (1853) he was elected by the Pensioner Settlements to the Provincial Council, in which he sat until 1856. In Oct of that year he was elected Superintendent of the province, defeating J. A. Gilfillan by 162 votes. After working with a hostile council for a year, he was re-elected unopposed (1857). He carried through his 40 acre land settlement proposals to encourage immigration. At the elections in 1861 he retained the superintendency against Dr Stratford by a narrow majority (1,166 votes to 1,117). The Council was again hostile, and on the passing of the native lands act he felt that his power for carrying out what he considered a good policy was neutralised. He accordingly retired (18 Oct 1862) and Robert Graham, then the most popular man in the province, was nominated. Williamson was nominated at the last moment and defeated (1,625 votes to 1,141). His strong advocacy of a peaceful policy towards the Maori was very unpopular at the time. Had he desired he could have retired wealthy at this period. He did, in fact, remain out of provincial politics for three years. Meanwhile he had been a member of Parliament continuously (for Pensioner Settlements, 1855-60; City of Auckland West, 1861-75). He was a private member throughout,

## WILLIS

except for three weeks in Fox's executive (1861). He intended to contest the superintendency in 1865, but agreed with Graham to withdraw in favour of Whitaker, as the strongest man to defend provincial privileges against the central government. He re-entered the Council, however, at the head of the poll (Nov 1865); became a member of Whitaker's executive as commissioner of waste lands; and carried the election of O'Rorke to be speaker.

Whitaker resigned the superintendency in Mar 1867 and Williamson was elected unopposed. Financial depression lay heavily on the province which the courageous policy of Williamson was powerless to ameliorate. Meanwhile he coped vigorously with the demands of the new mining population on the Thames fields. At the dissolution of 1869 he was opposed by Gillies, and after one of the severest contests defeated by 52 votes. He was, however, again elected to the highest post in the province in Nov 1873 (defeating Dargaville and Lusk), and held it until his death (on 16 Feb 1875). In 1870 he was commissioner of crown lands for a few months. Williamson was a man of high character, strong will and great determination, with advanced Liberal views. His partnership with Wilson terminated in 1863, when the *New Zealand Herald* was established.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); Morton; Cox; *N.z. Herald*, 19 Feb 1875, 7 Jul 1876, 15 Jul 1929. Portrait: Parliament House.

WILLIS, ALEXANDER JAMES (1827-1910) was born in Cape Colony. He moved with his parents to Tasmania (1831), and was educated at Hobart. In 1840 he was appointed clerk in the office of the controller-general of convicts. The Victorian diggings in 1852 attracted him, and he was afterwards for two years superintendent of the convict hulk at Melbourne. Coming to Otago in 1861, he entered the office of the provincial secretary and became resident magistrate and goldfields warden, residing at Dunedin. In 1878 he joined the Land Tax department of the General Government, transferring to Wellington in 1881. He was secretary to the cabinet from 1885 to 1909. Willis married (1871) Amelia Anne, daughter of the Rev T. D. Nicholson (Nelson). He died 011 28 Sep 1910.

*Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Times*, 29 Sep 1910.

## WILLIS

WILLIS, ARCHIBALD DUDINGSTON (1842-1908) was born in Middlesex, England, and in 1857 worked his way to New Zealand in the *Dinapore*. He followed the trade of printer in various parts of New Zealand, spent some months on the Gabriel's Gully goldfield, and later was associated with the *Hawkes Bay Herald*. He subsequently joined John Ballance in the *Wanganui Herald* (1868) and established himself as a bookseller, stationer and printer in Wanganui. In public life Willis was chairman of the barbour board, and a member of the Wanganui borough council, the river trust, the chamber of commerce and the school committee. In 1893 he succeeded Ballance as member for Wanganui in the House of Representatives. In 1896 he was defeated by G. Carson. He regained the seat in 1899 and sat till 1905, when he was defeated by J. T. Hogan. Willis died on 27 Aug 1908.

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 4 Sep 1908); *Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); *Wanganui Herald* and *Chronicle*, 28 Aug 1908; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

WILLIS, WILLIAM JARVIS (184Q-84) was born in Sussex, educated at Eton, and received a commission as ensign in the 14th Regiment. He came to New Zealand in 1861 as lieutenant and adjutant of the 2nd battalion, with which he served until the end of the war. Having married (1864) Amelia, daughter of D. Riddiford, he sold out and settled here. Willis was appointed resident magistrate in Wairarapa and on taking up a farm at Marton continued to act as chairman of petty sessions for Rangitikei. During the Maori troubles he was a major in command of the militia and volunteers in Rangitikei and Manawatu. Later he was appointed resident magistrate for that district. In 1864 he purchased Woodendean, near Marton, and soon afterwards introduced the first Romneys into the district. In 1879 Willis resigned from the bench to contest the Rangitikei seat as a supporter of Hall. He defeated C. L. McLean; but owing to indifferent health he resigned early in the following year. He was chairman of the Upper Rangitikei highway board, a member of the Rangitikei county council and in later years chairman of the Porewa, Marton and Paraekaretu licensing benches. He died on 1 Mar 1884.

*Parltry Records*; J. G. Wilson; *Rangitikei Advocate*, 3 Mar 1884.

## WILLS

WILLS, WILLIAM ROBERT (1837-96) was born at Bath, England, came to Auckland by the *Assaye* (1874) and lived at Onehunga to 1877, and thereafter at Otahuhu. He earned his livelihood as a journalist and local correspondent and wrote a good deal of verse. His published volumes include *A Bunch Of Wild Pansies* (1885), and *God's Splendid Son* (1901). Many of his songs were set to music. Wills was an ardent Liberal in politics. He married Martha, daughter of Thomas Nield, and died on 8 May 1896.

Alexander and Currie; *Annals N.Z. Lit.; Evening Herald* (Dunedin), 28 Mar, 6 Jun 1885; *Auckland Star*, 8 May 1896; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 May.

WILSON, ALEXANDER (1849-1929) was born near Inverness, Scotland, and was educated at the Aberdeen Grammar School and University (graduating M.A. in 1869). He spent a year in Germany, and, arriving in New Zealand in 1874, was appointed English master at the Otago Boys' High School. From 1885 to 1895 he was rector of the Otago Girls' High School and from 1896 to 1906 of the Otago Boys' High School. He was president of the Otago Institute, and the Dunedin Shakespeare club (1889-1906), and published short studies in Shakespeare. In 1907 Wilson was appointed editor of the *New Zealand Times*, but in the following year returned to Scotland, where he died on 24 May 1929. In 1931 a memorial tablet to Wilson was presented by the old boys to the Otago Boys' High School.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago B.H.S. Reg.; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Otago Witness*, 15 Dec 1931; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Jul 1929, 12 Dec 1932, 3 Aug 1933 (p).

WILSON, ANNE (1848-1930) was born at Greenvale, Victoria, the daughter of Robert Adams, St Enoch; educated at Geelong College, and married (1874) James Glenny Wilson (q.v.). She wrote (mostly under the pseudonym, Austral): *Themes and Variations* (1889); *Alice Lauder* (1893); *Two Summers* (1900) and *A Book of Verses* (1901). Lady Wilson died on 11 Feb 1930.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Annals N.Z. Lit.*

WILSON, CHARLES (1857-1932) was born at Harrogate, Yorkshire, the son of John Wilson of West Park; and educated at Harrogate Col-

## WILSON

lege. He gained experience in the woollen trade in Bradford, and in commerce in Paris, and in 1880 he arrived at Port Chalmers. *Mter* teaelung for a year at Te Aro school, Wellington, and for three years at Wanganui Collegiate School, he took up journalism as sub-editor of the *Wanganui Chronicle*. He subsequently edited the *Gisborne Standard* and the *Napier Evening News*; founded and edited the *Marton Mercury*, and in 1892 was appointed editor of the *New Zealand Mail*. He sat as member of Parliament for Wellington Suburbs (1898-99) and in 1901 was appointed chief parliamentary librarian, a position from which he retired in 1926. Wilson was an original member and for two years chairman of the Victoria College council, a founder of the Savage Club in Wellington and of the Yorkshire Society, and a member of the council of the Academy of Fine Arts (and sometime president). For many years he conducted in *The Dominion* a weekly literary column. He also published *City of Wellington* (1921), *Rambles in Bookland* (1922) and *New Rambles* (1923). He died on 10 Feb 1932.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *The Dominion*, 11 Feb 1932 (p).

WILSON, CHARLES KENDALL (1862-1934) was born in Sydney and came to New Zealand in 1878, to work for some time on Dr Grace's station on the Wanganui river. After completing a timber contract for Bartholomews, he took up a section at Horowhenua (under the Rolleston system) in 1889 and farmed there for many years, besides acting as auctioneer for Abraham and Williams. He was a member of the Horowhenua county council. He was a keen sportsman and fisherman, and at the age of 45 was still playing representative football. In 1909 Wilson took up land at Piopio, King Country. He strongly advocated the cause of the back-blocks settlers and represented the Taumarunui electorate in Parliament from 1911 to 1914. He served for 20 years on the Waitomo county council, and was a member of the Wairere power board; the No 6 main highways board and of the Meat Export Control board (1923-31). Wilson died on 18 Nov 1934.

WILSON, ISAAC (1840-1901), who was born at Ambleside, Westmoreland, England, arrived in Lyttelton in 1854, and with his brother

## WILSON

Thomas took up farming at Kaiapoi. In 1862 he started a passenger coach service between Kaiapoi and Christchurch, and in 1879 he was one of the 12 purchasers of the Kaiapoi woollen mills, of which he was chairman of directors until 1883. Wilson sat as member for Mandeville in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1874-75) and as member for Kaiapoi in the House of Representatives (1881-84). He was chairman of the Eyreton road board and a member of the Kaiapoi borough council. He acquired a large farming property in Taranaki in the seventies. He died on 9 Nov 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii, vi, 214.

WILSON, JAMES, of Mary Bank, Turakina, represented Wanganui and Rangitikei in the Provincial Council (1856-57). In 1864 he sold his property and in 1866 left for England.

WILSON, JAMES (1813-86) was born at Edinburgh and educated in the Academy there and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. Ordained deacon in 1836, he was curate of Preston, Lancashire, and Solihull, Warwickshire. Having purchased land in the Ganterbury settlement, he came out as chaplain in the *Isabella Hereus* (1851) and commenced farming at Heathcote, where 'Wilson's road' was afterwards constructed. Later he moved to Broomfield, upper Riccarton. He was a progressive farmer, but was mainly noteworthy for his services in the adjustment of the arrangements between the Canterbury Association, the Government, the Bishop of New Zealand and the Provincial Council regarding the bishopric of Christchurch and Christ's College. With Tanced he attended the church conference in 1857 and helped to draft the constitution. He was for many years a member of the diocesan and general synods. In 1866 he was appointed a canon, and in 1871 archdeacon of Akaroa. He died on 16 Jan 1886.

*Lyttelton Times*, 19 Jan 1886.

WILSON, JAMES (1814-98) was born at Ayr, Scotland, educated at the Wallacetown Academy, and brought up to country life. About 1842 he arrived in Sydney by the *Earl Grey*, and was appointed overseer at a government agricultural station near Bathurst. He remained in the government service till 1851, when he visited the goldfields in Victoria. In 1856 he came to New

## WILSON

Zealand in the brig *Thomas and Henry*. With John Robertson he rode through south Otago and selected a run on the Oreti river, Whiell became known as Waianiwa. He transported his family and belongings in the schooner *Star*, which sailed up the river to the Waikiwi, and then by a smaller boat to the Makarewa stream. He made several explorations and discovered the first gold in the Oteramika district.

Wilson was a member of the Southland Provincial Council (for Waihopai 1861-67 and 1869-70, and for Waianiwa 1867-69). In 1865-70 he was speaker of the Council. He was provincial treasurer and a member of the executive 1869-70 and deputy-superintendent in 1870. After the reunion with Otago, he sat in the Otago Council (for Southland 1870, for Makarewa 1873-77). For 30 years Wilson was chairman of the school committee at Waianiwa. He married a daughter of Samuel Benson (New South Wales). Wilson died on 19 Aug 1898.

*Southland and Otago P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Southland Times*, 23 Aug 1898.

WILSON, SIR JAMES GLENNY (1848-1929) was born at Hawick, Scotland, and was educated at Bruce Castle and at Tottenham (Lolldon), where he met W. Colenso and the Maori boy Pomare. He also attended classes at London and Edinburgh Universities. He married (1874) Anne (q.v.), daughter of Robert Adams, St Enoch, Victoria, and in the same year came to New Zealand, and took up sheep-farming in Rangitikei. He sat in the House of Representatives continuously from 1882 to 1896 (1882-90 as member for Foxton; 1890-93 for Palmerston North; 1893-96 for Otaki). He was president of the New Zealand Farmers' Union from its foundation in 1900 till 1920; he was the first president of the Board of Agriculture (founded in 1914); one of the founders of the Farmers' Distributing Co., and the first chairman of directors of the Dominion Farmers' Institute at its inception in 1915. He was an advocate of agricultural education in the state schools. Wilson held office as first president of the New Zealand Forestry league (1916-25) and was largely responsible for the establishment of the state forestry service. For many years he was a member of the Manawatu county council, and the Palmerston North hospital board. He was knighted in 1915. In 1914 he published his

## WILSON

recollections, *Early Rangitikei*. Wilson died on 3 May 1929.

J. G. Wilson, *op. cit.*; *The Dominion*, 6 May 1929 (p); *Evening Post*, 4 May.

WILSON, JAMES IRWIN (1832-1913) was born in county Tyrone. On the death of his father, who was a surveyor and engineer, he came to Victoria (1852) and practised the same profession. He was engaged in the survey of Geelong and Ballarat. In 1855 he came to New Zealand and was appointed by Ligar to the survey staff, being employed for some time in the Mahurangi, Wade and Waiwera districts. In 1862 he was appointed provincial surveyor and in 1864 was sent to take charge of military surveys in the Waikato, following Heaphy's breakdown in health. In the following year, in consequence of retrenchment by the General Government, Wilson resigned and went into private practice with his two brothers. In 1866 he rejoined the Government service, being appointed district surveyor for north Auckland. Transport being very imperfect, he had to make several voyages round North Cape and across the Kaipara bar. In 1876 he again went into private practice. Wilson married Johanna (1837-1906), daughter of John Munro (q.v.). He died on 4 Oct 1913.

*N.Z. Surveyor*, Dec 1913; N. R. McKenzie.

WILSON, JOHN ALEXANDER (1809-87) was born at Ipswich, the second son of Captain J. A. Wilson, of the 2nd Regiment (Queen's Own). At the age of 13 he entered the Royal Navy as a gentleman volunteer (Apr 1822), and saw considerable foreign service. He was at the capture of a pirate in the gulf of Campeche, and in the ship which rescued the King of Portugal at Lisbon.

In 1828 Wilson married the daughter of Major Francis Hawker. Four years later he retired from the Navy with the rank of lieutenant to offer his services as a lay missionary to the Church Missionary Society. On 5 Oct 1832 he sailed with his family in the convict ship *Camden* for Port Jackson, and on 11 Apr 1833 arrived at Bay of Islands in the schooner *Byron*. He entered at once upon his duties as a catechist, mastered the Maori language, and in Dec proceeded with Preece to the station just opened at Punā (Thames), where they were joined later by Fairburn and Morgan. In 1835 Wilson

## WILSON

assisted Brown to open the station at Mata-mata, and in 1836 he went with Wade to Te Papa. When Waharoa raided Tauranga in Mar 1836 the missionary families were sent for safety to Puriri, but Wilson remained at his post. He was ordained deacon in 1852. In the Taranaki war, with the approval of the Government, Wilson accompanied the Waikato taua to Waitara, with the object of lessening their ferocity and protecting the wounded. He was at the battle of Puketakauere (Jun 1860), at Pukerangiora (Jan 1861) and at Huirangi (Dec). He persuaded them to accept a code of humane treatment, and to attend to the wounded day by day. Wilson died on 5 Jun 1887. His book *Missionary Life and Work in New Zealand* was published in 1889. His fourth son, Major-general George Alfred Wilson, died on 21 Jan 1889. (See J. A. WILSON, H. T. KEMP.)

J. A. Wilson, *op. cit.*; Wells; Gudgeon; Cowan; Sherrin and Wallace; Grace; Davis.

WILSON, JOHN ALEXANDER (1829-1909) was the eldest son of the Rev J. A. Wilson (q.v.), and was born at Conde, France. He arrived in New Zealand with his parents in 1833 in the schooner *Byron*, and was educated mainly at the Vaimate grammar school, the King's school at Parramatta, N.S.W., and St John's College, Auckland. His early years were spent at Bay of Islands and Bay of Plenty, and he was then engaged for some years farming at Opotiki and Tamaki. In 1857 he was elected to represent the Pensioner Settlements in the Auckland Provincial Council, of which he was a member until 1861. In that year he joined Nixon's cavalry, and two years later, on the outbreak of the Waikato war, he raised a company of the 3rd Waikato Regiment, and was appointed to command it with the rank of captain. He greatly distinguished himself at Rangiaohia (21 Feb 1864), when Nixon was killed. In 1866, at the conclusion of hostilities, Wilson was appointed special commissioner and crown agent for the settlement of confiscated lands in Bay of Plenty; in 1868 general native agent for the northern district, and in 1873 native land purchase officer for the East Coast. He became a judge of the native land court (1878-80) and from 1886 for 30 years was occupied with the duties of that court, the appellate court and the validation court and as a trust commissioner.

## WILSON

He had a profound knowledge of Maori language and lore, and published two important books, *The Story of Te Waharoa* (1866) and *Sketches of Ancient Maori Life* (1894), as well as pamphlets on *The Immortality of the Universe* (1875) and other subjects. He died on 28 Apr 1909.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Gudgeon (p); J. A. Wilson, *op. cit.*, *The Modus Operandi* (1884); R. Cooper, *Land Purchase on the East Coast* (1877); *N.Z. Herald*, 29 Apr 1909.

WILSON, SIR JOHN CRACROFT (1808-81) was the son of Alexander Wilson, F.R.S., a judge in the Madras civil service, and was born at Onore, in that presidency. He went to England for his education and, having matriculated from Haileybury School, entered Brasenose College, Oxford, in 1826 and remained there two years. In 1828 he married a daughter of S. Wall. He was appointed a cadet in the Bengal civil service, and through his own ability and the influence of a distinguished father, he made good progress. Before long he was assistant commissioner under Sir William Sleeman, and made a name for himself in the suppression of thuggism. While still a young man he was appointed magistrate at Cawnpore; and in 1841 he was promoted to Mooradabad as magistrate and collector, a post which he administered until 1853. His first wife having died, Wilson married (1844) Jane Torrie, daughter of James Greig. During the war in Scinde he was attached in a civil capacity to the staff of Sir Charles Napier, and he took part in 1843 in the battle of Meanee, at which 2,000 European troops defeated 30,000 Baluchis and slew 6,000 of them.

In 1854, on accumulated leave, Wilson paid a visit to Australia for the benefit of his health, taking with him, in the American ship *Akbar*, a number of Indian animals, including deer, and a Damascus Arab horse purchased in Calcutta. He had also some Indian followers who settled in New Zealand. After touching at Melbourne, the *Akbar* sailed to Sydney and Newcastle, taking on 14 horses, 112 cattle and 2,000 sheep. The voyage was an unfortunate one; 1,200 sheep had to be thrown overboard, and a call made at Croisilles for food, fuel, and water. On 8 Apr the *Akbar* reached Lyttelton. The last of the deer died that day, but the Arab

## WILSON

(Wanderer) survived. Wilson prospected the country, and fixed upon rising ground at the foot of the Port Hills for his run, giving it the name Cashmere. There he made his home, working hard to get it into order before his leave expired. In May 1855 he returned to Calcutta with his wife and resumed his post as civil and sessions judge at Mooradabad. The outbreak of a mutiny amongst the native troops in 1857 imperilled the white population and the existence of the British power. Mooradabad was in the heart of the disaffected area. Wilson was a man of action. 'Without any undue appreciation of his own influence and capacity for good,' says Kaye (the historian), he applied to the lieutenant-governor to enlarge his powers. The application was promptly granted, and Wilson acted with characteristic resolution and sagacity.' Kaye describes him as 'a civil functionary of immense energy and courage, a man equal to any emergency and capable of any act of daring.' In his own district, where the 29th Sepoy Regiment was stationed, the unflinching courage and resource with which he faced their mutiny made a great impression. On one occasion, as he passed the lines of the native artillery, they laid their guns and lit their portfires, but 'Wilson's clear blue eyes calmly confronted the murderous design. Without a sign of fear on his face he rode towards the guns, not from them, and waved his hat as a challenge to the gunners, who, abashed and overawed by the bearing of the intrepid Englishman, slunk back, and Wilson was saved.' In his despatch of 2 Jul 1859, Canning singled out Wilson for first mention amongst all the civilians who comported themselves so well. 'I name this gentleman first: wrote Canning, 'because of his enviable distinction of having by his obstinate courage and perseverance saved more Christian lives than any other man in India. He did this at the repeatedly imminent peril of his own life. He has since left the service of the Indian government, and retired to New Zealand, where I respectfully hope that the favour of the Crown may follow him.' Wilson was made a C.B. for his eminent services as special commissioner for the trial of rebels and mutineers, and when the order of the Star of India was created (1872) he was made a knight. He retired from the service in 1859, and came back to Canterbury, accompanied by a retinue of Indian servants.

WILSON

Wilson was not permitted to remain out of public life in Canterbury. In 1861 he was elected to Parliament for the City of Christchurch, which he represented until 1866, a picturesque and respected figure. Then he was returned for Coleridge (1866-70) and he was later member for Heathcote (1872-75). Meanwhile he represented Ashburton in the Provincial Council (1862-66), and Heathcote (1871 and 1875-76). He was for a short period, in 1875, president of the executive. In Parliament he was many years chairman of the public petitions committee. He served long on school committees (some time as chairman of the Upper Heathcote Committee). He was on the road board and chairman of the Amuri county council and of the Canterbury Saleyards Co. He imported stud sheep (chiefly Lincolns) and carried off many prizes. Keenly interested in acclimatisation he was chairman of the Canterbury society for many years, and also president. One of the early members of the Jockey club, he was associated with Cass in selecting the site of the racecourse. As a volunteer he was major commanding the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry. As a churchman, he was churchwarden at Halswell a member of St John's Church and of the synod: He was a constant patron of the opera and the drama, and a governor of Canterbury College (1875).

Wilson died on 2 Mar 1881 and his widow on 19 Feb 1895.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); J. W. Kaye, *History of the Sepoy War in India*; Cox; Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 12 Nov 1853; *The Press*, 15 Feb 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

**WILSON, JOHN NATHANIEL**, an English solicitor, settled in Napier in the late fifties. He was crown prosecutor from 1860 and provincial solicitor from 1861. He was called to the Legislative Council (1877), and from Nov 1878 he was a member of Grey's executive. In 1893 he resigned to go to England. Wilson's appointment to the cabinet was recommended to Lord Normanby on the ground that more legal talent was required in the Council on the resignation of Sewell. He had taken no part in politics, but stood very high in his profession, having been leader of the bar in Napier for 12 years. Normanby declined to make the appointment unless Wilson was to take office in the Government and he was ap-

WILSON

pointed accordingly, after some argument.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1877-93; *App. H.R.*, 1877, A4; *Lyttelton Times*, 6 Jun 1879; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 8 Jun 1872.

**WILSON, KENNETH** (1842-1920) was born in Leeds, England, and educated at St John's College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. and was a minor scholar. He was selected in 1873 by Dr Vaughan, of the Temple, as headmaster of Wellington College, of which he had charge till 1881. Wilson was a man of high ideals, quiet, studious and dignified. Soon after his arrival he organised a centre in Wellington for holding Cambridge local examinations, and he was responsible for getting the University interested. After retiring from Wellington College, he managed the Thorndon classical school, and eventually lived in Palmerston North for 30 years. He died on 10 Oct 1920.

Leckie (p); *The Dominion*, 12 Oct 1920.

**WILSON, NATHANIEL** (1836-1919) was born in Glasgow, the son of a blacksmith, and with his parents came to New Zealand in the *Duchess of Argyll* in 1842. He spent some years in Auckland and at Kawau, and eight years on the Victorian goldfields. In 1859 he established himself as a shoemaker at Warkworth, north Auckland, and later, with his brothers John and James T. Wilson, he established the lime works which developed into Wilson's Portland cement factory. Wilson was for 12 years a member and for eight years chairman of the Rodney county council, was chairman of the Mahurangi road board and the Warkworth town board, and an honorary member of the Rechabites. His wife was a daughter of James Snell, of Matakana. Wilson died on 23 Sep 1919.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii, pp. 541, 502 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 25 Sep 1919.

**WILSON, PETER** (1791-1863) was born at Dunbar, Scotland, graduated from the medical school of Edinburgh University and served in the Navy during the war with America (1812-14). In the thirties he actively supported the cause of the Royalists in Spain, and at Gibraltar met and married Helen Ann, a daughter of James Simpson, the American consul at Tangier. In 1841 Wilson arrived at Wellington by the *Slams Castle*, and in 1847 he settled at New Plymouth, where he and his wife played a lead-

WILSON

ing part in the life of the community. He was one of the founders of the Taranaki book club, the forerunner of the public library. Wilson died on 18 Dec 1863.

Skinner (p), p. 23; *Wellington Independent*, 6 Jul 1871-

**WILSON, THOMAS** (1814-86), born at Burton-on-Trent, came to Taranaki in the *Berkshire* (1849) and spent some years in business in New Plymouth and fanning. In 1856 he moved to Raglan in the *Zillah* and took up a farm at Okete, where he remained throughout the Maori wars, running many risks and alarms from hostile natives. He represented Raglan in the Auckland Provincial Council (1873) and was chairman of the Whaingaroa road board and a member of the county council. Wilson died on 8 Sep 1886.

*Parltry Recol'd*; *Waikato Times*, 14 Sep 1886.

**WILSON, THOMAS ELLIOTT** (1853-1918) was born in London, the son of Robert Wilson (of the Otago foundry, Dunedin), came to New Zealand with his parents (1863), and attended Gardner's school in Stuart street. He was employed for a while in the foundry, but when the family removed to Oamaru served his apprenticeship to the printing trade with the *North Otago Times*. In 1876 he established the *North Canterbury News* at Kaiapoi. He afterwards established or managed the *Bruce Standard*, *Waikato Gazette*, *Waimate Times*, *Nenthorn Recorder*, *Bruce Herald*, *Egmont Settler*, *Helensville Times*, *Waitara Times*, *Mangaweka Settler*, *Kawhia Settler*, *Geraldine Times* and the *Taihape Post*. In 1907 he sold the *Post* to a local syndicate and retired from journalism to become an auctioneer and commission agent.

Wilson married (1893) a daughter of Samuel Gibbs, Oamaru (q.v.). He died on 8 Jan 1918.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p).

**WILSON, WILLIAM** (1819-97) was born at Castle Douglas, Kirkcudbrightshire, Scotland. After serving an apprenticeship of seven years to a seedsman in his native shire, he worked for several private employers. In 1850 he came to Canterbury in the *Mariner*, and at once established himself as a nurseryman at the Bricks, with shrubs and plants obtained from the other provinces and seeds from England. He was M.P.C. for Kaiapoi (1864-66) and for City of

WIMPERIS

Christchurch (1869:70). He was chairman of the town board, furthered the movement for the creation of a borough and was the first mayor (1868). He was instrumental in the introduction of gas lighting and artesian water and was chairman of the horticultural society, a life member and 11 years vice-president of the A. and P. association. Wilson opened three or four coalmines in the Malvern hills and quarries at Halswell and White Rock. He died on 8 Nov 1897.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Wigram; *Lyttelton Times*, 9 Nov 1897.

**WILSON, WILLIAM SCOTT** (1835-1902) was born in Tasmania, the son of W. C. Wilson (1807-76), with whom he came to New Zealand in 1841. His father entered into partnership with John Williamson in the *New Zealander* newspaper and printing business, to which William was apprenticed at the age of 11. He went through all branches of the trade and on completing his apprenticeship took charge of the printing department of the *Herald*. In 1863, owing to a difference of opinion on policy, the partnership was dissolved and W. C. Wilson with his sons started the *New Zealand Herald*. After his father's death (on 5 Jul 1876) a partnership was concluded with A. G. Horton, who had purchased the *Southern Cross* from Vogel and in Dec 1876 the papers were amalgamated. Besides participating in the control of the paper for many years, Wilson was a director of the Bank of New Zealand, the New Zealand Insurance Co. (chairman for many years), the Northem Shipping Co., the Accident Assurance Co., the Northern Boot Co. and the Riverhead paper mill. He was a staunch Wesleyan and a liberal supporter of the Y.M.C.A. Wilson died on 28 Jun 1902.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Morton, p. 43; *N.Z. Herald*, 30 Jun 1902.

**WIMPERIS, FRANCES MARY** (1840-1925) was born at Chester, her father, Edmund R. Wimperis, being manager of leadworks there. She spent her childhood in that town, the Kingsleys being their friends, and Charles Kingsley, who was canon of Chester, being leader of the naturalists' field club, of which she was a member. Miss Wimperis studied art at the Slade school in London, being under Sir E. J. Poynter for painting and under Legros for drawing. She

## WING

came to Dunedin in 1879, and some time later was appointed art mistress at the Girls' High School, a position she occupied for 15 years. She did a good deal of painting herself, mostly flower studies and some landscapes, and exhibited regularly at the Otago Art Society, of which she was a member. She died on 19 May 1925. Her brother, Edmund M. Wimperis (1835-1900) was a vice-president of the Royal Institute.

*Otago Daily Times*, 21 May 1925; *The Times*, 28 Dec 1900.

WING, EDWARD THOMAS (1842-1929) was born at Bay of Islands, the son of Captain Thomas Wing (q.v.), and for many years lived aboard the *Deborah* schooner. Educated at Wesley College, he went to sea and at 19 had gained his master's certificate. Being unable to acquire it until he came of age he was given charge of the pilot station at Manukau heads. He spent some years on the goldfields of Victoria and Otago and West Coast and then, with his brother, purchased the steamer *Halcyon*, with which they traded between Onehunga, Greymouth and Hokitika. They secured mail contracts between Whangarei and the Thames in which they employed the *Halcyon*, besides managing the coastal fleet of Robert Mason and Co. (Dunedin). Wing then commanded several steamers belonging to the Union Steamship Co. (including the *Bruce*, *Star of the South*, *Maori* and *Beautiful Star*). In 1874 he was appointed manager of the Lake Wakatipu Co.'s fleet, from which he retired in 1904 to live in Auckland. Wing married (1864) Catherine Turnbull (d. 1924). He died on 3 Aug 1929.

*N.Z. Herald*, 5 Aug 1929 (p).

WING, THOMAS (1810-88) came to New Zealand first in 1835 as chief officer of the *Independence*, built at New Bedford in 1811 and commanded by Captain Clendon. He lived at Bay of Islands for some years, and when Clendon received an official post he took command of the vessel on her return to England. In 1837 she was cast away at Vavau (Tonga) but, being salvaged, was renamed the *Tokerau*. He came back in 1839 and surveyed Manukau and Kaipara harbours in the schooner *Fanny*, and was at Cloudy Bay with Guard in Nov. He again went to England, where he purchased the brigantine *Deborah*, 220 tons, in which he re-

## WITHEFORD

turned to New Zealand and made many trading voyages to coastal ports, Sydney and Tasmania. He was a skilful and competent navigator, so well acquainted with all the southern ports that Colonel Wakefield and Tuckett engaged his vessel for their explorations as far south as Stewart Island, and to carry stores for the New Edinburgh settlement (1844). He was harbour-master at Launceston (Tasmania) 1852-56; was on the harbour staff at Melbourne and then, returning to New Zealand, was for 30 years in charge of the pilot service at Manukau and harbourmaster at Auckland. He witnessed the wreck of H.M.S. *Orpheus* (1863). Wing retired in 1887 and died on 19 Aug 1888.

N.Z. Archives, B.R. and N.Z.C. reports; Carleton; Hocken; Sherrin and Wallace; *N.Z. Herald*, 3, 10 Jul 1880, 20 Aug 1888, 5 Aug 1929; *Nelson Examiner*, 20 Jul 1844.

WINSTONE, GEORGE (1848-1932) was born in Somerset, of a family who had farmed at Failand for generations. At the age of 13 he went to Queensland, and eight years later joined his brother William, who had established a carrying business in Auckland. For 36 years he was a director of W. and G. Winstone, and on its being formed into a company in 1904 he continued as chairman till his death (1 May 1932). The firm carried out many contracts in connection with public works, and established brick works, gravel and shingle pits, quarries, firewood and coal yards, coachbuilding and harness works. It was also interested in the ownership and running of coastal ships. Winstone was chairman of Frank W. Winstone, Ltd., of Wilson's Portland Cement Co. and the Taupiri coal mines. He was a member of the harbour board, and of the Mount Roskill road board, to which he presented parks (amounting to 33 acres).

Winstone was a staunch Methodist, a member of the Pitt street congregation for 63 years, a trustee, superintendent of the Sunday school, and twice president of the Sunday school union, which he represented at conferences in the United States (1910), and Glasgow (1924). He was a temperance advocate and a member of the executive of the New Zealand Alliance.

*N.Z. Herald*, 2 May 1932.

WITHEFORD, JOSEPH HOWARD (1847-1931), a son of Clement Witheford, was born

## WITHER

in Bromsgrove, Worcester, and came to New Zealand as a boy. He spent some time on the Thames goldfields, and later became a shareholder in Auckland. During the eighties he successfully negotiated with the British Admiralty for a subsidy of £5,000 a year for the naval works of the Auckland harbour board, and in 1900 he became chairman of that body. He was mayor of Birkenhead and sat in the House of Representatives as member for Auckland City (1900-05). Witheford played an important part in developing Auckland gold mines by floating mining companies. About 1906 he went to live in London, where he died on 30 Oct 1931.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Feb 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924. Portrait: Parliament House.

WITHER, CHARLES BIGG, was born in Hampshire and educated at Winchester School and Edinburgh University. He came to New Zealand in the *Ursula* (1843), and took up a run in the Vernon Hills, in the Wairau district, and later a farm at Richmond. In 1863 he was called to the Legislative Council, but he resigned a few months later. He was a governor of Nelson College (1858) and a justice of the peace. He was believed to be a descendant of the poet and pamphleteer George Wither (1588-1667). Wither died in 1874.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi.

WITHY, EDWARD (1844-1927) was born at Bristol of Quaker stock, and educated at the Friends' school at Sidcot. In 1858 he passed the Cambridge local examination and in 1860 was apprenticed to Richardson and Duck, shipbuilders, Stockton-on-Tees, where he rose to be manager of the yard. For some time he acted as inspector to the P. and O. Co., travelling extensively in the East. Returning to England in 1867 he married Annie Treadgold (Stockton-on-Tees), and in 1869 founded the shipbuilding firm of Edward Withy and Co., West Hartlepool, which prospered in the years following the Franco-German war. About this time Withy paid a visit to Australia and New Zealand, and on selling his business in 1884 he settled in Auckland with his family. (The purchasers of the business were his brother, Henry Withy, and Sir Christopher Furness, and the firm was later known as Furness-Withy.)

Withy was an advanced Liberal, and one of the originators of the National Liberal club. He

## WOHLERS

had been a follower of Alfred Russell Wallace until reading *Progress and Poverty*, when he became a disciple of Henry George. He gave evidence before several royal commissions and inaugurated in his yards premiums for good work. He was on the first undenominational school committee in West Hartlepool and a member of the local board of health. Withy was a keen advocate of modern and technical education. For two years he was president of the university extension association at West Hartlepool, and he delivered courses of lectures on shipbuilding. In 1887 he defeated Tole for the Newton seat. He did not seek re-election in 1890, but stood for Auckland City in 1893 with the object of promoting the single-tax doctrine. He was on the Parnell borough council (1894). For some years Withy was acting-president of the Auckland Anti-poverty Society (Sir George Grey being honorary president). He was president of the New Zealand Single-tax league and later of the New Zealand Land Values league. He wrote many letters in the press on single tax, an article in the *Westminster Review*, and several pamphlets on this subject and ground rent. He returned to live in England in 1912, and died in Jersey on 26 Mar 1927.

Family information; *N.Z.P.D.*, 24 Jun 1927; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Sep 1887, 12 Aug, 20 Nov 1893. Portrait: Parliament House.

WOHLERS, JOHANN FRMDRICH HEINRICH (1811-85) was the son of a farmer of Mahlenstorf, in the parish of Brucken, Hanover, which was at the time occupied by the French. After the French retired, the father was elected squire of the parish. At the age of six Johann went to live with a grandmother at Hoyerhagen. There he received his education, and grew to manhood among carts, plough, harrows, and com wagons. When he reached the later teens he still felt himself to be an uncultured youth who could not mix with those with whom he approached the doors of the missionary seminary.

Wohlens often visited the mill at Vilsen, and from the miller's family obtained a translation of the appeal of the British Methodists (1836) for workers for the Fiji mission field. (See J. WATKIN.) He decided to become a missionary, and with that in view he went to Bremen and afterwards to Hamburg. From 1837 to 1842 he

WOHLERS

studied in the Lutheran mission school of the Reformed North German Mission Union at Bremen, one of his fellow-pupils being Riemenschneider (q.v.). There he learned a little Latin and Greek before the mission decided that this was unnecessary. Instead, the missionaries should possess some handicraft so that they might build a farm establishment wherever they went. Wohlers undertook this laborious work with the others, who were all physically better suited for hard work. In Aug 1842 he was ordained in the Church of St Michael, Hamburg, and in Oct a service of intercession was held in the Church of St George on behalf of the four who were destined for New Zealand—Troost, Heine, Riemenschneider, and Wohlers. They sailed the day after Christmas in the *St Pauli*, with a full complement of German immigrants for Nelson. The agent for the company (J. N. Beit) took his family with him. Wohlers tells in his autobiography (published in English in 1895) how the use of the titles 'Mr: 'Madam: and 'Miss' amongst the German emigrants produced a feeling of self-respect which was quite new.

The *St Pauli* reached Nelson a few days before the disaster at the Wairau. There seemed to be few natives in the South Island not already within the jurisdiction of some Christian mission, and the German society wished to break new ground. Meanwhile, therefore, the missionaries established themselves in a hut in Nelson (placed at their disposal by Tuckett), and shortly moved to the upper Moutere Valley. The German immigrants were in sad straits, and relief was found for them on road works at Moutere. In Feb 1844 Tuckett invited Wohlers to accompany him in the schooner *Deborah* on a cruise to decide upon a suitable locality for the proposed New Edinburgh settlement. Wohlers accepted with gratitude. While in Banks Peninsula he made the acquaintance of Tuhawaiki (q.v.), and discussed the advisability of establishing a mission on his island, Ruapuke. While exploring with Creed on Banks Peninsula Wohlers lost his way, and the two were out on the hills for four days. Creed having been disembarked at Waikouaiti to relieve Watkin, the *Deborah* proceeded to Otago harbour. When she reached Foveaux strait (in the middle of May) Wohlers was rowed ashore at Ruapuke with all his belongings and took up his resi-

WOHLERS

dence in the house of the chief. It was two years before his books and clothes reached Ruapuke, and for some years the usual period absorbed in writing to Germany and receiving a reply was two and a half-years. Wohlers lived and travelled as a hermit, grew his own vegetables, but could not induce the Maori to do so. The small number of natives in the south would not justify the society in Germany in sending any more missionaries to that part of the country. Encouraged by Creed (q.v.), Wohlers set himself to learn the language, and by example communicated to the natives better ideas of order and cleanliness. He made good progress in collecting from the natives their myths and legends, many of which he submitted to Sir George Grey. His observations in natural history he communicated to von Haast, and thus was in stimulating touch with two great collaborators.

In 1846, with the help of natives and some of the white men living near, Wohlers built a small church. When he had spent three or four years in Ruapuke he developed a tendency to melancholy, for which Creed prescribed a journey to Waikouaiti. At the end of 1848 a recruit, Brother Honoré (q.v.), arrived from Germany, and Wohlers commenced to erect a better house. He had received instructions to proceed to Nelson to ordain Heine as a pastor for the congregation of Germans there. Tuckett, now in England, remained a staunch friend, and in 1848 he sent Wohlers the machinery of a Hourmill to be worked by oxen. Having neither oxen nor grain, Wohlers sold the mill in Dunedin, receiving in return the sum of £40 and his passage to Wellington. No money was received from Germany beyond the 5s per month which Wohlers had stipulated should be allowed to each missionary as pocket money.

While in Wellington, Wohlers met Volkner (q.v.), who had come to reinforce the mission, and he made the acquaintance of a widow, Elise Palmer, whom he married (1849). Having been appointed registrar of births, deaths and marriages, and being now a married missionary, Wohlers was in a better position to do beneficial work amongst the natives. He and his wife taught the Maori domestic crafts, and Wohlers was able to interest them in growing wheat, which they ground in their own mill until they found it more congenial to barter

WOOD

mutton birds for Hour. They also raised good crops of potatoes, which they sold to Dunedin and Australia. In 1850 the mission house was burned down and Wohlers lost all his books and manuscripts. Much of the knowledge he had acquired from the Maori and the story of his own experiences he put on record in the *Transactions of the New Zealand Institute* (1874, 1875, and 1881).

In 1862 the mission in Otago was strengthened by the appointment of Riemenschneider to Port Chalmers, but, as Wohlers had foreseen, the natives in Otago were inevitably drawn within the sphere of the churches of the colonists. In 1868, from funds which were available from government sources, a native school was opened at Ruapuke, of which Wohlers was given charge. Wohlers died on 7 May 1885.

Wohlers, *op. cit.* (p); Hocken; Buller; Roberts; *Trans. N.Z. Institute; Otago Daily Times*, 14 Mar 1930.

WOOD, JAMES (1822-75) came to New Zealand in the fifties, and in 1857 settled at Napier where he founded the first paper in the province, the *Hawkes Bay Herald*. He was member of the Provincial Council for Napier Town (1862-67) and for Havelock North (1867-71), and was for some years chairman of committees of the Council. In 1871 Wood sold the *Herald*. He died at New Caledonia on 26 Nov 1875.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, vi, p. 363 (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 4 Jan 1876.

WOOD, READER GILSON (1821-95) was born at Highfields, Leicestershire, and educated at the Merchant Taylors' school, London, after which he was a pupil for six years of William Flint, architect and surveyor. He then came to Australia, and in 1844 to New Zealand. Heke's war breaking out shortly afterwards, he held a commission in the volunteer artillery and served at Ohaeawai (being mentioned in Despard's despatch). After the war he practised his profession in Auckland, and in 1848 was appointed government inspector of roads; in 1849 permanent architect and inspector of public works; and in 1852 deputy Surveyor-general for New Ulster. He had charge of road construction and controlled a great number of native labourers. In 1850 he married Mary Jane (d. 31 Aug 1898), daughter of George Holland (London).

WOOD

When the waste lands were transferred to the General Government (1856), Wood retired to practise his profession and sharebroking. In 1857 he was returned to the Provincial Council for Auckland Suburbs, which he represented until 1861. He was an eloquent speaker and showed considerable political sagacity. Contesting the parliamentary seat for City East (1858), he was defeated by Forsaith, but in Jan 1861 he defeated Heale for Parnell, and six months later he was Colonial Treasurer in Fox's government and Commissioner of Customs. His success in charge of these portfolios was marked, and he administered the same offices until Nov 1864 (in the Domett and Whitaker-Fox ministries). He put forward a scheme of land settlement which involved the raising of £3,000,000, and at the end of 1864 he resigned his portfolios and went to England, where he raised £1,000,000. On his return to the Colony he resigned his seat in Parliament and devoted himself to his private affairs, which were prejudiced by the removal of the seat of government to Wellington. In 1870 he was again elected to Parliament by Parnell, which he represented until 1878, when he resigned again to visit England. In 1873 Wood re-entered the Provincial Council (for Parnell), remaining there until the abolition and being a member of the executive for a few months in 1875.

In Parliament Wood opposed the borrowing policy of Vogel, and found himself definitely within the Liberal camp. When the Grey Government was defeated at the polls (1879) he was close in Grey's confidence, and the leader wished him to accept the treasurership or even the premiership. This he declined firmly, and when it was clear that Grey was determined to retire Wood consulted with other Auckland members (Swanson, Hurst and Colbeck), and they agreed to give their support to Sir John Hall on the understanding that he would use the majority thus assured to further manhood suffrage, to defend the existing system of secular education, and to grant to Auckland what they believed to be due from recent loans. Wood was now representing Waitemata (having defeated J. S. Madarlane in 1879). At the dissolution in 1881 he was defeated by Tole for Eden. He stood once more unsuccessfully and then retired from politics. He was chairman of the Auckland Gas Co., and a trustee of the

## WOOD

Auckland Savings Bank.

Wood was a man of great ability, a pungent and facile speaker and a financier of no mean order. He secured the abolition of the old civil service pensions by a resolution in 1871, and proposed a graduated scheme of ~~series~~ <sup>series</sup> in preference to a 10 per cent cut all round. He and Gillies were the most determined critics of Vogel's borrowing policy in the seventies. Wood died on 20 Aug 1895.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i, ii; Saunders, ii; Reeves; Rusden; Gisborne; Cox; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Jun 1881, 21 Aug 1895. Portrait: Parliament House.

WOOD, SUSAN, née LAPHAM (?-1880), was a daughter of Samuel Lapham, of Tasmania, and in 1854 married John Nugent Wood, later resident magistrate of Southland. She lived for some time at Bendigo; came to New Zealand in 1861, and lived at Gabriels Gully and later at Arrowtown and Wendonside, Southland. She contributed to the *Otago Witness* and the *Saturday Advertiser* lyrics, tales and essays, many of which were collected in *Bush Flowers from Australia and Waiting for the Mail*. She died on 30 Nov 1880.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Wood, *op. cit.*; *Saturday Advertiser*, 11 Dec 1880.

WOOD, WILLIAM (1827-84) was born in the Midlands of England. Emigrating as a young man, he spent some years in New South Wales, where he made a comfortable fortune as a butcher. He came to New Zealand in the *Lord Worsley* (1859), joined the rush to Tuapeka, and then settled at Invercargill and invested his money. In 1865 Wood was elected to the Southland Provincial Council for Campbelltown, which he represented 1865-67 and from 1869 until the reunion with Otago. He was a member of the Southland executive in 1866 and 1867, and was Superintendent from 1869 until the reunion was effected. He then entered the Otago Council, in which he sat for Southland (1870) and for Waihopai (1873 to abolition). Here again he was on the executive (1875). Wood represented Invercargill in Parliament (1866-70) and Maitaia (1876-78). On resigning he was called to the Legislative Council (1878-84). He did not seek public office, but his experience and qualifications were demanded by the difficult circumstances of Southland. He was the first mayor of Invercargill (1871-73) and established

## WOODTHORPE

a parliamentary procedure in the Council meetings. He died on 30 Aug 1884.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Southland Daily News*, 1 Sep 1884. Portrait: Parliament House.

WOODS, JOHN JOSEPH (1849-1934) was born and educated in Tasmania, and was for eight years a school teacher there before coming to New Zealand. He landed on the West Coast and spent some time in Nelson, Wellington, Christchurch and Dunedin. He taught in private schools at Lawrence and Invercargill... He took a special interest in music, and played 12 instruments, but excelled with the violin. For many years he was conductor of the choir in the Roman Catholic church at Lawrence, where he was clerk to the Tuapeka county council. Woods is best known as the composer of the music to which Bracken's *God Defend New Zealand* was set. Bracken wrote the anthem in 1878, and dedicated it to the Governor (Normanby). The *Saturday Advertiser* then offered a prize for the best music, and a committee in Melbourne, consisting of Zelman, Zeplin and Siede made the award. Woods was a prominent cricketer and tennis player, and captain of the Lawrence cycling club.

Personal information from J. J. Woods; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); MS. in Auckland Public Library; *Saturday Advertiser*, 27 Jul, 26 Oct 1878; *Tuapeka Times*, 20 Feb 1932.

WOODTHORPE, ROBERT AUGUSTUS (1861-1931), a son of William Woodthorpe, was born in Boston, Lincolnshire, and attended Cooper's grammar school, London. Coming to Australia as a young man, he entered Moore Theological College, Sydney, was ordained in the Anglican church in 1886, and graduated at Sydney University (B.A. 1886; M.A. 1890, with first-class honours in philosophy). Woodthorpe was curate of Christchurch, Sydney (1885-89); and vice-warden and tutor of St Paul's College, Sydney University (1890-92). Coming then to New Zealand, he was vicar of Kumara (1892-94), chaplain to the Christchurch Maori mission (1894-96), vicar of Ashburton (1899-1902) and of St John's, Christchurch (1902-05); warden of Selwyn College, Dunedin (1905-07), and archdeacon of Oamaru (1913-17). In 1918 he was appointed lecturer in history and acting-professor of economics at Otago University and in 1923 professor. Retiring in 1925, Woodthorpe

## WOODWARD

died in Sydney on 27 Nov 1931. He was the author of a number of works on philosophic, economic and political subjects, and was a fellow of the Royal Historical society and the Royal Economic society. In 1891 he married Alice, daughter of Richard Meares of Sydney.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Sydney Morning Herald*, 30 Nov 1931.

WOODWARD, JONAS (1810-81) was born in England and was employed as a schoolmaster under the British and Foreign Bible society before entering the office of Sharp brothers, bullion merchants. There he remained for many years until 1842, when he sailed for Wellington in the *Clifton* and obtained clerical employment with Bethune and Hunter. In 1855 Woodward was appointed provincial auditor and in the following year he became member of the Provincial Council. He represented Wellington City from 1855-57 and Wellington Country from 1859-65. In 1856 he was appointed provincial treasurer, and in 1865 he came under the General Government, in whose service he rose to be paymaster and receiver-general, retiring in 1880. He then became manager of the Wellington Trust and Loan Co., the successor of building societies with which he had been associated for 30 years. He was chairman of the committee to promote the East and West Coast railway, and reported to the Government on the Industrial Exhibition of 1881. Woodward was a member of the civil service examination board, was for many years chairman of the Thorndon school committee and was associated from the beginning with the Wellington Athenaeum. Before leaving England he was connected with the Sunday school union. In Wellington he founded the Congregational Church in 1842 and was its pastor till 1859, and an office-bearer and Sunday school teacher throughout his life. He was a visiting justice of the gaol and the asylum and a leader of the temperance movement and of the British and Foreign Bible society and the Choral society. Woodward died on 13 Jun 1881.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; *NZ. Times*, 14, 15, 17 Jun 1881.

WOOLCOCK, CHARLES, was for some years a merchant in Greymouth. From 1874 to the abolition he represented Greymouth as an executive member in the Westland Provincial

## WOON

Council. In 1876 he was returned as member for Grey Valley in the House of Representatives in which he sat till 1879. Woolcock died at Wollongong, Australia, in Dec 1891.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Harrop, *Westland*.

WOOLLCOMBE, BELFIELD (1816-91) was born at Bellerton, Cornwall, the son of the rector, the Rev Henry Woolcombe, with whom he moved to High Hampton and Ashbury. At the age of 13 he entered the Royal Navy as a midshipman in H.M.S. *Thunderer*. He was in the West Indies in 1830 and served in the China campaign (1839-40). In 1841 he was promoted lieutenant, and in 1850 he retired on pension with the rank of commander, afterwards advanced to captain. Arriving in New Zealand in 1852, he joined Mallock, Lee and Lance in the New Zealand Woolgrowing Co., which had a large property at Mt Parnassus, north Canterbury. In 1857 he settled at Timaru, where he bought a small section and built himself a house. He was appointed Government agent charged with all official duties, including those of postmaster, resident magistrate, immigration agent, harbourmaster and registrar of births, deaths and marriages. With his naval experience he made an efficient survey of Timaru harbour. In 1878 he retired, after having brought into operation almost every government department in the town. He was then engaged in business with G. F. Clulee until his death (22 Jul 1891). Woolcombe was keenly interested in St Mary's Anglican church, being architect of the building and a churchwarden for many years. He contested the Timaru parliamentary seat against Turnbull, but was defeated (1879). He married (1861) Frances A., daughter of the Rev Henry Fendall, of Fendalton, Christchurch.

Roberts; *Col. Gent.*; 'Woodhouse'; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Andersen (p); *Timaru Herald*, 23 Jul 1891.

WOON, GARLAND WILLIAM (1831-95), the son of William Woon (q.v.) was born at Nukualofa, Tonga, and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1834. He was educated at the mission school at Waimate (under R. Taylor, q.v.), and in 1846 was apprenticed to Williamson and Wilson, publishers of the *New Zealander* (Auckland). Completing his term (1849) he then joined the family at Waimate (Taranaki), and in 1850 his father set him up as a

## WOON

printer in New Plymouth. In 1852 he married Ann, daughter of William George (Helston, Cornwall).

In partnership with W. Collins, Woon established the *Taranaki Herald* (4 Aug 1852). Wicksteed was the first editor. In 1854 Collins withdrew from the paper, Woon carrying on until 1867, when losses in the post-war depression compelled him to sell out to Henry Weston. His later editors were Crompton, C. W. Richmond, J. C. Richmond, Arthur Atkinson and R. Phenev. Woon had a good knowledge of Maori and many native friends, and so was often able to give valuable intelligence of Maori affairs. For some time he practised as a native interpreter and land purchase officer. In 1868 he went to the Thames diggings, but having no luck was appointed in 1874 clerk in the provincial works department. Later he was clerk and interpreter to the R.M. at Wanganui, where he retired (1892) and died (6 Jun 1895).

Woon (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 1852-57 and Jubilee issue, 4 Aug 1892.

WOON, WILLIAM (1803-58) was born at Truro, Cornwall. As a boy he was apprenticed to the printing trade. Showing evidence of preaching ability, he became a local preacher, and in 1830 he was accepted for the Methodist ministry and appointed to the Friendly Islands mission. In Aug he sailed with James Watkin and Peter Turner in the ship *Lloyds*, which arrived at Bay of Islands in Jan 1831. After a few weeks at Mangungu they sailed for the Friendly Islands and disembarked at Nukualofa, Tongatabu. Woon's work was mainly in connection with the translation and printing of the scriptures in Tongan. In 1833 he resigned and returned to Mangungu (Jan 1834). A new printing press having just arrived from England, Woon set it going and gave practical assistance to John Hobbs. In Nov 1834 he was appointed to open a mission in the Waikato. He went to Kawhia, and was soon joined by John Whiteley and James Wallis in adjacent stations. In Feb 1836 all were withdrawn by direction of the London committee, and Woon was sent to Manukau and soon afterwards to assist Hobbs and to supervise the printing press. He remained at Hokianga for 10 years and did a vast amount of printing, including a *Harmony of the Gospels* (1836), primers for school child-

## WRIGG

ren, hymn books, tracts and many other Maori publications.

On 13 Feb 1840 he witnessed the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi at Hokianga. In Heke's war he ministered to wounded rebels. In Jan 1846 Governor Grey insisted on the removal of white settlers to Auckland for safety and Woon and his family were among the refugees taken from Hokianga in the Government brig *Victoria*. In 1846 Woon was sent to south Taranaki to minister to the Ngati-Ruanui and Taranaki tribes, the former perhaps the most turbulent and hostile in the North Island. Stationed at Heretua, Woon carried on his work amongst them until 1853. During this time his rush house was burnt down and all his possessions were destroyed. 'Te Wunu' was a man of gigantic stature and was everywhere admired by the Maori for his physique and his vocal powers. His health necessitated his superannuation in 1854, and he retired to Wanganui, where he acted as postmaster and ministered to the military and the civil population. He died on 22 Sep 1858. M.A.R.P.

Woon (p); Wells; Morley.

WORSLEY, CHARLES NATHAN M.L., was born in Devonshire and studied art in Great Britain. He came to New Zealand in the nineties, and devoted himself mainly to landscape painting. A most industrious worker, he exhibited for many years at the exhibitions in New Zealand and at the Royal Academy. He paid several visits to the Continent, to study and make sketches, and spent the last year or two of his life in Australia and Europe. He was a member of the Royal Society of British Artists. Worsley died on 25 Apr 1923.

John Barr, *Art; Lyttelton Times*, 30 Apr 1923.

WRIGG, HARRY CHARLES WILLIAM (1842-1924), who was born at Wexford, Ireland, was educated at Preston Grammar School, at Netherleigh College and by private tutors. In 1856 he was articled to a civil engineer in the north of England, and in 1859 he joined the Dragoon Guards. Arriving in New Zealand in 1863, he worked for the Auckland municipal council till 1867. Wrigg took part in the Waikato and east coast campaigns and was awarded the New Zealand Cross. He later served as assistant surveyor and draughtsman under the General Government (1868-70), survey-office computer

## WRIGHT

to the Southland Provincial Council (1870-71), and as chief draughtsman in Auckland province (1871-87), and to the Public Works department. He won a number of awards in Australian and New Zealand exhibitions for drawings. He retired on pension in 1887 and died on 30 Jun 1924.

*Cycl. NZ.*, ii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Jul 1924.

WRIGHT, DAVID MCKEE (1867-1928) was born at Ballynaskeagh, county Down, Ireland, the son of a Congregational minister, the Rev William Wright (author of *The Brontes in Ireland*). Educated chiefly at a private school in London, he emigrated to New Zealand in 1887. For some years he worked in the country, and while rabbiting on Puketoi station, in Central Otago, he commenced to write verse about station life and characters. These were first published in the poetry corner of the *Otago Witness*. In 1896 his first small volume of verse, *Aorangi*, appeared. In the following year he won the prize offered at Otago University for a poem (on Queen Victoria) and was encouraged to publish his *Station Ballads*. He also won the first Stuart prize for a poem.

Having continued his studies at Otago University, Wright was admitted in 1898 to the ministry of the Congregational Church, and appointed pastor at Oamaru. Two years later he was removed to Newtown, Wellington, where he published two volumes of verse, *Wisps of Tussock*, and *New Zealand Chimes* (1900). In the following year he was moved to Nelson, where he spent some years of fruitful work. During the election campaign of 1905 he conducted a paper entitled the *Nelson Times*. In 1909, anxious to find a wider field for his pen, he moved to Sydney, where he soon established an appreciated and lucrative connection with the *Bulletin*. For many years he contributed to the 'Red Page' and acted as critic for his journal. For *The Sun* he wrote leading articles for some time, besides helping with the moving picture page.

Wright's prose was versatile and excellent. In later years he devoted much study to early Irish literature, especially verse and plays, and in 1919 he published *An Irish Heart*. In the following year he was awarded a prize offered by the Australian Women's National League for a poem commemorating the visit of the Prince

## WRIGHT

of Wales, and also the Rupert Brooke Memorial Prize for a poem commemorating the peace, which is amongst his best work. Wright's poetry was sweet and sensuous, his ballads lilting, topical and correct. As a critic he was remarkably discerning. His hobby was the collection of gems and china, of which he was a competent judge. He died at Glenbrook on 5 Feb 1928 and was buried in the Church of England cemetery at Emu Plains.

The publication of *Station Ballads* was due to the advice and financial assistance of Robert McSkimming ('Crockery Bob' of 'The Hawker's Cart').

*Otago Witness*, 14 Feb 1928. Portrait: 21 Feb.

WRIGHT, EDWARD GEORGE (1831-1902) was born in Kent, and, on leaving school, joined a firm of engineers and contractors. He supervised the building of the gasworks in Rome, was connected with the construction of Woolwich dockyards, and in 1857 came to New Zealand under engagement to the Wellington provincial government, for which he built the lighthouse at Pencarrow heads. He afterwards became director of public works for Hawkes Bay, and in 1862 settled in Canterbury as a private engineer and contractor. He constructed a number of bridges, railways and roads, including part of the West Coast road. In 1864 he was one of the founders of the Christchurch Gas Co., of which he was chairman (1867-1902).

Wright sat in the House of Representatives as member for Coleridge (1879-81) and for Ashburton (1881-84, 1890-93, 1896-99). In 1882 he declined the portfolio of Minister of Agriculture. In 1887 he took up sheepfarming at Windermere, near Ashburton. Wright was chairman of the Canterbury plantation board, of the Lyttelton harbour board, of the Ashburton county council and of the railway commission and was a member of the north Canterbury education board. He died on 12 Aug 1902.

*Cycl. NZ.*, iii (p); Saunders, ii; *Lyttelton Times*, 13 Aug 1902.

WRIGHT, JOHN FORTESCUE EVELYN (1827-91), a son of Lieutenant John Faithful Fortescue Wright, R.M., entered the Navy but, having incurred fever in West Africa, he retired, spent a short time in New Zealand and entered the foreign department of the General Post Office in London. He visited the East,

WRIGHT

spending some time in Hongkong and then entering a merchant's office in Shanghai. Being sent to Australia on a mission in connection with tea, he joined his brothers in Wellington (1854) and married the widow of James Symons (Ohiro). He purchased land in the vicinity of Wellington, and in 1878 laid off portion as Vogelstown. He was in partnership with Jacob Joseph in the Happy Valley estate and Island Bay properties (1881) and also in a farm at Kairanga. Wright was a member of the Wellington Provincial Council (for Wellington Country district, 1861-63; and Karori and Makara, 1873-75). He died on 18 Oct 1891.

*Col. Gent.; NZ. Times*, 19 Oct 1891.

WRIGHT, WALTER (1866-1933) was born in Nottinghamshire and came to New Zealand with his parents at the age of 11. He exhibited at the Auckland Society of Arts (of which he was a life member) from 1888. He and his brother Frank studied in England (1894-97) at the Heatherley School and later came under the influence of the Newlyn school. Frank (1860-1923) kept to water colours, but Walter used both mediums. They travelled a good deal in New Zealand, and were the first artists to exploit the beauties of the west coast of Auckland and the Urewera. Walter's most ambitious work is the 'Massacre of the Boyd' (in the Auckland Art Gallery). The brothers executed the illustrations for a book on New Zealand by W. P. Reeves, published in London in 1908. Walter taught painting until his sight failed. He died on 11 Jan 1933.

John Barr, *Art; N.Z. Herald*, 13 Jan 1933; *Art in NZ.*, Mar 1933.

WYATT, CHARLES WILLIAM, practised as a solicitor in Christchurch. He represented Avon in the Provincial Council (1851-61), serving as an executive member in 1859.

WYNN, ROBERT WILLIAMS (1831-71) was an able English lawyer practising in Auckland from about 1858. Elected to the Provincial Council for Pensioner Settlements (1861-65), and for Auckland East (1866-69), he was provincial solicitor and a member of the executive (1867-69). He died on 24 Jul 1871.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; Morton; *Southern Cross*, 25 Jul 1871.

WYNYARD

WYNYARD, ROBERT HENRY (1802-64) was the younger son of Lieut-General William Wynyard, colonel of the 5th Regiment, and equerry to George III. Receiving his commission as ensign in the 58th Foot in 1819, he was promoted lieutenant in 1823; captain in 1826; major in 1841 and lieutenant-colonel in 1842.

Wynyard arrived in New Zealand in Oct 1845 with 200 men of his regiment, and in Dec was in charge of the advanced division on the Kawakawa river. On 11 Jan 1846 he was present at the occupation of Ruapekapeka pa, from which the garrison had withdrawn for the Sunday service. Wynyard left New Zealand early in 1847 for Australia, where the headquarters of the regiment was stationed, but returned in Jan 1851 to assume the command of the forces (vacant by the death of General Dean Pitt). Governor Grey appointed him (Apr 1851) to be lieutenant-governor of the province of New Ulster. This post he administered with tact and energy until its abolition in 1853, receiving from the Governor and the Secretary of State letters of approbation. In 1853 Wynyard was earnestly requested to stand for the superintendency of Auckland, and he acceded after assuring himself of the approval of his superiors. He took no part whatever in the political campaign, and did *not* even appear on the hustings to return thanks for his election (22 May 1853). It was Grey's intention that the Provincial Councils should first be brought into operation, and that after they had decided what powers they should exercise the General Assembly should be convened to give effect to their decision. When he left New Zealand at the end of 1853 he entrusted Wynyard with the administration of the Colony. The Duke of Newcastle, who had approved Wynyard's participation in political affairs only on Grey's assurance that it was in the interest of the Colony, felt definitely uneasy at this new activity, and instructed him (2 Jul 1854) to divest himself at the earliest opportunity of the superintendency of Auckland, which he considered incompatible with the higher post of Governor. Wynyard accordingly resigned (5 Jan 1855).

Meanwhile he became involved in unexpected difficulties with the General Assembly. No sooner had that body met (May 1854) than it demanded the inauguration of responsible government. Advised almost openly by Edward

WYNYARD

Gibbon Wakefield, Wynyard conceived that his instructions forbade him granting the request without submitting the matter to the Government at Home. He compromised for the time by adding to his executive several members of the Assembly, but refused to dismiss the permanent officials from the Council without the sanction of the Secretary of State. On this he stood firm, and Parliament was prorogued on 15 Sep. Instructions arrived that responsible Government could be inaugurated by merely providing pensions for the retiring officials. Gore Browne arrived to assume the governorship in Sep 1855, and responsible government was smoothly established in the next session.

As lieutenant-governor, Wynyard visited the Coromandel district on the discovery of gold in 1852, and arranged with the native chiefs for the amicable development of the diggings. He was promoted colonel (20 Jun 1854) and remained in command in New Zealand until his

WYNYARD

regiment returned to England in 1858. He was a member of the Legislative Council in 1858. In Oct he was promoted **major-general** and three months later went to the Cape in command of the troops.

Here again he was under Grey's governorship, and again he was called upon to administer the government on two occasions (Aug 1859-Jul 1860 and at the end of 1861). He was nominated C.B. and received a pension for distinguished services. In 1863 he returned to England on sick leave and was appointed colonel of the 98th Foot. He died on 6 Jan 1864.

Wynyard married Anne Camerine, daughter of H. Macdonell. She was for many years leader of society in Auckland, where she died (2 Nov 1881).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1854-58; *D.N.B.*; Thomson; Gisborne; Rusden. Saunders; Morton; Thomson; *N.Z. Herald*, 14 Feb 1871, 7 Nov 1881; *Taranaki Herald*, 13 Jul 1861. Portrait: *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Nov 1933.

# y

YATE, WILLIAM, was educated at the Church Missionary Society's college, and ordained deacon (1825), and priest (1826). He was for some time curate of St Swithin's, London East, and in 1827 proceeded in the convict ship *Sovereign* to New South Wales, where he was the guest of Marsden at Parramatta for some time. He was a popular preacher in Sydney, and had an influential following. In Jan 1828 Yate came to join the mission at Bay of Islands. He made a careful study of Maori, and as a conchologist made a fine collection of shells for the British Museum. In 1830 he proceeded to Sydney to publish the second portion of the Scriptures translated into Maori. He brought back with him a small printing press and a boy (James Smith) who had had slight experience in the office of the *Sydney Gazette*. They printed a few hymns. In 1831 Yate, proceeding in the *Active* to search for the *Haweis*, visited Tonga and other islands. In 1833 he was again in Sydney superintending the publication of three books for the mission.

Returning to New Zealand in the *Nereus*, he accompanied W. Williams to **Thames**. As secretary to the mission in New Zealand, he forwarded the petition of the chiefs for protection to William IV (1831). In 1834 he described for the Society the visit of H.M.S. *Alligator* and the selection of the New Zealand flag. He proceeded to England shortly afterwards, and returned to New South Wales by the *Prince Regent* in 1836. While he was in charge of St James's church in Sydney, Bishop Broughton interdicted him from officiating on account of charges against his moral conduct which were never answered. In Dec 1836 he sailed for England in the *Ulysses*, but the Society refused to reopen his case. In 1835 Yate published his

scholarly book *Account of New Zealand*, and in 1843 a letter in his own defence. He was later chaplain to the Sailors' Rest in Dover.

Yate, *op. cit.*; Carleton; Hocken, in *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vol. 33, p. 472; Marsden, *L. and f.*; Clarke; Scholefield, *Henry Williams*.

YATES, ELIZABETH, née OMAN (1840-1918) was born at Caithness, Scotland, and came to New Zealand with her parents as a child. About 1875 she married Michael Yates (d. 25 Sep 1902). Born in Lanark, Scotland, he became a master mariner, was shipwrecked in South Australia in 1852, and came to New Zealand the following year. He traded for many years in the Islands in command of the *Industry* and *Jessie Niccol*, in which he had a share, and afterwards in his own brig *Coronet*. In 1874 he retired from the sea. He was elected to the Onehunga borough council in 1883, and mayor in 1888, and resigned on account of ill-health in 1892.

Mrs Yates contested the mayoralty in Nov 1893 against F. W. Court, whom she defeated by 120 votes to 107. She held office until 1894. During her term there was vigorous expenditure on roads and footpaths. She was the first woman in the British empire to be mayor of a municipality. She was also a justice of the peace, and received a letter from Queen Victoria congratulating her on this honour. In a mayoral contest Dr Erson defeated her' by two to one. Mrs Yates had previously been a member of the Onehunga union parliament (1893) and had assisted her husband towards the end of his mayoralty. In Nov 1894 she was defeated by M. D. Sutherland by 147 votes to 56. She died on 6 Sep 1918.

## YEMS

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Rev. of Rev.*, 1894, p. 13, 117; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Dec 1893, 20 Apr, 29 Nov, 20 Dec 1894, 26 Sep 1902, 9 Sep 1918; *Auckland Star*, 7 Sep 1918.

YEMS, JAMES (1812-68) came to Wellington in the *Lord William Bentinck* (1841) and to Taranaki (1842). He was in business as an auctioneer in New Plymouth until 1845 when, owing to the depression, he left for South Australia. He returned to the province later, and represented New Plymouth in the Provincial Council 1861-63. Yems died on 10 Sep 1868.

*Taranaki P.C. minutes*; *Veils*.

YOUNG HENRY WILLIAM (1840-1903) was born at Camberwell, London. Coming to New Zealand in 1863, he proceeded to the West Coast in 1865 to join his elder brother, with whom he practised for some years as engineers to mining companies and architects: They designed public schools and churches in Greymouth, Hokitika and other places. In 1878 they undertook the post of engineers to the Westport Coal Co., constructing the Dennison incline and other works. They took the requisite soundings and did other preliminary work for Sir John Coode's report, and were associated with Napier Bell in the construction of the Cape Foulwind railway and the tramline to Westport harbour. After spending two years in practice in Wanganui, Young was appointed in 1886 as chief assistant engineer in New Zealand for the Midland Railway Co. (under Napier Bell and afterwards Robert Wilson). That engagement ending in 1896, he returned to private practice on the West Coast. Young was a member of the Society of Architects; A.M.I.C.E., and M.I.M.E. He was an attractive lecturer and public speaker. He married (1884) Annie, daughter of John Aitken. His death occurred on 4 Aug 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *N.Z. Surveyors' four.*, Sep 1903; *Grey River Argus*, 6 Aug 1903.

YOUNG, WILLIAM CARR, came to Otago in the *Pudsey Dawson* in 1854 and was in business with Edward McGlashan as an auctioneer. He was M.P.C. for Green Island in 1857 and was a member of the executive from 1857-59. He devoted a great deal of attention to the affairs

## YOUNG

of the Anglican syriod and the building of St Paul's Church, and took a prominent part in the controversy regarding the appointment of Bishop Jenner. He was a member of the diocesan and general synods.

YOUNG, WILLIAM CURLING, was the eldest son of G. F. Young, M.P., for Tynemouth, who was a director of the New Zealand Company. He came to Nelson in the *Mary Ann* in 1842 and was appointed a justice of the peace (22 Mar 1842), but shortly withdrew. He acted for some time as immigration agent for the settlement, receiving the Company's ships and settling the emigrants and accounts. Young kept a very interesting diary of events on the voyage. His letters from the settlement are in the Victoria College Library. Young was drowned in the Wairoa river on 14 Aug 1842.

*N.Z.C.*, 31; Broad; E. J. Wakefield, ii, 260.

YOUNG, WILLIAM FARQUHAR (1865-1937) was born in Otago and educated at a public primary school. He joined the Post and Telegraph department as a messenger in Dunedin (1878) becoming telegraphist at Waihemo (1882): telegraph check clerk at Dunedin (1906) and at Christchurch (1907). He took part in 1890 in establishing the post and telegraph officers' association (of which he was the first president), and promoted the demand for superannuation and other privileges. He retired from the service in 1910. As a youth Young studied elocution under William Hoskins (a Shakespearean actor). A solo chorister with an alto voice he became a leading singer, and in his teens' was a member of the Dunedin Savage club and the Liedertafel. Resigning from the postal department, he devoted his whole time to singing and elocution. He was a lover of both Gaelic and Maori, which he fostered in Caledonian and other societies. From 1912 until his death (on 29 Jan 1937) Young was a prominent figure in the musical life of Christchurch, where he taught singing and elocution. He married Mildred Righton.

Post and Telegraph department records; J. H. McKenzie (information); *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *The Press* and *Star-Sun*, 30 Jan 1937.

---

---

## ADDENDA

---

---

BADGER, WILFRED (1852-1915) was born at Rotherham, Yorkshire, of a strongly legal family, educated at St Peter's School, York, and after being articled to his uncle passed as a solicitor in 1872. He came to New Zealand in the *Glenora* (1880) and, after being managing clerk to J. B. R. Gresson in Christchurch he started practice there. Badger published the *New Zealand Statutes* (1885), which ran into several editions, *The Land Transfer Laws of Australasia* (1888), *Licensing Laws of Australasia* (1888) and the *Local Government Guide* (1886). He died on 8 Oct 1915.

*Bibliog. of Laws of Australia and N.Z.*, 1938; *The Press*, 9 Oct 1915.

BARTON, GEORGE ELLIOTT (1820-1903) was born at The Grove, county Tipperary, Ireland. Just after taking his B.A. at Trinity College, Dublin (1848), he was implicated with other young Orange students, in the revolt, and was expelled. He then went to Australia and worked on the goldfields and at manual labour until entering upon the study of law under J. B. Bennett, Melbourne, who admitted him to partnership. He entered parliament for Melbourne North as a supporter of the Land League. Barton lived in Paris for a few weeks before his death, which occurred in 1903. (See his biography, vol. i, 46.)

E. C. Barton (information).

BLANCH, GEORGE ERNEST (1863-1920) was born in England and educated privately and at Christ Church, Oxford (M.A. 1887), and London University (B.Sc.). In 1892 he was appointed mathematics and science master at Sydney Grammar School; in 1898 to the Church of England Grammar School in Melbourne and

in 1915 headmaster of Christ's College, Christchurch. He died on 18 Sep 1920.

*Christ's Coll. List* (p); *The Press*, 20 Sep 1920.

CAMPBELL, SM JOHN LOGAN (1817-1912) was born at Edinburgh, the son of Dr John Campbell and grandson of Sir James Campbell, of Aberuchill and Kilbryde, Perthshire. He was educated at the Edinburgh High School and at the University, where he graduated M.D. and F.R.C.S. He gained a commission in the East India Company, but changed his plans and decided to come to the colonies. He sailed for Australia as surgeon-superintendent of the *Palmyra* in 1839, and during a few months in that country visited the Bathurst and Lachlan districts. Attracted by reports of the projected colony in New Zealand, he crossed in the *Lady Lilford* early in 1840 and at Coromandel joined William Brown (q.v.), who had been a passenger in the *Palmyra*. Together they prospected the neighbourhood of Hauraki gulf and Waitemata and eventually purchased from the natives Motukorea (afterwards called Brown's Island). There they erected a habitation which they occupied until the foundation of Auckland, when they moved thither and acquired central sections at the first sale of town lots. Brown and Campbell started business in Shortland street in Dec 1840, and were soon leading merchants, with agents in the more important settlements of the north. In 1844 they loaded the barque *Bolina* with the first cargo of New Zealand produce for the English market, Brown proceeding thither as a passenger. In 1844 Campbell was offered a seat in the Legislative Council, but he declined owing to the demands of his own business. The firm had taken the main responsibility in establishing a newspaper, the *Southern Cross*, which had been managed by

### CAMPBELL

Brown since its first appearance early in 1843. It did not pay, and during the depression its finances made serious leeway. Campbell consequently suspended publication (Apr 1845). On Brown's return the state of public affairs made the revival of the *Southern Cross* imperative (1847).

His partner now taking control of the business, Campbell in 1848 left on his first visit to England. He spent many months travelling in the East and in Europe and did not return to New Zealand till 1850. In the following year he left again on a visit to San Francisco and was a witness of the burning of that city. He then took a renewed interest in New Zealand affairs, and on 21 Sep 1852 was elected by the Auckland Suburbs constituency to the Legislative Council of New Ulster. The functioning of that body was forestalled by the promulgation of the new constitution in 1853. Campbell did not stand for election to the first legislative bodies either in the province or at the capital. His partner, however, contested the superintendency of Auckland against Colonel Wynyard (Jul 1853) and in Aug 1854 was elected to Parliament for the City. When Wynyard resigned the superintendency (Jan 1855) Brown was elected, and he held office to the end of the year. In the midst of a political crisis he had to leave on a visit to Scotland. Campbell was elected to Parliament in his stead (Oct 1855) and, by defeating F. Whitaker (q.v.) by 99 votes, he became superintendent of the province (15 Nov). He was a member of Stafford's executive without portfolio (Jun to Nov 1856) and meanwhile judiciously managed the affairs of the province until Sep 1856, when he resigned both the superintendency and his parliamentary seat to pay another visit to Great Britain.

Again Campbell spent many months travelling on the Continent and in the East. When he heard of the outbreak of the mutiny in India he proceeded there, hastily in order to join his fiancée, Emma, daughter of Sir John Cracroft Wilson (q.v.). He reached Cawnpore in time to witness the marching out of Sir Colin Campbell's force to the relief of Lucknow, and was married at Meerut. On his return to New Zealand in 1860 he was again elected to Parliament, but retained the seat only from Aug till the dissolution in Nov. In 1862 he again proceeded to England, and for the next 10 years the family lived mostly in Europe. In 1871

### DAVIE

Campbell returned to Auckland as resident partner of the firm, of which three years later he became sole proprietor. He took a prominent part in the development of many other commercial undertakings in New Zealand. His firm having had built for their own business the paddle steamer *Golden Crown*, he became interested in the formation of the New Zealand Shipping Co. He was a promoter and director also of the Bank of New Zealand, the New Zealand Insurance Co., the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co., and the Thames Valley and Rotorua Railway Co. (of which he was chairman). In 1847 he had helped to found the Auckland Savings Bank, of which he was secretary for some years. He was president of the Northern Club, the Auckland Institute, the chamber of commerce and the Auckland education board. In 1856 he organised the first volunteer corps, the New Zealand Rifles.

Campbell showed a keen interest in the cultural well-being of his city. In 1877 he established the free school of art, which he maintained until the founding of the Elam School of Art in 1889. At an early period he acquired a considerable area of land close to the centre of the town with the intention of preserving it from the inevitable encroachment of the city's expansion. On 24 Apr 1901 he was elected mayor in view of the approaching visit of the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall and York, and in commemoration of that occasion he presented to the city a generous gift of 300 acres of this land, now known as Cornwall Park. Amongst his other public gifts were a free kindergarten and a creche. He was knighted in 1902 and in 1906 a statue erected in his honour by the city was unveiled. Campbell published in 1881 an attractive book of reminiscences entitled *Poenamu*. He was an amateur photographer of outstanding talent.

Campbell died on 22 Jun 1912 and was buried on the summit of Maungakiekie.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1856; 26 Jun, 4 Jul and 7 Aug 1912; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.* ii (p); H. B. Morton; Sherrin and Wallace; *Brett's Almanac* 1879 (p); J. L. Campbell, *op. cit.* and *N.Z. Herald* 24 Mar 1883; *Who's Who N.z.* 1908; Webster; J. Rutherford, *The Founding of Auckland* (1940); *N.z. Herald*, 25 May 1906, 24 Jun 1912 (p).

DAVIE, JOHN (1827-1916) was in Victoria until 1861, when he crossed to the Otago gold-

## DICKSON

fields. He had had little colonial experience and soon took employment with a mercantile firm in Dunedin. He afterwards practised as an accountant, being auditor for many companies in Otago and secretary of the Roxburgh Amalgamated Mining and other companies. He represented Dunedin City in the Otago Provincial Council (1873-75), and was in the executive in the latter year. He died on 4 Mar 1916.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Otago Daily Times*, 6 Mar 1916.

DICKSON, JAMES SAMUEL (1870-1939) was born at Belfast, and came to New Zealand at the age of 17. He was employed for some years by Smith and Caughey; was afternavards manager for G. Fowlds, Ltd., and then went into business in Auckland as a mercer and men's outfitter. He was keenly interested in league football and was president of the Auckland Rugby League. In 1911 Dickson won the Parnell seat in Parliament by defeating Sir J. G. Fmdlay, and he represented that constituency till 1928, when he was defeated by H. R. Jenkins. He was for some years chairman of the railways committee and of the labour bills committee, and from 1919 to 1928 senior Reform whip. Dickson died on 18 Oct 1939.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1932; *N.z. Herald* and *The Dominion*, 19 Oct 1939. Portrait: Parliament House.

DUMONT D'URVILLE, JULES SEBASTIEN CESAR (1790-1842) was born at Conde-sur-Noireau, Normandy, the son of a pre-revolutionary official. He was brought up by his mother and his uncle, the Abbé de Croisilles, and, having failed to pass the entrance examination for the Polytechnique, he went to sea in the *Aquilon*. Apart from his professional education he studied deeply both languages and science, and received steady promotion. In 1820, while serving in the hydrographic vessel *Chevette*, he recognised the Venus de Milo when it was excavated, and his report led to its acquisition by the French Government for the Louvre. Appointed second in command of the corvette *Coquille*, he took an active part in the circumnavigation of the world in 1822-25, in the course of which the vessel took G. Clarke to New Zealand and spent a fortnight at the Bay of Islands (Apr 1824). Promoted frigate captain, he was given command of an expedi-

## DUMONT D'URVILLE

tion which sailed from Toulon in the *Coquille*, now renamed *Astrolabe*, in 1826 to search the Pacific ocean for relics of La perouse. It was on this voyage that d'Urville did the greater part of the work that made him, after Cook, the most important scientific explorer of the New Zealand coast before the systematic surveys of Stokes and Drury. He left Sydney on 19 Dec 1826. Unable by reason of adverse winds (Jan 1827) to visit the southern portions of the islands passed over summarily by Cook he made for Tasman Bay, the southern shores of which he carefully investigated and charted, bestowing many names which have survived, and discovered French Pass. His passage of the Pass into Admiralty Bay, after a five days' struggle (28 Jan 1827) consummated one of the most dangerous feats of navigation in New Zealand history. His own name was given to D'Urville Island by his officers. He now sailed through Cook Strait; wishing to explore the Cloudy Bay area, but driven off again by wind and current, passed along part of the northern coast of the strait and up the east coast of the North Island, calling at Tolaga Bay (5 Feb) and having much amicable converse with the natives. Bad weather off the East Cape and in the Bay of Plenty made it impossible for him to add rectifications to Cook's chart, as he had wished, and he narrowly escaped going on a reef in the Bay (16 Feb). Further north conditions were more favourable; d'Urville named the D'Haussez islands, off Mercury Bay, was driven north to Whangarei, and then made a careful investigation of the western side of the Hauraki gulf, exploring the Waitemata harbour, sending a party overland to Manukau, and sailing down the Waiheke channel. He assumed that here he was the first discoverer; the honour, however, belongs to Marsden. Leaving the gulf, d'Urville sailed north again, and after a week at the Bay of Islands spent in native and botanical researches sailed for the Pacific islands on his La Perouse mission. His charts of the New Zealand coast are most detailed and admirable, though chance deprived him of filling in all the gaps left by Cook. His account of New Zealand is charming and sympathetic; and the published account of the voyage (*Voyage de la corvette l'Astrolabe*, 1830-35) provides not only a volume of narrative and description devoted to the country, but one of illustrative

## DUMONT D'URVILLE

documents drawn from the most valuable sources.

In the Pacific he carried out a very successful scientific cruise and recovered at Vanikoro further relics which were deposited (with those brought by Peter Dillon) in the Musée de Marine. Promoted on his return in 1829, d'Urville conducted to England the French King (Charles X) and his family seeking refuge from the revolution of Jul 1830. His plans for another voyage to the south were frustrated by the criticisms of Arago and others until 1837 when, with the approval of Louis Philippe, he sailed in command of the *Astrolabe* and *Zélée*. After a long investigation of the Antarctic continent, in which he discovered and named Joinville Island and Louis Philippe Land, d'Urville sought refreshment in Chile. Proceeding then westward by way of Fiji, the Pelew islands and Borneo, they left their sick at Hobart and, returning to the Antarctic, discovered Adélie Land (named after his wife) and Claire Land. In April 1840 d'Urville was in New Zealand waters again. He visited Otago harbour and Akaroa and charted carefully the greater part of the east coast of the South Island, but did no further scientific work on the North Island. At the Bay of Islands he was, as a Frenchman, received somewhat suspiciously by the English and, though not unamused, found much to censure in their activities. Strongly interested in the native race, he bitterly regretted the degradation brought by western habits. On his return to France he was promoted rear-admiral and received the gold medal of the Society of Geography. Shortly after his return in 1840 appeared the first volume of d'Urville's *Voyage au Pole Sud et dans l'Océanie*. He was killed in a railway accident on 8 May 1842 and the completion of this 10 volume work was entrusted to his subordinate Vincendon Dumoulin. D'Urville also published his *Voyage Pittoresque autour du Monde*, into which he weaves the narratives of many of his predecessors with his own (two vols., 1839, 1846).

L. I. Duperrey, *Voyage Autour du Monde* ... 1822-25; d'Urville, *op. cit.*; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; Beaglehole, *Discovery of New Zealand* (p); S. Percy Smith, translations in *Trans. N.z. Inst.* xl, 416-47, xli, 130-9, xlii, 412-33; R. P. Lesson, *Notice historique sur l'Amiral Dumont d'Urville* (1846); Larousse.

## HAMILTON

GLEN, ALICE ESTHER (1881-1940) was born at Christchurch, the daughter of Robert P. Glen, and educated at the Christchurch Girls' High School. While engaged in business she published her first book, *Six Little New Zealanders* (1917). From 1921-35 she was 'Lady Gay' of the *Sun* (Christchurch) Whiell published the first children's supplement in a New Zealand newspaper. From 1935 till her death (on 9 Feb 1940) she was on the staff of the *Press*. Her publications included also *Twinkles on the Mountain*, *Uncles Three at Kamahi* (1926) and *Robin of Maoriland*. Miss Glen rendered valuable social service in Christchurch as founder of the Home Service Association and a member of committee of the Cholmondeley Memorial House. She died on 9 Feb 1940.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1932; *The P'ess*, 10 Feb. 1940.

GRIGG, JOHN (1838-1920) was born in the Isle of Thanet, Kent, and received a classical and scientific education. He was very fond of music and sang in the Handel festival at Crystal Palace in 1887. In 1863 he came to Auckland in the *Annie Wilson*, and five years later he became a resident of Thames. From 1878-88 he was a teacher of singing under the Auckland education board. In 1905 he became conductor of the Auckland Choral Society. Grigg took a great interest in astronomy. In 1874 he tried to observe the transit of Venus and in 1882 he succeeded. He then erected a private observatory (1884), where he discovered comets in 1902, 1903 and 1907. He succeeded in obtaining a photograph of the comet of 1901 which was recognised by the Royal Astronomical Society granting him a fellowship (1906). He was also awarded two medals by the Astronomical Society of the Pacific. In 1911 he joined the expedition to Vavau to observe the eclipse of the sun. Grigg wrote and composed a number of songs, including 'My Own New Zealand Home'. He died on 20 Jun 1920.

*N.z. Herald*, 26 Jun 1920.

HAMILTON, JOHN RONALD (1871-1940) was born at Forest Hill, Southland, the son of John Hamilton, and was educated at the school there. After farming at Forest Hill, Hokonui and Winton, he joined his brother (Adam Hamilton, M.P.) in the ownership of a threshing plant and later in the firm of Hamilton and Co., of

## HENARE

Winton. When this business was sold to the Southland Fanners' Cooperative Association he became a life director. He was chairman of the Dominion dairy factory, a founder of the Winton Agricultural and Pastoral association and a member of the Winton borough council. Hamilton twice contested the Awarua seat in Parliament (1911 and 1914), and in 1919 defeated Sir Joseph Ward (3100 votes to 2323). Losing the seat in 1922 to P. A. de la Perrelle, he regained it in 1925 and finally lost it in 1928. He married (1898) Catherine, daughter of James Hunter. Hamilton died on 12 Jan 1940.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Southland Times*, 13 Jan 1940. Portrait: Parliament House.

HENARE, TAU (1878-1940) was born at Bay of Islands. A direct descendant of Kawiti (q.v.), he was of the powerful Ngapuhi hapu Ngati-Hille. He had no schooling, but at an early age took an intelligent part in Maori affairs and sports. Elected to Parliament in 1914 to represent the Northern Maori, he sat till 1938 (when he was defeated by P. Paikea). His adherence to the Reform party in 1915 assured its retention of office. Henare was a member of the Waitangi Trust board and was prominent in the consolidation of native lands for the benefit of his people. He himself farmed at Motatau. He married Katrine (d. 1918), daughter of the Rev Parata Awanui. Henare died on 12 Jan 1940.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Jan 1940 (p).

HUNT, SIR WILLIAM DUFFUS (1867-1939) was born at Walton, Waikato, the son of John Hunt, and educated there and at Auckland. He first took employment as a shepherd on Blackstone station, Central Otago, and he was manager of that and Maniatoto stations from 1888 to 1891, when he joined the firm of Wright, Stephenson and Co. in Gore. He opened a branch of the company in Invercargill in 1896, and three years later became a partner in the firm, which was founded into a limited liability company in 1906. He was managing director from that date until his death, which took place on 18 Sep 1939. Hunt served on many royal commissions, notably those on the public service (1912) and taxation (1924); was a member of the national efficiency board during the war of 1914-18, and member or chairman of

## McCALLUM

committees on taxation (1923), Rangitaike drainage (1924) and unemployment (1928-29). He was on the Meat Export Control board from its inception, the New Zealand Dairy board for six years" and the Board of Agriculture (1912-17); and was president of the Council of Agriculture and the New Zealand Friesian Cattle Breeders' society. He was chairman of directors of the Australian Mutual Provident Society in New Zealand and a director of the New Zealand Insurance Co. Hunt married first a daughter of the Rev T. L. Stanley, and second (1902) a daughter of the Rev H. J. Edwards.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 19 Sep 1939 (p).

KEANE, MICHAEL CORMAC (1880-1929) was born at Hokitika, the son of Michael Keane, and educated at the Christchurch Boys' High School where he gained a junior scholarship (1896). At Canterbury College he was a brilliant mathematician, winning exhibitions in 1897 and 1898. He graduated B.A. in 1900 (senior scholarship in mathematics) and M.A. in 1901 with first class honours in the same subject). He contributed frequently to the College magazine and showed remarkable facility in verse. Entering journalism on the staff of the *Lyttelton Times*, Keane was afterwards on *Truth* (later called the *Evening News*), of which he was sub-editor when he was appointed in 1904 to the staff of the *Evening Post*. In this and later positions he wrote humorous columns which for years maintained a high standard of brilliance in both prose and verse. He was associate editor of the *New Zealand Times* in 1906 and of the *Dominion* from 1907 till 1913, when he was appointed to the same position on the *Press*. In 1919 he became editor, holding the position till his death on 22 Jun 1929. Keane wrote much verse of good quality, examples of which appear in anthologies, in the *Sydney Bulletin* and other journals.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *The Press*, 24 Jun 1929; *Evening Post*, 22 Jun 1929.

McCALLUM, RICHARD (1863-1940) was born in Marlborough, the son of Archibald McCallum. Educated at the Blenheim and Renwick schools, he qualified in law and was admitted to the bar in 1885. He was a member

## McINTYRE

of the Wairau River Board (1892), of the Wellington education board (1897), of the Blenheim borough council and twice mayor of Blenheim. In 1893 he was appointed crown solicitor for Marlborough, a post which he resigned in 1911 on being elected member of Parliament for Wairau (which he represented until 1922). He was a member of the Legislative Council from 1930-37. McCallum was a member of the Marlborough College board of governors from 1899, of the Victoria University College council (1904-35) and of the General Council of Education for some years from 1918. He died on 1 Feb 1940.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932.

McINTYRE, RAYMOND FRANCIS (1879-1933) was the son of George McIntyre (Christchurch) and was educated at the Wanwick House school. He studied art at the Canterbury College School of Art, gained the Canterbury Art Society's bronze medal for painting from life, and became a successful portrait painter. In 1909 he went to England, where he exhibited at the Goupil Gallery, the New English Art Club and the Royal Academy, and held two one-man shows in London. Some of his work was reproduced in the *Studio* and in *Colour*. As art critic for the *Architectural Review*, his work showed much independence and soundness. One of McIntyre's pictures was acquired for the National Gallery in Wellington. McIntyre died on 24 Sep 1933.

*Who's Who*, 1933; *The Press*, 29 Sep 1933.

McLAREN, DAVID (1872-1939) was born in Glasgow and was trained as a boot operative. He came to New Zealand about 1897 and married (1902) Alberta Dungey Lingard. McLaren took a prominent part in trades unionism, being secretary of the Wellington waterside workers' union for some years. Always moderate, he nevertheless threw himself with vigour into the fight for better conditions for lower paid workers. He was a Labour member of the Wellington City Council (1901-12) and was mayor of the City (1912-13). He was for 12 years a member of the Wellington Hospital board, and he represented Wellington East in the House of Representatives (1908-II). During the war of 1914-18 he was on the military service board and the war relief association, and

## MOORE-JONES

he was a member of the epidemic commission in 1918. Finding himself out of sympathy with later labour trends, he became associated with the New Zealand Welfare League. He was a member of the Bums Club and of other Scottish societies, and wrote verse of passable quality. McLaren died on 3 Nov 1939.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion* and *Evening Post*, 4 Nov 1939 (pp). Portrait: Parliament House.

MERTON, OWEN HEATHCOTE GRIERSON (1887-1931) was born in Christchurch, the son of Alfred J. Merton, and was educated at the Cathedral grammar school and Christ's College (1895-1903). He was fond of music and also showed a disposition and talent for drawing, for which he entered at the Christchurch School of Art and studied under Alfred Walsh (q.v.). At the age of 17 he visited England and met John Hassall, who placed him for tuition under the Flemish artist Charles van HAVENNAET. With him Merton made tours in England and Holland. He also attended the Ealing Art School. When he returned to New Zealand in 1906 he was taken up by Miss D. K. Richmond, one of his pictures was acquired for the permanent collection at Wellington and he studied with Walsh again. In 1908 he returned to England, exhibited at the Royal Society of British Artists and was elected R.B.A. In 1910 he attended Colarossi's school in Paris, and in 1911 his mother organised an exhibition of his work in Christchurch. In 1914 he married Ruth (d. 1922) daughter of S. Jenkins, of Long Island, U.S.A. He lived in France until the war. This calamity rendered him artistically helpless, and he went to the United States and became a gardener and then a horticultural designer. He returned to painting in 1922 after the death of his wife: Merton held two exhibitions at the Leicester Galleries in London. His sense of design and delicacy of touch reflected his love for Chinese masters, and he showed much strength and individuality. He died on 18 Jan 1931.

*Christ's Coll. List; Art in New Zealand*, vol 2, 229; *The Times*, 21 Jan 1931.

MOORE-JONES, HORACE (1868-1922) was born at Malvern Wells, Worcestershire, educated there and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1885. His mother (1838-1929) kept

girls' schools in Auckland. He studied art in Sydney and London and had a good command of water colours. While living in Sydney he was a member of the council of the Royal Art Society. In 1914, while in England, he joined the British section of the N.Z.E.F. and proceeded to Gallipoli as a sapper in No. 1 Field company New Zealand Engineers. There he made many sketches of the war which were exhibited in England when he arrived there in 1916 and afterwards in New Zealand and Australia. A portfolio of sketches was published before the collection was acquired by the Australian Government for the War Museum. After returning to New Zealand Moore-Jones engaged in sketching and was teaching 'art classes at Hamilton when he met his death (in a fire) on 3 Apr 1922. Examples of his work appear in the Auckland Art Gallery and other public collections.

.. W. Moore, *The Story of Australian Art* (1934) 11 47-8; *The Press*, 5 Apr 1922; *N.z. Herald*, 4 Apr 1922, 9 Sep 1929.

SAVAGE, MICHAEL JOSEPH (1872-1940) was born at Benalla, Victoria, on 7 Mar 1872, the son of Richard Savage, a small farmer from county Cavan, Ireland. Educated at the Benalla state school, he learned a good deal about farming as a boy. On leaving school, at the age of 14, he entered the employ of a Benalla storekeeper, where in the course of seven years he learned every side of the business. The bank failure of 1893 throwing him out of employment, he carried his swag in search of work. For some years he was employed on the properties of Sir Samuel McCaughey, in New South Wales, where he was engaged mainly in the digging of irrigation ditches which converted the district into one of the most prosperous in New South Wales. Of medium stature, Savage was athletic and powerful, and delighted in feats of strength with his jaws and teeth. He was interested in football and racing, but rarely betted.

In the last years of the century Savage returned to Victoria to visit his brother at Rutherglen. There he met Patrick Webb (later his Minister of Mines), and they were employed together in the A.M.A. mine. Conditions were so bad that most of the work had to be done in a stooping or crawling position, and a candle would not burn within 10 feet of the working

face. Savage and Webb became close friends and took an active part in the infant labour movement in Australia. The sympathetic nature of the older man warmed to the aspirations of the Australian workers, who were then suffering both from the depression of the nineties and from the penalties which still attached to trades union activities. They read deeply the working-class literature of the time, mainly Blatchford, Henry George and the Webbs, the *Clarion* and the *Labour Leader*. Webb was a mine steward, and he succeeded in organising practically all of the 300 A.M.A. workers into a union. He was also secretary of the North Prentice branch of the Political Labour Council, out of which evolved the Australian Labour Party. Disliking underground work, Savage seized the first opportunity of escape. While in the Great Southern Consols mine he was employed on the winding engine and qualified for a first-class ticket. Thus equipped, he took charge of a small mine on Garibaldi Hill belonging to Dr John Harris (later Sir John Hams' Minister of Education in Victoria). He took part in the miners' co-operative movement, and helped to organise the Rutherglen Co-operative Society, Limited, which operated a store and a large bakery. Of this he was manager for nearly a year.

In the early years of this century Australia was much interested in the condition of labour in New Zealand, where the workers were in the full enjoyment of rising prices for farm products and of the social legislation of the Ballance and Seddon governments. Webb came to New Zealand in 1906; Savage remained in Rutherglen and assumed some of his secretarieships, including that of the North Prentice branch of the Political Labour Council. Webb, who was working in the mines at Denniston, expressed the opinion that New Zealand offered an excellent opportunity to a man possessing the personality and qualities of leadership which he recognised in Savage. Eventually Savage decided to come to the Dominion and, resigning his position in the Co-operative Society, he landed in New Zealand on Labour Day 1907. What he heard about the West Coast climate decided him to remain in the North Island, and he took employment for some months at George Seifert's flax mill at Tokomaru. He was then invited to assist in the formation of a co-operative society in Auck-

land. This movement failed, but Savage remained in Auckland and found employment as a cellarman in Hancock's brewery. There he was employed throughout the remainder of his life as a worker, and for eight years he walked to and fro every day between Herne Bay and Khyber Pass. His settled position enabled him to take a new interest in working-class politics, and he was an active trades unionist. He greatly admired the social legislation of Ballance and Seddon, and when the Liberal regime came to a close he co-operated with other labour leaders-notably H. E. Holland, W. E. Parry, P. Fraser, P. C. Webb, H. T. Armstrong and R. Semple-in organising New Zealand labour to play an independent role in politics. At this early stage his clear thinking and hair for essentials, combined with a real understanding of working-class needs, a deep humanity and personal integrity marked him out as a sound adviser even to those who did not foresee his eventual promotion to the leadership.

When Savage first attempted to enter Parliament (in 1911) as a candidate for the Auckland Central seat, the Labour party had not been organised for political purposes and he was a member of the New Zealand Socialist party, which had its headquarters in the Federal hall in Victoria street. In the middle of the campaign a strike of the general labourers' union broke out which caused a stoppage of municipal services in Auckland. At a large strike meeting at the Grey statue (on 28 Oct) Savage seconded a resolution calling on the various sections of labour to get together. Amongst those concerned in the strike negotiations were P. Fraser (then president of the general labourers' union and later Prime Minister), and P. Webb and R. Semple, president and organiser of the Federation of Labour. The result of the election in Auckland Central was: A. E. Glover (Liberal) 4061; M. J. Savage (Labour) 1800; F. C. Gleeson (Independent) 601; W. Richardson (Prohibitionist) 601. D. McLaren, who in 1908 was elected for Wellington East as a Labour member, lost his seat in 1911, but four Labour and Socialist candidates were elected-namely W. A. Veitch (Wanganui), J. H. Payne (Auckland), J. Robertson (Otaki) and A. H. Hindmarsh (South Wellington).

In Jan 1913, at the invitation of the Federa-

tion of Labour, a preliminary conference was held in the office of the *Maoriland Worker* at which a committee was appointed to organise another conference with the object of unifying the labour movement. That conference, which met in Jul, included representatives of the Federation of Labour, the trades and labour councils, the Socialist party and the United Labour party. "In Jun a parliamentary vacancy had occurred in the Grey electorate owing to the death of the Speaker (Sir Arthur Guinness). Webb, who had taken a prominent part in the formation of the Federation on the West Coast, and was its president, left the conference to contest the seat as a Social Democrat. He won it as a direct representative of the new Labour party. The conference resulted in a merger of practically all of the labour groups into two new organisations, the United Federation of Labour and the Social Democratic party, the former being the industrial and the latter the political wing of the movement. The Labour and Socialist representatives already in parliament elected A. H. Hindmarsh as their chairman and functioned as the Social Democratic party. In Dec 1913 the group was strengthened by the election of J. McCombs for Lyttelton. At the election of 1914 Savage again stood for Auckland Central as a Social Democrat, but without success. With the memory of the Waihi strike so recent and a war just beginning, conditions for Labour candidates were not favourable, but the party gained eight seats, as compared with four in 1911. The result in Auckland Central was: Glover, 4053; Savage, 1751; W. Richardson, 1315.

In 1916 another conference was convened at the instance of the national executive of the Social Democratic party, which approached the labour representation committees. The outcome was the Labour party as it is known to-day, composed of branches and affiliated trades unions. Savage was now well and favourably known in Auckland, and his eventual advancement in politics seemed assured when he was elected (in 1918) to the Auckland City Council and the hospital board. These duties satisfied his yearning for social reform and gave him an insight into local government, which is essential for success in New Zealand politics. In 1919 Parliament (which had been extended as a war measure) was dissolved, and the election afforded Savage his entry into political

life in the fuller sense. The National Government had achieved its purpose and dissolved, and the election was fought nominally in peace conditions but with many war restrictions in full effect. Savage contested Auckland West in place of the retiring member, C. H. Poole. He was opposed by two candidates supporting what were regarded as nationalist tickets. At one of his meetings in this campaign he outlined a social programme which included the widening of the old age pension to something like the present social security scheme, based on rights of citizenship. The election resulted as follows: Savage, 4008; C. F. Bennett (Reform), 3475; A. J. Entrican (Liberal), 1493. Labour still had only eight seats in the House. Savage speedily accustomed himself to the technique of Parliament, and when McCombs resigned the deputy leadership of the parliamentary Labour party in 1923 he was elected to succeed him. This addition to his political duties compelled him to resign from the City Council and the hospital board. At the election of 1922 Savage defeated J. Farrell in Auckland West by 5694 votes to 4345. Labour on this occasion made a marked advance, gaining 17 seats, as compared with 22 held by Liberal members and 38 by Reform. In 1925, following the death of Massey, the Reform party gained 55 seats in a House of 80 members. Labour lost four, but by the discomfiture of the Liberal party (which had only 12 members in the new Parliament) it became the official opposition. Savage's electorate gave him 5677 votes, while the Reform candidate (S. Oldfield) polled 5201.

In 1926 Savage visited Australia as a delegate of the New Zealand Parliament to the conference of the British Empire Parliamentary Association. In 1927 he was again elected to the Auckland City Council and the hospital board, on which he continued to act until the death of his leader (H. E. Holland, q.v.) in 1933. At the 1928 election the anti-Labour vote was again split and Savage, though in a safe position at the head of the poll, was again a minority member: Savage, 5361; R. B. Speirs (United), 4020; F. A'Deane (Reform), 2021. The Reform following in Parliament was now reduced to 29, and the Liberal party (under Sir Joseph Ward) had 26 seats. Labour, with 19 seats, gave a general support to the Liberal government which took office on 10

Dec 1928. On 28 May 1930 G. W. Forbes succeeded Sir Joseph Ward as Prime Minister. The country was now feeling the full force of the economic depression, and unemployment had attained unprecedented dimensions. On 22 Sep 1931 Forbes formed a coalition government from the United and Reform parties. In the elections at the end of 1931 Labour registered another advance in strength, the new house being composed as follows: Reform, 22; Liberal United, 29; Labour, 25; Independent, 4. Savage's majority was the greatest he had ever polled: Savage, 6442; H. R. McKenzie (Independent Coalition United), 1925; J. A. C. Allum (Independent Coalition Reform) 1870. In 1933 Henry Holland died, and Savage was elected unanimously as leader of the Labour party, which was again the official opposition. During that Parliament (extended for one year against Labour's protest) he greatly strengthened the position of the party and improved the foundations already laid for the triumph of Labour in 1935.

In the election of 1935 New Zealand unequivocally returned to power its first Labour government. In a house of 80 members Savage had a following of 55; the Coalition opposition (now called the National party) numbered only 19; and there were six independent members. In Auckland West Savage polled 8567 votes; E. D. Stallworthy (Nationalist), 2387; and J. A. Govan (Democrat), 792. On 6 Dec 1935 Savage was sworn in as the first Labour Prime Minister of New Zealand. The party caucus entrusted him with the choice of his colleagues, and he nominated the following: P. Fraser (Minister of Education and Health); W. Nash (Finance and Customs); D. G. Sullivan (Industries and Commerce and Railways); H. G. R. Mason (Attorney-General and Minister of Justice); H. T. Armstrong (Labour and Immigration); R. Semple (Public Works and Transport); W. Eo Parry (Internal Affairs); P. C. Webb (Mines); F. Jones (Postmaster-General, Minister of Defence); W. Lee Martin (Agriculture); F. Langstone (Lands and Commissioner of State Forests); M. Fagan (member of Executive Council without portfolio). On assuming office Savage lost no time in implementing the programme upon which the Government was elected. Wages, salaries and pensions were at once restored to the scale existing before the economy cuts of 1931; the

powers of the arbitration court, which had been suspended during the depression, were revived; and a 40-hour week for industry was enacted. The Government assumed control of currency and credit; bought out private interests in the Reserve Bank and abolished the railways board. A vigorous programme of public works and housing helped materially to reduce unemployment. To assist farmers, guaranteed prices were introduced for dairy produce and a marketing department instituted and the state took over the mortgage corporation. Savage took the keenest personal interest in the passing of the social security legislation, which consolidated existing pensions and public health law and made comprehensive provision for medical services and old age and invalidity pensions.

Savage had a good command of parliamentary practice, and in his control of parliament was firm and conciliatory. He once insisted at a Labour conference that a gain made by subtlety could only be held temporarily. Frank and straightforward, he was never a florid speaker, but he was a keen and effective debater, making his points by sincerity and simplicity of expression rather than by oratorical effect. He made quick decisions which were generally accurate. In his administration of the prime ministership he reverted to the English convention and assumed much less departmental responsibility than his immediate predecessors. Though he did control External Affairs, Native Affairs and some minor portfolios, he conceived his post as that of a presiding and co-ordinating head of the executive, and in this role he was singularly successful. To him as Minister of Broadcasting was due the introduction of the broadcasting of Parliament, which New Zealand was the first country in the world to adopt. He had firm faith in broadcasting as a political instrument and when his health forbade him longer to transact public business he broadcast

a series of earnest personal addresses on 'New Zealand's problems as I see them.' Savage's reaction to the Imperial connection was instant and unquestioning. The crises of 1938 and 1939 prompted an immediate declaration of solidarity on behalf of New Zealand, and he took a whole-hearted part in the war preparations in vindication of the voluntary basis of service.

On 30 Apr 1936 Savage was appointed a member of the Privy Council. In the following year he attended the Imperial Conference in London and the coronation of King George VI (5 May 1937), and on 28 May he was sworn of the Privy Council. He received the freedom of the City of London and the honorary D.C.L. of Oxford University.

At the elections of 1938 the Labour government was again returned with a majority independent of any possible combination: Labour, 53; Nationalist, 25; Independent, 2. Opposed by J. W. Kealy (Nationalist), Savage retained his old seat by 11,591 votes to 3584. During the session of Parliament in 1938 his health had begun to fail and for some weeks in 1939 Parliament was led by the deputy-Prime Minister (Hon Peter Fraser). The death of Savage, which occurred on 27 Mar 1940, was marked by great public demonstrations of sorrow. The body lay in state at Parliament House in Wellington and was interred at Bastion Point, Auckland, after a remarkable progress from the capital. Savage was a bachelor and a member of the Roman Catholic church. He was succeeded as Prime Minister by the Hon. P. Fraser (1 Apr 1940).

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1932; *Who's Who*, 1939; *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Oct 1933 (p); *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Aug 1936; (p); *Auckland Star*, *Evening Post*, 27 Mar 1940; *The Dominion*, 28 Mar 1940 (p); *Grey River Argus*, 1 Apr 1940; *The Standard*, 3 Apr 1940; *N.Z. Listener*, 5 Apr 1940 (p); *The Observer*, 1 Nov 1939.

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

---

---

## INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

---

THE purpose of this index is to list references throughout the work both to persons who have memoirs of their own, and to those to whom reference is made in other memoirs. It is not a complete list of the biographies in the book. References are not included for persons of whom there is a memoir unless there are references in other articles which are of a material character; except for the Addenda, which section is fully indexed.

- ABERCROMBIE & CO., ii, 33, 180  
Abraham, C. J., i, 394; ii, 287  
Acheson, F. O. V., i, 386  
Acland, J. B., i, 231 ; ii, 397  
Acland, L. G. D., i (vii)  
Adam, James, ii, 2, 269  
Adams, C. W., i, 4  
Adams, H., ii, 169  
Adams, J. A. D., i, 446  
A'Deane, J., ii, 397  
Te Abu Karamu, i, 383  
Te Abu, Riwai, i, 339  
Ahumai, ii, 142  
Te Akau, ii, 188, 199, 202  
Te Aki, i, 232  
Alabaster, -, i, 375  
Alcock, Lord Abbot, i, 493  
Aldred, J., i, 116, 350  
Alexander, Sir J., i, 123  
Allan, James, ii, 311, 382  
Allen, E., ii, 277  
Allen, G., ii, 284  
Allen, Sir J., i, 227; ii, 29, 67, 69, 168, 341  
Allen, Sir S., i, 11  
Allen, W., i, II, 144  
Allen, W. S., i, 287  
Allom, A. J., ii, 446  
Allum, J. A. C., ii, 546  
Te Anaua, i, 341, 385, 390; ii, 49, 70, 143, 188, 194, 402, 407, 409, 487  
Anderson, A., i, 16  
Anderson, D., i, 36  
Anderson, G. J., ii, 41  
Anderson, H. F., i, 129  
Anderson, J. C., i, 14, 183; ii, 219  
Anderson, John, i, 15, 231  
Te Anga, ii, 117  
Angas, G. F., i, 384; ii, 444, 445, 489  
Anson, F. A., ii, 93  
Te Ao Kapu-rangi, ii, 482  
Te Ao, Te Puke, ii, 359, 489  
Te Ao, Ropata, i, 17  
Apatari, H., i, 475  
Aporo, i, 310; ii, 226  
Te Arabi, ii, 435  
Arama Karaka, ii, 166  
Te Arawai, ii, 401  
Arden, H., ii, 395  
Te Ariari, Erueti, ii, 361  
Arkle, J., i, 250  
Armitage, Rev. J., i, 97  
Armitage, James, i, 244  
Armstrong, G., i, 19  
Armstrong, H. T., ii, 545-6  
Arney, Sir G., ii, 58, 329  
Arnold, T., i, 58, 60, 215, 299, 402  
Arnot, A. K., ii, 452  
Ashwell, B. Y., i, 341; ii, 145  
Atkinson, A. S., i, 21; ii, 236  
Atkinson, Sir H. A., i, 21, 22, 33, 34, 280; ii, 18, 98, 236, 239, 266, 325, 340, 341, 422, 424, 479, 493, 494, 500  
Atkinson, W., i, 22  
Atkyns, T. R., ii, 81  
Atmore, H., ii, 463  
Aubert, M. J., ii, 209  
Aubrey, H. R., ii, 380  
Auckland, Lord, i, 395  
Te Awaitaia, i, 351; ii, 70, 436, 456, 488, 498  
Awarahi, ii, 318  
Te Awe Awe, i, 27; ii, 188, 199  
Aylmer, J. J., i, 27  
Aylmer, W. J., ii, 483  
BADDELEY, Maj.-gen., i, 54  
Badger, W., ii, 538  
Bagot, Sir C., ii, 446  
Bain, J. W., ii, 460

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Baird, J. D., ii, 135  
 Baker, A., i, 120  
 Baker, C., i, 30  
 Baker, J. H., i, 372  
 Baker, R., i, 38  
 Bakewell, F. H., i, 31  
 Baldwin, W., i, 96, 362, 503  
 Ball, W. T., i, 32  
 Ballance, J., i, 251, 330; ii, 135, 194, 212, 281, 297, 340, 424, 460, 474, 544-5  
 Balneavis, H. C., ii, 298  
 Banfield, E. No, i, 21  
 Banks, Sir J., i, 173  
 Bannatyne, W. M., i, 53, 58, 443  
 Bannerman, Wo, i, 14, 122; ii, 15, 389  
 Bannister, E., ii, 482  
 Barday, G., i, 38  
 Barday, W. de R., ii, 394  
 Barlf, E., ii, 281  
 Barker, Lady, i, 481; ii, 474  
 Barnicoat, Co A., i, 41  
 Barnicoat, J. W., i, 403; ii, 381, 440, 441  
 Barr, Go M., ii, 343  
 Barr, J., ii, 219  
 Barrett, R., i, 511; ii, 187,263,450,487  
 Barron, W., ii, 103  
 Barstow, R. Co, i, 135  
 Bartley, T. H., ii, 321  
 Barton, Sir E., i, 45  
 Barton, E. L., i, 46  
 Barton, G. E., i, 319; ii, 538  
 Barton, Ro, i, 127  
 Barton, Wo, ii, 151  
 Bastings, Ho, i, 86, 490  
 Bataillon, P., ii, 177  
 Bathgate, Jo, i, 85, 201; ii, 422  
 Baucke, J. H. C., i, 49  
 Baume, Fo E., i, 449  
 Baxter, D., ii, 301  
 Bayly, T., i, 50, 51  
 Bealey, Jo, i, 52; ii, 278  
 Bealey, S., i, 51; ii, 97, 134, 251, 330, 362, 509  
 Beauchamp, Kathleen, ii, 51  
 Beauchamp, Leslie, ii, 52  
 Bedford, H. D., ii, 301  
 Beecham, J., ii, 167  
 Beetham, G., ii, 77  
 Beetham, Ro, ii, 484  
 Beetham, Wo, i, 261; ii, 515  
 Beit, JoN., ii, 528  
 Bell, C. No, ii, 429  
 Bell, Sir F. D., i, 242, 275; ii, 42, 110, 237, 271, 290, 294, 320, 423, 442, 446, 479  
 Bell, Sir Fo Ho D., ii, 37, 272, 341  
 Bell, G., ii, 14  
 Bell, J. S., i, 56; ii, 429  
 Bell, Joseph, i, 131  
 Bell, W. H. D., i, 63  
 Bellairs, E. H. W., i, 444; ii, 347  
 Bennett, C. F., ii, 546  
 Bennett, J. H., ii, 331  
 Best, W., i, 65  
 Bethune, K., i, 420  
 Beveridge, A., ii, 105  
 Beverly, A., i, 226; ii, 189  
 Bickerton, A. W., ii, 267, 481  
 Biddle, H., i, 125  
 Bidwill, C. R., i, 162; ii, 318  
 Biggs, R. No, i, 288, 473, 474; ii, 195, 241, 400, 401  
 Birch, T., i, 253; ii, 206, 280  
 Black, J. Go, ii, 78  
 Black Peter, ii, 204  
 Blackburn, Lt., ii, 344  
 Blackburne, S., ii, 139  
 Blackie, J., i, 102  
 Blakiston, A. F. N., ii, 331, 509  
 Blackley, Wo L., i, 24  
 Blacklock, J., i, 132  
 Blair, Wo No, i, 72  
 Blanch, G. Eo, ii, 538  
 Bledisloe, Lord, ii, 162  
 Blenkinsopp, J., ii, 450  
 Blomfield, Wo, i, 290  
 'Bloody Jack,' ii, 400  
 Blundell, F. H., ii, 107, 236  
 Bolland, W., i, 313  
 Bolt, F., i, 76  
 Boor, L., i, 457  
 Booth, J., ii, 9  
 Borlase, C. H., ii, 302  
 Bourke, Sir Ro, i, 124, 202, 396  
 Bourne, C. F., i, 67  
 Bowden, G., ii, 52  
 Bowen, Co, i, 80  
 Bowen, Co C., ii, 97, 134, 203, 241, 278, 348, 470  
 Bowen, Sir G., ii, 323  
 Bowler, Wo, i, 174  
 Boyd, B., ii, 40, 477  
 Boys, J. C., i, 27  
 Brabazon, J., i, 127  
 Bracken, To, i, 47, 48; ii, 22, 530  
 Bradey, F., i, 87, 356  
 Bradshaw, J. B., i, 86; ii, 235  
 Brady, E. J., ii, 51  
 Braik, Go D., ii, 1  
 Brandon, A. de B., i, 486  
 Brandon, A. de B., junr., i, 89, 393  
 Branigan, Sto J., i, 392  
 Brassey, Maj., ii, 143  
 Bray, W. B., i, 358; ii, 97  
 Brayshaw, Go, ii, 347  
 Brett, Sir H., i, 497; ii, 211  
 Brewer, T. G., i, 149, 150  
 Brewer, W. Vo, i, 94  
 'Brian Boru,' ii, 360  
 Bridgen, -, i, 228, 300  
 Brittan, J., ii, 253  
 Brittan, W. Go, i, 94, 302  
 Broad, L., i, 452  
 Brogden Brothers, i, 56; ii, 292, 421  
 Bronte, Charlotte, ii, 376  
 Brooks, -, ii, 441

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Broome, Fo No, i, 39, 40  
 Broughton, Bishop, i, 339; ii, 245  
 Brown, Ao N., i, 465; ii, 120  
 Brown, Co, i, 23, 59, 100, 142, 187, 348; ii, 239  
 Brown, Co Ao, i, 98, 100  
 Brown, Ho, ii, 309  
 Brown, Rev. H., ii, 325  
 Brown, Jo C., i, 104  
 Brown, J. Macmillan, i, 12; ii, 481  
 Brown, J. Mainwaring, ii, 29, 30  
 Brown, J. To, ii, 75  
 Brown, R., ii, 262  
 Brown, Wo, i, 140, 183, 190; ii, 61, 113, 493, 506, 538-9  
 Browne, G. H., ii, 48  
 Browning, R., i, 214  
 Browning, S., i, 269  
 Bruce, Ao B., i, 107  
 Bruce, D., ii, 128  
 Bnmner, T., i, 274, 373; ii, 427  
 Bryce, J., i, 33, 307-8, 344-5, 475; ii, 253, 263, 403, 423, 433, 491, 500, 503, 509  
 Buchanan, A., i, 31, 402  
 Buchanan, Sir W., i, 120  
 Buck, G., ii, 10, 387  
 Buck, Ho, ii, 314  
 Buck, Po H. (Te Rangihiroa), i, 378; ii, 176  
 Buckland, Fo, ii, 119  
 Buckland, W. F., ii, 138  
 Buckland, W. To, i, 114; ii, 354  
 Buckley, G. A. M., i, 115  
 Buckley, Sir P., i, 34, 365; ii, 282  
 Buckley, W. F. M., i, 115  
 Buddle, T., ii, 151, 218, 265  
 Bull, J., i, 33  
 Buller, C. B., ii, 445, 446  
 Buller, J., i, 97, 119, 355; ii, 406  
 Bumby, J. H., i, 120; ii, 406, 450, 465  
 Bunbury, To, i, 397; ii, 193, 201, 400, 510  
 Bunny, H., i, 95  
 Bunting, J., ii, 195, 405, 471  
 Burke, Sir Bo, i (vi, x)  
 Burn, Do W. Mo, i, 121  
 Burnett, J., i, 164  
 Burnett, Wo, ii, 78  
 Burns, A. J., i, 136; ii, 59, 420  
 Burns, R., i, 42, 122, 181  
 Burns, T., i, 3, 38, 102, 121, 229; ii, 345, 415  
 Burrows, R., ii, 490  
 Burt, To, ii, 364  
 Busby, J., i, 161,202,396; ii, 8, 45, 71, 117,250  
 Butler, Jo Go, i, 46, 457, 458, 492; ii, 360, 388, 400  
 Butler, S., ii, 58, 98, 304  
 Butler, W. J., i, 128, 509  
 Butt, Ho Fo, ii, 285  
 Buttle, Go, i, 116; ii, 103, 218  
 Button, C. E., ii, 221, 281  
 Buxton, S., ii, 253  
 Bycroft, Jo, ii, 339  
 CADMAN, A. J., i, 34; ii, 21, 310  
 Calder, W. H., i, 73  
 Callan, J. B., i, 132  
 Cameron, Sir D., i, 106, 157, 328; ii, 226, 321, 429, 488,490  
 Cameron, D., i, 312  
 Campbell, A. Ie Go, i, 134  
 Campbell, F. No, i, 53  
 Campbell, H., i, 135  
 Campbell, J., i, 134, 257, 378; ii, 96, 362  
 Campbell, Sir J. L., i, 103, 290, 451; ii, 113, 264, 327, 366, 493, 538  
 Campbell, J. P., i, 317  
 Campbell, Matthew, ii, 125, 377  
 Campbell, Moses, i, 134  
 Campbell, Ro, ii, 212, 303  
 Cannell, Wo, i, 268  
 Caples, P. Qo, i, 375  
 Carey, R., i, 316, 317; ii, 11, 437  
 Cargill, Eo Bo, i, 48, 86  
 Cargill, J., i, 137  
 Cargill, W. Wo, i, 137, 138, 188, 363, 463; ii, 80,415  
 Carkeek, So, i, 139; ii, 72  
 Carleton, Ho, i, 96, 260; ii, 38  
 Carlyle, T., i, 299  
 Carlyon, E. Ao, i, 141  
 Carlyon, G. G., i, 218  
 Carlyon, H. Eo, i, 361  
 Carnegie, Do, i, 149, 181  
 Carnell, So, ii, 354  
 Carr, Ho, i, 288  
 Carrington, F. Ao, i, 23, 143, 187; ii, 451  
 Carrington, O., i, 143; ii, 131, 273, 312  
 Carrington, Wo, i, 57; ii, 10  
 Carroll, Sir J., i, 378; ii, 161-2, 461  
 Carroll, Joseph, i, 143  
 Carruthers, J., i, 73  
 Carson, Go, ii, 519  
 Carson, J., i, 144  
 Carter, Co R., ii, 69  
 Cass, To, ii, 133, 380  
 Cautley, W. 00' i, 207  
 Caverhill, Jo So, i, 430; ii, 377, 438  
 Chaffers, E. M., i, 504; ii, 187, 449  
 Chalmers, To, i, 138  
 Chanel, Po, i, 333; ii, 178, 418  
 Chapman, Co Ro, i, 86  
 Chapman, Fo R., ii, 4  
 Chapman, Ho So, i, 93, 149; ii, 62, 224, 238, 344, 514  
 Chapman, Mo, i, 149; ii, 306  
 Chapman, T., ii, 101, 146  
 Chapple, J. C., i, 152  
 Chaytor, Ao H., i, 153  
 Chaytor, Sir E. W. C., i, 153  
 Cheeseman, T. Fo, i, 470  
 Chilman, Ro, i, 468  
 Churton, J. F., i, 220, 373  
 Chute, Sir T., i, 107, 242; ii, 9, 131, 143, 412, 430  
 Clarke, G., i, 159; ii, 61, 286, 540  
 Clarke, H. T., i, 159; ii, 9  
 Clarke, Mo, ii, 27  
 Clayton, Wo Ho, ii, 65, 424

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Clendon, J. R., i, 397; ii, 72, 88  
 Clerke, C., i, 174  
 Clifford, A., ii, 478  
 Clifford, Sir C., i, 70, 104, 181; ii, 163, 321, 338, 447, 468, 479, 480  
 Clifford, Sir W. L., i, 163  
 Coates, D., i, 232, 473; ii, 439  
 Coates, J., i, 165  
 Coates, J. G., ii, 325, 381  
 Cobbe, J. G., ii, 463  
 Cock, R., i, 170, 467  
 Cockayne, A. H., i, 166  
 Colbeck, W. H., ii, 529  
 Cole, R., ii, 285  
 Coleman, E. J., ii, 18  
 Colenso, W., i, 70, 4II, 451; ii, 326, 432, 516, 521  
 Collier, J., i, 25  
 Collier, Jean, ii, 384  
 Collins, A. S., ii, 294  
 Collins, W., ii, 532  
 Comte, J. B., ii, 178  
 Congreve, Sir W., ii, 43  
 Connell, W., ii, 167, 243  
 Cannon, H., i, 103  
 Conolly, E. T., i, 321; ii, 169, 456  
 Conyers, W., ii, 260  
 Coode, Sir John, ii, 137, 384, 537  
 Cook, C. H. H., ii, 267  
 Cook, G., i, 149  
 Cook, Capt. J., i, 4II, 412; ii, 284, 540  
 Cookson, L., i, 84  
 COoper and Levy, ii, 231  
 Cooper, G., i, 174, 397, 404  
 Cooper, G. S., i, 385; ii, 304, 355  
 Cooper, T., i, 175, 203; ii, 59  
 Corle, A. C., i, 177  
 Coster, J. L., ii, 159  
 Cotterell, J. S., ii, 440  
 Cotterill, G., i, 211  
 Cotton, W. C., ii, 285-6  
 Cowan, J., i (ix), 498  
 Cowlshaw, W. P., i, 287  
 Cox, A., i (vi); ii, 253, 291, 494  
 Cox, C. O., i, 279  
 Craig, W., i, 299  
 Craigie, J., ii, 310  
 Crawford, J. C., ii, 49, 319, 407  
 Creed, C., i, 444; ii, 153, 406, 409, 4II, 465, 472, 528  
 Creighton, R. J., i, 183  
 Crewes, J., ii, 375, 424  
 Creyke, A. R., i, 480; ii, 474  
 Crier, M., i, 289  
 Crompton, W. M., ii, 312  
 Cross, Mrs., i, 322  
 Cruise, R. A., i, 390  
 Crummer, T., ii, 518  
 Cullen, J., ii, 59  
 Cuming, H., ii, 281  
 Curle, D., i, 75  
 Curtis, G. N., i, 186  
 Curtis, H. B., i, 186  
 Curtis, O., i, 8; ii, 241, 324  
 Cutfield, G., i, 99; ii, 499  
 Cutten, W. H., ii, 111, 228, 419  
 Cutts, E., ii, 319  
 DALDY, Mrs., i, 190  
 Dalrymple, P., ii, 41  
 Dalziell, F. G., i, 249  
 Dampier-Crossley, C. E., i, 191  
 Daniel, T., i, 417  
 Daniell, E., i, 198  
 Dargaville, J. M., ii, 87  
 Darling, W., i, 86  
 Dart, J. R., ii, 107  
 Darwin, C., i, 128, 4II; ii, 304, 342, 511  
 Dashwood, E., ii, 43, 87  
 Davidson, A. P., ii, 346  
 Davie, J., ii, 539  
 Davies, W., i, 294  
 Davis, C., i, 98, 196  
 Davis, Sir E. H., i, 195  
 Davis, R., i, 128; ii, 73, 186  
 Davis, Richard, or Reihana, i, 120  
 Davison, W., i, 41  
 Day, R., ii, 326  
 Deans, J. and W., i, 15, 30, 95, 197, 289; ii, 53, 148, 305, 379, 474  
 de Castro, E., ii, 250  
 Deighton, R., i, 199  
 Delamain, F. W., i, 459  
 De la Perrelle, P. A., ii, 542  
 De Lautour, C. A., i, 143; ii, 27  
 De Lautour, H. A., i, 269  
 De Malmanche, V., i, 503  
 Denison, Sir W., i, 105, 151  
 Denniston, Sir J., i, 200; ii, 335  
 De Pelichet, C., i, 306  
 De Quincey, T., i, 201  
 de Smidt, H. J., ii, 464  
 Despard, H., i, 36, 264, 377; ii, II7, 127, 371  
 de Thierry, C. H. P., i, 125, 487; ii, 445  
 Devenish, W., i, 268  
 Devore, A. E. T., ii, 59  
 Dick, T., i, 86; ii, 2, 335  
 Dickson, J. S., i, 250; ii, 540  
 Dickson-Poynder, Sir J. P., i, 430  
 Dieffenbach, E., i, 374, 456; ii, 318, 449  
 Dignan, P., i, 206  
 Dilke, Sir C. W., i, 100  
 Dillon, P., ii, 88, 174, 360, 541  
 Dingle, J., i, 51  
 Dive, B., i, 209  
 Dobson, A., ii, 358  
 Dobson, E., i, 210, 403; ii, 132, 252, 427  
 Dobson, G., i, 212  
 Dodson, H., ii, 292, 460  
 Domett, A., i, 20, 265; ii, 248, 270, 291, 320, 321, 322, 493  
 Donald, J. B., ii, 463  
 Donnelly, A., i, 453

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Donnelly, W., ii, 492  
 Dorset, J., ii, 450  
 Dorset, W., i, 218  
 Douarre, Bishop, ii, 418  
 Douglas, J., ii, 25  
 Downes, T. W., i, 321  
 Dransfield, C. E., i, 219  
 Dransfield, J., ii, 98  
 Driver, H., ii, 414  
 Drury, Capt. B., i, 283, ii, 540  
 Dudley, W. C., ii, 285, 516  
 Dufferin, Marquis of, ii, 171  
 Du Fresne, Marion, i, 476; ii, 413  
 Duke, Capt., ii, 365  
 Dumbell, J., ii, 396  
 Du Moulin, W., i, 180  
 Duncan, A. S., i, 221  
 Duncan, George, i, 47; ii, 220, 293  
 Duncan, J., i, 495  
 Duncan, Rev. J., ii, 12  
 Duncan, J. W., ii, 220  
 Duncan, P., ii, 17  
 Duncan, T. S., ii, 513  
 Duncan, T. Y., i, 443  
 Dungan, P., ii, 281  
 Duppa, B., i, 222  
 Duppa, G., i, 192; ii, 43  
 Durham, Lord, i, 353; ii, 316, 444, 445, 446  
 Durie, D. S., ii, 126, 386  
 D'Urville, D., ii, II2, 175, 358, 399, 472, 540-1  
 Duthie, J., i, 61, ii, 341  
 Dyer, J., i, 53  
 Dyer, W. J., ii, III  
 EARLE, A., ii, 413  
 Earnshaw, W., ii, 168, 301  
 Earp, G. B., i, 337  
 Edger, H. F., i, 227  
 Edger, L., i, 227, 234  
 Edger, S., i, 233  
 Edinburgh, Duke of, i, 71, 154, 288, 367; ii, 121, 183, 227, 390  
 Edward VII, King, ii, 461  
 Edward VIII, King, i, 448; ii, 436  
 Edwards, N., i, 6; ii, 292  
 Edwards, W. B., i, 175; ii, 98, 184  
 Eliot, Lord, ii, 445  
 Elliott, G., i, 229  
 Elliott, H. J. H., i, 228  
 Ell, H. G., ii, 5, 481  
 Elliott, C., ii, 108  
 Elliott, J., i, 229  
 Ellis, L. M., ii, 405  
 Ellison, E. P., ii, 176  
 Ellison, T. R., i, 285; ii, 357  
 Elmslie, J., i, 15  
 Elmsly, Dr, i, 308  
 Enau, ii, 50  
 England, R., ii, 440  
 Entrican, A. J., ii, 546  
 Enys, J. D., ii, 40  
 Epalle, J. B., ii, 177, 418  
 ElTington, W., ii, 6  
 Erson, Dr, ii, 536  
 Evans, G., ii, 279  
 Evans, G. S., i, 150, 412; ii, II6, 242, 439, 450  
 Evans, K. M., i, 227  
 Evans, W. A., i, 234  
 Eyes, W. H., ii, 292  
 Eyre, E. J., i, 325, 326; ii, 137, 242  
 Eyre, L. J., ii, 349  
 FAGAN, M., ii, 546  
 Fairburn, W. T., i, 168, 238  
 Fairchild, J., ii, 313  
 Farish, W., i, 260  
 Farjeon, B. L., ii, 419  
 Farjeon, E., i, 240  
 Farmer, J., i, 306  
 Farnall, H. W., ii, 333  
 Farrell, J., ii, 546  
 Fawcett, H., i, 31  
 Fearon, E., i, 153, 423  
 Featherston, E., i, 78, 82, 89, 138, 275, 439, 506; ii, 73, 81, II9, 158, 224, 314, 320, 322, 333, 338, 376, 422, 448  
 Feilding, W., ii, 422  
 Feldwick, H., i, 29  
 Fell, A. G., i, 439; ii, 292  
 Fendall, H., ii, 531  
 Fenton, F. D., ii, 34, 75, 488  
 Fenwick, Sir G., i, 400; ii, 22, 185, 2II  
 Fenwick, W., ii, 22  
 Ferens, T., i, 183  
 Ferguson, Sir H. L., i, 247  
 Ferguson, J., i, II3  
 Fergusson, Sir C., i, 248, 302  
 Findlay, Sir J. G., i, 191; ii, 461, 540  
 Fimmimore, W., ii, 503  
 Firth, J. C., i, 412, 475; ii, 173, 437  
 Fish, H. S., ii, 77, 168, 308  
 Fisher, F. M. B., i, 254  
 Fisher, G., i, 61, 423, 462; ii, 341  
 Fisher, W. R., i, 253  
 Fitchett, A. R., i, 203  
 FitzGerald, J. E., i, 52, 59, 135, 215, 270, 495; ii, 96, 134, 150, 290, 321, 362, 417, 447, 458, 459, 479  
 Fitzgerald, J. P., i, 259, 328, 340  
 Fitzgerald, R. A., ii, 300  
 Fitzherbert, H. S., i, 46, 261  
 Fitzherbert, Sir W., i, 115, 251, 5II; ii, 139, 164, 187, 323, 324, 471, 479  
 FitzRoy, R., i, 56, 270, 325, 349, 377, 428; ii, 33, 73, 193, 202, 286, 300, 304, 337, 448, 451, 512  
 Flight, J., i, 203  
 Flower, W., ii, 275  
 Fodor, H., i, 322  
 Foley, J., i, 268  
 Fooks, C. B., i, 268  
 Forbes, G. W., ii, 463, 546

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Forrest, Fr., ii, 251  
 Forsaith, T. S., ii, 394, 447, 529  
 Foster, Mrs. T. S., ii, 481  
 Fowler, J. N., i, 464  
 Fox, Major, ii, 367  
 Fox, Sir W., i, 33, 57, 58, 59, 83, 108, 135; ii, 34, 66, 104, 123, 137, 147, 197, 224, 257, 290, 291, 320, 322, 324, 331, 421, 446, 529  
 Frankland, F. W., i, 24  
 Franklin, Sir J., i, 193, 398  
 Fraser, A. L. D., ii, 36  
 Fraser, C., i, 15  
 Fraser, J., ii, 256, 401, 430, 502  
 Fraser, P., ii, 545-7  
 Fraser, Sir W., ii, 69, 134, 344  
 Froggatt, G., ii, 460  
 Fulloon, J., ii, 46  
 Fulton, J., ii, 415  
 Furneaux, T., i, 173  
 Fynes-Clinton, G., ii, 118

GALLAWAY, J. M., i, 132  
 Galloway, T. J., i, 201, 461  
 Galt, A., i, 434  
 Galvin, P., i, 86  
 Garin, A. M., ii, 45, 208  
 Gamer, J., ii, 115  
 Gay, T., ii, 305  
 Gebbie, J., i, 198, 289; ii, 53  
 George IV, King, ii, 438  
 George V, King, i, 165; ii, 26, 125, 132, 195, 283, 408, 462, 506, 539  
 George VI, King, ii, 547  
 George, i, 493  
 George, F. N., i, 216; ii, 270  
 George, Mary, i, 216; ii, 270  
 George, S. T., i, 255; ii, 281  
 George Tubou, ii, 406  
 Gibb, J., i, 292; ii, 312  
 Gibbs, S., ii, 525  
 Gibbs, W., ii, 19  
 Gilfillan, J. A. (Wanganui), i, 11, 36; ii, 49, 166, 374, 518  
 Gillies, J., ii, 19  
 Gillies, J. L., ii, 205-6  
 Gillies, R., ii, 6, 293, 344  
 Gillies, T. B., i, 169, 329, 362; ii, 2, 138, 237, 324, 344, 519  
 Gillon, E. T., i, 4, 5, 423  
 Gilmour, T., ii, 102  
 Gipps, Sir G., i, 396; ii, 72, 451  
 Gisborne, W., i (vi), 81; ii, 304  
 Gittos, B., i, 97, 300; ii, 45  
 Gladstone, W. E., i, 82, 329; ii, 286  
 Glasgow, Lord, i, 248  
 Glen, A. E., ii, 540  
 Glendining, R., ii, 258  
 Glenelg, Lord, i, 125; ii, 444, 445  
 Glover, A. E., ii, 545  
 Godeffroy, F. C., i, 74  
 Goderich, Lord, i, 124, 161; ii, 443  
 Godfrey, E. L., ii, 299  
 Godley, J. R., i, 80, 94, 256, 257; ii, 287, 289, 302, 362, 379, 446, 448, 474  
 Goldie, C. F., i, 305; ii, 327  
 Gollan, S. H., i, 306  
 Good, T., i, 322; ii, 82  
 Gordon, Sir A. H., i, 307-8; ii, 257  
 Gore-Browne, Sir T., ii, 62, 196, 197, 237, 290, 320, 321, 436, 490  
 Goring, F., i, 309, 440  
 Goring, F. Y., i, 103  
 Gorrie, W., ii, 413  
 Gorst, Sir J., i, 59, 276; ii, 95, 101, 142, 197, 226, 386, 427, 437  
 Gorst, Sir J. E., i, 310  
 Gorton, E., i, 33; ii, 331  
 Gouger, R., ii, 443, 444  
 Goulter, C., ii, 459  
 Goulter, C. F. J., i, 312  
 Govan, J. A., ii, 546  
 Govett, H., i, 339  
 Grace, A. A., i, 314  
 Grace, L. M., i, 314, 386  
 Grace, M. S., i, 191; ii, 123, 256  
 Grace, T. S., i, 313, 381, 385, 386; ii, 150, 402, 426  
 Grace, T. S. (1850-1918), i, 314; ii, 349  
 Graham, D., i, 316, 368  
 Graham, H. B., ii, 2  
 Graham, P., ii, 406  
 Graham, R., i, 128; ii, 518  
 Graham, W. A., i, 114  
 Graham, W. S., ii, 244  
 Grande, J., i, 41  
 Grant, A., ii, 303  
 Grant, F. W. O., ii, 279  
 Grant, J. G. S., i, 341  
 Grant, T. O., ii, 279  
 Granville, Lord, ii, 468, 480  
 Gray, C. M., ii, 375  
 Gray, G., i, 193; ii, 457  
 Gray, H. F., i, 318, 323  
 Gray, M. W., ii, 191  
 Gray, W. H., i, 319  
 Green, H., ii, 464  
 Green, M. W., ii, 340  
 Green, W. S., i, 210  
 Greensill, Major, i, 29, 321  
 Greenwood, C. W., ii, 482  
 Greenwood, H., i, 321  
 Greenwood Bros., ii, 229  
 Greer, Col., ii, 20, 437  
 Gresson, Miss, ii, 481  
 Grey, Earl, ii, 289, 329, 446  
 Grey, Sir George, i, 24, 33, 35, 54, 57, 59, 85, 133, 135, 141, 236, 264, 276, 278, 291, 331, 340, 354, 377, 381, 384, 385, 471; ii, 21, 33, 62, 73, 93, 99, 118, 120, 127, 128, 138, 145, 147, 150, 155, 187, 193, 194, 198, 202, 211, 246, 253, 257, 259, 266, 281, 284, 286, 292, 295, 304-5, 322, 371, 374, 379, 408, 409, 423, 424, 436, 452, 458, 477, 478, 479, 488, 490, 491, 504, 512, 515, 529

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Griffiths, Mary, ii, 108  
 Grigg, J., ii, 66, 265  
 Grigg, J. C. N., i, 332  
 Grigg, John, ii, 541  
 Grigg, Joseph, i, 332  
 Grimstone, S. E., i (v); ii, 210  
 Grossman, J. P., i, 334  
 Guard, E., i, 334; ii, 70  
 Gudgeon, T. W., i (vi)  
 Guinness, A. R., ii, 66, 83, 462, 545  
 Gully, H. G., i, 61  
 Gully, J., i, 491; ii, 241  
 Gunn, D., ii, 59  
 Gunn, G., ii, 23  
 Guthrie, W., i, 485  
 Guyton, W., i, 420

HABENS, W. J., ii, 93  
 Hadfield, O., i, 105, 313, 361; ii, 169, 176, 196, 202, 237, 245, 288, 321, 359, 374, 472, 488, 505, 511, 515  
 Haereroa, ii, 147  
 Haggitt, D'Arcy, i, 341  
 Hakairo, ii, 435  
 Te Hakeke, ii, 200, 407  
 Hakirau, see J. Love  
 Halbert, T., ii, 161  
 Halcombe, A. F., ii, 3  
 Halcombe, W., i, 274  
 Hall, G., ii, 330  
 Hall, Sir J., i, 34, 52; ii, 98, 134, 252, 257, 297, 323, 324, 422, 423, 469, 494, 509, 529  
 Hall, W., ii, 56  
 Hall-Jones, Sir W., ii, 84, 310, 461  
 Hallenstein, B., ii, 247  
 Halley, E., i, 102  
 Hally, P., ii, 301  
 Halse, W., i, 99, 418; ii, 506  
 Halswell, E. S., ii, 169  
 Hamer, T., i, 227, 348  
 Hamilton, A., ii, 333, 541  
 Hamilton, J., ii, 475  
 Hamilton, J. R., ii, 463, 541  
 Hamilton, W. J. W., i, 80; ii, 214  
 Hamilton, W. S., i, 79  
 Hanataua, Te Rei, ii, 70, 489  
 Te Hanataua, Tito, i, 352  
 Hamlin, E., ii, 66  
 Hamlin, F. E., i, 143  
 Hamlin, J., i, 98, 350; ii, 318, 356, 489  
 Hamlin, Job, i, 351; ii, 484  
 Hankinson, ii, 260, 431  
 Hansen, T., i, 467  
 Hanson, R. D., i, 233, 365; ii, 176  
 Hape, Mere, ii, 176  
 Hapuku, i, 385; ii, 87, 129, 143, 360  
 Hapurona, ii, 34, 182, 196, 359  
 Haramiti, ii, 388, 402  
 Haratua, i, 377  
 Harding, A. E., ii, 325  
 Harding, J., i, 136  
 Harding, S., ii, 334  
 Hardington, H., ii, 518  
 Hardy, E., ii, 205  
 Hardy, J., ii, 204, 420  
 Hare, John, ii, 182  
 Hargest, J., ii, 463  
 Hariata, i, 376, 410; ii, 166, 399  
 Harkness, J., i, 67  
 Harkness, J. D., ii, 85  
 Harkness, W. D., i, 358  
 Harman, R. J. S., ii, 77, 330  
 Harper, C., ii, 258  
 Harper, G. S., i, 118  
 Harper, H. J. C., i, 3, 74, 359, 436; ii, 397, 428  
 Harper, L., ii, 358  
 Harris, B., ii, 66  
 Harris, J. C., i, 299  
 Harris, J. H., ii, 4, 234  
 Harris, J. W., ii, 262  
 Harris, W. H., i, 427; ii, 48  
 Harrison, H. S., ii, 379  
 Harston, E. F., i, 179, 335  
 Hart, R., i, 364  
 Hartley and Reilly, i, 282, 365-6, 453  
 Haselden, C., i, 366  
 Hassing, G., i, 213  
 Haughton, C. E. M., ii, 50  
 Haultain, T. M., ii, 241, 322, 430, 502  
 Haumene, ii, 411  
 Te Haunga, ii, 198  
 Te Haupa, i, 407  
 Haupapa, ii, 365, 435  
 Hauraki, ii, 50, 117  
 Hauraki Kaiteke, ii, 482  
 Havelock, Sir H., ii, 429  
 Hawdon, J., i, 136, 235, 419  
 Hay, E., ii, 168  
 Hay, P. S., ii, 315  
 Hayes, W. H., i, 8  
 Hazlett, J., ii, 330  
 Heale, T., ii, 233, 244, 492  
 Heaphy, C., i, 108, 275; ii, 337, 358, 449  
 Heaton, J. H., i (vi)  
 Heberley, Jos., i, 374  
 Hector, Sir J., i, 506; ii, 307, 394  
 Heine, J. W. C., ii, 528  
 Heke, Hone, i, 263, 325, 378, 407, 452; ii, 117, 127, 154, 156, 171, 175, 304, 355, 490, 511  
 Heketua-te-Rangi, i, 333  
 Te Hekeua, ii, 171  
 Henare, T., ii, 542  
 Henderson, H. H. W., i, 379  
 Henderson, T., ii, 60, 427  
 Hengi, ii, 175, 368  
 Henry, H. R., i, 396  
 Henty, J., and Co., i, 8  
 Hepanaia, ii, 411, 412  
 Hepburn, G., ii, 152, 336  
 Hepetipa, i, 457  
 Herbert, E., ii, 220

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Herbert, Major, i, 99  
 Herdman, Sir A. L., i, 431  
 Herea, i, 381  
 Herekieke, i, 314, 385; ii, 50  
 Heremaia, ii, 412  
 Heron, J., ii, 285  
 Herrick, J. L., ii, 241  
 Herries, Sir W. H., i, 143; ii, 69  
 Hetau, ii, 407  
 Te Heuheu, i, 7, 309, 313, 314, 339, 381, 383-6, 448;  
 ii, 62, 65, 70, 129-30, 142, 148, 195, 196, 201, 374,  
 407, 456, 487, 505  
 Te Heuheu Horonuku, ii, 10  
 Hewlings, S., i, 441; ii, 229  
 Hickey, P. W., ii, 463  
 Hickson, W., ii, 260  
 Higgins, R. L., ii, 205  
 Hight, J., i, 38  
 Hikairo, i, 409  
 Hika-mkutai, R., ii, 256  
 Te Hiko, ii, 55, 193, 200, 440  
 Te Hiko-o-te-Rangi, ii, 160, 169, 175  
 Hill, Mrs Alfred, ii, 481  
 Hill, H., ii, 484  
 Hill, J., i, 90  
 Hill, R., ii, 466  
 Hilson, Dr, ii, 404  
 Hinaki, i, 207, 408; ii, 154, 175, 438  
 Hindmarsh, A. H., i, 405; ii, 545  
 Hindmarsh, J., i, 390  
 Hinds, S., ii, 448  
 Hine-i-Turama, ii, 46, 365  
 Hine-matioro, i, 369, 449; ii, 180  
 Hinewairoro, ii, 188, 368  
 Hinton, J., i, 24  
 Hipango, H. K., i, 391  
 Hipango, H. W., ii, 374  
 Te Hira, ii, 391  
 Hiroki, i, 110, 111; ii, 500  
 Hirst, H., ii, 475  
 Hirst, T., i, 203  
 Hislop, J., ii, 168  
 Hislop, T. C. A., i, 393  
 Hislop, T. W., i, 392; ii, 279  
 Hislop, W., i, 296  
 Hitaua, ii, 407  
 Hobbs, J., i, 120, 197, 301, 470; ii, 318, 450  
 Hobhouse, E., i, 1, 79; ii, 129  
 Hobson, W., i, 47, 120, 125, 161, 353, 487, 497; ii,  
 57, 60, 65, 123, 177, 224, 247, 259, 299, 326, 389,  
 405, 440, 445, 448, 450, 489  
 Hobson, W. R., i, 398  
 Hochstetter, F. von, i, 373, 473; ii, 221, 389, 427, 433  
 Hocken, T. M., i, 246  
 Hodgkinson, S., ii, 90  
 Hodgson, W., i, 41  
 Hogg, D., i, 423  
 Hogg, P. D., i, 403  
 Hoggard, J. F., ii, 172  
 Holdsworth, Sir C., i, 404  
 Holland, H. E., ii, 545-6  
 Holmes, A., ii, 335  
 Holmes, M., ii, 35  
 Holroyd, A. T., i, 365  
 Holt and McCarthy, i, 93, 298  
 Hone Wetere, ii, 223  
 Hongi, H., ii, 368  
 Hongi Hika, i, 202, 207, 376, 378, 390, 458; ii, 57,  
 100, 112, 117, 144-6, 151, 171, 173-4, 225, 261-2,  
 360, 361, 388, 400, 405, 511  
 Honore, A., ii, 528  
 Hood, T., i, 100  
 Hook, H., i, 93  
 Hooker, Sir J. D., i, 153; ii, 304, 375  
 •Hooknose: i, 412  
 Hoos, C., ii, 281  
 Hope, Dr, ii, 484  
 Hopper, E. B., ii, 89, 163  
 Te Horeta Taniwha, i, 408  
 Hori Kingi, i, 13; ii, 225  
 Horn, J., i, 16  
 Hornbrook, W., i, 413  
 Horomona, ii, 53  
 Horonuku, i, 385  
 Horopapera, ii, 499  
 Horotiu, ii, 466  
 Hort, A. i, 58  
 Hort, A., junr, i, 414  
 Horton, A. G., ii, 525  
 Hoskins, W., ii, 537  
 Hote, ii, 435  
 Hoterini, ii, 359  
 Hoturoa, ii, 147  
 Te Houkamau, i, 449; ii, 181  
 Howard, J., ii, 441  
 Howell, J., i, 191; ii, 311, 331  
 Howick, Lord, ii, 443  
 Howitt, A. W., i, 417; ii, 191, 298  
 Huatare, ii, 433  
 Huatare, Te Wiwini, ii, 433  
 Hudson, R., i, 76  
 Hudson, R. P., ii, 28  
 Huka, ii, 434  
 Hukanui, ii, 70, 145  
 Hukiki te Ahu, i, 7  
 Hulme, E., ii, 109  
 Hulme, W., i, 264, 377; ii, 23  
 Hume, P., ii, 355  
 Humphries, E. L., i, 165, 420, 422  
 Humphries, E. W., ii, 134  
 Hunga, ii, 434  
 Hunia, Kawana, i, 341; ii, 194  
 Hunt, Sir W. D., ii, 542  
 Hunter, G., i, 67, 511; ii, 77, 149, 241  
 Hunter, Sir G., i, 342  
 Hunter, H. B., i, 421; ii, 387  
 Hunter, W. M., ii, 9  
 Hunua, K., ii, 368  
 Hurst, W. J., ii, 529  
 Hursthouse, C. W., ii, 223, 433  
 Hum, ii, 144  
 Hutcheson, J., ii, 341

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Hutchison, G., i, 107, 111, 424  
 Hutchison, Sir J., i, 246, 424  
 Hutchison, T., i, 424  
 Hutchison, W., i, 86, 254  
 Hutchison, W. H., ii, Hi8  
 Hutton, D., ii, 456  
 Hutton, F. W., i, 155, 332; ii, 412  
  
 IHAIA, i, 469  
 Te Ika Nui o te Moana, i, 353  
 Impey, A., ii, 87  
 Innes, J., i, 427  
 Innes, J. B., i, 286  
 Ironside, S., ii, 185, 406, 441, 465  
 Irvine, R. F., i, 12  
 Isaacs, G. and H., i, 429  
 Isitt, F. W., ii, 65, 517  
 Islington, Lord, ii, 462  
 Ivess, J., i, 286  
 Iwikau, i, 381, 384-5; ii, 70, 374  
 Iwimaire, i, 354  
 Izard, C. B., ii, 264  
  
 \*JABEZ BUNTING: ii, 489  
 Jackey, ii, 116, 356  
 Jackson, F. R., ii, 496  
 Jackson, W., ii, 245, 484  
 Jacobs, H., ii, 347  
 Jago, J. W., ii, 514  
 •James James: i, 4  
 Jarvey, Capt., ii, 238  
 Jefferson, J., i, 240  
 Jenkins, -, ii, 163  
 Jenkinson, J. H., ii, 163  
 Jenner, H. L., i, 361; ii, 537  
 Jervois, Sir W., ii, 161, 425  
 Johnson, J. W., ii, 176  
 Johnston, A., ii, 343  
 Johnston, A. J., ii, 96  
 Johnston, Alexander, ii, 76  
 Johnston, D., ii, 168  
 Johnston, F. E., i, 439  
 Johnston, J., i, 314; ii, 161  
 Johnston, W., i, 494  
 Johnston, Rev. W., ii, 108  
 Jollie, E., i, 491  
 Jollie, F., ii, 276, 319  
 Jones, F., ii, 546  
 Jones, Humphrey, ii, 318  
 Jones, J., i, 13, 137, 138, 416; ii, 25, 85, 204, 277, 358  
 Jones, J. R., i, 444; ii, 85  
 Jones, Joshua, ii, 223, 232  
 Jones, S., ii, 329  
 Jones, T. F., i, 128  
 Joseph, I., ii, 115  
 Joseph, J., ii, 534  
 Joubert, J., ii, 410  
 Joyce, J., ii, 335  
 Joynt, T. I., i, 6; ii, 161  
  
 Julius, C., i, 361  
  
 TE KAEAEA, ii, 188, 434  
 Te Kahawai, ii, 489  
 Te Kahuo-te-Rangi, ii, 140, 487  
 Te Kahurangi, i, 381  
 Kaihaere, ii, 399  
 Kaihau, ii, 70  
 Kaihau, A., i, 448  
 Kaihau, H., ii, 491, 492  
 Kaingamata, ii, 146, 225, 488  
 Kaiwhatu, see Kereopa te Rau  
 Kakahi, ii, 499  
 Kakapi, ii, 390  
 Kakapi-o-te-Rangi, ii, 485  
 Te Kanawa, i, 408; ii, 70, 122, 435  
 Kane, E. W., i, 50  
 Te Kani-a-Takirau, ii, 181, 401  
 Karaitiana Takamoana, i, 314, 353; ii, 88, 195, 360  
 Karaka, Arama, i, 469; ii, 412, 499  
 Karaka, Mere, i, 476  
 Karaka Pi, Arama, i, 410  
 Te Karamu, ii, 49, 200, 366  
 Karamu, Te Ahu, ii, 200, 366, 487  
 Karauria, i, 218  
 Te Karawa, i, 351; ii, 122, 487  
 Karetai, ii, 399  
 Katatore, i, 57, 391, 469; ii, 196  
 Kati, i, 409; ii, 225, 489, 490  
 Katu, ii, 199, 504  
 Kama, Te Whiti, ii, 485  
 Kauhoe, ii, 188  
 Te Kawau, Apihai, ii, 356, 398  
 Te Kawau, Te Hira, i, 451  
 Te Kawehau, ii, 117  
 Kawepo, R., ii, 502  
 Kawiti, i, 325, 377; ii, 144, 542  
 Kawiti, M. P., i, 452  
 Kealy, J. W., ii, 547  
 Keam, P., ii, 383  
 Keane, M. C., ii, 542  
 Keats, J., i, 100  
 Kebbell, T., i, 90  
 Keddell, J., i, 365  
 Kellett, E., ii, 452  
 Kekerengu, ii, 193, 200  
 Kelly, T., ii, 273, 325  
 Kelly, W., ii, 295  
 Te Kemara, or Tareha, ii, 368  
 Kemp, H. T., i, 57; ii, 522  
 Kemp, Major, ii, 194  
 Kemp, J., i, 196; ii, 489  
 Kempthorne, J. P., ii, 349  
 Kempthorne, L. S., i, 457  
 Kempthorne, T. W., i, 367  
 Kendall, H. C., i, 459  
 Kendall, T., i, 126, 202, 407, 452; ii, 56, 174, 262,  
 365, 366, 400, 437  
 Kennaway, W., i, 67, 459; ii, 483  
 Kennedy, J., i, 460

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Kennedy, M., i, 335; ii, III  
 Kenny, W. H., i, 28, 462  
 Kensington, C. J., i, 306, 462  
 Kent, Capto, ii, 55, 489  
 Kereopa, i, 381; ii, 50, 70, 374  
 Kereopa te Rau (or Kaiwhatu), i, 283; ii, 9, 123, 125, 179, 194, 256, 412, 426  
 Kermode, Wo, ii, 94  
 Kerr, J., i, 462  
 Kettle, C. Co, ii, 4  
 Kettle, C. H., i, 7, 183; ii, 4, 59, 60, 245  
 Kidd, R. B., ii, 285  
 Kiharoa, ii, 435  
 Kilbracken, Lord, i, 305  
 King, Sir Fo To, i, 468; ii, 153, 238  
 King George, ii, 413  
 King, H., i, 468  
 King, J., ii, 56, 261  
 King, P. P., ii, 55  
 King, T., ii, 239  
 Kingi, Eruera, ii, 197  
 Kingi, Hori, ii, 375  
 Kingi, Wiremu (Matakatea), ii, 70-1  
 Kingi, Wiremu (Te Rangitake), ii, 195-7  
 Kingdon, R., i, 123  
 Kingston, To, ii, 135  
 Kirk, To, i, 21, 470  
 Kissling, G. A., i, 21; ii, 318  
 Kitchener, Lord, ii, 475  
 Knollys, L. F., ii, 167  
 Knowles, J., i, 389  
 Kohere, H., i, 473  
 Kohukohu, Te Umu, ii, 466  
 Te Kohuwai, ii, 402  
 Te Koki, ii, 371  
 Te Kooti, i, 17, 71, III, 252, 277, 288, 314, 476; ii, 10, 34, 46, 49, 82, 121, 142-3, 145, 173, 183, 194, 195, 204, 226, 241, 246, 256, 270, 309, 313, 323, 361, 380, 391, 397, 401, 403, 408, 412, 466, 485, 502, 503, 509  
 Kopu, P., i, 17; ii, 366  
 Korako, ii, 358  
 Korokai, ii, 435  
 Korokoro, i, 407; ii, 56, 57, 262  
 Krull, F. Ao, i, 432  
 Kukutai, W., i, 477; ii, 174  
 Kuru, ii, 466  
  
 LAERY, R., i, 53  
 Laishley, Ro, i, 77  
 Laishley, Rev. Ro, i, 479  
 Lambert, Co, i, 259, 440  
 Lambert, W., ii, 419  
 Lamont, J., ii, 332  
 Lance, H. P., i, 481; ii, 48, 248  
 Lance, J. Do, i, 480; ii, 48, 97, 459, 531  
 Lanfear, W., ii, 426  
 Langlands, Wo, i, 158  
 Langstone, F., ii, 546  
 La Perouse, J. F. de Go, i, 208; ii, 37, 540

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Lapham, So, ii, 530  
 Larnach, W. J. Mo, i, 33; ii, 134, 228, 340  
 Last, E., i, 456  
 Lauper, J., i, 417; ii, 298, 495  
 Laurie, D. M., 438  
 Lawlor, J. S., i, 432; ii, 250  
 Lawrence, D. H., ii, 52  
 Lawry, Ao Co, i, 488  
 Lawry, H. H., ii, 217, 518  
 Lawry, W., i, 91, 106, 488; ii, 265, 472  
 Laye, J. Ho, ii, 170, 374  
 Leavey, R. L., i, 50  
 Leavitt, M., ii, 297  
 Le Cren, Ho J., ii, 83  
 Lee, S., i, 407, 458; ii, 437  
 Lee, Sidney, i (xii)  
 Leech, W., i, 113  
 Leigh, So, i, 97, 393, 489; ii, 296, 318, 366, 405, 497  
 Lemon, J., i, 269, 493  
 Leniban, G. M., i, 160  
 Lethbridge, F. Yo, i, 9  
 Levin, N. W., i, 55, 414  
 Levy, M., ii, 426  
 Lewis, E., ii, 390  
 Lewis, H., i, 211  
 Lewthwaite, J., i, 59  
 Leys, W., i, 497  
 Liardet, F., i, 395; ii, 506  
 Ligar, Co Wo, i, 71, 146, 238; ii, 72, 372, 495  
 Lightband, Mo, ii, 241  
 Lillewall, Jø, ii, 197  
 Lillie, J., ii, 251  
 Lindsay, L., ii, 64  
 Lingard, Wo, ii, 48  
 Linton, J., ii, 385  
 Lippe, J., ii, 86  
 Little, J., ii, 476  
 Littlejohn, W. So, ii, 267  
 Livingstone, D., i, 328  
 Lloyd, J. Fo, i, 163  
 Lloyd, J. Yo, i, 22  
 Locke, S., i, 143; ii, 502  
 Lockett, J., ii, 20  
 Lockhart, G. D., i, 402  
 Logan, J., ii, 343  
 Logie, Wo, i, 37  
 Lohse, Miss, i, 389  
 Lomax, Mrs, ii, 164  
 Lomax, T. Eo, ii, 10  
 Lord, -, i, 377  
 Lough, E. Ho, ii, 229  
 Loughnan, R. A., i, 87; ii, 295  
 Loughnan, Ro J., i, 360, 502  
 Louper, J., i, 486  
 Love, J., i, 43; ii, 186, 486  
 Lovell, J., i, 504  
 Lovell, J. C., ii, 317  
 Lovell-Smith, Lucy, ii, 297  
 Lovell-Smith, W. So, ii, 298  
 Luck, Fo A., i, 505  
 Luck, I., i, 158; ii, 107  
  
 Luck, J. Eo, i, 493  
 Ludlam, A., i, 58, 356; ii, 394  
 Lukin, G., i, 482  
 Lundon, J., i, 85  
 Lyaal, Do, i, 411  
 Lyell, Sir C., ii, 479  
 Lyon, Wo, i, 73; ii, 18  
 -Lyon, Wo L., ii, 338  
 Lysaght, J., ii, 506  
 Lyttelton, Lord, i, 94, 256, 303; ii, 446, 459  
  
 MAAFU, ii, 165  
 Macandrew, J., i, 34, 71, 204; ii, 15, 40, 219, 228, 234-5, 340, 420, 424, 447, 448  
 McArthur, D., ii, 391  
 Macassey, J., i, 86  
 Macassey, Po S. K., ii, 4  
 McBarnett, Major, i, 181  
 McCallum, R., ii, 542  
 McCombs, Eo R., ii, 298  
 McCombs, J., ii, 264, 545-6  
 McCrea, A., i, 185  
 McDermid, H., ii, 391  
 Macdonald, D., ii, 438  
 Macdonald, D. S., ii, 514  
 Macdonald, To K., i, 61; ii, 309  
 Macdonald, W., i, 493  
 Macdonald, W. D. S., i, 66  
 McDonnell, T., R.N., i, 125; ii, 89  
 McDonnell, T., i, 26, 78, 140; ii, 145, 194, 387, 429, 431, 502  
 McDonnell, W., i, 26; ii, 10  
 Mace, To, i, 143; ii, 82, 250  
 Madarlane, D., i, 333  
 Madarlane, J., i, 107  
 Madarlane, J. S., ii, 12, 529  
 Macfarlane, John, i, 379  
 Macfarlane, To, i, 379  
 M'Gibbon, ii, 13  
 Macgibbon, Jo, i, 440  
 McGill, P., i, 102; ii, 415  
 McGlashan, E., i, 204, 234  
 McGlashan, J., ii, 13, 189, 420  
 McGowan, Jo, ii, 372, 461  
 McGregor, D., ii, 17  
 Macgregor, Wo C., ii, 335  
 McHutcheson, W., ii, 306  
 McIntosh, A., i, 415  
 McIntosh, J., ii, 191  
 McIntyre, R. F., ii, 543  
 Mackay, A., ii, 249, 359  
 Mackay, C. E., ii, 22  
 Mackay, James, senr., ii, 19, 290  
 Mackay, James, ii, 19, 121, 227, 249  
 Mackay, Jessie, ii, 417  
 Mackay, John, ii, 350  
 Mackay, Joseph, ii, 22  
 Mackay, R., ii, 21  
 McKellar, D., i, 64; ii, 24  
 McKellar, Dugald, ii, 23, 476  
  
 McKellar, J., ii, 23, 168-  
 McKellar, P., i, 133; ii, 23, 40, 250  
 McKenzie, Ho Ro, ii, 546  
 Mackenzie, James, i (xii), 80; ii, 229, 362  
 McKenzie, John, ii, 27, 282  
 McKenzie, M., ii, 24  
 Mackenzie, Mo Jo So, ii, 168  
 Mackenzie, -Sir To, i, 380; ii, 66, 383, 462  
 McKenzie, T. Wo, i, 14; ii, 224, 452  
 McKerrow, J., ii, 233, 245  
 McKinnon, Q., i, 380; ii, 29, 350  
 Macky, J., i, 189  
 Macky, T., i, 189  
 McLaren, D., ii, 542, 545  
 Maclaren, L., i, 71  
 Maclaurin, J. S., ii, 32, 267  
 McLean, A., i, 407; ii, 35  
 McLean, Co L., ii, 519  
 McLean, Sir D., i, 13, 105, 244, 288, 365, 384, 386; ii, 19, 63, 87, 143, 168, 226, 241, 252, 321, 323, 324, 343, 374, 422, 485, 490, 491, 505  
 McLean, Sir G., i, 137; ii, 25, 258, 508  
 McLean, J., i, IIS, 280; ii, 204  
 McLean, R., ii, 36  
 McLeod, J., i, 141  
 McLeod, N., ii, 24, 37  
 McMahan, B. Po, ii, 136  
 McMaster, A., ii, 205  
 Macmillan, Co E., ii, 463  
 Macmillan, D., i, 232; ii, 220  
 McNab, A., ii, 23, 41  
 McNab, J., i, 506  
 McNaughton, J., ii, 393  
 McNeill, J., ii, 42  
 McNeill, M., ii, 42  
 McNeur, G. H., i, 217  
 McNicoll, Do, i, 287  
 McNiece, Mary, i, 32  
 Macpherson, D., ii, 110  
 Macpherson, Ho D., ii, 225  
 McRae, G., i, 222, 358; ii, 43, 107, 223  
 McRae, N., i, 222, 251; ii, 43  
 McRae, W., i, 222  
 McSkimming, R., ii, 533  
 Mahuki, i, 288, 422; ii, 433  
 Mahuta te Wherowhero, Te Rata, i, 405  
 Mahuta Tawhiao te Wherowhero, i, 448; ii, 485  
 Main, D. F., i, 88  
 Maioha, P., ii, 400  
 Mair, G., i, 119; ii, 46, 121, 142, 361  
 Major, Co E., ii, 18  
 Makarini, Peka, i, 69; ii, 46  
 Maketu, i, 159, 376, 398; ii, 61, 404, 438  
 Makitanara, To, ii, 413  
 Malietoa, i, 508  
 Maling, C., i, 499  
 Maling, T. A., ii, 441  
 Maling, Wo, ii, 48  
 Mallock, J. W., i, 480, 481; ii, 248; 453, 531  
 Mamaku, i, 390, 475; ii, 145, 407  
 Mamaku, Topine te, ii, 49, 144, 169

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Manaia, ii, 70  
 Mananui, i, 383  
 Mander, F., ii, 380  
 Manders, H., i, 88, 89, 367  
 Manga, ii, 227  
 Manihera, i, 381; ii, 70, 374  
 Maning, F. E., i, 300, 509; ii, 477  
 Manly, Dr, i, 98  
 Mannering, G. E., i, 210  
 Manning, J., ii, 221  
 Manning, J. N., ii, 294  
 Mansfield, Katherine, i, 53  
 Mansford, W. H., i, 102  
 Manson, D., ii, 53  
 Manson, S., i, 198  
 Mantell, W. B. D., i, 64, 506; ii, 79, 394, 479  
 Manu, Wi Nga, ii, 188  
 Te Manu, ii, 187  
 Manuhikitia, i, 476  
 Manuhiri, ii, 120, 121  
 Manu-Tohera, ii, 402  
 Marahau, ii, 202  
 Marchant, R. M., ii, 338  
 Marino, ii, 482  
 Markham, Sir C., i, 80, 81  
 Marks, H., i, 503  
 Marore, ii, 198  
 Marriott, Alice, ii, 55  
 Marris, Sir W., ii, 267  
 Marsden, S., i, 98, 126, 159, 178, 180, 346, 400, 407-10, 450, 458, 467, 476, 492; ii, 88, 100, 124, 144, 145, 186, 225, 261, 296, 318, 365, 366, 368, 373, 388, 400, 405, 511, 536  
 Marshall, W. B., i, 358  
 Marten, W., ii, 260  
 Martin, E., ii, 60, 311  
 Martin, John, i, 10, 32; ii, 59, 224, 311, 471  
 Martin, Julia, ii, 71  
 Martin, Lady, ii, 62, 63  
 Martin, R., ii, 60  
 Martin, S. M., i, 104  
 Martin, T., ii, 59  
 Martin, Sir W., i, 2, 340, 398, 451; ii, 120, 140, 197, 271, 286, 288, 304, 321, 352, 353, 436  
 Martin, W. L., ii, 546  
 Martyn, Henry, ii, 504  
 Mason, H. G. R., ii, 546  
 Mason, J., i, 339  
 Mason, John, ii, 74, 373  
 Mason, R. J., i, 321  
 Mason, T., ii, 507  
 Mason, W., i, 160; ii, 452  
 Massey, C. A. P., ii, 66  
 Massey, J., ii, 65  
 Massey, J. N., ii, 69  
 Massey, W. F., i, 61, 63, 113, 332, 362; ii, 297, 462, 517, 546  
 Massey, W. H., ii, 69  
 Masters, J., i, 144  
 Masters, R., ii, 457  
 Mataafa, ii, 115  
 Matahau, ii, 245  
 Matakatea, W. T., i, 26, 351, 381, 385; ii, 387, 402, 499  
 Matara, ii, 145  
 Te Matenga, ii, 358  
 Matenga, Hemi, ii, 71  
 Matenga, Huria, ii, 188  
 Mathew, F., i, 162, 398  
 Mathias, O., ii, 261  
 Matiretoha, i, 409; ii, 225, 489  
 Matthew, J., i, 245  
 Matthews, J., ii, 186  
 Matthews, R., i, 262; ii, 64, 73, 373, 374  
 Matua, Henare, ii, 391  
 Matutaera, ii, 142, 150, 436, 490  
 Maude, T. W., i, 80  
 Maukiringutu, ii, 367  
 Maunsell, R., i, 21, 476; ii, 318, 489, 516  
 Te Mauparaoa, i, 376; ii, 175  
 Mautaranui, i, 283; ii, 174  
 Maxwell, J. P., i, 55  
 Te Meihana, ii, 360, 391  
 Menzies, J. A. R., ii, 159, 347, 373  
 Meredith, E., i, 148  
 Meredith, J., ii, 357  
 Meredith, R., i, 481  
 Merriman, F. W., ii, 295  
 Merton, O. H. G., ii, 543  
 Messenger, W., ii, 82, 239  
 Metcalfe, Sir C., ii, 446  
 Mete Kingi, ii, 70, 203  
 Mieville, F. L., ii, 79  
 •Millar, F.S.A., ii, 83  
 Millar, J. A., ii, 168, 308, 381, 461  
 Millar, T., i, 454  
 Miller, John, i, 483  
 Miller, T., i, 67  
 Mills, E. W., i, 506; ii, 115  
 Mills, J., ii, 84, 259  
 Mills, T. L., ii, 51  
 Millton, W. N., ii, 85  
 Milne, W. D., ii, 325  
 Mitchell, C. F., ii, 285  
 Mitchell, E., ii, 30  
 Mitchell, T., ii, 356  
 Mitchelson, Sir E., i, 34  
 Mocatta, S., i, 414  
 Moehanga, ii, 275  
 Moetara, i, 409; ii, 76, 117, 175  
 Moetara Rangatira, ii, 88, 89  
 Moffat, R., i, 328  
 Mohia, ii, 390  
 Moka, ii, 225, 360, 368, 388, 482  
 Mokau, ii, 193  
 Mokena, Wi, i, 83  
 Mokorou, ii, 435  
 Molesworth, F. A., i, 412; ii, 163  
 Molesworth, Sir W., ii, 89, 447, 505  
 Mollison, J., ii, 89  
 Te Momo, ii, 385, 487  
 Monckton, F. A., ii, 89

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Mondy, G., ii, 315, 340  
 Monkhouse, W., ii, 355  
 Monrad, D. G., ii, 393  
 Monro, A. B., ii, 92  
 Monro, Sir D., i, 53, 214, 215, 276, 375; ii, 248, 322  
 Monro, G. H. B., ii, 92  
 Montefiore, J. B., i, 363  
 Montgomery, W., i, 34; ii, 16, 340, 424  
 Montgomery, W. H., ii, 94, 253  
 Moore, E., ii, 169  
 Moore, G. H., i, 402; ii, 438  
 Moore, J. S., i, 89  
 Moore, L., i, 309; ii, 95  
 Moore-Jones, H., ii, 543  
 Moorhouse, B., ii, 96, 509  
 Moorhouse, E., ii, 347  
 Moorhouse, J. W., ii, 229  
 Moorhouse, T., ii, 96  
 Moorhouse, W. S., i, 23, 33, 52, 80, 94, 228, 248; ii, 133-4, 252, 273, 323, 347, 348, 427, 448, 459, 506, 509, 514  
 Moran, P., i, 167, 486; ii, 417  
 Moreing, H., i, 181, 233  
 Te Morenga, i, 476; ii, 174, 296, 388, 465, 482  
 Moreton, S., i, 50  
 Morgan, J., i, 21; ii, 54, 489  
 Morgan, W., ii, 101  
 Morris, E. E., i, 289  
 Morris, G. B., i, 24; ii, 334  
 Morrison, A., ii, 301  
 Morrison, J., ii, 321  
 Morrow, A., ii, 104  
 Moss, E. G. B., i, 335; ii, 145, 172  
 Moss, J., ii, 300  
 Mouat, J., i, 88  
 Mountfort, B. W., i, 203  
 Mules, C. O., ii, 376  
 Mulgan, A., ii, 108  
 Mulgan, W. E., ii, 108  
 Muller, Mary, i, 230  
 Muller, S. L., ii, 108  
 Munro, J., ii, 522  
 Murchison, Sir R., i, 142  
 Murison, W. D., i, 59; ii, 420  
 Muriwai, ii, 55  
 Muriwhenua, P., i, 26, 428  
 Murphy, J. T., i, 209, 388; ii, 204  
 Murphy, M., ii, 247  
 Murupaenga, i, 409; ii, 171, 198, 368, 409  
 Murray, Donald, ii, 111  
 Murray, W. A., ii, 269  
 Murray, W. J., ii, 137  
 Murry, J. M., ii, 52  
 Muter, D. B., ii, 247  
 Myers, Sir A. M., ii, 381  
 NAERA, Wi, ii, 148  
 Naera, Wiremu, i, 26  
 Nahe, ii, 195  
 Nainai, ii, 435  
 Nairn, J. M., i, 126; ii, 164, 348, 397  
 Nash, W., ii, 546  
 Nathan, J., ii, 416  
 Nathan, W. I., i, 53  
 Nayti, ii, 356, 444, 450  
 Neale, Major, ii, 504  
 Nelson Brothers, ii, 117  
 Nelson, F., ii, 116  
 Nelson, H., i, 226  
 Nelson, Sir M., ii, 117  
 Nelson, W., ii, 265  
 Nene, Tamati Waka, i, 202, 263, 325; ii, 62, 88, 154, 156, 199, 263, 406, 409, 487, 490  
 Nerli, G. P., ii, 397  
 Nevill, S. T., i, 361  
 Neumegen, W. H., ii, 300  
 Newcastle, Duke of, i, 106, 327-8; ii, 534  
 Newell, B., i, 337  
 Newland, W., i, 110; ii, 361, 430  
 Newman, A. K., i, 259  
 Newman, i, 259  
 Newsham, i, 422  
 Newton, A. C., ii, 269  
 Ngaihi, ii, 146  
 Moreton, S., i, 50  
 Morgan, J., i, 21; ii, 54, 489  
 Morgan, W., ii, 101  
 Morris, E. E., i, 289  
 Morris, G. B., i, 24; ii, 334  
 Morrison, A., ii, 301  
 Morrison, J., ii, 321  
 Morrow, A., ii, 104  
 Moss, E. G. B., i, 335; ii, 145, 172  
 Moss, J., ii, 300  
 Mouat, J., i, 88  
 Mountfort, B. W., i, 203  
 Mules, C. O., ii, 376  
 Mulgan, A., ii, 108  
 Mulgan, W. E., ii, 108  
 Muller, Mary, i, 230  
 Muller, S. L., ii, 108  
 Munro, J., ii, 522  
 Murchison, Sir R., i, 142  
 Murison, W. D., i, 59; ii, 420  
 Muriwai, ii, 55  
 Muriwhenua, P., i, 26, 428  
 Murphy, J. T., i, 209, 388; ii, 204  
 Murphy, M., ii, 247  
 Murupaenga, i, 409; ii, 171, 198, 368, 409  
 Murray, Donald, ii, 111  
 Murray, W. A., ii, 269  
 Murray, W. J., ii, 137  
 Murry, J. M., ii, 52  
 Muter, D. B., ii, 247  
 Myers, Sir A. M., ii, 381  
 Ngatai, ii, 49  
 Ngatai-Rakanui, ii, 70  
 Ngataru, i, 477  
 Ngatata-i-te-Rangi, ii, 358, 402, 485  
 Ngatata, Wi Tako, i, 83; ii, 186, 486  
 Ngawai, ii, 146  
 Ngawakawawe, i, 354  
 Te Ngohe, ii, 167  
 Te Ngonge, ii, 150  
 Nias, Sir J., i, 396  
 Niccol, M., ii, 124  
 Nicholas, J. L., ii, 88  
 Nicholls, H. E., i, 352  
 Nicholson, O., ii, 23  
 Nicholson, T. D., ii, 519  
 Nihill, W., ii, 285-7, 367  
 Niho, ii, 188  
 Nixon, M., ii, 9  
 Nohorua, ii, 198  
 Nopera, ii, 127  
 Normanby, Lord, i, 396; ii, 445  
 North, H., ii, 279  
 Northcroft, W., i, 99  
 Northland, Lord, ii, 193  
 Norton, Lord, ii, 290, 446  
 Notman, J., i, 33  
 Nukupewapewa, ii, 487

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

O'CONNOR, E. J., ii, 28  
 Okey, H., ii, 309  
 Oldfield, S., ii, 546  
 Oliveira, L. de, ii, 444  
 Oliver, R., i, 24, 86  
 Oliver, S., ii, 263  
 Ollivier, J., i, 52  
 O'Neill, A., ii, 103, 135  
 Onslow, Lord, i, 34, 35, 79, 301  
 Orbell, J., i, 70, 444; ii, 84  
 Orchard, J., ii, 208  
 O'Regan, P. J., ii, 251  
 Ormond, J. D., i, 236; ii, 111, 252, 295, 422  
 Orongomai, Te Whiti, ii, 500  
 O'Rorke, M., ii, 125, 214, 333, 422  
 Orpen, Sir W., i, 84  
 Orton, J., ii, 497  
 O'Sullivan, R. J., ii, 295, 390  
 Otterson, C., ii, 185  
 Otterson, H., ii, 140  
 Outhwaite, T., ii, 61, 265, 352  
 Owen, Sir R., ii, 262, 304, 375

, PADDY MURPHY, i, 85  
 Paerata, ii, 142  
 Paetahi, Mete Kingi, ii, 145, 147, 407  
 Te Pahi, ii, 261, 366  
 Paihaka, ii, 411  
 Paikaea, P., ii, 542  
 Te Paki, ii, 490  
 Pakington, Sir J., i, 326; ii, 14  
 Pakiwhara, ii, 175  
 Palmer, J., ii, 105  
 Palmerston, Lord, i, 139  
 Panakareao, i, 159, 376; ii, 127, 186  
 Panau, Tamati, ii, 492  
 Pango, ii, 435  
 Paora, ii, 223  
 Parata, H., ii, 147  
 Parata, T. R., ii, 413  
 Parata, W., ii, 143  
 Pare-ihe, i, 449; ii, 129, 130, 385, 482, 487  
 Paremata, Wahapiro, ii, 188  
 Park, A. J., ii, 315  
 Park, G. M., ii, 264  
 Park, J. B., i, 156  
 Park, R., i, 183, 199; ii, 314, 333, 337  
 Parker, E. W., i, 31  
 Parker, F. S., ii, 253  
 Parkerson, W., i, 127  
 Parkinson, S., ii, 440  
 Parnell, C. S., i, 184  
 Parnell, S. D., i, 420  
 Parris, R. R., ii, 167, 241, 411, 412, 499  
 Parry, W. E., ii, 545-6  
 Partridge, H. E., i, 498  
 Pataatai, i, 384-6  
 Patara Te Tuhī, ii, 400  
 Patara Raukatauri, ii, 123, 402, 412  
 Patene, Wi, ii, 118, 456  
 Paterson, J., i, 380; ii, 228, 235, 322, 420

Paterson, T., i, 32, 73  
 Patohe, ii, 167  
 Patterson, J. C., ii, 63, 185, 287, 288, 371  
 Patrick, A., i, 465  
 Patukawenga, ii, 175  
 Patuki, J. T., ii, 154, 188  
 Patuone, i, 408, 450; ii, 117, 156, 199, 318, 405, 406, 409, 487  
 Patuwairua, ii, 199  
 Paul, J., i, 421  
 Paul, R. B., i, 146, 491; ii, 349  
 Payne, C. J., ii, 335  
 Payne, J. H., ii, 545  
 Payton, J., ii, 452  
 Peacock, J. J., i, 103, 287; ii, 476  
 Peacock, J. T., i, 103  
 Peacocke, P. J. R., ii, 157  
 Peacock, T., ii, 212  
 Pearce, E., i, 46, 495; ii, 241  
 Pearse, A. W., ii, 410  
 Pearson, J., i, 369  
 Pearson, W. H., i, 402  
 Peat, D., i, 10  
 Pehi-Korehu, ii, 401  
 Te Pehi Kupe, i, 341, 388; ii, 185, 200  
 Te Pehi Turoa, i, 13, 341  
 Pere, W., i, 143; ii, 121, 195, 392  
 Petre, Lord, ii, 445  
 Petre, H. W., i, 70, 412; ii, 87, 89, 136, 478  
 Petrie, J., i, 336  
 Pharazyn, C., ii, 164  
 Pharazyn, C. J., i, 495; ii, 114, 164, 348  
 Pharazyn, R., i, 110; ii, 338, 423  
 •Phillip Garth, ii, 306  
 Phillips, S. C., ii, 165  
 Pi, Arama Karaka, ii, 166  
 Pierce, G. P., ii, 484  
 Pihama, H., ii, 241  
 Pikinga, ii, 193-4  
 Pillans, F., ii, 47  
 Pilliett, W. H., i, 5  
 Pinkerton, W., ii, 23, 25  
 Pirani, D., ii, 169  
 Pirani, H. C., ii, 168  
 Pirikawau, i, 384  
 Pitt, A., ii, 461  
 Pitt, G. D., i, 310  
 Pitt, G. D., junr., ii, 170  
 Pitt, W. A., ii, 170  
 Plimmer, J., ii, 453  
 Pokaia, i, 376, 407  
 Pokaitara, ii, 200  
 Te Poki, ii, 175  
 Te Pokiha, ii, 367  
 Polack, J. S., i, 449; ii, 405  
 Poland, H., ii, 105  
 Pollen, D., i (x, xi), 404, 475; ii, 147  
 Pollen, H., ii, 173  
 Polson, W. J., ii, 457  
 Pomare, i, 17, 207, 264, 376, 409, 410; ii, 76, 180, 366, 367, 389, 413, 482

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Pomare, Sir M., i, 448  
 Pomare, Wiremu Naera, ii, 176  
 Pompallier, J. B. F., i, 25, 208, 232, 355, 487; ii, 7, 182, 365, 418, 472  
 Poole, C. H., ii, 546  
 Popata, W., ii, 361  
 Porter, T. W., ii, 256  
 Potae, H., ii, 174  
 Potatau, i, 385; ii, 120, 198, 226, 288, 436, 489-92  
 Pote, T., ii, 161  
 Poulton, J. A., ii, 334  
 Poynton, T., ii, 177  
 Pratt, J., i, 164, 457; ii, 438  
 Pratt, T. S., i, 133, 354; ii, 321, 359  
 Preece, G. A., ii, 46, 142, 256, 503  
 Preece, J., ii, 101, 114, 522  
 Prendergast, Sir J., i, 307; ii, 237, 335, 342  
 Prime, F. L., i, 1  
 Prosser, E., i, 253  
 Te Puaha, ii, 440  
 Puckey, W. G., ii, 45  
 Puckey, Walter, ii, 186  
 Puckey, William, ii, 186  
 Te Puhī, ii, 145, 366  
 Puke, ii, 407  
 Pukerimu, i, 354  
 Pumuka, i, 452  
 Te Puni, H., ii, 187  
 Te Puni, Honiana, i, 506; ii, 122, 175, 450, 485, 499  
 Te Puoho, ii, 71, 358, 368, 399  
 Purchas, A. G., ii, 310  
 Purnell, C. W., ii, 417  
 Pyke, V., i, 151; ii, 27, 207  
 Pym, M., i, 485

QUICK, W. H., i, 89  
 de Quincey, P. F., ii, 13

RAKAHEREA, ii, 193, 392  
 Te Raki, ii, 200  
 Ranfurly, Lord, i, 29  
 Rangī-aho, ii, 76  
 Te Rangīhaeata, i, 199, 453; ii, 30, 62, 154, 160, 169, 186, 194, 198, 200, 201, 279, 368, 380, 398, 440, 504  
 Rangīhiroa, ii, 88, 502  
 Rangīhiroa (Ngatitōa), ii, 160  
 Te Rangīhiroa, i, 378; ii, 176  
 Te Rangīhiwinui, Keepa, i, 13, 341, 350; ii, 10, 143, 145, 361, 368, 488, 503  
 Te Rangī-i-Paia, ii, 174  
 Rangīmairehau, ii, 200  
 Rangī Pu-mamao, i, 383; ii, 195  
 Te Rangitaka-roro, ii, 188  
 Te Rangitake, W. K., i, 57, 62, 82, 105, 276, 339, 340, 351, 354, 469; ii, 35, 47, 63, 169, 176, 199, 202, 226, 245, 279, 320, 322, 359, 411, 436, 499  
 Rangitauria, ii, 411  
 Rangituke, ii, 371  
 Rankin, Jessica, ii, 164

Ransom, Sir E. A., ii, 42, 463  
 Raparapa, i, 26  
 Te Rata, ii, 435  
 Rata Mahuta Potatau, ii, 492  
 Ratana, H. T., ii, 197, 435  
 Ratatonu, ii, 392  
 Ratau, ii, 484  
 Te Rau-angaanga, ii, 489  
 Te Rauparaha, i, 26, 178, 325, 341, 383, 453; ii, 30, 54, 112, 118, 143, 154, 160, 175, 186, 188, 193, 195-6, 199, 279, 287, 308, 358, 361, 367, 368, 369, 380, 394, 398, 399, 402, 407, 409, 434, 440, 487, 489, 490  
 Te Rauparaha, Tamihana, i, 116, 339; ii, 245, 254, 318, 472, 504  
 Te Rauroha, ii, 174  
 Te Rau Takerei, i, 116  
 Rawa-Kitua, ii, 186-7, 486  
 Rawson, E., ii, 238  
 Read, G. E., i, 460; ii, 12  
 Read, T. Gabriel, i, 295, 357, 388; ii, 163  
 Reader, H. M., i, 415  
 Reay, C. L., i, 234; ii, 285  
 Redmayne, T., ii, 208  
 Redwood, F., i, 286, 503; ii, 44, 474  
 Redwood, H., i, 312; ii, 208, 210, 248  
 Redwood, T., ii, 416  
 Reed, G. M., i, 93, 245  
 Reed, Sir J. R., ii, 211  
 Reed, V. H., ii, 211  
 Rees, Isabel, ii, 212  
 Rees, J., ii, 211  
 Rees, R., ii, 213  
 Rees, W. G., ii, 431  
 Rees, W. L., i, 131, 200, 203; ii, 162  
 Reeves, C. S., i, 86  
 Reeves, R. H. J., ii, 79, 341  
 Reeves, W., i, 80; ii, 253, 330  
 Reeves, W. P., i, 34, 35, 330; ii, 282, 534  
 Reid, A., i, 203; ii, 151  
 Reid, D., i, 247; ii, 324, 391  
 Reid, G. F., ii, 220  
 Reid, J., i, 443  
 Reid, J. B., ii, 221  
 Reid, J. T. T., ii, 221  
 Reid, R. C., ii, 281  
 Reidhaven, Lord, i, 393; ii, 279  
 Reihana (R. Davis), i, 120  
 Reihana, or Horotiu, ii, 466  
 Reihana, or Wahanui, ii, 433, 491  
 Reilly, C., i, 365-6  
 Reischek, A., i, 399  
 Te Reko, i, 148  
 Rennie, G., i, 139, 463  
 Rerehau, Hemara te, ii, 389  
 Te Rerenga, Wetere, ii, 121  
 Reretawhangawhanga, i, 388; ii, 195, 199  
 Rerewaka, ii, 193, 200  
 Rerewha, ii, 485  
 Rerewha-i-te-Rangī, ii, 186, 499  
 Revans, S., ii, 29, 314, 450, 468

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Revell, 'I., ii, 224  
 Revell, W. H., i, 96  
 Rewa, i, 409; ii, 368  
 Rewi, i, 285, 309, 475; ii, 120, 197, 436, 491  
 Reynolds, J. H., i, 100  
 Reynolds, R., ii, 227  
 Reynolds, W. H., i, 204, 245; ii, 2, 152  
 Rhodes, A. E. G., i, 266  
 Rhodes, G., ii, 231  
 Rhodes, J., i, 501; ii, 231  
 Rhodes, R. H., ii, 231, 508  
 Rhodes, Sir R. H., ii, 74, 230  
 Rhodes, T. W., ii, 372  
 Rhodes, W. B., ii, 60, 203, 229, 284, 305, 376  
 Rich, F. D., ii, 27  
 Rich, G., ii, 231, 347  
 Rich, W., ii, 363  
 Richards, R., ii, 331  
 Richards, R. J., ii, 232  
 Richardson, E., ii, 97, 397, 422  
 Richardson, G. F., ii, 31, 41, 233  
 Richardson, G. R., ii, 440  
 Richardson, Sir J. L. C., i, 23, 88, 363; ii, 2, 40, 47, 152, 205, 228, 323, 327, 479  
 Richardson, R., ii, 236  
 Richardson, W., ii, 545  
 Richmond, A. J., ii, 467  
 Richmond, C. W., i, 22, 59, 83, 105, 106; ii, 240  
 Richmond, D. K., ii, 542  
 Richmond, H. R., i, 455; ii, 239  
 Richmond, J. C., ii, 278, 322-3, 349, 442, 479, 506  
 Richmond, H., i, 384; ii, 187, 202, 236, 363, 374, 451  
 Riddiford, D., i, 175, 233; ii, 519  
 Riemenschneider, J. C., ii, 390, 499, 529  
 Rikirangi, i, 473-5  
 Riley, C., i, 365-6  
 Rimene, i, 469  
 Ring, Capt., ii, 246  
 Ring, F., ii, 244  
 Ripahau, ii, 196  
 Ripiro, i, 410  
 Ritchie, J. M., ii, 264  
 Roberts, Sir J., ii, 424  
 Roberts, J. M., i, 110; ii, 9, 119, 401, 500  
 Roberts, W. H. S., i, 443  
 Robertson, J., ii, 545  
 Robertson, J. W., i, 347  
 Robertson, John, ii, 521  
 Robertson, P., ii, 205  
 Robinson, C. B., i, 487; ii, 110, 112, 305, 473  
 Robinson, F., ii, 385  
 Robinson, Sir H., ii, 227, 257  
 Robinson, J. P., i, 41, 135, 215, 336; ii, 240, 274, 321  
 Robinson, W., i, 63, 480  
 Robison, W. S., ii, 217  
 Roche, E. F., i, 382  
 Rochfort, J., ii, 20, 252, 386  
 Rochfort, S., i, 413  
 Rodriguez de Sardinha, A., ii, II  
 Rogan, J., i, 143; ii, 194  
 Rolleston, F. J., ii, 253  
 Rolleston, J. C., ii, 253  
 Rolleston, W., i, 110, 158, 344-5, 402; ii, 70, 93, 97, 230, 241, 380  
 Te Rongo, ii, 193, 202  
 Rookes, C. C., ii, 143  
 Ropata Wahawaha, ii, 255  
 Ross, A. H., i, 48  
 Ross, F., ii, 387  
 Ross, H., i, 94; ii, 6  
 Ross, Sir J. C., i, 411, 510  
 Ross, M., i, 380  
 Ross, N., ii, 259  
 Te Rotohenga, ii, 360, 391  
 Rough, D., ii, 72  
 Rowe, W., ii, 423  
 Rowley, J. C., ii, 475  
 Rowse, W., i, 351  
 Royse, W., ii, 327  
 Rua Kenana, i, 457  
 Rua-maioro, ii, 49  
 Te Ruanui, ii, 117  
 Ruatara, i, 407, 467; ii, 56, 57, 145  
 Rule, J., ii, 141  
 Runciman, J., ii, 327  
 Ruru, 'I., ii, 196  
 Rusden, G. W., i, 110, 308; ii, 499  
 Russell, A. H., i, 438; ii, 266, 322, 501  
 Russell, F. N., ii, 8  
 Russell, G. F., ii, 118, 477  
 Russell, G. W., ii, 253, 364  
 Russell, J. C. W., i, 184, 391  
 Russell, J. R., ii, 385  
 Russell, Lord John, ii, 352, 445, 446  
 Russell, 'I., i, 215, 332; ii, 36, 324, 422, 493  
 Russell, Sir W. R., i, 207, 274; ii, 66, 263, 264, 346, 350  
 Rutherford, G., ii, 267  
 Rutherford, J., ii, III, 267  
 ST GEORGE, J. C., i, 216  
 St Hill, A., ii, 271  
 St Hill, H. C., ii, 270  
 St Hill, H. W., ii, 271  
 St John, J. H. H., ii, 361  
 Sale, G. S., ii, 225, 331, 417.  
 Salmon, J., ii, 12  
 Salmond, C. F., ii, 273  
 Salmond, Sir J., i, 62; ii, 273  
 Salmond, W., ii, 272  
 Salote, ii, 406  
 Samuel, K., i, 414  
 Samuel, O., i, 456; ii, 309  
 Sanderson, 'I., ii, 280  
 Sandford, E., i, 290  
 Saunders, A., ii, 134, 251, 508  
 Saunders, S., ii, 22  
 Sauter, E., i, 399  
 Savage, J., ii, 88  
 Savage, M. J., i, 416; ii, 544-6

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Saxton, C., W., ii, 276  
 Saxton, J. W., ii, 319  
 Schmidt, G. F. R., ii, 14  
 Scholfield, G. H., i (v, vii-x)  
 Scotland, H., ii, 506  
 Schultze, H., i, 14  
 Schwabe, E., i (vii)  
 Scott, H. A., ii, 278  
 Scott, J. H., ii, 29  
 Scott, 'I., ii, 278  
 Seager, E., i, 506  
 Seddon, R. J., i, 34, 35, 81, 129, 249, 330, 333; ii, 66, 69, 111, 212, 341, 381, 460, 544-5  
 Seddon, R. J. S., ii, 284  
 Seddon, T. E. Y., ii, 83, 284  
 Seifert, G., ii, 544  
 Selwyn, G. A., i, 1, 28, 98, 105, 128, 140, 325-6, 339, 360, 384, 385, 398, 436; ii, 61, 62, 150, 152, 155, 197, 202, 237, 254, 271, 321, 353, 371, 374, 379, 400, 409, 436, 511  
 Selwyn, J. R., i, 361; ii, 153, 288, 349  
 Selwyn, W., ii, 285  
 Semple, R., ii, 545-6  
 Sewell, H., ii, 19, 287, 319, 446, 468, 470, 479, 524  
 Sewell, R. C., ii, 292  
 Seymour, A. P., ii, 85, 292, 460  
 Shackleton, Sir E., i, 115, 469  
 Shand, A. W., ii, 293  
 Sharp, J., ii, 124  
 Shaw, E., ii, 442  
 Shearman, R. C., i, 96  
 Sheehan, D., ii, 295  
 Sheehan, J., i, 278; ii, 139, 227, 465, 491  
 Shephard, J., ii, 467  
 Shepherd, A., ii, 250, 297, 304, 494  
 Shepherd, J., ii, 100  
 Sheppard, K. W., ii, 108, 481  
 Sheppard, W. A., ii, 297  
 Sheriffs, W. M., ii, 306  
 Sherrin, R. A. A., ii, 454-5  
 Sherrin, W., ii, 298  
 Short, Ellen, ii, 259  
 Shrimpton, I., i, 80  
 Shrimpton, W., ii, 232  
 Shrimski, S. E., ii, 279  
 Shute, ii, 378  
 Shortland, E., ii, 299, 400  
 Shortland, E. G., ii, 299  
 Shortland, P. F., i, 396; ii, 299  
 Shortland, W., i, 259, 396; ii, 61, 62, 366, 450  
 Sidey, J., i, 180  
 Sievwright, B., ii, 339-40  
 Sievwright, W., i, 200, 301  
 Sim, W., ii, 340  
 Simeon, C., i, 94  
 Simeon, Sir J., ii, 446  
 Simmonds, J., ii, 302  
 Sinclair, A., i, 127, 175, 262, 298, 411; ii, 33, 246, 300  
 Sinclair, D., i, 372  
 Sinclair, F., i, 198, 370; ii, 247  
 Sinclair, G., ii, 305  
 Sinclair, Helen M., ii, 305  
 Sinclair, Jean R., ii, 305  
 Skerrett, P. P., ii, 306  
 Skevington, J., i, 116; ii, 387, 409, 411  
 Skey, H., ii, 307  
 Smales, G., i, 116, 120; ii, 409  
 Smith, D. S., ii, 312  
 Smith, E. M., i, 101  
 Smitll, Sir H., i, 88  
 Smith, J., ii, 536  
 Smith, J. C., i, 10; ii, 60  
 Smith, J. S., i, 310, 319  
 Smith, J. V., ii, 310  
 Smith, S. G., ii, 310  
 Smith, S. P., i, 66; ii, 395  
 Smith, T. W. P., i, 302  
 Smith, W. M., i, 142, 463; ii, 224, 450, 468  
 Solander, D., i, 173  
 Solomon, A., ii, 315  
 Solomon, S., i, 415  
 Somes, J., ii, 276  
 Spain, W., i, 146; ii, 202, 440, 441, 488  
 Spencer, Anna J., ii, 317  
 Spencer, H., i, 168, 280  
 Spencer, R. W., i, 324  
 Sperrey, J., ii, 46  
 Spotswood, J. S., ii, 280  
 Spragg, S., ii, 318  
 Sprot, M., ii, 357  
 Stack, J. W., ii, 75, 318, 405, 489  
 Stafford, Sir E. W., i, 45, 59, 83, 105, 181, 340; ii, 34, 93, 97, 219, 237, 248, 276, 290, 291, 394, 420, 422, 442, 469, 479,  
 Stafford, H., ii, 319  
 Stallworthy, A. J., ii, 325, 463  
 Stallworthy, E. D., ii, 546  
 Stamper, J., i, 341  
 Stanley, O., i, 378, 397  
 Stanley, R. L., ii, 542  
 Stannard, G., i, 197  
 Staples-Browne, Margaret, ii, 146  
 Stapp, C., i, 99; ii, 82, 143, 401, 430  
 Stark, D., i, 219  
 Stead, G. G., i, 74; ii, 377, 453  
 Stead, W. 'I., i, 41; ii, 342  
 Stephen, Sir A., ii, 23, 190, 328  
 Stephens, A. G., ii, 22  
 Stephens, S., i, 274  
 Stephenson, R., i, 90, 91  
 Stevens, E. C. J., i, 358; ii, 425  
 Stevens, G., i, 192, 417  
 Stevens, J., i, 310  
 Stevenson, R. L., i, 32  
 Steward, Sir W. J., i, 34; ii, 310  
 Stewart, Capt., ii, 200  
 Stewart, F. A. E., ii, 514  
 Stewart, G. V., ii, 335  
 Stewart, Hugh, ii, 333  
 Stewart, W., ii, 404  
 Stewart, W. D., i, 201, 380; iii, 339

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Stewart, W. D., junr., i (viii), 63, 86, 380; ii, 69, 336  
 Stobo, A. H., i, 38; ii, 389  
 Stoddart, M. O., ii, 337  
 Stoddart, M. P., ii, 336  
 Stokes, J. L., i, 350; ii, 153, 380  
 Stokes, J. M., ii, 338, 540  
 Stokes, R., ii, 314  
 Stone, C. J., ii, 498  
 Stout, Sir R., i, 33, 76; ii, 17, 219, 228, 282, 302, 306, 335, 424, 433, 471  
 Stout, Lady A. P., ii, 342  
 Stovin, J., ii, 49  
 Strang, R. R., ii, 35  
 Stratford, S. J., ii, 518  
 Street, C. H., i, 296, 297  
 Strode, A. C., i, 282; ii, 190, 205  
 Stuart, D. M., i, 204, 272; ii, 222  
 Stuart, E. C., i, 361  
 Studbolme, M., ii, 347  
 Studbolme, P., ii, 347  
 Sturt, C., i, 124, 369  
 Suisted, C., ii, 114  
 Suisted, J., ii, 348  
 Sullivan, D. G., ii, 546  
 Suter, A. B., i, 457; ii, 107  
 Sutherland, Duke of, i, 46  
 Sutherland, G., i, 123  
 Sutter, J. H., ii, 220  
 Sutton, -, ii, 195  
 Swainson, W., F.L.S., i, 70, 119, 342; ii, 58, 368  
 Swainson, W., i, 61, 340, 398; ii, 140, 288, 304, 321, 447, 493  
 Swanson, W., i, 330  
 Symonds, T. M. C., i, 396  
 Symonds, W. C., ii, 71, 355

TAHANA, ii, 145, 407  
 Tahatika, Tipene, ii, 489  
 Te Tai, Ihaka, i, 341  
 Taiaha, i, 452  
 Taiaroa, i, 378; ii, 188, 201, 277, 399  
 Taiaroa, Dick, ii, 357  
 Taiaroa, H. K., i, 476; ii, 122, 147, 494  
 Taingakawa, Tarapipipi, ii, 492  
 Tainui, Ihaia, ii, 358  
 Taipahau, i, 383  
 Taipari, Hauauru, ii, 359  
 Taipari, W. H., ii, 20  
 Taiporutu, ii, 368, 434  
 Taiporutu, Wetini, i, 354; ii, 135  
 Taiwhaka-huka, ii, 140  
 Taiwhanga, H., i, 450; ii, 371  
 Taiwhanga, R., ii, 359  
 Takamoana, K., ii, 391  
 Takarangi, ii, 126, 188  
 Takerei, ii, 198  
 Tako Ngatata, Wi, i, 456; ii, 122, 147, 175, 203  
 Takurua, i, 207  
 Tamahaki, ii, 407  
 Tama-ki-Hikurangi, i, 451  
 Tamaiharanui, i, 178, 388; ii, 200, 358  
 Tama'i-Hengia, i, 453  
 Tama-i-Kowha, ii, 194  
 Tama-i-ongarangi, T., ii, 256  
 Tama-i-rangi, i, 452  
 Tama-i-whakaue-hua-i-te-rangi, ii, 179-80, 255  
 Tamako, K., ii, 399  
 Tamanui-a-rangi, H. P., ii, 152  
 Tamaroro, ii, 129  
 Tamibana, T., ii, 435  
 Tamihana, W., ii, 226, 288; and see Te Waharoa  
 Tancred, H. J., i, 2, 135, 257; ii, 93, 133, 251, 290, 320, 321, 363, 521  
 Tancred, T., ii, 361, 510  
 Tanguru, ii, 194  
 Taniwha, i, 412  
 Taniwha, Horeta, ii, 244  
 Taoho, ii, 112, 171, 409  
 Taonui, i, 202  
 Tapaue, ii, 488-9  
 Tapsell, H., ii, 392  
 Tapsell, P., ii, 55, 388, 435  
 Tapsell, R., ii, 365  
 Tapua, ii, 117, 154, 487  
 Tapuae, ii, 140  
 Taraia, i, 398, 475; ii, 61, 202  
 Taranui, Pokiha, ii, 46  
 Tarapipipi Taingakawa, ii, 436  
 Tarapuhi, ii, 20, 358  
 Taratoa, i, 341; ii, 366  
 Tareha, i, 341, 409; ii, 112, 225, 388, 434, 502  
 Tareha, K., ii, 88  
 Tareha te Moananui, i, 353; ii, 87, 359, 360  
 Tari, ii, 117  
 Taringakuri, i, 91; ii, 351  
 Tarore, ii, 120  
 Taua, ii, 145  
 Taurua, i, 351, 385  
 Tauteka, i, 381; ii, 70  
 Taverner, W. B., ii, 463  
 Tawhai, K., ii, 371  
 Tawhai, M., ii, 465  
 Tawhiao, i, 83, 309-10, 385, 386, 448; ii, 120, 198, 400, 408, 488, 499  
 Te Tawhio, ii, 100  
 Tawhiti, ii, 175, 371  
 Tawhitorangi, ii, 145  
 Taylor, B., ii, 374  
 Taylor, C., i, 368  
 Taylor, H., ii, 138  
 Taylor, J., i, 165  
 Taylor, J. P., ii, 80  
 Taylor, Mary, ii, 376  
 Taylor, R., i, 78, 384, 391; ii, 49, 50, 254, 412, 516, 531  
 Taylor, R. M., i, 496  
 Taylor, T. B., ii, 473  
 Taylor, T. E., i, 318, 429-30, 496  
 Taylor, W., ii, 372  
 Taylor, W. W., i, 78; ii, 309  
 Teira, i, 59, 105, 469; ii, 34, 195-6, 320

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Templer, E. M., ii, 337  
 Thatcher, C. R., i, 138  
 Thatcher, E. G., ii, 379  
 Thierry, C. H. P. de, i, 125, 487; ii, 445  
 Thomas, Joseph, i, 84, 275, 303, 364, 441; ii, 58, 438, 449  
 Thomas, W. E., ii, 293  
 Thompson, J., ii, 365  
 Thompson, H. A., ii, 440  
 Thompson, Martha, ii, 267  
 Thompson, T. J., i, 41, 135  
 Thompson, William (Wiremu Tamihana), ii, 436  
 Thoms (or Toms), Joseph, i, 108, 181; ii, 440  
 Thomson, A., ii, 508  
 Thomson, A. B., i, 143; ii, 381  
 Thomson, G. M., ii, 78, 189, 452  
 Thomson, J., ii, 162  
 Thomson, J. T., i, 188, 375; ii, 163, 185, 204, 293  
 Thomson, J. W., i, 330; ii, 28  
 Tiaia, ii, 201  
 Tiakitai, ii, 482, 489  
 Tini-ki-runga, ii, 360, 391  
 Tinline, J., i, 41, 287, 320; ii, 87  
 Tioriori, i, 133; ii, 198  
 Tipene, ii, 466  
 Tirarau, i, 118  
 Tisdall, A. W. St C., ii, 387  
 Tisdall, W. St C., ii, 386  
 Titokowaru, i, 65, 78, 110; ii, 9, 48, 70, 143, 194, 246, 251, 307, 323, 412, 430, 500  
 Titore, i, 126; ii, 57, 76, 124, 175, 368, 400  
 Tiwai, ii, 175  
 Tobias (or Topia) Turoa, ii, 408  
 Tohe a Pare, ii, 487  
 Tohu, i, 110, 128, 338, 344; ii, 388, 499, 500, 501  
 'Tohunga: i, 484  
 Toiroa, i, 354  
 Tokena te Kerēhi, i, 384  
 Tokiwhati, ii, 407, 410  
 Tole, J. A., ii, 493, 529  
 Tolmie, W. A., i, 341  
 Tombs, G., i, 442  
 Tomoana, H., ii, 161, 360  
 Tongaporutu, ii, 88  
 Tonks, A. S., ii, 126  
 Topeora, ii, 175, 193  
 Topi, ii, 153  
 Topia, ii, 145  
 Topine te Mamaku, ii, 49  
 Torlesse, C. O., ii, 213  
 Torrens, Sir R. R., ii, 444  
 Townend, J. H., ii, 279, 298  
 Townsend, J., ii, 459  
 Townsend, Miss, i, 292, 350  
 Trafford, B. W. R., i, 70, 199  
 Tragett, Lieut, ii, 484  
 Travers, H. B., ii, 142  
 Travers, W. T. L., i, 42, 211, 506; ii, 97, 241, 274, 320, 447, 448, 507  
 Tregear, E., ii, 116, 313  
 Treweek, J., ii, 355

Tricker, -, ii, 336  
 Tripe, J. A., ii, 397  
 Tripp, C. G., i, 2  
 Tripp, L. O. H., ii, 306  
 Trollope, A., ii, 263  
 Tu, i, 13  
 Tuahuterangi, i, 354  
 Tu-Akiaki, ii, 76  
 Tu-Tawhiao, ii, 121  
 Tucker, G., ii, 30  
 Tucker, J., i, 7  
 Tuckett, F., i, 41, 213; ii, 91, 355, 358, 440, 526  
 Tuckey, H. E., i, 79  
 Tuhaere, P., i, 451, 456; ii, 487  
 Tuhawaiki, ii, 188, 201, 285, 358, 472, 528  
 Tuhi (Tui), i, 126, 476; ii, 8, 56, 124, 195, 262, 388, 405  
 Te Tuhi, Patara, ii, 491  
 Tuhuru, ii, 358  
 Tu-Kaioara, ii, 407  
 Tuke, A., ii, 401  
 Tuki, ii, 144  
 Tukino, i, 381, 383-6  
 Tu-Korehu, ii, 122, 148, 489  
 Tuku Take, ii, 110  
 Tungia, i, 27, 200  
 Tupaea, ii, 400  
 Tupaea, A., ii, 403  
 Tupaea, Hori, i, 195; ii, 151, 365  
 Tupanapana, ii, 399  
 Turau, Wi Waka, ii, 117, 155  
 Tureiti, i, 386  
 Turi-ka-tuku, i, 410  
 Turiponi, W., ii, 114  
 Turnbull, G., ii, 391, 404  
 Turnbull, R., ii, 403  
 Turnbull, W., ii, 403  
 Turner, B., ii, 172  
 Turner, J., ii, 406  
 Turner, N., i, 118, 393; ii, 57, 471, 472, 497  
 Turner, S., ii, 86  
 Turoa, Te Peehi, i, 383, 391; ii, 47, 49, 130, 143, 145, 408, 409, 487  
 Turoa, Topia, i, 381, 386, 475; ii, 10  
 Tutawake, ii, 411  
 Tutuhanga, ii, 199  
 Tu Whakararo, ii, 411  
 Turton, G. K., ii, 4, 219, 409  
 Turton, H. H., i, 116; ii, 33, 140  
 Te Turuki, i, 473  
 Tuwhare, i, 13; ii, 112, 129, 154, 185, 188, 193, 199, 225, 407, 409  
 Tuwhawhe, see Kereopa.te-Rau  
 Twopeny, R. E. N., i, 246, 445  
 Tytlers, ii, 319  
 Te Ua Haumene, i, 340; ii, 76, 150, 466, 499  
 Te Uamairangi, ii, 360, 391  
 Te Dira, ii, 198, 489  
 Te Uri-o-Kanae, ii, 145

VALENTINE, H. S., i, 102

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Valpy, W. H., i, 3, 102, 284, 463; ii, 13, 347, 415  
 Van der Velden, P., i, 322; ii, 397  
 Van Diemen, A., ii, 369  
 Vavasour, W., i, 70; ii, 163, 416, 478  
 Veale, J., ii, 262, 417  
 Veale, T., i, 72, 208  
 Veel, Mary G., ii, 417  
 Veitch, W. A., ii, 463  
 Vercoe, H., i, 332; ii, 265  
 Viard, J. P., ii, 177  
 Visscher, J., ii, 369  
 Vogel, H. B., ii, 424  
 Vogel, Sir J., i, 33, 45, 81, 110, 183, 277-8, 329, 426; ii, 138, 147, 152, 241, 252, 291, 322, 324, 340, 468, 469, 470  
 Volkner, C. S., i, 283, 314, 495; ii, 75, 131, 150, 179, 256, 288, 318, 402, 408, 412, 437  
 Von der Heyde, G., i, 379  
 Von Haast, J. F. J., i, 336; ii, 97, 221, 304  
 Von Tempsky, F., i, 421, 509; ii, 9, 245-6, 387, 484  
 Von Tunzelmann, E. J. F., ii, 431  
 Von Tunzelmann, N., ii, 212

WADDELL, R., i, 246  
 Waddy, Colonel, i, 133  
 Wade, J., i, 196  
 Wade, W. R., ii, 522  
 Te Waewae, ii, 487  
 Wahanui, ii, 491  
 Te Waharoa, i, 98; ii, 54, 70, 75, 361, 365, 368, 402, 522  
 Te Waharoa, Wiremu Tamihana Tarapipipi, i, 98, 105, 195, 252, 276, 309, 315, 386; ii, 63, 120, 199, 273, 359, 386, 435, 490, 523  
 Wahawaha, Ropata, i, 18, 415, 474, 476; ii, 121, 125, 179, 181, 183, 503  
 Waiaua, Rawiri, i, 57, 391; ii, 33  
 Waikato, i, 83, 202, 407, 458; ii, 196  
 Wai-tooro, Hera, ii, 175  
 Waitoa, R., ii, 287  
 Waitohi, ii, 193, 198, 392, 504  
 Waitt, R., ii, 337, 386  
 Te Waka, i, 384  
 Te Waika-itii, i, 381, 383  
 Wakefield, A., ii, 185, 308, 398, 449  
 Wakefield, D., i, 275; ii, 444, 447  
 Wakefield, D., R.C., ii, 441  
 Wakefield, E., ii, 180, 294, 449  
 Wakefield, E. G., i, 12, 56, 141, 163, 256, 270, 275, 303, 401, 402; ii, 116, 289, 290, 439, 448, 449, 505, 535  
 Wakefield, E. J., i, 78, 89, 381, 384, 506; ii, 276, 337, 358, 367, 407, 443, 447, 449, 488  
 Wakefield, F., ii, 442  
 Wakefield, Frances, ii, 443  
 Wakefield, O., ii, 449  
 Wakefield, Priscilla, ii, 444  
 Wakefield, W. H., i, 57, 218, 398; ii, 122, 187, 201, 271, 305, 319, 356, 368, 440, 443, 445, 448, 492, 526  
 Wales, N. Y. A., ii, 65

Walker, A. J., ii, 453  
 Walker, F., i, 204  
 Walker, L., i, 427  
 Walker, T., ii, 117  
 Walker, W. C., ii, 93, 282  
 Wallace, J., ii, 171  
 Wallace, W. V., i, 180  
 Wallis, J., i, 26, 345; ii, 151, 498  
 Walpole, Sir Hugh S., ii, 456  
 Walsh, A., ii, 543  
 Walter, H. J., i, 253  
 Walter, J., i, 96  
 Warburton, T. R., ii, 457  
 Ward, C. E., ii, 465  
 Ward, Crosbie, i, 80; ii, 213  
 Ward, E. R., ii, 458  
 Ward, F., ii, 465  
 Ward, H., ii, 458  
 Ward, Mrs Humphrey, i, 20  
 Ward, J., ii, 465  
 Ward, Sir J. G., i, 34, 249; ii, 28, '66, 67, 68, 98, 282, 315, 542, 546  
 Ward, J. H., ii, 458  
 Ward, J. P., ii, 501  
 Ward, R., i, 420; ii, 465  
 Ward, R. P., ii, 465  
 Ward, V. A., ii, 464  
 Warre, Sir H. J., ii, 151  
 Warren, J., i, 427  
 Te Waru, i, 353, 474; ii, 100, 112, 402, 438  
 Wason, J. C., i, 430; ii, 31, 275  
 Wastney, E., ii, 466  
 Waterhouse, G. M., i, 83, 270, 278, 450; ii, 60, 137, 147, 224, 228  
 Waterhouse, J., i, 119, 182, 394; ii, 467  
 Waters, F. V., ii, 51  
 Watkin, J., i, 182, 443, 476; ii, 399, 528  
 Watt, I. N., i, 186  
 Watt, W. H., i, 33, 109, 110, 277; ii, 375, 423  
 Webb, P. C., i, 405; ii, 544-6  
 Webster, A. S., ii, 477  
 Webster, G., ii, 391  
 Webster, J., ii, 326, 477  
 Webster, W., i, 412; ii, 477  
 Weld, Sir F. A., i, 23, 70, 162, 163; ii, 34, 163, 276, 290, 291, 346, 416, 446, 459  
 Welford, W., i, 53  
 Weller, G. and J., ii, 277, 481  
 Wellington, Duke of, ii, 451  
 Wells, B., ii, 495  
 Wepiha, H., ii, 438  
 Werahiko, ii, 179  
 Te Wera, i, 353, 383; ii, 130, 148, 174, 385, 388, 487  
 Weston, H., ii, 532  
 Weston, J. J., ii, 483, 484  
 Weston, T. S., i, 431; ii, 294, 484  
 Westrup, C., i, 71; ii, 401, 430  
 Wetini Taiporutu, ii, 359  
 Whakahoehoe, ii, 433  
 Te Whakarau, i, 381

INDEX OF CROSS REFERENCES

Te Whakataupuka, ii, 399  
 Te Whanake, ii, 366  
 Whanararai, ii, 398  
 Whariga, I, i, 17, 476; ii, 223  
 Wharawhara, Ripeka, ii, 486  
 Te Wharepa, ii, 175  
 Wharepouru, i, 118, ii, 122, 129, 130, 175, 186, 368, 390, 450  
 Te Wharerahi, ii, 117, 225, 399  
 Whareumu, ii, 76, 146, 482, 487, 511  
 Te Whatanui, i, 7, 13, 27, 341; ii, 76, 130, 148, 367, 407, 482, 486  
 Te Whatu, ii, 200  
 Te Wheoro, W., i, 456; ii, 359  
 Te Wherowhero, i, 26, 105, 408; ii, 54, 62, 70, 120, 122, 142, 155, 174, 195, 198, 199, 202, 368, 385, 400, 402, 434, 436, 505  
 Te Wherowhero, Koroki, ii, 492  
 Whetoi, ii, 173, 175  
 Te Whetu, ii, 200, 500  
 Te Wheturoa, ii, 487  
 Whitaker, Sir F., i, 45, 104, 106, 215, 372, 443, 455; ii, 40, 155, 237, 244, 265, 320, 390, 494, 539  
 Whitaker F. A., i, 135; ii, 290  
 Whitcombe, J. H., i, 487; ii, 330  
 White, A. E., ii, 97  
 White, J., i, 103; ii, 497  
 White, S., ii, 454  
 White, T. J., ii, 233  
 White, W., i, 393; ii, 405, 495, 498  
 White, W. B., ii, 496  
 Whitefoord, C., ii, 333  
 Whiteley, J., i, 16; ii, 33, 82, 203, 223, 276, 371, 411, 456, 464, 494, 497  
 Te Whiti, i, 29, 34, 66, 86, 110, 128, 143, 307-8, 344-5; ii, 148, 167, 184, 197, 388, 389, 408, 491  
 Whitmore, Sir G. S., i, 33, 75; ii, 10, 143, 194, 323, 387  
 Te Whiwhi, Matene, i, 339, 341, 342, 385; ii, 123, 202-3, 245, 392, 436  
 Whyte, J. B., i, 135; ii, 264  
 Whytehead, T. B., ii, 285, 286  
 Wicksteed, J. T., i, 57, 99; ii, 278  
 Wilding, F., ii, 507  
 Wilding, Julia, ii, 507  
 Wilding, R., ii, 340  
 Wilford, J. G. F., ii, 507  
 Wilford, Sir T. M., ii, 463  
 Wilkie, W., ii, 508  
 Wilkin, R., i, 52; ii, 74, 97, 357  
 Wilkinson, Iris G., i, 425  
 Will, W., i, 37, 122; ii, 128  
 Will, W. J., ii, 510  
 William IV, King, ii, 388, 536  
 •William Naylor: ii, 456  
 Williams, D. T., i, 146, 427  
 Williams, E. M., ii, 154  
 Williams, G. P., ii, 215  
 Williams, H., ii, 517  
 Williams, Henry, i, 54, 127, 141, 152, 339, 340, 376, 384, 397, 459; ii, 45, 54, 57, 101, 146, 151, 154, 201, 225, 245, 286, 296, 389, 402, 434, 487, 488, 489, 513, 514, 515  
 Williams, Sir J.; ii, 342  
 Williams, J. N., i, 382; ii, 117  
 Williams, J. W., ii, 514  
 Williams, Marianne, ii, 511  
 Williams, P., ii, 399  
 Williams, S., ii, 123  
 Williams, W., i, 98, 159, 168, 351; ii, 186, 296, 318, 373, 435, 512, 513, 515, 517, 536  
 Williams, W. J., ii, 65, 510  
 Williams, W. L., ii, 513, 516  
 Williamson, James, ii, 265  
 Williamson, John, i, 65, 297, 329; ii, 36, 138, 493, 518, 525  
 Willis, A. D., i, 33  
 Wills, A., i, 463  
 Wilmot, E. H., ii, 315  
 Wilson, Lady Anne, ii, 521  
 Wilson, G., i, 8  
 Wilson, G. A., ii, 522  
 Wilson, J., ii, 48, 453  
 Wilson, Jas., i, 259  
 Wilson, John, ii, 524  
 Wilson, J. A., ii, 120  
 Wilson, Sir J. C., ii, 93, 539  
 Wilson, Sir J. G., ii, 264, 520  
 Wilson, J. T., ii, 524  
 Wilson, P., ii, 254  
 Wilson, R., i, 246  
 Wilson, T., ii, 521  
 Wilson, W. C., ii, 518, 525  
 Winstone, W., ii, 526  
 Wiremu, H., i, 390  
 Wiremu Kingi Matakatea, ii, 70-1  
 Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake, ii, 195  
 Wohlers, J. F. H., i, 410; ii, 153, 243, 399, 472  
 Woodward, J., i, 470  
 Wood, C. S., ii, 307  
 Wood, R., ii, 81  
 Wood, R. G., ii, 390  
 Wood, W., ii, 80  
 Woolcock, E., i, 335  
 Woon, W., ii, 243, 471  
 Wortley, J. S., ii, 479  
 Wrey, W. L., i, 320  
 Wrigglesworth, -, ii, 354  
 Wright, E. G., ii, 31, 64, 453  
 Wright, J. F. F., ii, 85  
 Wright, McGregor, i, 126  
 Wyatt, Major, ii, 49  
 Wylie, A., ii, 306  
 Wynyard, R. H., i, 104, 105, 270; ii, 290, 352, 447, 479, 492, 539

YATES, M., ii, 536  
 Yelverton, H. R., i, 396  
 Yonge, Charlotte, ii, 287  
 Yorke, J. C., i, 286  
 Young, F., i, 56  
 Young, W. Carr, ii, 13

THE TEXT OF THESE VOLUMES IS SET IN 9 POINT LINOTYPE  
BASKERVILLE. THE NAMES ARE IN 8 POINT CLOISTER BOLD.  
THE REMAINDER IS IN BASKERVILLE. THE WHOLE HAS BEEN  
ARRANGED BY J. C. BEAGLEHOLE AND PRINTED AND BOUND IN  
NEW ZEALAND BY WHITCOMBE AND TOMBS LTD WELLINGTON  
MCMXXXIX - MCMXL